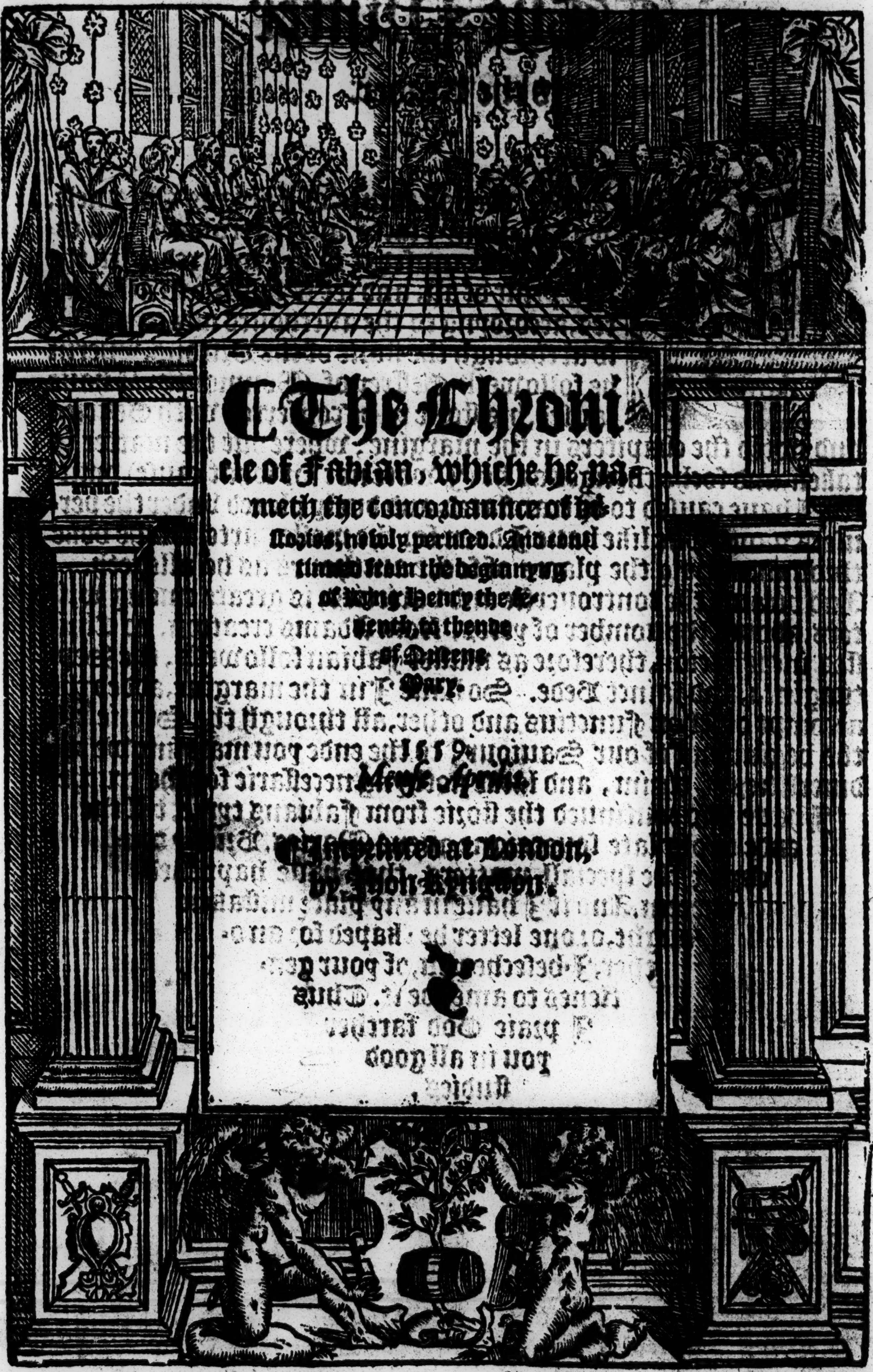


¶ The Chronicle of Fabian, whiche he nameth the concordaunce of hystories, newly perused. And continued from the begynnyng of kyng Henry the seuenth, to thende of Queene Mary.

Mense Aprili.

¶ Imprinted at London,
by Iohn Kyngston.

Fabyan
K

The Grenville Library

¶The Printer to the Reader.

Bicauſe the laſt printe of Fabians Chronicle, was in many places altered from the firſt copie, I haue cauſed it to be conferred with the firſt print of all, and ſet it foorthe in all pointes, accordyng to the aucthours meanyng. Alſo al through the ſtorie of the Britons, wherin he followeth Geffrey of Monmouth, I haue cauſed, his ſtorie to be conferred with Geffries and noted the chapiters in the margine, where out the matter is taken, and ſoche thynges as he (I wote not for what cauſe) omitted, I haue cauſed to be tranſlated, and duely placed vnder the peruſers name. The like haue I doen for the moſte parte, all the boke through, notyng the places of ſoche aucthours as he allegeth. And bicauſe the controuerſie and varieties, is greate emong writers, aboute the nomber of yeres, from Adams creation, to Chriſtes incarnacion, therefore as maſter Fabian followeth, the Septuaginta, and ſainct Bede. So haue I in the margine, added the accompt of Ihon Functius and other, all through the Storie, till the beginnyng of our Sauiour, to the ende you maie knowe the diuerſities of theim, and lacke nothyng neceſſarie for the truthe: I haue alſo continued the ſtorie from Fabians tyme, till the ende of our late ſoueraigne quene Maries. Briefly touchyng the ſpeciall matters, that haue happened therein. And if I haue in any place miſtaken ought, or one letter be ſkaped for an other, I beſeche you, of your gentlenes to amende it. Thus I praie God farther you in all good ſtudies.

The Grenville Library

The Table for the Firſte parte.

The Table for the firſt volume of Fabians cronicle.

Albion, and why this iſle of olde tyme was ſo called, it appereth in the fourthe lefe, the firſt chapiter. Pagi. 7.

Brute the ſonne of Siluius, and of his originall, and firſte commyng into this lande. Capi. ii. pag. 8.

Brute of his firſt landyng. Capi. iii. pag. 9.

This Brute, the ſoonne of Siluius Poſthumus, deſcended of the noble bloud of Troians, entred firſt the Iſle of Albion, which he after named Britaine and now is called Englande, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande, three ſcore and thre, and before the incarnacion of Chriſte: as in the beginnyng of this woorke, it is more openly ſhewed, and reigned yeres twentie and twoo.

Troinouaunt or London, of this Kyng was firſt founded. Capi. iiii. pagi. 10.

Brute Viridi Scutum, or Brute Greenſhield, ſonne of Ebranke, was made ruler of the Britōs, in the yere of the worlde, fower thouſande, twoo hundreth fourtie and twoo, and reigned yeres twelue. Capi. x. pag. 13.

Baldud the ſonne of Lud, beganne his dominion ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande, three hundreth and eightene, and reigned yeres twentie.

This Kyng founded yͤ towne of Bath, and the Bathes within the ſame, after ſome writers. Cap. viii. pa. 14.

Cordeilla the yongeſt doughter of the afternamed Leier, beganne to rule the Britons, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande, three hundred, ninetie and eight, and ruled yeres. v. Cap. xvi. pagi. 16.

Cunedagius with Marganus his neuewe, ſonnes of the twoo ſiſters of Cordeilla, began their dominion ouer Britaine, in the yere of the worlde

fower thouſande, fower hundreth and three, and continued yeres twoo. Cap.xvii.pagi.16.

¶This Cunidagius forenamed, after that he in battaill had ſlain Marganius, beganne his Segniorie ouer the Britõs, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande, fower hundred and fiue, and ruled after moſte writers, yeres thirtie and three.
Capi.xviii.pag.17.

Ebrancus or Ebranke, the ſoonne of Memprice, beganne to rule the Britons, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande one hundreth eightie and twoo and reigned yeres twelue. This Kyng made the Citee of Yorke, the Towne of Acrincte, and the Caſtelles of Dunbarre and Edenbourgh in Scotland.
Capi.ix.pagi.13.

Ferrer with his brother Porrer, ſoonnes of Gorbodug, beganne ioyntly to rule the Britons, in the yere after Adam, fower thouſand ſeuen hundred and a leuen, and ruled yeres fiue.

Here enadeth the line or offſpryng of Brute.
Capi.xxv.pagi.19.

The Stories agree, that after the death of the foreſaied brethren, the Britons, bicauſe there remaigned no heire of them, were in great diſcorde & long ſeaſon, and were ſubdued vnder diuers Kynges. But bicauſe the foreſaied aucthours dooe not certifie the terme of this diſcorde, and alſo dooe write diuerſlye of the reignes of the foreſaied Kynges, ſo that ſome dooe aſſigne verie fewe or no certaine yeres, and ſome other many yeres, ſo that in the accomptyng of the yeres and of tymes, there appereth a greate alteration. Therefore it is to be noted, as affirmeth Ranulphe Monke of Cheſter, Guido, Galfride and other, that Cunedagius onely began to reigne in the yere of the worlde, fower thouſande, fower hundreth and fiue And he reigned thirtie and thre yeres. Whiche maketh the yere of the worlde fower thouſande fower hũdred thirtie and eight. And furthermore, the foreſaied aucthours with other affirme, that the twoo brethren, Belinus and Brennus, did enter Italie with a greate number of menne, in the leuenth yere of Artaxarſes the leuenth kyng of Perſe. Whiche was the yere of the worlde fower thouſande eight hundreth and fiftene, and the eight yere of the reigne of the foreſaid brethren, as ſaieth Martinus ſuper Cronicas. Wherby it plainly appereth, yͭ from the laſt yere of Cunedage, vntill the eight yere of the foreſaied brethren, there paſſed thre hundreth three ſcore and ſeuentene yeres. And furthermore, al writers affirme, that the ſaied Belinus and Brennus did ſuccede their father Dũuallo, and that the ſaied Dunuallo reigned

Dũwallo.

ned fourtie yeres. The firſt yere of whoſe reigne, was the yere of the worlde, fower thouſand. vii C. xlviii. So that from the laſt yere of Cunedage, vntil the firſt yere of the ſaid Dunuallo, ther paſſed thre hundred. xxix. yeres. Of the whiche yeres, there paſſed from the firſt yere of Riuallus or Renaldus, vntill the laſt yere of Porrex, twoo hundreth lxxviii. yeres. By whiche accopt it appeareth, that the Britons, after the death of the foreſaied brethren, were in diſcord by the ſpace of one & fiftie yeres. And ſo the laſt yere of the foreſaid diſcord, was the yere of the world fower thouſand, ſeuen hundred ſixtie and ſeuen.

Gwendolena or Gwendolein the wife of Locrine, began to reigne as Quene ouer the Britons, or countrey of Logiers, in the yere of the worlde, iiii. thouſand, C. and ſeuen, and reigned yeres. xv. Capi. vi. pagi. 11.

Gurguſtius Gurguſt, or Gorbodian, the ſonne of Riuallus, was made ruler of the Britons, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſand, fower hundred fourſcore and three, and ruled yeres xxxviii. Cap. xx. pag. 18.

Gorbodug whom Geffrey of Monmouth nameth Grobodago, ſonne vnto Kinimacus, began his dominion ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde, fower thouſande, ſixe hundred lxix. and ruled yeres. lxiii. About the. xxvi. yere of this Kynges reigne, was Holiferne ſlaine of Judith the widowe, in the chamber of Papilion. As hath Jacobus Philippus. cap. xxiiii. pa. 19

Jago or Lago, the neuewe of Gurguſtius, was made ruler of Britain, in the yere of ẏ worlde fower thouſande fiue hundred, three ſcore and ten, and reigned yeres. xxv. Cap. xxii. pag. 18.

Kinimacus ẏ brother of Jago, and after ſome writers, the ſoonne of Siluius, began his ſeigniorie ouer the Britons, in the yere of the world, iiii. thouſande, fiue hundred. xcv. and ruled yeres fiftie and fower. In the fonrtene yere of this Kyng, ended the fowerth age: and the Jewes wer captiued by the Babilonians. Alſo Iſopus or Iſop the feiner of Fables, in the latter daieſt of this Kinimacus, in the countrey of Grece, floriſhed and feined his Fables.

Cap. xxii. pa. 19

Locrinus or Locrine, the eldeſt ſoonne of Brute, began his reigne ouer Britain, in ẏ countrey called Leogria or Logiers, that after was named middell Englande, in the yere of the world, fower thouſande fowerſcore and ſeuen, and reigned yeres twentie. Cap. v. pag. 11.

Leilus or Leir, the ſoonne of the forenamed Brute, beganne his rule ouer Britaine, in the yere of the worlde, fower thouſande, twoo hundred fiftie and fower, and ruled yeres twentie and fiue. This kyng founded ẏ towne of Carleill. Ca. xi. pa. 13.

Lud Hurdibras or Rudibras the ſonne of Leil, began his dominion ouer the Britõs, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande, twoo hundred.lxxix. and ruled yeres. xxxix . This kyng made Wincheſter, Cantorburie and Septon, now called Shaftiſburie. Cap.xii.pag.14.

Leir or Leier the ſoonne of Baldud, was made ruler ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande, three hundred and thirtie and eight, and ruled yeres three ſcore. This kyng made the Toune of Leiceſter. Cap.xiiii.pag.14.

Madan the ſonne of Locrine and of the ſaid Gwendolein, began his reigne ouer the Britõs in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande a hundred and.xxii. and raigned after the agremẽt of many writers, yeres fourtie. Cap.vii.pagi.12.

In the ſeconde yere of this kynges raigne, ended the thirde age of the worlde. And Dauid began to raigne ouer Iſrael.

Menpricius or Mempricius, the ſonne of Madan, began his rule ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde, fower thouſande an hundred. lxii. and reigned yeres.xx. cap.viii.pag.12.

Reinaldus or Riuallus, the ſonne of Cunedagius, began to rule the Britons, in the yere of worlde fower thouſande, foure hundred and eight and thirtie, and reigned yeres fourtie. The thirtie and twoo yere of this king, was Roome builded. of the twoo brethren, Remus and Romulus. Cap.xix.pa.17.

Sicillius or Siluius the brother or ſonne of Gurguſtus, began his dominion ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde, fower thouſande, fiue hundred twentie and one, and ruled yeres.xlix. Cap.xxi.pag.18.

¶Thus endeth the firſt part of this worke, that cõteineth viii. C. and.iiii. yeres.

¶The table of the.ii. part.

Archigallo the ſeconde ſoonne of Morindus, began his dominion ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſand nine hundred and ten and reigned yeres fiue. Cap.xxix.pag.33.

Archigallo before named, was by the cõpaſſion of his brethren again reſtored to his former dignitie, in the yere of the worlde iiii.M.ix.c.and.xx. and reigned after yeres.x. Cap.xli.pag.34.

Belinus and Brennus, the twoo ſonnes of the forenamed Dunuallo, begã to reigne ioinctly ouer Britaine, in the yere of the worlde, fower thouſande, eight hundreth and eight, and ruled fiue yeres ioinctly, and Belinus alone twentie and ſixe. This Belinus made the Toune of Carleill. Alſo in London, he cauſed to be made the hauen of Billynges gate, and eanded the

the foure waies begon of hys father. This alſo made a temple in Londō, and named it the temple of Concorde, whiche after the opinion of ſome writers opinions ſhould be the temple barre, now the pariſhe churche of the temple, as appeareth.
Cap.xxix.pag.21.

In the time in whiche theſe two brethrē raigned, authours ſome what diſcorde. For Policronicon ſaieth, that Belinus with Brennus did inuade Italy, and beſiege Rome in the two hundred and one yere after the tranſmigracion of Italy. And alſo that the ſame time Furius Camillus was dictatour of Rome. Whereby it appeareth, that Rome was ſpoyled by thē aboute the yere of the worlde, foure thouſand eyght hundred and ten. But Jacobus Philippus with other ſaieth that the foreſaid Furius Camillus was Dictatour of Rome about the yere of the worlde foure thouſand eyght hundred, fiftie, ſixe. Wherby there apeareth a difference of ſixe and fourtie yeres. But Ranulphus monke of the order of Ciſtercien erreth very far, that affirmeth in his chronicle that the ſaied brethren began to raign ouer the Britons the yere of the world.iiii.M.D iiii. which differeth from other aboue.cc.l.yeres: and there is noted of ſome that the ſaid Belinus reigned.x.yeres, ẏ is ſuppoſed for the time of his raign, after his return frō Italy. The victory of the ſaied brethren, is ſhewed in the ſtory folowyng.

Caſſibelan the brother of Lud was ordreined king of Britain the yere of ẏ world.v.M.c.xlii. and raigned or he wer made tributary to the Romaines, yeres viii. and more.cap.xlviii.pa.35.

The beginning of this tribute as hath Peter Pictauienſis, Polichronicon and other authours, was in the yere of the worlde.v.M.c.li.&.xlviii. yere before Chriſtes comming. And Eutropius ſaith in his chronicle that Caius Julius did conquere Britain two yeres before he was created Emperour, & he raigned as Emperour.ii.yeres. And furthermore the ſaied Eutropius affirmeth, that Octauian Auguſtus ſucceſſour of the ſaid Julius, began to raign in the yere of the worlde fiue thouſande.Clviii. and that he reigned full.xli. yeares before Chriſt was borne. Whiche ſaiyng Jacobus Philippus and other authours affirme. Whereby it foloweth that Julius Ceſar ſubdued Britaine eyghte & fourtie yeres before the coming of Chriſte, and the yere of the worlde as before is ſaied, fiue thouſand, a hundred, fifty, one. And ſo it apeareth that Chriſt was incarnat in the yere of the world after the accompt of the lxx. interpreters, fiue thouſand a hundred, ninetie, nine.

Elanius the ſonne or brother of Kimerus, began his reigne ouer Britaine, in the yere of the worldе foure.M.viii.c.lxxxix. and raygned yeres nine.
Cap.xxxvi.pag.29.

Elidu-

Elidurus the thirde ſonne of Morindus, beganne his dominion ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſand.ix . C.xv.& ruled yeres.v. Cap.xlii.pag.31.

Elidurus before named, was againe of the Brittones made kyng in the yere of the worlde foure thouſande nine hundred and thirtie, and raigned yeres two. Cap.xlii.pag.31.

Elidurus before named was the thirde time reſtored to the crown, in the yere of the world foure thouſande nine hundred fourtie one, and raigned the thirde time yeres foure.
Galfride ſaith that duryng the life of the foreſaied brethren, this was incloſed in the tower of London, which if it be true, then is it not true that yͤ floure of Hiſtories affirmeth, whiche ſaieth that the tower of London was builded of Caſſibelan. Cap.xliiii.pag.32.

Gurguintus or Gurgyn the ſonne of Belin, was made king of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſande eyght hundred, and foure and thirtie, and raigned ninetene yeres. Capi.xxxii.pag.27.

Guithelinus or Guitellius, called in the Engliſhe Chronicle Guentolyn, the ſon of Gurguintus, was made king of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſand, eyght hundred and thre and fiftie, and raigned yeres ſixe and twentie. Alexander the greate began to raigne about the one and twentie yere of this king.cap.xxxiii.pag.28.

Gorbomannus or after the Englyſhe Chronicle Granbodian, ſonne vnto Morindus, was ordeyned king of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſande, eyghte hundred, ninetie, eyghte, and raigned yeres.xi. Cap.xxxviii.pag.30.

Gorbonianus or Gorbomannus the ſonne of Elidure, was made kinge of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſande, nine hundred, fourtye fiue. And after him raigned two and thirtie kings, as in the ſtorie is declared, the whiche with the ſaied Gorbonianus, by the reaſon that foloweth, occupied yeres foure ſcore & ſixe. And in this time duke Hanibal of Carthage aboute the yere of the worlde fiue thouſande, began to warre againſt the Romaines. And Scipio Affrican vanquiſhed Hanibal about the yere of the world fiue thouſand and nine. And about this time Judas Machabeus duke of Iſraell began to be their captain that is to ſaye: the yere of the worlde.v.M.fourtie and ſixe or there about. Ca.xlvi.pa.33.

Kimerus or Kimere the ſon of Siſillius, began his rule ouer the Britons, in the yere of worlde foure thouſande, eyght hundred, foure ſcore and eyght, and ruled yeres three. Capi.xxv.pag.29.

Lud the ſonne of Hely laſte king of the foreſaied three and thirtie was ſtabliſhed king of Britaine, in the yere of the world fiue thouſand, a hundred thirtie one, and raigned yeres nine. This king made Ludgate the Weſt gate of London, and walled a part of the ſame, and named the citie Caerlud.

Cap.xlvii.pag.35.

To make the ſtories to agree and to keepe the order of yeres begon, firſte it is to bee noted that as ſheweth Ranulph with diuers other, Julius Ceſar made Britaine tributarye to Rome in the eyghte and fourtie yere before the incarnatiõ of Chriſt, or in the yere of yͤ world. v. thouſande. C.li. whiche was in the nineth yere of Caſſibelan. From whence taking from the time of Caſſibelan before the tribute paied nyne yeres, & for the time of the raigne of Lud, eleuen yeres, it foloweth congruently that king Lud began to raigne in the yere of yͤ world fiue thouſande, a hundred, thirtie, & one. And ſo from the laſt yer of Elidure, vntil the beginning of the raigne of Lud, or in the time of the three and thirtie kings, then paſſed a hundred foure ſcore and ſixe yeres.

Mulmutius Dunwallo, the whiche of ſome writers is named Donobant and ſonne of Cloton duke or king of Cornewall, was made kinge of Britain, in the yere of the worlde, foure thouſande ſeuen hundred three ſcore and eyghte and raigned yeres eleuen. This was the firſte that bare crowne in Britain. This alſo founded the towne of Malmeſbury and of Vies. This alſo began the four principall hie waies.

Cap.xxviii.pag.21.

Morindus or Marwith the baſtarde ſonne of Elanius was made king of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſande eyghte hundred ninetie one, and raigned yeres eyghte.

Cap.xxxviii.pag.29.

Siſillius or Cecilius the ſon of Guithelinus beganne his raigne ouer the Britons, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſand, eyghte hundred three ſcore and ninetine, and raigned yeres. vii. Cap.xxxiiii.pag.29.

Vigenius or Migenius with Peridurus his brother, whiche in the Engliſhe Chronicle are named Hyganius and Petitur brethren of Elidurus, depoſed by ſtrength their ſaied brother, and began their raigne in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. ix. C. xxxii. and raigned togither and alone yeres. ix. This Peridurus or Petitur made the town of Pykeryng after the opinion of diuers writers.

Cap.xliiii.pag.32.

¶ This endeth the ſeconde parte that containeth iii. hundred. lxxviii yeres.

¶ The table of the thirde part.

Aruiragus the brother of Guiderius, began to raign ouer the Britaines, in the yere of our Lordes incarnation.xliiii. and raigned yeres.xxx. In this time Glouceſter was builded of Claudius. And in the.xxvi. yere of this kings raigne, whiche was the.lxx. yere of the incarnation of oure lorde, began the firſt perſecution of Chriſten men vnder Nero. ca.lv.pag.41.

Caſſibelan as before is ſaied was made tributary to the Romains, in the yere of the world M.C.li. and raigned after, yeres.vii. Ca.l.pag.28.

Coilus the ſonne of Marius was made king of Britaine in the yere of our lord.C.and.xxvi and raigned yeres.liii. And aboute the.xlv.yere of this Coilus was the fourth perſecution, vnder Marcus Antonius Anulius. Ca.lviii.pag.43.

Guiderius the ſonne of Kimbaline, was made king of Britaine in the yere of oure lordes incarnation.xvi. and raygned yeres.xxviii. Cap.liiii.pag.40.

Kimbelinus the ſon of Thennancius, was made king of the Britõs in the yere of the world v.M.c.lxxx. and raigned yeres xxxv. All writers agree that raigning this king, our ſauioure Jeſus Chriſte was incarnate. And then began the.vi.age.

Cap.liii.pag.39.

Of the time of this King Kymbelinus raygn, diuers authours trete very darkely, for fewe of them doe not accompte any yeres, for the time of hys raygn, except Peter Pictauenſis, & the authours of the Engliſhe boke, which affirme him to raigne.xi. yeres. But Galfride of Monmouth ſaith, that when he had raigned ten yeres, he begat twoo ſonnes. But the floure of Hiſtories witneſſeth him to raigne.xxxv.yeres, and that Jeſus Chriſt was borne in the.xix.yere of his raigne, whiche with other Chronicles or times doeth ſomewhat better agree.

Lucius the ſonnes of Coilus began his raigne ouer the Britons in the yere of our Lord an C.lxxx. and raygned yeres.xii. This was the firſt chriſtẽ king in Britaine. Cap.lix.pag.44.

Of this Lucius authours do doubtfully treate. For Galfride ſaieth that Lucius died in the yere of our lord.c.lvi. And Guido de Colũpna ſaieth, that Lucius was chriſtened in the foreſaied yere. And Peter Pictauienſis ſaith that Lucius began to raigne in the yere of our lord c.lxxx. and ỹ he receiued ỹ faith in.viii.yere of his raigne. And the Flour of hiſtories ſaith that he raigned.xii.yeres after the faith by him receiued. Furthermore, it is ſheweth in a certain Table hanging on the North parte of the quere of Paules in London, that the ſaied Lucius was crownd king of Britaine in the yere of grace.c.xiii.and that he raigned.lxxvii.yeres.

And the Engliſhe Chronicle agreeth therwith of his coronation, but it ſaieth that he raigned but onely.xii.yeres. And ſo there appeareth a greate diſcorde betwene theſe writers.

But all agreen that the ſaied Lucius was conuerted to the faith in the time of Eleutherus Pope of Rome, whiche after the concordaunce of manye Hiſtories, was made Pope aboute the yere of oure lorde. C.lxxviii. Wherefore Galfridus ſaiyng is to bee denayed, that ſaieth he died in yͤ yere of grace, C.lvi. & alſo the ſaiyng of Guydo for receiuynge of the faith.

And rather we oughte to giue credence to the foreſaied table or to Peter Pictauienſis, that affirmeth the ſaied Lucius to raygne.xii.yere. But ſome writers that wrote the actes and the raignes of kinges, haue ouerſkipt as it ſemeth the time, whiche Lucius raigned before he receyued the faith. And if he reygned before he receiued the faith.xx. yeres, and that he receyued the faith in his.xx.yere, and raigned after fiftene yeres, they haue accompted the.xv. yeres, which he raigned as chriſten king, and haue let paſſe the other.xx.yeres. And ſo it is to be thought that they foreſaied authour Peter Pictauiens did. Whiche reaſon being allowed, the ſaid Table may agree with the ſaied Peter, without anye great difference, whiche teſtifieth the ſaied Lucius to raigne lxxvii.yeres as kinge. After whoſe death, in ſo muche that he died withoute anye lawfull heyre, a great diſſention ſprang among the Britons, that endured by.xv.yeres, as ſhall apeare by the ſequell. Trueth it is after al hiſtories, that Seuerus a Romaine, ſucceded Lucius in Britaine. But becauſe the time is not certainly ſette when the ſaied Seuerus ſubdued the Britons, therefore it is to be noted that when it was ſhewed to the Romaines of the ſedition and diſcorde of the Britons, and of the ſleyng of the Romains then being in Britaine, the Senate ſent thither the foreſaied Seuerus, with twoo Legions of men. Whiche bare them ſelues ſo mãfully, that in ſhort while he compelled the Britons to obey to the Senate. Whiche Polichronicon affirmeth to bee about the yere of our lord.c.xcv. In whiche yere as hath Jacobus Philippus, the ſaied Seuerus began to raigne ouer the Romaines. But that diſagreeth frome other Chronicles. For Eutropius, Matheolus, & the foreſaied Jacobus Philippus ſaieth, that when the ſaied Seuerus had ſubdued the Arabies, Parthes and Gallis, after many batails, he came into Britaine. Where he being troubled with diuers chaunces, at laſte died in the towne of Yorke.

Whereby it is ſuppoſed that in the ende of his raigne, he came hither, and about the.xii. yere of hys raigne ouer the Romains, whiche was the yere of our lorde.cc.vii. and that after he raigned ouer the Britons.v. yere. Wherefore it euidently appeareth, that the foreſaied diſ corde endured.xv.yeres, which time Britaine was without a king.

Marius, which the Engliſh Chronicle nameth Weſtmere, ſonne of Aruiragus, was made king of Britaine, in the yere of our lord.lxxiiii. and raigned.lii yeres. Cheſter towne of this king was founded. Weſtmerlande alſo of this king toke his name. And aboute the.xxi.yere of this kinges raigne, was the ſeconde perſecution, vnder Domicianus. And alſo the thirde perſecution about the.xxv.yere of this king vnder Traianus.
Cap.lvii.pag.42.

Temancius or Tenancius brother to Caſſibelan, was of the Britons ordeyned king, in the yere of the worlde.v.thouſande.C.and.lvii. and raigned yeres.xxiii. Cap.lii.pag.39.

¶Thus endeth the third parte
whiche containeth.CC.
lvi.yeres.

¶The table of the.iiii.part.

ALlectus a Duke or Senatour of Rome, began hys dominion ouer the Britōs in the yere of our lord.cc.xxvi. and raigned yeres.vi.
Cap.lxiiii.pag.49.

Aſclepeodotus, or after the Engliſh booke, Aſclepiades, began his raign ouer the Britōs, in the yere of our lorde God.cc.xxxii.and raigned yeres.xxx. The ſixte perſecution of chriſtemen was about the yere of our lord.cc.xxxviii.vnder Maximian. The.vii.perſecution was in the yere of our lord.cc.lv.vnder Decius. In the which Fabian than B.of Rome was martyred. The.viii.perſecutiō was in the yere of our lord.cc.lx.vnder Valerian whiche was the xviii.yere of this Aſclepiodotus. Cap.lxv.pag.50.

Baſſianus the ſonne of Seuerus, began his raygne ouer the Britons in the yere of oure lorde.cc.xii.and raygned yeres vii. Cap.lxii.pag.47.

Caraſſius a yonge and luſtie Britaine, of vnknowen bloode, by ſuche meanes as in his ſtorie is ſhewed, began his dominion ouer the Britons, in the yere of oure lorde.cc.and.xviii. and ruled yeres eyghte.
Cap.lxiii.pagi.48.

Here again authours forget the yeres of yͤ kinges folowing. Of whiche I will not greatlye meruayle. For in this time much diſcention was amonge the Romaine princes, and alſo among the Britons ciuill war ceaſed not. For they were ſo ſtirred with diſcencion and warre that none coulde occupied the kyngdome anye determinate time. For whiche cauſe & ſuche like, authours could not aſſigne any certaine to the Princes, as me ſeemeth. But that we maye come to ſome knowledge, Polichronicon ſheweth that Conſtancius that was father vnto Conſtantine the greate, was ſent by the Senate into Britaine, aboute the yere of oure lorde. CC.lxxix. and in the.ii. yere of Probrus Emperoure, that he ſhoulde ſubdue the Romains Coelus then their king. From the whiche time of the comming of the ſaied Conſtantius vntil the laſt yere of Baſſianus, accompting backeward, there paſſed. lxi.yeres. In the time of the whiche yeres, there raigned in this Iſlelande theſe iiii. kinges, that is to ſaye: Caraſſius, Alectus, Aſclepiodotus and Coelus.

Coelus or Coyl earle of Colcheſter, by exiting of the Britons, was made king of Britaine in the yere of our Lorde cc.xlii. and raigned.xxvii.yeres This king after moſte writers made the towne of Colcheſter in Eſſex. Ca.lxvi.pag.50.

Conſtancius a Senatour of Rome by reaſon of marriage knitte with Elein doughter of Coelus, beganne to raigne as king of Britaine, in the yere of our Lorde. CC.lxxxix. and raigned yeres.xxx. The.ix.perſecution of ẏ chriſten men, was vnder Aurelianus. Sainct Albon Prothomartyr in the time of this Conſtãcius as ſome haue, in the.x. perſecution, whiche was vnder Diocleſian & Maximian, was martyred.

Capi.lxvii.pag.51.

Conſtancius ſurnamed the greate, ſonne of Conſtancius and of the holye Heleyn, began his raign ouer Britaine, in the yere of our Lorde.iii.c.xix. and raigned as king yeres tenne.

Cap.lxviii. pag.53.

Gracianus an officer or feed knight of Maximius, began to oppreſſe the Britons, in the yere of our Lord.iii.c.xc. & tiranniſed yeres.iiii. Ca.lxxiiii.pa.60.

The ſtories agree, that after that Gracian was ſlaine, Britaine was vexed a long while with often diſſencions and ciuill warre. But how long this diſcord did laſt, authours treate diuerſly, for ſome ſay it laſted.l. yere, and ſome.xl. and ſum.xxx. Therfore to know the certaintie, it is requiſite that we diligently ſearch, how many yeres paſſed from the laſt yere of Gracian vntill the beginninge of the raigne of Conſtantine, or the certaine time when Conſtantine was made king. Who as witneſſeth Guido was crowned at Ciceſter in ẏ yere of our Lorde.cccc.xxxv. The floure of hiſtories ſaieth alſo, that in the thirde yere of Theodocius the yonger Emperour, Conſtantin began to rule the Britons. Whiche Theodocius began to raigne in the yere of our Lorde CCCC.xxxi. Whereby it appeareth that from the laſte yere of Gracian vntill the beginning of Conſtantine, there paſſed aboute.xl.yeres. But the verye trewe rule is, that in the yere of grace. CCCC.li. the Saxõs firſt perced Britaine, and in the thirde yere of Vortigerne. Frõ whiche takinge a waye for the raigne of Vortigerne, and from the raigne of Conſtancius fiue

0811

yere from the raigne of Conſtantine . x . yere, it foloweth that the ſaied diſcention or miſerie of the Britons laſted.xxx. ix.yeres full . And here ended the tribute that was paied to the Romaines, that had endured aboue foure hundred yeres.

Maximius or Maximianus, the ſonne of Leonine brother to Traherne vncle to Heleyne, began his raigne ouer Britain in the yere of our lorde thre hūdred.lxxx.and raigned yeres.ix.
Cap.lxxii.pag.58.

Sainct Vrſula with her felowes in this kings time were martyred of Enanus ⁊ Melga.

Of this foreſaied kinge called Maximius or after ſome Maximianus, writers diuerſly ſpeake, ſo that ſome ſaye he raigned few yeres . But in the concordaunce of chronicles, it plainly appeareth that the ſaid Maximius began to raigne ouer the Britons , in the yere of our Lorde.iii.c.lxxxii.and that he was ſlaine of Theodoſius the elder, the thirde yere of his raigne, which began to raigne in the yere of oure Lorde.iii.c. lxxxviii. And ſo apeareth plainly that he raigned nine yeres.

Octauius duke of Jeſſes or Jeweſſes, ⁊ after named Weſtſaxōs by extort power begā to raigne ouer the Britons, in the yere of our Lord three hundred and nine and twentie , and raigned yeres fiftie and foure.
capi.lxxi.pagi.56.

Seuerus Emperour of Rome as before is ſhewed in the.xii. yere of his Empire, and yere of our lorde twoo hundred and ſeuen, began his raigne ouer the Britons, and raigned as kyng yeres fiue.

The firſte perſecution of the chriſten men , was vnder thys Seuerus about the yere of our lorde two hundred and tenne.
cap.lxi.pag.46.

¶Thus endeth the fourth
parte that includeth
CC.and.xxv.
yeres.

¶The line of the kynges of Fraunce.

Pharamundus the ſon of Mercomirus , beganne his raigne as firſt king of Fraunce, in the yere of oure Lorde foure hundred and twentye , and the miſery of the Britons the.xxvi. yere, and raigned yeres eleuen.
cap.lxxviii.pag.66.

Clodius or Clodio , or after ſome Crinitus or Capillatus, the ſonne of Pharamūde, was ordeyned the ſeconde kinge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord foure hundred and thirtie one, and the thirtie ſeuen, of the miſerie of the Britons , and raygned yeres ninetene.
capi.lxxix. pag.67.

¶The table of the fifte parte

Aurelius Ambroſius the ſecond ſonne of Conſtantine and brother to Conſtancius the Monke, ſlaine by reaſon

of Vortiger, was made king of Britaine in the yere of our lord iiii.c.lxxxi. and the .xi. yere of Childerich then king of Frãce and raigned yeres .xix. In this kinges time aboute the yere of our lord .iiii.c.lxxxii. began the kingdom of the Southſaxons vnder Ella and his ſõnes. And alſo in this kinges time that is to ſaye, in the yere of our lorde cccc.xcii. began the kingdom of Eſtangles vnder Uffa. But Guido ſaith it began in the yere of our lord .v.c.lxx. as appeareth.
cap.xciiii.pag.80.

Arthurus the ſonne of Uter began his raigne ouer the Britons in the yere of our lorde .v.c.and.xvi. and the .iii. yere of Lothari⁹ then king of Frãce, & raigned yeres .xxvi. In this kinges time the kingdom of Saxons began vnder Serdicus aboute the yere of our lord .v.c. & twentie. cap.c.iiii.pag.92.

Aurelius Conanus the neuew of Conſtantine, begã his raign ouer Britain, in the yere of our lorde .v.c.fourtie.vi. the thirtie two yere of Lotharius, & raygned yeres two. In this kings time the kingdome of Northhumbers began vnder Ida, aboute the yere of our lorde .v.c. and fourtie.vii. ca.c.viii.pa.96

Conſtantinus the brother of Aldroenus king of litle Britain began his raigne ouer muche Britain. Anno dñi.cccc.thirtie thre, & the thirde yere of Clodio then king of Fraunce, and raigned yeres ten. ca.lxxx.pa.68.

Conſtantius the ſon of Conſtantine, before time a Monke, was made king of muche Britain in the yere of our lord .iiii.c.xl.iii. and the thirtene yere of Clodio then kinge of Fraunce, and raigned yeres fiue.
Cap.foure ſcore. pa.68.

Childericus or Hildericus the ſonne of Meroneus, was ordeined kinge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord foure hundred and ſixtie; and the twelfe yere of Vortiger then king of Britaine, and raigned yeres twentye and foure.
Cap.foure ſcore and.vi. pa.74.

Clodoueus the ſonne of Childericus or Hildericus before named was ordeyned kinge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord foure hundred, foure ſcore and foure, & the thirtie yere of Aurelius then king of Britaine, & raygned yeres thirtie.
This was the firſt chriſtẽ king which receiued the faith of S. Remegius, aboute the yere of our lord foure hundred ninetie nine. Whereby it appeareth that the faith came into Britaine aboute .ccc. yere before it came into Fraunce.
Cap.ninetie ſeuen. pa.82.

Clotharius or Lotharius the ſonne of Clodoueus began his raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of oure lorde, fiue hundred and fourtene, and the fouretenth yere of Uter kyng of Britaine, and raigned yeres fiftie. cap.c.pa.87.

Conſtancius the ſonne of Cador began his raigne ouer the lande of Britaine, in the yere of our Lord fiue hundred fourtie and three, and the twentie and nine yeare of Lotharius then kyng of Fraunce, and raigned yeres three. Totila Kyng of Oſtragathoris, aboute this time ſpoyled Roome and other cities in Italye.
Cap. hundred and ſeuen. pa. 95.

Chilpericus the thirde ſonne of Clotharius, beganne his raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde fiue hundred, ſixtie foure, and the fouretenth yere of Malgo then king of Britaine, and raigned yeres fouretene.
Cap. a hundred. xii. pa. 100.

Careticus a Britaine of vncouth birth, beganne his tyrannye ouer the Britons, the yere of our Lorde fiue hundred eyghtie and ſixe, and the twoo and twentie yere of Chilpericus then Kyng of Fraunce, and tyranniſed yeres thre.
Cap. cxviii. pag. 112.

Here is to bee noted that after the ſaied Careticus was expulſed out of Britain, the Britons a bode in Cambria & thoſe parties, & foughte often with the Saxons. Of whoſe captaines from this Careticus vntill Cadwan the ſtorie remembreth none. Yet by the concordaunce of other chronicles & hiſtories, it appeareth that betwene yͤ laſt yere of Careticus & beginning of the raign of Cadwan, there paſſed about. xxiii. yeres, as appeareth by the ſequel. Furthermore in this time Ethelberte king of Kent receyued the faith about the yere of our lord. vi. c. xc. vi. This Ethelbert builded Paules church. And about the yere of oure lorde. vi. c. xiiii. began the kingdom of Eſtſaxons vnder Sebertus.

Cadwanus Duke of Northwalis, was of the Britons choſen king, and began to raigne ouer a parte of Britons, in the yere of our lord ſixe hũdred. xiii. and the. xxv. yere of the ſeconde Clothaire, & raigned yeres. xxii. In this kinges tyme, the kingdom of Mercia began vnder Penda. ca. c. xxviii. pa. 133

Cadwallus the ſonne of Cadwan, began his raigne ouer a part of Britaine, in the yere of oure lorde ſixe hundred thirtie fiue, and the fourth yere of the firſte Dagoberte then kyng of Fraunce, & raygned yeres fourtie and eyghte.
Capi. c. xxxiii. pagi. 142

Clodoueus the yonger ſonne of Dagobertus, beganne hys raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord. vi. c. xlv. the. x. yere of Cadwall then king of Britain, & raigned yeres. xvi.
Capi. cxxxvi. pag. 150.

Clotharius the third of that name, and ſonne of Clodoueus was made king of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde. vi. c. lxii. and the. xxvi. yere of Cadwall than Kynge of Britaine, and

raigned yeres foure.
capi.c.xxxvii.pagi.151.

Childerius or Hilderious the thirde ſonne of Clodoueus, began his raigne ouer ẏ Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde. D. lxix. and the. xxxiii. yere of Cadwall yet king of Britaine, and raigned yeres two.
Capi.c.xxxix.pagi.152.

Cadwaladrus, or after Bede Cedwalla, ſonne of Cadwallo, began to rule the Britons, in the yere of our lord. vi. hundred foure ſcore and three, and the twelueth yere of Theodoricus then king of Fraunce, and rayned yeres three.
Capi.c.xli.pag.154.

Of the time of the raigne of this Cadwallader, authours write diuerſly, and ſhew of him as of two ſeuerall perſons. For Galfride and other ſaye, that when he had raigned. xii. yeres, he went to Roome, and there of biſhop Sergius was monke, and died in the yere of our lorde. v. hundred, thre ſcore ninetine, whiche ſaiyng differeth far from other authours. For Guydo de columna ſaith in his woorke that he ſhortly gathered of the kinges of Britain that when Cadwallader that alſo is named Cadwalla ſonne of Cadwallon, had peaceablye gouerned Britaine three yeres, he went to Rome, and of B. Sergius was made a monke and ended his life in the yere of our lorde. vi.c.lxxix. whiche ſaiyng Polichroni. in his. v. boke & twētie cha. affirmeth, where he nameth the ſaied Cadwalader king of Britons & Weſtſaxons, and that king Iew or Iue was his ſucceſſor: & ſo by theſe authours and other which Polichronicon alledgeth for hym, as Beda & other, whiche name this Cadwallader Cedwalla, it apeareth ẏ it was one perſone, and ẏ this time he raigned ouer the Britons and Weſtſaxons. And becauſe the kinges of Weſtſaxons in proces of time ſubdued al the other kings, therfore I wil obſerue the order of them, vntil I haue brought this Ilelande to one Monarchy. Here endeth the line of the kings of Britain, which continued from the firſt Brute by. M. viii. c. xxiiii. yeres.

D. Dagobertus the firſt of that name, & ſon of the. ii. Clothaire began his dominion ouer the Frenchmen, the yere of our lord vi.c.xxxi. & the. viii. yere of Cadwan then king of Britain, and raigned yeres fouretene.
cap. thirtie one. pag. 139.

Lotharius or Clotharius the ſonne of Chilpericus begā his raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yer of our lord. v.c.lxxxviii. and the. ii. yere of Careticus then Kyng of Britaine, & raigned yeres and foure fourtie.
capi. twentie two. pag. 118.

Meroneus newew or next of allie vnto Clodio, was made king of the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord. iiii.c.l. & the. ii. yere of Vortiger then king of Britain, and raigned yeres ten
cap. three ſcore fiftene. pa. 73

Cōnſtancius the ſonne of Cador began his raigne ouer the lande of Britaine, in the yere of our Lord fiue hundred fourtie and three, and the twentie and nine yeare of Lotharius then kyng of Fraunce, and raigned yeres three. Totila Kyng of Oſtragathoris, aboute this time ſpoyled Roome and other cities in Italye.

Cap.hundred and ſeuen.pa.95.

Chilpericus the thirde ſonne of Clotharius, beganne his raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde fiue hundred, ſixtie foure, and the fouretenth yere of Malgo then king of Britaine, and raigned yeres fouretene.

Cap. a hundred.xii.pa.100.

Careticus a Britaine of vncouth birth, beganne his tyrannye ouer the Britons, the yere of our Lorde fiue hundred eyghtie and ſixe, and the twoo and twentie yere of Chilpericus then Kyng of Fraunce, and tyranniſed yeres thre.

Cap.cxviii.pag.112.

Here is to bee noted that after the ſaied Careticus was expulſed out of Britain, the Britons a bode in Cambria & thoſe parties, & foughte often with the Saxons. Of whoſe captaines from this Careticus vntill Cadwan the ſtorie remembreth none. Yet by the concordaunce of other chronicles & hiſtories, it apeareth that betwene ẏ laſt yere of Careticus & beginning of the raign of Cadwan, there paſſed about.xxiii.yeres, as appeareth by the ſequel. Furthermore in this time Ethelberte king of Kent receyued the faith about the yere of our lord.vi.c.xx.vi.. This Ethelbert builded Paules church. And about the yere of oure lorde.vi.c.xiii.began the kingdom of Eſtſaxons vnder Sebertus.

Cadwanus Duke of Northwalis, was of the Britons choſen king, and began to raigne ouer a parte of Britons, in the yere of our lord ſixe hũdred.xiii. and the.xxv. yere of the ſeconde Clothaire, & raigned yeres.xxii. In this kinges tyme, the kingdom of Mercia began vnder Penda. ca.c.xxviii.pa.133

Cadwallus the ſonne of Cadwan, began his raigne ouer a part of Britaine, in the yere of oure lorde ſixe hundred thirtie fiue, and the fourth yere of the firſte Dagoberte then kyng of Fraunce, & raygned yeres fourtie and eyghte.

Capi.c.xxxiii.pagi.142

Clodoueus the yonger ſonne of Dagobertus, beganne hys raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord.vi.c.xlv.the x.yere of Cadwall then king of Britain, & raigned yeres.xvi.

Capi.cxxxvi. pag.150.

Clotharius the third of that name, and ſonne of Clodoueus was made king of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde.vi.c.lxii. and the.xxvi.yere of Cadwall than Kynge of Britaine, and

raigned yeres foure.
capi.c.xxxvii.pagi.151.

Childerius or Hildericus the thirde ſonne of Clodoueus, began his raigne ouer ẏ Frenche men, in the yere of our lorde. D. lxix. and the.xxxiii.yere of Cadwall yet king of Britaine, and raigned yeres two.
Capi.c.xxxix.pagi.152.

Cadwaladrus, or after Bede Cedwalla, ſonne of Cadwallo, began to rule the Britons, in the yere of our lord. vi. hundred foure ſcore and three, and the twelueth yere of Theodoricus then king of Fraunce, and raygned yeres three.
Capi.c.xli.pag.154.

Of the time of the raigne of this Cadwallader, authours write diuerſly, and ſhew of him as of two ſeuerall perſons. For Galfride and other ſaye, that when he had raigned.xii. yeres, he went to Roome, and there of biſhop Sergius was monke, and died in the yere of our lorde.v.hundred, thre ſcore ninetine, whiche ſaiyng differeth far from other authours. For Guydo de columna ſaith in his woorke that he ſhortly gathered of the kinges of Britain that when Cadwallader that alſo is named Cadwalla ſonne of Cadwallon, had peaceablye gouerned Britaine three yeres, he went to Rome, and of B. Sergius was made a monke and ended his life in the yere of our lorde.vi.c.lxxix. whiche ſaiyng Polichroni. in his.v.boke & twẽtie cha. affirmeth, where he nameth the ſaied Cadwalader king of Britons & Weſtſaxons, and that king Iew or Iue was his ſucceſſor: & ſo by theſe authours and other which Polichronicon alledgeth for hym, as Beda & other, whiche name this Cadwallader Cedwalla, it apeareth ẏ it was one perſone, and ẏ this time he raigned ouer the Britons and Weſtſaxons. And becauſe the kinges of Weſtſaxons in proces of time ſubdued al the other kings, therfore I wil obſerue the order of them, vntil I haue brought this Iland to one Monarchy. Here endeth the line of the kings of Britain, which continued from the firſt Brute by. M.viii.c.xxvii. yeres.

Dagobertus the firſt of that name, & ſon of the.ii. Clothaire began his dominion ouer the Frenchmen, the yere of our lord vi.c.xxxi. & the. viii. yere of Cadwan then king of Britain, and raigned yeres fouretene.
cap.thirtie one.pag.139.

Lotharius or Clotharius the ſonne of Chilpericus begã his raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yer of our lord.v.c.lxxxviii. and the.ii. yere of Carticus then Kyng of Britaine, & raigned yeres and foure fourtie.
capi.twentie two.pag.118.

Meroneus neuew or next of allie vnto Clodio, was made king of the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord.iiii.c.l. & the.ii. yere of Vortiger then king of Britain, and raigned yeres ten
cap.three ſcore fiftene.pa.73

Malgo the brother of Vortiporius, began his raign ouer the Britons, in the yere of our Lorde .D.lii. and .xxviii. yere of Lothaire forenamed, and raigned yeres after moſte accorde of writers .xxxv. ca.cxi.pag.98.

Theodoricus the brother of yͤ fornamed Lothaire, began his raigne ouer Fraũce, in the yere of our Lorde .vi.c.lxvi. and the .xxx. yere of the foreſaied Cadwall then king of Britain, and raigned yeres .iii.

Cap.C.xxxviii.pag.51.

Vortigerus or Vortigernus duke of Cornewaill or Conſull of Iſſes, was by treaſon made king in the yere of our lord .cccc. lxviii. and the .xviii. yere of Clodio than king of Fraunce, and raigned yeres .xvii. The Saxōs or Engliſhmen, in the .iii. yere of this kings raign firſt entred this Ilande.

Capi.lxxxii. pagi.69.

Vortimerus the ſonne of Vortiger, was made Kyng of Britaine, in the yere of our lord cccc.lxxxiiii. and the .iiii. yere of Childerich thē king of Fraunce and raigned yeres .vii.

Cap.lxxxviii.pag.75.

Vortigernus was againe reſtored to the kingdome, in the .xi. yere of Childerich then king of Fraunce, and raigned yeres .ix. In this kyng his time aboute the yere of oure Lorde foure hundred ſeuentie and ſixe, the kyngdome of Kent the fyrſte kyngdome of the Saxons, beganne vnder Hengiſtus.

Capi.lxxxix. pagi.76.

Vter ſurnamed Pendragon, the yongeſt ſonne of Conſtantine and brother to Aurelius was made king of Britaine, in the yere of our Lorde fiue hundred, and the ſixtene yere of Clodeueus then king of Fraunce, and raigned yeres .xvi.

Capi.c.pagi.87.

Vortiporius the ſoone of Aurelius Conanus, beganne to rule the Britons, in the yere of oure Lorde .D. and .xlviii. and the yere of Clothaire kynge of Fraunce .xxxiiii. andr aygned yeres foure. cap.c.x.pag.98.

¶Thus endeth the .v. parte
whiche includeth
CC.liii.

¶The table of the ſixte parte.

ADulphus, or Ethelwolphus, the ſonne of Egbertus, began hys raigne ouer the Weſtſaxons and other, in the yere of our lord eyght hundred, thirtie, twoo, and the .xvi. yere of Lewes the firſt then king of Fraunce, & raigned yeres .xxii.

Cap.C.lxii.pag.95.

Brightricus of the forenamed bloude of Cerdicus, was made king of Weſtſaxons, the yere of our Lorde .vii.c.lxxvii. and the .x. yere of Charles than kyng of Fraunce, and raigned yeares ſeuentene. Aboute the ninth yere of thys Kynge, the

Danes firſt entred this Iſle, as more plainly appereth in ẏ ſtorie folowyng. capi. clvii. pa. 182.

Clodoueus the thirde of that name, and ſeconde ſonne of the ſecond Theodoricus, was made Kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde ſixe hundred and. xx. and the third yere of Iewe, then kyng of Weſtſaxōs, and reigned yeres. iii. Capi. cxlii. pa. 160.

Childebertus the ſecōd ſonne of Theoriche, began his reigne ouer the Frenche menne, in the yere of our Lorde ſixe hundred, fower ſcore and thirtene, and the ſixt yere of Iewe, yet Kyng of Weſtſaxons, and reigned yeres. xvii. Capi. cxliii. pagi. 160.

Cutbertus the neuewe of Ethelarde, began to raigne ouer the Weſtſaxons, in the yere of our Lorde ſeuen hundred twentie and nine, and the third yere of the ſecond Theodoricus, and reigned yeres ſixtene. Capi. cxlix. pagi. 166.

Carolomanus with Charles ſurnamed the Great, ſoonne of Pepin, beganne to raigne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our lord fiue hundred ſixtie and eighte, and the twentie yere of Kenulphus, and raigned yeres ioyntly, and Charles alone, fourtie and ſeuen. This Charles was the firſt Emperour of the Romaines, of the Stocke of the Frenche men, and raigned. xl. yere. Capi. c. liiii. pag. 175.

Charles the ſeconde of that name, and youngeſt ſoonne of the firſt Lewes, ſurnamed Balled, beganne to raigne ouer the Weſte parte of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde eight hundred fourtie and one, and the nineth yere of Adulpheus, and reigned yeres thirtie and viii. The countrey of Flaunders in this Charles daies beganne firſt to beare name, as after in the eande of his ſtorie is ſhewed. Capit. C. lxiii. pagi. 197.

Charles ſurnamed the ſimple, and ſoonne of the fowerth Lewes, began his raigne ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde nine hundred and fower, and the third yere of Edward, then kyng of Englād, and raigned yeres. xxiiii. Capi. clxxi. pa. 226.

Dagobartus the ſeconde of that name, and ſoonne of Childebert, was aucthoriſed Kyng of the Frenche men, in the yere of our lorde ſeuen hundred and ten, and the. xxiii. yere of Iewe, yet Kyng of Weſtſaxons, and reigned yeres a leuen. Capi. C. xliiii. pag. 161.

Daniell that was named Chilperike, a Clerke, was made kyng of Frenchmen, in the yere of our Lorde ſeuen hundred. xxi and the. xxiiii. yere of Iewe, yet kyng of Weſtſaxōs, and reigned yeres fiue. capi. cxlv. pag. 161.

Ethelardus the neuewe of Iewe, beganne his raigne ouer the Weſtſaxons, in the yere of our Lorde ſeuen hundred twen-

tie an fower, and the third yere of Daniel, then kyng of Fraũce and reigned yeres fiue.
capi.cxlvi.pa.163.

Egbertus, or after the Engliſhe boke Edbright, the ſonne of Alumundus, begã his reigne ouer the Weſtſaxõs, in the yere of oure Lorde ſeuen hundreth fower ſcore and fiftene, and in the twentie and ſeuenth yere of Charles then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres thirtie and eight. This kyng commaunded the Saxons to bee Anglis, and Britaine to bee named Anglia, that is Englande. Chapiter. C. and.lviii.pa.183.

Ethelwaldus theldeſt ſonne of Adeulphus, began his reigne ouer the Weſtſaxõs, in the yere of our Lorde eight hundred fiftie and fiue, and the tenth yere of Charles yͤ Balled, then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned aboute one yere. Capi.clxvii.pa.204.

Ethelbertus the ſecõd ſonne of Adeulphus, was acthoriſed kyng of Weſtſaxons, in the yere of our Lorde eight hundred fiftie ſixe, and the eleuenth yere of Charles the Balled, yet kyng of Fraunce, and reigned ſixe yeres In the tyme of this Kynges reigne, the ſeuenth Jhon, whiche was a woman, was admitted to bee Biſhop of Roome, about the yere of our lorde eight hundreth fiftie and eight, as ſaieth, Jacobus Philippus.
Capi.c.lxviii.pagi.205.

Etheldredus the third ſonne of Adeulphus, was made Kyng of Weſtſaxõs with other, in the yere of our lorde eight hundred ſixtie & three, and the eightene yere of Charles, yet Kyng of Fraunce, and reigned eight yeres. In the tyme of this kynges reigne, ſainct Edmund kyng of Eaſt Angles, was martyred.
Capi.c.lxix.pagi.205.

Eudo or Oddo, the ſoonne of Robert Erle of Angeow, began his reigne ouer the Frenchmen in the yere of our Lorde eight hundred fower ſcore and fiftene and the twentie and three yere of Aluredus, yet Kyng of Weſtſaxons, and reigned. ix. yeres.
Capi.c.lxxviii.pag.222.

Edward ſurnamed the elder, and ſoonne of Alurede or Alphrede, began his reigne ouer the more parte of Englande, in the yere of our Lorde nine hundred and one, and the ſixt yere of Eudo, then Kyng of Fraunce, and reigned twentie and fower yeres. Cap.c.lxxix.pa.223.

Ethelſtanus the ſonne of Edward the elder, began his reign ouer the more part of England in the yere of our Lorde nyne hundred twentie and fiue, and the thirde yere of Rauffe, then Kyng of Fraunce, and reigned xvi. yeres. This Kyng brought Britain or England to one monarchie. But yet after ſum writers, Alurede did it. Capi.c.and lxxxiiii.pag.230.

Edmunde the brother of Ethelſtane, and ſonne of Edward the elder, began his reigne ouer England, in the yere of our lord nine hundred fowertie and one and the ſeuenth yere of Lewes the fifth, then kyng of Fraunce and reigned yeres ſixe. Capi. C. fowerſcore and eight. pag. 242.

Edredus the brother of Edmunde, began his reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our lorde nine hundred fourtie and ſeuen, and the thirtene yere of yͤ forenamed Lewes, yet Kyng of Fraunce, and reigned nine yeres. Cap. lxxxix. pa. 243.

Edwinus the eldeſt ſonne of Edmund, brother of Ethelſtane was annoincted Kyng of Englande, in the yere of our Lorde nine hūdred fiftie and ſixe, and the ſecond yere of Lothaire then Kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres three. Cap. cxcii. pag. 147.

Edgarus the ſecond ſonne of Edmunde, and brother of Edwin, began his reigne ouer England, in the yere of grace nine hundred ſixtie, and the fift yere of Lotharius, then Kynge of Fraunce, and reigned yeres. xvi Capi. cxciii. pag. 248.

Edward the ſonne of Edgare ſurnamed the Martyre, began his reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde nine hundred three ſcore and ſeuentene, and the twentie and twoo yere of Lothair, yet Kyng of France and reigned yeres. iiii.
Capi. cxcvi. pag. 254.

Egelredus the ſoonne alſo of Edgare, was made kyng of England, in the yere of grace. ix. C lxxxi. and the. xxvi. yere of Lothaire, yet Kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres thirtie ſixe.
Capi. xcviii. pa. 156.

Edmund Ironſide, the ſonne of Egelredus, with alſo Canutus, ſoonne of Swanus, began to reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde a thouſande ſeuentene, and the. xix. yere of Robert, then kyng of Fraunce, & reigned one yere. ca. 4. pa. 269.

Edward the Confeſſour, and ſonne of Egelredus, and of Emma his laſte wife, begāne his reigne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lorde a thouſande fourtie three, and the fowerth yere of Henry, then king of Fraunce, and reigned in vertue and holines yeres. xxiiii. In this kynges tyme, the Chapell of Walſyngham was firſte builded, in the yere of our lorde a thouſande. xli. cap. ccx. pa. 281.

Godfrey of Bulion, and not Bolein, in Philippes tyme, gat by ſtrength the citee of Ieruſalem, and was crouned kyng of theſame, in the yere of our lord M. xcix. capit. ccxv. pa. 291.

Hildericus or Childericus yͤ ſecond of that name, & ſonne of Theodoricus, was made Kyng of Frenchmē, in the yere of our lord ſeuen hundred fourtie, and the leuēth yere of Cutbert, then kyng of Weſtſaxōs, and reigned yeres ten. Here endeth the line of Meroueus, and beginneth yͤ line of Pepin. Cap.cl.pa.168.

Hugh Capet the ſonne of Roberte the tiraunte, deſcended of Hugh le graund, began to take vpon hym, or vſurpe the croune of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde nine hundred and nine, and the ix.yere of Egilrede, and ruled yeres.ix. cap.cc.ii.pa.266.

Henry the ſoonne of Robert, beganne his dominion ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde M.xxix.& the.x.yere of Canutꝰ then king of Englande, and reigned yeres xxxi.ca.ccvii.pa.275.

Harolde ſurnamed Harefoot the ſonne of Canutus, began to reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde a thounſande thirtie and nine, and the tenthe yere or Henry, then Kynge of Fraunce, and ruled yeres thre.
Capi.cc.viii.pagi.278.

Hardikinitꝰ or Hardiknought, ſoonne of Canutus and of Emma, was made kyng of Englād, in the yere of our Lorde.M.xli. and the twelfth yere of Henrie, then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres twoo. In this kyng ended ẏ line of the Danes, that had continued in this lande in greate perſecution, aboue.cc.l. yeres. cap.cc.ix.pa.279.

Harold the eldeſt ſonne of the erle Goodwin, began to reigne ouer thengliſhemen, in the yere of our Lorde. M.lxvi. and the eight yere of Philip, then kyng of Fraunce, & reigned yeres.ix.
Capi.cc.xvi.pag.292.

Iewe or Iue, of the bloud of Saxons, or after ſome writers Iuo, began his reigne ouer the Weſtſaxons, to reken after the departyng of Cadwalader, in ẏ yere of our Lorde.vi.C.lxxxvii. & the.xvi.yere of the ſecōd Theodoricus, then kyng of Fraunce and reigned yeres thirtie ſeuen
Capi.c.xli.pag.157.

Kenulphus of the blood and line of Cerdicꝰ, began his reign ouer the Weſtſaxons, in the yere of our lorde.vii.c.xlviii.and the ſeuen yere of Hildericus, then Kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres.xxxi. Capi.lii.pa.171.

Kanutus, whiche in the Engliſhe boke is named Knougth, beganne after the death of Edmunde, to reign alone ouer Englande, in the yere of grace.M. ninetene, and the twentie yere of Robert, then kyng of Fraūce and reigned yeres ninetene.
Cap.cc.v.pag.272.

Lewes Balbus, the ſecond of that name, & ſonne of Charles the Balled, began his reigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of grace.viii.c.lxviii.and the.vi yere of Alurede, then Kyng of Weſtſaxōs, and reigned yeres.ii
Cap.c.lxxiiii.pag.215.

Lewes and Charles, the ſonnes of Lewes Balbus, begā to reigne ioyntly ouer the Frenchmenne, in the yere of our Lorde eight hundred.lxxx.and theight yere of Alurede, then Kyng of Weſtſaxons, and reignes.v.yeres. Cap.clxxv.pagi.216.

Lewes the fowerth of that name, and ſonne of Charles laſt remembꝛed, began his reigne ouer Frãce, in the yere of grace eight hundꝛed. lxxxvi. and the xiiii. yere of Aluredus, yet kyng of Weſtſaxons, and reigned yeres. viii. cap. clxxvii. pag. 221.

Lewes the fift of that name, and ſonne of Charles the Simple, beganne his reigne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our loꝛde nine hundꝛed. xxxiiii. and the nineth yere of Ethelſtane, then kyng of Englande, and reigned yeres. xxi. cap. clxxxvi. pag. 235.

Lotharius the eldeſt ſonne of the fift Lewes, was annointed kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our Loꝛde nine hundꝛed. xl. and the eight yere of Edwarde then kyng of Englande, and reigned yeres after moſte wꝛiters. xxxix
Cap. cxc. pag. 444.

Lewes the ſixt of that name, and ſoonne of Lothair, began his reigne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our Loꝛde nine hundꝛed lxxxvi. and the fift yere of Egelbertus, then kyng of England, and reigned yeres thꝛe. In this kyng endeth the line of Pepin.
Capi. cci. pagi. 264.

Pipinus the ſecond ſonne of Charles Martellus, was firſte made kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our loꝛde ſeuen hundꝛed and fiftie, and the ſecõde yere of Kenulphus then Kyng of Weſtſaxons, and reigned yeres. xviii
Cap. cliii. pag. 172.

Philip the firſt of that name and ſoonne of Henry, began to gouerne the Frenchmen, in the yere of our Loꝛde a thouſande, lxviii. and the ſixtene yere of Edwarde the confeſſour, then kyng of Englande, and reigned yeres. xlviii. cap. ccxv. pa. 291.

Radulphus the ſonne of Richard Duke of Burgoin, began his reigne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our Loꝛde nine hundꝛed twentie and twoo, and the. xxi. yere of Edward, yet king of Englande, and reigned yeres. xii.
cap. clxxxiii. pa. 230.

Roberte the ſoonne of Hugh began to reigne ouer the Frẽchemen, in the yere of our loꝛde. ix. hundꝛed. lxxx, and the eightene yere of Egelredus then Kyng of Englande, and reigned yeres thirtie. cap. cciii. pa. 267.

Sigebertus the neuewe of Cutbert, began his reigne ouer the Weſtſaxons, in the yere of our Loꝛde ſeuen hundꝛed. xlv. and the v. yere of Hildericus the ſeconde, then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres twoo.
cap. cli. pa. 170.

Theodoꝛicus the ſeconde of that name, and ſonne of the ſeconde Dagoberte, beganne his reigne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our loꝛde ſeuen hundꝛed. twentie and ſixe, and the ſecond yere of Ethelardus, then kyng of Weſtſaxõs, and reigned yeres. xiiii. cap. cxlvii. pa. 168.

¶Thus endeth the. vi. parte yͤ conteineth. ccc. lxxi. yeres.

¶The Table for the ſeuenth parte.

Henry ſurnamed beauclerke, and. iii. ſoonne of Willyam Conquerour, began his reign ouer Englande, in the yere of our lorde a thouſande one hundred and one, and in the fourtie and three yere, of the foreſaied Philip yet Kyng of Fraũce, and reigned yeres thirtie and fiue.
Capi. cc. xxvi. pagi. 318.

Henry ẏ ſecond of that name and ſoonne of Geffrey Plantaginet, and of Molde the Empereſſe, beganne his reigne in Englande, in the yere of our lorde a thouſande one hundred and fiue, and the. xix. yere of Lowes theight, then kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres thirtie and v.
Capi. cc. xxxvi. pagi. 354.

Lewes ſurnamed the greate and ſoonne of the firſte Philip, was anoynted king of Fraunce in the yere of our LORDE a thouſande, one hundred, and ſeuen, and the ſixte yere of the firſte Henry, then Kyng of Englande, and reigned yeres. xxix.
Capi. cc. xxx. pag. 328.

Lewes theight of that name and ſonne of Lowes the greate, began his reigne ouer Fraunce in the yere of our Lorde. M. C. xxxvi. and the firſt yere of Stephan, then Kyng of Englande, and reigned yeres fourtie three.
Cap. cc. xxxiiii. pa. 334.

Philip the. ii. of that name ſurnamed a Dieu doñe, ſonne of the eight Lewes, began his reigne in Fraũnce, in the yere of our lorde a thouſand. C. lxxix and the xxiiii. yere of Henry the ſeconde, then kyng of England, and reigned yeres fourtie ⁊ two
Capi. cc. xli. pag. 357.

Stephan Erle of Boloyng, and ſonne vnto the erle of Bleſens, and of the wiues ſiſter of Henry the firſt, began his reign ouer Englande, in the yere of grace a thouſande one hundred thirtie and ſixe, and the laſte yere of Lewes the Greate, and reigned yeres. xix. ca. 232. pag. 333.

Willyam duke of Normandy the baſtarde ſoonne of Robert, the ſixte Duke of the ſaied prouince, begã his reigne ouer the realme of Englande, in the. xv. daie of October, and yere of our Lorde a thouſande three ſcore and ſeuen, and the nineth yere of the firſte Philip, yet kyng of Fraunce, and reigned yeres vpõ xxii. In the twentie yere of this kyng, the Churche of S. Poule with a greate parte of London was burned. This Kyng founded the Monaſteries of Batell and Barmundeſey.
Capi. cc. xix. pag. 300.

William ſurnamed the Red, and ſonne of William Conquerour, began his reign ouer Englande, in the moneth of July, in ẏ yere of our lorde. M. lxxxix. and the. xxxi. yere of Philip fornamed, yet kyng of Fraũce, and reigned yeres. xii. ca. 223. pa. 310.

¶Thus endeth the Table of the firſt volume.

FOr that in the accompting of the yeres of the worlde, from the creation of Adã, vnto the incarnation of Chriſte, been many and ſondrie opinions, as the Hebrewes, whiche accompt for the ſaied terme.iii.M.ix.C.lxiii.yeres, the ſeuentie interpretours reken.v.M.C.xcix. yeres. Some there bee that rekẽ.v.M.lxxx.and.xix.yeres and ſome v.M.cc.and.xxviii.yeres

Fourthe. In the ‡ thirde boke and firſt Chapiter of Policronicõ been alſo ſhewed diuers opinions, whereof the greateſt nomber and moſte certain, is.v.M.cc.yeres. And in other places alſo, ſome reken moe, and ſome haue leſſe, by reaſon whereof the tymes been diuerſly ſet and accoumpted, as the firſt foundaciõ of Rome, the ſubuerſion of the famous Citie of Troie, the firſt buildyng of the citie of London, and diuers other old thinges. But for I ſee, that the accompt of the ſeuentie interpretours is of holie Beda, and many other holy writers, allowed and folowed: therefore I intendyng, to ſhewe in this rude woorke folowyng, what yere of the worlde Brute entered firſte this Iſle, then called Albion, and now England, purpoſe to kepe theſaid accoumpt, whereof the particulers inſewe: That is to witte,

ij.M.cc.xlij 1656. firſte from Adam to Noe was.xxii hundred and.xlii.yeres.

ix.C.xliij. 294. From Noe to Abraham, was.ix C.and.xlii.yeres.

ix.C.xl. 941. From Abraham to Dauid, was ix.hundred and.xl.yeres.

iiij.c.lxxxv. 606. From Dauid to the captiuitie of the Iewes, was.iii.C.v.yeres.

And from the captiuitie to the cõmyng of Chriſte, v.c.lxxxx.yeres. v.C.lxxxix. 466.

The whiche in all make.v.M.C.lxxx.and.xix.yeres. v.M.c.xcix. 3963.

AFter whiche accõpt, moſt accordyng to the purpoſe of this worke, albeit that diuers opinions thereof been lefte in writyng, and of diuers authors: the famous citee of Troie was ſubuerted of the Grekes, as witneſſeth holie Euſebius & other, in yͤ yere of the world.iiii.M.xxiii. iiij.M.xx. 2783.

Alſo folowyng theſaid accompt, as witneſſeth the foreſaied Euſeby and diuers other, the citee of Rome was begon to be builded in the ‡.xi. yere of Ezechias then kyng of Iuda, the whiche yere maketh after the ſaid authours, the yere of the world iiii.M.iiii.C.lxx. And theſaied authours affirme, that theſaid citee of Rome was edified after the ſubuerſion of Troie, iiii.C..xlvii. yeres. By whiche reaſon it muſte folowe, that is was builded in the yere of the worlde, as is aboue ſaied.

It was the firſt yere of Achas: and before Ezechias.xvj. yere, after Euſebius. iiij.M.cccc xliij. 3213.

iiij.c.xxiiij.

Peter Pictauiẽſis and other teſtifie, that Brute entred firſt the iſle of Albion, now called Englande, in the xviii. yere of the prieſt & Iudge of Iſrael named Heli. And as affirmeth diuers auctours, theſaid Heli begamne to rule the Iſraelites, the yere of the third age: That is from Abrahã to Dauid.viii.C.xli. whiche maketh the yeres of the worlde iiii.M.and.xlv. viij.C.lxj. iiij.M.xlv. 2811.

Wherunto if there be ioyned the aboue ſaied.xviii.yeres: then muſt it folowe, that Brute ſhould enter this lande, in the yere of the worlde iiii.M.lxiii. To this agreeth the aucthour of Policronicon, whiche ſaieth that Brute entred Albion.xl. iiij.M.lxij. 2828. xlij.

yeres after the ſubuerſiō of Troie,
xlij. whiche. xl. yeres ioyned to the former
ſaiyng of Euſebius, maketh
theſaid nōber of.iiii.M.lxvii.yeres.

Alſo a writer of hiſtories, called
Iacobus Philippus, affirmeth ẏ
Troie was taken by the Grekes, in
the thirde yere that Abdon or Labdon,
iudged the Iſraelites. Whiche
began his rule ouer theſaid Iſraelites,
after the accord of moſte writers,
in the yere of the worlde. iiii.
iiij.M.xviij M.xx. whereunto if there be ioined
thre yeres for the thirde yere of his
rule, in whiche yere Troie (as before
xlij. is ſaied) was taken, and.xl.yeres
that paſſed or Brute perced Albion:
it muſt folowe, that Brute entred
firſt this iſle of Albion (as before
is ſaid) in the yere of the world
iiii.M.lxiii.

Then by theſe foreſaied reaſons
Brute toke poſſeſſion of this Iſle of
Albion, in the yere of the worlde, as
before is ſaied, before the buildyng
of the citie of Rome, as by the foreſaied
reaſons maie bee alſo proued
iiii.C.vii.yeres: and before the incarnation iiij.c.lxxxij.
of our bleſſed ſauiour, folowyng
theſame accampte, M.C. j.M.c.xxx.
xxxvj.yeres. and.vij.

Thus endeth the accompting of
the yeres of the worlde, from the
creation of Adam, vnto the
incarnation of Chriſt.

The Prologue.

When I aduertiſe in my remembraunce
The manifolde ſtories, in order duely ſette,
Of kynges and princes, that whilom had gouernaunce,
Of Rome and Italie, and other further ſette,
As of Iewes and Grekes, the whiche haue not let,
But that men maie ſee, in order ſeriouſly,
How long the reigned, and how ſucceſſiuely.

Of Fraunce and other, I might likewiſe reporte
To their greate honoure, as of them doeth appere,
But to Englande, if I ſhall reſorte,
Righte miſtie ſtories, doubtfull and vncleare
Of names, of tymes, and of the durante yere
That kynges or princes ruled, that famous iſle
Almoſte vncertaine, how I ſhould guide my ſtile.

And for of cunnyng, I am full deſtitute
To bryng to frame, ſo greate a miſterie:
I nill preſume without other refute
To ioyne ſoche a worke, or it to rectifie
To me it ſemeth ſo farre ſette awrie
In tyme of yeres, to other diſcordaunte
That to my dull witte, it is not atteinaunte.

To bryng in order, a thyng of ſoche weight
And cauſe it to agree, with other olde ſtories,

But to remitte, to them that been ſleight
And ſharpe in Lecture, and haue kepte their ſtudies,
And ſought the bookes of many olde hiſtories
And haue in Chronicles full experience,
To frame ſoche a worke, by their greate prudence.

And I like the prentiſe, that heweth the rough ſtone,
And bringeth it to ſquare, with harde ſtrokes and many,
That the maiſter, after maie it ouergone,
And printe therein, his figures and his ſtorie,
And ſo to worke it, after his proporcinarie,
That it maie appeare, to all that ſhall it ſee,
A thyng right perfecte, and well in eche degree.

So haue I now ſette out this rude warke,
As rough as the ſtone, not commen to the ſquare,
That the learned, and the ſtudied clerke,
Maie it ouer poliſhe, and cleane doe it pare,
Flouriſhe it with eloquence, whereof it is bare,
And frame it in order, that yet is out of ioynte,
That it with old authours, maie agree in euery poincte.

Beſechyng hym that will ſo take the paine,
Or any other, that liſte on this to looke,
Where any errour, in this by hym is ſaine,
It to correcte, and mende this rude booke,
For by hym that neuer yet any order tooke,
Or gree of ſchole, or ſought for greate cunnyng,
This worke is gadered, with ſmall underſtandyng.

Not for any pompe, nor yet for greate mede,
This worke haue I taken on hande to compile,
But onely, bicauſe that I would ſprede,
The famous honoure of this fertile iſle,
That hath continued, by many a long while,
In excellente honoure, with many a roiall guide,
Of whom the deedes haue ſprong, to the worlde wide.

But of thoſe deedes, me liſte not here to ſhewe,
For in the ſequele, thei ſhall well appere,
And in ſhorte proceſſe, and in as woordes fewe,
As I goodly maie, I ſhall linke in fere,
The ſtories of Englande, and Fraunce ſo dere,
That to the reader, it maie well be ſaine,
What kinges together, ruled theſe landes twaine.

And in the principill of the reigne of euery king,

As well of one and other, moare and leſſe,
What yere of the worlde, he tooke his beginnyng,
To guide his realme: and farther buſineſſe,
I will eke take, to ſhewe and expreſſe,
What terme of yeres, euery prince did raigne,
And in what honour he did his tyme mainteigne.

The tyme alſo, how long the Britons ruled,
And how by Saxons, thei laſtely were put out.
Then of Danes, whiche bothe landes defoiled,
By their outrage, and of their furie ſtoute:
Of whom bothe nations ſtoode long in greate doute,
Till Fraunce with them allied by mariage,
And Englande laſtely voided that linage.

Of Rollo the Dane.

Then how the Normaines, by Willyam conquerour,
Entred this lande, and helde the ſeigniorie,
A certain of tyme, till the high gouernour,
Reſtored the bloude of Saxons enterly,
And of the Scottes, that neuer could apply,
To kepe their allegeaunce, but many a tyme rebelled,
And to be true, were full often compelled.

The fatall warre, that hath dured ſo long,
Twene Fraunce and Englande, to bothe their damage,
And of the peace, that hath been vnderfong,
Bothe by greate othes, and eke by mariage,
Of Wales geriſheneſſe, and of their light dotake,
How thei were ſcourged for their vnſtedfeſtneſſe,
With diuers other, whiche I ſhall after expreſſe.

London.

And for that London, that auncientc citie,
Hath euer perſeuered in vertuous nobleſſe,
To the greate honour, as maie conſidered be,
Of all this lande, in wealth and greate largeſſe,
Therfore I thinke ſomewhat to expreſſe,
Of their good order, and ciuile policie,
That thei ſo long haue ruled their citie by.

And of their rulers, as thei are yerely choſen,
To rule the commontie, by their diſcretion,
I ſhall you ſhewe, and to you diſcloſen,
The names of Maiors and Sheriffes of that toune,
And all ſoche actes, as by reuolution,
In their daies fill, ſo that there ſhall appere,
The princes actes, whiche chaunced yere by yere.

Of Fraunce alſo the Chronicle ſhall inſewe,
In his due order, ſo that ye maie knowe,
When thei began their princes to renewe,
And from the ſeruage, when thei were kepte lowe,
Of the Romaines whom thei did ouerthrowe,
And of their names, that thei whilom did chaunge,
Of their firſt baptiſme, and of their names ſtraunge.

Thus in this booke maie you heare and ſee,
Of bothe landes, the Chronicles entiere,
With other maters, whiche regeſtred bee,
Of olde writers, ſoche as wrote full clere,
Actes of princes, doen bothe farre and nere,
And them engroſſed with greate diligence:
Wherby to their folowers, might growe experience.

The diuiſion of the booke.

Into ſeuen partes, I haue this booke diuided,
So that the reader maie choſe where he will,
The firſt conteineth how the Britons guided,
This lande from Brute, Moliuncius vntill:
And from Moliuncius, I haue ſette for ſkill,
To the ninthe yere of kyng Caſſibelan,
The ſeconde parte, for that the Romaines than

Conquered Britain. And thens to Seuerine.
The thirde parte I haue alſo aſſigned.
The fourthe endeth, then at Conſtantine.
The fifte at Cadwaladar, I haue alſo diffined,
At the conqueſt I haue eke determined
The ſixte parte. And of the ſeuenth or laſte,
At our redoubted prince, I haue the ende caſte,

Henry the eight whom God preſerue and ſaue,
And hym defende from all aduerſitie,
Beſechyng them that will the laboure haue,
This booke to rede, or any parte to ſee,
That where defaulte is, it maie corected bee,
Without diſdaine, and thei will ſupporte,
And aide this woorke with all their comforte.

And for this booke, includeth ſtories fele,
And toucheth thynges doen in ſondrie place,
So that one tyme muſt with an other dele,
To kepe the yeres, the tyme, and the ſpace.
Therfore this name ſhall it now purchace,
(Concordaunce of ſtories) by me prouided,
The aucthour, ſans nome finally diuiſed.

The bokes name.

And for this worke maie haue the better ſpede,
To praier me thinketh it is right neceſſarie,
That I ſhould fall, conſideryng my nede:
That I muſt haue, for lacke of due ſtudie,
Where through that cunnyng and perfecte memorie,
Of thynges taken, when I was yong and hinde,
Been farre ſet of, and put from my minde.

By this is ignoraunce now, comen in place,
And obliuion, hath ſet in his foote,
So that knowledge, from me thei doen race,
Wherby in olde aucthours, I might finde ſome boote,
In Latine and Frenche, that in their dities ſwoote,
Theſe olde writers, haue ſo compendiouſly
Sette the olde ſtories in order diligently.

But in this praier, I thinke nought to be vſed,
As didden theſe Poetes, in their olde daies,
Whiche made their praiers, to Goddes abuſed,
As Jupiter and Mars, that in their olde lawes,
were named Goddes, and fained in their ſawes,
That thei were Goddes, of battaile and richeſſe,
And had in them greate vertue and proweſſe.

For what maie helpe, theſe feigned Goddes all,
As Saturne or Mercurie, or yet bright Apollo,
Bacchus, or Neptune, or Pluto the thrall,
Eolus, or Minos, or blinde Cupido,
Or yet that Goddeſſe, the faire Juno.
Diana, or Pallas, or Ceres the free,
Or yet the Muſis, that been thriſe three:

Wherto ſhould I call vnto Caliope,
Mother of Orpheus, with ſwete armonie,
That of eloquence hath the ſouer aintie,
Or to Carmentis, whiche by her firſt ſtudie,
The Latine letters founde out perfectlie,
Sins all theſe were miniſters of God immortall,
And had in them no power diuinall:

wherfore to the Lorde, that is celeſtiall,
I will now crie, that of his influence
Of grace and mercie, he will a droppe let fall,
And ſharpe my witte with ſoche experience,
That this maie finiſhe, with his aſſiſtence,
To the glorie of his name, whiche in heauen is
Where the angels inceſſantly ſyng, gloria in excelſis.

The firſte parte.

¶The firſt Chapiter.

SIns that I haue ſhewed vnto you what ſeaſō and tyme of the yeres of the world, Brute entred firſt this iſle of Albion: me ſemeth, it is conueniente, that I alſo ſhewe how and for what cauſe; it firſte was named Albion. The whiche ſo tooke firſt name, as witneſſeth ‡Strabo and other writers of white cliues or rockes, that ſtād vpō the ſeas ſide, and are farre ſeen in clere wether and brighte daies. Whereof it was of old writers named Albion, as it were the white lande. Whiche ſaiyng affirmeth alſo Ranulphe and diuers other: So that it maie certainly bee knowen, that it tooke not that firſte name of Albine, doughter of Diocleſiā king of Sirie, as in the Engliſhe Chronicle is affirmed. For in all old ſtories or chronicles is not found, that any ſoche kyng of that name, reigned ouer the Siriens, or yet Aſſiriēs: nor yet any ſoche ſtorie, that his xxx. doughters ſhould ſlea their xxx. houſebandes, as there ſurmiſed, was put in writyng. Whiche, if any ſoche wonder had been there wrought, ſhould not haue been vnremembred, of the writers and authours of that parties: conſideryng that many leſſe wonders are put in writyng, by theſaid writers. Wherfore it is more apparaunte, that it tooke that firſt name of Albion, as aboue is ſaid, then of Albine doughter of theſaied Dioclecian.

Bartilmewe.

See Harding of Danās doughters.

And as to the Gyauntes that Brute founde in this Iſle at his ariuall, thei might be broughte into this lande, by ſome meane of ſhippes or other wiſe, rather then to be borne of thoſe women, as there alſo is imagined.

Of this Iſle, the authours Alpherd and Beda tel many wōders, whiche in the firſt boke of Policronicon are ſufficiētly touched, where it is ſaied: that this Iſle is called another worlde. For as ſaieth Solinus, the edge of the Frenche cliffe, ſhould bee the ende of the worlde, if this Iſlande ne wer not. Many other thinges been there ſpecified, the whiche I paſſe ouer.

Ranulphe in the firſte boke, from the. 39. chapiter, vnto the. 60.

This Iſle is cloſed in all ſides with the ſea, and ſtretcheth in lēgth out of the Southe into the Northe, hauing in the ſoutheaſt ſide Fraūce in the South, the lande of Spain, in the North, the countrie of Norwaie, and in the Weſte, the countrie of Irelande. And hath in lengthe from Totneſſe. xv. miles beyonde Michel Stowe in Cornewaile vnto Cateneſſe, vpō. viii. c. miles. And to reken the brede, from ſainct Dauids lande in wales, called Meneuia, to Douer cliffes: it conteineth after moſt writers. ccc. miles. And if it be rekened from theſaied place in wales, vnto Yarmouth in Norfolke, not ſo moche, but leſſe by. lx. miles, after ſome writers. And Beda ſaith it cōteineth ouer. cc. miles. And this Iſle was firſte, as aboue is ſaied, named Albion: and ſecondarely, Britaine after Brute: and thridly, Anglia of Anglis, by commaundemente of Egberte kyng of Anglis, and of Weſtſaxons: albeit that after ſome writers, it was called Anglia, after the name of the quene

Thequantitie of Englande.

Quene of this lande named Anglia: albeeit that threof is founde litle aucthoritie.

This iſle was firſt conquered by the Romaines, and ſo cōtinued unto theim as tributarie, and under their rule, as after in thende of the ſtorie of Gracianus ſhall appere, ouer. cccc. yeres, ſecondly by the Saxons: thirdely by the Danes: and fowerthly by the Normans: and was diuided firſte by Brute in thre partes, as in the ſtorie ſhall appere folowyng.

¶ The. ii. Chapiter.

Geffrie of Mōmouth 1. booke. 2. chapter. &c.

BRute of the auncient and noble bloud of the Troians, diſcended of Eneas, a Troian, ⁊ of the doughter of Priame, king of the Troiās: whiche Eneas receiued of his ſaied wife a ſonne, named Aſcanius, the whiche was king of the countrie of Italie, next after his father Eneas

For ſo it was, that after the fore ſaied citie of Troie was, as before is ſaied, by the Grekes ſubuerted: Eneas, whiche intended to haue ſaued from death the faire Polixena, doughter of kyng Priame, was for that dede by Agamemnon, duke or chief leder of the Grekes, exiled frō Troie, the whiche accompaignied with a greate nomber of Troians, within three yeres after his departyng frō Troie, landed in the countrie of Italie. And there after diuers conflictes and battailes, had with Latinus, then king of Italie: he maried by the agremente of theſaid Latinus, his doughter named Lauinia. Upon the whiche he gat a ſoonne, and named hym Siluius Poſthumus: Of the whiche after ſome writers, deſcended Brutus, firſt kyng of Albiō, But for a more concordaunce of this woorke, and connenience of yeres, as teſtifieth Policronica, Guido de Columna, writer of ſtories, and other: Aſcanius the firſte ſonne of Eneas, gotten upon his firſt wife, had a ſonne named Siluius Eneas: this Siluius Eneas, was father to Brute. Of this is diuers opinions, whereof ſome are manifeſtely ſhewed in the. xviii. Chapiter of the ſeconde booke of Policronicon.

Then it foloweth in yͤ ſtorie: this Brute beyng of thage of. xv. yeres, ſlue his father, in ſhoting at a wilde beaſt. And as ſome authours haue, he ſlue alſo his moder in time of his birth. But for the laſte deede, by agremente of all writers, he was baniſhed the countrie: and after by fortune landed with his company in a prouince of Grece, where at yͤ tyme reigned a king, named Pandraſus or after ſome writers Pandarus: the whiche king, as affirmeth Geffrie of Mōmouth, was linially deſcended of the bloud of Achilles.

In this prouince, Brute founde many Troians, as captiues and thrall to the Grekes, with the whiche he conſpired and foughte with the Grekes ſonderie times: and laſtely for a finall concorde, tooke to wife the doughter of theſaied Pandraſus, named Ignogē. After whiche mariage ſolempniſed: theſaied Brute, by counſail of the Troians, with a certain of Shippes wel victualed, departed out of Grece, and ſoughte his aduenture. Whiche after many daungers of the ſea paſſed, he landed with his companie, in a parte or Iſle of Affrica, named (as ſaieth Guido and other) ‡ Lergeſia. Within whiche Iſle, at thoſe daies ſtode an olde temple, dedicate

Leogetia.

in the honoure of Diua Diana, a Goddeſſe of miſbeleued people. The whiche Temple, when Brute had aperceiued, anon ye yode into it, where knelyng before the altare, with greate deuotion, ſaied theſe verſes folowyng.

Diua potens nemorũ: terror ſylueſtribꝰ apris,
Cui licet an fractus ire per æthereos.
Infernaſq́; domos, tereſtria iura reſolue,
Et dic quas terras nos habitare uelis.
Dic certain ſedem qua te uenerabor in æuum
Qua tibi uirgineis templa dicabo choris.

The whiche verſes are to bee underſtanden in our moder toungue, as after is expouned.

Celeſtiall goddeſſe, that weldeſt frith and woode,
The wilde bore & beaſtes, yͭ fereſt by thy might:
Guider of ſhipmen, paſſyng the ragious floode,
The infernall houſes, for and the yearth of right
Beholde and ſerche, & ſhewe where I ſhal light.
Tell the certaine place, where euerlaſtyngly,
A temple of virgines, to thee I ſhall edifie.

After whiche praier and obſeruaunces, after the Pagan rite, with great deuotion doen, and exerciſed aboute the altare of the ſaied Goddeſſe or Idolle, in thoſe daies vſed: Brute fell in a ſlepe. In tyme of whiche ſlepe, appeared to hym the ſaied Goddeſſe, and ſaied to hym in maner and forme, as foloweth.

Brute, ſub occaſum ſolis trans Gallica regna
Inſula in oceano eſt undiq́; clauſa mari:
Inſula ĩ occeano eſt habitata gigantibus olim
Nunc deſerta quidã, gentibus apta tuis.
Hic de prole tua reges naſcentur, et ipſis.
Totius terræ ſubditus orbis erit.
Hanc pete, namq; tibi ſedes erit illa prehennis
Hic fiet natis altera Troia tuis.

The whiche verſes maie be Engliſhed, as here after foloweth.

Brute, farre by weſte. ouer the lande of Fraunce,
An Iſle in occean there is, all cloſed with the ſea
This Iſle wͭ giãtes, whilom inhabite by chaũce,
Now beyng deſerte, as apt for thy people & thee
In this of thy bodie kinges borne ſhall bee,
And of this Iſle, thou ſhalt be Lorde and king,
Searche this, for here a perpetuall ſea to thee,
And here to thy childrẽ a newe Troie ſhal ſpring

¶ The. iii. Chapiter.

Geff. 1. 8.

WHen Brute awoke, and remembred hym of this viſion: anon he called to hym, ſoche as he moſte truſted, ⁊ ſhewed to thẽ, what he had ſeen and heard. Whereof thei all beyng greatly reioyſed: cauſed greate fires to be made, in the whiche thei caſt wine, milke, and other licours, with diuerſe Aromate and ſpices, of moſte ſweteſt odour, as in thoſe Pagan lawes and rites were vſed.

Whiche obſeruaunce with other doen: with greate ioye and mirthe, thei entred into their Shippes, and pulled vp their Sailes, and tooke their courſe Weſtward. And ſo ſailed by the ſpace of. xxx. daies, paſſyng by many auentures ⁊ daungers, as of Philenes, the Lake called Lacus Salinarum, or Salte Lake, or the place where Salte is made, the Riuer called Malea, and Hercules Pillers, and came laſtly to the ſea Tyrrhen or Turon, wher he encountred with a ſmall nauie of Shippes, of the whiche a Troian and neuewe to Brute, called Corineus was capitain. When either of theim had ſaluted other, and reioyſed of their metyng: Thei together made towarde lande, and landed in the Prouince of Gallia, now called Guyan: of whiche Prouince at that daie, a Prince named Groffarius was ruler. The whiche hauynge knowledge of the landyng of theſe ſtraungers: with his power made towarde theim, and to theim gaue battaile. But the Troians were victours, and ouercame Groffarius with all his knightes.

Philenes auters.

Goffarius

In this battaile was ſlain a noble Troian, and neuewe to Brute, named Turonus, and there buried.

Wherfore in remēbraūce of theſaid Turonus, Brute builded there a citie, and named it Turon, as ſome authors teſtifie. But it ſhould ſeme by the ſaiyng of Policronica, that thilke citie Turon was builded afore: albeit that the author of Cronica cronicarum, affirmeth it to be builded by Brute, in remembraūce of his ſaied coſin Turonus, whiche citie at this daie, is yet of greate fame within the realme of Fraūce.

This doen, theſaied Brute, and
Corineus with their Troiās, toke
again ſhipping, the whiche after.iii.
daies, or fewe daies ſailing, landed
at an hauen or porte in Cornwaile,
named at this daie Totneſſe: and
from thens yode ſerching the lande
and countrie, the yere as before is
2828. ſaied.iiii.M.lxiii. before the buyl-
dyng of Rome, folowyng the fore-
iij.c.lxxxij. ſaid accompte.iiii.C.lxx: before the
incarnation of Chriſte.xi.C.xxxvi.
and before Alexander the great, cō-
D.CCC.j quered the worlde.viii.C.xi. alſo
before any Kyng reigned ouer the
Frenchmen, or that thei were quite
of their trewage again the Romai-
nes,.xv.C.lvi.

¶ The.iiii.Chapiter.

Geff.l.9. REturne we then to Brute which after his lādyng in this iſle of Albiō: circued and ſearched the lande ouer all, and founde it full fertile and plentuous of woode and of graſſe, and garniſhed with many faire riuers and ſtreames. And in his trauailyng the lande, he was encountred with many greate and mightie giaūtes, the which he deſtroied. Emong the which, as reherſeth the Engliſhe chronicle: was one of paſſyng ſtrength, named Gogmagog, the which he cauſed to wreſtle with Corineus or Corine his neuewe beſide Douer: In whiche wreſtlyng that Giaunte brake a ribbe in the ſide of Corineus. Where throughe Corineus beyng ſore amoued, with greate ſtrength ſuppreſſed that Giaunte, and caſt him doune the rocke of Douer. By reaſon whereof, as affirmeth theſaied Engliſhe Chronicle, the place was named, the fall of Gogmagog.

But after that, the name was chaunged, ⁊ called the fal of Douer, whiche to this daie indureth. For this dede ⁊ other, Brute gaue vnto his ſaied neuewe Corineus or Corin, the whole coūtry of Cornwaile

And when Brute had thus deſtroied the Giauntes, and ſearched theſaid iſle of Albion throughly: he commyng by the riuer of Thamis, for pleaſure that he had in that Riuer, with alſo the cōmodities thereunto adioynyng, beganne there to builde a citie, in the remembraunce of the citie of Troye, lately ſubuerted, and named it Troienouaunte, whiche is as moche to ſaie, as new Troie: whiche name indured till the commyng of Lud, after kyng of Britain, vpō the tyme of.M.lxviii. yere. But theſaied king commaunded it to bee called Luddes toune, whiche by ſhortneſſe of ſpeache, is now called London.

Then whē Brute had thus builded this citie, and ſawe that he was ſtabliſhed in this realme quietly: he then by thaduiſe of his lordes, commaunded theſaied iſle and countrie to be called Britain, and his people Britons, ⁊ ſo continued his reigne proſperouſly. In the whiche tyme, he ſtabliſhed and ordred his people to liue in tillyng of their lande, and otherwiſe.

This Brute had receiued of his wife three ſonnes, whereof the firſt was named Locrinus or Locrine, the ſeconde Cambrius or Cambre, and the third Albanactus or Albanakt. To the firſte and eldeſt, he beſet this iſle of Britaine, the whiche after was named middle Englāde, whiche is to meane Troinouaunt, with all the countries there aboute lying, conteinyng Eaſt, weſte, and Southe. And for this cauſe, and for it ſhould ſound toward the name of theſaid Locrine: this parte of Britaine, was longe after called Loegria or Logiers.

Camber.

To the ſecond ſonne Cambre, he beſet or appoincted to him, the coūtrie of Wales, the whiche was firſt named after hym Cābria. This in theaſt ſide was ſometyme departed from England, by the riuer of Seuerne: but now in the northſide, the riuer named Dee at Cheſter, depatted Englande and Wales: and in the Southe the riuer that is called ‡Vaga at the caſtle of Stringling parteth Englande and Wales.

That is Wye, and Chepſtow caſtell.

To the third ſonne Albanakt, he beſet the North part of this iſle, and named it Albion, or more verily the ſaid countrie toke after the name of theſaid third ſonne, and was called Albania. This countrie was after named Scotlande, and is diuided frō Loegria or Logieris, as ſaieth holy Beda, by two armes of the ſea but thei mete not. The eaſt arme of theſe twoo, beginneth aboute twoo miles from the minſter of Eburcurryng, in the weſt ſide of Penultoñ. The weſte arme of thoſe twaine hath in the right ſide (or ſometyme had) a ſtronge citie named Acluid, whiche in the Brettiſhe tong was called Clinſton, and ſtandeth vpon the riuer called Clint.

Alcluith.

Thus when Brute had diuided his iſle of Britain, as before is ſhewed in thre partes, and had holden the principate thereof, nobly by the terme of. xxiiii. yeres, after moſte concordaunce of writers: he died, ⁊ was enterred or buried at Troinonaunte or London.

¶ The. v. Chapiter.

Locrinus or Locrine, the firſte or eldeſt ſoonne of Brute, was made Kyng of Britain, of the coūtrie of Logiers, the yere of the worlde iiii. M.lxxxvii. The whiche held to his parte, as ſaieth Policronicon, and alſo Guydo de Columna, the Countrie that ſtretcheth from the South ſea, vnto the riuer of Humber, as before is expreſſed.

Geff. l. 11.

2852.

While this Locrinus thus reigned ī Logiers: his brother Albanactꝰ being ruler, as before is ſaid of Albania or Scotland, was warried by a Duke, whom the cronicle of England nameth Hūber, the whiche ſlue Albanakt in plain battaile

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that this Humbre, at the daie of his cōmyng into Albania, was not named Hūbre, but after olde writers, he was called kyng of Hunnis, or kyng of Sithia, without other addition.

This king as before is ſaied, after he thus ſubdued Albanactus, helde the lande of Albania, till after that Locrinus with his brother Cābre, gathered a greate power of men of armes, and yode againſte theſaied king of Hunnis, and by ſtrength of their Britons, chaſed ⁊ ſubdued the ſaid Hunnis ſo ſharpely, that many of them with their king were drouned in a riuer, which departeth England ⁊ Scotlāde. And for ſo moch as to the writer of the ſtorie of Britons, his name was declared to bee Humber: therfore the ſaid authour affirmeth, that the ſaid Humber the riuer, tooke the firſte name of hym, whiche yet continueth to this daie.

Furthermore teſtifieth theſaied authoure, that after this victorie thus obteined by theſe two forſaid brothrē: this Locrinus enamoured himſelf vpon a faire wenche named Eſtrilde, and doughter of the fore named Humber, and kept her vnlefully by a certaine of tyme. Wherewith his wife, named Guēdoloena, beyng ſore diſcontente, excited her father and frendes, to make warre vpon theſaied Locrine her houſeband. In the whiche warre laſtely he was ſlain, when he had reigned or ruled Loegria or Logiers, after the concordaunce of moſte writers xx. yeres, and was buried by his father, in the citee of Troinouaunte, leauing after him a yōg ſonne, gotten vpon his wife named Madan.

¶ The.vi. Chapiter.

Geff.l.13. GUendoloena or Guendoleine, the wife of Locrinus, and doughter of Corineus Duke of Cornewaile, for ſo moche as Madan her ſoonne was young to gouerne the lande: was by common aſſent of al the Britons, made ruler of the Iſle of Britaine, the yere of the worlde, iiii.M.C.and.vii. 2872. And ſo hauyng poſſeſſion of theſaied Iſle, well and diſcretly ſhe ruled it, to the comfort of her Subiectes, till the tyme her ſonne Madan came vnto his lawfull age. At the whiche ſeaſon, ſhe gaue ouer the rule and dominion to hym, after ſhe had ruled (as before is ſaied) this Iſle.xv. yeres.

¶ The.vii. Chapiter.

MAdan the ſonne of Locrine and of Guendoline before named, was made ruler of Britaine in the yere of the worlde, iiii.M.C.xxii. Geff.l.13. 2887. Of this is litle or no memorie made by any writers, excepte that ſome write of hym, that he vſed greate tyrannie emong his Britons. Neuertheleſſe, all or the more parte of writers agreen, that he ruled this iſle of Britaine, by the terme of xl. yeres. At the ende of whiche terme, he beyng at his diſporte or huntyng, was of wilde beaſtes or Wolues, ſlaine or deuoured: and left after him two ſonnes, as ſaieth Policronica, named Menpricius and Manlius.

¶ The.viii. Chapiter.

Geff.l.19. MEnpricius the eldeſt ſonne of Madā, was made ruler of Britain, in the yere of the worlde, iiii.M.C.lxii. 2927. But he reigned not lōg ī peace. For his yonger brother Manlius, of malicious and couetous minde intendyng to be kyng, and to expell or ſubdue his brother: Excited the Britons in ſoche wiſe, to rebel again Menpricius, that greate and deadly warre, contineued long emong them. Howbeit, laſtly by meditacion of frendes, a daie of communication in louyng maner, atwene theſe two brethren was appointed. At the which daie of aſſemble, Menpricius by treaſon ſlue his brother Manlius, after whoſe death he liued in more tranquilitie and reſte. Where through he fell into ſlothe, and by meanes of ſlothe, into vnlefull liking and lecherie, and by that vice, into hatred of his ſubiectes, by the takyng of their wiues and children. And finally became ſo vnhappie, that he forſooke his lefull wife and concubines, & fil into the ſinne of Sodomie. Thus from one vice he grewe into an other, ſo that he became odible to God and manne: and laſtly goyng an huntyng, and loſt of his people, was deſtroied of wilde beaſtes, whē he had reigned xx. yeres: leuing after him a goodly yonglyng begotten of his lefull wife, named Ebranke.

¶ The.ix. Chapiter.

Geff.1.13. EBranke the ſoonne of Menpricis, was made ruler of this lande of Britain in the yere of yͤ worlde
2947. foure thouſande an
hundreth.lxxxii. and had, as teſtifieth Policronica, Gaufride, and other writers. xxi. wiues: Of the whiche he receiued. xx. ſonnes, and xxx. doughters, wherof the faireſt was named Gwales, or after ſome Gualea. He ſente theſe doughters to Alba Siluius, whiche was the xi. king of Italy, or the. vi. king of Latines, to the ende to haue them maried to the bloude of Troians. This Ebranke was alſo a man of faire ſtature, & of greate ſtrength, and by his power and might he enlarged his dominion, in ſo moche that he wan and occupied a great parte of Germania, by thaide and help of Latines, & returned thens with great praie and riches. After whiche retourne, he builded the citie of Caerbrāk, now called Yorke: whiche ſhould be as ſaith the auctor, named Flos hiſtoriā, or the Floure of Hiſtories, written in French, in the. xxiii. yere of the reigne of the
2969. ſaied Ebranke. Whiche accompte
to folowe, it ſhould ſeme that Troinouaunt or London, was builded before the ſaied Citie of Yorke, about. C.xl. yeres: ſuppoſyng the citie of London to be begon in the ſeconde yere of Brutes reigne.

Alſo he builded in Albania or Scotland, the caſtell of Maidens the whiche is called Edenborghe. After whiche edifices eanded and made, he with a greate armie ſailed into Gallia, now Fraunce, and ſubdued the Gallis, and returned with greate triumph and richeſſe. And when he had guided this land of Britaine nobly, by the terme of lx. yeres, after moſte concordaunce of writers, he died, and was buried at Caerbranke or Yorke, leuing after hym for his heire, his eldeſte ſonne (as ſaieth Gaufride) named Brute Greneſhielde.

¶ The.x. Chapiter.

BRute Greneſhielde, the Geff.1.14.
ſoonne of Ebranke, was made gouernour of this land of Britain, the yere
of the worlde foure thouſande two 3007.
hundred. xlii. Of this Brute is no memory made touching any fame, excepte that Gaufride ſaieth that he ruled this lande of Britain (his father liuyng) a certain tyme, and after his father by the terme of. xii yeres. The which yeres expired or ended: he died, and lieth buried at Caerbranke or Yorke, leauyng after hym a ſonne named Leill.

¶ The.xi. Chapiter.

LEillus or Leir ſon Geff.1.14.
of Brute Greneſhielde, was made ruler of Britain, in
the yere of yͤ worlde 3009.
iiii. thouſande. CC liiii. This was a iuſte man, and a louer of peace and equitie, and in his tyme made the toune of Caerleir or Carlile, and ruled this land

well & honorably by the terme of xxv. yeres, as teſtifieth the forenamed Gaufride: & after died, & was buried at Caerleir before ſaied.

But of this Leir ſpeaketh ſome deale the aboue named aucthoure Floure of Hiſtories ſaiyng, yͭ in the ende of his reigne he fell to ſlothe and vnlefull likyng of his body: by meane whereof ciuill ſtrife began to growe with in this realme, the whiche was not pacified by ſome termes after his daies, the which ſaiyng is not denied by the forſaid aucthoure Gaufride. This Leill left after him a ſonne named Lud, or after ſome writers, he was named Lud Hurdibras.

¶The.xii. Chapiter.

Rud Hudibras.
Geff.l.14.

3044.

LUd or Lud Hurdibras the ſoonne of Leill, was made ruler of the land of Britain in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. cc.lxxix. This alſo of Gaufride is called Hurdibras: the which after he was ſtabliſhed in his reigne, appeaſed and drewe to accorde of the diſcorde and variaunce, that had ſprong in his fathers liues tyme. The which diſcretly appeaſed and ended, he builded the toune of Kaerkin, now called Caunterburie: the toune alſo of Caergwent, now called Winton or Wincheſter: and alſo a toune called Mount Paladour, now named Septō or Shaftiſburie. In the tyme of building, of whiche toune of Septon, as affirmeth myne acthor Gaufride, an Egle there ſpake certain wordes, the whiche he ſaith he wil not declare or write for any certaintie Thus when this ſaid Lud had ruled this lande noblie by the terme of. xxxix. yeres, he died, and left after hym a ſonne named Baldud.

Caerkein.

¶The.xiii. Chapiter.

Bladud.
Geff.l.14.

BAldud the ſōne of Lud Hurdibras, was made gouernor of Britain in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. iii. C. and. xviii. This as teſtified Gaufride, Policronica, and other, was well and ſufficiently inſtruct in the connynges or ſciences of Aſtronomie and Nigromancie. By theim he made the hote bathes within the toune of Caerbadon, now named Bathe: the whiche Toune or Citie he alſo builded. But to that repugneth Willyam de Malmeſburie, ſaiyng that the foreſaid hote bathes wer made by the induſtrie, or of the induſtrie of Julius Ceſar firſt Emperour of Rome. This Baldud as affirmeth the foreſaied aucthoure Gaufride: taught this lore of Nigromācy through his realme: and finally tooke in it ſoche pride and preſumpſion, that he tooke vppon hym to flie in the aire. But he fell vpon the temple of his God Apollin, and thereon was all to torne, when he had ruled Britain by the ſpace of twentie yeres, leuyng after hym a ſonne named Leir.

3083.

Nota, that the hotte Bathes of Bath, wer made by Nigromācie.

¶The.xiiii. Chapiter.

Geff.l.15.

LEir the ſoonne of Baldud, was made ruler ouer the Britōs, the yere of the worlde. iiii. thouſande, three hundred and. xxxviii. This Leir was noble of condicions, and guided his land and ſubiectes in greate wealth. He made the toune of Caerleir now called Leiceter or Leiceſter. And albeit that this man helde long the principate of Britain: yet of him is nothyng lefte worthie memorie, excepte that Gaufride ſaith, yͭ he receiued of his wife three doughters onely

3203.

onely

Regan.

onely without any ſonne, whiche were named Gonorilla, *Ragan, and Cordeilla, ŷ whiche he moche loued, but moſte ſpecially he loued the yongeſt Cordeilla by name.

When this Leir or Leith after ſome writers, was fallen into impotente age, to knowe the mynde of his three doughters, he firſt aſked Gonorilla the eldeſt, how well ſhe loued hym: the whiche callyng her Goddes to recorde, ſaid: ſhe loued him more then her owne ſoule. With this anſwere the father beyng well contented, demaunded of Ragan the ſeconde doughter, how well ſhe loued hym. To whom ſhe aunſwered, and affirmyng with greate othes, ſaied that ſhe could not with her toungue expreſſe the greate loue that ſhe bare to hym: affirmyng furthermore, that ſhe loued him aboue all creatures. After theſe pleaſaunte anſweres had of thoſe twoo doughters, he called before hym Cordeilla the yongeſt. The whiche vnderſtādyng the diſſimulation of her twoo ſiſters, entendyng to proue her father, ſaid: moſte reuerente father, where my twoo ſiſters haue diſſimuled with thee, with their pleaſaunt wordes fruteleſſe, I knowyng the greate loue and fatherly zeale, that towarde me euer before this tyme thou haſte borne (for the whiche I maie not ſpeake to thee, otherwiſe then my conſciēce ledeth me) therfore I ſaie to thee father, I haue loued thee euer as my father, and ſhall continually while I liue, loue thee as my naturall father. And if thou wilt further be inquiſitife of the loue that I to thee beare: I aſcertain thee, that aſmoche as thou art worthy to bee beloued, euen ſo moche I loue thee and nomore.

The father with this anſwere being diſcontente: maried his twoo elder doughters, that one vnto the Duke of Cornewaill, and that other vnto the Duke of Albania or Scotlande, and deuided with thē twoo in mariage his land of Britaine after his death, and the one halfe in hande, duryng his naturall life. And for the thirde Cordeilla, reſerued nothyng.

It ſo fortuned after, that Aganippus, which the chronicle of England named Agamp and kyng of Fraunce, heard of the beautie and womanhode of Cordeilla, and ſent vnto her father, and aſked her in mariage. To whom it was aunſwered, that the king would gladly giue to hym his doughter, but for doware he would not departe with: for he had all promiſed vnto his other twoo doughters.

Aganippus thus by his meſſengers enformed: remēbred the vertues of the forenamed Cordeilla, and without promeſſe of doware, maried theſaid Cordeilla.

But here is to bee noted, that where this Aganippus or Agamp is called in diuerſe chronicles king of Fraunce: it cānot agree with other hiſtories, nor with the Chronicle of Fraunce. For it is teſtified by Policronica, by Peter Pictauience, by maiſter Robert Gagwine, by Biſhoppe Antonine and many other chronicles: that long after this daie was no Kynge in Fraunce, nor long after it was called Fraunce: but at this daie the inhabitauntes thereof were called Galli, and were tributaries vnto Rome without kyng, till the time of Valentinianus Emperoure of

Rome, as hereafter in this worke ſhall be manifeſtly ſhewed.

The ſtorie of Britōs ſaith, that in the tyme that Leir reigned in Britain: the land of Fraunce was vnder the dominion of twelue kinges, of the whiche Aganippus ſhould be one. The whiche ſaiyng is full vnlike to bee true, whiche might be proued by many reaſons that I paſſe ouer for lēgth of time.

¶ The.xv. Chapiter.

THen it foloweth in the Storie, after this Leir was fallen in age, theſe foreſaid two dukes thinkyng long or the Lordſhip of Britaine, was fallen to their handes: aroſe again their father (as teſtifieth Gaufride) and berafte hym the gouernaunce of the land, vpon certain conditions to be cōtinued for terme of life: the whiche in proceſſe of tyme, more and more were miniſhed, as well by Maglanus, as by Henninus, huſbandes of the fore named Gonoril and Ragan. But moſte diſpleaſed Leir the vnkindneſſe of his twoo doughters, conſideryng their wordes to hym before ſpokē and ſworne, and now found and proued thē al contrary.

For the whiche he beyng of neceſſitie conſtrained: fled his lande, and ſailed into Gallia, for to be cōforted of his doughter Cordeilla. Whereof ſhe hauyng knowlege, of naturall kindneſſe comforted him: and after ſhewyng al the mater to her huſbande, by his agrement receiued hym and his to her Lordes courte, where he was cheriſhed after her beſt maner.

Long it wer to ſhewe vnto you, the circumſtaunce of the vtterans of the vnkyndeneſſe of his twoo doughters, and of the woordes of comfort giuen to hym by Aganippus and Cordeilla, or of the counſaile and purueighaunce, made by theſaied Aganippus and his Lordes, for reſtoryng of Leir again to his dominion. But finally he was by the helpe of theſaid Aganippus reſtored again to his lordſhip, and ſo poſſeſſed, liued as ruler and gouernour thereof by the ſpace of.iii. yeres after. In whiche ſeaſon died Aganippus. And when this Leir had ruled this lande by the terme of‡.xl.yeres, as affirmeth diuerſe chronicles, he died and was buried at his toune of Caerleir or Leiceſter: leuing after him for to inherit the lande, his doughter Cordeilla.

‡.lr.

¶ The.xvi. Chapiter.

Geff.1.16.

COrdeilla the youngeſte doughter of Leir, was by aſſent of yͤ Britons made ladie of Britain, in the yere of yͤ world iiii.M.iii.C.and,xcviii. the which guided the lande full wiſely by the tyme or ſpace of.v.yeres complet. The whiche tyme expired and ron her twoo nephewes called Margan and Cunedagius, ſoonnes of her two ſiſters came vpō her land, and made therin greate waſte and deſtructiō, and at the laſt toke her and caſte her into a ſtrong priſon, where ſhe beeyng diſpeired of the recouerie of her eſtate (as teſtifieth Gaufride) ſlue her ſelf, when ſhe had reigned, as before is declared, by the terme of.v.yeres.

3163.

¶ The.xvii. Chapiter.

Geff.1.16.

CUnedagius and Marganus nephewes as before is ſaied, of Cordeilla, departed this land of

Britain betwene them, in the yere 3168. of the worlde fower thouſande.iiii hundred and thre. That is to wit, the Countrey ouer and beyonde Humber, fell to Margan toward Cateneſſey: and the other parte of Southe. the lande toward yͤ Weſt, as reherſeth Gaufride, fel to Cunedagius.

After twoo yeres were ronne and ended, ſome euil diſpoſed came vnto Margan, & ſaied, that to him it was greate reproche and diſhonour (conſidering that he was comen of Gonorilla the eldeſt ſiſter, and of Maglaunus her huſbande, and Cunedag was deſcended of Ragan the yonger, and Hemnius her huſbande) that he had not the rule of all the lande, to whiche ſedicious perſones Margan giuing credēce, was ſuppreſſed with pride and couetous, and anon by their counſaill aſſembled a greate hoſte and made warre vpō his ſaid brother, brennyng and deſtroiyng his land without mercie. Wherof Cunedag beyng ware, in all haſt gathred his people: and after certain meſſage ſente to hym of the reconciliatiō, ſeyng there was no peace to be made, but by the iudgement of bataill, he met with his brother in plaine field: where the Goddes were to him ſo fauourable, that he ſlue moche of the people of his brother, and compelled him to flee. After whiche victorie thus had, he purſued Margan from countrey to countrey, til he came within the countrey or prouince of Cambria or Wales: in the whiche countrey theſaied Margan gaue an other battaile vnto his brother Cunedag: but for he was farre the weaker, he there was ouercomen and ſlaine in the field. Whiche field or countrey, where theſaid Margan foughte and was ſlaine, is to this daie called Glaumargan, whiche is to meane in our vulgare tonge, Marglan lande. And thus was Margan ſlaine, when he had reigned with his brother two yeres.

¶ The.xviii. Chapiter.

CUnedagius before named, yͤ Geff.l.16. ſonne of Hemnius and Ragā yonger doughter or middell doughter of Leir, was made ruler and lorde of al Britain, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande.iiii 3170. hundred and fiue. Of the which is nothyng worthy memorie lefte in writyng: but that he guided the land after the death of his brother well and honorably, by the terme of.xxxiii.yeres. After which terme ended, he died, and was buried at Troinouant or London: leauyng for his heire a ſoonne (as teſtifieth Gaufride) named Riuallo or Rinallo, or after ſome writers Reingnolde.

¶ The.xix. Chapiter.

RIuallus the ſōne of Cu- Riuallo. Geff.l.16. 3203. nedagius, was made gouernoure of the Britons in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.iiii.C.xxxviii. the whiche of writers is called: Fortunate and Reſtfull. This Riuallus ruled the Britons with greate ſobreneſſe, and kept the land in great wealthe and proſperitie. Albeeit that of hym is lefte no ſpecialle memorie of acte doen in his tyme, except myne aucthor ſaith, that in tyme of his reigne it rained bloud, by the ſpace of thre daies continually, within the lande of Britain. After the whiche raine enſued ſo greate exceding nomber and multitude of flies, the whiche were to the people ſo noyous and contagious, that thei ſlue moche people. And after that (as ſaieth an olde aucthoure, whoſe name is vnknowen) enſued greate ſickeneſſe and mortalitie, to the greate deſolation of this ſaied lande.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, when this Riuallus had reigned, after moſte concordaunce of writers, by the terme of.xlvi.yeres, he died, and was buried, as teſtifieth theſaid old aucthor, at Caerbrāke or Yorke, leauyng after him a ſōne (as witneſſeth Gaufride) named Gurguſtius.

In the tyme of yͤ reigne of this kyng, after moſte concorde of writers: The famous Citie of Rome ſhould bee builded, as is ſhewed more plainly in the treatiſe, in the beginnyng of this worke.

¶ The.xx.Chapiter.

Geff.I.16.

GUrguſtius the ſonne of the forenamed Riuallus was made ruler of Britaine, in the yere of the world fower thouſande, fower hūdred.lxxxiii. This in the chronicle of Englande is named Gorbodiā, ſonne of Reignold. Of the whiche is litle memorie made, other of his reigne or of his deedes, by any aucthors or writers of the hiſtorie of Britain, except that the aboue named olde aucthor, and the aucthor called the Floure of hiſtories witneſſeth, that he reigned.xxxviii.yeres: leauyng after hym none heire of his bodie begotten, and laſtely died and was buried by his father at Caerbranke or Yorke.

iiii.M.cccc. lxxxiiii. 3249.

Rome.

Rome as aboue is touched, was firſt builded and edified in the time of Riuallus, and after moſte writers in the yere of the world fower thouſande, fower hundred and.lxx after the building of Troinouant or London fower hundred ſeuen yeres: whiche folowyng that accompt, ſhould be in the.xxxii.yere of the foreſaied Riuallus.

Euſebius hath.iiii. M cccc.xliii 3208.

¶ The.xxi.Chapiter.

Geff.I.16.

SIſillius, or after ſome writers, Siluius yͤ brother of Gurguſtius, as affirmeth the foreſaied olde chronicle, was made chief ruler of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.v.C.xxi.

3287.

This in the Engliſhe booke is named Seizil. Of the which is no mētiō made, nother of his reigne, nor deedes, except that Geffrey of Monmouth writer of Hiſtories of Britons, ſaieth: that he reigned twoo yeres. whiche ſaiyng is not accordaunte with other writers. But more to the cōueniēce of time. and agrement of other chronicles, accordyng to the ſaiyng of the fore named olde aucthor: he reigned by the terme of.xlix. yeres, and after died, and was buried at Caerbadon or Bathe, and lefte after hym none heire of his bodie begotten.

He ſaieth nothyng, but onely nameth hym.

¶ The.xxii. Chapiter.

Geff.I.16.

IAgo or Lago, the coſin of Gurguſtius, as witneſſeth Gaufride, as nexte inheritoure, was made gouernor of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde fower. M.v.C. lxx. This alſo is vnminded of writers, other for reſtfulneſſe of tyme, or els for rudeneſſe of his deedes, that clerkes liſte not to ſpend any tyme in writyng of ſoche deedes. Of hym is nothyng ſpecified, ſauyng the forenamed old aucthour ioyneth to his tyme of reigne.xxv yeres.: and alſo he ſaieth he died with-

3336.

without iſſue, and was buried by his coſin at Caerbranke or Yorke.

❡The.xxiii.Chapiter.

Geff.l.16. Kinimacus the ſonne of Siluius, as ſome writers haue, but more veritable, as ſaieth the old chronicle, ẏ brother of Lago, was made ruler of Britain, in the yere of the worlde fower.M.v.C.xxv. 3361. the whiche (as his brother before him) paſſed his tyme w̄out any notable actes or dedes: ſo that of him is no more memorie made, then of his brother. For the more partie, thei that wrote the feites and dedes of Britons, make but a ſhort reherſall of theſe.v.kinges, that is to ſaie: frō Riuallo to Gorbodug, ſaiyng that after Riuallo ſucceded Gurguſtius, after hym ſucceded Lago, to Lago ſucceded Kinimacus, and after Kinimacus ſucceded Gorbodug. Of theſe fiue kynges or rulers is made litell other mention. Then it foloweth in the ſaied old chronicle, that when this Kinimacus had reigned.liiii.yeres he died, and was buried by his brother at Caerbranke or Yorke: leauyng after hym a ſoonne, as teſtifieth *Flos Hiſtoriarum*, whiche ſoonne was named Gorbodug.

❡The.xxiiii.Chapiter.

Geff.l.16. Gorbodug the ſoonne of Kinimacus, was made ruler of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde, folowyng the foreſaid accompt, fower M.v.C.xlix. Foure.M.vi.C.l. 3415. Whiche alſo paſſed his tyme like vnto the forenamed dukes or kynges, without any ſpeciall memorie of honoure noted by writers, this by moſte likelyhode to bring hiſtories to accord: ſhould reigne ouer the Britons the terme of.lxiii.yeres. Which terme ended, he died, and lieth buried at newe Troye or London, leauyng after hym twoo ſoonnes named Ferrex and Porrex, or after ſome writers Ferreus and Porreus.

❡The.xxv.Chapiter.

Geff.l.16. Ferrex with Porrex his brother, ſōnes of Gorbodug: were ioyntly made gouernors and dukes of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde iiii.M.vii.C.and.xi. and continued Foure.M.vii.C.xiii. 3478. in amitie a certaine tyme. After whiche tyme expired, as witneſſeth Policronica and alſo Gaufride, Porrex beyng couetuous of lordſhip, gathered his people, vnweting Ferrex his brother, entendyng to deſtroye hym. Whereof he being warned, for lacke of ſpace to aſſemble his people for ſauegarde of his perſone, fledde ſodainly into Gallia or Fraunce, and aſked aied of a duke of Gallia, named by Gaufride Gūhardus or Suardus, the whiche duke aided hym, and ſente hym again into Britain, with his hoſte of Gallis. After whoſe landing his brother Porrex with his Britons hym mette, and gaue to him battaill: in the which battaill Ferrex was ſlain, wt the more part of his people. But here diſcordeth myne aucthoure with ſome other writers, and with the Chronicle of Englande: for thei teſtifie that Porrex was ſlain, and Ferrex ſuruiued. But whether of them was liuyng, the mother of theſe twoo

‡Indon. brethren named‡Widen, ſetting a part al motherly pitie: with helpe of her women, entered the chāber (of hym ſo liuyng) by night, & him there ſlepyng ſlue cruelly, and cut into ſmalle peeces. And thus died the twoo foreſaid brethren, after thei had thus ruled Britaine, in warre and peace, to the agremēt of moſte writers fiue yeres.

¶The.xxvi. Chapiter.

HEre now endeth the line or offſpring of Brute, after the affirmaunce of mooſte writers. For Gaufride ſaieth, after the death of theſe forenamed brethren, greate diſcord aroſe emong the Britons, the which long time emong them continued: by meene whereof, the people and countrey was ſore vexed and noyed vnder v. kinges. And further ſaith Guido de Columna, that the Britons abhorred the linage of Gorbodug for ſo moche as firſt, that one brother ſlue that other, and more for the innaturall diſpoſition of the mother, yͭ ſo cruelly ſlue her owne child. The chronicle of Englande ſaieth, that after the death of the two forenamed brethrē, no rightfull inheritour was lefte on liue. Wherfore yͤ people were brought into greate diſcorde, in ſo moche that the land was deuided in. iiii. partes. So that in Albania was one ruler, in Loegria or Logieris another ruler, in Cambria, the. iii duke or ruler, and in Cornwaile, the fowerth duke or ruler. But of theſe. iiii. dukes thengliſhe Chronicle alloweth Clotō Duke of Cornwail, for moſt rightful heire Policronica ſaith, that after yͤ death of the forſaid two brethren greate diſcorde was in the lande, which greued the people ſore, vnder. v. kynges. But he nother reherſeth the names, nor the tymes of their reignes, except he addeth to, that theſaid diſcord continued till the tyme of Mulmutius Dūuallo. So that here appeareth no time certain, how long this variaunce and diſcord emong the Britons continued. But who ſo liſte to looke vpon a draught, made by me in Engliſhe, in the beginnyng of this boke: he ſhall ſe there (if he pleaſe to caſte ouer the tymes and yeres there expreſſed) that this foreſaied diſcorde continued nere to the terme of. li. yeres. In whiche draught or conceit, if any man here finde errour, of his goodnes let him amende and correct it, and all other plates where he ſhall by good profe find place of correctiō.

¶The. xxvii. Chapiter.

THus here endeth the firſte part of this worke, conteining or diuided in. vii. partes, as before is ſhewed. And this firſt part is to be accompted from the firſt yere of Brute, vnto yͤ laſt yere of the forſaid diſcord, or vnto the firſt yere of Mulmutius: whiche includeth. vii. C. iiii. yeres.

¶Thus endeth the firſte parte.

An Addition of Robert Record.

The. v. kynges that be omitted here, are founde in certaine old petigrees: and although their names bee moche corrupted in diuerſe copies, yet theſe are the moſte agreableſte.

Rudaucus kyng of Wales.
Clotenus kyng of Cornewale.
Pinnor kyng of Loegria.
Staterius kyng of Scotlande.
Yeuan kyng of Northumberlande.

¶ The ſeconde parte.

¶ The. xxviii. Chapiter.

Geff.l.16. Mulmutius Dūuallo, oꝛ as ſome haue Dūuallo Mulmutius, the ſonne of Clotē, as teſtifieth the Engliſhe boke, and alſo Gaufride: was vēqueſhoure of the other Dukes oꝛ rulers, and began his reigne ouer the whole monarchie of Bꝛitain, in the yere of the woꝛlde. iiii. M. Foure.M. vii.C.lxix. 3554. vii. C. ⁊. xlviii. This is named in the Engliſhe chꝛonicle Donebāt: the whiche was a noble manne, and cauſed to bee made within ẏ citie of Troinouant a temple, and named it the Tēple of peace. The whiche after ſome opinions, is that place oꝛ feld, where the market of wollen clothe is holden, called oꝛ named Blakwelhall. He alſo made many good Lawes, thē whiche were long after vſed and called Mulmutius lawes. Theſe Lawes. lawes holie Gildas wꝛote with greate diligence, out of the Bꝛetiſhe ſpeche into Latin. And long tyme here after, that Aluredus king of Englande, tourned thoſe lawes out of latine into Engliſhe. He alſo gaue priuilege to tēples, to ploughes and cities, and to the waies ledyng to the ſame. And as ſome aucthours witneſſe, he begā the. iiii. hie waies of Bꝛitain, the whiche were finiſhed and perfected of Belinus his ſonne, as after at length ſhall bee declared. The old Chꝛonicle teſtifieth that this Mulmutius, whiche he in his boke named Molle, made the. ii. tounes of Malmeſbury and Vies And all other wꝛiters affirme ẏ this Mulmutius, after he had ſtabliſhed his lande, and ſette his Bꝛitons in good and conuenient oꝛder: by the aduice of his loꝛdes, he oꝛdeined hym a croune oꝛ diademe of golde, and cauſed himſelf to be crouned with greate ſolemnitie, after the vſaunce of the Pagane lawe then vſed. And foꝛ this cauſe, after the opinion of ſome wꝛiters, he is named ẏ firſte king of Bꝛitaine. And all the other befoꝛe reherſed are named Rulers, Dukes, oꝛ Gouernours.

Then it foloweth in the ſtoꝛie, whē Mulnutius had guided the lande well and honoꝛably, by the terme of. xl. yeres: he died and was buried in the foꝛeſaied Temple of Peace, within Troinouaunte oꝛ London, leauyng after him twoo ſones, named Belinus ⁊ Bꝛēnus.

¶ The. xxix. Chapiter.

Geff.l.17. Belinus and Bꝛennus the twoo ſoonnes of Mulmutius: began to raigne ioyntly as kynges of Bꝛitain, in the yere of the woꝛld. iiii. M. viii. 3574. C. and. viii. ſo that Belinus held to hym Loegria oꝛ Logiers, wales and Coꝛnewail: and Bꝛennus helde to his parte all the lande ouer and beyonde Humber. With whiche particion either of theim was contented and pleaſed, as teſtifieth Policronica, by the terme of. v. yeres. After the which terme ended and expired, Bꝛennus entēdyng to haue moꝛe lande, oꝛ all: aroſe againſt his bꝛother Beline, and made vpō hym moꝛtall war. In the whiche warre, Bꝛennus was ouer ſet, and was compelled to flie the land, and ſaile vnto Armoꝛica now called litle Bꝛitaine,

oꝛ

Elſingius

Guiclidacꝰ

or as ſaieth Gaufride, into a coũtrie called Allebrog, as after ſhall bee more plainly declared, ⁊ there allied hym after ẏ foreſaied terme (as before is ſaied) of fiue yeres was expired as affirmeth Polichronica. For Gaufride ſaieth in his boke, made of the hiſtorie of Britons, that after the terme of v. yeres aforeſaied were expired and runne, Brennus by ſteryng of yong and euill counſail, intendyng as before is ſaied: ſailed vnwetyng his brother into Norwaie, ⁊ there maried the doughter of Elſũge or Elſyng, then ruler or Duke of Norwaie. When this was ſhewed vnto Belin, cõſidering the ſodain departyng: in all haſt he ſeaſed Albania and al the other lande apperteinyng to Brẽne into his owne hande, and ſtrengthed the Cities and other ſtrõg places, with his owne ſouldiers. Wherof whẽ Brenne was warned: he in all poſſible haſt aſſẽbled a great people of the Norwaies, and toke his ſhippyng to ſail into Britain. And as he was kepyng his courſe vpon the ſea: he was encountred with Guilthdacus kynge of Denmarke, the whiche hadde lien in awaite for hym, for the loue of the wenche that Brẽnus had maried: for before tyme he had required her of Elſunge her father. When theſe two fletes were met: ſtrong ſhot and fighte was vpon bothe parties. But finally the Danes ouercame the Norwaies or Norganes, and tooke the Shippe by ſtrength, whiche the wẽche was in, ẏ whiche anon was brought vnto the Shippe of Guilthdake: and Brenne with a fewe of his Shippes left, was faine to ſauegarde hymſelf by flight.

Whẽ Guilthdake had thus obtained the victorie, entendyng to haue ſailed toward Denmarke: in ſhorte while after the tempeſtes came ſo hidous vpon the ſea, that his nauie was diuided and ſcatered that one frõ the other, in ſoche wiſe that he was in feare to haue been drouned. And at the ende of fiue daies, not wetyng where he was, with fewe ſhippes landed in the countrie of Northumberland where at that tyme was Beline prouidyng defence again his brothers commyng. Whereof when worde was brought vnto Belin, of the landyng of the foreſaid Danois prince, with a ſmall company, he reioyſed it, and cõmaunded him with his ſhippes and cõpanie to be put in ſure hold and kepyng.

It was not long after but Brẽ had reculed and gathered togither the more part of his nauie before (as ye haue hard) chaſed. And whẽ he had them newly rigged and vitailed, he hearyng of the arriualle of Guilthdacus in Northumberlande with his wife, ſent wordes of manace vnto his brother Belin willyng hym to ſende vnto hym his wife, wrongfully rauiſhed by Guilthdacus, and alſo to reſtore vnto him his lande and patrimonie, or els he would ſhortly inuade his lande, it for to waſte, and his enemie to deſtroye. The whiche deſire or requeſt of Belinus was plainly and ſhortly denied which knowlege had: Brennus ſhortely after landed in a parte of Albania and made towarde his brother, and his brother towarde hym: ſo that their hoſtes met nere vnto a woode, named at that daie Calater oꝛ Calaterium, wher betwene them was a moꝛtall battaill, in ſo moche that moche people fell vpon bothe parties. But laſtly the Bꝛitons wanne the field, and chaſed the Noꝛganes oꝛ Noꝛwaies vnto their ſhippes, chaſyng and ſlayng them without pitie. And as affirmeth mine auctoꝛ, the fight was ſo cruell ⁊ ſharpe: that there was ſlain to the nomber of .xl.M. men.

After this diſcomfiture, Bꝛene was conſtrained to flee, and with fewe in nomber, recouered the lande of Gallia.

Belinus hauyng thus victoꝛie of his enemies, after thãkes and oblations made vnto his goddes, after the Pagane Lawe: he then aſſembled his loꝛdes at Caerbꝛãk oꝛ Yoꝛke, to haue their aduiſe what he ſhould dooe with the Pꝛince of Denmarke. In the whiche counſaile it was cõcluded, that the foꝛeſaid Guilthdacus ſhould hold and do homage to the king of Bꝛitain foꝛ the land of Denmarke, and yerely beare to hym a certaine Tribute. Whiche doen with ſuretie ⁊ hoſtages taken: the ſaied Guilthdacus with his loue was ſet at libertie and leue, to retourne into his owne countrey: whiche yerely tribute, as teſtifieth the Engliſhe Chꝛonicle, was a .M. pounde.

¶ The .xxx. Chapiter.

Geff.l.18.

THen it foloweth in the hiſtoꝛie, whẽ Beline had thus victoꝛie of his enemies, ⁊ was alone poſſeſſoꝛ of this realme of Bꝛitaine: the lawes befoꝛe made by his father he cõfirmed, and oꝛdeined iuſtice to be miniſtered thꝛough the land. And foꝛ ſo moche as the .iiii. waies begon by his father were not perfited and ended: he therfoꝛe cauſed woꝛkemen to be called, and ſette them to paue with ſtone the ſaied waies, that thei might ſufficiently be knowen of all waiegoers oꝛ trauellers of the countries, as hereafter enſueth.

Polichꝛonicon.l.45

The firſte of theſe fower waies was named Foſſe, the whiche ſtretched out of the Southe into the Noꝛthe, and beginneth, oꝛ at that daies began, at the coꝛner of Totneſſe in Coꝛnewaile, and paſſed foꝛthe by Deuonſhire, Somerſetſhire, and ſo foꝛthe by Tutburie vpon Cotteſwolde, beſide Couentre vnto Leceſter, and from thens by wilde plaines toward Newerke, and endeth at the citie of Lincolñ.

The seconde waie was named Watlyngſtrete, the whiche ſtretcheth ouerthwarte yͤ waie of Foſſe out of the Southeſt into the Noꝛtheſt. This began at Douer, and paſſeth by the middell of Kente, ouer Thames beſide London, by Weſt of weſtminſter, and ſo foꝛth by ſaincte Albanes, in the Weſte ſide of Dunſtable, of Stratfoꝛde, of Touceter, ⁊ of Wedon, by ſouth Killingburne oꝛ Killebourñ, by Athirſtoñ, vnto Gilbertes hill, that now is named Wꝛekin, ⁊ ſo foꝛthe by Seuarñ, paſſyng beſide Woꝛkceſter, ⁊ foꝛthe vnto Strattoñ to the middle of Wales, vnto a place called Cardican, at the Iriſhe ſea.

Lilleboꝛne

The thirde waie was named Ermyngſtrete. The whiche ſtretcheth out of the Weſte Noꝛthweſt vnto the Eaſt Southeaſt, and beginneth at Meneuia, the whiche is in ſainct Dauis lande in Weſte wales, and ſo ſtretcheth foꝛth vnto Southe Hamptoñ.

Rikenilde ſtrete.

The fowerth and laſte waie is called or was called Rikeneldisſtrete. The which ſtretcheth forth by Woceſter, by wicombe, by Birmingham, by Lichefield, by Derby, by Cheſterfield, by Yorke. And ſo foorthe vnto Tinemouthe: the whiche was ſufficiently made. He graunted and confirmed them al ſoche Priuiledges as before were graunted by Dūuallo his father. The which priuileges with other lawes by hym made, who that is deſirous to knowe: let him rede ouer the tranſlation that holy Gildas made of Mulmutius lawes, out of the Brittiſhe ſpeache into Latine, and there he ſhall ſee the circumſtaunce of euery thyng.

In this while that Belin was thus occupied, aboute the nedes of his lande, his brother Brenne beyng, as before is ſaied, in a Prouince of Gallia, takynge ſore to minde his expulſion from his naturall countrey, not hauyng any cōfort how he might attain to his former dignitie, laſtely reſorted (with twelue perſones onely accompanied) vnto the Duke or ruler of that prouince or countrey.

For ye ſhall vnderſtande that at thoſe daies) as teſtifieth Eutropius and other writers) the Gallis occupied diuers Countries. And therefore Titus Liuius, whiche wrote the actes and deedes of the Romaines, made diſtinctiō of the Gallis, and nameth theim that Brenne lad, when he beſieged the citie of Rome and after the Capitoill, Senonenſes Galli, which is to name the Gallis of that countrie, where the citie of Sena then ſtoode and yet doeth (as teſtifieth the aucthor of Cronica Cronicarum, and other) in a countre of Italie named at this daie Etruria. The whiche citie, as affirmen the ſaid aucthors, was firſt builded of the foreſaid Gallis, in the tyme of Brenne beyng their duke or leder, before the comming or incarnaciō of Chriſt. iii. C. lxxx. and. vi. yeres: whiche maketh the yere of ẏ world folowynge the accoumpte of this worke fower thouſande eight. C. and. xiii. yeres. 3578.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, whē Bren was comen to ẏ preſēce of ẏ duke named by myne aucthor Gaufride, Seginus duke of Alebrog, the which is to be vnderſtād, duke of Armorica, now named litle Britaine, as by Policronica & the Engliſhe Chronicle is ſufficiētly declared, and ſhewed vnto hym his aduerſitie and trouble: theſaid duke receiued hym into his court. And for he was perſonable & well manered, hauyng great experiēce in hawkyng and huntyng, and other properties apperteinyng to a gentleman: he had hym in ſhorte while in eſpeciall fauoure, before any noble man of his courte. By meane whereof, he laſtely maried his doughter, vpon condition that if he died without iſſue male, that he then ſhould be ruler of the countrey. And if it happened hym to haue an heire male: ẏ then it notwithſtandyng, to aide and helpe him to recouer his land before loſt

Allobroges be the inhabitantes of the Dolphins lande, and not of Britaine.

The whiche conditiōs well and ſurely vpō the dukes partie, by the aſſente of the nobles of his lande aſſured: theſaid duke within compaſſe of theſame yere died. After whoſe death when by a cōuenient terme, it was knowē that the ducheſſe his wife was not with child:

all

al the lordes to Brēne did homage and became his men. To the whiche Lordes, the more to win their loues, he departed moche of his treaſoure: and ſhortly after with their aſſent gathered a greate armie, and ſo in all haſte ſailed into Britain, to make newe warre vpō his brother Beline, & after a certain tyme there landed. Of whoſe landyng when Beline was informed: he in all haſte gathered his Britons in greate nomber, and made toward hym, as to his mortall enemy. But the mother of the two brethren named Connuuēna, or after the Engliſhe boke Cornewey, conſideryng the mortall hatered attwene her twoo children, and in partie of their bothe perſones: of a motherly and natural pitie, wēt attwene her two ſonnes, and vſed her in ſoche diſcrete maner and motherly compaſſion, as ſhewing her breaſtes and other demanures, that at length ſhe accorded theim. After whiche accorde, bothe brethren with their lordes and frēdes, ſped them vnto Troinouant or Lōdon, and there after many thynges ordered and made for the weale of the land: thei condeſcended and agreed, to lede their both hoſtes into Gallia, for to ſubdue to the theſaied countrey. And in as good haſt as thei might prepare for ẏ iourney, thei toke ſhippyng, and ſo ſailed into a parte of Gallia, brennyng and waiſtyng ẏ Countrey without pitie. And as witneſſeth myne aucthoure Gaufride, in a ſhorte while thei ſubdued a greate parte of Gallia, Italie, and Germania.

Conwēna

But here I intende to leue the farther proceſſe of myne aucthour Gaufride, for ſo moche as he varieth frō other writers of aucthoritie, as Eutropius, Titus Liuius, and other, that did great diligēce in writyng of the deedes and actes of ẏ Romains, and of other people dwellynge at thoſe daies in Italie, Gallia and Germania. For where theſaid Gaufride ſaith that at ſoch tyme Belin & Brenne made warre in Italie, Gabius & Porſena wer at that daie conſuls of Rome: that ſaiyng is farre diſcordaunt vnto the other foreſaied aucthours. For as thei affirme at the tyme when Brenne beſieged Rome, Clandius Emilius, & Lucius Lucretius wer conſules, and Furius Camiſlus was at ẏ tyme Dictatour of Rome, and none like vnto the other wer Conſules many yeres before nor after.

They had conſulles, but no tribunes, that time.

But truthe it is that theſaied twoo brethren did many greate actes, in the fornamed coūtries, but not all accordyng with the ſaiyng of theſaied Gaufride. For where he referreth all thoſe deedes to bothe brethren: the fornamed Titus Liuius ſpeaketh but of Brenne onely, as it ſhall ſome dele be touched hereafter. Wherfore to folowe the moſte writers: whē Belin had dwelled a certain of time with his brother Brenne in thoſe parties, by agremente of thē bothe, Belin retourned into Britain, & Bren remained there.

Iuſtine & others doo name hys brother Belgius.

¶ The.xxxi. Chapiter.

Chap. 19.

WHen Belinus or Belin was returned into Britain: he repaired old cities, and builded vpon the riuer of Uſke a citie, and called it Caeruſke nere vnto the riuer of Seuerne. This citie was after named the citie of Legiōs, for ſo moche as the Legion of the Romaines were lodged within theſame citie, and now it is called Caerleon or Carleō. Alſo he builded an hauen with a gate thereouer within Troynouant, in the ſummet or pinacle whereon was ſet a veſſell of braſſe, in the which was cloſed the aſhes of his brent body, when he was dead. *This gate was lōg after called Belins or Belinus gate, but at this daie it is called Belyngeſgate.

*The building of belinſgate.

In this while that Belinus was thus occupied in Britaine, his brother Brenne deſirous to winne fame and honour, builded in Italy and other partes of Gallia, theſe cities & tounes folowing Mediolana or Millein in Lumbardy. Papia or Papy. Burganā Sena. Comum. Brixia. Verona. Vincentia. Cremona. Mantua.

The whiche cities and tounes were builded of the Gallis, or at the leaſte newe repaired, in the time that Bren was their leader or duke, albeit that ſome writers would meane that Comum and Cremona were builded after Brē was ded. Policronica witneſſeth that the Senons, whiche he meneth by the Gallis dwellyng about the citie of Sena, by the leadyng of Brennus, ouercame the Romaines .xi. mile from Rome, at the riuer Albia, and chaſed them to Rome, and toke the citie vnto the Capitoll, and after laied ſiege to theſame Capitoll. And vpon a night while the wardens of the Capitoll ſlept: the Frenchmen or Gallis by a waie vnder the yerth came into the Capitoll, and were likely to haue wonne it. But a noble Romaine named Mallius or Manlius Torquatus, a woke by the criyng or noiſe of a Gander or Ganders. The whiche Manlius a waking thother Romaines, put of the Gallis. For which cauſe the Romaines long time after helde a feaſt of gāders, ẏ firſt day of Iune

Neuertheles afterwarde thei called it Iunos feaſt, for ſo moche as thei thoughte that Iuno the Goddeſſe had by her influence giuen that grace vnto the ganders that thei ſhould by their noyſe awake the Romaines. But yet the Gallis or Frenchmen held the Romaines ſo ſhorte, that thei were compelled to giue vnto Bren their duke a .M. pound weight of gold as thereof is witneſſe Titus Liuius. And furthermore ſaieth the ſaied Liuius, that the Gallis ſlue of the Senatours many in nomber, the whiche firſt thei ſuppoſed had been goddes, bicauſe of their riche apparell, whiche thei ſat in. But ſhortly after this the forenamed Furius Camillus, whiche was called again from the citie of Ardea, where he was outlawed before, & by the comontie of Rome in this nede made again dictator.

The whiche perſued Bren and his people, and to them gaue battaill, ſleyng of them a greate multitude, and wanne from them all the golde and iewels, that before time the Gallis had wonne of the Romaines. The which dede was doen, as witneſſeth the foreſaied Titus Liuius, the yere after the building of Rome .ccc.lxv. whiche was the yere of the worlde, folowyng the accompt of this worke iiii.M.viii.c.xxxv. & before Chriſtes incarnation kepyng theſame 3576.

387. accompte: thꝛee hundꝛed.lxiiij.

Then it foloweth in the ſtoꝛie of Bꝛen, when he was thus diſcõfited of the Romaines: he turned his people to warde the Macedones oꝛ Grekes, ⁊ diuided his people in twoo hoſtes. Whereof he reteined the one with him, and that other he ſent into a cõtrey called then Gallacia, ⁊ after Gallogreci and laſtly Galates. Then Bꝛenne Galathias ouercame yͤ Macedõs with their Duke Soſtene, and after ſpoiled the Goddes of their temples, and ſaied in his game, riche Goddes muſt giue to mē ſomedele of their richeſſe. Alſo he ſpoiled the temple of the God Apoline Delphicus, ſtandyng in the hill of the mount Parnaſus. Wherfoꝛe as teſtifieth the wꝛiter Policarpus: the people of that countrie, pꝛaied to god foꝛ helpe, and ſodainly the yearth began to quake, and a great part of the hill fell vpon the hoſte of Gallis, and ſlue theim. And after that enſued and fell to groūd hayle ſtones of ſoche greatneſſe, that it ſlue another great part of theſaid hoſt, and duke Bꝛennus was ſoꝛe woūded: wherby he fell in ſoch diſpaire that he ſlue himſelf with his owne ſwearde.

Then ſins I haue here ſhewed vnto you the fine oꝛ ende of Bꝛēnus, I ſhall now retourne my ſtile vnto his bꝛother Belinus, yͤ whiche, as befoꝛe is touched, endeuoured hym aboute the weale of his lande of Bꝛitaine and his people, duryng the tyme of his reigne, in executing of many notable dedes the whiche foꝛ length of time I ouerpaſſe: ſo that laſtely he died and was buried, as befoꝛe is ſaied, at Belins oꝛ Belinus gate, within Troinouaunt oꝛ London, whē he had reigned with his bꝛother and alone, after the moſte concoꝛdaūce of wꝛiters.xxvj.yeres, leauing after him a ſōne called Gurguintus, Gurguint Bꝛabtruc, oꝛ after ſom wꝛiters Gurguint Barberous, whiche is to meane, Gurguint wͭ the redde bearde.

The.xxxij. Chapiter.

Gurguintꝰ oꝛ Gurguint Chap. 20. the ſonne of Beline, was made kyng of the lande of Bꝛitain, in the yere of the woꝛld.iiii.M.viii.C.⁊.xxxiiii. 3588. This in the Engliſhe chꝛonicle is named Coꝛinbꝛatus oꝛ Coꝛinbatus. 3585 The whiche foꝛ ſo moche as yͤ tribute befoꝛe graūted by Guilthdak kyng of Denmarke, vnto the kynges of Bꝛitain foꝛ a perpetuitie, was denaied: he arraied his armie and nauie, and ſailed into Dēmarke, and there waſted and harmed the countrey with yꝛon ⁊ fire: in ſoche wiſe, that at length yͤ king of Denmark, with thaſſent of his Baronage, graunted to paie and to continue the foꝛſaid tribute yerely of a.M.l. After whiche victory thus had of the Danes: he with great triumphe returned toward Bꝛitaine. And in kepynge of his courſe, he encountred with a nauie of.xxx. ſaile beſide the Iſle of Oꝛchades, full of men and women, of whiche flote, yͤ chief capitain was called after moſt wꝛiters Bartholomew. The whiche when he was bꝛought vnto the kinges pꝛeſence, ſhewed yͭ he with his people were put oꝛ exiled out of the countrie of Spain, and wer named Balenſes and had ſailed long tyme vpon the ſea, to the ende to find ſome pꝛince, that would giue to theim a dwel-

Denmark vnto the kyngs of

lyng place, and thei to become his ſubiectes, and holde their lande of hym, beſechyng the kyng to haue compaſſiō of theim, and to graunt to them ſome place to inhabite thē in, and that thei ſhould no lenger dwel in their ſhippes, conſideryng their victual was ſpent, by reaſon of their long lyyng vpō the ſea. After whiche requeſte thus made by their capitaine, the kyng with the aduiſe of his Barōs, graunted vnto thē a voide and waſte countrey, whiche was and is the fartheſt iſle of all the iſles, towarde the Weſte, the whiche iſle as ſaith thengliſhe Chronicle, was then named Irelande, after the name of their capitain, called in thengliſhe chronicle Irlamal. But whoſo will knowe the firſt cauſe of ẏ namyng of this iſle Ireland: let him read the .xxxii and .xxxiii. Chapiters of the firſte boke of Polichronica, and there he ſhall finde more certainly of ẏ firſt namyng thereof, with many other thynges touchyng the ſaid iſle, the whiche I ouerpaſſe for lengthe of the matter. For there he ſhalbe ſufficiently enformed of that, and alſo of other thynges.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, after this Gurguintus was returned into his land of Britain: he ordeined to bee ſtabliſhed and kepte the lawes made by his forfathers and exerciſed iuſtice to his ſubiectes, and guided his lande well and noblie, by the terme, after mooſte writers, of .xix. yeres, & then died, and was buried at newe Troie or Lōdon, or at Caerleon, leauing after him a ſonne, named after mine aucthoure Guinthelinus, but after ſome he is named Guintellius

¶ The .xxxiij. Chapiter.

Chap. 20.

Guinthelinus or Guintellius the ſoonne of Gurguintus, was made king of Britain, in the yere of the worlde fower thouſande eight hundred fiftie and three. This is named in the Engliſhe Chronicle Gwētoline, the whiche guided his lande & Britons, with greate mekeneſſe & ſoberneſſe. He had alſo a noble wife called Marcia, inſtruct and learned in many ſciences, the whiche emong other noble dedes by her doen, ſtudied and broughte forthe a certain good and conuenient lawe emong the Britons, the whiche was named long after the Marciā lawe. This lawe for that it was thought both good and neceſſarie, Aluredus, whiche long after was kyng of Englande, tranſlated out of Bretiſhe into Saxon ſpeache, and then was it called after that tranſlation in the Saxon tongue, Marthehelage, whiche is to meane, the law of Marcia. To this womā for her wiſedome was committed all the gouernaunte of the lande, in ſo moche, as witneſſeth myne aucthor Gaufride, and other, ſhe reigned as quene of Britain a certain tyme, after her huſband was deade. But the yeres of her reigne, be accompted with the yeres of her huſbande, or with the yeres of her ſōne Siſillius, ſo that no tyme aſcertained is to her deputed or ſette.

The marcian lawe.

Then it foloweth, when this Guinthelinus hadde reigned well and mekely by the terme of .xxvi. yeres, he died, and was buried at newe Troie or London, leauynge after hym a ſonne named Siſillius or Cecilius.

¶ The .xxxiiii. Chapiter.

Chap.20. SIſillius or Cecilius the ſonne of Guinthelinus, was made kyng of Britaine, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. lxxix. 3633. This in the Engliſh chronicle is named Setzil. Of the whiche no mentiō nor worthie memorie is made. Albeit that Gaufride meaneth, that this Siſillius was but. vii. yeres of age when his father died. Wherfore the charge of the realme was committed vnto Marcia his mother, the whiche guided it wel and ſufficiently, til her ſaid ſonne came to his lawfull age, and then reſigned to him al the rule: whiche ſo cōtinued, but how long he reigned Gaufride expreſſeth not. Wherfore I now folowe yͤ ſaiyng of the forenamed aucthor, called the Floure of Hiſtories, which affirmeth him to reigne onely ſeuen yeres, albeit the Engliſhe boke ſaith he reigned xv. yeares, whiche agreeth not ſo well with the concordaunce of other hiſtories and tymes.

This Siſillius, as Gaufride witneſſeth, left after hym a ſonne named Kimarus, whom the Engliſhe boke nameth Kimor.

¶The. xxxv. Chapiter.

Chap.20. KImarus the ſonne of Siſillius, was made king of Britain, in the yere of the world 3640. iiii. M. viii. C. lxxxvi. This in the Engliſhe boke is called Kimor, of the whiche is made no mention, nother of his tyme of reigne, nor of his deedes.

For the more partie of writers rehearſe in moſte briefe and ſhorteſte maner, that after Kimarus reigned Elanius: After Elanius, Morindus. But the olde chronicle, whiche I haue before time ſpoken of, ſaith that this Kimarus, whiche he nameth Kimarchus Elanius, was a wilde yong man, and liued after his pleaſure. Wherefore as he was in his diſport of hūting he was by his euill willers ſlaine, whē he had ruled ſcarſly. iii. yeres

¶The. xxxvi. Chapiter.

ELanius the ſonne of Kimarus, as witneſſeth yͤ foreſaid Floure of chronicles, but the brother of Kimarus as ſaieth Gaufride, was made king of Britain, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. M. viii. C. 3643. lxxxix. the whiche in the Engliſhe booke is named Howan. Of this alſo is no mention made, nor memorie, nother of act nor of reigne, but as the fornamed old chronicle ſaith, that Kimarus and Elanius was one perſone, and reigned as before is ſaid: but the aboueſaied writer, called Floure of Hiſtories ſaieth he reigned fully two yeres. ij. Chap.20.

¶The. xxxvii. Chapiter.

Chap.20. MOrindus the baſtarde ſōne of Elanius, as ſaith Gaufride and other, was made kyng of Britain, in the yere of the world. iiii. M. viii. c. xc. 3652. the whiche in the Engliſhe Chronicle is called Morwith. This as witneſſeth Gaufride, was gotten vpon the cōcubine of Elanius, named Tangueſtela, and was a man of worthy fame in dedes of chiualry, but he was ſo ouercome with wrathe and cruelneſſe, that lightly he ſlue all men that him tened or angred. He was alſo beauteous of perſon, and liberall of giftes, & with that he was of a merueilous ſtrengthe, in ſo moch that he had not his pere within his realme, of any man of noble birthe.

In his time came into Britain a Prince out of a countrey called Mauritania, the whiche countrie at thoſe daies is aſſigned by Strabo the writer, to bee betwene the kyngdomes of Hungarie, and of Boeme, the which prince with his cruell and fiers people, waſted the land of Britain with yron and fire without pitie. Wherof Morindus beyng warned, in all haſt gathred his people, and hym met, & fought in ſoch wiſe, that he chaſed the ſaid prince againe to the ſea, and tooke many of his ſouldiers as priſoners the which in ſatiſfiyng of his cruelneſſe and tyrãnie, he cauſed to be put to death in his ſight, by diuers maners of tormentes, as by headyng, fleyng, brennyng, and other cruell executions. Laſtly as teſtifieth Guido de Colũna and other, this Morind' walkyng or ridyng vpon the ſea ſtronde, eſpied a wonderfull monſter, the whiche of his corage and knighthod he thought to ſlea. And by a mãly corage and force, aſſailed this mõſter or beaſt, fightyng with it a certain of time. But in concluſion he was deuoured and ſwalowed of the ſaid monſter: after he hadde reigned, after moſte writers, by the terme of .viii. yeres, leauyng after hym, as witneſſeth Gaufride, .v. ſonnes, wherof the firſte was named *Gorbomannus, the ſeconde Archigallo, the thirde Elidurus, the fowerth Vigenius or Nigenius, and the .v. or yongeſt, Peredurus.

Gorboniã.

¶ The .xxxviii. Chapiter.

Chapi.21.

3660.

Gorbomannus the firſte ſõne of Morindus, was made kyng of Britaine in the yere of the worlde iiii.M.viii.C.xcviii. This in the Engliſhe chronicle is named Grabodian, ÿ which as teſtifieth Gaufride, was a iuſte & rightuous mã to the Goddes and to his people, and yelded to either partie, that was his, that is to ſaie, to his goddes he yelded due reuerẽce and ſacrifice, and to ÿ people iuſtice and equitie. And he renewed and repaired all olde Temples through his realme, & builded ſome newe. And in his tyme was more wealth and plentie in his realme, moche more then was in any of his predeceſſors daies. But finally, to ÿ greate ſorowe of all his Britons, he was taken with ſickeneſſe, and died wͭout iſſue of his bodie, when he had reigned after moſt writers, by the terme of .xi. yeres.

¶ The .xxxix. Chapiter.

Chapi.21.

3670.

Archigallo the ſeconde ſonne of Morindus, and brother vnto Gorbomannus, was made kyng of Britain, in the yere of the worlde .iiii.M.ix.C.x. This in the Engliſh boke, is named Artogail, the which folowed nothing ÿ workes of his brother, but gaue hymſelf all to diſſention and ſtrief and imagined cauſes againſte his nobles, to putte theim from their goodes and dignities, and in their places to ſet and ordeine vnnoble and of rude birthe and maner, and from the riche by ſiniſter & wrongfull meanes he plucked their riches and goodes. By whiche inordinate meanes, he enriched hymſelf, and impoueriſhed his ſubiectes. For which cõditions his lordes and Subiectes murmured againſt hym, and laſtly, of one aſſẽt toke hym, or more verely, depriued him of al honor & kingly dignitie, when he had reigned, after moſte concordaunce of writers.v.yeres.

¶The.xl.Chapiter.

Chapi.21. ELidurus the.iii. ſoonne of Morindus,& the brother of Archigallo,was by one aſſent of the Britons made kyng of Britain,in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.ix.c.xv. 3676. This in thengliſhe chronicle is named Hiſider or Eſodir. The whiche became ſo milde and benigne to the Britons, that thei gaue to hym a ſurname,and called him Elidure the meke. For he emong other dedes of mekenes,as he was vpon a daie in his diſporte of huntyng, in a woode,nere vnto Caerbranke or Yorke,called Calater,or after ſome writers Caltras: He fande his elder brother Archigallo late kyng,maſkelyng or wanderyng in the thickeſt of the woode, whom louyngly and charitably he in ſecrete maner,cōueighed to his owne mantion, into the citie then named Aldud or Acliut. Acliud. And this affirmeth myne auctor Gaufride to the intent to bryng his brother to his former dignitie,as after foloweth: theſaied Elidurus feined hymſelf ſicke,and in all haſte ſente his meſſengers about his realme, to gather and aſſēble the Barons of his lande. And when the daie of aſſemble was comen, and his lordes, accordyng to his commaundemente were preſente, he called theim one by one, as thei were of honoure,into his ſecrete cubicle or chāber, and there by his wiſe and diſcreet wordes, as wel in [illegible] and louyng maner,as other wordes and countenaunce, appertenyng to his roiall power & dignitie, he gat graunte of his ſaid lordes,that thei ſhould aide & ſtrēgth him to their powers,to bryng his brother Archigallo to his former honor and regally. After whiche graunt by the lordes made: he aſſembled a counſaill of his Britōs at Caerbrank or Yorke,and there cauſed ſoche meanes to bee made to the commons, that in concluſiō when theſaid Elidurus had ruled the land.v.yeres as king,he there reſigned his croune and all kingly power, vnto his ſaid brother Archigallo.

¶The.xlj.Chapiter.

WHen Archigallo was thus reſtored to his Kyngly dignitie,he remembred well the euill life that before tyme he had led,and the puniſhement whiche he had ſuffred for blame. Wherfore in the eſchewing of like daunger: he chaunged all his old conditions, and became a good & righteous mā, miniſtryng to the people equitie and Juſtice, and bare hym ſo nobly again his lordes and rulers, vnder hym of his landes, that he was beloued and drade of all his ſubiectes,and ſo continued duryng the terme of his naturall life. But finally he paied the debte of nature, when he hadde reigned now laſtly,after moſte writers.x.yeres, and was buried, as ſaieth theſaied olde Chronicle, at Caerbranke or Yorke. Chapi.21.

¶The.xlii.Chapiter.

ELidurus before named, was againe by one aſſente of the Britons made kyng, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.ix.c.xx. But his two yonger brethren Vigenius and Peredurus, hauynge of hym indignation, that he was for his vertue & good gouernaūce ſo wel fauored with the Britons: Chapi.21.

of malice conſpired agaynſt hym, and gathered an army of ſoudiers and made a feelde with him. And in the feelde tooke him, & commaunded him vnto the Towre of Troinouāt as ſaith Gaufryde, there as a pryſoner to be ſafely kept. After and when he had reigned now laſt by the ſpace, as witneſſeth the old cronycle, two yeares.

¶ The.xliii. Chapter.

Chapi.21. Vigenius and Peredurus the yongeſt ſonnes of Morindus and brethrē of Elidurus before ſaid, were ioyntly made kinges of Britain, in the yeare of the world 3693. iiii.M.ix.C.and.xxxii. Theſe two brethren are named in the engliſh cronicle Higanius and Petitur, yͤ whiche as teſtifieth Gaufryde departed the lande betwene them, ſo that all the lande from the water of Humber weſtwarde, fell to Vigenius or Nigenius: & the other parte of the lande with alſo Albania or Scotlande, fell vnto Peredurus. But after yͤ ſaying of Guido de Columna, Vigenius or Nigenius was not king, but alonely Peredurus, the which, as he ſaith helde his brother Elidurus in priſon by his own aſſent, for ſo much as Elidurus was not willinge to be king. And as affirmeth yͤ ſayde Guido, this Peredurus was cruel and tyrannous to the Britaynes and ſlew and entreated the lordes in moſt cruel maner. Wherfore he became ſo odyous to them, that they rebelled agaynſt him, & ſlew him.

This ſaiyng contrarieth & enpugneth myne autoure Gaufride ſaying that Vigenius dyed after he had reygned.vii.yeares. After whoſe death Peredurus ſeaſed all the land into his owne rule, & ruled it with great ſobernes, in ſuch wyſe that he excelled or was praiſed aboue all his brethren, ſo that Elidurus was clene forgotten of the Brytons. The engliſh cronicle alſo ſaieth: that this Peredurus founded the towne of Pikerynge. But finally, he was taken wyth ſodayne ſickeneſſe, whereof he died when he had rained with his brother and alone, after the accord of moſt writers.ix.yeres, leauing after him no childe to be his heyre.

¶ The.xliiii. Chapter.

Elidurus before named, ſo ſone Chapi.21. as Peredurus was dead, for as much as he was next heyre to yͤ crowne, was taken foorthe of priſon & made the third time king of Britain, in yͤ yeare of the world iiii.M.ix.C.and.xli. 3702. The which as before time he had vſed himſelf ſo he continued ſtill in miniſtryng to all perſons right and iuſtice al the daies of his lyfe. And laſtely beyng of good age he dyed, when he had now reygned after moſte concordaunce of writers.iiii.yeares leauynge after him * a ſonne Gerũtius. named Gorbonianus or Gorbomanus. And as wytneſſeth yͤ olde cronicle, and the englyſhe cronycle the forenamed Elidurus was buried at Caerleyll or Karlele.

¶ The.xlv. Chapter.

Ye ſhal vnderſtand that to the death of the forſayde Elidure, the writers of the ſtorie of Britons writen diuerſlye, ſo that the one varieth greatly from yͤ other, both in the names, and alſo in the tyme of their reygnes, the whiche would aſke a long time to reherſe in ordre the diuerſitie of that one from the other, and alſo to ſome readers the mater therof ſhoulde be but ſmale pleaſure. Wherfore to ſuch as bene deſyrous to know of the time and ſeaſon that paſſed betwene the laſt yere of Elidurus and the firſt yere of Lud, in which paſſetime reygned in Brytayne. xxxii. or after ſome writers. xxxiii kinges: let him looke in a table before the beginning of this worke. And there he ſhall ſe my conceite for the declaracion of the yeares paſſed or ſpent betwene ỹ foreſayd two kinges Elidurus and Lud, praying him or them that ſo ſhall looke in the ſayd draught, that yf I haue in any poynte erred, that of their goodnes they wolde with good deliberacion correcte and amende it. But for it ſemeth to me that of al ſuch autours as I haue redde or ſeen, Guydo de Columna reherſeth moſt breuely the paſſetime of the ſayde kinges: therfore I purpoſe here to reherſe his ſayinge as he hath lefte it to vs in Latin.

¶ The. xlvi. Chapter.

Cap. 22. Gorbonianus or Gorbomannus, the ſonne of Regni ſonne of Elidure was made king of Britayne, in the yeare of the worlde. iiii. M. ix. C. &. xlv. 3705. After whome ſucceded Margan. After Margã Emerianus brother to the ſayde Margan, the whiche Emerianus was depriued for his cruelnes. And after him reiyned. xx. kinges ſucceſſiuely the one after the other Ga. xxiii. of the whiche, as ſayeth mine autour Guido, is no mencion made, either for their rudeneſſe, or els for cruelty or diſcordaunt meanes or maners vſed in the time of theyr reygnes, the which myſorder clerkes diſdayned to write or put in memori. And next the laſt of theſe foreſayd. xx. kinges ſucceded Blegabridus a conning muſician: the which for his excellence in that facultie, was called of the Brytons god of gleemen, or minſtrels.

After Blegabridus was thus king and died, ſucceded. ix. kinges of whome for the former conſyderacion is nother name nor tyme of reigne put in memori. The laſt of whiche*. ix. kinges was by the agrement of all writers named Hely, i. x. which Hely after ſome wryters reygned. xl. yeares, and after ſome but bare. vii. monethes. In the whiche. xxxiii. kinges tymes, paſſed or flowed (that is to ſay frõ the laſte yere of Elidure vnto the laſt yeare of the foreſayd Hely, as by ỹ forenamed table appereth) a hundred and. *lxxxvi. yeares. 193. Which ſayde Hely left after hym iii. ſonnes, named Lud, Caſſibellanus and Neurius.

A note of the peruſer.

To the end the names of theſe xxix. kinges maye be knowen, I haue oute of Galfride drawen this piece folowinge.

After the deathe of Elidurus, the ſonne of Gorbonian his eldeſt brother was crowned kyng, who in all pointes bothe in witte and good gouernaunce, folowed hys vncles ſteppes, for auoydinge tyrannye, he behaued hym ſelfe towardes his ſubiectes iuſtlye and mercifullye, and neuer ſwarued from right in any thing.

After hym raygned Margan

the ſonne of Archigallo, who accordynge to the example of hys kindfolke, gyded the Brytons in quiet and equitie.

After him raigned hys brother Emerian, one ſo farre unlyke him that for miſordering of hys people they depoſed hym the .vi. yere of hys raigne.

Ydwallo the ſone of Uigenius his uncle, was promoted to the kyngdome, who taught by hys kinſmans puniſhement, behaued him ſelfe iuſtly all the tyme of his raygne.

After hym ſucceded hys coſyn Rimo, the ſonne of Peredurus.

After him Geruntius the ſonne of Eledurus.

After him his ſon called Catell.

After Catell Coyle.

After Coyle Porrex.

After Porrex Cherimus, who had three ſonnes, Fulgenius, Eldad, and Androgius, who raigned orderly eche after other.

After them the ſonne of Androgius. After him Eliud. After him Dedacus. After him Clotenus. After him Gurgineus. After him Merianus. After hym Bledius. After him Cap. After him Owen After him Sicilius or Ciſillius. After hym Blegabridus, who ſo farre excelled in muſycke all minſtrels and poetes before his time, that he ſeemed to be as it were a God of that ſcyence. After hym raygned his brother Archemayll. After him Eldon. After him Redion. After him Rodreck. After hym Samulpeniſell. After hym Pyr. After him Capoir. After him his ſonne Glygwell, a man verye ſober and wiſe in all his doinges, and did upright iuſtice to all kind of perſons.

After hym ſucceded hys ſonne Hely, whoſe raigne continued .xl. yeres.

❡ Theſe raigned after Lanquets acompt.

Gorbouinian whō he taketh for Reygny Gorbonians ſon	x. yeres.
Margan.	xiiii.
Emerian.	vii.
Jewell called Juall.	xx.
Rimo.	xvi.
Geruntius.	xx.
Catell.	x.
Coyl.	xx.
Porrex.	v.
Cherimus.	i.
Fulgen.	iii.
Eliud whom he calleth Eldred.	i.
Androgius.	i.
Urian the ſonne of Androgius.	iii
Eliud.	v.
Dedacus, Cloteuus, Gurginetes theſe Lanquet leaueth out.	
Merianus.	ii.
Bleduus whome he calleth Bladunus.	ii.
Capenus or Cap.	iii.
Owyn.	ii.
Siſillius whome he calleth Silius.	ii.
Blegabredus.	xx.
Archemall.	ii.
Eldon Eldoll.	iiii.
Redian Rodian.	ii.
Samull Peniſell whome he maketh two men.	v.
Pyr pyrrhus.	ii.
Capoyr.	ii.
Glyguell Dinell.	iiii.
Hely.	i.

So that their yeres by this acompt amount to .clxxxxii. yeres.

❡ The .xlvij. Chapiter

Lud

Chapi.22. 3894. LUd the eldeſt ſonne of Hely, was made kynge of Brytayn, in the yere of the worlde. v. M. a hũdred and.xxxi. This man was honorable in all his dedes, for he edified new temples, and repaired the old. He alſo repayred old cities and townes, and ſpeciallie in the citie of Troynouant he cauſed manie buildinges to be made, & gird the ſayd citie about with a ſtrong wal of lime and ſtone. *And in the weſte parte of the ſayd wall he arrered a faire and ſtronge gate, & commaunded it to be called Luddis gate, which at this day is cleped Luddegate. And for he loued much this citie: he vſed much and moſte to lie there. * By reaſon wherof it was called Caerlud or Luddys towne, and after by corrupcion or ſhortynge of the ſpeche it was named London, whiche name at this day remayneth and abydeth.

This Lud alſo, as witneſſeth Gaufride, was ſtronge and mightie in armes inſubduing his enemies. He was alſo liberall of giftes and plẽteous in his houſholde ſo that he was muche loued and dread of his Britons. But when he had continued his reigne wyth greate honour by the terme of.xi. yeares: he died and was buried in his gate called Portlud or Ludgate, leuynge after him, as wytneſſeth Gaufryde, two ſonnes, Androgeus, and Temancius or Tenancius.

Chapi.22. Caſſiuelã.

¶The.xlviii.Chapter.

3905. CAſſibellan the brother of Lud was made king of Britayne, the yere of the worlde.v.M. a hundred and.xlii. For ſo muche as the two ſonnes before named of Lud were to yonge or inſufficient for to take on hand ſo great a charge. But as witneſſeth the old cronicle and alſo the authour of the floure of hyſtories: this Caſſibellan was not made kynge, but ruler or protectour of the lande, for the time of ẏ nonage of ẏ foreſayd brethren: albeit my authour Gaufride ſayeth, that after Caſſibellan was ſet in authoritie he became ſo noble and lyberall, that hys name ſprange farre, and by hys exercisynge of iuſtice, the Britons ought to hym more fauour, then to eyther of hys neuewes. Howe be it he cheriſhed them, and brought them forth accordyng to their byrth. And when they came vnto yeres of diſcretion, he gaue to Androgeus the citie of Londõ, with the dukedome or the erledõ of Kent, and to Temancius the dukedome of Cornewayll.

In this ſeaſon was Caius Julius the which is moſt commonly called Julius Ceſar ſente by the ſenate of Rome, as felow and conſull with Lucius Pubulus into Gallia, nowe called Fraunce, for to ſubdewe them vnto the empyre of Rome. The whiche Julius being vpon the ſea ſyde, after he had euercome the Gallis, and beholdinge the whyte Clyues or rocks of Brytayne: enquyred of the coũtrey, and what people dwelled therein. And when he was ſufficientlye enfourmed of all the commodities thereof: he had great wil to brynge the ſayde countrey vnder the yocke of the Romaynes, for ſo muche as at thoſe dayes a great part of the world was tributary of Rome. But as ſayth myne authour, fyrſt he exhorted the Britons by writyng and meſſengers to giue tribute vnto Rome. Wherfore Caſſibellan hauing indygnation, wrote vnto hym ſharpe and ſhorte anſwers, ſhewyng that he and euerye noble man was boũd ſpeciallye to keepe hys countrey from ſeruage, and to kepe his ſubiectes, that they myght enioy lybertye and franchiſe. The whiche to obſerue, he woulde do the vttermoſte of hys power and might.

Chapt.23. With the whiche anſwere Julius beinge nothinge contented, in all haſt made redye hys nauy and people, and ſayled towarde Britayne. And whan the Romains were comen nere the lande of Britayne, and ſhoulde haue landed: the Brytons pight ſharpe ſtakes and longe vpon the bankes, whiche cauſed them to winne the lande wyth greate daunger. And not longe after theyr landing, Caſſibellan with a ſtronge hoſte of Brytons encountred the Romaynes, geuinge or yeldinge to them ſuche fyghte and battayll that they were fayne to reſort to theyr ſhyppes for theyr ſuertye.

Notwithſtandynge that as witneſſeth Gaufride and other, Julius after he hadde renewed his knightes, and alſo ryggyd his nauie: he came agayne the ſeconde time, entendyng to ſubdue the lãd to the empyre of Rome. But as before tyme he was by the manhode of the king and his Brytons manfully and knightly withſtanden & chaſyd: ſo this ſeconde time he was in likewyſe ouercome, and compelled to flee without honour.

Chapi.24 For which victory thus twyes obteyned by the Brytons, Caſſibellan entending to giue thanke vnto his goddes, and reward to his knightes: in goodly haſte cauſed an aſſemble to be made of his lordes and knightes at the Citie of Caerlud or London, where after dew obſeruaunces donne to their goddes, after the vſe of their pagã lawes, a greate and ſolemne feaſt was holdẽ by the kinge to al that woulde come, with moſte liberalitie and plentie in all that was neceſſarie to ſuch a feaſt. And yͤ more to encreaſe the kinges honour, & to the more coumforte and dilectacion of his lordes & other there beinge preſent: there was all maner kinde of games, that at thoſe dayes were exerciſed and vſed.

Continewinge whiche feaſt, two noble and yonge knightes amõg other, hapened to aſſaie either other in wraſtlinge, whereof yͤ one was neuew to kinge Caſſibellan named Hirelda, & that other named *Euelinus, was allied vnto Androgeus erle or duke of London. By meane of this wraſtling diuiſion or vnfittinge wordes fell betwene the two yonge knightes that after wordes enſued ſtrokes, by meane wherof parties wer taken on either ſide, which cãme togither in great ire and malyce, ſo that on either parte many and diuerſe were hurte and wounded. Among whom Hirelda newew to the king was ſlaine, which cauſed great diſturbaunce in the courte, and amonge the lordes.

Ewelyne.

When the knowledge of the deth of Hirelda was brought vnto the kinge: he was therwith greatly amoued, and entending dew iuſtice to be had and miniſtred by thaduice of his Barõs, cauſed the fore named coſyn of Androgeus, Euelinus to be ſommoned for to appere before him and his counſaile, and there to acquite him of ſuche crime as to him was layde for the death of Hirelglas his neuewe. But Euelinus by counſail of Androgeus withdrewe him from the iudgement, and ſhortly after that Androgeus and Euelinus departed the courte without takinge leaue of the kynge.

The kynge diſdaynyng this demeanure of Androgeus, after diuers monitions to him geuen, gathered his knyghtes and made warre vpon Androgeus. Wherefore he conſiderynge after manye wayes and meanes, thought that he was not of power to withſtand the kynges greate indignation, ſent hys letters vnto Caius Julius Ceſar ſhewynge to him the circumſtaunce of the matter, and [illegible] hym of all gylte, beſought and prayed hym in moſte humble wyſe, that he wolde ſhortlye retourne with his armye into Britayne, and he with his whole power ſhould be ready to ayde and helpe him agaynſt the Britons.

Of thys meſſage was Julius very glad, and in all haſt made towardes Britayne with a great power. To whome the wynde was ſo fauourable, that in ſhort tyme after thys meſſage he drewe nere the lande. But as affirmeth mine authour Gaufride, or he woulde lande, fearing the treaſon of Androgeus, he receyued from him in hoſtage his ſonne named Scena, with .xxx. other of the moſte noble of his lordſhyppe, and that done he landed with the helpe and ayde of Androgeus. Wherof when Caſſibellan had warning in all haſte he made towarde the Romaynes, and in a valey nere vnto Dorobernia nowe named Canterburye, there he foũd the hoſte of the ſaide Julius lodged, and with him Androgeus with all his power. After whiche knowledge had eyther of other, with their habyllementes of warre eyther greeued other, tyll at length both hoſtes mette hand for hande and fought vygerouſly, iu ſuche wiſe that manye fell on eyther partie.

Scena.

But when the Britons, as ſaieth Gaufride, had long foughten and knyghtlye defended the Romaines: Androgeus with his people came by a wynge of the Britons, and them ſo ſharpely aſſayled, that they were conſtrained to forſake the felde and place that they before had kepte. The which ſight diſcomforted ſo the other that finallye all fledde and gaue place to the Romaines, the which purſued and ſlewe them without pitie. So that Caſſibellan with his Britons that were left, were faine to gette them a place of ſurety, there to reſt tyll they mighte welye prouide to withſtande their enemies.

But finallye, as all writers agree, Julius helde the kynge ſo ſhorte, that for an vnitie and concorde he was faine to become tributarie to the Romaines, and to paye them yearely a certaine tribute, whiche Gaufride affirmeth to be thre thouſand pounde. And when the ſaied tribute was ſette in a ſuertie, ſo that the ſaide Romaines were with it contented, and Julius had accompliſhed his will & pleaſure in things thought neceſſa-

How the lande of

Brytayne, now called Englande became tributarie to the Romaynes.

neceſſary: he with Androgeus departed the lande, and ſo ſpedde him towarde Rome, where ſoone after he was agayne, by the will of the mooſte of the Senatours made Emperoure. And this Tribute thus was graunted, when Caſſibellan had raigned as kyng of Britain fullye .viii. yeres and moore.

The .xix. Chapiter.

This beginninge of this tribute payde by Caſſibellan unto the Romaynes, ſhould ſeme by moſt concordaunce of wryters to bee .xlviii. yeres before Chriſtes incarnacion, or after ſome .l. But for prouffe of the firſt ſayinge, I have ſhewed my conceyte in the Tabell before named, the whiche I remit to the correccion of ſuche as have perfecte underſtandynge in calculynge of hiſtories and times. And here I make an ende of the ſeconde parte of this worke. And this ſeconde parte to be accompted from the laſte yeare of the Brytons, to ẏ ende of the .x. yeare of Caſſibellan, includeth of yeares .iii. hundred .lxx. and .iii.

The ende of the ſeconde parte.

The thyrde parte.

The .i. Chapiter.

Thus may ye ſe [illegible] Caſſibellan [illegible] governaunce of this lande of Brytayn, whiche by moſte conſent of writers had reygned before, [illegible] were made [illegible] upon the yeres, whiche was in ẏ yere of the worlde, folowinge ẏ accompte before expreſſed, [illegible] hundred and .l. And after he reygned by the agrement of al wryters as kynge of this lande, [illegible] yeres. So that in all before the graunte of the tribute, and after, he reygned upon .xvi. yeares.

The .ii. Chapiter.

Now in the tyme I ſhewed to you how that Julius Ceſar by ayde and helpe of Androgeus Erle of Kent made this lande of Brytayne trybutarie to the Romaynes, when Caſſibellan had ben kinge of the ſayde lande upon .x. yeres, whiche .x. yeres I have ſet for the ende of the ſeconde parte of this worke. So that the .x. yeare of Caſſibellan is the firſt yeare of the thirde parte of the ſayd worke. Then as al writers teſtifie, Caſſibellan contynued after the departing of Julius, as kinge by the terme or ſpace of .vii. yeres, as before is declared. In the tyme of ẏ which .vii. yeres is none noble acte nor dede of him put in memory or writinge.

But for ſome would thinke that after Caius Julius Ceſar, had ẏ thorough help of Androgeus Erle of of Kent, and eldeſt ſonne of Lud, thus as before is ſayde, ſubdued Caſſibellan: that the ſayd Julius wold haue reſtored yͤ ſayd Androgeus to the crowne of Britayne, as his rightfull inheritaunce, and clerely to haue expelled and putte out the ſayd Caſſibellan from all kyngly dignitie. To this anſwereth the olde chronicle and ſayeth, that Caſſibellan was not the ſōne of Hely, but that he was the eldeſt ſonne of Lud, by reaſon wherof he was fyrſte made kinge, and ſo as rightfull heyre continued duringe his lyfe, kynge of Brytayne. The whiche when he had reygned .ix. yeres or he were tributary, ⁊ .vii. yeres after as affermeth the ſaide olde chronicle in all .xvi. yeres, he then died without yſſue, and was buried at Caerbranke or Yorke.

The lii. Chapter.

Chapi. 25. Theomantius.

3921.

Temancius or Tenancius the yongeſt ſonne of Lud, as affermeth Gaufryde, was made kynge of the Brytons, in the yere of the world .v. M. a hūdred ⁊ .lviii This is named in the engliſh chronicle Tormace, and not king, as yͤ ſayd booke affermeth. But his elder brother, which in the ſaid boke is named Androgen, was after yͤ affirmaunce of the ſayd Englyſhe chronicle made kinge. But the foreſayd Gaufride and other teſtifien, that for ſo muche as Androgeus fered to be euer hated of the Britons, for his treaſon wrought agaynſt the kynge ⁊ the lande: he therefore choſe to go wyth Caius Julius to Rome, rather thē to be king of ſuch as he thought would neuer haue hym in theyr loues.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, this Tennancius ruled the lande wyth great diligence and iuſtice, and defended the lande well and knightly againe al aliauntes and ſtraungers, and payde his tribute to the Romaynes, that Caſſibellan had graunted, and laſtly dyed when he had reygned after moſte writers .xxiii. yeres, and was buried at Caerlud or London, leauing after him a ſonne, the which was called Kimbeline.

The liii. Chapter.

Chapi. 25. Kinbeline Cimbelinꝰ Theomātius.

3944.

Kymbelinus or Kymbelyne the ſonne of Tennācius, was of the Britons made kinge, in the yere of the world .v. M. a hundred and .lxxx. This mā as witneſſeth Guydo was brought vp at Rome amonge the Romaines, and there made a knight, and had of them ſuch fauoure, that he was at libertie to paye the tribute or not. Of him is litell memory made, except al writers agreen, that in the ſeaſon that he was kinge, our ſauyour Chriſt Jeſus was incarnate of that moſte bleſſed virgin oure ladie ſaynt Mary. Which ſhoulde be to accorde hiſtories, in the .xix. yere of his reigne.

Of the reygne of this Kymbelin autours write diuerſly, ſo that ſome ſhew no yeres, and ſome but few, whiche can not accorde with the time of other chronicles. But the autoure of the hyſtorye called Floure of hiſtories witneſſeth, yͤ he reigned .xxxv. yeres. The which ſaiyng who liſt to ſe the table before reherſed: he ſhall there haue knowlege, that this ſayd autoure accordeth beſte with other ſtories and cronicles.

And when that this Kimbelyne had

Britayne, now called Englande became tributarie to the Romaynes.

neceſſary: he with Androgeus departed the lande, and ſo ſpedde him towarde Rome, where ſoone after he was agayne, by the will of the mooſte of the Senatours made Emperoure. And this Tribute thus was graunted, when Caſſibellan had raigned as king of Britain fullye .viii. yeres and more.

¶ The .xlix. Chapiter.

This beginninge of this tribute payde by Caſſibellan unto the Romaynes, ſhold ſeme by moſt concordaunce of wryters to bee .xlviii. yeres before Chriſtes incarnacion, or after ſome .l. But for prouffe of the firſt ſaiynge, I have ſhewed my conceyte in the Tabell before named, the whiche I remit to the correccion of ſuche as have perfecte underſtandynge in calculynge of hiſtories and times. And here I make an ende of the ſeconde parte of this worke. And this ſeconde parte to be accompted from the laſte yeare of the Brytons, to ye ende of the .ix. yeare of Caſſibellan, includeth of yeares .iii. hundred .lxx. and .iii.

¶ The ende of the ſeconde parte.

¶ The thyrde parte.

¶ The .i. Chapter.

Thus may we ſee and underſtande that by the opinions of the writers before named, Caſſibellan continued in his reygne and governour of this land of Britain, whiche by moſte concordaunce of writers had reygned before, or the were made tribute upon, .ix. yeres, which ſaid .ix. yeres make the yere of the world, folowinge ye accompte before expreſſed .v.M.i. hundred and .l. And after he reygned by the agrement of al wryters as kynge of this lande, fullye .vii. yeres. So that in all before the graunt of the tribute, and after, he reygned upon .xvi. yeares. xvi.

¶ The .ii. Chapter.

Nowe have I ſhewed to you how that Julius Ceſar by ayde and helpe of Androgeus Erle of Kent made this lande of Brytain trybutarie to the Romaines, whan Caſſibellan had ben kinge of the ſayde lande upon .ix. yeres, which .ix. yeres I have ſet for the ende of the ſeconde parte of this worke. So thus the .x. yeare of Caſſibellan is the firſt yeare of the third parte of the ſayd worke. Then as al writers teſtifie, Caſſibellan cōtinued after the departing of Julius, as kinge by the terme or ſpace of .vii. yeres, as before is declared. In ye time of ye which .vii. yeres is none noble acte nor dede of him put in memory or writinge.

But for ſome would thinke that after Caius Julius Ceſar, hadde through help of Androgeus erle of Kent, and eldeſt ſonne of Lud, thus as before is ſayde, ſubdued Caſſibellan: that the ſayd Julius wold haue reſtored yͤ ſayd Androgeus to the crowne of Britayne, as his rightfull inheritaunce, and clerely to haue expelled and putte out the ſayd Caſſibellan from all kyngly dignitie. To this anſwereth the olde chronicle and ſayeth, that Caſſibellan was not the ſõne of Hely, but that he was the eldeſt ſonne of Lud, by reaſon wherof he was fyrſte made kinge, and ſo as rightfull heyre continued duringe his lyfe, kynge of Brytayne. The whiche when he had reygned. ix. yeres or he were tributary, ⁊. vii. yeres after as affermeth the ſaide olde chronicle in all. xvi. yeres, he then died withont yſſue, and was buried at Caerbranke or Yorke.

The. lii. Chapter.

Chapi. 25. Theomantius.

3921.

TEmancius or Tenancius the yongeſt ſonne of Lud, as affermeth Gaufryde, was made kynge of the Brytons, in the yere of the world. v. M. a hūdred ⁊. lvii This is named in the engliſh chronicle Tormace, and not king, as yͤ ſayd booke affermeth. But his elder brother, which in the ſaid boke is named Androgen, was after yͤ affirmaunce of the ſayd Engliſhe chronicle made kinge. But the foreſayd Gaufride and other teſtifien, that for ſo muche as Androgeus fered to be euer hated of the Britons, for his treaſon wrought agaynſt the kynge ⁊ the lande: he therefore choſe to go wyth Caius Julius to Rome, rather thē to be king of ſuch as he thought would neuer haue hym in theyr loues.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, this Tennancius ruled the lande wyth great diligence and iuſtice, and defended the lande well and knightly againe al aliauntes and ſtraungers, and payde his tribute to the Romaynes, that Caſſibellan had graunted, and laſtly dyed when he had reygned after moſte writers. xxiii. yeres, and was buried at Caerlud or London, leauing after him a ſonne, the which was called Kimbeline.

The. liii. Chapter.

Chapi. 25. Kinbeline Cimbelinꝰ Theomātius.

3944.

KYmbelinus or Kymbelyne the ſonne of Tennācius, was of the Britons made kinge, in the yere of the world. v. M. a hundred and. lxxx. This mā as witneſſeth Guydo was brought vp at Rome amonge the Romaines, and there made a knight, and had of them ſuch fauoure, that he was at libertie to paye the tribute or not. Of him is litell memory made, except al writers agreen, that in the ſeaſon that he was kinge, our ſauyour Chriſt Jeſus was incarnate of that moſte bleſſed virgin oure ladie ſaynt Mary. Which ſhoulde be to accorde hiſtories, in the. xix. yere of his reigne.

Of the reygne of this Kymbelin autours write diuerſly, ſo that ſome ſhew no yeres, and ſome but few, whiche can not accorde with the time of other chronicles. But the autoure of the hyſtorye called Floure of hiſtories witneſſeth, yͤ he reigned. xxxv. yeres. The which saiyng who liſt to ſe the table before reherſed: he ſhall there haue knowlege, that this ſayd autoure accordeth beſte with other ſtories and cronicles.

And when that this Kimbelyne

had reygned gloriouſlie ouer the Britons by all the ſeaſon before expreſſed, he died and was buried at Caerlud or London, leauynge after him two ſõnes named Guiderius and Aruigarus.

Now before haue I ſhewed vnto you in the ſater chapter that Chriſte was carnate, in the xix yere of Kimbeline, which maketh the yere of the worlde, that is to ſay from the firſt creacion of Adã to the incarnacion. v. thouſand a 3962. hundred and. xcix. the whiche accompte is approued by holy Iſodore, Beda, and other.

The Chriſt was incarnate ẏ yere of ẏ world, as before is expreſſed.

From Noes flud, or after. ii. thouſand. ix. hundred and. lvii.

After Abraham two thouſande and. xvii.

After Dauid kynge of Iſraell, a thouſande and. lxxv.

From or after the tranſmygraciõ of the Iewes to Babylon, fiue hundred. xx.

After Brute entred Britaine, xi. hundred and. xxxvi.

After Alexander the greate, nere vpon. iii. hundred and. xxv.

After the Building of Rome. vii. hundred and. xxix.

And in the beginning of the. xlii. yere of Octauius Auguſtus, thẽ emperour of Rome.

¶ The. liiii. Chapter.

Chapt. 25. Guyderius the fyrſt ſone of Kimbaline, beganne his reigne ouer the Britons, the yeare of the 3978. worlde. v. thouſand. CC. and. xvi. And the yere after Chriſtes incarnacion the. xvii. yeare. This man was welthy & truſted much in his ſtrength. And for he thought the Romaynes had the forenamed tribute with wronge: he therfore of a knightlye courage denied to the Romaines the ſayde tribute. Wherfore Claudius, whiche was vncle vnto Caius Calygula the fourth emperour of Rome: came into Britayne with a great army of Romayns, and as witneſſeth Policronica conquered and wan agayne the ſayd trybute without great fyght. And that done, he alſo ſubdued the yſles of Orchades or Orkeys, which ſtande beyonde Scotland within the great occean, and after tourned agayne to Rome the. vi. moneth after that he came thens.

The chronicle of Englande, and ſo Gaufryde ſaye, that in the hoſte of the Romaines was a captayne named Hame or Hamo, the whiche entendinge hurte and deſtruction of the Britons, chaũged his ſheeld or armure: and did vpõ hym ẏ armure of a Britayne. And by that meane as a Britõ miſclad he entred into the thickeſt of the hoſte, and laſtely vnto the place whereas king Guiderius fought & ſhortly after ſlew the king. But Aruiragus ſeing this ſodayn miſchief, to the ende that the Britõs ſhould not geue backe: he haſtelie cauſed him ſelfe to be armed with the cogniſaunce of the kyng. And ſo forkinge continued the fyght with ſuch manhode, that the Romaynes were put to flight.

Thus by accord of wryters Guiderius was ſlayne of the foreſayd Hamo, when he had reigned ouer the Britons by the concordaunces of other hyſtories. xxviii. yeares, leauynge after him none heyre of hys his body to guide the lande after his death.

The .lv. Chapter.

Aruiragus the yongeſt ſonne of Kimbeline, & brother to Guiderius, before ſlain, was ordeined king of Britons, in the yere of our lord .xliiii. This in the engliſh boke is named Armager, the which as there is ſhewed, wel & knightlie mainteined yͤ warre against the Romains, and after ſlew the forenamed Hamo nere vnto an hauen or porte of the ſea. And him ſo ſlaine, threw gobet meale into the ſame ſea. And for this ſkil, was this hauen longue time after called Hamōs hauen, whiche at this day is called South hampton.

Then it foloweth in the .viii. chapter of the .iiii. boke of Policronicon, that Claudius after diuers happes of battayl, tooke Aruiragus to his grace, & brought his doughter Genniſſa by name from Rome, and maried her vnto Aruiragꝰ. And for he wold make the place of the mariage more ſolemne, he therfore called the town of mariage Claudioceſtria after his name, the whiche before was called in bretyſh tongue Carleon and after Glouernia after a duke of Demetia that hight Glorin, but nowe this towne is named Glouceter.

Another wyſe telleth the engliſhe chronicle, and ſayth, that Armager diſcomfited Claudius, and compelled him to geue his doughter Genniſſa or Gēnen to the ſaid Armager to wyfe: with condicion that the Romaynes ſhould neuer after that day claime any tribute of Brytayne, excepte all onelie feawte: whiche ſaiynge appereth doubtful for diuerſe cauſes. Wherof one is, that the ſayd Armager ſhold not conſtraine Claudius to geue his doughter to him, for ſo much as the ſayd Armager hadde neuer ſeen the ſayd Gēnen before time, nor knew not of her conuerſacyon. Then meruayle it were, that he ſhould force her father to geue him a wife, that he had caſte no loue vnto before tyme. One other reaſon is, that the ſayd chronicle teſtifieth, that after he had maried the ſayd Gennen, he was at London crowned kyng of England. For I wold thynke if he had ouercomen Claudius, as there is ſurmiſed, he wold firſt haue crowned himſelfe king, and than haue maried his doughter. But by the ſame reaſon it certifieth more ſtronger the former ſaiyng of Policronica. For by all likelyhode Claudius woulde not ſuffer hym to be crowned kyng, til he had full perfourmed his promiſe in mariage of his doughter.

And albeit that myne authour Gaufride varieth not much from the engliſhe chronicle: I thinke that in doing he tooke exemple of Homerus that wrote the dedes & actes of the Greekes, the which ſhewed and put in memorie all the noble actes by them done, and ſpecially in the recule or booke made by him of the ſiege of Troye. But the other dedes concerning their diſhonoure, he hyd as much as he might. And in like maner doe many other which I paſſe ouer. And ſo Gaufride, for that he was a Bryton he fauored the more the Britons.

Then it foloweth, after the ſolemnyſation of this mariage whiche was with all honour finiſhed: Claudius ſente certayne legions of his knightes into Irelande, to rule that countrey, and retourned him ſelfe to Rome.

The .lvi. Chapter.

IT was not longe after the departyng of Claudius: but that Aruiragus rode aboute hys realme, and with great diligence repaired cities and townes before decayed & broken with the ſtrẽgth of the Romaines, and entreated his ſubiectes with ſuch iuſtice and good order, that they loued and dread him moore then anye of hys progenitours. This in tracte of time made him welthye. And by meane of thys welthyneſſe iſſued pride, ſo that him thought greate ſhame to be under the rule or [illegible] of the Romaines, wherfore laſtly he denyed the tribute before graunted. Whereof when knowledge came unto the Senate of Rome: in al haſte was ſent a duke of Rome called Veſpaſian with certayne of legions to ſubdue Aruiragus.

Ye ſhall underſtande, that a legion of knightes, is .vi.M.vi.C. and .lxvi.

When Veſpaſian was landed in Britaine, as teſtifieth Policronica, he ſpedde him ſo that in ſhort while he ſubdued Aruiragus to the Empyre, and cauſed hym to graunte payment of the forſayd tribute: whiche was done (as ſayth Gaufride) by entreatie of the quene Genuiſſa, and no [illegible] or [illegible]

When Veſpaſian had thus recouered the tribute, he than alſo made ſubiecte to the Empyre, an yſle in the ſea lying upon the ſouth ſide of Britaine, nowe called the yſle of weyght, and after retourned to Rome.

When Aruiragus was thus ſecondlye broughte under the yocke of the Romaines: he became more milde toward them, ſo that while he liued after he payed his tribute with leſſe grudge, and continued him in their fauours, in ſuche wiſe that he was of them wall beloued. And ſo laſtlye died when he hadde ruled the Britons well and nobly by the terme of .xxx. yeres & was buried at Caerglon̄, Caerleon̄. Claudiocestria, or Glouceter, leauinge after him one ſonne named Maurius.

¶ The .lvii. Chapter.

MArius the ſonne of Aruiragus was ordeyned kyng of Britons, in the yere of oure Lorde. lxxiiii. This in the chronicle of England is named Weſtmer. Whiche Marius as witneſſeth Gaufride, was an excellente wiſe man, and guided his Britõs moſt honourablye, and in greate proſperitie and wealthe. In the time of the raigne of this Marius a duke or kinge of a nation called Pictes, whiche as witneſſeth Virgilius, are deſcended of a people called of olde time Scithes. They alſo are named Gothis or Hunis. This forſayde leder of Pictes is named of Gauf. Londericus, the whiche landed with a great nauy, in the prouince of Albania nowe called Scotland, & it beganne to waſte with yron and fier. Whereof when Marius was warned, he in all haſte aſſembled his knightes, and made towarde his enemies, and gaue vnto them ſtronge battaill. In the whiche Londricus or after ſome Rodicus was ſlaine, and a great part of his people ſlaine. In remembraunce of whiche victorie kinge Marius lette arrere a greate ſtone, and in this he commaunded to bee grauen Marii victoria, whiche is to meane the victorie of Marius.

William of Malmeſbury ſaith that thys ſtone was arreared in minde of Marius the Conſull of Rome.

The Engliſhe chronicle ſaieth, that this battaill was foughten in a place, the whiche is nowe called Staniſmore. But wherſo this ſtone is ſette, the countrey there about was long after called Weſtmaria, and nowe Weſtmerlande.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, that when the reſidue of the people of Londricus, which were fled from the feelde, vnderſtode that their head & capitayne was ſlaine: they made humble requeſte vnto the kinge, that he wolde accepte them vnto his grace, and that he woulde graunte to them ſome land and countrey to dwelle in. which graunted vnto theym a place in the farre ende of Scotland which is named of many authours Cathanesia, where the ſaid Scottes or Pictes firſt inhabited theym. And [illegible] Brytons [illegible] to geue vnto them their doughters in mariage, therfore they aquainted them with the Iriſhe men and maried their doughters and grewe in proceſſe of tyme into a greate people. And for this alliaunce [illegible] the Iriſhe [illegible] their countrey as witneſſeth Policronicon the .xxxvii. Chapiter of his firſt booke, was called Ireland and after Pictauia, and laſtlye Scotlande.

And when Marius had thus ſubdued his enemies, he attended and ſet his mynde to the common weale of this lande and Subiectes, and continued the reſidue of his life in great tranquillitie and reſt, and laſtlye paied his naturall tribute, and was buried at Caerleyl, leauing after him a ſonne named Coilus or Coyll, when hee hadde reigned after moſt writers .lii. yeres.

¶ The .lviii. Chapter.

COyllus the ſonne of Marius was after the deth of his father made kyng of Brytons, in the yeare of our Lordes incarnation a hundred and [illegible]. This was in hys infancie norished and broughte uppe amonge the Romaynes in Italy at Rome, by reaſon wherof he was to them louynge and kind and they vnto hym. And he for ſo muche as he knewe the power of the Romaines great in auoydyng of warre and other daunger, payed vnto theym the forſayde tribute durynge hys life. This Coyllus alſo as witneſſeth Gaufride, was a liberall manne of gyftes, by reaſon wherof he obteined great loue of hys nobles, and alſo of his commons. And as ſome authours haue, This Coyll made the towne of Colcheſter, whiche at this day is a faire towne in the ſhyre of Eſſex. But other aſcribe it to Coel or Coyll, that was kyng next after Aſclepiodotus.

But when this Coyllus had reigned in ſincere peace by the terme of fiftie and foure yeres, he died & was buried at Caerbranke, or Yorke, and left after him a ſonne the which was named Lucius or Lucy.

¶ The .lix. Chapter.

Lucius or Lucye the ſon of Coillus, was made kyng of Brytõs, in the yere of our Lorde a hũdred and .lxx. The which in al actes & dedes of goodnes folowed his forefathers, in ſuch wyſe, that he of al men was beloued & dread Of this is litle or none acte notable put in memorie, excepte that all writers agree, that this Lucius ſent to Eleutherius then byſhop of Rome certayne pyſtles or letters, prayyng him that he & his Britons might be receiued to the fayth of Chriſtes churche. whereof Eleutherius being very ioyous and glad, ſente into Britaine two noble clerkes, named Faganus & Dunianus: or after ſome, Fugacius, and Dimianus. Theſe two good and vertuous clerkes were honorablie receiued of Lucius, ẏ which by their good doctrine and vertuous exemples geuyng, conuerted the king and a great part of the Britons.

But for ſo muche as auctours & wryters write diuerſly of the time of this receyuynge of the faith by Luciꝰ, ſo that the one varieth greatly from the other: therfore I haue ſhewed in the forenamed table, that it ſhall vnder correction appere, that the faythe was receyued by Lucius, as affirmeth Petrus Pictauien. the eyght yere of the reygne of the ſayde Lucius. And the yeare after Chriſtes incarnation a hundred and .lxxxviii. The whiche Lucie after the faith thus by him receyued, by the aduice of the foreſayde clerkes, and with the inſtruccions ſent to them by the foreſayde Eleuthery: inſtituted and ordeyned that all or the more partie of Archeflamynys, and flaminis, which is to meane, archebyſhoppes and byſhoppes of the pagan law, which at that daie were in noumber, as witneſſeth Gaufryde & other. iii. of ẏ archeflaminis, and .xxviii. of the flaminis, were made & ordeyned archebyſhoppes and byſhoppes of the Churche of Chriſte, as after foloweth.

Archeflamynys byſhoppes conſtytuted.

¶ The .lx. Chapter.

The fyrſt of the archeflamynys ſee, rule, or iuryſdiction, was as witneſſeth Gaufryde and Polycronica, at London, the ſeconde at Yorke, and the thyrde at Caerueſte, or Kaerglone, or Glouceter. To the three archbyſhoppes were ſubiecte the foreſayde .xxviii. flamynys or byſhoppes. To the archebyſhoppes ſee of London, was ſubiect Cornewayll, and all myddell Englande vnto Humber. To the archbiſhoppes ſee of Yorke, was ſubiecte all Northumberland, from the hope of Humber, with all Scotlande. And to the thyrde archebyſhoppes ſee, which was at Glouceter, was ſubiect all Wales. In which prouynces of Wales were .vii. byſhoppes: where as now ben but .

iiii. And at that daye Seuarn: departed Britaine and Cambria or wales. But in the time of the Saxons, after they had the rule of the lande of Brittaine as teſtifieth Wilhelmus de Pontific. albeit that S. Gregory had graunted vnto London priuilege of that Archbiſhoppes ſee: neuertheleſſe, Sainct Auſtain the whiche with other was ſent into Englande by the foreſayed Gregorye, tourned the Archbiſhoppes ſee out of London into Caunterburye, after the deathe of Saincte Gregorye, by meanes of prayer of kyng Egbert or Ethelbert, and other Cytizens and Burgeſis of Caunterburye: where it hathe continued to thys daye, excepte that for the time of Offa king of Mercia or Mercherike, for diſpleaſure that he had to the Citezins of Caunterbury: bynamme and tooke from them that dignitye, and worſhypped Adulphe biſhoppe of Licheſeelde with the Pall of Caunterburye, by the aſſent of Adrian the firſte of that name, then Biſhoppe of Rome. Neuertheleſſe in the time of Kenulphus whiche not longe after was king of the ſaide Mercia or Mercherike, it was reſtored againe to Caunterbury.

Menenia.

The worſhyppe of the ſee of Yorke hath endured there alway and yet doth, though Scotlande be withdrawen from his ſubiection. The archebiſhoppes of Caergloſt. or Gloceter. was tourned from thence to Menenia, which is in the weſt ſyde of Demecia vpon the Iriſhe ſea, whiche is now called Sainct Dauids lande. In this Prouince from the dayes of Saincte Dauid, vnto the dayes of Sampſon biſhoppe ſatte .xxiii. biſhoppes. But in the ſaid Sampſons dayes then Archbiſhoppe, fel ſuche mortalitie through Wales of the yelowe euyll called the Iaundyes, that muche people thereof dyed. Wherefore the ſayd Sampſon toke with him the pall and ſayled into Amorica or lytle Britain, and was there biſhoppe of Dolence or Dolences. And frõ that time vnto the firſte Henris tyme kynge of Englande, hadde ſytten at Menenia or Sayncte Dauids one and twenty biſhops, and all without Pall: But whether it were for lacke of conning, or elles for pouertie, it is not aſcerteyned. Neuertheleſſe alwaye from the time of the ſayd Sampſon vnto the foreſayde Henrye the firſt time, all the Biſhoppes of Walles were ſacred of the Biſhoppe of Menenia or ſainct Dauids. And the Archebyſhoppe of Menenia was at all tymes ſacred of the Biſhoppes of Wales, as of his ſuffragans, and made no profeſſion or obiection to any other churche. But after theſe daies other biſhoppes that ſatte there, were compelled to be ſacred at Caunterburye. In token of whiche ſubiection Boniface arch Byſhoppe of Caunterburye, and Legate of the Croſſe, ſange in euery cathedrall churche of Wales a ſolompne Maſſe, whiche was done by the ſaied Boniface, in the time of Henry the ſeconde beinge king of Englande.

But nowe you ſhall vnderſtande, there been but two Primates or Archebyſhoppes in all Englande and Wales. That one is at Caunterburye, and of fiftie and foure yeres, he died & was buried at Caerbranke, or Yorke, and left after him a ſonne the which was named Lucius or Lucy.

¶ The.lix. Chapter.

Lucius or Lucye the ſon of Coillus, was made kyng of Brytōs, in the yere of our Lorde a hūdred and.lxxx. The which in al actes & dedes of goodnes folowed his forefathers, in ſuch wyſe, that he of al men was beloued & dread Of this is litle or none acte notable put in memorie, excepte that all writers agree, that this Lucius ſent to Eleutherius then byſhop of Rome certayne pyſtles or letters, praiyng him that he & his Britons might be receiued to the fayth of Chriſtes churche, whereof Eleutherius being very ioyous and glad, ſente into Britaine two noble clerkes, named Faganus & Duuianus: or after ſome, Fugacius, and Dimianus. Theſe two good and vertuous clerkes were honorablie receiued of Lucius, ÿ which by their good doctrine and vertuous exemples geuyng, conuerted the king and a great parte of the Britons.

But for ſo muche as autours & wryters write diuerſly of the tyme of this receyuynge of the faith by Luci⁹; ſo that the one varieth greatly from the other: therfore I haue ſhewed in the forenamed table; that it ſhall vnder correction appere, that the faythe was receyued by Lucius, as affirmeth Petrus Pictauiēſ. the eyght yere of the reygne of the ſayde Lucius. And the yeare after Chriſtes incarnation a hundred and.lxxxviii. The whiche Lucie after the faith thus by him receyued, by the aduice of the foreſayde clerkes, and with the inſtruccions ſent to them by the foreſayde Eleuthery: inſtituted and ordeyned that all or the more partie of Archeflamynys, and flaminis, which is to meane, archebyſhoppes and byſhoppes of the pagan law, which at that daie were in noumber, as witneſſeth Gaudfryde & other. iii. of ÿ archeflaminis, and.xxviii. of the flaminis, were made & ordeyned archebyſhoppes and byſhoppes of the Churche of Chriſte, as after foloweth.

Archeflamynys byſhoppes conſtytuted.

¶ The.lx. Chapter,

The fyrſt of the archeflamynys ſee, rule, or iuryſdiction, was as witneſſeth Gaufryde and Polycronica, at London, the ſeconde at Yorke, and the thyrde at Caerleſle, or Kaerglone, or Glouceter. To the three archbyſhoppes were ſubiecte the foreſayde.xxviii. flamynys or byſhoppes. To the archebyſhoppes ſee of London, was ſubiect Cornwayll, and all myddell Englande vnto Humber. To the archbiſhoppes ſee of Yorke, was ſubiecte all Northumberland, from the hope of Humber, with all Scotlande. And to the thyrde archebyſhoppes ſee, which was at Glouceter, was ſubiecte all Wales. In whiche prouynces of Wales were.vii. byſhoppes: where as now ben but

iiii. And at that daye Seuarn: departed Britaine and Cambria or wales. But in the time of the Saxons, after they had the rule of the lande of Brittaine as teſtifieth Wilhelmus de Pontific. albeit that S. Gregory had graunted vnto London priuilege of that Archbiſhoppes ſee: neuertheleſſe, Sainct Auſtain the whiche with other was ſent into Englande by the foreſayed Gregorye, tourned the Archbiſhoppes ſee out of London into Caunterburye, after the deathe of Saincte Gregorye, by meanes of prayer of kyng Egbert or Ethelbert, and other Cytizens and Burgeſis of Caunterburye: where it hathe continned to thys daye, excepte that for the time of Offa king of Mercia or Merchenrike, for diſpleaſure that he had to the Citezins of Caunterbury: bynamme and tooke from them that dignitye, and worſhypped Adulphe biſhoppe of Lichefeelde with the Pall of Caunterburye, by the aſſent of Adrian the firſte of that name, then Biſhoppe of Rome. Neuertheleſſe in the time of Kenulphus whiche not longe after was king of the ſaide Mercia or Mercherike, it was reſtored againe to Caunterbury.

Menenia.

The worſhyppe of the ſee of Yorke hath endured there alwey and yet doth, though Scotlande be withdrawen from his ſubiection. The archebiſhoppes of Caergloſt. or Gloceter, was tourned from thence to Menenia, which is in the weſt ſyde of Demecia vpon the Iriſhe ſea, whiche is now called Sainct Dauids lande. In this Prouince from the dayes of Saincte Dauid, vnto the dayes of Sampſon biſhoppe ſatte. xxiiii. biſhoppes. But in the ſaid Sampſons dayes then Archbiſhoppe, fel ſuche mortalitie through Wales of the yelowe euyll called the Jaundyes, that muche people thereof dyed. Wherefore the ſayd Sampſon toke with him the pall and ſayled into Amorica or lytle Britain, and was there biſhoppe of Dolence or Dolences. And frõ that time vnto the firſte Henris tyme kynge of Englande, hadde ſytten at Menenia or Saynete Dauids one and twenty biſhops, and all without Pall: But whether it were for lacke of conning, or elles for pouertie, it is not aſcerteyned. Neuertheleſſe alwaye from the time of the ſayd Sampſon vnto the foreſayde Henrye the firſt time, all the Biſhoppes of Walles were ſacred of the Biſhoppe of Menenia or ſainct Dauids. And the Archebyſhoppe of Menenia was at all tymes ſacred of the Biſhoppes of Wales, as of his ſuffragans, and made no profeſſion or obiection to any other churche. But after theſe daies other biſhoppes that ſatte there, were compelled to be ſacred at Caunterburye. In token of whiche ſubiection Boniface arch Byſhoppe of Caunterburye, and Legate of the Croſſe, ſange in euery cathedrall churche of Wales a ſolompne Maſſe, whiche was done by the ſaied Boniface, in the time of Henry the ſeconde being king of Englande.

But nowe you ſhall vnderſtande, there been but two Primates or Archebyſhoppes in all Englande and Wales. That one is at Caunterburye, and that other is at Yorke. To the primate of Caunterburie bene ſubiecte. xiii. biſhoppes in England, iiii. in Wales. And the primate of Yorke hath but two ſuffragãs in England which be the biſhoppes of Caerleil and Durham.

And who ſo wyl be further inſtructe of the order and chaunges of biſhoppes ſea of Englande, let him read ouer the. lii. liii: lv. lvi. & lvii. chapters of the firſt booke of Polycronicon, or a parte of holye Bedes worke, which he compiled of the ſame matter, called hiſtoria Anglicana: and there he ſhal haue euery thing ſet out clerely & truly

And for to continew my proceſſe of Lucius, as wytneſſeth mine authoure Gaufride when he had, as before is ſayde ſtablyſſhed and ordered the foreſaid arch flamins and flamins, & that they were alſo confermed of yͤ byſhop of Rome: he then endowed them with ſuch landes and poſſeſſyons, as before time were occupied or geuen to the mainteyning and vpholdinge of the pagan rytes and law vſed before tyme. And the temples of Ydols thorough hys lande, he cauſed to be dedicate to Jeſu Chriſt and his ſainctes, and honoured them with much great and large gyftes. And when he had done, after mooſte accorde of wryters, by the terme of. xii. yeres he died, and was buried in yͤ citie of Claudioceſtre or Gloucetter wout heyre of his bodie, the whiche after grew to great damage of yͤ Britons, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Of this Lucius it is ſhewed in a table hanging vpon the wall of yͤ northe ſyde of yͤ ylle, in the back of yͤ quere of ſainte Paules church in London, that the ſaied Lucius raigned ouer the Brytons lxxvii. yeres. And ouer that the authour of chronica chronicarum teſtifieth that after Lucius had receyued the faith, he aſſembled a great hoſte of Brittons and ſailed ouer into Gallia or Fraunce, and thence into other countreyes paſſinge by Beria and the citie called Auguſta, and there ſubdued manye enemies of Chriſtes faithe, where after many vertuous deedes he reſted in good peace. And his ſuſter called Emerita, as ſaieth the ſaied authoure, was alſo martyred for Chriſtes ſake. But of this ſaiynge & other, the doubt is aſſoyled in the foreſayde table, in the beginninge of this woorke, where it ſhall apeare that he raigned but twelue yeres as aboue is ſhewed.

And for ſo muche as in this Lucius endeth for a time the lyne of Brittons, and the land after this daye was ruled ſome deale by the Romaynes: therefore I wyl here end the thyrd part of this worke. And this thyrde parte to bee accompted from the ende of the. ix. yere of Caſſibellan, to the laſte yere of Lucius, includeth of yeres two hundred and. xli.

TRueth it is, as affirmen all writers, that after the deth of the forenamed Lucius, for ſo much as of his bodie remained none heyre: the Brittons amonge them ſelues fell at greate diſtaunce and warre. The whiche warre and trouble endured to the great diſturbaunce of the lande. But howe longe, the certayne is not ſet out by anye writer that I haue ſene except the Engliſhe cronicle whiche that [illegible] fiftie yeres. The whiche ſayinge [illegible] with the [illegible] as other wryters, [illegible]

14. emperour, [illegible] expired [illegible] Seuerus beynge [illegible] Emperour of Rome began his dominacion [illegible] lande of Brytayne. So that [illegible] that the ſame [illegible] was the yere [illegible] Lorde [illegible]

that the ſayde .xv. yeres [illegible] ſayd thyrde parte, that the thyrde part conteyneth and includeth [illegible] yeres two hundred and [illegible] yeres.

¶ The ende of the thyrde parte.

¶ The fourth part.

¶ The .lxi. Chapter.

Chapi. 3.

SEuerus a Romain at this daye emperour of Rome, began to rule this land of Brittain, in the yere of our Lordes incarnation .CC. & .viii. The whiche as witneſſeth Gaufride, was before tyme ſent from the Senate of Rome with two legions of knightes into Brittain, to appeaſe the warre and ſtrife amonge them, & alſo for to wythſtande the Pictes and other enemyes, whiche dayly inuaded the lande. For other writers agree, that this Seuerus was made Emperour in the yere of Chriſtes incarnation .C.xcv. and ruled the ſayd Empyre after moſte writers .xviii. yeres. By which rule it ſhulde appeare that he ſhoulde be taken for gouernour of this realme of Brittaine, the .xiii. yeare of hys Empyre.

It is ſayde of this man, that after he hadde ſubdued the Pictes and the Scottes, he was named Parthicus, and was ſente as before is ſaide, of the Senate of Rome into Brittain, where he cauſed to bee made at the coſte of the commonalte, a walle of turues and great ſtakes, of the length as witneſſeth Polycronica of a hundred & .xxxii. miles, as in the .xviii. Chapter of his booke appeareth. This wall after the expoſition of the ſayd Polycronica, beganne at the riuer of Tyne, and endured to the Scottiſhe ſea, or from the end of the Lordeſhyppe of Deira vnto the ſayde Scottiſhe ſea, or after ſome wryters from Durham to the ſee beforeſayde.

Then it foloweth, the Pictes with theyr leder Fulgenius, iſſued from Albany or Scotlande into ẏ lande of Brytayne, and deſtroyed muche of the countrey beyonde Durhã. Wherfore this Seuerus with an hoſte of Britons and of Romaynes, mette with the ſayde Fulgenius, in a place nere vnto Yorke, where after ſore fight the ſayd Seuerus was ſlayne, when he had ruled this land after moſt concordaunce of wryters, by the terme of .v. yeres, and was after buried at Yorke, leuynge behynde him two ſonnes, that one named Geta, and that other Baſſianus.

¶The .lxii. Chapter.

Chapt.2. Baſſianus the ſonne of Seuerus and of the mothers ſyde a Bryton, began to rule this lande of Brytayne in the yere of Chriſtes incarnacion .CC. and .xii. 213. Of this me ſpeaketh nothinge the Engliſh chronicle. But truthe it is, as witneſſeth Gaufryde and other, that after ẏ death of Seuerus, ſtryfe aroſe betwene the Brytons and the Romaynes, then being within ẏ lande of Brytayne. For the commons helde for the kyng Baſſianus, for ſo much as he was borne of a Bryton woman. And vpon that other partie in like maner the Romaines alowed Geta for theyr kinge, becauſe he was deſcended of a Romayne. And as farther affyrmeth the forenamed Gaufryde, for this diſcencion a bataile was had betwene the ſayd two brethren, in ẏ which Geta was ſlain and Baſſianus remayned for kyng of all the lande.

But from this ſaying varyeth greatly Eutropius, and other that write of the chronicles of Rome. For by them it is witneſſed, that Geta was ſlayne at a citie named Carſa, when he fought again the Parthians, and Baſſianus ſucceded his father in the dignitie of emperour, which as in the ſayde chronicle of Rome is teſtified, was alſo called Marcus Aurelius Antonius, and Caracalla, a man of right euil condicion, and vnreaſonable of lecherie, ſo that he laie by his ſtepdame named Iuliana, and wedded her, and did other many cruell dedes, and laſtly he was ſlayne at the forenamed citie of Edeſſa, when he had ben emperoure .vii. yeres.

In the time yt Baſſianus was thus king of Britaine, one named Caraſſius a Briton of low birth, but valiant and hardy in marciall dede: purchaced of ẏ ſenat of Rome the kepinge of the coaſtes of Brytayne and to withſtande the malice of ſtraungers, as Pictes and other. By meane of this, Caraſſius drew vnto him manie knightes, and ſpeciallie of the Brytons, promiſinge to them, that if they would make him kinge he woulde clerelie deliuer them from all ſeruitude of the Romaynes. Where through the Britons (as witneſſeth Gaufride) rebelled agaynſte Baſſianus, and with their duke & leder Caraſſ⁹, arrered again him deadlie warre. By meane wherof Baſſianus was ſlayne, when he had ruled this lande by moſte concordaunce .vi. yeares.

¶The .lxiii. Chapter.

Capit. 2.

Caraſſius a Britaine of vnknowen byrthe was of the Britons made ruler, in the yeare of oure Lorde two hundred and .xviii. the which as before is touched was bi the ſenate of Rome deputed for a ſubſtitute or a ruler vnder the Romaines, as it is ſhewed in theyr chronicles, in the abſence, or while Baſſianus thẽ emperour of rome and king of Britaine, was occupied aboute the nedes of the empire This Caraſſius for that he was not of power to withſtande the Pictes, or for the fauoure that he bare toward them for ayding him againe the Romayns: he gaue to them the countre of Albania, that now is called Scotland.

But ye ſhall vnderſtande, that here is not ment all Scotlande. For as witneſſeth Policronica, this parte that was geuen thus to the Pictes, was the ſouth part of Albania, and began at Twede, and endured to the Scottyſh ſea. Of the kinde of thoſe Pictes is ſõwhat ſhewed before in the ſtorye of Marius, but more after ſhalbe ſhewed of them in cõuenient place bothe of theyr of ſprynge and maners.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorye when the Romaynes had knowledge of the death of Baſſianus, a non they ſente a duke from Rome named Alectus with .iii. legions of knightes, for to ſlee Caraſſius, and to ſubdue the Britons to the empyre. To the whiche Alectus fortune was ſo fauourable, that he chaſed Caraſſius, and laſtelie ſlew him, when he had ruled the Britons, by moſt accorde of wryters, viii. yeres.

But Jacobus Philippus autour of a boke named Supplemẽtum cronicarum ſayth, that in the time that Maximianus or Maximinan, ſurnamed Herculeus, & Diocleſiã Dalmatheus were emperours of Rome: they harde that this Caraſſius hadde taken vpon him to were the purpure that onlie was reſerued to yͤ emperours, and alſo that he ruled the realme of Britaine as to his ſinguler vſe, and furthermore were crediblie enfourmed, that Narſetus another ſubſtitute had or occupied the eaſtlandes with cruell battayle, & other princes, the great countrey of Affrica and many other, alſo bi the inſtygacion and leding of one named Achilleus had ſubdued the countre of Grece. For which ſaide nouellis and tidynges, theſe two Emperours, to yͤ ende to refourme all the ſaide rebellions, choſe two noble men, of the whiche that one was named Galerius, and that other Conſtancius, as Ceſars or felowes to rule the Empyre. And yͭ done, the ſayde two Ceſars were ſent with great powers, that one into Affrica, and that other into Egypt. This forenamed Mariman came with greate power of people into Britayne, & ouercame the ſaid Caraſſius, more by gyle then by ſtrength, when the ſayde Caraſſius had ruled the Brytons as ſaythe the forenamed authour Jacobus Philippus, by the terme of ten yeres.

In the which ſaiyng appeareth errour, for diuerſitie of time and yeres. For after moſte accorde of writers, and alſo by the affyrmacion of the ſayd Jacobus Philippus, the ſayde Emperours Diocleſian and Maxymian, ruled the empyre of Rome about the yere of Chriſtes incarnacion two hũdred and.xc. And this Caraſſius was ruler in Britaine longe before, as in the time of Baſſianus Emperoure of Rome, yͭ reygned aboute the yere of our lorde two hundred and. xiii. as teſtifieth Policronicon and other.

Alſo a boke in frenche called la Mere de hyſtories, which maye be engliſhed the Mother of hiſtories ſayth that this Caraſſiꝰ was firſt a treaſourer or ſuche a high officer amonge the Romains. By reaſon wherof he ſought great abũdaũce of riches and fell by reaſon therof in fauour of yͤ ſenatours of Rome ſo that finallie he was ſenatour, & became a man of great aucthoritie, in ſo much that Baſſianus thẽ Emperour made him protector of the Citie and countrey of Alexandrie. But then he was ſuppryſed with ſuche pride, that he exerciſed tyrannie and other vnlefull meanes, in ſo exceading maner, that yͤ countrey waxed wery of him, and conſpyred hys death. Wherfore after puniſhmente done vpon ſome of his enemies, he feringe yͤ ſequel and reuengement of the ſame; left that countrey and retourned vnto Rome, where after he had a ſeaſon reſted, he was by the Senate of Rome aſſigned for his ſterneſſe vnto the rule of Britain, with the ayde of.iii.legions of knightes. And ſo beinge garniſhed with all abilimentes of warre, entred this yſle of Britaine, and with greate trauayle ſubdued theym to the Empyre, and ſo contynued the liues time of the Emperour Baſſianus.

But ſo ſone as he was aſſerteined that the Emperour was ſlain at Edeſſa, as before in the ſtori of Baſſianus is ſhewed, thinkinge yͭ amonge the Romaynes ſhoulde grow ſtrife & diſſencion for the election of a new Emperoure, by reaſon of whiche ſtrife he mighte the rather liue ſo farre from them without anie correction: confedered with the Scottes & certayne other of the Britons, & ſlew manie of the Romaines, ſuch of them as he thought wolde not conſent to his treaſon, and by that meane finally was made king of Britain And ſo continued, as affermeth yͤ ſayd authoure to accõpt from his firſte hauinge rule vnder the Romaines, vnto the time yͭ ſhe was ſlaine of Alectus. viii. yeres, not without exerciſinge of his olde accuſtomed tyrannies and other vnſittinge condicions.

¶The.lxiiii.Chapter.

ALectus a Duke or counſell of Rome, ſent as before is ſayd from the ſenate, began to rule the Britons, in the yere of our lorde CC.and.xxvi. This in the engliſh cronicle is named Allec. Whiche when he had reſtored the lande to the ſabiection of Rome, he then perſued certain of the Britõs that had fauoured Caraſſius, againe yͤ Romaines. And in that doing vſed and exercyſed many tyrannies and exaccions, by reaſon whereof he fell in greate grudge of the Britons. Wherfore they entẽding to oppreſſe and ſubdue the power of the Romaines, purchaſed and excited a noble man of the Britõs called Aſclepiodotus, and Duke of Cornwaile. The which gathered a

Capit. 2.

Aſclepiodatus.

red a great hoſte of the Britons & made warre vpon the Romaines and chaſed them from countrey to countrey, and from town to town and laſtlie Alectus with his Romaines drew him to London and there kept him for his moſte ſuertie. Wherof being warned Aſclepiodotus, he wͭ his Brytõs came nere vnto the ſayd citie, whereby meanes of prouocacion on eyther partie vſed, laſtlie the Romaynes ꝑſued out of the Citie and gaue batayle to the Britons. In the whiche fight manie fell on eyther partie, but the more on the partie of the Romains, among the whiche was alſo ſlayn Alectus. Wherfore a captayne of the Romaynes called Liuius Gallus, aduertiſinge this miſchief, and the greate daunger that the Romayns were in: drewe backe into the citie with the Romaynes that were lefte on lyue, and defended it wyth theyr powers.

Thus then appereth, that Alectus was ſlayne of the Brytons, whiche was by moſte accorde of writers when he had ruled thys lande vnder the Romaines by the terme of .vi. yeres.

Cap.2.

The .lxv. Chapter.

Aſclepiodotus duke of Cornwayle, as ſayeth Gaufride (but after the ſaiyng of Eutropius and Beda, he was preſydent of the Pretorie of Rome) began his dominion ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our Lord. CC. and .xxxii. The whiche as before is ſayde, with his Britons gyrte the citie of London wyth a ſtrong ſiege, and kept ȳ foreſayd Liuius Gallus & his Romayns in ſtreite holde, and finallie, as affermeth mine authoure Gaufride, wyth knightlie force and vyolence entred the ſayd citie, & ſlew the forenamed Liuius Gallus nere vnto a brooke there, at that daie renning, and him threw into the ſayd brooke. By reaſon whereof, longe after it was called Gallus or Wallus broke. And at this day ȳ ſtrete where ſometime ranne the ſayde brooke, is now called walbroke. And after he had thus venquiſhed the Romains he helde this land a certayne of time in peaſible wyſe, and ruled the Britons with good iuſtice, in rewarding and exalting the good men, and puniſhynge of the euyll.

The ſtrete of Walbrooke in London, why it is ſo named.

Chap.3.

In this while by ſtyring of diſclaũderous and diuiliſh perſones, a grudge was arrered attwene ȳ king, and a duke of his land called Coil or Coillus, the whiche was Duke or Erle of Kaercolim or colcheſter, wherof the cauſe is not apparaunt. But how it was, greate pleople were aſſembled on bothe parties, and finallie mette in the feeld, where was foughtẽ a great and ſtronge bataile. In the which Aſclepiodotus was ſlayne, when he had reigned to the concordaũce of other hiſtories, and after the affermaunce of the olde cronicle by the ſpace of .xxx. yeres.

The .lxvi. Chapter.

Coelus Erle of Colcheſter, began hys dominion ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the incarnaciõ of Chriſt. CC. and .lxii. Thys in the Englyſh boke is called Coyll, the whiche guided the lande to the pleaſure of the Brytons a certayn tyme. But as witneſſeth Gaufride, when the ſenate of Rome had vnderſtanding of the death of Aſclepiodotus, thei were ioyous of the death of him, for ſo muche as he had euer bene enemy to the Empyre. But for ſo muche as at that daies was great diſſencion amonge them ſelues, as witneſſeth yͤ chronicle of Rome: they coulde not conuenientlie ſend any armie of knightes for to warre vpon this Coelus. Wherefore he continued the longer in reſte and good peace. After the chronicle regiſtred within the monaſterye of ſainct Alboon, the ſayd holy martir ſuffered his deathe in the yere of our lorde two hundred ⁊ .lxxxvi which ſhould be the. xxiiii. yere of this preſent kynge. But this diſcordeth from ſuch writers, as affermen the holy man to be martyred in yͤ .x. perſecucion vnder Diocleſian ⁊ Maximian emperours.

Neuertheleſſe at lengthe was ſent from the ſenate a noble wyſe man called Conſtãcius, the whyche as affermeth the forenamed aucthoure, hadde before time ſubdued to the Empyre a great parte of the countrey of Spayne. But that ſaiyng diſagreeth to the writing of Eutropius. For the countrey of Spaine was not ſubdued by hym tyl after that he was emperoure.

Then it foloweth, whan this Conſtancius was arriued in Britaine with his armie, anon Coelꝰ aſſembled his Britõs. But for he dreded the ſtrengthe and fame of this Conſtancius, he ſent to hym an enbaſſed, affirming vnto hym condicions of peace, wyth graunt of paymentes of the tribute, whiche before was denied or els as meaueth Policronica, wythin a moneth after the lãding of this Conſtancius, Coelus was dead. Wherfore the Britons to haue yͤ more peace, willed this knight to take to wife Helein the doughter of Coelus, with the poſſeſſion of the lande of Britaine, whiche by him was graunted. Then as before is ſaide, Coelus died, when he hadde ruled the Britons after moſte accorde of writers. xxvii. yeres.

¶ The. lxvii. Chapiter.

Conſtantius a Senatoure of Rome, as ſaith *Policronica began to rule the Britons in the yere of our lorde two hundred lxxx. and. ix. This as before is ſhewed maried Helein the doughter of Coelus, laſt king of Brittaine. But ye ſhal vnderſtand, that this Conſtancius was firſt maried vnto Theodora the ſtepdoughter of Herculeus Maximianus, ⁊ had by her ſixe ſonnes. So that thys Heleyn was his ſecond wife, whiche was fayreſt of all maydens, ⁊ therwith lerned, ⁊ ſufficientlie lettred. She is alſo noted of many writers to be a captiue or a pryſoner to the Romaynes.

Chapt. 3. Conſtantinus.
Pol. li. 4. cap. xxiiii. and. 25.

Of this Conſtantius littell memorie is left in the bretyſh or engliſh chronicles, excepte that he receiued of the foreſayde Heleyn a ſonne named Conſtantinus, the whiche after for his knightly and marciall dedes, was called Conſtantine the greate.

But for the noble deedes of ſo victorious a Duke ſhould not be hydde as was this Conſtantius: therfore I ſhall now folowe the ſtorie of Rome, whych ſaith, that for ſo much as in the tyme of Diocleſianus and Maximianus being Emperours, many cōtreys rebelled againſt the Empier, therfore the ſaied Emperours admitted this Conſtantius, and one Galerius as Ceſars, which was a dignitie nexte of authoritie to the Emperours. And ſo the empyre was at thoſe daies guide by twoo Emperours, and by two Ceſars. This Conſtantius, as witneſſeth Policronica made ſubiecte to the empyre the Almaines, and ſlew of them in one daye.lx.thouſande.

And after other many victorious deedes, when the ſaied.ii.Emperours had of their freewilles reſigned & geuen ouer all Imperial dignitie: This ſaied Conſtantius with his forenamed felowe Galerius, were made Emperours, that is to witte Galerius was Emperour of all Iliricum, whiche nowe is named Grecia or Grece, with all the eaſt landes, and Conſtantius had to him all the Weſt landes. But he helde him contente with Gallia or Fraūce, & Spain, with Britaine, and graunted Italia vnto Galerius aforeſaied.

Then he ſubdued the countrey of Spaine, as before is touched in the ſtorie of Coelus, and a part of Gallia, and after ſoiourned and abode in this lande of Britaine in guidinge and rulinge the ſame with greate ſoberneſſe, and ordeyned his ſonne gotten vpon Helein to rule Gallia and Spaine.

But for to make this ſtorie more apparant & opē to the readers, & alſo to the hearers: it is here to be noted, that Diocleſianus or Diocleſian began his empire ouer the Romaines after the moſt writers in the yere of oure lorde.ii.hūdred lxxxvii. & he was Emperour.xx.yeres. And this Conſtantine was ſent into Britaine, frō the ſenate as before is ſaid in the ſecond yere of the ſaied Diocleſian, or the yere of our lord.CC.lxxxix

Whiche Conſtantius after he had in due maner ſped the needes of the empyre, as in ſubduing this land of Britain, as before is ſaid he returned again to Rome, wher he was ſhortly after made Ceſar, and ſo continued his life, as before is touched.

And in the time of his beyng thus Ceſar and ruler of Britaine vnder the Emperoure, the bleſſed and holy prothomartir of Britain ſaincte Alboon at Verolan was martyred, in the.x.perſecution of the churche, as witneſſeth Polycronicon. Which perſecution begā as teſtifieth Euſebius and Beda, the.xviii. yere of the forenamed Emperours Diocleſian & Maximian, and endured.x.yeres, that is to ſay in the eaſt vnder Diocleſian, & in the weſt vnder maximiā. The whiche was ſo ſharpe & feruent ẏ within ẏ ſpace of one moneth, in diuers places of ẏ worlde were.xvii.M. holy men & women martyred for Chriſtes fayth. And when the ſaied Emperours left, or reſigned their imperiall dignitie, and ladde a priuate life: this ſayd Conſtantius with his felow Galerius, departed the Empyre betwene them, as before is touched ſo that he raigned as ruler of Britaine by the terme of.xvii.yeres & more or he were Emperoure. And after as Emperour of the weſte partie of the Empire, and king of Britayne.xii.yeres and more.

And ſo in all, the ſayd Conſtãtius reigned ouer Britaine.xxx. yeres. And laſtlie died and was buryed at Yorke, leuing after him yͤ foreſayde ſonne called Conſtantinus without mo that anie mencion is made of.

The.lxviii.Chapter.

COnſtantinus the ſoonne of Conſtancius, and of Heleyne doughter of kinge Coelus, in the yere of our lorde thre hundred and.xix. was made kynge of Britayne. Antoninus archebyſhoppe of Florẽce, and writer of hiſtories ſheweth in the firſt chapiter of the ix. title of his woorke called Sũm. Antonini, that this Conſtantine was made Emperour, or began to rule the Empire, in the yere of our lordes incarnacion. iii. hũdred & ix. which ſaiynge alſo affermeth. Vyncent hyſtoriall and other authours, where of the cauſe is, the ſayde authours accompte not the yeres of the reigne of Conſtanci⁹, but folow the accompte of Galerius felow of Conſtancius, which reigned as Emperour but. iii. yeres. After the which rule it muſte nedes folow, that this Conſtantine beganne his Empyre, as the ſayde Antoninus witneſſeth, and folowinge the other accompte it ſhould varie.

Then to purſue or continue the ſtorie of this Conſtantine, it foloweth that at the tyme of the deceaſe of Conſtancius his father, he was occupied in warres in Gallia and thoſe parties. After whoſe death he by a certayne terme ruled Britaine, and the other landes the whiche his father before helde in due maner. And all be it that at that daie he was a myſcreante and pagan: yet he vſed no tyrantnes, nor compelled not the Britõs to refuſe the law, and to worſhip ydolles, as other tyrãnes at thoſe daies vſed. In this while that Conſtantine ruled thus the weſte parte of this Empyre, one Maxentius whiche was the ſonne of Herculeus Maximianus, ſometime felowe in the Empyre with Diocleſian, as before is ſhewed, was of the knightes of the pretorie declared Emperour. This Maxentius was there worſte of all men. And as teſtifieth Euſebi⁹ and other, he firſt began meekelie to winne therby loue and fauour. But whẽ he was ſtabliſhed in authorite, he exerciſed all tyrannie, and purſued al chryſteans with al kinde of torment. Alſo he expulſed and put out frõ Rome and all honour, his father Hercules Maximianus, that entendid agayne to haue ben Emperour. Of the tyrannie of this Maxentius when Conſtantine had witting: he aſſẽbled a great hoſte of Brytons and Gallis, for to oppreſſe the malice of the ſayde Maxentius.

And for to rule and guyde this lande of Brytaine in hys abſence, he deputed and ordeyned a man of myght called Octauius, the which Polycronica nameth duke of Jeweſſis, that after were named weſte Saxons. And when the the ſayde Conſtantyne hadde all prepared for hys voyage, he betooke the lande of Brytayne vnto the ſayde Octauius, and after ſpedde hym vpon hys iourney. And as he was towarde hys ſayde iourney he ſawe in his ſlepe the ſygne of the Croſſe ſhynynge in the fyrmament, as it hadde been a brennynge lighte of fyre, & an angell ſtandinge thereby, and ſaiynge: Conſtantine toicanata, whiche is to meane, Conſtontine by this token thou ſhalte winne victorie. Whē he awoke, he called this viſion to minde, and told vnto his ſecretes, by whoſe counſaill he commaunded the ſigne of the Croſſe to bee peynted and ſette in his banners and penons, and all his knightes.

¶ The.lxix. Chapter.

When Conſtantyne had thus ordeined the ſigne of the croſſe: he ſped him forth towarde the ſaide tyrant Maxentius, and met him at a bridge called Ponte Miluium. Where after longe fighte he chaſed the ſayde Maxentius, and him with a great part of his hoſt drowned in the water of the ſayde bridge, when he hadde raigned as Emperour vpon fiue yeres. After whiche victorie thus had: the ſaid, Conſtantine wente vnto Rome, where he was receyued of the ſenate with moſte triumphe. And there cauſed the ſigne of the croſſe to bee paynted in the right hande of the Images, whiche the ſenatours of olde time hadde arerid in worſhippe of their victories. And vnder the feete of the Images he cauſed to bee written: This is the ſigne and token of the liuing god, that maye not be ouercomen.

Soone after this Conſtantine was conuertyd from his Pagan lawe vnto Chriſtes faith, by vertue of ẏ bleſſed [illegible] as ſome haue ſeen, or by the good doctrine of Syluester Byſhoppe of Rome, and firſt of that name, the whiche was made Biſhoppe of Rome in the yere folowing Chriſtes incarnation. CCC. and. xiii. Then Conſtantine opened the pryſons, and deſtroyed the Temples of falſe Goddes, and dedicated theym in the worſhip of God and his ſaintes. He alſo opened them that tofore were ſhotte and kepte cloſe, & cauſed diuine ſeruice in theym to be ſaiad, and gaue to the church of Rome firſte poſſeſſions. And alſo he ordeined that the Biſhoppe of Rome ſhoulde bee head of all Byſhoppes, and all other to bee obedient vnto him. He alſo bare clay vppon hys ſhoulders to the foundation of ſaynct Peters churche, as witneſſeth Policronica and other.

Of this fyrſt indowment of the Churche are diuers thynges ſhewed, as reherſeth Gwaldus Cambrenſ. ſainct Hierome and other, the which I ouerpaſſe for lengthing of time of this worke.

And whyle that Conſtantyne was thus occupied in Rome: his mother Helyne then beyng ferre from hym, and hearynge that he was become a Chriſten man: ſent vnto him letters of recommendation, that he hadde forſaken worſhippinge of Idolles. But ſhe diſprayſed him in that, that he worſhypped a man that was nayled vpō the Croſſe. But after receite of theſe letters, he wrote aunſwer to his mother, that he ſhould ſufficiently proue, that he beleued and worſhopped hym, that was firſte creatour and maker of the world. And not onelye man but alſo God and man, with diuers other poyntes touchinge the fayth, whiche I ouerpaſſe.

For reaſoning and profe of this,

was after aſſigned. vii. ſcore Jewes, ⁊ Siluester with a certaine numbre of Chriſten clerkes to diſpute the articles of Chriſtes faith Where after diuers miracles ſhewed, and good profe made by holy ſcripture: the ſaied Jewes were confounded, and the ſaied Heleyn was conuerted vnto the faithe of Chriſtes churche, and trauayled ſoone after to Hieruſalem, where ſhe by her induſtrie and laboure, founde oute the holye Croſſe with the three nailes that our lord was nayled with to the ſame croſſe. Whereof ſhe left there a part, and the other deale ſhe broughte vnto Bizancium now called Conſtantinople. Whiche citie the ſayed Conſtantine greatly augmented with excellent building and therin cauſed to be arered a church of merueylous beautie, and named ſt Sophia. Then this Conſtantine remoued the Emperiall ſee vnto his citie of Conſtantine the noble, and there for the more partie kepte his Emperiall honoure, and other Emperours in like wiſe after him. By reaſon wherof Emperours were longe after called Emperours of Conſtantinenoble. This man was ſo mightie in hys merciall feates, and all his dedes, that for his more honoure, he had an addition put to his name, and was called for his great mighty power, Conſtantine the greate. He was alſo the firſte chriſten emperoure, and did manye notable actes for the weale of Chriſtes faithe. Amonge the whiche ſeuen are noted by the fornamed Antoninus, in the nynth tytle of the ſeconde parte of his worke as was before named, whereof the fyrſte

was

was that Chriſt ſhuld be worſhipped as God throughe the citie of Rome.

The ſeconde was that who ſo of Jeſu Chriſt ſpake any blaſphemye, he ſhoulde bee greuouſly puniſhed.

The thirde was, what perſone that did anye iniurie or wronge to a chriſten man, he ſhoulde bee depriued or putte to the loſſe of halfe of his goodes.

The fourth that like as the emperoure of Rome is head of all temporall princes, ſo the biſhoppe of Rome is head of all biſhoppes.

The fifte, that what perſon fled to the Churche for his ſauegarde or ſuertie, that there he ſhould bee defended from all perill and daunger.

The ſixt, that no man ſhoulde preſume to builde any Temple or churche within any citie or towne without the ſpeciall licence of his Biſhoppe.

The ſeuenth that euery prince ſhoulde geue the tenth part of his poſſeſſions to the buildynge and maintayning of churches.

The whiche lawe he fyrſte executed, and after with a pikare or mattocke with his owne hande, brake the grounde where as nowe ſtandeth ſaincte Peters churche, and twelue cophyns or treys full of earth he bare awaye vpon hys ſhoulders, as witneſſeth the foreſaied Antoninus.

But after thoſe manifold good dedes, he fell into the hereſie called Arrian hereſie. By meane whereof, he was ſo blinded that he then became an enemie of Chriſtes churche, and perſecuted chriſten men, and exiled Siluester, or as ſome meane, the ſaide Silueſter fled the citie foꝛ feare.

Foꝛ this as witneſſeth Iacobus Philippus, and other wꝛiters, this Conſtantine was ſmitten with the euill of lepꝛy. Foꝛ curinge wherof thꝛe thouſande childꝛen were bꝛought to the Emperours paleys to bee ſlaine, that in the bloude of them he mighte bee bathed, and ſo clenſed of his lepꝛy. But when he ſawe the childꝛen, and the mothers ſoꝛowynge foꝛ them, he was moued with pitie, and ſayde: the dignitie of the Empire cõmeth of mildneſſe. Foꝛ it is demed yͭ he ſhoulde die that ſleeth a childe in battaile. Then what crueltie were it to ſlee ſo many innocentes wylfullye: yet better it were to vs to die and ſaue thoſe childꝛens liues, then to get a cruel life by the death of ſo many innocentes.

Thus haue I ſhewed to you a part of the dedes of Conſtantine, whiche if I ſhoulde continue the whole proceſſe of his raigne, that endured as Emperoure by yͤ ſpace of thirtie yeres: I ſhoulde thereof make a large volume. But it concerneth nothinge of the entent of this woꝛke, as touchinge the land of Bꝛittaine therefoꝛe I wyl retourne my ſtyle to Octauins, frõ whome I haue made a longe digreſſion.

¶ The.lxx.Chapter.

Chap.3.

IN this paſſetyme while Conſtantyne occupyed him in nedes of the empyꝛe, as aboue is ſhewed: Octauius beinge lieutenant in yͤ land of Bꝛittain vnder Conſtantine, ruled the land to the pleaſure of the Brittons a certaine of time. But when he perceiued yͭ he was in fauoure of them, and that Conſtantine was farre from him caſting alſo in his minde, that the ſaide Conſtantine being then emperour would oꝛ might not lightly retourne into Bꝛittain: he therfoꝛe with helpe of hys affinitie & frendes withſtode the Romaines left in Bꝛittaine of Conſtantine, and vſurped the rule and dominion of the lande. wherof when certaintie came to the knowledge of Conſtantine, he in all haſte ſente into Bꝛittain a duke named Traherñ. the whiche was vncle vnto Heleyne mother of Conſtanſtine. When this Traherñ. was arriued in Bꝛittaine with thꝛe legions of knightes: anone Octauius made towardes him with his Bꝛittons, & with him met neare the citie, then called Kaerperis, nowe called Poꝛt cheſter, oꝛ Poꝛcheſter, but moꝛe verely in a feeld nere vnto the Citie of Kaerguent, that is nowe called Wincheſter, whiche feelde was then named Maeſurian. The two hoſtes mette with great ire, and foughten longe while. But in the ende Traherñ. was compelled to foꝛſake the feelde, and after dꝛewe with his Romaines towarde Albania oꝛ Scotlande. wherof Octauius beinge warned, folowed him, and in the countrey of Weſtmerlande gaue vnto him the ſeconde battaill, where then Octauius was chaſed, and Traherñ. was victour, the whiche purſued Octauius ſo egerly, that he compelled him to foꝛſake the lande of Bꝛittayne, and to ſaile into the countrei of Noꝛway foꝛ his ſauegarde.

But it was not long after, that the ſayde Octauius gathered a newe people of Bryttons, and Norwayes, and was readie to retourne againe into Britayne. In which time, as teſtifieth myne authour Gaufride, an Erle of Britain that entierly loued Octauꝰ, by treaſon ſlewe ỹ ſaid Traherñ a litle before the landynge of the ſayde Octauius. Whiche ſhortlye ſubdued the Romaynes and the land to his own vſe. This ſhulde be after moſt concordaunce of writers, when Conſtantine with alſo the ayde of Traherñ, had ruled this land of Britain by the terme of ten yeres.

¶ The.lxxi.Chapter.

Chapi.3. OCtauiꝰ duke of the Ieſſis, otherwyſe Weſtſaxons began hys raygne ouer the Britons, in the yere of our Lorde, two hundred and.xxix. Thys in the Engliſhe booke is called Octauian, the whiche as teſtifieth Gaufride, gathered in ſhort while after gathered ſo great plentie of treaſure and richeſſe, that he feared no man, and ruled this lande in peaceſable wiſe. So that of him or of hys actes is lefte litle memorie, excepte ỹ when he was fallen into age, by the counſaill of Britons he ſent vnto Rome, for a noble yonge man of the aley of Heleyne, mother vnto Conſtantine called Maximianus, as after more plainely ſhalbe ſhewed: Albeit ỹ ſome aduyſed hym to make one Conan Meryadok his coſyn, kinge after him. But by the inſtant labour of one Caradok then duke of Cornewayle, Octauius laſtlye ſente vnto Rome Maurice the ſonne of the forenamed Caradok, to bringe or conuey the ſayde Maximianus into Britaine, for to marrye the onelye doughter of Octauius, and by reaſon thereof to enioye the realme of Britayne. This Maximianꝰ is of ſome authoure named Maximius, the whiche as witneſſeth Gaufride, was the ſonne of Leonine, brother to Heleyne, and vncle vnto Conſtantine the greate. Whyche ſayinge affirmeth alſo Iacobus Philippus authour of a boke called Supplementum chronicarũ, wherein he nameth the ſaid Maximianus a knight of the Briton bloude.

Then it foloweth, when the forenamed Maurice had ſpedde his needes, ſo that he came to the preſence of Maximianus, & ſhewed the effecte of his meſſage: the ſaide Maximianus to him graunted, and in all haſte prepared for his voyage into Britayn, & ſhortlye after with a conuenient companye landed at Southampton. Whereof beinge warned Conan Meriadoke: he with a certaine of knightes of his affinitie, was purpoſed to haue frayed with the ſaid Maximianꝰ, and to haue diſtreſſed hym, for ſo muche as he well knewe, that by him he ſhoulde be put from the lande. But hys purpoſe was let by the commaundement of the kinge or otherwiſe, ſo that the ſaide Maximianus was conueyed ſafely to the kinges preſence, ſhortlye after with conſent of the moore partie of his lordes, gaue his doughter vnto the ſayde Maximianus with poſſeſſion of this Iſle of Britaine. The which mariage ſolempniſed and ended, the ſayde Octauius died ſhortlye after. But howe longe he raigned none of the ſayde authours teſtifie, excepte diuers of them agree, that he continued his raigne tyll the tyme that Gracian and Valentinyan ruled the Empyre, the whiche beganne to raygne the yere of oure Lorde.ccc.and.lxxxii. By whiche reaſon it muſt folowe, that the ſaide Octauius raigned at leaſt.liiii.yeres.

¶The.lxxii.Chapter.

Maximus. Capit. 4.

Maximianus or Maximius the ſonne of Leonine & coſyn Germaine of Conſtantine yͤ great was made kynge of Britaine in the yere of our lord.ccc.and.lxxxii. 383. This in the Engliſhe booke is named Maximian, the whiche as teſtifieth Gaufride & other, was ſtalleworthe and myghtye of hys handes.

But for he was cruell and perſued ſome deale the Chriſten, he therefore of all writers is called Maximianꝰ the tyrant. Attwene this and Conan aforenamed, was ſtrife and debate, and diuers conflictes attwene them was foughten, in the whiche either of theim ſpedde diuerſly, albeit that laſtlye they were frendes. So that Maximianus raigned a ſeaſon in quiet, and gathered richeſſe and treaſure not all without grudge.

Laſtely he was moued and exited to war vpon the Galles, through whiche counſayll he with a great hoſte of Britons ſayled into Armorica, that is nowe called lytle Britaine, and bare him ſo knightlye, that he ſubdued that countrey vnto hys Lordeſhyppe, and after gaue the ſaide countrey to Conan Meriadok, to holde of him and of the kinges of great Britayne for euer. And then commaunded the ſayde lande to be called lytle Brytayne.

For this victorie his knightes proclaimed him emperour. Where throughe he beinge the moore exalted in pryde, paſſed farther in the landes of the empier, and victoriouſly ſubdued a great parte of Gallia or Fraunce, and all Germania. For this deede, diuers authours accompt him falſe and periured. Wherefore it ſhoulde ſeeme that before hys departynge from Rome, he was ſworne to Gracian & Valentinian Emperours, that he ſhoulde neuer after clayme any parte of the Empier. And alſo for the breaking of this othe, he was after chalenged or blamed of S. Martyne biſhoppe of Turon. To whome he anſwered that he was compelled of his knightes to take vpon him as emperour or elles he ſhoulde of them haue been ſlayne. Neuertheleſſe the ſaied Biſhoppe ſhewed vnto him that for his vntrueth he ſhoulde not longe proſper or raigne.

After that word was brought vnto the emperours, that Maximianus had with harde battails thus ſubdued Gallia and Germania: Gracianus with a greate hoſte came downe to reſiſt him. But when he heard of the marciall dedees of Maximianus, he was a drad and fledde backe to the citie of * Lugdum or Lyons, Lugduge. in Fraunce. Where after the ſayd Gracianus was ſlayne, and hys brother Valentinian was compelled to flee to Conſtantine the noble. Then Maximianꝰ to haue the moore ſtrength to withſtande his enemies: made his ſonne named Victour felowe of the emperoure. In this while that Maximianus warred thus in Italye: Conan maryadoke, to whome, as as before is ſayde: Maximianus had geuen the lande of litle Brytaine, for ſo muche as he and hys knightes had no wyll to marrye the doughters of Frenchmen but rather to haue wyues of theyr owne bloud: therfore this Conan ſent meſſangers vnto Dionotus then duke of Cornewayll, ⁊ chiefe ruler of Britaine, willinge him to ſende his doughter Vrſula with a certain nomber of virgyns, to be coupled to him and to hys knightes in mariage. The which ſoone after prepared accordynge to the requeſte of Conan, the foreſayde Vrſula accompanied with .xi. M. virgins, and were ſent by her ſaid father towarde litle Britaine, as witneſſeth the Engliſhe Chronicle, Gaufryde and alſo Policronica.

The .xi. M. virgyns howe they beganne.

But it ſhoulde appeare by the ſayinge of Antoninus, Iacobus Philippus, and other wryters, that this Vrſula with her companye ſhoulde not bee ſent forthe of muche Britain, nor maried about this time, but in the tyme of Marcianus being Emperour, the whiche began his empyre after moſte accorde of wryters, in the yere of our lorde .cccc. and .li. Of the martyrdome of theſe maidens diuers authours write diuerſly. Wherefore I remit them that wyll haue farther vnderſtandynge in thys matter, vnto the Legende of ſainctes, read yerelye in the Churche, where they maye bee ſufficientlye taught and enformed.

¶ The .lxxiii. Chapter.

Capit. 4.

AND as before is ſhewed Maximianus beynge occupyed in warres in Italye: two dukes named Gwanus ⁊ Melga, the whiche Gaufride teſtifieth and other, were ſent from Gracian and Valentinian Emperours, to puniſhe and ſbudue the Britons that fauoured the partye of Maximianus, warred ſore vpon the coſtes of great Britaine, and occupied a great parte of Albania. Whereof when Maximianus had knoweledge he ſent into great Britaine a knight and captain named Gracianus or Gracian. The whyche with two Legyons of knyghtes bare him ſo knightly, that in ſhort proceſſe he chaſed the ſaid two dukes into Irelande, and helde the lande of Britayne in good peace, to the behalfe of Maximianus.

Englande was called great Britayne.

In thys whyle Maximianus continuynge hys warre agaynſte the Empyre, and entendinge to be Emperoure: Theodocius named the elder, then Emperoure of the Eaſt part of the worlde, hearinge of the death of Gracian, and chaſing of Valentinian, with a great power ſpedde him toward yͤ ſayde Maximianus. And ſhortlye after at a citie in Italy named Aquilia toke yͤ ſayde Maximianꝰ, and him beheaded. When knowledge of the death of Maximianus was comē to Gracian that then had the rule of muche Britaine: he ſeaſed the land, ⁊ made him ſelfe by ſtrength kinge of Britaine, when or after that Maximianus had gouerned the ſame, by moſte accorde of wri-

ters

was by the ſpace of .iiii. yeres.

The .lxviii. Chapter.

Chap.4.

Gracianus the whyche of Gaufryde is called Municeps, that may be taken for a hyred or waged knight, or for the keper of giftes, or bearinge the rule of a citie: beganne to rule the Brytons, in the yere of our Lorde .ccc. and .xc. The whiche exerciſed all tyrannye and exaction vpon hys ſubiectes, for the whiche he was hadde in wonderfull hatered amonge the Britons, and amonge them caſt and ſought many wayes and meanes for his deſtruction, but he by diuers meanes, eſcaped the daungers, and puniſhed greuouſly all ſuche fautours. Wherefore laſtly as ſaieth Gaufride they fell vpon him of an whole aſſent, and kylled him, when he had reygned or moore verelye vſurped by the terme of foure yeres.

The .lxix. Chapter.

Chap.4.

After that Graciã was thus ſlayne of the Britons, the forſayd Gwanus and Melga knowinge the Britons to be withoute head or ruler: aſſembled alſo peple and retourned into much Britaine, waſtinge and burninge on euery ſide, & deſtroyed great plentie of Britons, as witneſſeth Gaufride and other.

But Policronica ſayeth, that when the Romaines knew of the deathe of Gracian, they ſente a knyghte called Conſtantine to haue the rule of Britaine and other countreyes there aboute. But he was after demed an enemie to the empire, for harme and ſkathes by him done in Fraunce. Wherefore by commaundemente of Honorius the Emperoure, a knyghte or Erle called Conſtancius was ſent agaynſte the forenamed Conſtantine and ſlewe hym at a place or towne called Arelet. After this the Brytons were agayne vexed by the Pictes and other ſtraunge nations. By reaſon whereof they were conſtrayned to ſende agayne to Rome: requiring them of ayde, vpon condicion that they ſhould alwaye be ſubiect vnto Rome, The which requeſt and promeſſe thus hearde of the Senate: Honorius aforenamed was ſente into Britaine with a legion of knightes, whiche is ſyxe thouſande ſyxe hundred .lxvi. The whiche legion with heelpe of the Britons chaſed the foreſayde Pictes & other enemies, and taught the Britons to make a walle ouerthwarte the lande from ſea to ſea, that is to meane from the water of Humber to the Scottiſhe ſea, and ordeyned them wardeins and kepers of the wall, and after retourned to Rome. This walle as teſtifyeth Policronica, was made of turues, and ſtretched frõ Penultoñ or Penultoñ, vnto the citie of Acliut or Acliud. But for this wall was of ſmall ſtrengthe: the enemies before named, deſtroyed certayne parties of thys ſayde wall, and ouer rode the cou̅trey, and toke great prayes dayly, and dyd as muche harme as they had done before time. Wherfore ẏ Britons were conſtrained to ſeke for newe ſuccour to the Romains Then did Foloaines ſend another legion, whiche againe chaſed the

A legiõ of knightes.

Honorius.

ſaide Pictes and other enemies, and made then a wall of ſtone of the thickneſſe of. viii. fote, and in heighte. xii. fote, in the ſelfe place where Seuerus before had made a dyke and walle of turues. And that done, the Romaines comforted and exhorted the Britains to be manly & corageous to wͭſtande their enemies, ſhewinge to them further, that thei ſhould truſte to their owne ſtrength, for ſo muche as the Romaines beinge ſo farre frõ them, might not lightly come from ſo farre wyth an armye of knightes, and alſo not withoute great coſt & trauaile. After which monition and exhortation thus geuen to ẏ Britons, by the mouth of the archbiſhoppe of London, wͭ other inſtructions apperteyninge to the feates of warre the ſaid Romains toke leaue of the Britons, as though they ſhould after that tyme retourne no more into Britayne.

Chap. 5.

But it was not long after that the Romaines were thus departed, that the Pictes and Scottes began to breake out of their dennes and caues. Theſe two nations after ſome authours ſhoulde ſeme to be one. But by the declaration of Ranulphe in his. lviii. chapiter of his firſt booke, thei ſhulde appeare to be two maner of peoples or at leaſt dwelled in two ſondrie countreys. As the Pictes in the northſide of Scotland, or after Beda in the Southſide, which conteyneth Galeway and Lodeway. And the Scottes by leding of their duke Renda, ſhuld poſſeſſe Irelande: albeit after an arme of the North part of the ſea paſſinge by Deyra, ſhould depart the Pictes. But in the time ẏ the Saxons ruled the lande, the Scottes by maner of treaſon ſlewe the mightye men and rulers of the Pictes, and ſo after kept the countrey for their owne. Theſe two nations diſcorde in maners, but not in clothinge and in faithe, and in courteſie of ſhedinge of mannes bloud, thei be one.

Then as before is ſaide, theſe Pictes and Scottes entred the lande, and brake the walle before made, & ſlewe the wardeins therof, and after ſpoyled and robbed the countreys, and chaſed ſo cruelly the commons and other, that they were comfortleſſe. By meane wherof the Britons wer brought in ſuche daunger and miſerie, that either of them robbed and ſlewe other. And ouer this the grounde was vntylled and vnſowen, wherof enſued great ſcarcetie and hunger: And after hunger enſued death.

Thus after one miſchiefe cam another, as death vpon death, and ſorowe vpon ſorow, which fell vpon them by ſtryfe medled wyth the great hunger. The which miſerie in this wiſe continuinge, the chief of them toke aduiſe among them ſelues, and finally concluded that for remedie of this miſchiefe, they would ſend vnto Aecius then being king in Fraunce. Which Aecius was maiſter of the chiualrye of Honorius then Emperour, & occupied in warres in a part of Gallia To this Aecius was ſet writing, whereof the effecte was this. To thy manhode Aecius be it vnderſtanded the miſerye of the Britons, the whiche ſtraung nations chaſe vnto the ſea, and the ſea driueth vs agayne to ſtraunge nations. Of the whiche enſue two maner of carains, that one by violēce of the enemies ſworde, and that other by wilfull drownynge.

But all their writinge was but in vaine, ſo that from the ſaide Aecius, nor yet from the Romaines had they no refuge nor comforte.

In this while the hunger encreaſed, and the people were ſo ouerſette with their enemies, that manye of them were as yolden, and tooke partie againe their owne neighboures. And the other that were of more power, and dwelled farther within the lande, defended them in their beſt maner.

Capit.5.

Laſtly the noble and wiſeſt of thē, and ſpeciallye the Archebyſhoppe of London with other of the land, kepte a counſayll at London. By the whiche it was concluded that an embaſſade ſhoulde be made vnto the kinge of lytle Britaine, to impetre or aſke of him ayde and comforte in their great neceſſitie. Of whiche embaſſade the ſayde archbiſhoppe was appointed for the chief and principall, the which is named of Gaufride Guethelinus, and of the Engliſh chronicle Goſſeleyn. Whiche ſaied biſhoppe with the other vnto him aſſigned, ſo ſpedde them, that in ſhorte and conuenient time thei came vnto the preſēce of Aldroenꝰ then king of litle Britaine, and to him declared the effect of their meſſage. The which hauinge compaſſion of the lamētable requeſt made vnto him by yͤ ſaide embaſſade, after aduiſe taken of his lordes graunted vnto yͤ biſhop vpon condicion that yf god ſent to them victorie of their enemies, yͭ thei ſhould crowne his brother king of great Britaine, yͭ which he entended to ſend thither with a conuenient armie. Whiche cōdicion yͤ ſaid biſhop wͭ the other gladly accepted ⁊ fermly graūted.

So that thus it is apparant vnto you, that this lande was longe without head or gouenour, which lēgth of time is of ſome authours determined to be longe, ⁊ of ſome but ſhort, ſo that litle certentie is thereof left.

Wherfore I haue ſhewed and driuen certen reaſons after myne opinion and dull minde, in the table before expreſſed, wherin it ſhal apeare vnder correction, that the ſayde ſeaſon of time of this lande beinge withoute kinge, to reken frō the laſt yere of Gracian vnto the firſt yere of Conſtantine now nexte enſuinge, was fullye .xxxix. yeare.

Finit tributum.

The ende of tribute to Rome.

YE ſhal alſo furthermore vnderſtande, that here endeth finallye the tribute and dominion of the Romains. For after thys day they hadde no trybute to theym payed, nor no Romayne prynce after this day ruled this lande of britaine. The whiche tribute and dominion endured from the ninth yere of Caſſibellan, vnto the time of Seuerus by the terme of two hundred and .lv. yeres. And from the time of Seuerꝰ vnto the firſt yeare of Gracian, a hundred and lxxxiii. yeares. And from the fyrſte yere of Gracian vnto the laſt yere of thys miſerye .xliii. yeres. So that frō the yere that Julius Ceſar made fyrſte thys Iſle of Brytayne tributarye vnto the Empire vnto the laſte yere or ende of this foreſaide miſerie flowed. iiii. hundred and one and thirty yeres. But Policronicon ſaieth that the Romaines ruled and had tribute of this land about foure hundred lxx. yeres. Whiche ſayinge is full like to be true, if the ende of their dominion bee determined at the laſte departinge of the Romaines out of this lande.

AND thus here an ende of the fowrth parte of this worke, for ſo much as the forenamed Gracianus was the laſte of the Romayne kynges that raygned in muche Bryttayne, or that no trybute was after thys daye payed unto the Romaynes. And thys fowrth parte to bee accompted from the firſte yeare of Seuerus, unto the laſte ende or yeare of this miſerie, includeth of yeares two hundred and one and twenty.

¶ Thus endeth the fourth parte.

¶ The fyfte parte.

¶ The. lxxvi. Chapter.

HERE accordinge to yͤ promyſe made by me in the beginning of this worke I ſhall brynge in, & ſhewe unto you, the beginninge of the raygne of the kinges of Fraunce, and ſette them in ſuche a directe order, that it ſhalbe apparante to the reader, and certainly knowen, what king raigned in Fraunce, when ſuche a kinge raigned in Englande. And alſo I ſhall ſome deale touche the actes and dedes of the ſaid kings of Fraunce, ſo that the chronicles of bothe Realmes ſhall in thys woorke appeare, and the names of the Princes, which at once reigned in England and in Fraunce.

Then for the perfourmaunce of the ſame, fyrſte it is to bee noted, that after the ſubuerſion of Troy by the Greekes (as in the begynnynge of this woorke is ſhewed) dyuers Troyians beynge under the rule of the nobles of the ſame lignage, as Helenus ſonne of Priamus, Eneas, Anthenorus, and other, ſearched the worlde, and landed in diuers countreyes.

As Helenus in Grece or Grecia, Eneas in Italia or Italye, and ſo of other. Amonge the whyche nobles one named Turchus, and another named Franco coſin germaynes, as Turchus the ſonne of Troylus, and Franco or Francio the ſonne of Hector whiche ſayde two coſyns ſearchynge theyr aduenture: after manye and dyuers daun-

Pannonia

Why the realme of Fraunce is ſo called

daungers & ieopardies paſſed by the ſea, laſtlye landed in a countrey called Thracea or Tracia in Grece, and there with their company inhabited them nere vnto a riuer called Dion. And after they hadde continued there a ſeaſon of time: Turchus departed with a certain of Troians from hys ſaid coſin Francio, and ſailed after into a countrey called Faſo the leſſe. Where he with his people dwelled longe time. Whiche Faſo ſhoulde be in the countrey of Scithia. Of this Turchus deſcended as ſaith the Frenche chronicle. iiii. maner of people. That is to ſaie, Auſtrogothis, Ipogothis, Wandalis, & Normans. And Francio or Franco remoued after with his companye into a countrey named Pannoma, which countrey now ſhuld ſeeme to be a part of Hungary or ioyninge nere to it. There nere vnto a Ryuer called Thanais they builded them a cytye, and named it Sicambria, by reaſon whereof they were longe after called Sicambri. They were alſo named Franci, as ſaieth the Frence chronicle, after this man Francio. Turpinus that wrote the geſtes of the great Charles, ſaieth: that when Charles had made the countrey of Spayne ſubiecte and was retourned into Fraunce, he made al the bondemen dwelling about or nere vnto Paris or in all Gallia, free, in the worſhip of ſainct Denis and of ſainct Iames of Galis vpon condition ẏ thei ſhulde yerely offer. iiii. pence to the worke of S. Denis church. By reaſō whereof, thei wer named Franci, as mē freed that tofore wer bound. Policronica ſaith, they were named Franci of Valentinian the emperour, as it were for fierſnes. But how ſo euer thei came by ẏ name, thei were called Franci as Frenchemen. This ſaid people were alſo named long time Galli, & were tributaryes to Rome, and vnder their rule, till the time of Valentinian emperour, aboute the yere of Chriſt. iii. hundred & lxvi. This Valentiniā hauing the rule of ẏ weſt part of the world, made war vpō a people called Aleynes, that dwelled nere vnto the forenamed Gallis. Theſe Aleynes wer egre of fight, and ouer that they were ſo cloſed with fennes and marris, that the Romaynes myghte not winne to them by force, wherfore thei often rebelled againe the empier. Wherefore in the end Valentinian conſidering the fierſnes of the Gallis, with their nere dwelling vnto the ſaid Aleynes, couenaunted with them if thei would ſubdue the ſaid people, thei ſhould haue releaſe ten yeres tribute.

Whiche couenaunt well and ſufficientlye confirmed to the Gallis, thei in ſhorte while after by theyr knighthod and policie, ſubdued or vtterlye chaſed the ſaid Aleynes. For the whiche deede they continued the foreſaide ten yeres without paying of any tribute. Which ten yeres ranne and expired, the Romaines againe claimed theyr former accuſtomed tribute. To whom it was anſwered, thei had redemed the ſaid tribute with the price of their bloud, and ought not any more to be charged with any ſuch tribute. With which anſwere the Romains beinge ſoore diſcontented, made newe war vpon the ſaid Sicambris. Of which warre the Sicambris or Gallis had the worſe, and were chaſed from their citie of Sicambria. Then as witneſſeth Policronica ⁊ other, they drew nere vnto the water of Rine and grew in short proceſſe to ſuch a multitude and of ſuch ſtrength, that thei in shorte while after by leading of their .iii. dukes named Marcomirus, Somomus or Simon: and Genebaux, warred vpon the landes of the empyre, and ſuch as were ſubiect vnto the ſame.

Whereof Theodoſius ſurnamed the yonger then emperour beynge warned, he anone ſent .ii. of his dukes with a great hoſte, for to ſubdue the ſaid Gallis or Sicambris But thei defēded them ſo knightly, that the ſaide dukes were chaſed, and as witneſſeth mayſter Robert Gagwine, a greate nomber of the Romaynes were ſlayne.

The .lxxxvii. Chapter.

After this victorie thus opteyned by the Sycambris they waxed ſo ſtronge that they wan frō the Almaines diuers townes and ſtrong holdes within Germania. And after thei had opteined ẏ famous Citye named Treueris, which as witneſſeth the authour of Cronica cronicarum, was fyrſt founded in the time of the Patriarche Abraham, before the incarnation of Chriſt a thouſand .ix. C. lxv. yeres. And ſo dayly wan vpon the nations ioyninge vnto them, til thei came to the riuer of Sein, where thei reſted them, and builded the countrey all there aboute. In ſo muche that they then named them ſelues Franci, as men freed and oute of all daunger of the Empyre of Rome, and theyr lande after theym, they named Fraunce, whyche ſynce that tyme is greatlye encreaſed.

Whē and by whome the name of Fraũce came in.

So that at this daye it is a countrey of great wealth and honour, and centeyneth many Prouinces and Lordeſhyppes, as after the affirmaunce of Polichronica is touched in the ſeuen and twentye chapter of his fyrſte booke where it is ſhewed that Gallia whiche nowe is Fraunce, had that name Gallia of whiteneſſe of people.

This Gallia or Fraunce hath in the North ſide Germania, in the Eaſte, the ryuer of Ryne, in the Southeaſt the Alpis or the high mountaines, and in the weſt, the the ſea Occean, whiche is called both Britanicum and Gallicum, whiche is to meane, Engliſhe and Frenche ſea. For it departeth England and fraunce, in the South ſea of myddell erth, that waſheth aboute by the Prouince of Narbon. In the time of Julius Ceſar Gallia was parted in thre, but for dyuers happes that befell after in that lande, the countrey and lande that ſtretcheth from the Rine to Sein, is now called Gallia Belgica which is very Fraũce And that countrei that ſtretcheth from Seyn to the ryuer of Leir, is called Gallia Lugdunenſis, whereof the ouer part hight or is named Burgundia, that is Burgoyne, and the nether part is Neſtria or Normandie.

And the countrey that ſtretcheth from the riuer of Leyr to the ryuer of Gerounde, is called Gallia Aquitania, which is Guyan, and ſtretcheth oute of the Eaſt from the ryuer of Rooſh, vnto the Weſt

Occean. Whereof the ouer parte thereof hight Celtica, whiche is to meane Heauenly, becauſe that high mountaines be therein. Frō the water of Geraunde, to the ſee of middell earth, and to the moūtaynes called montes Pireni oꝛ great hilles of Spayne, is clepyd Gallia Narbonenſis. And now a parte thereof is called Gothia, ⁊ ſome Gaſconia, which is to mean Gaſcoyne.

And ſo Gallia is cloſed aboute with thꝛe noble waters, with the riuer of Rine in the Noꝛthe ſide, with the Riuer of Roone in the Eaſte, and with the Bꝛitiſhe ocean in the weſte. In Gallia oꝛ Faunce ben manie noble Cities, wherof Paris is hedde and pꝛincipall, whiche in the firſte foundacion was clepid Parydes, after Parydes a Troyane, that departed from Troy with Eneas and other, as witneſſeth Carinus and other wꝛiters of hiſtoꝛies. But yͤ Frenche chꝛonicle ſaythe it was fyꝛſt founded by the Sycambꝛis, and named by them Lutecia, befoꝛe the incarnaciō of Chꝛiſt, thꝛe hundꝛed.lxxx.and.xv.yeres. And in the while that the foꝛenamed Marcomirus was as there chief hedde ⁊ gouernoure, foꝛ the moꝛe beautie of the name, and alſo in minde of Parys ſonne of Pꝛiame kinge of Troye, of the whiche he was liniallie deſcended, he therefoꝛe chaunged the name, and commaunded it to be called Parys.

How and whereof, the citie of paris was named.

paris was firſt founded in the iii.c.lxxxxv yere befoꝛe the incarnacion of Chꝛiſte.

In Gallia alſo be theſe pꝛouinces and loꝛdeſhippes folowynge, Braban, Flaundꝛes, Noꝛmandie Picardie, Bꝛitain the leſſe, Poytowe, Gaſcoyne, Guyan, Tolowſe Burgoine, Angeo, ⁊ Maine, Pꝛouiance, Champayne, ⁊ Aluerne.

All whiche ſignouries ⁊ loꝛdeſhippes belonged oꝛ apperteyned vnto the crowne of Fraunce al be it that diuers of them hathe bene geuen out by mariage oꝛ otherwyſe. So that the king of Frāce claimeth to be chiefe loꝛd of them and at this day hath the poſſeſſiō of them, excepte Burgoyne, Flaūdꝛes, Bꝛabā, and Noꝛmandie, foꝛ the which he is tributary vnto the king of Englande.

Then it foloweth, when the ſayde Gallis oꝛ Frenchemen had thus conquered theſe foꝛeſayd coūtries, oꝛ the moꝛe parte of theym, oꝛ at leaſt made them vnto yͤ ſayde Gallis tributarie: then the foꝛenamed Marcomyꝛus as theyꝛ chiefe hedde oꝛ gouernoure: cloſid cities with ſtronge walles, ⁊ builded ſtronge holdes and caſtelles, and after died, leuing after him a ſonne: garnyſſhed wyth al knightlie vertue named Pharamundus oꝛ Pharamonde.

Francia.

¶ The.lxxviii. Chapter.

Pharamundus the ſon of Marcomyꝛus befoꝛe named, was after yͤ death of his ſayd father made oꝛ oꝛdeyned the firſt kinge of Frenchemen, by the agreement of hiſtoꝛies, and alſo as affermeth mayſter Roberte Gagwine and other, in the yere of our loꝛdes incarnacion.iiii.hundꝛed and.xx. And of the woꝛlde, oꝛ after the creacion of the firſt Adā folowinge the accompte of thys woꝛke as befoꝛe is ſhewed, fyue thouſande.vi.hundꝛed and.xix.

The firſte kinge of Fraunce was made iiii.C.xx. yeres befoꝛe the incarnacion of Chꝛiſt, ⁊ the.v.M.vi.C.⁊.xix yere of the woꝛlde.

After Brute began his dominion in this yſle of Britaine, a thouſãd fiue hũdred, and.lvi. And the yere of miſerie of the Brittons.xxvi.

Of this Pharamundus is litel thing left in memorie, except that mine authour gagwine teſtifieth that he made certaine lawes whiche longe time endured after. But for the names of the lawes & vſe of them be derke to engliſh vnderſtanding therfore I ouerpaſſe thẽ and folow the ſtorie, whiche affermeth, that when the ſayd Pharamonde had ruled the Frenchmen well and nobly by the ſpace of a xi. yeres, he died, & left after him a ſonne named Clodeo Crinitus, or Capellatus.

¶ The.lxxix. Chapter.

Clodeo the ſonne of Pharamonde was made kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde. iiii. hũdred &.xxxi. And the.xxxvii yere of the foreſayd miſery of Britons. The which as before is ſaid was ſurnamed Crinitus and Capillatus, by reaſon that he ware his heare longe, of him the kinges of Frenchemen longe time after were called Criniti. This to augment his lordſhip, made warre vpon a people called Turinges, and by great and ſore fight made thẽ at length ſubiecte to him, whiche countrie as ſayth the French chronicle is a parte of Almayne. And at this day or time of this Clodeo his reigne the Romaynes had no moore of the lande of Gallia or Fraunce in theyr rule, then that which lieth from the riuer of Leir vnto the riuer of Ryne whiche is called *Gallia Lugdunenſis.*

And when he had thus ſubdued the Turinges, he then ſente hys eſpies ouer the Ryne, to ſe what ſtrenthe they were of, that inhabited that countrey. And after reporte to him brought of the ſaide eſpies: that the coũtre was fertil and riche, and the people thereof but of ſmalle defence: he with his armie ouerſpred the coũtrey, and after ſhortely beſeged the Cities of Cambrey, and Turney & them wanne. But in the Citie of Turney was a certayn nomber of Romaines, which mãfully defended the towne longe tyme.

And when they perceyued that they mighte no lenger holde the towne, they then manfully iſſued oute, and gaue to the Frenchmen harde battaile. But fortune was to thẽ froward, ſo that they were diſtreſſed. After which countreys and townes thus gotten by Clodeo, with other victorious dedes by him done: he laſtlie died, when he had ruled the frenchemen.xix. yeres without iſſue of his body.

Anglia.

Chap.5.

Now thẽ let vs retourn vnto the Archbiſhoppe of London, and the other Britons beyng in Britayne the leſſe, the which vpõ the promiſe before reherſed, receiued of Albroenus kinge of lyttell Britayne, his brother named Cõſtantine, the whiche wyth a certayne nomber of knightes ſhortli after landed at Totneſſe in much Britayne, and gathered to theim the floure of the Britons whiche before their landinge were hid in diuers places of the lande. By whoſe power and marcial knighthode,

Albroenus

hode, yͤ enemies of the lande were ſhendefully chaſed and vtterly cõfounded. Which victorie thus by the Britons obteined: they of one minde, conueyed their chiefe captaine Cõſtantine vnto the towne of Kaercegẽt now called Ciceſtre and there crowned him (accordinge to the promyſe made vnto his brother) king of this yſle of the more Britayne.

¶ The.lxxx. Chapter.

Capit.5.

CONſtantinus the brother of Aldroenus, king of lytel Britayne, was crowned kinge of much Britayne, in the yere of our Lorde foure hundred and.xxxiii. and the thirde yere of Clodio then king of Fraunce. The which guided the lande with ſuch manhode and pollicie, that he kept it from daunger of enemies, and for time of his life helde it in good quiete and reſt. Of this Conſtantine is littell minde made or lefte in writinge, excepte that he receyued of his wife three ſonnes, the whiche he named Conſtant, or Conſtantius, Aurelius, Ambroſius, and Uter which was ſurnamed Pendragon.

But for he ſawe and perceyued that his eldeſt ſonne named Conſtant, was dul and inſolent of wit he therfore made him a monke in the monaſtery of ſaynt Amphyabil of wincheſter, which monaſterie at this day is called S. Swythynes abbey. And the other two brethern, he betoke vnto Guethelinus archbyſhop, to noriſhe and bringe forthe.

In the courte of this Conſtantine as witneſſeth Gaufride, was a Pict that was much loued and greatly fauoured of conſtantyne; ſo that he might at all times come to the kinges preſence. The whiche being an errant traytour, and ſerching conuenient tyme to execute his deteſtable treaſon, by a ſecrete meane ſlew the kyng in his *chamber, whẽ he had been king after moſte writers ten yeres.

in an herber.

¶ The.lxxxi. Chapter.

Capit.6.

CONſtantius ſonne of Conſtãtine, by meane of Uortigernus was made kinge of Britayne, in the yere of our Lord.iiii. hundred and.xliii. This as before is touched, for ſo muche as his father thought he was not very apt to take ſo great a charge as to gouerne the lande after hym, was made a religious man in the monaſteri before named. Or as ſome writers meane, the ſayde Conſtante of pure deuociõ that he had to God & ſaynt Amphiabyl made him ſelfe a monke, vnweting the kinge his father, and other hys freendes.

But how or in what maner ſo euer he became a monke, trouth it is that Uortigerus or Uortigernus after the death of Conſtãtine founde ſuch meanes that he was taken out of the abbey, and crowned Kynge of Britayn. By meane wherof the ſayd Uortiger had all the rule of the lande, ſo that Conſtante had but onely the name. This Uortiger then conſideringe the innocencie and mildeneſſe of the kynge, caſte in his mynde how he might be kinge himſelfe. And amonge other meanes, founde to haue aboute the kinges perſon an hundred Pictes, or after ſome Scottes, the whiche he ordeyned for a gard for the kinges perſon, whiche done, he bare him in ſuche

wyſe

wiſe againe the Pictes by meanes of great giftes and otherwiſe that they at length had Vortiger in ſuch fauoure, that they feared not to ſay openly yͭ Vortiger was more worthy to be the kinge then Conſtant. In this while Vortyger gat into his poſſeſſion the kinges treaſure, and what was of him commaunded, was doone, thoughe other therat murmured and grudged. And euer in ryght & wronge he fauoured the foreſayd Pictes or Scottes. The whiche at lengthe perceiuing his corrupt minde, when they ſawe that they had conueniente time, fell vpon yͤ king, and him ſlew or murdered.

After which cruel deede by thē done, they preſented the hed of Cōſtante vnto Vortiger, then being at London. Wherof when he was ware to the ende that the Britōs ſhould thinke that dede to be done againe his minde and will: wepte and made ſemblaunce of al ſorow and heuineſſe, and cauſed the ſayd hundred knightes to be taken in all haſte after, and them by dome and law of the lande to be hedded, by reaſon whereof he was taken not culpable, or innocente of the kinges death. When the kinges death was knowen to ſuche perſonnes as had the kepinge of the two yonger brethren, Aurelius & Vter: they in all haſte: for yͤ more ſauegarde of them, fled into lytell Britaine, and there kept them til it pleaſed God otherwiſe to puruey for them. And thus as ye haue heard was kinge Conſtant ſlain, when he had reygned after moſte writers, fiue yere.

The. lxxxii. Chapter.

Capit. 6.

VOrtigernus Duke of yͤ Jeweſſes, or Vortigerus Erle of Jeweſſes, after called weſt Saxons, was made kinge of Britain in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred and. xlviii. and the. xviii. yere of Clodeo king of Fraūce, which after the death of Canſtante by ſtrength & otherwiſe, was made kinge and ruled the lande not all without trouble. For it was not longe or yͤ Pictes, which hauing knowledge of yͤ death and iudgement of their knightes and kinſmen, that they inuaded the north partes of the lande, doinge therin great harme and domage. And ouer that manie and diuerſe of the greate of the Britons, perceiuing that the kinge Conſtant was not murdered all with out conſent of the ſaid Vortiger, rebelled again him, and daylie ſente and ſayled ouer into littell Britayne, to the ayde and aſſiſtence of the foreſaid children of Conſtante, which put the ſaid Vortiger to great vnreſtfulneſſe, & the more for that, that he wiſte not, nor knew not in whome he might putte hys truſte and confidence.

With theſe perturbaunces was medled plentie of corne and frute that the like therof had not bene ſene manie yeres paſſed, wherewith was ioyned lechery and peſtilence, with many other inconueniences, ſo that vice was accōpted for ſmal or none offence. The which reigned not onlie in the tēporaltie, but alſo in the ſpiritualti and heddes of the ſame. So that euerie man turned the poynte of his ſpeare againſte the trew and innocent man, and the commons gaue them all to dronkennes and ydelnes, where thorough enſued fighting, ſtrife, and much enuy. Of which foreſayde miſcheues enſued muche mortalite and deathe of men, that the liuing ſcantli ſuffiſed in ſome countreyes to burye the deade. And ouer this the king was ſo harde beſet with the forenamed enemies, that he was conſtreined as affermith * Policronica, to ſende for paynems, as the Saxons, to helpe to withſtande his enemies and defende his land and alſo he daylie feared the landing of Aurely and Uter.

A greate plage.

Cap.1.li.5.

Gal.lib.3. Cap.1.

Vortiger thus beinge beſet w many aduerſities in viſitinge his lande, and then beinge for diuerſe cauſes him mouing, at Dorobernia or Caunterburie : tydynges came to him of the arryuynge of three longe ſhippes full of armed men at the yſle of Tenet. Wherof firſte he made countenaunce as though he had bene in doubt whether it had ben the two bretherne of Conſtant or no. But when the ſame was blowen aboute, ỳ they were none enemies: anon he cauſed the leders of thẽ to be brought vnto his preſence, freyning of the the cauſe of their landing and of their nacion and countrey. The which anſwered vnto the kinge & ſayd, they were of the countrey of Germanie, and put oute of theyr countrey by a maner ſorte or lot, at ſundrie times vſed within the ſayde lande, the whiche was vſed for muche as the people therin encreaſed ſo faſte, that without ſuch prouiſion had, the countrey ſhuld not ſuffice for the people, the whiche was ſuche as foloweth.

At ſondrie times when ỳ ſaide countrey was repleniſhed of people, the Princes and rulers therof wolde aſſemble at a certayn place & cal before them the luſtie yonge folkes. Of the which they wolde choſe out a certayne nombre, and appoynte to them certayne dukes or leders, with all thing neceſſary to the warre. And them ſo garnyſhed, wolde commaunde to ſeche their aduenture, and to wynne ſome lande by theyr knighthode, where they might inhabite them ſelfe. By whiche vſe and cuſtome thus longe vſed, now was fallen to their lotte, to doo as their forefathers had done before them.

Wherefore ſins fortune hadde brought them to this lande, they beſoughte the king that he wolde take them to his ſeruice, and they wolde be redie to fight for the defence of him and his countrey. And when the king had enquired further: he founde that they had two leders named Hengiſtus and Horſus, and thei and theyr people were called Saxons.

The kinge thus being acerteyned of the maner of theſe ſtraungers, and that they were of the gentyle of Pagan lawe: ſayde he was very heuie & ſorie, that they were miſcreantes. But he was ioyous and glad of theyr cõminge, for ſo muche as he hadde neede of ſuche ſouldyours to defende hym and his land, agayn his enemies. And ſo receiued them to hys wages and ſeruice, as is witneſſed of Gaufride and other mo writers.

❧ The.lxxiii. Chapter.

BEda the holy man ſaieth that Vortiger ſente for the Saxons, ſtronge men of armes, that had

Celoces vel. Cinth

no lande to dwell in. The whiche came in thre longe ſhippes called Obilas and receiued a place of him to dwell in, in the Eaſtſide of Britaine called the yſle of Tenet beſide Kent. *Guilelmus de regibus*, a writer of hiſtories ſaieth, that the Saxons came out of Germanie by wyll to winne worſhip and lande, & not by lot or compulſion. And alſo that they worſhipped at that daies a God named Woden, and a goddeſſe named Frica. In the worſhip of the which god the thirde feriall day in the weeke they named wodenſday, which at this day we call wedniſday. And in worſhip of the ſaid godes, they called the fifte daye friſdaye, the which we call now fridaie.

Of theſe forſayd people came thre maner of people, or thre maner of names, that is to ſay Saxons, Anglis, and Jewetes. Of the Saxons came the eaſt Saxons, weſt ſaxons, and the ſouthe Saxons. Of the Anglis came the eaſt Anglis, the middle Anglis, or Merceyns, whiche helde middel England, & ſtretcheth weſtward toward ŷ riuer of Dee beſide Cheſter, & to Seuern beſide Shrowſburie, and ſo forthe to Briſtowe, & eſtwarde towarde the ſea, and ſouthewarde to Thamys, and ſo forthe to London; and northward to Humber, and turned downewarde and weſtewarde to the riuer Mercea, and ſo forthe to the weſt ſea.

And of the Jewetes come the Kentyſhmen, and men of the yle of wyght. Of the firſt comming of theſe Saxons into great Britain, authours in partie varie. Wherefore in the table before named, it ſhall appere vnder correction, that the forenamed Hengiſtus and Horſus with their companie firſt landed in the foreſayde yle of great Britayne in the yere of our Lorde .iiii. hundred and .l. and the .iii. yere of Vortiger.

Then it foloweth, theſe Saxons by the kinges power beate downe the enemies beforeſaid, and defended the lande in mooſt knightelie wiſe, ſo that the king had the ſaxons in great loue and fauour, whiche fauour Hengiſtus wel perceiuinge vpon a ſeaſon when he ſawe conuenient time, he aſked of the king ſo much grounde as the hide of a bulle or other beaſt wold compace, which the kinge to hym graunted. After whiche graunte, the ſayde Hengiſte to the ende to winne a large ground cauſed the ſayde beſtes ſkin to be cut into a ſmall and ſlender thonge. And wyth the ſame mette oute a large and great circuite of ground vpon the whiche he ſhortlye after builded and ſet a large & ſtronge caſtel. By reaſon of which thonge the ſayde caſtell was longe after named Thonge caſtell, whiche was ſette by the agreement of al writers in the country of Lyndeſey. After this, tidinges ſprange into Germaynie, of the plentie & fatnes of the lande of Brittayne, wyth other commodities pertayning to the ſame. By mene wherof the Saxons daylie drew to the ſayde lande, and couenaunted with the Britons, that the Britons ſhould entende theyr worldlineſſe and other neceſſaries, and the ſaxons as their ſouldiours, ſhoulde defende the lande from incurſions of all enemies. For the which the

Britons ſhould geue to them cōpetent meate and wages.

Then by the ſonde of Hengiſte, came with.xvi.ſayles Ronowen the daughter of the ſaid Hengiſt, which was a mayden of excellent bewty. After whoſe commynge, Hengiſt vpon a day beſoughte the kinge that he wolde ſe his caſtell, whiche he had newly edified. To whoſe requeſt the king was agreable, and at the dai aſſigned came to the ſayde caſtell, where he was ioyouſlie receaued. And there amonge other paſtimes the ſayde Ronowen wyth a cuppe of golde full of wyne preſented the kinge, ſalutinge and ſaying waſſayle. The king which before that time had herde no like ſalutacion, nor yet vnderſtode what ſhe mente, aſked of her father what ſhe mēt by that word waſſayle. To whom it was anſwered by Hengyſt that it was a ſalutacion of good and gladnes, and that the king ſhould drinke after her, ioynyng there vnto this anſwere, drinke hayl, wherfore the kinge as he was enfourmed toke the cuppe of the maydes hande and dranke; and after he behelde the wenche in ſuch maner, that he was wounded with the derte of the blind god Cupide, that neuer after he coulde wͭ draw his loue from that wenche but laſtely by inſtygation of the deuyll, aſked her in mariage of her father. And by force thereof, as wytneſſeth *Policronica, he put frō him hys lawful wyfe, of the whiche he had before time receaued.iii. noble ſōnes called Vortimerus, Catagrinus, and Paſcencius. Then the kinge gaue vnto Hengiſtus the Lordeſhyp of Kente, though Garangonus then Erle thereof ther at grudged wyth manye of hys Britons.

Ronixon.

Li.5. cap.1

Catigernꝰ

For this, and for that, that the king had maried a woman of vncought beleefe; well neare all the Britons forſooke hym and hys workes. Neuertheleſſe, ſome there were as well nobles ⁊ other that comforted the kinge in his euill doynge. By whiche meane and other vnlefull deedes, then dayly vſed, the faith of Chriſt began ſore to appalle. And ouer that an hereſie called Arians hereſie, beganne then to ſpringe in Britayne. For the whiche two holy Biſhops named Germanus ⁊ Lupus, as of *Gaufride is witneſſed, came into Britayne to refourme the people ẏ erred from the way of truth.

The beginnynge of Arians hereſye.

Li.3. cap.2

Then, to furniſhe or performe ẏ ſtory of Vortiger, needfull it is to ſhew that for ſo much as the Britons withdrew them from Vortyger, he was therefore conſtrayned to holde wyth him the Saxons. By whoſe counſayls he after ſente for Octa the ſonne of Hengiſt, the which brought with him another companie of Saxons.

When the Lordes of Britayne ſaw and conſidered the great multitude of Saxons, and their daylie repaire into this lande, they aſſembled them together, ⁊ ſhewed to the king the inconuenience and ieopardy that might enſue to him and his land, by reaſon of ẏ great power of theſe ſtraungers, and aduertiſed him in auoyding of greater daunger, to expelle and putte thē out of his realme or the more parte of them.

But all was in vayne, for Vortyger bare ſuche a mynde to the

Saxons, by reaſon of his wyfe, yͤ he preferred the loue of the before the loue of his owne natural kinſmen and freendes. Wherefore the Britons of one will and mynde crowned for theyr kynge Vortimerus the eldeſt ſonne of Vortyger, and depriued him of all kinglie dignitie, when he had reygned after moſte concorde of hiſtories xvi. yeres.

Francia.

¶ The.lxxv. Chapter.

MErouens next of al vnto Clodeo, laſte king of Fraunce, for ſo muche as of Clodeo remayned none iſſue, was made kinge of Fraunce in the yere of our Lorde iiii. hundred and fiftie, and in the ſecond yere of Vortiger than king of Britayne. The whiche was ſtronge and marcial in al his deades, and thereunto right profitable for the realme.

And amonge other notable dedes by him done, he ſlew in one day of Hunes (the whiche by the commaundement of Attyla inuaded & deſtroyed diuers countreys as Italy, Germanie, and other) an hundred and .lxxx. thouſand, as is witneſſed of mayſter Roberte Gagwine compiler and gatherer of the actes and deedes of Frenchmē. This forenamed Attila was king of Hunes, and led in one hoſt ii. hundred thouſād men of warre, as teſtifieth Policronica. And after diuerſe battailes by him wonne he came into the feldes called Catulintes, the whiche contayned an hundred leges in lengthe & .lxx. in brede, whereof euerie lege conteineth three Engliſh myles. In the whiche feeldes or playnes he was encountred with the power of the Romaynes, in whoſe ayde was the king of Fraunce Meroneus, the king or duke of burgoyn & other, where after a longe fight was ſlaine on bothe ſides, the forſayde hundred and .lxxx. thouſand. Of the whiche nomber the ſayde kinge or duke of Burgoine was one, as is more playnlie ſhewed in the .xxviii. Chapiter in the fourth booke of the ſayde Policronicon, with other wonders whiche I ouerpaſſe.

Of this Meroneus diſcended all the kinges of frenchemen, tyll the time of Pepin the which was father vnto Charles the great or Emperoure. And finally died this Meroneus when he had reygned after moſte writers .x. yeres, leauinge after him a ſonne named Childeriche or Hildrich.

¶ The.lxxxvi. Chapter.

CHildericus or Hildericꝰ the ſonne of Meroneus was ordayned kinge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde God .iiii. hundred and .lx and the twelueth yere of Vortyger than kynge of Brytayne. The whiche enſued nothing the waies of his father, but allied him wyth all vyce and cruelneſſe, in ſuche extreme wyſe that he became odible vnto his ſubiectes. Wherefore the ſayde Childeriche, perceauing the murmur and grudge amonge the people, and fearinge hys ſodayne deſtruccion, counceled with a freende and lorde of his, named Guynomadus or Guynemeus, by whoſe counſayle in auoydynge great pareill, he auoyded ſecretelie his lande, and wente vnto the kinge of Thuringes named Beſigne, of whome he was ioyouſlie receaued. But at the departinge of the king from the ſayd Guynemeus, he toke a pece of golde and brake it in two peces, wherof the one pece he deliuered vnto ẏ king and that other pece he kept to him ſelf, ſaying to the king, that whāſoeuer that he receaued from him that peece of golde, that he ſhould be ſure to be reſtored agayn to his regalle dignite.

After the kinge was departed his lande, the frenchemen of one aſſent choſe for their gouernour & hedde a Romayne named Gyll, whiche at that day had a parte of Gallia or Fraunce in his rule to the behouſe of ẏ Romaynes, whiche parte was named or now is named Soyſons. Whan this Gyl was ſtabliſhed in his auctorite, the forenamed Guynemeus behaued him in ſuche wiſe towarde this Gill, that he had him in ſpeciall fauoure aboue all the nobles of Fraunce, and wolde execute nothing of charge without his conſent and counſell, wherof the ſaid Guynemeus being ware, and remembringe how he might reſtore Childerich to his former dignite, aduiſed the ſayd Gill to ſet more greuous taſkes vpon the Frenchmē enfourming him further: that if anie grudged thereat that he ſhould puniſh ſome of ẏ mightieſt of thē by reaſon wherof he ſhould feare the other.

Which thus done accordinge to the foreſayd coūſayl, ſhortly after to bringe his purpoſe the better aboute, the ſayde Guynemeus accuſed certayne rulers of Fraunce ſuch as he well knew were greate enemies vnto Childerech, ẏ whiche he cauſed to be taken and ſent vnto Gill, and Gyll vpon them dyd ſharpe execucion. In the whiche he ſo perſeuered ẏ the Frenchmen for remedie complayned thē to Guynemeus. To whom it was by him anſwered, that he greatly meruayled of their vnſtableneſſe, that they hadde choſen to them a kynge, and now ſo ſodaynlie wold haue him depoſed, ſhewinge further more that other they muſte calle agayne Childeriche that excerſiſed his life in volupteouſnes of liuing, or els they muſte dwell vnder the kinge, whiche is cruell and full of bloudſheddinge, with diuerſe other exhortacions concerninge the agayne callynge of Childeriche to his fourmer dignite, whiche for lengthe I omitte and paſſe ouer.

By meane of whiche exhortacion, Chylderiche was ſecretly ſent for, and receyued from his truſtie freende the foreſaide peece of gold and ſped him haſtlie into Fraūce. Agaynſte whome, the foreſayde Guinemeus in likewyſe ſped him ſo that they met at a Caſtel in the countrie of * Champion, where they with other to them allied, gathered a great hoſte, and made towarde the foreſaid Gyll or Gillion. The whiche hauinge knowledge of the ſayde conſpiracie ordayned an army of knyghtes, and wente againe his enemis. But he was ouer ſette and compelled for his ſafegarde to flee into the coūtrey of Soyſons before named, where he after ended his naturall life, and Childerich was agayne

Cāpania.

reſtored and made kynge.

Childrich then thus reſtored vnto his regalitie, ſubdued ſoone after a Saxon prince named Onager, and beſeeged the Citie of Orleaunce, and it receaued vnto his ſubiection and after paſſed the riuer of Leyr, and ſubdued to his ſignorie the countrey of Angeo and Mayne.

When the fame of Childriche was broughte vnto Baſina the wyfe of Belinge kinge of Turinges: ſhe anone forſoke her owne Lorde, and ſped her into Fraunce and ſo to the preſēce of Childerich whome he receaued with al gladneſſe. And whē he had of her frained the cauſe of her comminge: ſhe aunſwered, for that ſhe knew and vnderſtode to be in him more vertue and honour, then in any other man at that daie liuinge, ſhe was therefore come vnto him to continue the remnaunt of her life in his companie, addinge alſo thereunto that if in anie countrey ſhe knew his better, ſhe woulde then ſearche Sea & lande to haue him to her lorde or huſbande. But for ſhe was aſſured, that he hadde no pere, ſhe beſought him to accepte her into his company.

¶The.lxxvii.Chapter.

THen Childerich putting a parte and forgetting kindeneſſe to him before ſhewed by her huſbande Beſing maried the ſaid Baſina yet being a Pagan. And whan this Childerich had ouer come ſome battayles in Almain, and them ſubdued to his Empire: he laſtlie died whē he had raygned, with the.viii.yeres allowed to his reygne for the time that he was exiled, and with the reſidue that he reigned before and after in all.xxiiii.yeres, leauinge after him a ſonne begotten vpon the forenamed Baſyna called Clodeo or after moſte wryters Clodoueus.

Anglia.

¶The.lxxxviii.Chapter.

VOrtimerus the eldeſte ſonne of Vortiger, was by aſſent of the Britons made king of Britayn, in the yere of oure lorde.iiii.hundreth.lxiiii. and in the.iiii.yere of Childericus than king of Fraūce The which in all haſte purſued ẏ Saxons, and gaue vnto them a great battayle vpon the riuer of Darwent, where he had of them victorie. And ſecūdarily he fought with them vpon the foorde called Epifoord or Aglyſthorp. In the whiche fight Catrignus the brother of Vortimer, & Horſus brother to Hengiſt or coſin, after long fight betwene them two, either of them ſlewe other, in whiche fight alſo the Britons were victors.

Cap.2.

Derwend.

Catigernꝰ

The thirde battell he foughte with them, neare vnto the ſea ſide where alſo the Britons chaſed ẏ Saxons, and compelled them to take the Iſle of wyght for theyr ſuretie.

Tanet.

The fourth battayle was nere vnto Moore called Cole Moore. The whiche was longe and ſore fought by the Saxons, by reaſon that the ſaid Moore cloſed a parte of theyr hooſte ſo ſtronglie, that the Britons might not win vnto them for daunger of theyr ſhotte. Al be it that finallie they were chaſed, and many of thē of cōſtraynte.

drowned and ſwalowed in yͤ ſayd Moore.

And ouer and beſide theſe foure principall battayles : Vortimerus had with the Saxons diuers other conflictes, as in Kente, as Thetforde in Northfolke, and in Eſſex neare vnto Colcheſter, and left not til he had byraft from thẽ the more parte of ſuche poſſeſſions as before time they had wonne, and kepte them onelie to the Iſle Tenet, the whiche Vortimer often greeued by ſuche nauye as he then had.

When that Rowen doughter of Hengiſte perceaued the great miſchiefe, that her father ⁊ the Saxons were in, by yͤ marcial knighthode of Vortimer: ſhe ſought ſuch meanes, that ſhortly after, as teſtifieth Gaufride and other, Vortimer was poyſoned, when he had ruled the Britaynes after moſte concorde of writers ſeuen yeres.

¶ The.lxxxix. Chapter.

Capit. 3. Vortigernus father of Vortimerus laſte dead was agayn reſtored to the kingedome of moch Britayne in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion foure hundred. lxxi. and the eleuenth yere of Childericus then kynge of Fraunce, the which all the time of yͤ reigne of his ſonne Vortimer, had reſted him in the countrey of Cambria or wales, where in this paſſe time after ſome writers, he builded a ſtronge caſtell in a place called generoſī or Gwayneren, in the weſt ſide of Wales, neare vnto the ryuer of Gwana, in an hill or vpon an hill called Cloaricus. But the olde chronicle before ſpoken of, ſaythe that this Vortyger was kept ſomwhat vnder rule of certayne tutours to him aſſigned in the toune of Caerlegion or Cheſter, and demeaned him ſo wel towardes his ſon in ayding of him wyth his counſayle and otherwiſe that the Britons for it caſt vnto him ſuch a fauour, that they after the death of Vortimer made hym againe kinge.

It was not longe after that Vortiger was thus ſet in aucthorite, but yͤ Hengiſtus perſed thys lande with a greate multitude of Saxons, wherof heringe Vortiger, in al haſte aſſembled his Britons, and made towarde them.

And when Hengiſtus had experience of the greate hoſte of Brytons: he then ordeined meanes of treatie and peace, where laſtely it was concluded that a certain nũber of Britons, and as manie of Saxons ſhould vpon a May daie aſſemble vpon the playne of Ambrij, now called Saleſbury, which day certainlie prefixed Hengiſtus vſing a new maner of treaſõ, charged al his ſaxons by him appoynted, that eche of them ſhould put ſecretlie a lõge knife in their hoſe and at ſuche ſeaſon as he gaue to them this watche or by worde, Nempnith your ſexys, that euery one of them ſhuld draw his knife and ſlea a Briton, not ſparinge anie one, except Vortyger the king And at the day before appointed the king with a certayne of Brytons not ware of this purpoſed treaſon, came in peaſeable wyſe to the place before aſſigned, where he founde ready Hengiſtus wyth his Saxons. The whiche after due obeiſaũce made vnto the king receaued him with a coũtenaunce

of

Eldol.

of al loue, where after a time of cōmunication had Hengiſte beinge minded to execute hys fourmer purpoſed treaſon, ſhewed his watche worde. By reaſō wherof anon the Britons were ſlaine as ſhepe amonge wolues, hauinge no maner of wepen to defende them ſelues, except yͤ anie of them mighte by his manhode and ſtrength get the knife of his enemie. Amonge the numbre of theſe Britons was an Erle called Edolf or Edolfe Erle of Caerlegion or Cheſtre, which ſeyng his felowes & freendes thus murthered, as affermeth mine authour Gaufride & other: he by his manhode wanne a ſtake in the hedge or els where, with the which he knightly ſaued his own life, and ſlew of the Saxons. xvii and fled to the Citie or towne of Ambrie now named Saliſburie. After whiche treaſon thus executed, the king remained with Hengiſtus as pryſoner.

Of the taking of Vortiger and ſleinge of the Lordes of Britain, an authoure called Guilelmus de regibus ſaithe, that Hengiſtus agreed with Vortiger & hys Brytons that he ſhould enioy the Caſtell by him before made, with a certaine of lande therunto adioyninge for him and his Saxons to dwell upon. And when the ſayd agreement was ſurelie ſtablyſhed, this Hengiſt entending treaſon, deſired the kinge, with a certayn numbre of his Lordes to come to him to dinner within his ſayde Caſtell. The whiche of the kynge was graunted. And at the daye aſſigned, the kinge with his Lordes came to the ſayde Thonge Caſtell to dinner, where he wyth his was wel and honourablie receaued, and alſo deyntely ſerued.

But when the kinge and hys Lordes were in their moſte mirth this Hengiſt had commaunded before, yͭ his owne knightes ſhould fall at variaunce amonge theym ſelues, which ſo done the remnaūt of his Saxons as it were in partinge of frayes, ſhould fall vpon the Britons and ſlea them all out take onely the king. The whiche was done like as ye haue hard before deuiſed, & the kinge was holden as priſoner.

¶ The.xc.Chapter.

Capit. 3.

Cap. 1. li. 5

HEngiſtus then hauinge the kinge as priſoner, & a great parte of the rulers of Britain thus as before is ſayde ſubdued: was ſome deale exalted in pride, and compelled the kinge to geue vnto him as witneſſeth*Policronica, thre prouinces in the Eaſte parte of Brytayne, which three prouinces ſhould be Kente, Southſaxon or Suſſex, and Eaſtenglys, which is to meane Norff, and Suff, as affirmeth the authoure of the floure of hiſtories. But Guydo de colluma ſayeth, that the foreſayd thre prouinces was Kent, Eaſteſaxon or Eſſex, and Eaſtanglis, whiche is Norff. and Suff. Of the which ſaide prouinces when Hēgiſt was poſſeſſed, he ſuffred the king to go at his libertie. And then Hengiſt began his lordeſhip ouer the prouince of Kēt and ſent other of his Saxons to beweld the other two prouinces, that is to ſay Eaſtanglis and Eaſtſaxons, till he hadde ſent for other of his kinſmen, that he entended to geue the ſayde prouinces vnto.

The kyng-dome of Kent.

¶ The kingdome of Kent here beginneth.

Thus Hengiſtus beinge in poſſeſſion of this Prouince of Kent, commaunded his Saxons to call it Hengiſtus lād, wherof as ſome authours meane the whole lande of Britaine toke his firſt name of Englande. But that ſaying ſhall appeare contrary, as ſhalbe ſhewed here after in the ſtorye of Egbert king of Weſtſaxons. The whiche after he had ſubdued the moore parte of the kingdoms of Saxons, and made of all but one monarchy, he then commaunded this land to be called Anglia, and his Saxons Anglis, whiche after by corruption of ſpeeche was called Englande, and the people Englyſhe men.

Engiſtes lande or England.

This Lordſhippe or kyngdom of Kente, hadde hys begynnynge vnder Hengyſte in the yere of our Lorde after moſte concordaunce of writers, and by reaſon of the tyme foure hūdred thre ſcore and ſyxtene. And the fyfte yere of Vortygers laſt raygne.

But Denis and other, that accompt this kingdome to beginne in the yere of our Lord, foure hundred and .lv. allowe the beginning thereof to be when Hengiſtus had firſt gyft of yͤ ſame, by reaſon that Vortiger maried his doughter.

Thys Lordeſhyppe conteyned the countrey that ſtretcheth from Eaſt Occean, vnto the Ryuer of Thamys, and hadde vppon the Southeaſt Southerye, and vpon the Weſt London: vpō the Northeaſt the Thamys aforeſayde, and Eaſtſaxon nowe Eſſex. And thys Lordeſhyppe: conteyned alſo the yſle of Thanet.

Whiche Lordſhyppe or kyngdome endured after moſte wryters, from the tyme of the fyrſte yere of the raigne of Hengiſte, till the fiue and twentye yere of Egberte before named, by the terme of thre hundred and two and fourtie yeres folowing that accompt. At which ſeaſon the ſayd Egbert then kinge of weſtſaxons, ſubdued Baldredus, then kynge of Kente, and ioyned it to his owne kingdome.

Albeit that the authour of Polichronica, affermeth it to endure by the ſpace of thre hundred and thre ſcore and eyght, vnder fiftene kinges, whereof Baldredus was the laſt, whiche foloweth nere vnto the accompte of Denis before named. The firſt Chriſten king of this Lordſhippe was Ethelbartus or Ethelberte, the whiche receyued the fayth of Chriſt by that holy man ſaincte Auſtaine or Auguſtin, nere aboute the yere of our Lordes incarnation foure hundred and foure ſcore and ſyxtene. The whyche Ethelberte cauſed ſoone after to be edified the moneſterie of ſanct Peter and Paule in the Eaſtſide or ende of the citie of Dorobernia nowe Caunterburye. He gaue vnto this Auſtayne and hys ſucceſſours Biſhoppes of Caunterburye, a place for the biſhoppes ſee: at Chriſtes churche within the ſayde citie, & endowed it with many riche poſſeſſions.

This Hengiſt and all the other Saxons whyche ruled the ſeuen Principates of Brytayne, as after ſhall bee ſhewed, are called of moſte wryters Reguli, whiche is to meane in our vulgar ſpeeche, as ſmall or litle kynges. So that thys Hengyſt is accompted a lytle kynge. The whyche when he hadde thus rule of the foreſayde thre Prouinces, he ſente for moe Saxons, and gathered them that were ſparkled abrode, ſo that in theſe Prouynces, the faythe of Chriſte was all quenched and in ſlepe.

Then Hengiſt with Octa hys ſonne gathered a great ſtrengthe of Saxons, and foughte with the Britons, and ouercame the Britons, and chaſed them in ſuch wiſe that Hengiſt kept his lordſhyppe in peace and warre by the ſpace of foure and twenty yeres, as moſte writers teſtifie.

¶ The .xcii. Chapter.

Capit. 3. Nowe then lette vs retourne againe to Vortiger, the whiche when he ſawe the Saxons in ſuch wiſe encreaſe their ſtrength, and the Britons daylye diſcreaſe, for as writeth mine authour Gaufride, the Saxons had the rule of London, Yorke, Lincolne, or Lindecolſi, and Kaerguent, that is Wincheſter, wt other good townes wherfore as affermeth the ſayde Gaufride, the kynge for feare of the Saxons, & alſo for that that he was ſome deale warned of the comminge of the two brethren, Aurely and Vter the ſonne of Conſtantine: he therefore conſidering theſe many and great daungers, fled into Cambria or wales, and there held him for the moore ſuretie, where (as witneſſeth the ſayd Gaufrid) he then buylded the caſtle before minded. Of the whiche buylding and impediment therof and alſo of the gettinge or byrthe of Merlyn, and of his prophecies, he made a long worke, the which I paſſe ouer for dyuers conſyderations, and retourne agayne to Vortiger.

Trueth it is that while Vortigernus was thus beſyed in Wales the forenamed brethren Aurely, and Vter prepared their nauy: and men of armes and paſſed the ſea, and landed at Totneſſe, as ſayeth the Engliſhe chronicle. Cap. 1. li. 5. Whereof when the Britons were ware that were diſparkled and ſeuered in manye countreys, they drew to thē in all haſty wiſe. The whiche ſaide brethren, when they ſaw that thei hadde a competent nomber of knyghtes, they made towarde Wales to deſtreſſe Vortyger.

Whereof beinge warned, for ſo muche as he well knewe, that he myght not make ſufficient defēce by ſtrength of knightes, he therefore garnyſhed hys caſtell wyth ſtrengthe of men, and vitaile, entendinge to ſauegarde hym ſelfe by that meane, but all in vayne. For the ſaide two brethren wyth their armie beſeged the ſayde caſtel, and finally after many aſſaultes, with wilde fyre conſumed the ſaide caſtell with Vortiger and al his men therein.

Of him it is read that he ſhould lye by hys owne doughter, in truſt that kynges ſhoulde come of hys bloude. And laſtlye ended his lyfe as before is expreſſed, when he had raygned nowe laſt .ix. yeres.

The .xciii. Chapter.

Aurelius Ambroſius, the ſeconde ſonne of Conſtantine, and brother to Conſtancius ſlaine by the treaſon of Vortiger, was made king of Britons in the yere of our lord.iiii.hundred.lxxx. and one, and the.xxi.yere of Childericus then kinge of Fraunce. Of him it is ſayde, that when he heard of the diuiſion that was in the lande of Brytayne betweene Vortiger and the Saxons, and in what maner the Saxons had ſubdued yͤ Britons, he in al goodly haſte with ayde of the kinge of litle Britaine, ſped hym into thys lande. Where after the aboueſayd victorie had of Vortiger, he ſped him towarde Yorke, as affermeth Gaufride, and there chaſed the Saxons, that helde the citie with Octa or Oſca ſonne of Hengiſte, and kepte him as priſoner a certaine ſeaſon.

Cap.3.

But howe it was by treaſon of hys keper or otherwyſe, he brake priſon. And he with his father gathered after a great hoſt, and met Aurelyus aud hys Britons at a place called Crekynforde, where was foughten a ſtrong and mightye bataylle, to the loſſe of bothe parties, but the more loſſe fell vnto the Saxons. For of them was ſlain foure dukes, and foure thouſande of other men, and that other deale chaſed to their great daunger. Yet this notwithſtandinge, Hengiſt continued his lordſhippe in Kente, and Aurelius Ambroſe, whiche the Engliſhe chronicle nameth Aurilambroſe, kept the countrey called Logiers or middle England with Wales, and chaſed the Saxons that dwelled in the two foreſayd Prouinces of Eaſt Saxon, and Eaſt Anglis, out of thoſe countreys.

¶ The ſeconde kingdome.

¶ The.xxiiii.Chapter.

Pol.cap.3. lib.5.

In this paſſetime a Saxon named Ella, wyth hys thre ſonnes called Symen, or Symon, Plettinger, and Ciſſa, came with thre ſhyppes called Obilas, and landed in the South part of Britaine, and ſlewe manye Britons, at a place that then was named Cuneueſhore, and chaſed manye vnto a wodde then called Andreſleger, ⁊ after occupied that countrey, and inhabited hym and hys Saxons within the ſaid prouince makinge him ſelfe king and lorde thereof. By reaſon whereof, and by his mighte and power the ſayde Prouince or countrey, was after named the kingdom or lordſhippe of Southſaxons. The whiche after moſt concord of writers ſhould haue his beginninge the.xxxii.yere after the firſte comminge of Hengiſte. Whiche folowing yͤ accompte, ſhoulde be in yͤ yere of our lorde.cccc.and.lxxxii. and in the ſeconde yere of Aurely than king of Britaine.

This kingdome or Lordſhippe had in the Eaſtſide Kente, in the South the ſee ⁊ the yſle of Wight, in the Weſt, Hamſhire, and in the North Southerye, and conteyned as witneſſeth Guido, Southhampton, Somerſetſhire, Deuenſhire, ⁊ Cornewaile. Of which ſaide kyngdome Ethelbaldus or Ethewaldus was the fourth king and the firſt Chriſten kinge. This kyngdome endured ſhorteſt ſeaſon of all other kingdomes, and paſſed ſooneſt into yͤ other. For it endured not aboue an hundred ⁊ twelue yeres, vnder fiue or ſeuen kinges at moſte.

¶ The.xxv.Chapter.

THen to retourne where we lefte, Aurely, which as before ye haue heard helde and occupied the myddle parte of Brytayne: with Cambria or Wales, did his diligence to repaire ruynous places, as well tēples as other, & cauſed the ſeruice of god to bee ſaide and done, which by meane of the Saxons was greatly decaied through all Britaine. And after this Aurelius beſeiged the Saxons in the hill of Badon or Badowe, where he ſlewe many of them. But dayly the Saxons encreaſed and landed in muche Britaine, as after ſhall appeare. For ſhortlye after a Saxon named Porth, landyd with his two ſonnes at an hauen in Southeſex. After whome as ſome authoures meane, that hauē was after called Portiſmouth, whiche keepeth the name at thys daye. And in likewiſe thei came to land in dyuers places of Britain, ſo that Aurelius had with theim many conflictes and battailes in the whiche he ſpedde diuerſly, for he was ſome tyme victour & ſome ſeaſon ouerſet.

Whereof the hauen of Portiſmouthe was ſo called.

Chap. 5.

Merlyn.

It is written of him in the Engliſhe chronicle and other, that he by the helpe of Merlyn, ſhoulde fetche the great ſtones now ſtanding vpon the playne of Saliſburye, and called the ſtone henge, out of Irelande, and cauſed them to be ſet there as they now ſtande, in remēbraunce of the Britons ẏ there were ſlaine and buried in the time of the communication had with Hengiſte and his Saxons, as before in the ſtory of Vortiger is touched. But Polichronica alledgeth the honoure vnto Vter Pendragon his brother.

In the tyme of thys Aurelius, as witneſſeth alſo the ſaide Polinicronica, died Hengiſt in his bed when he hadde raygned ouer the Kentyſhe Saxons .xxiiii. yeres. After whoſe death Octa or Oſca his ſonne ruled the ſaid kingdom other .xxiiii. yeres. Albeit that the Britiſhe bookes, and alſo the cronicle of Englande ſheweth, that after that Aurelius hadde in batayle ſlayne Hengiſte, he toke vnto grace his ſonne, and gaue vnto hym a dwellynge place in the countrey of Galewey, for him and hys Saxons then lefte on lyue, whiche ſemeth not to bee true, for matter that ſhall after enſue, and alſo for that, that before is touched of the Pyctes and Scottes, in the tyme of the miſerye of the Britons. Then it foloweth, thys Octa nother augmented nor miniſhed his lordſhip, but helde him therwith contented as his father hadde to him left it.

Cap. 6.

Laſtly in the end of the raygne of Aurely, Paſcentius the yongeſt ſonne of Vortiger, which after the death of his father was fled into Ireland for feare of Aurely, purchaſed ayde of Guilamoure king of Irelande. And with a greate armye inuaded this lande of Britayne, by the countrey of Wales, in takinge the citie of Menenia, and in waſtynge the ſayde countrey with yron and fyre. In the whiche ſeaſon and tyme Aureliꝰ lay ſicke in his citie of Kaerguent or Wincheſter.

Gilloman.

For which cauſe he deſyred his brother Vter to gather an hoſte of Britons, and to appeaſe the malice of Paſcentiꝰ & his adherētes.

The which accordingly prepared his hoſte, & at length ouercame ye hoſte of Paſcencius, and ſlew him and the forenamed Guilamoure in the ſame fight.

In this while and ſeaſon that Uter was thus gone againſt Paſcencius, a Saxon or other ſtraunger fayninge him a Briton, and a conninge man in Phiſike, by the intiſement of Paſcencius came unto Aurely, where he lay ſike, & by his ſubtill & falſe meanes purchaſed ſuch fauour with thoſe that were nigh unto the prince, that he was put in truſt to miniſter medicines unto ye king. This is named of writers Copa, or of ſome Coppa. The which when he had ſpied his time couenient to bring about his falſe purpoſe, he gaue to Aurelius a pocion enpoyſoned, by violence wherof he ſhortly after was dead, when he had reigned after moſte writers upon .xix. yeres.

Copa.

The thyrde or fyfte.

The .xcvi. Chapter.

The .iii. or .v. kyngdō in Englād

Cap.4.li.5

In the time of ye reygne of this Aurelius as witneſſeth the authour of Polycronica & other, the kingdom of Eſtanglis began under a Saxon named Uffa, aboute the yere of oure lorde .iiii. hundred .lxxx. and .xii. & the .xi. yere of Aurelius. The which kingdome conteyned Northf. and Suff. nowe called. They hadde in the Eaſt and North ſides, the ſea, in ye Northweſt, Cambridge ſhire, and in the Weſte, S. Edmundes diche, and Hertforde ſhyre and in the South, Eſſex. This lordeſhip was called firſt Uffinis lordſhyp, and the kinges thereof were named Uffynis, or after ſome authoures the people. But fynallye, they were named Eaſtanglis.

The firſt chriſten king of thys principate, was Redwaldus the thyrde kynge, but he was not ſo ſtedfaſte as belonged to his religion. His ſonne named Corpwaldus was moore ſtedfaſte, whiche after was ſlayne of a miſbeleuing man, and for Chriſtes faithe as ſome write. But Guydon ſayeth, that Sebertus was firſt Chriſten kinge of this lordeſhyppe, and that he made S. Paules churche of London. This under twelue kinges endured, tyll the martyrdome of bleſſed S. Edmunde laſt kinge thereof, the whiche was martyred more aboue the yere of oure Lorde .viii. hundred and .lxix. By the which reaſon it ſhould folow, that thys kingdom ſhould endure by the terme of .iii.C.lxxvii. yeres. And of this lordeſhyppe, at thoſe dayes was Elmam or Thetforde the chefe towne. But after Guydo, this lordeſhyp ſhould beginne the yere of grace .D.lxx. & then it ſhoulde endure but .cc. foure ſcore and ninetene yeres.

Sebertus buylded Paules churche.

Francia.

The .xcvii. Chapter.

Fraunce.

Clodoueus the ſonne of Childericus or Hildericus before named, was after the deathe of hys father ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde foure hundred foure ſcore and foure, and ye thyrde yere of Aurelius then kynge of Brytayne. Thys of ſome wryters is named Clodoueus Lowys. The whiche ſhortlye after yt he of thys realme was authoryſed for kynge, hearing

ring report of the beautie & great vertue of Clotildis neuewe to Cundebalde king or ruler of Burgoyne, ſent vnto him a knight named Aurelius to treate a mariage betwene the kynge and Clotyld or Crotild. The which Cundebald moore for feare then for loue aſſented.

The cauſe wherof as myne authour ſayeth ; was for that thys Crotyld was enheritoure vnto the ſaide lande of Burgoyne, and that ſhe by reaſon of that mariage ſhoulde recouer her right and put him from the rule thereof. This Crotild had before that dai receyued the fayth of Chriſte, and ſo continuinge her regilion was maried to Clodoueus then a Paynym, and ſo endured a certaine of time. But yet ſhe lefte not to enduce and tourne her Lorde to the faith in all that ſhe might.

And after a certain of time ſhe was deliuered of a ſonne: ẏ which by meanes of Remigius, Biſhop of Raynes, and of the Queene Crotylde, was chriſtened and named Clodomerus, the whiche died within ſhorte proceſſe after. For that happe the kynge ſayde, that his Goddes were diſcontented with him, that he hadde ſuffered his childe to be chriſtened, and for wrathe thereof hadde taken from hym hys childe. The queene takinge the kinges ſayinge in pacience, conceyued the ſecond ſonne which alſo by the kinges agremēt was baptiſed.

Thys alſo after a certayne of time was vexed with ſuche greuous ſickeneſſe in ſuche wiſe: that it was likely to haue died. Wherfore the king was then moore impacient, and blamed the religion of his wife in moſt impacient maner. The whyche ſayinges the queene tooke paciently, and putte all her confidence in god to whom bothe ſhe and Remigeus prayed ſo affecteouſly, that the child was reſtored vnto perfite health.

Thus Clodoueus perſeuering in his erronius lawe, made warre vppon the Almaines. In whiche warre being one daye occupied in fight againe his enemies, he with his people was put to the worſe. Whereof when Clodoueus was ware, hauinge great drede of him ſelfe, called to minde, the often exhortation of hys wyfe, and of the great vertue of her Goddes law, and ſodaynlye lyfte hys eyen towarde heauen and ſayde, God the whiche Clotylde my wife dooeth honoure, nowe helpe me. And yf this daye I paſſe this daunger, & obteyne victorie, I ſhall euer after worſhyp thee with true faith. The whiche praier ſkantlye finiſhed, the Frenchemen by diuine power were vnited and knit together, and ſo knightly withſtode their enemies, that in ſhort while after, they obteyned victorie. Whiche victorie hadde, the kyng with greate triumphe retourned into Fraunce. Wherof when Clotylde was warned, ſhe anone receyued him with al ioye and gladneſſe, thankinge oure Lorde God of hys great victorie, but more for that, that he hadde forſaken hys Idolatrye, and was become ſeruaunt of the onelye God fourmer of all the worlde.

¶ The.xcviii. Chapter.

YT was not longe after that Remigeꝰ was ſent for. The which enfourmed the king ſufficiently in the faith of Chriſt, and vpon an Eſter daye folowinge, wͭ great ſolempnitie baptiſed the kinge. After this ſolempnitie done, the kinge hadde certaine woordes to the people, in exhortinge them to leaue their ydolatrie, ⁊ to beleue in Chriſt and his faithe, by whoſe mighte and power onely he hadde vanquiſhed his enemies. By the whiche exhortation ⁊ other meanes of Remigeus, muche people were ſoone after conuerted and baptiſed.

The heathniſh ydolatrie put awaye.

Then the king builded certaine newe monaſteries, and dedicated the old temples of ydols in honor of Chriſtes ſainctes. Amonge the which one was nere vnto the citie of Paris in the honour of the apoſtles Peter and Paule. It is witneſſed of maiſter Robert Gagwin that before theſe dayes al French kynges vſed to beare in their armes thre Todes. But after thys Clodoueus hadde receyued Chriſtes religion, three flouredelyſes were ſent vnto him ſet in a ſheelde of aſſure, the whiche ſence yͤ tyme hathe been borne of all Frenche kynges.

The armes of Fraunce,

Then it foloweth in the ſtorye, when Clodoueus hadde ſette hys realme in due order, Clotylde callinge to minde the treaſon doone vnto her father, ⁊ alſo the wrongfull witholdinge of her rightefull enheritaunce by her vncle Cundebalde, exhorted her lorde Clodoueus to ſende an Embaſſade, ⁊ to requyre reſtitution of her ſayde right, the whiche was ſoone after done. And when the kinge had receyued anſwere, yͭ the ſaide Cundebalde woulde not reſtore yͤ ſaid right of his wife, he in all goodlye wiſe prepared an army, and made warre vpon the ſaide Cundebald. And after great waſte and deſtruction of the countrey: Clodoueus finally beſeyged him in a citie, and after toke the ſaid citie by ſtrẽgth and the ſaide Cundebalde within the ſame as a pryſoner. But by mediation of frendes and giftes, with alſo a yerelye tribute to bee paied to Clodoueus, the ſaid Cundebalde was releaſed and ſette at libertie.

¶ The .xxix. Chapter.

THys voyage thus ſpedde, and ordered, the kyng lefte behinde him an armie of .v. thouſande knightes, vnder the gydinge of Gundeſyll brother of the ſaide Cundebalde, and after retourned into Fraunce. But ſoone after the kinges departing, Cundebalde contrarye to the promyſe before made, gathered a power of knightes, and made warre vppon his ſaide brother, and laſtely beſeiged him in the Cytye of Vienne, vpon either parte was by ſkirmiſhes and aſſaultes greate people ſlaine. Albeit in the ende Cundebalde wanne the citie, and his brother therein beyng, he afterward beheaded. And aboute thys tyme greate diſſention grewe betwene Clodoueus and the kynge of the Gothis called Alericus, which variaunce by agremente of both parties was putte to iudgemente of Theodoricus than kynge of Longobardes or of Italyans. The whiche after the ſaide cauſes were well and ſufficientlye argued and debated before him and his counſaile, he finally gaue ſentence that a knyghte of Clodoueus ſhoulde ſtande vppon an hylle, holdynge a ſpeare vprighte in his hande, and that the kinge of Gothis ſhoulde throwe or laye ſo muche ſiluer as ſhoulde in proceſſe couer the point of the ſaid ſpeare; which ſenetence as teſtifieth maiſter Robert Gagwine, the Gothis deſpiſed ſaying, that they hadde not ſufficient ſiluer wythin theyr lande to perfourme the ſayde ſentence. And for diſpyte of the ſame, certayne Gothis eſpying a prince of Fraũce named Paterne beinge aſſociate with ſome diuers Frenchemen in a lofte or Chamber, the whyche Paterne hadde been ſolicitoure for the Frenche kynge in the foreſayde matter: the ſaide Gothites by craftie and falſe meanes, cauſed the floorthe of the ſayde chamber to falle, by whiche meane the ſayde Paterne was greuouſlye hurte, and manye of the other in likewiſe, and ſome ſlayne; whereof whan Clodoueus hadde wrytinge, he beinge therewith greatlye ammoued; and alſo becauſe the Gothis diſobeyde the foreſayde awarde; he gathered ſhortlye after a great hoſte: And paſſynge the riuer of Clan; he laſtlye came to the ſyghte of his enemies. Then Clodoueus lodged his hoſte neare vnto the monaſtreye of ſaincte Hilary, where the nighte before the battaile, he perceyued tokens of victorie, the which I paſſe ouer.

And vppon the morne he ſet hys people in aray, and made towarde his enemies, and met with them in a feelde called Noglodieñ, nere to the ryuer of Cleue or Clyue: where after ſoore and longe fight, he ſlewe the aboue ſayd Alaricus kynge of the Gothys (as ſayeth myne authoure) wyth hys owne hande.

But here ſhoulde ſeeme ſome diſcorde of tyme with other wryters: For Cronica cronicarum, Jacobus Philippus, and other teſtifie, that this Alaricus was dead manye yeres before.

For he ſhoulde be kinge of Gothis by their ſayinge in the time that Honorius brother vnto Archadiꝰ was emperour, which was about the yere of our lorde .iiii.c. and .ix. that he began his Empyre, wherfore, maiſter Roberte Gagwine meaneth ſome other kinge of the Gothys than Alaricus. For the ſaide authours alſo affirmen, that thys Alericus died of a ſodayne ſickeneſſe, at a citie named Ceſancia: when he hadde raigned after moſt wryters .vi. yeres.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorye, when Clodoueus had thus obteined victorie of the Gothis, and ſet the countrey of Guian in order he ſpedde him agayne into Fraunce.

And when he was come into the countrey of Turoñ, he was encountred with embaſſadoures of yͤ Emperoure Anaſtaſius, and preſented from the ſaide Emperoure with giftes a great price & honor, and alſo admitted for a counſell of Rome, which at that daies was a dignitie of moſte honour, which done, he remitted the ſaid Embaſſade with great giftes. This ſayinge is affirmed of the other wryters, the which ſhew this honour to him to bee done, for as muche

Conſull.

as he hadde ouercome the Gothys, enemies of Chriſtes faythe. But they name not the kynges name that then raygned ouer the Gothis.

Thus, thys noble and fyrſte Chriſten prince, continued his life in noble and marciall deedes, in augmentinge hys kingdome by knightlye battayles and other worldlye prouiſions, and laſtlye died of Goddes viſitation, wyth all ſteadfaſtneſſe of faythe, when he hadde raygned thyrtye yeres, leauing after him foure ſonnes of Clotylde his wife, that is to ſaye, Clodomirus, Childebertus, Theodoricus, and Clotharius, or after ſome Latarius, and was buried in the monaſterye that he before neare vnto Paris had buylded, with ſuche epytaphe or ſuperſcription vpon his tombe as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

But or I procede to the declarynge of the foreſayde epytaphe, for ſo muche as I haue hearde diuers holde an opinion, that the faithe of Chriſte was receyued in Frāce or it was receyued in this lande of Brytayne: therefore I ſhall note here the tyme that this Clodoueus fyrſte toke Baptiſme, whiche was as Ranulphe monke and other teſtifie, in the fiftene yere of hys raygne, or neare aboute, whiche was the yere of our Lorde foure hundred foure ſcore and nyne.

Whereby it appeareth, conſideringe the time of Lucius fyrſte Chriſten Prynce that euer was of Britaine as before is ſhewed, that Chriſtes faythe was by a longe time honoured in Britayne or it was honoured in Fraunce, except that ſuche as holde the foreſayde opinion, accompte the fyrſte comminge of Chriſtes faithe into Britaine, at the fyrſte conuerſation of the Saxons, when it was preached by Saincte Auguſtine and his felowes, whiche is not to the purpoſe. Than to the foreſaid epytaphe or ſuperſcription as foloweth.

Diues opū, virtute potēs, claruſque triūpho
Condidit hanc ſedem, rex Clodoueus, idem
Patricius magno ſublimis fulſit honore,
Plenus amore dei, contempſit credere nullo,
Lumina qui varijs horrent portenta figuris,
Mox purgatus aquis, et chriſti fonte renatus
Fragrantem geſſit, infuſo criſmata crinem.
exemplūque dedit, ſequiturꝙ plurima turba
Gentilis populi, ſpretoque errore ſuorum
Doctorē cultura deum, verūque parentem,
Hijs felix meritis, ſuperauit geſta priorum
Semper concilio, caſtris belliſque tremēdus
Hortatu dux ipſe bonus, ac pectore fortis
Cōſtructas acies formauit in agmine primus

The whyche verſes maye bee thus expounded in oure mother tongue as here after foloweth.

Riche of goodes, ſtronge in vertue, in triumphe ſhynynge,
King Clodoueus this temple buylt of ſtone,
Father of common profite, cladde with honoure excellynge,
Repleniſhed with goddes loue, deſpiſed of his olde fone,
And his pagans law with ſtrōg figures echoone,
Purged wyth holye water, by Chriſtes founte borne newe,
And holy criſme anoynted, floured with vertue dewe
Example giuing, him folow many a man
Forſakinge their errour, and falſe gods all
And by his teaching, honour but one god than,
Thus by his merites, he excelled his parentall
And through his coūſaile, made citie and caſtell thrall,
He was a noble duke, and therewith of great myghte,
And in fronte of battayle, was euer the fyrſte knyghte.

Anglia.

The .c. Chapter.

Uter.

Vter the laſt or yongeſt ſonne of Conſtantine, and brother of Aurelius, was made kinge of Britaine in the yere of our lorde, fiue hundred euen, and the ſyxetene yere of Clodoueus then king of Fraunce. This as before is touched, was ſurnamed Pendragon. The cauſe therof as witneſſeth the Engliſhe chronicle, for ſo muche as Merlyn likened him vnto a Dragon vnder a ſtarre appearing in the firmament, wherof there is made a longe proceſſe as by Gaufride in hys Britiſhe booke alſo is affermed, the which to me ſeemeth of litle credence.

Cap.6.li.5

But trueth it is, that after Uter was (as before is ſayd) made king he enamoured vppon the Dukes wyfe of Cornewayle named Igwarne or Igorne, and for to obteine his vnlawfull luſte, ſoughte manye and diuers meanes. So that laſtlye he made warre vpon her huſbande, named Garolus or Gorleis, and at length ſlewe the ſayd duke at his caſtel called Tintagel, ſtandinge in Cornewayle, and after maried his wife, and receyued of her the noble knight Arthur, and a daughter named Amye, as ſayeth the Engliſhe chronicle.

Igerna.

Li.6.cap.2

Arthur the ſonne of Uter.

More is not lefte of any writer of authoritie, in remembraunce of this Uter, albeit that ſome teſtifie, that he by the helpe of Merlyn ſhoulde fetche Coria gigantũ, otherwiſe called the ſtone henge, out of Ireland, as before I haue ſhewed in the ſtorie of Aurelius. And of Gaufride is ſhewed, that Uter alſo ſhuld win the foreſayd Ladye by the enchauntmente of Merlyn, whiche is not comelye to any chriſten religion, to geue to anye fantaſticall illuſions anye minde or credence: wherefore I paſſe ouer, leauinge all the other matter, which alſo is there rehearſed, of the warre betwene Uter and Oſca, ſonne of Hengiſt, for ſo muche as it is diſcordante vnto other writers, and finally to conclude that this Uter Pendragon died by force of venime, when he hadde ruled this Iſle of Britaine by the ful terme of.xvi.yeres, and after was buryed by his brother Aurelius in Coria gigantum, or ſtone henge, leauinge after hym the forenamed ſonne the puyſaunt Arthur.

Francia.

¶ The.ci. Chapter.

LOtharius or Clotharius the yongeſt ſonne of Clodoueus, was made king of a part of Fraũce called Soyſons, in the yere of our Lorde fiue hundred and.xiiii. and the.xiiii. yere of Uter then kinge of muche Britaine.

Ye ſhall vnderſtande, that after the death of Clodoueus laſt kinge of Fraunce, the lande by him was deuided to his foure ſonnes. That is to ſay, to the eldeſt ſonne Clodomyrus was appointed the Lordſhippe of Orleaunce, to Theodoricus the ſecond ſonne Auſtracye, to Childebertus the thyrde ſonne middle Fraunce, or the countrei lying about Paris, & to this Lathayr, the aboue ſaide lordſhip of Soyſons. Of whiche ſaid lordſhippes eyther of theim poſſeſſed, they were of their Subiectes called iiii.kinges at once, raigned in Fraunce.

called kynges, and ſo continued in good reſte a certaine of time. In the whiche ſeaſon Clotylde their mother bearinge in minde the vnnaturall death of her parentes: wylled her ſonnes to auenge their death, which death as teſtifieth Vincent hiſtoriall, ⁊ alſo Antonius, was in this fourme folowing. Guendenchꝰ the grandfather of Cloteldis hadde foure ſonnes, that is to ſaye: Cundebaldus, Gondigiſillus, Helpericus, ⁊ Godomarus. To theſe.iiii.ſonnes Gondencus beſette the lande of Burgoyne. Gondigiſillus and Godomarus died, wherfore the land of Burgoyne fell to Cundebaldꝰ and Hilpericus. Then Cundebaldus for couetiſe of the whole lordſhyppe, ſlewe his brother Hilpericus, and faſtened a greate ſtone to the necke of his wife, and caſte her into a deepe water. And of his two doughters, whereof the eldeſt highte Crona, he exiled in poore weede or clothing. And the yonger he kept in ſeruage within his owne courte.

The whiche after, as before is ſhewed, was maried againſte hys wyll vnto Clodoueus father to this Lothariꝰ. Then it foloweth, this Lotharius ſonne of Clotilde made ſharpe warre vppon Sigiſmonde ſon of Cundebaldus, whiche then was deade. In the which warre the eldeſt ſonne of Clodomyrus was ſlayne, leauinge after him thre ſonnes named Theobaldus, Guntherus or Gunthaire, and Clodoaldus, which two ſons ſhe tooke to her tuition and guyding. But the other brother maintained warre againſt the Burgonions, in ſuche wiſe that finallye they obtained the right portion of their mother Clotild.

After this warre was finiſhed in Burgonye: Childebertus the third ſonne hearing that Almarcus kinge of Spaine miſentreated his ſyſter, made warre vppon him, and laſtlye him ſubdued and ſet his ſiſter in her former eſtate.

But while the ſaide Childebert was thus in Spayne occupyed: Theodorus his brother tooke frõ him a citie to him belongyng called Mounteclere, and ſlewe the knyghtes whyche Childebertus hadde lefte there to keepe the ſaid citie. For this miſchiuous deede, aroſe great debate betwene theſe two brethren, but by mediation of frendes, they at length were accorded. Then Theodorus ſought newe meanes of dyſpleaſure againſte his ſaide brother, as well treaſon as otherwyſe, the whiche Chyldeberte by hys policie and wiſedome, and with good fortune eſcaped.

Childebertus than caſtynge in his mynde howe he myght winne to him the Patrimonye or Lordſhyppe that latelye belonged vnto his eldeſt brother Clodomyrus tooke counſayle of hys brother Clotharius. In ſuche wiſe that they together of one aſſente, ſente vnto their mother Clotilde, for their neuewes, chyldren of theyr brother. And ſhe nothinge miſtruſtinge them, ſent the ſaid children vnto the ſaid brethren. But within ſhort time of their comming vnto their ſaide vncles, as teſtifieth maiſter Robert Gagwine, and alſo the frenche chronycle, Lotharius tyranouſlye with his ſworde ſlewe two of the ſayde chyldren.

And then the thyrde fledde for his ſauegarde vnto ſuche as hym fauoured. He was after againe taken & compelled to make ſolempne othe: that he ſhould become a religious man, and neuer claime any part of his right or enheritaunce. By which vnleful meane the two brethren obtayned the whole lordſhip of Orleaunce, and parted the reuenues therof betwene them, but that endured but a while. And here I paſſe ouer the ſorowe that Clotild made for ẏ children of her ſonne Clodomirus, & alſo the ordering of ẏ yongeſt ſonne called Clodoaldus, which eſcaped the daunger of his vncles, as before is ſhewed, the whyche woulde aſke a longe ſeaſon.

¶ The .cii. Chapter.

IT was not long after, but that the ſecond brother king or duke of Auſtracy, died of gods viſitation, leauinge after him a ſonne named Theodebertus. The whiche of his two foreſaid vncles was greuouſlye warred by ſo longe tracte of time, the whiche he defended throughe hys marcyall knighthode. And when he by dyuerſe meanes hadde ſought peace & myghte not purchaſe it, yet he then founde ſuch meanes by riche giftes & otherwyſe, that he wan the fauoure of his vncle Childeberte, and cheryſhed hym as hys frende. Then fell vnkindneſſe betwene Childeberte and Lotharius in ſo muche that either of them aſſembled a great hoſte to ſubdue that one the other.

But the forenamed Theodobertꝰ made al the power he might to ayde and aſſiſt Childebert. So that vppon bothe parties was a great multitude of knightes armed, readie to fight.

And ſodaynly fell ſuche a tempeſte of wynde and haylle with thunderinge and lightninge, that bothe hoſtes were ſo greuouſlye beaten wyth the ſayde tempeſte and wetherynge, that either of them hadde moſte mynde howe they mighte defende them ſelues from daunger of the ſayde wetheringe. And ouer that as teſtifieth the aboue named authour, either of the hoſtes thoughte in their mindes, that they were chaſed of their enemies, in ſuche wiſe that either of them fled from other by a longe ſpace.

After this either of them ſente meanes of treatiſe either to other and at lengthe confirmed peace betwene them. The whiche peace ſurelye on bothe parties aſſured, Childeberte excited hys brother to warre vppon a people or countrey named Terra Contens in the prouince of Spaine, and beſeiged the citie of Saragounce or otherwiſe called Auguſta, and finallye kept the citizins ſo ſhort that they to appeace their enemyes ſoughte meanes.

But yet that not withſtanding though the ſeige were wythdrawen and the Cytye ſpared: yet the countrey thereabout they pilled and waſted withoute pitie. And after with greate richeſſe of praye, retourned into Fraunce, where at Paris by Childeberte ſoone after was buylded a monaſtarye whiche at this daye is called ſainct Germains de Pre.

In this while I can not ſay by what happe, theſe two brethren newlie maligned againe their nevew Theodobert yͤ ſonne of theyr brother Theodorith. And intended by theyr malice to byreue him of the Lordſhip of Auſtracie. And to that entente gathered theyr people to warre vpon the ſayde Theodoberte, whereof when the ſayd Theodobert was ware conſideryng he coulde not ſo ſhortlye aſſemble his people to withſtande the malice of his ſayde vncles: he in lowly and good maner rode agayne them a peacible wiſe. And to them behaued him ſo well in worde and deede that they alonlie forgaue not his treſpaſſe, but alſo ſente him agayn with greate riches of giftes. Soone after this time died Clotilde the wife of Clodoueus, the whiche with greate pompe of her two ſonnes was buried by her ſaide huſbande.

And ſhortlie after died Theodoberte forenamed, leauynge after him a ſonne named Theobalde. In this paſſe time Lotherius of of his wife receaued vii. ſonnes & two daughters: Of the whythe Cramyris the eldeſte ſonne he ſet vnto Guian, to haue the rule therof vnder his father. But he contrarye to his fathers mynde, oppreſſed the inhabitantes therof with greuous exaccions and tribute, wherefore his father beyng diſcontente, called him thence. Cramyrys with this thinge ſore moued, in great anger departed his fathers courte, and went vnto Childeberte his vncle, exciting him to make warre vpō his father ymagining falſe occaſiōs to bring the two brethren at diſtaunce, and made a ſolempne othe to his vncle, that during his lyfe he ſhould ſtrengthe his partie agaynſt hys owne father, whiche aſſuraunce thus made, Childeberte prepared his hoſte to warre againſt his brother Lotharius. But yͤ ſayde Lotharius of this being warned, for ſuche lette as he then had, ſent agaynſt his enemies two ſonnes of his, named Guntharnus and Iribertus, and while theſe two ſonnes made towarde Childebert he in yͤ while made greate waſte in the countrey of Champayne, & takinge great priſes, returned into his owne countrey of middell Fraunce, wherof hearing the forenamed Guthranus and his brother, and alſo that in Guyan was moued warre by Cramyris, ſped them thyther with all their people. But they did nothinge worthy memorie or laude.

In this ſeaſon, died thr foreſaid Childebert brother of Lotharius without heyre, when he had ruled middell Fraunce. xlvii. yeres, as ſaythe the Frenche chronicle, and was enterred in the monaſtary of ſaynct Vincent otherwyſe called ſaynt Germayne de Pre.

¶ The.ciii. Chapter.

After the death of Childebert, for ſo muche as he died withoute heyre, Lotharius forenamed, ſeaſed al middel Fraunce into his poſſeſſion. And after he had ſomedeale ſet it in order, not forgetting the vnnaturall rebellion of hys ſonne Cramyris, choſe vnto hym a pure companie of knightes and of competente nomber, and in all haſt made toward Guyan: where the ſaid Cramiris was then abidinge. But when he harde of the commynge of his father agaynſte him

him with his choſe army: he with dꝛew him to the vttermoſte parties of Fraunce, and required ayd of a king oꝛ duke to that party adioyninge named Gonoba, de, the whiche to him pꝛomyſed ayde to his power.

Lotharius of this affinite beinge warned, purſued the ſayde Gonobalde ſo ſharpely, that he cõſtrayned him at lengthe to take the churche of Saynct Martine, and to holde it foꝛ his ſauegarde. But when Lotharius had aſſaied by diuerſe meanes, aſwel by fayꝛe pꝛomiſe as woꝛdes of manaſſes, and might not get the ſayd Gonobalde out of the ſanctuarie: he ſet the churche on fyꝛe, and bꝛent the duke in the ſame, the which ſhoꝛtly after he reedyfied and made in moꝛe better maner then it befoꝛe had bene.

When Cramiris was thus diſapointed of the ayde of Gonobald he then fledde into litle Bꝛitayne, and required aide of the Erle therof, named Cenabutus, where by comfoꝛte of the ſayde Erle, he aſſẽbled a greate hoſte to withſtande his father. Whereof the father beinge aſcerteyned, dꝛewe towarde him. And when bothe hoſtes were nere, they ſente meſſangers to the father to entreate a peace. But Lotharius included ſo mani hard condicions within the ſaide peace oꝛ as ſome wꝛiters meane, Cramiris deſired ſuch vnlefull deſires of his father, that the ſayde treatye might take none effecte. And foꝛ truſte, that he had in the Bꝛitõs and his ſtrength he was vtterlye bente to trie his cauſe by dinte of ſwearde.

Lotharius hauing experience that foꝛtune of batayle is in victorie doubtfull and vncertayne: he therfoꝛe made his pꝛayer to God, beſeching him of ayde agaynſt the innaturall and obſtinate rebelliõ of his ſonne.

After whiche pꝛaier ended, he commaunded in the name of God to ſette vpon his enemies, whiche mette with ſo great yꝛe, that ſhoꝛtlie, the grene feelde was died into a perfit redde and mani knightes vpon both parties lay ſlayne, and grunting vpon the earth. The father comfoꝛtinge and calling vpõ his knightes vpon the one parte, and the ſonne vpon his knightes vpon that other parte, eyther of them entending the death and vtter deſtruction of eche other, thus this bataile hanging in ſuſpence to whether of them the victoꝛye ſhould tourne: ſodenly the Bꝛytons gaue backe, and gaue place to the Frenchmen. With the whiche the Frenche partie being confoꝛted, enfoꝛced the Bꝛitons with ſo ſharpe fight, that they were cõpelled to foꝛſake the feelde, ⁊ toke them to flight, whome the French men chaſed ⁊ ſlew without mercy,

In the whiche chaſe Cramiris with his wife and childerne were taken and pꝛeſented vnto Lotharius. The whiche ſhoꝛtly after ſetting a parte all fatherly loue, compaſſion ⁊ pittie, cauſed a great fyꝛe to be made, into the whiche he commaunded to be caſt the ſaid Cramyris, with alſo his wife and childꝛen. Oꝛ as witneſſeth the Frenche chꝛonicle, they were all encloſed in a houſe, and the houſe and thei together conſumed with fyꝛe.

Thus the moſte cruell father

wyth

withoute pittie chaſtiſed the inobedient ſonne to the example and learning of other, to beare due obedience vnto their parents. After this victorie and cruell chaſtyſement executed by Lotharius he yelded thankes vnto almyghtie God, and ſo returned into Fraũce. And after ſped him to Soyſons, where he was king of al Fraunce excepte the lordeſhip of Auſtracie, which Theobald one of his brothers ſonnes then helde. The father of this Theobald was theodobert. Then Lotharius ſeinge his lande in reſte and quietneſſe, gaue him to huntinge and chaſe of wylde beaſtes, a game of great vſe amonge all French princes.

In whiche diſporte he beynge one day greatly trauailed, caught ſome ſurfet, of the which enſued a mortall ſikenes, ſo ẏ he died ſhortlie after, when he had reygned as before is ſpecified ouer the lordeſhip of Soyſons and other, by the terme of .l. winter full. And was after buried at Soyſons wyth greate pompe, leauing after hym foure ſonnes, Gunthranus Aribertus, Chilpericus, and Sigebertus.

It is teſtified of mayſter Robert Gagwine, that Radegunde borne of the countrey of Thurynge, of a Pagan father named Beringarius, was wife to this Lothar. Whoſe vertuous life Antoninꝰ in his booke called Sũ. Antonini, in the .viii. chapiter and .xii. tytle of the ſeconde parte of his worke, ſheweth compendiouſly.

Anglia.

¶ The .ciiii. Chapter.

ARthurus the ſone of Vter Pendragon, a ſtrepelynge of .xv. yeres of age began his reygne as king of Britain in the yere of our lorde fiue hundred and .xvii. and the thirde yere of Lotharius, thẽ king of Fraũce or of a parte thereof, as before is declared. Of this Arthure is by Gaufryde recited a longe ſtorye, ⁊ alowed by the Engliſh chronicle, the whiche from other writers is greatly diſcordaunt. But yet all Authoures agreen that he was noble and vyctoryous in all hys deedes.

Arthur.

Al the .vii. booke of Gauf. is of the doinge of thys Arthur.

Fayne I wolde declare ẏ fame of this noble prince, to the comfort of other to folow his marcyall dedes, ſo ẏ I might ſomwhat iuſtifi my reporte by ſome authour of authoritie. But the more I am in doubte, bycauſe of the ſayinge of Ranulphe monke of Cheſtre, whiche voucheth it vpon Willyã writer of hiſtories of Kinges, as is reherſed at lengthe in the ſixt chapter of the fyfte booke of Polichronicon, which is there open to euerie man that is deſyrous to know the ſayde reporte or opinion, the whiche for the lengthe thereof I ouerpaſſe. And ſomewhat to the honour of ſo great a champyon as was this Arthur, I ſhal ſay vnto the reader, that he may wyth authorite ſhew vnto the hearers, ⁊ therwith glad the welſhemã, that ſhould deſcende of ſo noble a vyctour, whiche ſo many dedes of honour executed in his dayes.

Then as teſtifieth Polichronicon and other, Arthur faught .xii. notable batailes agayn the Saxons,

ons, and of them all was victour.

Whereof the firſt was vpon the riuer of Cleuy, and.iiii. of yͤ nexte were foughten vpon the Riuer Douglis, whiche runneth vnder the towne of Wigan, vpon.x. miles from the riuer of Merſe in Lãcaſhyre.

The.vi. batayle was vpon the riuer called Baſſa.

The ſeuenth beſide Lincolne in a wood called Celidon.

The.viii. & the.ix. were foughten about Yorke.

The.x. was about Nicol town whiche is named Warwike after ſome writers.

The.xi. was at Bathe, where he longe beſeged Cerdicus Kinge of Weſtſaxons.

The.xii. & laſte was at a place called Badon or Babow hill, in which he ſlew manie Saxons. But yͭ notwithſtanding he might not clerelie voyde them his lande, but that thei kept theyr countreis which they were before poſſeſſed of, as Kente, Southerey, & Norff. al be it that ſome authour teſtifie that they helde theſe countreys as tributaries vnto Arthure.

This noble warryour as wytneſſeth Gildas, ſlew w his owne hande in one daye by the helpe of God a hundred and.xl. Saxons, he bare the ymage of our Ladye painted in his ſheeld, which ſheeld he called Prydwen, his ſwearde was called Calibourn, & his ſpeare was called Rone after the brytiſhe tongue or ſpeche.

¶ The.cv. Chapter.

ABoute the fifte yere of this Arthur, after the agrement of moſt writers began the lordſhip of Weſtſaxons, vnder the Saxon called Cerdicus, & Kenricus his ſonne. For Denys and other witneſſe, that this lordeſhip or kingdome ſhould haue his beginning the.lxxi. yere after the firſte comminge of Hengiſte, or the yere of our lord fiue hundred.xxii. which agreeth with the fifte yere of Arthure aforeſayde.

This lordeſhip conteyned the weſte countrey of Englande, as Wyltſhyre, Somerſetſhyre, Berkes, Dorſet, and other, as Deuonſhire, and Cornewayle, and had in the Eaſte ſide Southampton, in the Northe, Thamis the famous riuer, in the ſouth and weſt the ſea Occean.

This foreſayde Cerdicus, whiche of ſome authours is named Childricus, landed firſt at Cerdiſhore whiche nowe is called yermouth, an hauen towne in the cou̅trey of Norff. And by helpe of other Saxons then inhabited in that countrei, then called eaſt Anglis: the ſaide Cerdicus at length obteyned the foreſayde countrey, and named it Weſtſaxons or weſt ſaxonia, and reigned therein as Lorde or kinge a certayne of yeres, and Kenricus his ſonne after him.

The firſt chriſten king of this prouince: was named Kingilſus, and conuerted by meanes of that bleſſed man Berinus byſhoppe of Dorcheſter. To whome Quichelinus brother of the foreſayd Kingilſus, gaue yͤ ſayd Citie to make there his ſee, after he allo had receiued baptime of the ſayde Berinus. And as Guydo witneſſeth, the ſayde Quichelinus gaue after to the Biſhop of Wincheſter ſeuē myles compaſſe of lande to builde there a Biſhoppes ſee, the which was accompliſhed and finiſhed by Kenwalcus his ſonne.

This kingdome endured longeſt of all the other, whiche were ſeuē in nomber, or ſixe beſide this. Some writers accōpte the terme of the duraunce of this kingdome from Cerdicus to Egbert, & ſome to the laſte yere of Aluredus. But Guydo accompteth the enduraūce of this kingdome, from the fyrſte yere of Cerdicus vnto the laſt yere of Edward the confeſſour. By reaſon whereof it ſhould endure fyue hūdred and .liiii. yeres. But moſte accordingli it ſhold be rekened frō the firſte yere of Cerdicus to the laſt yere of Aluredꝰ. For he made one monarchie of all ſeuen kingedomes, in whiche time did flow or paſſe three hundred .lxxviii. yeres.

¶The .cvi. Chapter.

Arthur.

NOw then I wil returne vnto Arthur, the which by a longe time dwelled in warre and mortalle battayle wyth the Saxons, by meane of theyr dayly repayre into this lande. The whiche alſo allied them with Pictes and other nacions, and made their parti the ſtronger by that meane. But yet Arthur by his mercial knighthod brought them in ſuch frame, that he was accompted for chiefe lord of Brytayne.

Finallie, when he had by a lōge time maynteyned his warres agayne the Saxons, and ſpecially agayne Cerdicus or Childrycus king of weſt Saxons: he for a finall concorde gaue vnto the ſayde Cerdicus, as teſtifieth Polichronica in the ſixte Chapiter of hys fyfte booke, the two countreys of Hampſhire, and Somerſet. And when he had ſet his lande in ſome quietneſſe, he betoke the rule therof vnto his neuew Mordred, and with a choſen armye ſayled, as ſaythe Gaufride and other, vnto Fraūce, wher by the reporte of Gaufride he wrought wonders.

But the writers of French cronicles touche nothing of ſuch notable deedes; nor yet the wryters of Romaynes minde nothinge of ſuch actes done againe their Conſull or Emperour called by Gaufride Lucius Hibertus. Therfore I will ſpare all that longe mater remitting the welſhemen, as touching that proceſſe vnto the ſayde Gaufryde. And here I will folow Policronicō, where he ſayth, that for as muche as the forenamed Mordred was deſirous to be king and feared ſomedele the mighte of Cerdicus kinge of Weſtſaxons: he therfore drew to him the ſayde Cerdicus by greate giftes, as of townes and Caſtelles, and other meanes, where thorough the ſayd Cerdicus to him aſſented, ſo that Mordred was at London crowned king of Brytaine, and Cerdidicus after the vſe of Pagās was at Wincheſter thē called Kaerguent, crowned kyng of Weſtſaxōs.

When relacion came to Arthur of al this treaſon wrought by his neuew Mordred: he in all the haſt made towarde Brytayne, as it is redde in the Engliſhe chronicle, & landed at Sandwitche, where he was mette of Mordred and hys people, which gaue vnto him ſtrōg batayle in time of his landyng, & loſt there manie of his knightes, as the famouſe knight Gawyne and other. But yet this notwithſtandinge Arthur at length wan the lande, and chaſed his enemies and after the enterring of his coſin Gawyn, ⁊ other of his knightes there ſlayne, he ſet forwarde his hoſte to purſue his enemies. Mordred thus beyng ouerſette of his vncle at the ſea ſide, withdrew him to Wincheſter. Where he beinge furniſhed of new ſouldiours, gaue vnto Arthur, as ſayth Gaufryde, yͤ ſeconde fight, wherin alſo Mordred was put to the worſe, and conſtrayned to flee. Thyrdlie and laſtelye the ſayde Mordred fought with his vncle Arthur beſides Glaſtinburie, where after a longe and daūgerous fight, Mordred was ſlayne, and the victorious Arthur wounded vnto the death, and after buried in the vale of Aualon beſide Glaſtinbury beforeſayde.

Of this laſte ende and burieng of Arthur in the Britiſhe bookes are tolde many fables, But to oppreſſe the errours of the Britons, that thinke or beleue that Arthur yet liueth: Policronicon ſheweth in his forenamed chapiter of hys v. booke, that in the ſeconde Henries time, Kinge of Englande, the bones of the ſayd Arthur ⁊ Gwanour his wife were founden, and tranſlated into the forſayd church of Glaſtinbury, and there new buried in the yere of our lord xi. hundred. lxxx. And more ſpecially it is noted in the. xxiii. chapiter of the. vii. booke of Polichronicon aboue ſayde.

The death of kinge Arthur.

Wherfore to be at a concluſion of a fine of this noble warriour, he was as before is ſhewed, ſlaine or wounded to death, when he had reigned ouer the Britons by the terme of. xxvi. yeres, willinge before his death that Conſtantine the ſonne of Cador duke of Cornewayle, for ſo muche as of his body remayned none heyre, yͤ he ſhoulde bee his heyre and enherite the lande of muche Britayn after his death.

¶ The. cvii. Chapter.

Conſtantine. Li. 8. cap.

Conſtancius the ſonne of Cador, duke of Cornewayle, by aſſente of the Britons was of theym crowned king of muche Britayn, in the yere of Chriſtes incarnacion fiue hundred. xliii. and yͤ. xix. yere of Lotharius then kinge of Fraūce. This was nere kinſeman vnto Arthur, and was by the two ſōnes of Mordred greuouſly vexed, for ſo much as they claymed yͤ lande by the right or title of their father. So that betwene him and them were foughten manye and ſondrie batailes. Whereof nother place nor of time is lefte any conuenient memorie, nor yet of the names of the ſayde two ſonnes.

But as diuers authours agreen after theſe forſayd batayles thus foughten, finallie the two ſonnes of Mordred were conſtreyned of pure force to ſeeche ſtronge holdes for their refuge. Wherfore that one toke London, and that other Wincheſter.

Whereof Conſtantine beinge warned, left not tyll he had ſlayne that one within the monaſtery of Saynct Amphiabill at Wincheſter, and that other within a temple or churche of London, whiche temple is named of Gaufryde an houſe of freres. But the ſaying is doubtful, for at that dayes it is to be ſuppoſed, that there was none houſe of freres within London, nor by a longe tyme after.

When Conſtantine had thus ſubdued his enemies and thought him ſelfe in a maner of ſuertie of his region: thē fortune as ſhe had enuied his glorie, areryd agayne him his owne kinſeman named Aurelius Conanus, the which agayne him made mortal batayle, and finally at the laſt ſlew hym in the feelde, when he had reygned after moſte accorde of writers .iii. yeres, the which was then buried

ſtonehenge at Stone lienge by the ſepulture of Uter Pendragon, with greate ſolemnite.

¶ The .cviii. Chapter.

Aurelius Conanus.

Aurelius Conanus the couſin of Conſtantine laſte named was crowned kinge of Brytayne in the yere of our Lorde .v. C. and xlvi. and the .xxxii. yere of Lotharius before named, then kinge of Fraunce. This was noble and lyberal. But he was a man that cheriſhed ſuch as loued ſtrife and diſcention within his lande, ⁊ gaue light credence to them that accuſed other, were it right or wronge And as teſtifieth Gaufride and other, he tooke by ſtrength his vncle, whiche of right ſhoulde haue bene kinge, ⁊ caſt him in a ſtronge priſon, ⁊ after ſlew tyrannouſlie the two ſonnes of his ſayde vncle. But he reioyſed his reygne but ſhorte whyle. For as wytneſſeth

Chap. 1. the ſayd * Gaufryde, when he had reygned two yeres, he died, were it of the hand of god or other wyſe leauinge after him a ſōne named Vortiporius as hath the authour of the booke named Floure of hyſtories.

Of this Vortiporius ſpeaketh nothing the engliſh chronicle, but telleth of two kinges that ſhould reygne nexte after Conſtantine bothe at once, wherof that one he nameth Adelbright and that other Edyl. Wherunto, none other writer agreeth, except that he nameth them for ſome of the kinges of the Saxons. For aboute that time reigned in Kente or ſoone after, Ethelbert or Athelbert, whiche might be taken of ſome for Adelbright. And that other whiche he named Edyll, might be taken for Ella kinge of Southeſaxons. But this Ella ſhould not by concorde of writers be liuing at this time. It might with more conueniencie accorde, that it ſhould be a kinge of Deira, or of Northumberland named Ella, the whiche reygned neare aboute this time ⁊ ſeaſon.

Of theſe two kinges, the ſayde Engliſh chronicle telleth a longe proceſſe yͭ which for I finde none authour of authoritie yͭ writeth or ſpeaketh of yͤ ſame, I paſſe it ouer.

Ye ſhall alſo furthermore vnderſtande, that after this day, the Britons daylie diſcreaſid of Lordſhip and rule within Britayne, ⁊ drew them towarde Cambrye or Wales, ſo that yͤ countrey aboute Cheſtre was the chiefe of theyr lordeſhyp within Britayne. For dayly the Saxons landed wyth companies, and occupied the principall partes of the ſame as ſhortlie here after ſhall appere.

The fyfte kingdome of the Saxons.

¶ The .cxix. Chapter.

The fyfte kingdome of the Saxons.
Li. 5. cap. 7

IN the time of yͤ reigne of this fore named Aurelius Conanꝰ; as witneſſeth *Polichronica, Guido, and other: began the kingdome or lordſhip of Brenicia vnder a Saxon named Ida, the yere of our lorde. v. hundred and. xlvii. and the ſeconde or laſte yere of the ſayd Conanꝰ. This lordſhip was in the Northe parte of Britaine, and grew in ſhort while more and more, ſo that finallie it was named the kingedome of Northumberlande. But ye ſhall vnderſtand that this lordſhip was firſte deuided in two kingdomes, whereof the firſte, as aboue is ſayde was called Brenicia, and thatother Deyra. The meris or markis of this kingdome of Northumberlande were made by Eaſte and by Weſte the ocean ſea, by Southe the riuer of Humber, and ſo downward toward the weſte, by the endes of the ſhyres of Notingham & Derby, vnto the riuer of Merſe or Mercia, and by the Northe the Scottiſh ſea, which is called Forthe in Scottiſh, and in Brettiſh the werde.

The Southſide of this Lorde. was called Deyra, whiche is now called the biſſhoprike of Durham and the Northe ſide was called Brenicia, which were then departed or ſeuered bi yͤ Riuer of Tine. Deyra conteyned the lande from Humber to the riuer of Tine, and Brenicia included yͤ countrey frō Tyne to the Scottiſh ſea.

In Brenicia reigned firſt as is aboue ſayde Ida or Idas, and in Deyra raygned fyrſte Ella which lordſhyppes began bothe within thre yeres. But in proceſſe of time both in one were named the kingdome of Northumberland, which ſo continued ſomwhile vnder one king, and ſomewhile vnder two, by the terme of three hūdred and xxi. yeres, as ſaith Ranulph mōke of Cheſter. And after forth continued the name vnder Saxons & Danes, til the comming of Edredus brother of Ethelſtane & ſonne of Edward the elder. The whiche Edredus in the. ix. or laſte yere of his reigne, ioyned this to his own kingdome. By whiche reaſon it ſhoulde ſeme that this kingdome endured vnder that name vppon foure hundred and. ix. yeres.

The firſt chriſten prince of this kingedome was named Edwynus, that receaued the fayth of S. Paulyne, as teſtifieth Guydo. In this lordeſhip alſo were included theſe ſhyres and countreys nowe called Yorke, Notingham ſhyre, or Snothingham ſhyre, Derby ſhyre, the byſhoppricke of Durhā Copelande and other.

Amonge the mani kinges that reygned in this lordſhyp, whyche after ſome wryters were to the number of. xxiii. reygned one accompted the eyght kynge by Guido, named Ethelfridus and ſonne of Ethelrycus whiche Ethelfrydus deſtroyed moe Brytons than all the other kynges of Saxons. This was father to ſaint Oſwold and Oſwy.

He ſlew alſo many of the Britons at a battayle that he had agaynſt them beſide Kaerlegion or Cheſter, and two thouſand and a hundred of Monkes of the houſe of Bangor, as it is teſtified of Polichronicon in the. x. Chapiter of his fyfte booke, the which Monkes

A murder of monkes were come thether to pray for the good ſpede of the Britons. And ouer this foreſayd nombre of Monkes .l. fledde, whereby they with theyr leader named Brocymayl were ſaued. Of ſuch a nombre of Monkes in one houſe, myghte be demed a wonder. But the ſayd Policronica, with Guido, & other wryters, affermen that in ŷ houſe of Bangor were at thoſe dayes for the mooſt partie three times ſeuen hundred Monkes, the whiche lyued by the trauayle of theyr handes onelie.

The forenamed Oſuy, was after Oſwold king of this prouince whiche gaue wyth his daughter Elfleda a Nonne .xii. lordſhyppes into the church, to builde with .xii. Monaſteries, whereof .vi. of the ſayd Lordſhippes were in Brenicia, & .vi. in Deyra, as ſayth Guido. And alſo Ranulphe in his fift booke of Polichronica and .xvi. Chapter affermeth the ſame.

¶ The .cx. Chapter.

cap.1.Li.8

Vortiporius ſonne of Aurelius Conanus, after the opinion before ſayd was ordeyned kinge of Britayne in the yere of oure lorde fiue hundred and .xlviii. and the .xxxiiii. yeare of Clotharius then kinge of Fraunce. Of the whiche is litle memorie left in any chronicler or writer, except that Guydo teſtifieth him to bee a victorious knight, ſhewing breefly that he in ſundrie battayles diſcomfited the Saxons, and defended his land & Britons from the daunger of them and other, that the Saxons allied them with.

In the tyme of the raygne of this kinge, a Saxon named Ella the ſonne of Iffus, began to reigne in the Southe ſyde of the kingedome of Northumberlande called Deyra, as before is towchyd in the Chapter of the ſayd kingdome.

Then it foloweth, when thys Vortiporius had ruled the Brytons knighthe by ŷ terme of .iiii. yeres, he dyed and was put to his father, leuynge none heyre of hys bodie. 3.15.

For as muche as all wryters agreen that the kinges of Weſte Saxon at length ſubdued all the other kingedomes, and made of the hole lande of muche Britayne but one kingdome or monarchie, and all other as well of Britons as of Saxons fayled or leſte of, that alonely excepted: therfore I intende to brynge in, the name of euery kinge of Weſte Saxon from the firſt Cerdicus or Cherdicus & ioyne them with the kynges of Britons, for ſo long as hereafter the ſayde Brytons contynued, theyr reygne within any parte of Britayne.

¶ The .cxi. Chapter.

Malgo a duke of Britons and neuew of Aurelius Conanus as ſayth the authour of the Floure of hiſtories, began his reigne ouer the Britons in ŷ yere of our lorde fiue hundred and .lii. & the .xxxviii. yere of Clotharius then ſtill king of Fraunce, and alſo the fyftene yeare of Kenricus the ſonne of Cerdicus and ſeconde kynge of Weſte Saxon aforeſayd accompting .xv. yeres of the reygne of his father, as Guido alloweth. Malgo.

This Malgo after Faſtoriſe of al

writers that make mēcion, was the comlieſt and mooſte perſonable man of all Britons than lyuing, and therwith endowed with knightly man hode. The whiche withſtode the Saxons and kept them of, that they damaged not the lande, the whiche he then had poſſeſſion of. And as witneſſeth cap.1.Li.8 *Gaufride and other, he by hys manhode ſubdued the Iſles of Iſeland Orchades or Orkeyes, and Norway with other.

In the time of the reygne of this Malgo, reigned in the lordſhip or kingdome of Kent Ethelbertus, Li.5.cap.6 the whiche as witneſſeth *Policronicon, aſſembled an hoſte of his knightes and gaue battayle vnto Ceawlmus ſōne of Kenricus and then king of Weſtſaxons, yͤ cauſe wherof is not expreſſed. But this batayle was the firſt bataile that was foughten bytwene the Saxons, after that they opteined land and dwellinge within Britayne, whiche was foughten in a place called wylbaldowne. And in the fight was ſlayne two dukes of Ethelbertus, and him ſelfe with his people chaſed.

Alſo it is witneſſed of the ſayde Polycronica, that the yere folowinge Cutwolfus the brother of Ceawlmus before named, fought ſtrongely againſt the Britōs at Bedforde, and beraft them.iiii cities or townes named Liganbroght, Egelſborgth, Beſington, and Eynſham.

Then to returne agayn to Malgo kinge of the Britons, the authoure of the floures of hiſtories ſayth, that not withſtanding the many vertues, the which god had endowed him with, he laſtly forgat God, forſaking al vertue, and gaue him to ſondrie vices and ſinnes, wherof the odible ſinnes of Sodomy was one: wherefore fell to him great perſecucion of his enemies yͤ Saxons, as before ſome deale is ſhewed ⁊ more enſueth.

It was not longe after the ſayd named battayle done at Bedforde but that the foreſayd Cutwolfus died. But yet his ſayde brother Ceawlmus couetouſe of worſhip, maynteyned his warre again the Britons, ſo that after he made a new voyage agaynſte them, and made of thē an other diſcomfiture and tooke from them the famous cities of Bathe, of Gloucetter, and Wourceter, which ſhould be by yͤ meaning of Rannulph aboute the yeare of the reigne of this Malgo.xxix.

Of all this ſpeaketh nothing yͤ chronicle of England, but he maketh his proceſſe of a king named Cortif. By yͤ which as it ſhuld ſeme by the rehearſal folowing that he maketh of Gurmund, that Careticus ruled the Britōs next after the death of this Malgo, as whē the time commeth more plainly it ſhal appeare. Then it foloweth aboute the.xxxiii.yere of this Malgo, Ceawlmus before named gathered his Saxons, and foughte with the Britons at a place called Fechanlege, where after longe fight Ceawlmus chaſed the Brytons ⁊ wan of them victory. But his brother called Cutha, was ſlayne in the fight, for whome he made great ſorowe. Thus in his latter dayes Malgo beīg oppreſſed ⁊ purſued of his enemies, laſtli died, when he had raygned after moſt cōcord of ſtories, xxxv. yeres.

Francia.

¶The .c.xii. Chapter.

hilpericus

Chilpericus ẏ third ſonne of Lothari⁹ or Clotharius before named, began his raign ouer the parte of Fraunce called Soiſons, in the yere of our Lord God, fiue hundred .lxiiii. & the .xiiii. yere of Malgo thā king of Britaine. This not being content with ſuch as his father had beſet him, ſo ſone as the obſequie and entermēt of his father was finiſhed, he ſped him vnto Paris and poſſeſſed him of his fathers treaſure: wherof his .iii. brethren being warned purchaſed to them ſuche frendſhip of the nobles of Fraunce, ẏ thei vnweting theyr ſaied brother had entred into Paris, and likely to haue taken him therin, if he had not ẏ ſoner eſcaped. For this inconuenience great diſcentiō was likely to haue growen betwene theſe foure brethrē had not been the mediation of frendes vpon both parties. The whiche by good & politike waies, at length pacified al variaunces among them, and concluded for a final peace, that either of the ſaid brethren ſhould hold him content with ſuch porcion as was before aſſigned to them by their father. That is to ſaye, to the eldeſt brother named Aribertus or after ſum writers Cherebate, ſhuld fall the countrie that is liyng aboute Paris called middle Fraunce. to Guntranus ſhoulde fall the Prouince of Orleaunce, and to thys Chilpericus, the prouince of Soiſons, and to Sigebertus the yongeſt brother ſhoulde belong the countrey of Mees or Auſtracie, whiche lordſhippe beginneth at Champeyne, as affermeth the Frenche chronicle and ſtretcheth to the lordſhip or prouince of Loraine vpon one parte, and to Almaine vpon that other part. After which concorde and agremēt thus finiſhed either of the ſaied brethren departed vnto his proper lordſhip.

If I ſhould here diſcribe the maners and condicions of theſe .iiii. Princes, or expreſſe the vnlawful lecherye of the eldeſt brother Aribertus, in refuſyng his lawfull wife Ingebrida or Ingeberta, or of the rauiſhement of wiues and virgins by him dooen, or yet the vnſtablenes of liuing that was alſo in the ſeconde brother Guntranus, with the vertues and vices of the other: I ſhould therof make a long worke, wherefore to bring this ſtorie to ſome conuenience, I thus begyn.

Trueth it is, that this Chilpericus or after ſome Hilperic⁹ toke to wife the doughter of the king of Spaine called Athanahildus, whoſe name was Goſſanda.

The whiche hadde to her handemaiden a maide, called Fredegunda, the which was of paſſing bewtie and ſhape of bodie. But to her was ioyned ſubtel wit and euill condicions: contrarye to her Ladye and Myſters, whiche was ſimple and of vertuous condicions.

To the yongeſt brother named Sigeberte was coupled in mariage the ſiſter of the ſaied Goſſanda named Brunchildis, or after the French chronicle Bruneheuſt a woman of peruerſe and wicked condicion as after ſhall appeare. Thē it foloweth Chilperich within ſhorte time that he was thus maried vnto Golſanda, caſte vnlawful loue vnto her womā Fredegunda. By reaſon whereof fell ſuch vnkindenes betwene them, that laſtly ſhe was founde in her chamber dead and ſtrangled with a corde, whiche was doen by the hande of her huſbande, as teſtifieth the French booke.

Then ſecondly he maried another wife named Audouera, a woman of greate birth: howe be it mine authour nor yet the Frēche chronicle declareth not her progenie, with the which he continued and kept her after her honoure. But yet he withdrew not his vnlawfull loue from the forenamed Fredegunde.

In this paſſetime, cauſe of war was moued betwene Sigeberte the yonger brother, and mē of the countrey of Sweuy, for the whiche the ſaied Sigeberte required ayde of his brother Chilperiche. At whoſe requeſt he in all haſte aſſembled his people ⁊ ſped him towarde his brother, leauing his wife great with childe, in the keping of the foreſaied Fredegūde. Of the whiche wife as teſtifieth the French boke, he had before receiued. iii. ſonnes named Theodobertus, Meroneus, ⁊ Clodoueꝰ.

It was not longe after that Chilperich, as before is ſaied, in aide of his brother was departed but that his wife was deliuered of a doughter: and whē this child ſhould be confirmed of the biſhop this Fredegunde entendinge to make a deuorce betwene Chilperich and his wife by her ſubtill ⁊ falſe coniecture, counſailed the quene that ſhe ſhuld for the more honor confirme her owne childe. And the quene truſting her counſaile, ſuppoſing her counſail had been for the beſt, confirmed her owne childe.

¶The. cxiii. Chapter.

IN this while the Kyng with his brother occupied in warre againſte the Suitzers or men of Sweuy, bare them ſo knightly yͭ they ſubdued their enemies, and after retourned into their countreis, whereof when Fredegunde was ware, ſhe in ſecrete maner mette with the king and ſhewed to him al the demeanour of hys wife, but nothing of her own craftie working, wherwith the king was greuouſly diſcontēt, in ſhewyng of his outward countenaūce and ſaied if yͭ were trew ſhe ſhold frō him be deuorſed, and that ſhe ſhoulde be queene in her ſtede.

After this the king comminge to his palais, the quene to the intent to bee the more accepted in his preſence, not knowing of the malicious working of Fredegūde broughte in her armes the yonge baby, to yͤ which ſhe was mother both naturally ⁊ ſpiritually, and welcomed yͤ king her lord in right hūble maner ſaluting him wͭ wordes of all comfort. But the kyng being warned of her ſimple demenour, ⁊ as ſome authours write, glad that he had occaſion to find matter to her of diſpleaſure, blamed her in greuous maner, and commaunded her out of his preſence for that time, ⁊ after by coūſaile of ſpiritual men, cauſed her from him to be deuorſed, and her with her yonge doughter, to bee putte into an houſe of religion, to the whiche he gaue poſſeſſions for the findinge of her and of her yonge doughter, named Childeinda.

And when Chilpericus hadde thus finiſhed this foreſaied buſines, he ſhortly after tooke to wife the forenamed Fredegunde, not withoute grudge of ſome of his lordes and other.

It was not longe after this mariage, that ſtrife and deſcencion fell betwene this Chilpericus and Sigeberte his brother, the whiche grewe for certaine lande that chilpericus claimed to haue of his brother aforeſaied. Than Chilpericus aſſembled his knightes, and made war vpon the land of his brother Sigibert, the whiche then was beſyed in like war againſte a people called Hunes, by reaſon wherof Chilpericꝰ had the moore fordell, and wanne by ſtrength the citie of Reynes.

But it was not longe after, or Sigebert was warned of his brothers vnkindnes, wherfore he after his enemies wer by him ſomedele ſubdued, went with his armie into the countrey of Soyſons, belongynge to his brother Chilpericus, and warred in likewiſe in that land as his brother did in his, and at length toke the citie of Soyſons, and therein the eldeſt ſon of Chilpericus named Theodoberte, and helde him as his priſoner. Then Chilpericus hearinge of this diſcomfiture of his people, and taking of his ſon was againſt his brother moore feruently amoued, and caſt in his minde alwaies & meanes howe he mighte reuenge him vpon his brother: but it was in vaine. For his brother at that time had ſuch aduauntage of him, that he well perceyued, that he had no better meanes than treatie of peace, by meanes whereof he ſhortly obtained his ſonne oute of daunger, with other thinges concerninge his profit, aſſurynge to his ſayed brother by ſolempne oth, that after that day he ſhuld neuer weare armes, nor yet waree with hys brother.

This concorde and vnitie in due maner finiſhed, and ſufficiētly by both counſayles ſtabliſhed, yet Chilpericus beynge alwayes minded to bee reuenged vpon his brother Sygebert, ſent his yongeſt ſonne named Clodoueus, & cauſed him to warre vpon a citie called Burdeaux, in the prouince of Neuſtria, now called Normandie. But by the manhode of a captaine of Sigeberte named Singulphus. The ſaied Clodoueus was ouercomen, and compelled to auoyde the countrey, and fled to Paris.

For this hap Chilpericus was fyred with all malice, and in all haſt commaunded his forenamed ſonne Theodobert with a greate armie to inuade the ſaied cōtrey of Neuſtria or Normandie. The whiche according to his fathers commaundement ſped him thither, & there by his extort, might, and power, tooke manye cities and ſtrongholdes, not ſparynge churches & houſes of religion, as nunnes, and other, and robbed and ſpoyled the contrey in moſte cruell wiſe. Laſtly, this perſecution done, a cheuetaine or Duke named Gundoaldus of the erledome of Poytowe, aſſembled a great power, and withſtode Theodoberte, and finally ſlew him in playne battaile, and a great part of his people, whereof hearing Chilpericus gathered a greate hoſte and yode vnto the countrey of Champayne, waſting and deſtroyinge the countrey with fier and yron, to the vttermoſte of his power, and at length tooke the citie of Reynes, & ſpoiled it without mercye.

¶The. c. xiiii. Chapter.

Sizebert. SIgebertꝰ aduertiſynge & caſting in his mynde the vnnatnrall diſpotition of his brother, perceauinge well that he entended his vtter deſtruction, prouided in his beſt maner to withſtand hys malice. And for to bring his continued malice to a finall ende, he gathered to him a puiſaunte power, and after ſped him towarde his ſaied brother, whereof Chilpericus being aduertiſed, by hys couerte meanes ſought waies of intreatie of peace, in ſuche wiſe that or the hooſtes mette, a peace was concluded.

Then theſe two brethren thus accorded, condeſcended in ſhorte time after to make warre vppon their brother Gunthranus than lorde of Orleaunce, the which ſignorie at that daye belonged to the countrey of Burgoyne. The cauſe of this warre is not expreſſed, excepte that thei enuied their brother to haue ſo great lordſhip But by mediatours on both parties, after greate a daye purueyed on all ſides, a concorde and peace was concluded in the temple of S. Lowpe at the Citie of Troys in Uicent.

When the ſaied peace was finiſhed, the ſaied three brethren in ſight departed as frendes eyther of them frõ other. But as peace ſometime contenteth not ſouldiours, and ſpeciallye ſuche as delite them in pillage and robbery: righte ſo among the knightes of Sigeberte was ſpronge a greate rumour, ſaiyng that they were not contented and rewarded for their greate labour and trauayle accordinge to their deſerte, and ſpeciallye for the firſt iourney of theſe twoo, had againſt his brother Chilpericus, thinkinge the peace made with him was nothyng honourable, conſideryng the greate doubleneſſe and vntrueth that in him was proued. For the whiche they excited Sygebert in all that in theym was, to breake thoſe bandes of peace, and to make newe warre vppon him. And in like maner ſome euil diſpoſed perſons were more agreble to warre then to peace vppon the partie of Chilpericus, & murmured in likewiſe. And for they thoughte to haue been better rewarded of Sigeberte then they were of their owne maiſter, they therfore left him and yode to the hoſte of Sigeberte, by whoſe inciting and report, Sigebert was moore kindled to ſette vpon hys brother.

Chilpericus hauing noticion of his brothers purpoſe, with alſo the murmour and departing of his knightes, and hauinge in the other ſome miſtruſte: he auoide with his wyfe and chyldren and chiefe of his treaſure, went vnto the citie of Tourney, entendinge to kepe that for their ſauegarde. But when Sigeberte knew therof, he was nothinge ſlowe in the purſuynge of hym, but folowed ſtreight after, and cloſed him within the ſayde citye wyth a ſtronge ſeige, where Chilpericus was in a maner diſpaired of the welfare of him and his Fredegunde. But ſhe that was repleniſhed with all iniquitie, called to her two wicked perſons, and promiſed vnto them great giftes, if they would by venim or other wiſe, ſlee hys brother Sigebert.

The whiche two felowes diſceyued with the faire ſpeche and greate giftes of the ſaide Fredegunda, tooke vppon theym that vnlefull charge, and by theyr ſubtell and falſe imaginatiō, brought their curſed purpoſe vnto an ende, but to their owne confuſion. For after they had wounded the kinge Sigeberte to deathe, and woulde haue ſcaped, the kinges knightes eſpiynge their treaſon, fell ſoone vppon theym, and all to hewed theym. And when the death of the kinge was knowen, a great noyſe and crie was areared in the hoſte: By meane whereof, the kynges death was blowen into the citye, and after into the eares of Chilpericus, wherof he was not a litle a meruailed, nor woulde to it giue ferme credence, til he was enfourmed of his wife Fredegunde, of al her ſubtell working.

It was not longe after, or the knightes or ſome of the captaines of the hoſte of Sigeberte preſented theym vnto Chilpericus, beſeching him of his grace and pardon, the whiche he gladlye accepted. And whē he had ſet his charges in order, he then commaunded prouiſion to bee made for the burying of his ſaid brother within the monaſtery of S. Medarde of Soyſons.

And when that all that buſyneſſe after a kinglye maner was finiſhed and ended, he then exiled Brunechieldis, and Childeberte, the wife and ſonne of his brother Sigebert, vnto the citie of Roan, taking from them great treaſure that they were poſſeſſed of. But ſhortlye after the ſonne of Sigeberte by helpe of Gundebolde or Gundealde, Duke of Poytowe here before named, was deliuered from the daunger of the ſayd Chilpericus, & ſent into his own lordſhyppe of Auſtracye, whiche hys father Sigebert was lord of.

In this paſſetime he had ſente his ſonne Meroneus into a countrey called Buturinges, to apeace certayne rebellions there rayſed. But whē he harde of the death of his vncle Sigeberte, and of the beinge of his wyfe Brunechielde at the citie of Roane, he ſet a parte all the charge of his father, and ſped him ſtraight thither, keping companye wyth her. In whome he tooke ſuche conſolation & pleaſure, that laſtly he maried her and kepte her as hys wyfe. And when his father was thereof warned, he feared leaſt by the counſayle of hys ſayde wife, he woulde aryſe agaynſte him, therefore he in all haſte aſſembled hys people, & ſped him towarde Roane.

When tidynges came to Meroneus of the commynge of his father

with

wyth ſo greate arays, and he as then vnprouyded of ſtrengthe of knyghtes to reſiſte hys father, for his moſt ſuertie fledde with his vnlefull wife to the temple or church of S. Martyne, taking the priuilege thereof for their defence.

And when Chilpericus hadde tempted by many ſondry meanes to haue them out of the ſaide priuilege, and mighte not withoute breakynge of the ſame, he to bring aboute hys cautelouſe purpoſe, made to theym aſſured promiſe, that yf they wylfullye woulde renounce the ſayde place, and putte them in his grace, he would vtterlye pardon their treſpace, & ſuffer them from that time for to continue their life together as manne and wife.

Upon whiche promiſe the ſayd Meroneus with his wife renounced the ſaid priuilege, and put them whole in the kinges mercye, the whiche theym receyued wyth all countenaunce of loue and fauoure, and them feaſted and cheriſhed louyngly by the ſpace of two dayes only. But the thirde day the feaſte was finiſhed, for then he ſent hys ſonne vnto Paris vnder ſure gyydes, and there cauſed hym to bee profeſſed in an houſe of religion. But by the meanes of hys vncle Gunthranus he was after taken thence, & ſo reſtored to his former knighthode. For the which his father him newly purſued and conſtrained him to take for his ſauegarde the churche of S. Martyn in Turon.

And when he was warned that his father perforce wold take him thence, he then fledde vnto a citye of Champain, accompanied with fyue ſeruauntes onelye, where he was in ſo great feare to be taken, and in ſuch diſpayre to be obteine grace of his father, that he cauſed one of the ſayd fyue perſons to ſlee hym with his ſworde, and the foreſayde Brunechildis his wife put in ſure kepinge.

¶ The .xv. Chapter.

Chilperic

Chylpericus then beynge aſcertayned of the deathe of hys ſonne Meroneus, and the ſure keepynge of Brunechyldys, he thoughte hym ſelfe ſome deale aſſured, for the myſtruſte that he hadde in theym, manye tymes vnquieted hym. But yet he was not in quiete or reſte: For ſhortlye after the people of Turon rebelled agaynſte hym: Agaynſte whome he ſente hys ſonne Clodoueus, & a noble warriour of hys courte, named Deſiderius, the whyche he ſente as a Guyde and a Counſayloure of hys ſaide ſonne Clodoueus. And vppon the partye of hys enemies, was a Captaine of the kinge Gunthranus, for ſo muche as the ſaide Gunthranus claimed parte of thoſe landes aboute Turon. This Captaine named Mommelius, hearing of the commyng of the foreſayd hoſte, with a choſen company made toward them, and gaue vnto Clodoue⁹ a great ſharpe fighte, and not withoute greate loſſe of his men, wanne of him the feelde, and compelled him to forſake that countrei.

Thus Chilpericus was wrapped in warre, and troubles of the worlde, ſome tyme with righte, and ſome whyle wyth wronge, ſo that he ſome tyme wanne worſhyppe, and another while he loſte. Whereof to telle all the circumſtaunce,

ſtaunce, I thinke it ſhoulde be tedious bothe to the readers, and alſo to the hearers. Wherefore I paſſe ouer in abridging and ſhortninge ſome dele of this ſtorie.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, after Chilpericus hadde by inticement of Fredegunde, wrongefullye tormented the archebiſhop of Roane named Preteſt, & him after the ſufferaunce of manye vilanies exiled, for the whiche and other, God ſente vnto him ſome correction, in takinge awaye by ſodayne death, the children that he hadde by Fredegunde, he than beganne to knowe God, and toke great repentaunce, in promiſinge to God amendment of his lyfe.

And to the entent that he mighte haue the more prayers of the cōmon people, to ſtande in ſtate of grace: he fyrſt releaſed a greuous tribute or impoſition that he had latelye ſette vppon all wiues thorough his region. And that done he reedified olde churches, & ſome he made newe, and endued them with greate poſſeſſions. And ouer thys he releued greatlye ẏ poore people, by enlargynge of his liberall armes, and became very humble and meeke, where before tyme he was righte ſterne and cruell.

But lyke as often it happeneth, that hote loue is ſoone cold, ſo this ſodayne deuotion was ſone aſwaged. For lyke as his troubles beganne to aſwage, and his proſperitie to encreaſe: righte ſo his olde condicions beganne in him to reuiue and quicken, ſo that at lēgth he returned to his old accuſtomed vices.

The Italians are called Longobardes, for aſmuch as moſt commonly thei vſe to weare longe beardes.

In thys tyme, a people called Longobardes, and now Italians warred ſore vppon the landes of the Empire. Wherefore Mauricius than being Emperour of Conſtantinoble, for ſo muche as he then thoughte that the Frenche kynge mighte with leſſe coſte and paine ſubdue them, then he might beinge ſo far from theim, he therfore ſente to him a greate ſumme of golde, with letters of recommendation, exhortynge hym in the defence of the church of Rome to aſſemble hys people, & to withſtande the ſayde Longobardes, & not to ceaſe thereof tyll he had expelled theym from the landes of the empire.

Which ſumme of gold he goodlye receyued, promiſinge to ẏ bringers thereof, that he wyth all diligence ſhoulde execute the vttermoſte of hys power, to accompliſh the requeſte of the Emperoure.

And accordinge to the parcell of hys ſaide promiſe, he aſſembled a greate people, and made towarde the ſayd Longobardes. Of whom the ſayde Longobardes fearinge the greate myghte, made meane of entreatye, offerynge to hym greate ſummes of money. By reaſon whereof he lefte theym in reſte, and ſo retourned into Fraunce.

When Mauricius had vnderſtandinge that the foreſayde enemies remayned ſtyll in the forſaid landes, and continued in their malice: he ſente agayne to Chilpericus, requiringe him other to perfourme his promiſe, or elles to reſtore his money, whiche he had taken for the perfourmaunce of the ſame. But all was in vayne, for he woulde neither execute that one, nor that other. But at lengthe as after-affermeth mine authour, he was by gods ordinaunce, compelled to reſtore the ſaid money or a great part therof, by meane of his ſiſter with her childe that was a priſoner to the ſaide emperour, which ſyſter was before marryed vnto the king of Spaine.

¶ The .cxvi. Chapter.

Chilpericus thus encreaſinge in vice and diſhonour, laſtlye repugned agaynſt god, ſo that he fell into ẏ deteſtable hereſye of the Arianes, and commaunded certain articles of the ſame touching the deuiſion of the trinitie, to bee preached throughe his region.

But the holye biſhop of Towres withſtode that precept, ⁊ blamed him greuouſlye for that dede, albeit the ſaide biſhop named Gregory with great aſſiſtẽce of other biſhoppes of Fraunce had greate laboure to remoue from him the ſayde opinion.

This with many other crimes paſſed by Chilpericus, Fredegũde whiche euer increaſed in peruerſe and malicious purpoſe, ſoughte manye vnlefull meanes howe ſhe might bring to cõfuſion the third ſonne of her huſband, knowynge well that while he liued, her children ſhuld neuer enherit ẏ crowne of Frãce. This purpoſe to bring about many and diuerſe waies ſhe attempted whiche were long to rehearſe.

But finallye, ſhe cauſed hym wrongfully to bee accuſed, and by meane therof to be in caſt in priſõ. Where he ſo being, ſhe hyred a felon to ſlee him, ⁊ after ſhewed to her huſband that the ſaide Clodoueus had ſlaine him ſelf. In profe wherof, ſhe had appointed the forſaide murtherer to leaue a ſworde ſtickinge in him, as though he had wilfully ſlaine him ſelfe vpon the ſworde. Whiche when the kinge ſawe, he demed him giltie of ſuch offence as before was putte vpon hym.

Ye haue heard before of the ſon of Sigeberte named Childebert that was deliuered from the handes of Chilpericus hys vncle by ẏ meanes of Gundoald duke or erle of poitow, the which in this time was growen to mannes ſtature, and ruled at this day his enheritaunce of Auſtracie, not without great ſtrife had betwene him and his ſayde vncle, whiche were to longe to write the circumſtaunce thereof. Wherof at this day ſome deale was vndiſcuſſed, albeit they at this daye vſed eyther other as frendes.

Aboute this time the other vncle of Childeberte called Gũthranus, ſought occaſion againſt him for cauſe of a biſhop named Theodorus, and biſhop of Marſyll or Marſile, the which was put from his ſee by Gunthranus, and receiued of Childeberte, and by hym againe reſtored to the ſayde ſee of Marſyle. For the whiche, Gunthrane was ſore amoued, and entended to make warre vpon him. But by mediatours it was ſome deale appeaſed and ſette in quiet, vpon certaine condicions to be obſerued and alſo perfourmed vpon the party of Gunthranus, ẏ which after, were not vpon his ſide kept nor perfourmed. Wherfore, after requeſt to him made for reformation of all ſuche poyntes, and anſwere agayne receyued of no reformaformation : Childeberte to haue his partie the ſtronger, and alſo for that he well knewe, that hys vncle Chilpericus bare towarde the ſayde Gunthranus not verye fraternall loue, he therefore ſente vnto him a noble man of his court named Gyllon, requirynge hym of ayde agaynſt his vncle, yͤ which by manye ſeaſons hadde as well broken promiſſe agaynſte hym, as nowe he hadde agaynſte Chyldeberte.

Of this Chilperich being right fayne, aſſented to the deſire of Gillon, and after in al haſte prepared their hooſtes, and by two ſondrye companies inuaded the countrey of Orleaunce, whereof Gunthranus was king and ruler. But the inhabitauntes of the Prouince defended them in ſo ſtrong maner, that their enemies had of them litle auauntage. In whiche meane ſeaſon, Gunthranus aſſembled a mightie hoſte, and ſpedde hym towarde his enemies, and at a place called Mediolan, he ſurpryſed a part of his ſaide enemies, and after drewe nere to the greate nomber of bothe Hooſtes, where was made preparation on bothe ſydes to haue foughten : But as before time ye haue often heard, that by diſcrette and wiſe men, the fighte was putte by, and meanes of acorde was foundē : ſo now at this time by laboure of good wiſe prelates and other, theſe kynneſmen were ſette in vnitie, and departed wythoute great ſhedynge of chriſten bloude.

In this paſſetime death which ſpareth no creature, beraft Chilpericus a ſonne borne of Fredegũde & named Theodorꝰ, for the whiche the king and alſo the queene toke great heuineſſe. But as ſhe yͤ was prompt and ready to all euyll, caſt in her minde that this childe was ſlaine by poyſon, or by ſome other purpoſed malice. For the whiche laſtlye was accuſed a Baylyfe or liefe officer called Monuole, with dyuers wytches and ſorcereſſes, that ſhoulde imagine this childes death. The which ſhe payned and tormented in ſuche wiſe that laſtlye the ſayde Wythches confeſſed, that they had deſtroyed the childe and not withoute conſente of the ſayde Monuole. Wherfore ſhe after cauſed the ſayde ſorcereſſes to dye by cruell deathe, as by fyre or otherwyſe, and the ſayde Bayliffe to bee ſo tormented, that he dyed ſoone after.

The french cronicle ſaith, that by the meane of the taken awaye of the lyfe of the kynges chylde, a childe of the ſayde Monuole was reſtored to healthe, whiche before was in great ieopardye, whiche is for fooles to beleue. This ſorow and heauines of Chilpericus and Fredegunde hys wife, was ſomedeale aſwaged by the byrthe of a ſonne, ſhortly after borne of yͤ ſaide Fredegunde, which the kyng let call Lotharius or Clotharius. For ioye whereof, the kinge let open the priſons, and ſuffered the Pryſoners to goo at theyr lybertye, and ſpeciallye ſuche as concerned cauſes touchyng hym ſelfe or for dette or otherwyſe, wyth other thynges concernyng hys honoure.

But like as dame Fortune is accuſtomed to medle her ioies of this world with ſome bitternes : ſo did ſhe now wͭ Chilpericus. For wher he was now in great tranquillitie and reſt, and thought to haue led the reſidue of his life in pleaſure: ſodeinly worde was brought vnto hym, that hys brother Gunthramus, and his neuewe Childeberte, were allied and firmely accorded to make warre vpon hym, for the whiche they hadde aſſembled a great armye. Wherefore he in all haſte commaunded all his treaſure and chiefe iewelles to be had to the citie of Cambria, wher he with his wife and frendes entended to continue the reſidue of his life. And that done, ſped him thither in all haſte, and fortified the ſaide citie in ſuch wiſe, that he feared litle or nothinge his enemies, where he ſo kept him within the ſaid citie a certaine of time. And when he ſawe, nor heard not of the commynge of his ſaid brother nor neuewe, he then walked more at large. and ſported hym in hauking and chaſe of the wild beaſtes as wolues & other, which at thoſe daies was greatly vſed of the kinges of Fraunce, and as yet is continued.

Vpon a day as he was purpoſed towarde this diſport, & all thynge readye prepared for the ſame, ſo that the quene thought verely he had been gone out of the palleys, for what happe I can not tell, the Queene yode into her chamber, and there reſted her vpon her bed. Where ſhe ſo lyinge the kyng paſſed by, & with a litle wand, which he bare in his hande, in maner of game, ſtrake the queene vpon the backe. The quene ſuppoſinge the king had been gone to the fielde, & not loking vp, ſaid: Laundry why dareſt thou thus ſtrike me? This Laundry was a great man in the kynges court, and had been paramour to the quene long time. But the kinge hearinge theſe wordes, made ſeblaũt as he had not heard them, and ſo paſſed on hys waye.

¶ The .cxvii. Chapter.

Fredegunda apperceyuynge and after ſeinge it was the kyng, to whõ ſhe had thus ſayde, was ſore abaſhed, and in great feare and agonye. And after ſhe adde by a longe ſeaſon coniected in her minde what remedye ſhe myght finde for this miſhappe: ſhe laſtly deueliſhlye determined to ſlee her ſaide huſband and lorde. And this to bringe aboute, ſhe ſente in all haſte for the ſayde Laundrye, and ſheued to him in order all the circumſtaunce of the foreſaide matter. Where after he was ſtricken with ſuche feare, that his witte and counſayle fayled hym to deuiſe in ſuche a caſe anye remedye, Wherefore the queene as ſhe that was fullye determined to execute her deteſtable and curſed purpoſe, ſaid to him boldly: Laundry, thou ſeeſt well that this caſe is brought to ſo ſtraite a pointe, that other thou muſte thinke to deſtroye my lord and huſband, or els thou and I muſte bothe be ſhamefully confounded. Of which thou wel knoweſt our owne is moſt to be regarded, therfore diſpoſe thee to do after my counſaile.

Thou knoweſt well that yͤ king is accuſtomed to come late frõ his diſport. Wherfore prouide to the a certaine, yͤ thou well truſteſt, & in the euening when he retourneth, eſpie thy time, and fall vpō him ſodeinlye, and ſo ridde him. And after make an outcrie, and ſende to ſearche aboute, as thou wouldeſt take the homycedes, and cauſe ſome of thine owne companye to flee from thee, as though thou ſhouldeſt theim purſue. Laundry hearinge this curſed counſayl, allowed it well, and therunto aſſented, and inconſinentlye went about the perfourmaunce of ẏ ſame. And when he had purueied his acceſſaries, he toward night aſſembled thē, geuing to them informatiō how they in this miſchief ſhulde behaue them in that thing: takinge of them aſſured othes for kepinge of his counſaile. The king nothing deminge any thing of this conſpired treaſon, toke his delectation and pleaſure in folowinge of hys game, ſo that he loſt much of hys company: and toward night as he before time was accuſtomed, with few accompanied drew homward. Wherof Laundry being warned, met the king ſaluinge him, & ſayinge, that he was come with his company to cōduct him home, for ſo much as he douted how he was garniſhed of his meyneal ſeruauntes or other.

What ſhuld I longer make delaye or farther rehearſall in thys matter, or tell the circumſtaunce of this purpoſed treaſon. But finallye, when the king was neare his paleys, or as reherſeth the frenche cronicle, within the court of his paleys as he light from his horſe he was ſodeinly wounded to the heart, that he ſtreighte fell to the earth dead.

The murder of Chilpericus.

After which murder thus committed: a great crie was arrered, the king is ſlain: ſo that this Laundrye made in great haſte to be called certayne perſons to attend vpon the corps, while he with other purſued ſuche as were demyd giltie of thys offence. But laſtlye, he retourned, and ſayde that this deede was done by the knyghtes of Childeberte, the whiche by the darkeneſſe of the nighte were eſcaped.

To ſhewe here the vayne and diſſimuled ſorow that Fredegūde made for the kinge, it were but lettinge of time. For euerye wiſe man knoweth well, that all ſuche as be of that diſpoſition, can faine righte well in ſuche ſemblable caſes. But to my purpoſe, when the king was thus ſlaine, and at that tyme nother the queene nor yet Laundrie ſuſpected, prouiſiō was made for the interringe of the corps. The whiche was ſhortlye after ſhipped at the nexte ryuer, and ſo conueied vnto Sainct Germaines de Prez before ſpoken of, and there with great ſolempnitie buried: when he had reigned, as before is ſaide. xxiiii. yeres, leauyng after hym a ſonne as before is mynded, called Clotharius or Lotharius.

Thus as affermeth mine authour maiſter Robert Gagwyne, ended Chilperiche miſerablye hys life, which in pride and miſerie before time it continued. And where in his life he cheriſhed no frende, at his end he founde few or no frends. This gaue the patrimonye of the churche to lewde and ſymple clerkes, and fauoured more ſuch as had lately been conuerted to the faithe, then he did theim that had continued by holye lyfe a longe ſeaſon thereon, and gauen vnto for the perſons of the rule of Chriſtes churche. Amonge the whiche one there was of perfecte lyuinge and Byſhoppe of Parys, that garnyſhed hys tombe wyth thys Epytaphy, as here after in meter foloweth.

Eccleſiæ ſpeculum, patriæ vigor, ara reorum
Et pater et medicus, paſtor, amorque gregis,
Germanus virtuti, fide, corde, ore, beatus,
Carne tenet tumulum, mentis honore polũ
Vir cui dura nil nocuerunt fata ſepulchri,
Viuit enim, nam mors quã tulit ipſa timet,
Creuit adhuc poti⁹, iuſt⁹ poſt funera, nã qui
Fictile vas fuerat, gemma ſuperba micat.
Hui⁹ opẽ ac meritũ mutis data verba loquũtur
Redditus et cecis, predicat ore dies,
Nũc vir apoſtolicus rapiẽs de carne tropheũ
Iure triumphali conſidet arce throni.

¶ The whiche verſes in our mother tongue, maye thus bee expounded in Meters as foloweth.

¶ Myrrour to the churche, and of
the countrey the ſtrength,
Compaſſion of giltie, to them ſhewing mercy.
A father and a leeche, a heard and
louer at length
Of his people, coſyn to vertue and
of allye,
In faith and in heart, and eke in
mouth holye,
Of whome the fleſhe now holdeth
this ſepulture,
But the ſpirite is in heauen euer
to endure,

¶ To this nothing noied nor faut
of ſepulture,
He liueth ſouthly, for death whiche
then was dreade
Hath hym hence take, but yet he
ſhyneth ſure:
This righteous man, though he
ſometime he were ladde
As a bryttell veſſell, whiche with
the earth was cladde,
And ſome while fel, yet oft he roſe
anone:
wherfore he now ſhineth as doth
the Orient ſtone.

¶ By helpe and merite now hath
the dumme his ſpeche,
Of this bleſſed man, and to the
blinde his ſight:
Reſtored of god, as this day doth
vs teache.
And he of the fleſhe hathe gotten
now the fight,
And vpper hand with a triũphant
might:
By vertue wherof he lyke a conquerour
Of the high heauen, now ſitteth
in the tower.

Thus maye ye well apperceyue and knowe, that as yearthlye menne fauoure, ſo wyll they wryte, as is nowe ſhewed by this ſuperſcription. But to G O D all thynges are manifeſted and knowen, and nothynge to hym hyd, what ſo euer yearthlye manne wryteth, or deemeth, to whome all the premiſſes I remitte.

[Anglia]

¶ The

The.cxviii.Chapter.

Careticus or Lareticus, after, the wrytinge of Guydo, of whome nother the progenye, nor yet other addition of honoure is of wryters of hym remembred, beganne to rule the Britons, the yere of our lorde fiue c.lxxxvi. as the ſayde authour recordeth, and the.xxii.yere of Chilperiche then king of Fraunce, and alſo the.ix.yere of Ceawlmus thē kynge of Weſtſaxons. Thys as witneſſeth all writers, was a louer of Ciuyle battayle, and was worſte of all men, ſo that he was odible to God and his Subiectes, in ſuche wiſe that they excited the Saxons to warre vppon him: as teſtifieth Guydo, and chaſed him frō citie to citie, and from towne to towne, tyll they hadde beraft him the moſte parte of ſuche land as hys predeceſſoure Malgo had holden before him.

But Polychronicon, Gaufride and other, adde moore there vnto and ſayen, that for as muche as the Saxons knewe of the deſcencion betwene Careticus and hys Britons, they in all haſte ſent into Irelande, for the kinge called Gurmundus Affricanus the whiche of ſome wryters are named two perſons, as Gurmundus and Affrycanus. But by the rehearſall, that Ranulphe Monke of Cheſter maketh in the three and twentye Chapiter of hys fyrſte booke of Polichronicon, it ſhoulde ſeeme, that he ſhoulde bee named Gurmundus, the whiche by hys meanynge ſhoulde warre in Britayne and Fraunce, whyle hys brother Turgecyus raygned as kynge in Irelande, as in the ſayd Chapter is moore at lengthe declared, whiche ſayde Gurmundus with the ſtrength of the Saxons: warred ſo ſoore againſte the Britons, that laſtelye the ſayde Careticus was fayne to take the towne of Kaerſegent nowe called Sycheſter, and therein beſeiged hym with hys Britons, by a certaine of time: where, by daylye ſkirmiſhes and aſſaultes, he loſte muche of his people.

When Careticus hadde a ſeaſon aſſaied and proued the ſtrēgth of hys enemyes: and ſawe that they encreaſed, and hys knightes leſſed and miniſhed, he ſodainely lefte that towne, and with a certaine of Britons tooke ouer Seuerne water, and ſo into Wales, then called Cambria: which ſhuld bee after mooſte concorde of writers the thyrde yere of the raigne of thys Caretycus: whome the Engliſhe chronicle nameth Cortyſe. Trueth it is, ẏ after he with hys Britons, were dryuen into Cambria or Wales: yet lefte not continuallye to make reyſes and aſſaultes vpon the Saxons nexte to him adioynaunte.

In this time or ſoone after, ruled Ethelfridus the North Saxons: For as witneſſeth the foreſayde authour Guydo, he beganne the raigne of Deira and Brinicia in the yere of oure Lorde fiue hundred and foure ſcore and thirtene. This is Ethelfridus ſonne of Ethelritus that purſued ſo ſoore the Britons, and ſlew ſo great a nomberi of the monkes of the towne of Baugor, as is before rehearſed in the.c.&.ix.chapter of this worke.

The whiche dayly warred vpon the Britons, & the Britons vpon him, ſo that he deſtroyed and ſubuerted muches of Chriſtes faythe with the helpe of yͤ foreſaid Gurmunde through Loegria or myddle England, in ſo muche that the byſhops of London & Yorke, with other miniſters of yͤ churche, with ſuche goodes and relikes as they mighte carye, fledde into diuerſe countreys, ſo that their churche dores were ſhut after them, or els occupied in worſhip of theyr falſe goddes.

Thus the faythe that had endured in Britaine from the tyme of Lucius firſte chriſten kinge of Britayne, tyll this day, nere vpon the ſeaſon of foure hundred yeres & odde, was nere extinct through all the lande.

And when the forenamed Gurmunde had finiſhed hys tirannie within the lande of Britaine, he then ſayled into Fraunce, where he was after ſlayne, as witneſſeth Policronicon, albeit yͤ Frence cronicle ſpeaketh nothynge of anye ſuch man during this perſecution as witneſſeth Guydo.

The church or monaſtery before buyled in Verolamye nowe called Sayncte Albynes, was by the ſayde miſcreauntes beaten downe, whiche there was buylded of the Britons, in the honour of the holye Prothomartyr S. Albon, with dyuers many other, the whiche are loſte, and oute of memorie.

Durynge alſo thys trouble betwene the Saxons and Britons, the Lordeſhyppe or kyngdome of Eaſtſaxons beganne to take place as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

The.cxix.Chapter.

IN thys tyme alſo, after the accorde of moſt writers, as witneſſeth Policronicon & other, Ethelbertus reygned in Kente, and by knyghtehode and great might bare hym, and behaued him ſo victoriouſlye, that he enlarged hys kyngedome to the boundes of Humber. In whiche tyme Gregorye, whyche for hys notable deedes was ſurnamed greate, was made Byſhoppe of Rome. The whiche as before is touched in the precedynge chapter, hauynge compaſſion on the countrey from whence ſuch fayre children came, as he before hadde ſeene, ſhould be inhabite with Pagans or people of miſbeliefe, ſente into Brytayne that holye manne Auſtayne with other of his brethren, to preache to the Angles the faythe of Chriſte. But as witneſſeth Antoninus in the thyrde chapter and. xii. title of his foreſaide worke, when Auſten was thre daies iourney gone and paſſed, ſuch a ſodayne feare entred in him and his felowſhip, that they tourned againe. Then Gregorye comforted the ſaide company, and ſent them with letters to the biſhoppe Arelatenſis, willinge hym to helpe and aide Auſten in al that in hym needed. The tenoure of whiche letters and other ſente to Ethelberte kinge of Kente, with theyr anſweres, are written with other queſtions in the regiſter of Gregory, and in the bokes of Beda and other.

Auſten thus comforted, ſpedde his iourney, and landed in the eaſt ſide of Kent in the ylle of Thanet, with xl. felowes, whereof ſome were interpretours or ſuche as coulde ſpeake all langages. Nere vnto the place before named wher holy Auſtaine lāded, ſtode at thoſe dayes the manory or palayes of the ſayd kynge Ethelbert, wherof at this day appere ſome of the ruinous walles, and is called of the inhabitauntes of that iſle Richbourgh. It is apparent betwene the yſle and the towne of Sandwyth, vpon a myle and a halfe frō the ſayde towne eaſtwarde from Cāterbury. Then when Auſtain was landed, he ſent the ſayd interpretours vnto Ethelberte, ſaying that they were ſente from Rome for the heale and ſaluacion of the kinge and his realme. The kynge before time had herde of the fayth of chriſt, for he had to wife as ſaith Polichronicon a Frenche woman that was chriſtened, and had receiued her vpon condicion that he ſhould ſuffer her to liue after her law.

Then after a certayne time the kynge ſpoke with Auſtayne, but ÿ was without the houſe, after the maner of his lawe. Agaynſte hys comminge he arreared a baner of the crucifixe and preached to him the worde of God. Then the kyng ſayde: it is fayre that ye promyſe, but for it is to me vncowth & new I may not ſo ſone aſſente to you. But for ye be commen ſo farre for my ſake, ye ſhalbe fayre intreated and haue all thinge that is to you neceſſarie, and we graunte to you leaue to turn of our people whom ye maye. When they had receaued this comfort of the king, they wēt with proceſſion to the citie of Dorobernia or Caunterby, ſinginge Alleluya, where they led their liues as holy fathers did in the beginning of ÿ church, as in faſting, praiyng, watching, and preaching the word of health, and ſang maſſes and chriſtened ſuch as they cōuerted in the eaſtſide of the citie in the olde churche of Saynct Martyne, vnto the time that the kyng was conuerted. At length when the kinge had well conſidered the conuerſacion and holie life of Auſtayne and his felowes, he harde them more gladlie, and laſtly by their good exhortacions and goſtlie loue, he was by thē conuerted and chriſtened, in the yere of oure lorde after moſte concorde of wryters fiue. C.lxxx.and.xvi.and the xxxvi. yere of his reigne, as affyrmeth Polichronicon.

Then he gaue to Auſtayn a place for hys Byſhoppes ſee at Chriſtes Church in Dorobernia, and builded the Abbey of Saint Peter & Paule in the Eaſte ſyde of ÿ ſayde Citie, where after Auſtayne and all the kynges of Kente were buried, and that place is now called Sayncte Auſtayne.

In this while Auſtayne ſayled into Fraunce to the Byſhop Arelatenſis, and was of him ſacred Archebyſhop.

When Gregorie was certified of the good expedicion of Auſtain he ſent then to him mo helpers as Melitus, Iuſtus, and Paulynus with bookes and aunſwers to S. Auſtines queſtions, that was: that all ſuch goodes as fell to the churche, ſhould be deuided in foure partes, that is to meane, ÿ firſt ſhould go to ÿ houſhold of the Byſhoppes houſe, and charge of the ſame: the ſeconde to the clergie: the third to the amendement of Churches, the fourthe to the reliefe of the poore people and other deedes of mercie.

When Auſtayne had baptized a greate parte of the kingdome of Kent, he after made two Archebyſhoppes by the cōmaundement of Gregory, as witneſſeth Policronicon: that one at London, and that other at Yorke, and by ẏ help of Ethelberte, he aſſembled and gathered together the byſhoppes and doctoures of Brytayne that were before diſparkled. The place of aſſemble was called long after Auſteins oke, whiche is expounded to be Auſteyns ſtrengthe, and is in the marche of wikeres and of the Weſtſaxons.

In this place, he charged ẏ ſayd biſhoppes, that they ſhoulde with him preache the worde of God to the Anglis, & alſo that they ſhould amonge them ſelfes amende certayne erroures then vſed in the churche, and ſpecially for kepinge of their Eaſter tide. Wher agaynſt the byſhoppes of Britayne helde opinion, till Auſtayne by his praiers ſhewed there a myracle by a blynde Angle or Saxon.

After the which myracle ſhewed the ſayde Byſhoppes aplied them to the wyll of Auſtayne in that cauſe. But for all thys, there was of them that ſayd that they might not leaue the cuſtome whiche they ſo longe had continued, withoute aſſente of all ſuche as had vſed the ſame. Then he gathered a ſynode, to the whiche came ſeuen Byſhoppes of Brytons, with the wyſeſt men of that famous abbey of Bāgor. But firſt they tooke counſel of an holy man wher they ſhoulde be obediente to Auſtayne or not.

And he ſayd yf ye find him humble or meke, as to chriſtes diſciple belongeth, that then they ſhoulde aſſet to him, which mekenes they ſhoulde perceaue in hym, yf he at theyr comming into the ſinode or counſell, aroſe agayne them.

When the ſayd biſhops entred the ſayd ſinode: Auſtain ſat ſtyl in the chaire and remoued not, wherfore they were wrothe, and diſdayned him, and wolde not obey to his requeſtes. Then he ſayd to thē: ſins ye woll not aſſent to my heſtes generally, aſſent ye to me ſpecially in iii. thynges.

The firſt is, that ye kepe Eaſter day in due fourme and tyme as it is ordayned.

The ſeconde, that ye geue chriſtendome to children.

And the thyrde is, that ye preache vnto the Anglis the worde of God as afore times I haue exhorted you. And all the other deale I ſhall ſuffer you to amende and refourme within your ſelues, but they woulde not thereof. Then Auſtayne ſayde vnto them, and warned them by maner of inſpyracion, that ſince they wolde not receaue peace of theyr brethren, they ſhould of other receiue warre and wretche, the whiche was after put in experience by Ethelfridus kyng of Northumberland.

Longe it were to tell the circumſtaūce of the life of this bleſſed mā wherfore I paſſe it ouer. Laſtlye when he had in one day chriſtened x. thouſand of Saxons or Angles in the weſte riuer that is called Swale beſyde Yorke, and knewe that he ſhould ſhortly die after, he ordayned a ſucceſſour named Laurence while he liued, for the ſtate

of

holy church in Britayne was as yet but rude and boyſtours.

This Auguſtine made Mellitꝰ biſhop of London and Eaſtſaxōs, whiche after moſte writers were then newly entred ŷ land. The riuer of Thamis departed them fro Kent, and after died and was buried in the monaſterie before rehearſed, withoute the walles of Dorobernia or Caunterbury.

¶ The .cxx. Chapter.

when & by whom the foundatiō of Paules Churche was begō.

Ethelbertus thus confirmed in the faythe amonge other coſtlie dedes, began the foundacion of Paules church within the citie of London, and ordayned it for the Byſhoppes ſee of London. For the Archebiſhoppes ſee that before time was at London, was by Auguſtine and Ethelberte at the prayer of the Citizins of Dorobernia tranſlated to the ſayde Citie, as in ŷ .lix. chapiter of this treatiſe it is more at length declared. But of the buildinge of thys Church of ſaynt Paull, diuerſe opiniōs be: For ſome writers teſtifie, that it was builded or begone to build, by Sigebertus kinge of Eaſtangles, but was verely king of Eaſtſaxons or Eaſtſex. This Ethelbert alſo founded the churche of ſaynte Andrew, in the Citie of Dorubres in Kent now called Rocheſter, of the which Juſtus was byſhop ordayned before Sayncte Albayne.

Aboute the time or ſeaſon after the forenamed Ethelfridus (whiche in the Engliſh chronicle is named Elfride) fought with the Britons at the Citie of Legiſceſtre or Cheſter, and ſlew of the Britons a great nomber. At whiche time & ſeaſon a great nomber of the Mōkes of Bangor were alſo there aſſembled, for to praye for the good ſpede of the Britons, whereof when Ethelfridus was warned, he fell alſo vpon them, and ſlew of thē at that time, as witneſſeth diuers authours *.xxi. C. as it is before ſhewed in the hundred and ix. Chapter of this booke.

Pol.cap.x Lib.5. Beda.li.2. xxii. C.

* This forenamed Ethelberte excited a dweller or Citizin of London, to make a Church or Chapel in the worſhip of S. Peter, in the Weſte ende of London then called Thorney, and now the towne of Weſtminſter: the whiche at that time was forgrowen with buſhes and breers exceedinglie, where the ſayde Citizin began, and builded the firſte Church of weſtminſter in the honoure of Saynte Peter, whiche was after by Saynt Edward the confeſſour enlarged or new builded. But of the thyrde Henrie (when he reygned as king of Englande) it was new edified and made as it is nowe, a bewteous Monaſteri, and richely endowed bothe with poſſeſſion and relickes, and rich iewelles.

Poli.lib.5. Chap.11.

The beginning of the foundatiō of weſtminſter churche.

It is ſhewed in the Engliſh cronicle of England, that this Ethelberte ſhould be ſlayne in a fighte betwene him and Ethelfride king of Northumberlande. But Polichronicon ſayth, that he died and wente to heauen, when he hadde reygned ouer the lordeſhip of Kent lvi. yeres, and the .xxi. yere after that he had receiued chriſtēdome.

¶ The kingedome of Eaſtſaxons.

¶ The .xxi. Chapter.

The kingdō of Eaſtſaxons.

During alſo yͤ foreſaid perſecucion of the Britons or any ruler of the were ſpecially named, began the raygne of Eaſtſaxons as witneſſeth Polychronicon, vnder Sebertus their firſt kinge, neare aboute the yere of our lordes incarnacion. vi. hundred and. xiiii. Albeit that Guido de Columna ſaythe that it began nere aboute the time and ſeaſon, when the kingedome of Eaſtanglis began. But I folow Policronicon, for he leyeth holie Beda for his authour in much of this worke This kingdom which is to mean Eſſex, had in the Eaſt ſide the ſea, in the weſt Middelſex, and London, in the Southe the Riuer of Thamys, and in the North, Suffolke, and endured after moſt writers by the terme of two hundred and odde yeres. But by the ſaiyng of Polichronica it ſhoulde not endure ouer two hundred yeres. Neuertheleſſe, it ſhould appere bi the ſtorie of Edwarde the elder ſonne of Aluredus, that it ſhould continue vnder the Danis and otherwyſe, till yͤ. viii. yere of his reigne. And by that reaſon it ſhould endure two hundred. lxxx. and. xiii. yeres. The continuaunce thereof is more doubtfull to be iuſtely determined, for ſo muche a writers be of diuerſe opinions, of the beginning therof. Albeit that Policronicon in the. li. Chapter of his firſt boke, ſayth that it began vnder Sebertus, and vnder. x. kynges, till Egbertus king of Weſteſaxons ſubdued it, and ioyned it to his owne kingdome.

The firſte chriſten king of this lordſhyp was the fore named Sebertus, conuerted by meanes of Mellitus biſhop of London, as ſayth Guido. But after his ſaiyng this Sebertus ſhould be yͤ thirde king of Eſſex. All writers agreen that the kinges of this lordeſhyp were more comenly named vnder kinges, and were more ſubiect to other kinges, and chiefly vnto the kinges of Mercia or Mercherike.

Then to retourne againe vnto the Britons, which by al this ſeaſon, occupied a parte of Cornewalle and the countreyes of Cambria, as Venedocia, whiche now is called Northwales, and Demecea, whiche now is called Southwales, and there helde them in making aſſautes vpon the Saxons as before is touched, ſomewhyle in one coaſte, and ſome while in yͤ other, vnder ſundrie Dukes, as witneſſeth * Gaufride and alſo yͤ Englyſh chronicle. The which ſo continued after moſte accorde of time, and to accorde this hiſtorye with other, by yͤ tearme of. xxiiii. yeres, ouer & aboue three yeres alowed for the reigne of Careticus aforeſaid. So that from the firſte yere of Careticus, to the laſte of theſe. xxiiii. yeares, expyred or flowed. xxvii. yeres. At whiche time the Brytons of one aſſente choſe for theyr hedde or ruler, the Duke of Venedocia, or Southewales, named Cadwanus.

Cap. 4. li. 8. & i. li. 9.

Francia.

¶The.cxxii.Chapter.

CLotharius or Lotharius the ſonne of Chilpericus, and ſeconde of ẏ name, was made kinge of a parte of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde fiue hundred.lxxx, and.viii. and the ſecond yere of Careticus then kyng of the Britons. This Clotharius by the reporte of Mayſter Robert Gagwyne, is noted to be deſcended of Clodoueus or Lowis firſte chriſtned king of Fraũce, ⁊ not expreſſelie to be the ſonne of Chilpericus.

But for ſo muche as in the chronicle of Chilperiche, I haue ſhewed to you ſome what of the deedes of Fredegund, wiſe of Chilperiche, therefore I entende in the declaringe of this ſtory of Clothary, to expreſſe the remnaunt, in as ſhort wiſe as I goodly may.

And fyrſt ye ſhall vnderſtande, that after this Fredegunde had (as before is ſhewed) cauſed her lorde to be ſlayne, ſhe fearyng that at length, her vntrouth ſhould be diſcouered, with all her goodes in ſhort time after yode vnto Paris, ⁊ there in the monaſtery or houſe of our Lady helde her. And for ſhe wolde be in more ſuertie, and alſo that her ſonne the ſayde Clotharius ſhould be the ſtronger in his dominion and kingdome, therfore ſhe ſent meſſaungers vnto Gunthranus kinge of Orleaunce and brother to her lorde Chilperiche, requiring him of fauour and ayde and that he woulde of his goodneſſe be tutour and defendour of her yonge ſonne Clotharius. The which not deniyng the requeſte of Fredegunde, ſped toward Paris in al haſte, where, with the aſſent of other nobles of the Realme, he tooke the gidynge of the yonge kynge. By whoſe aduyſe and commaundement, the ſayd Clotharius was conueyd ⁊ ſhewed thoroughe many of the chief cities of his lãd. But in like wyſe as Gunthranus wyth other buſyed them ſelfe to ſtrength Lotharius in his right: euen ſo were other of the nobles of Fraũce (by the meanes of Brunechieldis, wife ſometyme of Sigebert, yongeſt ſonne of Lothaire the firſt, the whiche Sigeberte receyued of his ſayd wife two ſõnes named Chilperiche ⁊ Childeberte of the which two, Chilperiche ſurliued the other) that did all theyr entente to promote Childebert to the porcion of his father, ẏ Chilpericus father of Lotharius occupied after the deathe of Sigebert forenamed.

Here diſcordeth the frenche cronicle fro mine authour Gagwine For there it is ſayd, ẏ Brunechield with the other of her aſſent, wolde then by theyr meanes haue preferred a baſtard ſonne of the forenamed Sigebert, called Theodoricus, to the kingdome of Fraunce An other authoure ſayeth that this Theodoriche was the ſonne of Childericus afore named, whiche was the ſonne of Sigebert.

But to folow mayſter Gagwin This Childeberte whiche by the former ſaiyng rehearſed in ẏ. C. ⁊ xiiii. chapiter of this treatiſe, was deliuered from the handes of Chilperich his vncle, by meanes of the Erle of Poytow named Gundebald, this with a ſmall companie came vnto Paris, where, of the citizens he was kepte out. For the which ſoone after he ſent a noble man of his, named Gillon with other, as ambaſſadours vnto Gunthranus. And where amonge other thinges of him required, thei aſked of him Fredegund to ſuffer death, for that ſhe had by her ſubtiltie cauſed to be murthered both Sigeberte father to theyr kyng, & alſo Chilpericus her owne husbãd it was of him vtterlie denied.

Wherefore this ſayd Gillon ſayde vnto Gunthranus, ſyr king, know thou for certayne, ſince thou haſte refuſed this peace, to thee offered of thy neuew, that the death of thy brother ſhal cleaue to thy hed. With theſe wordes, the kynge being greatly moued, commaunded the ambaſſadoures to be put oute of his courte, and when they were in the ſtreete, all filthe and ordoure to be caſte vpon them as enemies.

And variaunce thus kindling betweene theſe two kinges. Gunthranus ſoone after ſente Fredegunde into Neuſtria or Normandy, and cauſed her there to be kept not farre from the Citie of Roan: whither to her came many noble men of Fraunce in comfortinge her, and alſo mouinge her for the trouble ſhe was in, promiſinge to her ayde to the vttermoſt of their power. But when that Fredegũde apperceiued the greate fauour ẏ Brunechielde ſtode in of the nobles of Orleaunce or Fraunce, ſhe enuienge her welthe and honoure called to her an homicide and a felon called Holderiche, to whome the ſayde Fredegunde promyſed great treaſure, yf he coulde by venime or other wiſe bringe to death the ſaid Brunechieldis. Bi meane of whiche promiſe, he graunted to bringe her entent aboute: & ſhortlie after drewe vnto the courte of the ſayde Brunechieldis. Where he fell in ſuch familiarite with diuerſe of her courte, that he came manie ſeaſons to the preſence of the Queene. But by what hap I cannot ſaye, laſtely he was taken in ſuſpection, and ſo tormẽted and pinid, that he confeſſed the cauſe of his thither coming, & by whom he was ſent, with al the other circumſtaunce of the matter. After whiche confeſſion ſo made he was ſo beaten and araied in moſte vile maner, and ſo ſent agayne to Fredegunde.

And when he was cõmen to her preſence, and ſhewed what tourment he had ſuffred for he cauſe: ſhe incontinẽt in fulfilling of her malicious purpoſe, commaunded that his handes and feete ſhoulde be ſtriken of and ſo lette go, to the ende that it ſhuld be thought that ſhe had not deſired him to that buſineſſe. Aboute this time and ſeaſon aroſe a yonge man in a corner of Fraunce, the whiche by his ſubtile witte named him ſelf to be the ſonne of the firſte Lotharius, and brother vnto Gunthranus. The which by ſiniſtre meanes & craft, gat the fauour of ẏ lordes of Guiã and by theyr aſſiſtence helde and occupied a great parte therof.

And after ſomdele of his counſayles to Gunthranus by hys eſpies diſcloſed, this ſayde yonge man beyng named Gundoaldus, ſent vnto Gunthranꝰ an Ambaſſade, and required him to be reſtored to a porcion of hys fathers gooddes. Adding therto that if he denied, the ſayd Gũdoaldus wolde with a ſtronge armie repayre out of Guian, and get his right with ſtrength, & that to bringe aboute he ſhould alſo haue great ayde of Childebert his neuew aboue named. When king Gūthranus had at leyſer hearde the meſſage: he in diſdayninge the ſame, commaunded them to be ſet vpon horſe backes, theyr faces toward the tayle, and ſo with beating and villanie to be driuen thorough the towne. It was not longe after that a daie was apoynted between Gūthranus and Childebert, at which daie both princes met with great companies and lordes. And when they were ſette in their counſayle, Gunthranus commaunded ỹ foreſayde meſſangers of Gundoaldus to be brought to fore them, and there againe to recite theyr foreſaid meſſage. Whiche doone, he ſhewed furthermore that the ſaid Gundoalde had before time dyſpoyled ỹ doughter of Chilperiche named Rygonde of al ſuch riches, as ſhe with her conueyed, when ſhe went towarde Spayne to be maried: of the which, ſome lordes of Childebert were of counſayle. Whiche vnto the ſayd two Princes was thought trew, for ſo much as the ſaide Lordes then accuſed, were abſent from that great coūſayle.

Euil vſing of meſſengers.

¶ The.xxiii. Chapter.

After many and greate actes concluded by this coūſayle between theſe two foreſaide Princes: Gunthranus, in open audiēce admitted his neuew Childebert for his heire, for ſo much as he hadde none heire of his body, cōmitting the rule therof to him before all ỹ were there. And after tooke hym aparte and ſhewed to him which of his nobles he ſhold take to coūſayle, and whiche he ſhould refuſe. And ſpecialli he warned him to be well ware of his mother Brunechieldis, for that he knew in her ſo great vntrouth and ſubtiltie, and alſo of Gillon the biſhop, the whiche he alſo ſayde he was not to be truſted. When he had thus aduertiſed his neuew, they both retourned vnto the place of counſayle, where by them and theyr counſailes, certayne thinges concerninge the common weale were ſet in an order. And that doone, the ſayde counſayle was finiſhed, and purueyance for their dinner prouided the Princes, with their Baronye went vnto dinner. In the time of whiche dinner the ſayd Gunthranus, ſayd: vnto the great nomber of lordes being preſent: ye my lordes and nobles of Fraunce, the which to me haue euermore been trew and dere, here is mine neuew the whiche as mine heire I haue allowed and ordeyned, whome I praie you to honoure, and wyth trew fayth be vnto him obedient, as to your kinge. For of the great worthineſſe ỹ of him is to come, I am in greate hope, whiche is allied with myght & vertue. And to ỹ augmentaciō of theſe wordes, ſhortli after reſtored to him al ſuch cities, as Chilpericus by his life had witholdē frō him. And ſone after either from other in moſte hūble and louing maner departed.

Of this peace betweene theſe two Princes thus ſtabliſhed, the fame came wide. Wherefore certayne lordes being vpon the parti of Gundoaldus refuſed him, and wente vnto the partie of Gunthranus.

Soone after with his people Gundoaldus reſorted vnto a citie ouer the riuer of Geround named Conuena, where, for the ſtrength therof he thought to abide his fortune. Wherof when Gunthranus was warned, he in goodly ſpeede made thitherward, and layd his people neare vnto the ſayd Citie. But when he had eſpied yͤ ſtrẽgth therof, & knew well it was daungerouſe for to obteine, he then vſed gile, where ſtrength might not preuayle & deuiſed or forged certayne letters in yͤ name of Brunechieldis, wherin was fained, that the ſayd Brunechieldis ſhould deſire Gundoaldus in al haſtie wiſe to reſorte vnto the Citie of Burdeaux.

Gunthranus polecy

Of which fraude Gundoaldus nothing ſuſpecting, commaunded his treaſure with other his ſtuffe vnder ſafe gidinge thitherwarde to be conueied. Wherof the knightes of Gunthranus hauing knowledge, with a ſtronge companie made ouer the foreſayde water of Gerounde, and layde ſuch watche for them, that they encoũtred the ſayd people that caried yͤ ſaide treaſure & ſtuff, and perforce toke it from the knights of Gundoaldus, and preſented it vnto Gunthranus.

Lyke as before ye haue heard that certayne lordes of the Hoſte of Gundoalde fled vnto the hoſte of Gunthranus, ſo in this paſſe time foure Captaynes or rulers of the Hoſte of Gunthranus fled vnto Gundoalde, the which mine authour nameth Desideri⁹, Mõmolus, Bladaſcus, and Sagittarius. Which .iiii. after theyr comming to Gundoalde ſtode in ſuch fauoure, that he was by their cõſayle muchewhat aduiſed and gided. It was not longe after that the knightes of Gunthranus had thus wonne the foreſayd treaſure and ſtuffe that Gundoalde was ſo ſore purſued that he was fayne to cloſe him within a ſtronge Citie, the whiche Lendegilſus mayſter of the Hoſte of Gunthranus aſſayled by diuerſe feates of warre to winne. But when he ſawe his labour loſt, then he cauteouſly fãd the meane to ſpeake ſecretly with one of the foreſayde foure captaines named Mommolus, and with him treated of the betraying of the Citie. The which after manie and longe exhortacions, with the aſſuraunce of theyr liues and other, graunted vnto yͤ ſayd treaſon: whereof the maner ſhould be thus. This ſayd Mommol⁹ with the forenamed Bladaſcus, and other of that affinite, ſhould ſette a fire an olde temple within the Citie. And when the people of the citie wer buſied to quenche the fire, the ſaid Mommolus with his adherentes to open the gates, and ſo to let in Lindegilſus & his knightes. But yet this treaſon ſette a part, Mommolus goeth to Gundoalde, and ſheweth to him the greate daunger that he ſtandeth in of his enemies.

A trayterous deuiſe

Wherfore he counſayled him yͤ he, with the other rulers aboute him to go vnto the tentes of Gunthranus and yelde them all vnto his grace and mercy. And alſo to the entent yͤ he ſhould there ſhew and proue, that he was the indubitate ſonne of yͤ firſte Clothaire, the whiche to the king and all his hoſte was verie doubtful, and the more becauſe he ſo fled from them.

Haſtie credēce is not good.

When Gūdoaldus had at leyſure heard the counſayle of Mommole geuing to him credence, for ſo muche as by his counſayle before tymes he had furthered his cauſes, and alſo by comfort that he reported to haue by meanes of Lyndegilſus before named, he ſetting aparte all feare, with certayne nōber in peaſiable wiſe iſſued the citie. And when he had a littel ſpace gone, two Earles of Gunthranus hoſte named Bole and Boſon receiued him, and deliuered him to the power of Lindegilſus, & Mōmole retourned with other of his confederey, vnto the Citie, & cloſed faſte the gates between the Citie and the Pauilions of Gunthranus. Where was a littel copped hill to the height wherof whē Gundoalde was comen, the ſaide Boſon him ſodeinly threw downe

The death of Gundoalde.

And as he was rollinge downe yͤ hill, with a great ſtone he ſtrake him on the head, by violēce wherof he was forthwith ſlayn or dead And Mommole, the which as before is touched was reentred the Citie, firſte diſpoyled yͤ goodes of the ſayd Gundoalde, and after fel vpon the citezins, and robbed and ſpoyled them in like maner, not ſparinge preaſtes nor other: & after brente churches, temples, and houſes without pitie: which done he ſped him vnto yͤ tentes of Lindegilſus. But he not being ſure of the ſauegarde of the ſayde Mommole and his companye from the murmoure of his knightes, or more verely for he wolde not be a knowen of the prouided death of them, commaunded the ſayd Mōmole with his adherentes to tarie without, and not to come in yͤ preaſe of his knightes, till he had ſomedeale pacified them. Whiche was doone, but not all withoute ſtrife, for ſome there was that began to quarel with him and hys. But when Lindegilſe ſawe that this Mommole and his company were ſomedeale withdrawē from his Pauilyn, he made a token to his knightes, wherby they knowinge his minde, fell vpon him and ſlew him.

The iuſt & worthy rewarde of treytours.

Sagittarius one of the foreſayd. iiii. of that company, the which mine authour reporteth to be a Biſhop, fled to haue ſauegarded him ſelfe, but in his flight he was ſlayne. And when theſe enemies were thus brought oute of life, Gunthranus commaunded yͤ goodes of the ſaid Mōmole to be brought vnto his treaſory, which were of great value, & after were egalli deuided betweene him and Childebert his neuew. It was not longe after, but certayne tokens and figures appered in the firmament, the which by aſtronomers were iudged the fine of ſome Prince, which after a yere ſhewed to be true. For the ſayd Gunthranus died vpon a yere folowinge yͤ ſayde figures or ſygnes, when he had ben king of Orleaunce by the terme of ſeauen and. xxx. yeres, & was buried with greate pompe in the Citie of Cabylon, within the prouince of Burgoyne, in the Monaſterie of Sayncte Marke, whiche he before had builded, and lefte for hys heyre of that kyngedome his neuew the foreſayde Childeberte.

The death of Gunthranus.

¶ The.cxxiiii.Chapter.

childebert.

Childebertus then hauing the rule ⁊ poſſeſſiō of his owne enheritaũce that is to ſay of Auſtracie, and alſo of Orleaunce, caſting in his minde how he might be reuenged of Fredegund, the which as before is ſhewed in the. C. and xiiii. chapter of this libel, ſlew his father Sigebert: called vnto him his olde freende and counſellour Gundebald Erle of Poytow, and then commaunded that he ſhould with his power inuade the countrey of Soyſons, the which was in the rule of Clotharius. Wherof Fredegunde beinge warned, aſſembled to her the lordes of the countrey, ⁊ exhorted them to withſtand the malice of their enemies ſhewing to them furthermore yͤ that thing they ſhould of iuſtice ⁊ equite do, conſidering that their kinge Clotharius was yet tender of age, ⁊ had as yet no knightlye proweſſe to defende him ſelfe and his lande. And after a longe exhortacion to them made, ſhe with her ſonne prepared to go agaynſt the ſayd enemies. And when al thing to the warre was prepared ⁊ readie, ſhe with a greate army made towarde the hoſte of Gundebalde And whē ſhe knew ſhe was neare vnto the hoſte, ſhe commaunded her captaynes to reſte and fortify her people vpon all partes for breking in of her enemies. And agaynſt night ſhe called to her Laũdrie her old paramour with other willinge them that in the dead of the night they wolde manfully ſet vpon the other partie, for ſo much as ſhe ſayde to them that ſhe was certainly enfourmed bi her eſpies that her ſayde enemies were ſore weried, by reaſon of that dayes laboure. After whoſe counſayle yͤ ſayd Laundrie w other wrought, and ſuppriſed their enemies ſo vnwarely, that of thē ſhe ſlew a part and chaſed the remnaũt. And that done ſped them vnto Champaine neare vnto Reynes, and ſpoyled ⁊ brent a parte of that countrey. This feat of warre thus compaſſed by the ſubtile witte of Fredegunde was neare to a place called Truet.

How Fredegunde perſwaded her people to reſiſte childebert.

How Fredegūde her ſelf with a greate armie made towarde Gūdebald.

The crafti wit ⁊ coũſaile of fredegunde, geuen to Laundrie her paramoure for the ſodayn inuadinge of the hoſte of her enemies.

Then Childebert entended after certenty had of the ouerthrow of Gundebalde, for to haue made new warre vpō Fredegunde. But he was let by meane of the Longoberdis, which thā made warre vpon him. Of the which warre he had ſomedeale his intente, ⁊ more ſhould yf Mauricius Emperoure of Conſtantine the noble had kept al promiſe with him before made. After the whiche warre in partie ended, he retourned into his owne countrey, and ſhortly after he and alſo his wife died, not withoute ſuſpection of venim: leauing after him two ſonnes named Theodoberte and Theodoriche, geuinge to the eldeſt the lordſhip of Auſtracie, and to the yonger the prouince of Burgoyne.

The death of Childebert ⁊ hys wyfe.

Aboute this time the Hunes brake out of their place, and warred vpon certayne partes of myddel Fraunce, and did therin great harme. But laſtlye by meanes of greate giftes by them receaued, they left the countrei and drewe towarde Soyſons. Againſt whom Fredegunde gathering a greate power, ſente Clotharyus hym ſonne and kinge, to the intente

a new hoſ gathered by Fredegunde to reſiſt the Hunes.

to defende the ſayde Hunes, that they ſhould not inuade theyr coũtreys. And ſhortely after bothe hoſtes met in the feelde, where after longe and ſharpe fight, the Frenche men were victours, and chaſed the Hunes in ſuche wiſe, yͭ the more parte of them were ſlain and taken, for the whiche victorie Fredegunde made exceading ioye to her ſonne Clothayre, and receaued him with great pleaſure & exceading giftes. After the which paſſed not longe while, but that ſhe fel ſicke and died, and than buried by her houſband Chilperich.

Triũphing of Fredegund for the victory.

The death of Fredegunde.

When the forenamed brethren hadde knowledge of the death of Fredegunde they by the exhortacion and ſtiring of Brunechieldis theyr graundmother, callinge to minde the wronges, to theyr aunceſters doone by Fredegunde, and somedeale by Lothaire: aſſembled a great power, and met with Lothayre and his power at the riuer of Arrune or Aruene. In the whiche place was ſo ſore fight and ſo many ſlaine, that the courſe of the riuer was let by the multitude of the caraiens or dead bodies that were therin caſte. But the more parte fell of the knightes of Lothayre, ſo that he was forced to forſake the feelde, & thence to flee, to the Citie of Meleon, and from thence to Paris, whome the ſayd brethrẽ folowed, & compelled him to make peace after their pleſure.

A greate ſlaughter.

A peace concluded.

The effecte of which peace was this. Theodoberte, the elder brother, of theſe two, ſhould enioy all the lande lying betwene the riuer of Seyn and Leir, vnto the Britiſhe Occean, or yͤ ſea of litle Britayne. And Theodoriche the yonger brother, to haue all the lande from the ſayd Riuer of Seyn vnto the Riuer of Iſayr to the brink of the ſea. And to Clothair ſhould remain .xii. prouinces, which the ſayde two Riuers of Iſayr and Seyne flowen by or throughe.

Whiche peace thus confirmed and graunted, Theodoberte, to whome Neuſtria or Normandye belonged, ſent thither a cheuetain of his courte called Berthalde, to defende the ſayde countrey. But Clothayre of this former accorde being nothing contented, ſent hys ſonne Meroneus vnder the guyding of Laundry prefect or ruler of his paleys, into Neuſtria to warre in that countrey.

The peace broken by Clothayr.

And for ſo muche as Berthald ſaw well he lacked power to withſtand ſo great an hoſt, he therfore tooke the Citie of Orleaunce, tyll he had gathered more companye. Then Laundrie ſeaſed that parte of the countrey, and came to the walles of the Citi, and by diuerſe wordes of reproche, excited yͤ ſayd Berthalde, to geue battaile to him in the plaine feelde. The which he refuſed becauſe of the inequialite of nõber of knightes. But he offered to iſſue out of the Citie: and to fight with Laundrie hand to hãd, with that he might be aſſured agayne his people, the which offer Laundrie refuſed.

A manly offer.

It was not long after or bothe kinges with great hoſtes drew in to that countrey: & at the riuer of Stãpis met, where betwene thẽ was foughtẽ a ſtronge battayle.

But by the policie of Theodobert Lothary was put to a diſuãtage. For while the ſayde Lotharie was cõueying his people ouer the Ryuer at a narrow paſſage, Theodobert began ſo fierſlie and kepte the paſſage ſo ſtreyght, that the people of Clotharie came not two partes of them to the feelde. Neuertheleſſe the fight continued by a longe ſeaſon: in whiche time Berthalde encountred manie tymes Laundrie, and prouoked him to battayle, but euer that other refuſed. Laſtly he ſeyng ⁊ knowinge that he ſhould winne greate worſhip ⁊ alſo profite, if he might ſlea, or take this Laundrie, he therfore put him ſelfe in the more dãger of his enemies, and finallie of them was ſlayne. But Theodobert in purſuynge Lotharie and in comfortinge of his knightes, bare him ſo wel, that he cauſed his enemies to leeſe grounde and at lẽgth put them to flight, the whiche he folowed to the gates of Paris, to the greate damage of the people of Lotharie. In this chaſe was taken Meroneus the ſonne of Clotharie with manie other, but Laundrie was gotten within the Citie. And when Theodobert had thus gotten the victorie of his enemies, he liſte no lenger to tarie aboute them at that ſeaſon, but ſhortlie after returned to his countrey.

In the courte of Theodoryche brother of this Theodobert, was at this day dwellinge an Italian named Prothadius, the whiche (as myne authoure ſayeth) was parramoure vnto Brunechield beforeſaide, whome Brunechield by her meanes had exalted frõ poore eſtate vnto highe authorite, the whiche was of a ſubtill and farre caſtinge witte, and therwith exceedinge couetous, and in greate fauoure of the kinge, but to all hys lordes odious and hatefull: for the whiche vnleful meanes by him to the nobles and commons of the lande vſed, and for the yll condicions and bad counſell that Brunechield and this Prothadius vſed within the courte of Theodobert, he banyſhed them bothe as well of his land as of his courte, wherfore euer after they maligned agaynſt Theodoberte. And for the execution of their malicious purpoſe, they tolde vnto Theodorich, that his enemie and not brother Theodobert had withdrawen frõ him the cheife of his fathers treaſure, alledginge alſo, that he was not the ſonne of Childeberte hys father, but gotten of a gardener: and willed him therefore to ſende vnto him, and to aſke reſtitution of the ſayd goodes. By the which wicked counſell Theodorich was ſo led, yͭ he ſent vnto his brother, and in ſuche wiſe ſo vexed and ſtyred him, that deadly malice was kindled betwene thẽ. In ſo much that either of them aſſẽbled great hoſtes, and laſtly met neare vnto a towne named Cariſſe, where yͤ ſayd hooſtes beinge redie to haue roune togithers, yͤ lordes of Theodoberte ſo demeaned them vnto him, that by theyr wyſe counſayle he agreed to ſende to his brother and to haue communicacion of peace. And when the ſayde embaſſed was comen to the Pauylion of Theodoriche, and there had ſhewed yͤ vnkindenes of this warre, wyth the ieopardie that might enſue of the ſame, anone the foreſayde Prothadius tooke vpon him the aunſwere, and ſayd: it is not requyſyte ſo lyghtlye to graunt peace, but neceſſarie it is to attempt the wyll of our enemie by battaile, whether he wil be agreable to condeſcende to our deſiers.

The whiche woordes thus expreſſed of him, anone the more partie of the Lordes diſdayned it, and conſpired within theym ſelfe howe they myghte putte hym to deathe. And furthewith aroſe amonge theim ſuche a murmour, that the kynge aperceyued well that they entended ſome harme to Prothadius. For the whiche he called vnto him a knighte named Uſelline, chargynge him to go vnto the lordes, commaundinge thẽ that they in no wiſe ſhould do anye harme to Prothadius. The which Uſelline being of the mind of the other ſaide: that the kynge woulde that they ſhould ſlee Prothayde. After whiche meſſage done, they ranne in all haſte and ſlewe him as he ſatte playinge at dice or tables wyth one Peter a Phiſicion, and that done al wholy ranne vnto the kinges tente, beſechinge hym to take no diſpleaſure of the death of ſo euyll a man that as well was knowen, was enemie to all frendſhip and peaſe. But for Theodoriche apperceyued well, that he coulde not reuenge his deathe withoute puniſhement of a multitude, he therfore tooke pacience, and ſuffered the offence to paſſe vnpuniſhed. After whyche manne thus murdered, bothe the Prynces wythout notable acte departed eyther into his countrey.

A wicked & falſe meſſenger.

The death of prothaid

The cauſe why Theodorich puniſhed not the murder

The.cxxv. Chapter.

TO thys daye Theodoryche hadde taken no wife, albeit of his concubine he receyued two ſonnes. He therfore by aduertiſement of frendes, ſette his minde to marie ſome noble woman: and ſoone after ſent certaine embaſſadours vnto Berthricus then king of Spayne, willinge to graunte vnto him Memberge his doughter in mariage. The whiche vpon certaine condicions was perfourmed, and with greate riches to him ſhortlye after ſent and maried, and by certaine time wel entreated and cheriſhed. But that ſeaſon ronne and ſpente, Brunechield ſo turned the kynges mind from the Queene, that laſtlye, he with ſuche treaſure and iewelles as he of her receaued, ſente her home againe. The whiche iniurie Berthricus her father toke at hearte greuouſlye, and ſhortlye after ſente meſſengers vnto Clothary, kinge of Soyſons, requiringe him of ayde to warre vpon Theodoriche whiche hadde done vnto him greate diſpleaſure, and the rather for the warre that the ſaide Theodoriche hadde with his brother lately made againſt him: the which wt both their ſtrẽgthes they mighte well reuenge. To whome Clotharius graunted. And to haue his partie the ſtronger, he ſente vnto his neuew Theodoberte and brother to Theodoriche, to ſtyrre him againſte hys ſaide brother.

Howe and wherefore that Theodorich and Berthricus kinge of Spayne made war.

Whereof when Berthricus had receyued knowledge of hys ſayde meſſengers he than ſent vnto Agon kinge of Longobardes, or moore verelye Adoaldus the fyfte kinge king after Alboynus, requiringe hym in like maner. And he deſirous of wretch, made faſt and ſure promiſe to giue ayde to the vttermoſt of his power.

When Theodorich was warned of the conſpiracye of theſe foure kynges, ỷ they entended to warre ioyntlye vpon him, he was therwith greatly amoued, and prouided greatly for his defence in his beſt maner. Then Theodoberte truſtinge in the appoyntment before made, aſſembled a great hoſt, and made ſpeede firſte toward the place betwene theim appoynted, whiche was nere to the caſtell of Salas. But or anye preparation was made toward the battaile, a meane was founde that ỷ forenamed two brethren ſhuld meete either with other, accompanied wͭ x.M. knightes.

The hooſt of Theodobert which was enemy & brother to Theodoriche.

How Theodoberte obtained his purpoſe.

But Theodobertus entending to deceyue his ſaide brother, and to force him to graunt to his pleaſure, broughte with him farre aboue the nomber. Wherfore Theodoricus beinge ouerſette wyth ſtrengthe, graunted all his brothers wyl, whiche was, that ouer certaine thinges and appoyntmētes concluded betwene Berthricus and him, Theodobert ſhoulde holde to his heires two lordſhips called Champayne and Turon, whiche concluſion finiſhed, either takinge leaue of other, departed vnto their coūtreys, but not without great vnreſtfulnes of the ſaid Theodoriche, bearynge in minde the wrongfull doynge of his brother.

Theodorich ſought to be reuēged on his brother Theodoberte.

Wherefore, he ſhortelye after made meane to his neuewe Clothayre, deſiring him that he wold not aſiſt his brother againſt him, but to ſuffer his quarell to bee demed by dinte of ſworde, betwene them two. This requeſt, Lothair by the aduiſe of Colūbaine monke of Irelande, then beinge in thoſe coaſtes, graunted.

And the Frenche Chronycle ſaith, that he was warned of this foreſayde monke and abbot, that he ſhoulde not medle betwene the ſayde two brethren, for ſo muche as it was prouided of GOD, that he ſhoulde bee heyre vnto theym bothe.

When Theodoriche had receyued this anſwere, he gathered his ſtrengthe, & ſpedde him vpon his iourney to the citie of Langreſſe, and from thence to Verdoune.

Theodorich inuadeth hys brother Theodoberte.

Theodobert hauing knowledge of his malicious brothers purpoſe gathered in Auſtria a greate hooſte, and ſo ſpedde hym tyll he came to the citie of Coull, where bothe hooſtes ſhortly after mette and in the feeldes or playnes nere to the citie, foughte a ſtrong battayle. In the whiche was ſlayne great people vppon bothe ſydes, but the more parte vpon the ſyde of Theodoberte, wherefore he finallye was compelled to forſake the feeld, and fledde vnto Colleyn, where he gathered a newe power, foughte agayne wyth hys brother. In whiche fighte he hadde like fortune, and was agayn chaſed to hys great ſhame and loſſe: whome Theodoricus as his mortall enemye folowed, fyringe and waſting the countreis as he went in ſo muche that the inhabitauntes of the countreys fell before hym, beſechinge his grace, that for the offence of one man he wold

Theodoberte meeteth Theodoriche with a great hoſt.

Theodoberte ſetteth agayn vpon Theodoryche, and to hys ſhame was chaſed: & had great loſſe.

not deſtroye ſo many innocentes, aſſuringe him furthermoore that they would become his liegemen, and holde their lande of hym for euer. At whiche requeſte, he ſayde gladly he woulde to them graunt theyr petition, yf that they wolde preſente vnto hym the head of his brother.

Vpõ what condicion Theodoriche pardoned the inhabitaũtes of his brothers countrey.

After the whiche anſwere by them of Theodorich receiued, thei amonge theim ſelues appoynted out a certaine of perſonnes moſte apte to their purpoſe, and willed them to go vnto Theodoberte to execute their entent.

How theodoberte was betrayed.

The whiche ſpeade their iourney tyll they came to the preſence of Theodoberte, and ſhewed vnto him that if he woulde be agreable to departe with ſuche ſtuffe and iewelles as he had of his fathers, ſo that Theodorich myghte bee partner thereof, he ſhoulde haue perfite amitie and reſt with him. To which wordes he geuing confidence and truſte, called with him the ſaid perſons, and brought them into the houſes, where the ſayde ſtuffe and Iewelles laye. And whyle he was buſyed to deuide oute and appoynte the porcion of his, one of the ſaide perſons ſlewe him ſodeinlye, and after of one agrement ſtrake of his heade, and in ſecrete wiſe cauſed it to bee conueyed vnto his brother. When Theodoriche had receyued ẏ head of his brother, he ſped him to Coleyne where thys treaſon was wrought, and receyued the citie into his poſſeſſion, with al the kingdome of Auſtracie to his brother belonginge. And when he hadde there gathered his treaſures after his minde, with two ſonnes & a exceedyinge fayre doughter of Theodoberte, he ſped him vnto Mees the chiefe citie of Auſtracie, where wt him met his graundmother Brunechield. *The whiche perceauringe in all malice and miſchiefe, cauſed the ſaide two ſonnes to bee ſhortly ſlaine.

The death of Theodoberte.

The malicious and deueliſhe minde of Brunechield.

Theodoriche then reſtored or deliuered vnto Clothaire, al ſuche lands as to him he had before promiſed.

Theodoriche thus endinge his warre, the whiche by a longe ſeaſon ſpent his time in keping of cõcubines, was nowe rauiſhed with the beautie of his brothers doughter, the whiche he had brought from Collaine. But that doinge Brunechielde withſtoode with all her power, becauſe the maide was ſo nere of his kinne. For the whiche he beinge with her ſore diſcontente, ſaide: O thou moſte wicked & falſe woman, diddeſt thou not make me to beleue, ẏ Theodobert was not the ſonne of my father, but that he was the ſonne of a gardener? For what cauſe haſte thou cauſed me to perſecute my brother, and laſtlye to ſlee him? After whiche wordes he woulde haue ſlaine her, if he of his lordes had not been letted. Which deede not forgotten of this vngodlye woman, euer after imagined howe ſhe mighte bringe Theodorich out of life. And laſtly ſhe hired ſuche as were aboute hym to conſent to her iniquitie, ſo that vpon a ſeaſon when he came oute of hys ſtewe or bayne, he aſked drynke, by the force whereof he was poyſoned, and died ſoone after, when he had raigned .xviii. yeres. Howe be it Antonius in the .vi. chapiter

Brunechield wͭſtode Theodoriche frõ maryinge his brothers daughter.

The aunſwere of Theodorich to Brunechilde.

The canckered and naughtie minde of Brunechielde.

The death of Theodoriche.

and twelue title of the ſecond part of his woorke, ſaieth: that he was brent with fyre by the deuine power.

¶ The.cxxvi. Chapter.

Nowe that I haue ſhewed vnto you the fyne and ende, of theſe two brethren, by reaſon of whoſe deathe the whole principate of Fraunce, fell vnto the aboue named Clothayre: I ſhall nowe expreſſe vnto you the deedes by him done, after he hadde al the rule onely.

Clothayr, or Lothair the thirde brother poſſeſſed the whole Realme of Fraunce.

So it was that the forenamed Brunechielde malygned euer againſt Lothayre. And to the furtheraunce of her malice, ſhe behaued her in ſuche wiſe with ſome of the rulers and Lordes of Auſtracie, that ſhe cauſed them to admit one named Sigeberte, to bee the rightfull inheritour of that land. But for that ſome of theym hadde good experience of the euill diſpoſition this woman, they therefore ſente two noble men of that lande named Pepin and Arnolde, vnto Clothayre, willinge him to ſende haſtely into that Prouince. After the whiche meſſage by theſe two lordes reported, Clotharius ſhortlye after ſpedde him into Auſtracie, and at a caſtell called Cathomat he lodged him with his people. Wherof hearing Brunechield ſent vnto hym and gaue vnto him monicion, that he ſhoulde voyde the lande, for ſo muche as Sigeberte the eldeſt ſonne of Theodoriche was thereof ryghtfull enheritoure.

the naughtie minde of Brunechielde.

Ye haue heard before that Theodorich vſed lemans, of the which he receiued iiii. ſonnes, that is to ſaye, Sigeberte, Corbe, Childeberte, and Merone. Wherfore the foreſaide Brunechield entendinge to diſturbe Lothayre and all the lande, fortified the ſaid Sigebert to claime the lande of Auſtracie. And when Clothayre had receyued knowledge of this commaundement from Brunechield or Bruneheuſte, he ſente to her anſwere, that he would aſſemble the lordes of Auſtracie, and be demed by them whether thys lande belonged to him or to Sigeberte. And ſhe fearynge that ſentence, excited the people of the prouince of Germanye to ſtrengthe her partie, with al the people that ſhe might make of the ſaide countrey of Auſtracy. And that to bring aboute, ſhe ſent one Garnery, another Albon. Of this Garnery ſhe had ſuſpection, that he ſhoulde fauoure the party of Lothayr, wherefore to Albone his felowe ſhe ſent letters, that he ſhoulde putte the ſayd Garnerye awaye. When Albon had ouerred the letter, he brake it in peces and threw it from him. And afterward a frend of Garneris gathered the peeces, and ſo ioyned theym yͤ he conceyued the ſentence of the letter, and furthwith ſhewed it vnto Garnery. When Gernery perceyued the malicious entent of Brunechield, he kept it ſecreate to him ſelfe: and albeit, that he by his ſecreate meanes cauſed the Germaines that they ſhoulde take no party with Brunechielde.

And that done, he retourned into Burgoyne, where with her and her companye he ſolliſited ſo the Lordes of Burgoyne, that ſome of them abhorred the crudelitie of that woman. And when

Garnery hadde in this wiſe compaſſed his matters, he ſente vnto Lothayre, and ſhewed him, yf he might haue his grace and ſafecõduite: he woulde come to him and ſhewe to him thinges concerning his auauntage. All the whiche was graunted.

Then Clothayre by counſayle of the ſaide Garnarye, aſſembled his power, and ſhortlye ſente a ſtrength of them into Champain and Cathaloyne, where it was ſhewed that Sygeberte had gathered greate ſtrengthes. Then forſoke the partye of Sigeberte manye nobles of Auſtracie, amõg the whyche myne Authoure nameth Rucco, Sygoldus, and Enulanus, and yelded theim to the mercie of Clothayre. Then ſhortlye after the hooſtes of Clothayre and Sigebert mette, wher Garnery by tokens betwene him and diuerſe of the Captaines of Sygeberte before aſſigned, the ſayde Captaynes with their people withdrewe theym, ſo that Sygeberte with his two brethren, Corbo & Meroneus, gaue back while they came to the ryuer of Sygoune: where after lytle reſiſtaunce, the foreſaide two brethren were taken. But the Frenche cronicle ſayeth that all the foure brethren were there taken. Albeit maiſter Gagwin ſayeth: that Sygeberte by the ſtrengthe of his horſe eſcaped, ſo that he was not after that day ſene.

The takig of Brunechield.

And ſoone after this vyctorye, Brunechielde, whiche alſo of the Frenche cronicle is named Bruneheuſte, was broughte as priſoner vnto the preſẽce of Lothair, with a ſiſter of Theodorich, which Garnery or Gerney, hadde taken in the tentes of their enemies. Then Lotharius commaunded Corbon to bee beheaded, and preſerued Meroneus, for ſo much as he was to him Godfather, and euer after cheryſſhed hym as hys kinſman.

Lotharius reioyſynge of his victorye.

Lotharius thus hauynge the victorye of hys enemyes, made great ioye. And after he had ſomdeale ſet that countrey and other in quiet, he then toke aduiſe of his lordes, howe he ſhoulde be demeaned with Brunechield, that hadde been the authourice of ſo manyfolde miſchiefes and criminous deedes. The which of one conſent and minde condeſcended and agreed, that ſhe ſhoulde bee putte to moſt painefull and vile death. And finally, after ſore beatinges, ſhe was ſette vpon a horſe, and ſo conueyed throughe the hoſte, that all men might beholde and ſee her and after broughte agayne to the kinges preſence. Where then the kinge rehearſed vnto her a longe proceſſe of al her murders, cõſpiracies, & wicked deedes, afferminge that ſhe had ben yͤ occaſion & cauſe of the death of ten princes, beſide other meane perſons. And when he had ſayde his pleaſure, he then commaunded her to bee bound to a wilde horſe tayle, by the heare of her head, & ſo to bee drawen while ſhe were dead.

Brunechieldes puniſhemẽt, by iudgement of Lothair

And when this iudgement was executed, ſhe by the licence of the king was buried in an houſe of religion, within the citie of Hoſdon or Oſdon that ſhe before time had builded of S. Martyne, beſide other many that ſhe in her life builded in diuers other places, endowinge and twelue title of the ſecond part of his woorke, ſaieth: that he was brent with fyre by the deuine power.

¶ The.cxxvi. Chapter.

NOwe that I haue ſhewed vnto you the fyne and ende, of theſe two brethren, by reaſon of whoſe deathe the whole principate of Fraunce, fell vnto the aboue named Clothayre: I ſhall nowe expreſſe vnto you the deedes by him done, after he hadde al the rule onely.

Clothayr, or Lothair the thirde brother poſſeſſed the whole Realme of Fraunce.

So it was that the forenamed Brunechielde malygned euer againſt Lothayre. And to the furtheraunce of her malice, ſhe behaued her in ſuche wiſe with ſome of the rulers and Lordes of Auſtracie, that ſhe cauſed them to admit one named Sigeberte, to bee the rightfull inheritour of that land. But for that ſome of theym hadde good experience of the euill diſpoſition this woman, they therefore ſente two noble men of that lande named Pepin and Arnolde, vnto Clothayre, willinge him to ſende haſtely into that Prouince. After the whiche meſſage by theſe two lords reported, Clotharius ſhortlye after ſpedde him into Auſtracie, and at a caſtell called Cathomat he lodged him with his people. Wherof hearing Brunechield ſent vnto hym and gaue vnto him monicion; that he ſhoulde voyde the lande, for ſo muche as Sigeberte the eldeſt ſonne of Theodoriche was thereof ryghtfull enheritoure.

the naughtie minde of Brunechielde.

Ye haue heard before that Theodorich vſed lemans, of the which he receiued iiii. ſonnes, that is to ſaye, Sigeberte, Corbe, Childeberte, and Merone. Wherfore the foreſaide Brunechield entendinge to diſturbe Lothayre and all the lande, fortified the ſaid Sigebert to claime the lande of Auſtracie. And when Clothayre had receyued knowledge of this commaundement from Brunechield or Bruneheuſte, he ſente to her anſwere, that he would aſſemble the lordes of Auſtracie, and be demed by thẽ whether thys lande belonged to him or to Sigeberte. And ſhe fearynge that ſentence, excited the people of the prouince of Germanye to ſtrengthe her partie, with al the people that ſhe might make of the ſaide countrey of Auſtracy. And that to bring aboute, ſhe ſent one Garnery, another Albon. Of this Garnery ſhe had ſuſpection, that he ſhoulde fauoure the party of Lothayr, wherefore to Albone his felowe ſhe ſent letters, that he ſhoulde putte the ſayd Garnerye awaye. When Albon had ouerred the letter, he brake it in peces and threw it from him. And afterward a frend of Garneris gathered the peeces, and ſo ioyned theym yͭ he conceyued the ſentence of the letter, and furthwith ſhewed it vnto Garnery. When Gernery perceyued the malicious entent of Brunechield, he kept it ſecreate to him ſelfe: and albeit, that he by his ſecreate meanes cauſed the Germaines that they ſhoulde take no party with Brunechielde.

And that done, he retourned into Burgoyne, where with her and her companye he ſoltrated ſo the Lordes of Burgoyne, that ſome of them abhorred the crudelitie of that woman. And when

Garnery hadde in this wiſe compaſſed his matters, he ſente vnto Lothayre, and ſhewed him, yf he might haue his grace and ſafecõduite: he woulde come to him and ſhewe to him thinges concerning his auauntage. All the whiche was graunted.

Then Clothayre by counſayle of the ſaide Garnarye, aſſembled his power, and ſhortlye ſente a ſtrength of them into Champain and Cathaloyne, where it was ſhewed that Sygeberte had gathered greate ſtrengthes. Then forſoke the partye of Sigeberte manye nobles of Auſtracie, amõg the whyche myne Authoure nameth Rucco, Sygoldus, and Enulanus, and yelded theim to the mercie of Clothayre. Then ſhortlye after the hooſtes of Clothayre and Sigebert mette, wher Garnery by tokens betwene him and diuerſe of the Captaines of Sygeberte before aſſigned, the ſayde Captaynes with their people wtdrewe theym, ſo that Sygeberte with his two brethren, Corbo & Meroneus, gaue back while they came to the ryuer of Sygoune: where after lytle reſiſtaunce, the foreſaide two brethren were taken. But the Frenche cronicle ſayeth that all the foure brethren were there taken. Albeit maiſter Gagwin ſayeth: that Sygeberte by the ſtrengthe of his horſe eſcaped, ſo that he was not after that day ſene.

The takīg of Brunechield.

And ſoone after this vyctorye, Brunechielde, whiche alſo of the Frenche cronicle is named Bruneheuſte, was broughte as priſoner vnto the preſẽce of Lothair, with a ſiſter of Theodorich, which Garnery or Gerney, hadde taken in the tentes of their enemies. Then Lotharius commaunded Corbon to bee beheaded, and preſerued Meroneus, for ſo much as he was to him Godfather, and euer after cheryſhed hym as hys kinſman.

Lotharius reioyſynge of his victorye.

Lotharius thus hauynge the victorye of hys enemyes, made great ioye. And after he had ſomdeale ſet that countrey and other in quiet, he then toke aduiſe of his lordes, howe he ſhoulde be demeaned with Brunechield, that hadde been the authourice of ſo manyfolde miſchiefes and criminous deedes. The which of one conſent and minde condeſcended and agreed, that ſhe ſhoulde bee putte to moſt painefull and vile death. And finally, after ſore beatinges, ſhe was ſette vpon a horſe, and ſo conueyed throughe the hoſte, that all men might beholde and ſee her and after broughte agayne to the kinges preſence. Where then the kinge rehearſed vnto her a longe proceſſe of al her murders, cõſpiracies, & wicked deedes, afferminge that ſhe had ben ẏ occaſion & cauſe of the death of ten princes, beſide other meane perſons. And when he had ſayde his pleaſure, he then commaunded her to bee bound to a wilde horſe tayle, by the heare of her head, & ſo to bee drawen while ſhe were dead.

Brunechieldes puniſhemẽt, by iudgement of Lothair

And when this iudgement was executed, ſhe by the licence of the king was buried in an houſe of religion, within the citie of Hoſdon or Oſdon that ſhe before time had builded of S. Martyne, beſide other many that ſhe in her life builded in diuers other places, endo-

winge

wing theim with great and riche poſſeſſions.

The.cxxvii. Chapter.

THUS dame Fortune fauoured the partye of Lotharius, that this kingdom whiche hadde from the tyme of Clodoueus Lewes continued vnder foure gouernours, or rulers, for moore partye: nowe was fallen to hym, so that he hadde all vnder obeyſaunce and rule, then anone this Lotharius made Garnerye prefecte and maiſter of his palleys, and releaſed vnto the Longebardes, or Lombardes a tribute of twelue thouſand poūd yerelye payed to the kynges of Fraunce, the whiche was ſette vpon theim by Gunthranus his vncle.

Lotharius firſt ſon named Dagobertus.

And thys whyle to hys moore encreaſe of worldly ioye, he receyued of hys wyfe Bergeruda a ſonne, the whiche he named Dagobertus. The whiche when he came to couenable age, he betoke to the Lorde of Arnolde then Biſhoppe of Mees. And when the fyrſt wife of Lotharius was dead he maryed a ſeconde, named Sychilde of whome he receyued a childe, and named it Hayberte. When Dagoberte the firſte ſonne was come to a lawfull age, Clothayr conſideringe the frowardnes of his growing, aſſigned him a tutoure or learner of worldlye and knightlye maners, whoſe name was Sadrageſyle. And for his ſonne ſhould haue him in more awe and feare, the kinge gaue vnto the ſaide tutour the Dukedome of Guyan. But ſo it was one day, that for a cauſe this Sadrageſile wolde haue chaſtized this Dagobert, wherof he being ware, aſſociated vnto him certaine wanton perſons, and beate his maiſter, & after in waye of diſpite cauſed the beard of his tutoure to be ſhauen of. For the which deede Lothayre was againſt him ſo greuouſly diſpleaſed, in great ire & haſt, ſet for his ſonne Dagoberte. But he fearinge puniſhement, wythdrewe him till ſuche time as he myghte attayne vnto the grace of hys father.

Lotharius polecie.

After this reconciliation, Lotharius ordeyned vnder hym hys ſonne Dagobert to be ruler of the ſeignorye of Auſtracie. But whether it were by yͤ elatiō of his own minde, or by badde counſayle, he ſhortlye after rebelled againſt his father, & wold haue retained that prouince to his owne vſe.

For thys were choſen twelue noble men of Fraunce, to arbitre and deeme betwene father and the ſonne. The whiche lordes after they hadde long debated this matter, by fayre entreatiſe contented ſo the father, that he gaue vnto the ſonne the ſaid lordſhippe of Auſtracie.

Soone after this accorde, Clothayre made warre vpon the Gothis or Saxons, & them at length ſubdued. For it is to bee knowen that lyke as the ſayde Saxons, inuaded muche Britaine or Englande, in likewiſe warred they in Fraunce, and laſtelye ſubdued the prouince of Neuſtria, and named it after them Normandy, as after in the ſtory of Charles to yͤ ſimple ſhall more euidently apeare.

Where Normādy tooke hys name.

Of this victorie of the Saxons is made a long rehearſall, & howe laſtely when Clothayr had ſlayne the king and ruler of them, named Berthrande, he after yode into the countrey of Germanie, and ſlewe man & childe yͤ paſſed the length of his ſworde.

Of this & other deedes by this Lothaire done, I mighte make a longe worke, but I paſſe ouer.

Then it foloweth, when Lothayr hadde ſette his countrey in ſome reſt, he aſſembled hys lordes at a citie or towne called Traacas or Trecas.

And after diuers matters diſcuſſed and ended, he aſked of them perfyte allegeaunce and fidelitie to him and his heyres to bee kepte The whiche by the ſayde Lordes firmelye promyſed and aſſured, he commaunded euerych of them to repayre to their owne countreys. And ſoone after he made an aſſemble of his Biſhoppes and ſpirituall menne, at the Citie or towne of Troys, by whoſe counſayles he ordered thynges and matters concerninge the weale of the churche. And ſhortlye after he was vexed with greuous ſickeneſſe, whereof he finallye died, when he hadde raygned after moſt wryters. xliii. yeres, leauynge for heyre the forenamed Dagoberte, the which enterred hys father wyth greate pompe at the abbey of Sayncte Vincente without the walles of Parys, the whiche Abbey is at thys daye called Sayncte Germaines.

The foreſayd yeres accompted for the raygne of Lothayre, bee accompted from the firſt day that he was ordeined king of Soiſons vnto the day of his death. Whereof he raygned after ſome writers ouer a parte. xxvii. yeres, & ouer all Fraunce. xvi. yeres. Whiche make the full of. xliii. yeres.

Anglia.

¶ The. xxviii. Chapter.

CAdwanus or Cadwan, the whiche of Guydo is named duke of Venedoice or of Northwales, was by one aſſent of the Britons, laſtly made Soueraigne and gouernour, in the yere of our lorde ſixte hundred and xiii. and the. xxv. yere of the ſeconde Clothaire kinge of Fraunce, and alſo the firſte yere of Colwolphus then kinge of Weſtſaxons, accomptinge for the raigne of Ceawlmus king of the ſaid Weſtſaxons, one and thirtie yeres. And for Colricus nexte ſucceding him fiue yeres.

Ye haue before hard what diſcorde and trouble was amonge the Brytons in the tyme of Careticus laſte Kynge, and longe after, by reaſon whereof the Saxons wanne the moore lande, and as before is rehearſed in the hundred and twentie chapter, how Ethelfride king of Northumbeland ouerſet the Brytons at the citie of Cheſter, & forced theim to take ouer Seuarne and ſo into Wales, where they then chaſe this Cadwane to their duke and leader. The whiche after he was putte in authoritie, aſſembled hys Brytons, and came agayne into Brytaine, and gaue battaille vnto the ſaid Ethelfride. In the which thei ſped diuerſlye, ſo that ſome ſeaſon the Saxons wan, and ſome while the Britons. But the Britons held Cheſter. & other good townes which they recouered at their laſt comming. It ſhulde ſeeme by the meaninge of Policronica, that this Cadwan or Cedwall, ſhoulde at length ſlea the ſayde Ethelfride and Oſricus both kinges of Brēnicia and Deyra. But Guydo and alſo Gaufride witneſſeth, that after this Cadwan hadde the better of Ethelfride, by mediatours it was agreed, that Ethelfryde ſhoulde enioye all the lande ouer and beyond Humber vnto Scotlande, and Cadwin ſhoulde haue the lande from Humber towarde the Southe. To the whiche ſayinge agreeth the Engliſhe chronicle, affermynge alſo that he ſhoulde bee the ſonne of Bruciual king of Leiceter, the whiche of other writers is not teſtified.

It is alſo there ſhewed that after the ſayde accorde betewne Ethelfride and Cadwan confirmed that they continued, durynge the lyfe of Cadwan, as two eſpeciall louers and frendes, and durynge the raygne of this Cadwan yͤ two ſonnes of Colricus, Kingilſus and Quichillinus after the deathe of theyr fathers brother Colwolphus, ruled ioyntly the principate of Weſtſaxõs. The which in their beginning fought againſt the Britons at Ampton beſide Oxenford and wanne of them the town and other holdes, which the Britons in that countrey occupied. But by agremente of writers, this Cadwan was not at this conflict, nor yet medled him ſo far within the lande. But as it ſhoulde ſeeme by Guydo, theſe Britons ſhoulde bee ſome company that ſhuld liue vnder tribut of the Saxons, yͤ which for yͤ manhod that thei had heard reported of Cadwan, rebelled againſte the Saxons. Then it foloweth, when this Cadwan thus continued his amyte with Ethelfryd, a chaũge fel, that this Ethelfryde for hatred or otherwyſe, put from hym his wyfe beyng great with childe, and toke to him another, wherefore this woman being remedileſſe, callinge to mynde the great loue that was betwene her huſband & Cadwan, ſhe went vnto him, and ſpecially beſoughte him to recõſile her lorde and huſband, that ſhe might bee reſtored to his company. But for Cadwan after manye meanes & requeſtes might not bringe that aboute, he therefore tenderyng her neceſſitie, kepte her in his owne courte, tyll ſhe were lighted. The whiche at time brought forth a man childe, whom ſhe lette call Edwyn. And ſoone after was the wyfe of Cadwan deliuered of a ſonne, whom the father called Cadwalin. But the authoure of the Floure of Hiſtories ſayth that theſe two children were long borne before this tyme. The whiche ſhoulde ſeme to to bee trewe, for ſo muche as this Cadwalyn was of lawfull age to bewelde his land when his father died, the which he could not do, yf he hadde now been borne. But as affermeth Policronicon, it ſhould ſeme like to a fable, all yͤ rehearſal that Gaufride maketh in thend of his boke, as well for Cadwalyn & Edwyn, as for the other circumſtaunce of the matter there reherſed. Which varieth frõ other writers both for the time, and alſo for the matter, as ſomedele is more in the hiſtorie hereof before made mencion, and alſo by the continuaunce of this hiſtorie. For as Gyraldus Cambrenſis, and other ſayen, this Edwin was the ſonne of Elle or Ella king of Deyra, the whiche was perſecuted of Ethelfridus before named, then kinge of both prouinces, that is to mene Brennicia and Deyra, ſo ſore that he was compelled to flee to Redwaldus then king of Eaſtanglis. The whiche for meede or feare of the ſayde Ethelfride, was laſtlye conſentynge to haue betrayed Edwyne, of whyche daunger the ſayde Edwyne was delyuered by the warnynge of a frende of hys.

After this eſcape, as Edwyne ſatte vpon a time in a great ſtudy alone, a ſtraunger appeared vnto him ſodeynlye, and ſayde: I know well the cauſe of thy thought and heuines. Therefore yf thine enemies were ſlayne, and thou reſtored vnto thy kingdome, and ſette in better maner then anye of thy forefathers: woldeſt thou not admitte ſuch one for thy frende, and aſſent to do by his rede aud counſayle: Yes trewlye ſayde Edwine, and that I ſurely and faſtly promiſe thee. Then this man laid his hand vpon Edwins head, and ſaid to him: Edwin when this token is brought to the, then haue thou mind of this time of tribulation, and of this promiſe that thou haſt made. And anone as thys was ſpoken, this man vaniſhed out of his ſight ſodeynly.

In a conuenient ſeaſon after, Edwin aſſembled his hoſt, ⁊ gaue battaile vnto Ethelfrid in the contrey of Mercia by Eaſt the riuer of Idle, and ſlew him in that fight wyth a greate number of hys knightes, ⁊ then ſeaſed in his poſſeſſion both the forſaide principates, ⁊ was king of Northumberlande by the terme of .xviii. yeres.

The death of Ethelfride.

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that the forenamed Ethelfride hadde thre ſonnes; which are mencioned beſide other. The firſte ⁊ eldeſt was named Eaufricus, the ſeconde Oſwaldus, and the thyrd Oſwy. The firſte was of lawefull age, ſo that he might helpe and ſhifte for him ſelfe. But Oſwalde was but .xii. yeres of age, and Oſwy farre yonger. Wherfore their wardeins immediatlye after their fathers death, ſente them into Armorica or litle Britain, ther to be brought vp, or more verelye into Albania or Scotlande.

The .cxxix. Chapter.

ABout this time ⁊ ſeaſon as witneſſeth Policronica, Guydo ⁊ other, began yͤ kingdom or lordſhip of Mercia, vnder the ſtronge painim ⁊ Saxon called Penda. The which Mercia or Mecherik, contained Hūtingdonſhire, Hertfortſhire, Gloceterſhire, with dyuers other, ⁊ was greateſt ⁊ largeſt of all other, and was cloſed in the Weſte ſyde with the ryuer of Dee, ſtretchinge to Cheſter and Seuarne, and ſo to Shroueſburye and Briſtow, in the Eaſt it was cloſed with the ſea Occean, in the Southe with Thamys vnto London, ⁊ in the Northe with the riuer of Humber, and had his beginninge vnder the forenamed Penda, as the accorde of dyuerſe authours witneſſeth, in the yere of our lordes incarnation, ſyxe hun-

the kingdō or lordſhyp of Mercya.

Penda.

dred and.xxvi.and after the firſte comminge of Hengiſt, a hundred and.lxxvi.yeres. Albeit, that of the firſte kinge diuers opinions there been, whereof a cauſe may bee, for ſo muche as this lordſhip in the firſte beginninge, was departed in three, that is to ſay: the firſte was called Eaſtmercia, the ſeconde was named middle Mercia, & the thirde Weſtmercia. But after it was brought to one principate & called Mercherike, or of ſome writer middle England. Of this lordſhippe, the firſte Chriſten king was called Wolpherus that was the ſonne of the forenamed Penda. But of all the kinges of this kingdome of Mercia, which were.xviii. in nomber as teſtifieth Policronica, Offa was of moſt mighte and power, as after ſhall moore plainly appeare.

The nõber of the kynges of Mercia.

This lordſhippe endured to reken moſte certainlye, tyll the yere of our Lord eyght hundred.lxxvi. In the whiche yere Alured or Alhered then kinge of Weſtſaxons, ioyned vnto it his owne kingdõ: whiche by that accompte ſhoulde bee two hundred and fiftie yeres. Albeit that ſome accompt the endurance therof, to the laſte yere of Burdredus, that was put out by the Danes: by which rekening it ſhould then endure.iiii.yeres leſſe. And ſome writers accompte the terme thereof, while the time of Edward called the elder, whiche after the death of his father Alured, put out the Danes from the ſaide lordſhip, and ioyned it again to Weſtſaxon: & by that accompte it ſhould laſte two hundred.lxxx. yeres and odde.

Ye ſhall alſo vnderſtande, that in this kingdome raigned diuers holy kinges, whiche nowe bee allowed by the churche for ſainctes, as Offa, Kenelphus, Kenelmus, and other, as hereafter ſomedeale ſhall appeare.

I haue ſene an old regiſter within the churche of Paules of London, wherein is contained manye thinges, concerninge the firſte foundacion of that churche, with certain old cronicles of this land. Amonge the whiche there it is noted, that in the time and ſeaſon when Cadwan was kynge and ruler of the Britons, that in that ſame momente and time reigned in diuers partes of this land theſe ſeuen kinges vnder written.

As firſte Sibertus, that than was kinge of Eaſtſaxons, nowe Eſſex, Redwaldus was then king of Eaſtanglis, now Norff. & Suff. Ethelbertus was then kinge of Kent, Ethelwaldus was king of Southſex. Kingilſus was king of Weſtſaxons.

The nõber of kynges that reyg ned at once in Englã

Penda was kinge of Mercherike. And Ethelfridus was than king of the North coũtrey or Northumber. Al whiche regiſter, this worke accordeth wt, if the ſtories of Cadwan, Careticus, and Cadwall be duely ſearched.

¶ The.xxx. Chapter.

Let vs then retourne to the perfourmaunce of the hiſtorie of Cadwan, & of ſuch deeds as were done in his dayes. About the.xiiii. yere of hys raygne Quincellinus that was brother vnto Kingilſus and kinge with hym, as before in the.c.xxviii.chapiter is touched, ruled the Weſtſaxons, ſente vpon an Eſter daye a ſwordeman to ſlee

Cadwan.

Edwyn kynge of Northumberland. This ſworde man came to a citie beſide the water of Darwent in Darbyſhyre, and wayted hys time, and laſtly founde the kynge ſmally accompanied, and entēded to haue ronne through the kynge with a ſworde enuenemed.

But one Lilla the kinges truſtye ſeruaunte, diſgarniſhed of a ſhild or other wepon to defend his maiſter, ſtarte betwene the kynge and the ſworde, and was ſtryken throughe the bodye, and died, and the kinge was wounded with the ſame ſtroke. And after he wounded the third, and was taken, and confeſſed by whom he was ſent to woorke that treaſon. The other knight that was ſecondly wounded died, and the kinge laye after longe ſicke or he were healed. And the ſame nyghte folowinge: the queene was deliuered of a doughter, the whiche kynge Edwin cauſed to bee chriſtened of Paulinus the Byſhoppe, in token that he woulde fulfyll all ſuche promyſe, as he before hadde made. And ſhe was named Enfleda, & halowed vnto God.

And after Whytſontyde, the kinge beinge ſcantly whole of the wounde, aſſembled his hoſte, and made toward the kynges of Weſtſaxon, and after a great and ſoore fight, vanquiſhed them and theyr hoſte. But Edwin for all this victorie and other thinges geuen to him of god, as he ẏ was in health of the worlde, forgatte his former promeſſe, & had litle mind thereof except that be by the preaching of Paulinus forſoke his maumentry, & for his excuſe ſaid ẏ he might not clearely reny his old law ẏ his forefathers had kept ſo long, & ſodeynly be chriſtened without authoritie and good aduyſe of hys cōſayle. He alſo receyued letters of exhortation & comfort to take ẏ baptime, frō the .v. Boniface then biſhop of Rome. The whiche alſo ſent to the quene like letters with a myrrour garniſhed with ſiluer, and a combe of yuery, and for the kynge a ſhirt wrought in ſundrye places with letters of golde. But all this preuayled nothyng.

It was not longe after, that the king aſſembled his counſayle, and by theyr agrement, he was of the ſayde Paulinus Byſhoppe of Yorke baptiſed, within the ſayde citie, the .xi. yere of his raigne, and the yere of Grace, as teſtifyeth Guydo, vi. C. & .xxvii. He was the firſt chriſten kynge that raygned in that countrey. And after hym many of his lordes and ſubiectes were alſo chryſtened of the ſayde Paulinus, and the flamins or biſhops of their falſe goddes, were tourned to Chriſtes faith. In token whereof they armed theim as knightes, and beſtrode good horſes, where before by their lawe, they myghte vſe none armoure, nor ryde but onely vpon a mare.

From that time forewardes, by the terme of ſixe yeres, during the life of kynge Edwin, Paulinus chriſtened cōtinually in both prouinces of Deyra and in Brennicia in the riuers of Gweuy and Swala, whiche he vſed for hys fontes, and preached in the ſhire of Lindeſey, and buylded there a churche of ſtone at Lyndecolne or Lincolne.

In this time was ſo great peace in the kyngdome of Edwine, that a woman might haue gone from one towne to another, withoute griefe or noyaunce.

And for the refreſhinge of way goers, this Edwin ordeyned at cleare welles, cuppes or diſſhes of yron or braſſe, to bee faſtened to pooſtes ſtandinge by the ſaid well ſides, and no man was ſo hardye to take awaye thoſe cuppes, he kepte ſo good iuſtyce, and with that he was knyghtelye of hys deedes.

He was the firſte that wanne this Iſle of Eubonia, nowe called the Iſle of Man. And by his meanes, Orpewaldus or Corpewaldus, the ſonne of Redwaldꝰ kynge of Eaſtangles', or Norphis, to whome as before is touched, Edwin hadde fledde for ſuccour, was conuerted to the true faithe, and a greate parte of his men with him. And for this Edwin excelled the other kynges, they enuied at him, and ſpecially Penda kyng of Mercia, the whiche excited Cadwan kynge of Britons agaynſte him. So that they two aſſembled a great hoſte againſt Edwin, and laſtly mette in a place called Hatfeeld, ⁊ after ſharpe fight on both ſides, there Edwin was ſlain, whē he had raigned ouer the Northūbris. xvii. yeres, in the yere of our Lorde, as ſaieth Guydo. vi. hundred and. xxxiii. when theſe two kings Cadwan or Cedwalla and Penda, hadde thus ouercome the kyng and him ſlaine, and much of his people, thei became ſo cruell to men of that countrey, that they deſtroyed therein much people, as men, women, and children, aſwell of religious as other. Wherefore Paulinus the archebiſhop beholdinge their cruelneſſe, tooke with him the queene, and Enfleda her doughter, and fled by water into Kente. And for the biſhopriche of Rocheſter was then voyde by reaſon that Romanus laſte byſhoppe was dreynte, Pauline was there ordeined and made biſhop of that ſee, and there died. And alſo lefte there his paule: as affermeth Policronicon and other, the archebiſhoppes See of Yorke was voide. xxx. yeares after. But the queene whiche was named Etherberga, became a mēchon, and ſailed into Gallia or Fraunce, where in an abbay called Bridgence or Brygence, ſhe liued and holye lyfe and died, and her doughtet Enfleda continued her profeſſion and was afterward abbeſſe of Strēſhalt in the vale of Whitby.

After the death of Edwin Oſricus that was the ſonne of Elfricus whiche was brother of Ethelfridus, toke vpon him to be kynge of Deyra, and Eaufricus the eldeſt ſonne of Ethelfrida, as before in the. c. ⁊. xxviii. chapter is touched, was made kyng of Brēnicia: the which tourned them both frō Chriſtes faythe, ⁊ became miſcreaũtes. For yͤ whiche gods wratche fell vpon them in ſhorte while after, for thei were both ſlaine in the yere folowinge, of the forenamed Cadwan and Penda.

And when theſe ſayde two kynges were thus ſlaine. Oſwald the ſeconde ſonne of Ethelfride beganne his raigne ouer the prouince of Brēnicia as chief of that kingdome of Northumberland, ⁊ had the rule of Deyra in lykewiſe. Whereof when Cadwan or Cadwalla was ware, he gathered his Britones and thought to ſlea Oſwalde as he had before ſlayne his brother Eaufricus. But Oſwalde whē he was warned of the great ſtrengthe af this Cadwan, he made his prayers to God, and beſought him meekely of helpe to withſtande his enemie for the ſaluacion of his people. Than after Oſwalde had praied for the ſaluacion of his people, the two hooſtes met in a feelde named than Deniſborne or Deniſlake, wher was fought a ſtronge battayle. But finally Cadwan, whiche Policronica nameth Cedwalla, was ſlain and his people chaſed: which were ferre exceadyng the nōber of Oſwaldus hooſt, whan the ſaid Cadwan had raigned ouer the Britōs after moſt accorde of writers, and alſo of the time, by ẏ terme of .xxii. yeres, leauing after him a ſonne, as affirmeth Gaufride, named Cadwallus or Cadwalin.

Francia.

¶The.xxxi. Chapter.

DAgobertus the firſt of that name, and ſonne of Clothayre before reherſed, began his reigne ouer the whole monarci of Fraunce, in ẏ yere of our Lorde vi. hundred and .xxxi. & the .xviii. yere of Cadwan than king of Britons. The whiche at the time of his fathers death was in the prouince of Auſtracy, giuen to hym by his father, as before is ſhewed in the hundred and .xxvii. chapter precedinge. But anone as worde came to him of his fathers deceſe, he ſpedde hym well accompanied into Fraunce. And when he was comen to the Citie of Reynes, thither came vnto him: many nobles as well out of Burgoynie as out of other parties of Fraunce, & did vnto him feautie and homage.

It is ſhewed in ẏ. C.xxvi. chapter of this worke, how Clothayre had by hys ſeconde wyfe a ſonne named Heybert, ẏ which claymed his parte of ẏ kingdom of Fraūce and for the ſame beganne to make ſome ſtyring But by the good policie and meanes of one Brunulphe vncle to the ſaid Heybart, and brother to Sichilde his mother, the matter was appeaſed, ſo that he had vnto him certayne Cities aſſigned, wyth landes in Guyan, with the which he was contented and ordayned Tholouſe for the chiefe Citie of his principate. And after that peace confirmed, Dagoberte was in quiet by the terme of three yeres folowinge. But the fourthe yere the Gaſcons rebelled agaynſt him, the whiche by manhode he ſhortlie ſubdued. And when he had ſet his lande in a quietneſſe, he than viſited and circued hys lande in mynyſtringe iuſtice to al perſons, and ordained ſuch meanes as billes of ſupplicacion and other, that the cauſes & matters of poore men might come to his knowledge, by meane wherof he gat great loue and fauour of his commons.

But amonge his manye notable deedes, one deede by him was committed, the whiche ſome deale longe after blemiſhed his honour. And that was, that he withoute iudgemēt or proceſſe of the lawes cauſed be to ſlayne the forenamed Brunulphe vncle vnto Hayberte his brother, for malice that he bare to him, for the fauouringe of the ſayde Heybertus partie.

After this the king was deuorſed frõ his wife named Gertrude, for that ſhe was barrayne and brought forthe no fruite, and was after maried to a fayre wench named Renatrude, of the whiche he receaued in conueniente time after, a ſonne that was named Sygeberte.

Then it foloweth, this Dagoberte all this paſſe time was ruled by a noble man of Fraunce, or more properlie of the prouince of Auſtracie, named in the Frenche book, Arnulphe biſhop of Mees, and by Pepin, whiche was ruler of the kynges Paleys. By whiche ſeaſon, he and alſo his lande were in greate honour and proſperite, til the death of the forenamed Arnulphe, which died about the ſeaſon that the kynge began to alter and chaunge his cõdicions to the hurte of his commons and of hys lande.

The.cxxxii. Chapter.

Dagobertus that before excercised him in all honoure and vertue, began now to exerciſe iniuſtice and tirannie, in pillinge his commons by exactions and tributes, in ſuch wiſe, that thoſe that dwelled in the outward parties of hys realme, and nere vnto the Turkes and other ſtraunge landes and nacions, were fayner to be vnder the rule of theym, then of theyr owne naturall prince. And that doone, he deſtroyed the countrey of Poytiers with yron and fyre, and the walles of the Citie he made playne with the grounde. And for the more crueltie or terroure to the people to be ſhewed, he eared the ſtreetes of the ſayde Citie, and ſew them with ſalte, for a ſigne and token that he wold haue all that citie ſubuerted for euer. The whiche ruine to this day appereth, for there where the olde citie ſtode, is now called the olde Poytiers, and where that other ſtandeth now, is called the newe Citie of Poytires. The cauſe of this deſtruction of the Citie and cõtrey (as ſaith mayſter Roberte Gagwine) was, for that, that the erle of Poytyers rebelle agaynſt the kinge.

Thus this man that whilome was a lãbe, was now turned to a tiger. And ouer his cruelneſſe, he was giuen to all ſenſuall luſte of his bodie, in ſo muche, that where ſo hee rode, he had folowing hym a company of ſtrumpettes, beſide ſuche as he kept in diuerſe place of his realme, aparaled and fed like vnto queenes.

For this rule and other vices vſed by the kinge, Pepin then maiſter of yͤ Palies, was put in greate wyght and blame of diuerſe Lordes of the lande: thinking that by his counſayle and ſufferaunce, the kinge was ſo led and guided. This was the firſt Pepin.

The ſeconde was mayſter of the Paleys in time of the reygne of the firſt Theodoricus, and was ſurnamed Vetulus and Breuis, whiche is to meane olde and lytle And the thyrde Pepyn was ſonne of Carolus Marcellus. The firſt Pepyn was graundefather to the ſeconde by the Mothers ſyde, and the ſeconde was graunſoure to the thyrde by the mannes ſyde.

which thirde Pepyn was by hole aſſente of Frenchemen ordeyned kinge of Fraunce, as after ſhall apere: and was the father vnto the king named Charles yͤ greate and emperour of Rome. Al which Pepyns deſcended of the bloud of Auſtracye, and hadde great poſſeſſions within that prouince.

When the forenamed Pepyn vnderſtod the grudge and murmour of the Lordes, whiche they bare agaynſte hym for the kynges demeanoure, he by theyr aduices, tooke vnto hym another greate Lorde named Martayne, to be vnto him aſſiſtente, and ouer that, he cauſed Amandus to accompanye the kynge: by whoſe counſayle, the kynge ſomedeale refrayned hym from vice, but not all, as the Byſhoppe hym aduertyſed.

In this time Heybart yͤ kinges halfe brother dyed, and alſo hys ſonne Chilperiche ſhortlye after. By reaſon of whoſe deathes, the lordſhyppe and countrey of Tholouſe fel to the poſſeſſion of Dagoberte. It was not long after that a people called Aſclauõs or Sclauons, made warre vppon the coũtrey of Auſtracie. Theſe alſo are called Bulgarys, and ioyne vpon a parte of Auſtracie. Of theſe tidynges when Dagoberte was learned, he ſpedde hym into Auſtracie, ⁊ there aſſembled a mightie hooſte of knightes, and ſo ſped hym tyll he came neare hys enemyes. But the ſayde Sclauons hauynge knowledge of the kynges greate hooſte, agreed by oratours to hym ſente, to contynue the tribute that they before time payed, the whiche was yearelye fyue hundred Oxen. Where thorough the warre was apeaſed for that tyme, and newe alyaunce vppon bothe partyes confyrmed.

The war of the Sclauons

After the whyche peace thus ſtabliſhed, the kyng made his ſon Sigebert as kynge and ruler of that lordſhyppe of Auſtracie aſſignyng to hym the byſhoppe of Colayne named Cunberte and the erle Palatyne named Agaſyle to bee hys tutours and rulers continuynge his yeres of youthe. And that done the kynge retourned into Fraunce, where ſoone after he receyued of hys wyfe a ſonne named Clodoueus, the whyche of manye wryters is called Lodouicus or Lowes. To thys Lowes the father at a couenable tyme after, gaue the Countyes of Burgoyne, and Neuſtrya or Normandye.

Then the kynge graunted to the houſe of ſaynct Denis, a faire to bee kepte yerelye in the month of June, in a feelde nere vnto the ſayde monaſterye, and that no marchaunte of Parys, nor good towne there about, ſhould ſell any marchaundyce, but onelye in the fayre, wyth many other cuſtomes to the great auauncement of that houſe.

The graũt of the faire holden at S. Denys neare vnto Paris.

And after the kinge hadde ſubdued the Gaſcoynes, and the Britons of Amorica or litle Britayne he then called a great counſayle of hys lordes ſpirituall and temporall at hys Cytye of Byguage: where he beinge ſet betwene hys two ſonnes Sygeberte and Clodoueus, he made a longe prepoſition and oration, concernyng the allegeaunce, whiche he exhorted hys Lordes to owe and beare to him,

him for the terme of his life, and after to his two ſonnes there beinge preſente. And then he exhorted his two ſonnes charitablye to loue, and that they ſhould in moſt fraternall wiſe continue their lyues. The whiche prepoſition finiſhed, he there in that preſēce made his teſtament (that before he had cauſed to be written in foure ſondrye ſkinnes endented) to be red, and them ſealed with certaine of their ſeales, whereof that one he wylled to be kepte in the treaſury of ſaint Denis, the ſeconde in the treaſury of the citie of Lyons, the thyrde in the treaſury of Mees in Auſtracie, whiche nowe is named Loraine, and the .iiii. in the kynges treaſury. And when the king had ordered his matters ſomdeal to his purpoſe, he diſſolued this councell, and commaunded euery eſtate unto his owne country, and after was ſomewhat beſied with the rebelliō of the forenamed britons and Gaſcoynes, and ſuche other matters, the whiche I paſſe ouer for length of time.

Then the kinge laſtly was ſicke of the flixe, and was broughte by his deſyre unto the monaſtarye of Saincte Denis. Where, after he had committed his wife Nantild, with her ſonne Clodoueus unto the guydinge and tuicion, of a noble man of Fraunce, and then maiſter of his palayes, named Agaynus, he died, when he had reigned xiiii. yeres, and was buried with greate pompe in the forenamed monaſterye.

The death of Dagobertus.

Anglia.

The .Cxxxiii. Chapter.

Cadwallꝰ.

Cadwallus or Cadwaline, the ſonne of Cadwan laſtlye ſpoke of in the cronicle of muche Britayne, as teſtifieth Guydo, Gaufryde, and other, began his reygne ouer the Britons in the yeare of Chriſtes incarnation .vi. hundred and fiue and thirtye, and the fyrſt yeare of the fyrſt Dagobert then kinge of Fraunce, and alſo the twelue yeare of Kingilſus and Quichilinus then kinges of Weſtſaxon.

Cap.5.li.9

This Cadwallus was ſtronge and mighty, and warred ſtrongly upon the Saxons nere unto him, and wanne from them both caſtels and townes, and droue them backe into the lande toward London. Wherof hearing Penda king of Mercia, he aſſembled his Saxons and made towarde Cadwall. But he was in the ende diſtreſſed, and faine to ſech and purchaſe the fauour of Cadwal, and liue under his tribute.

This Penda after this was in greate fauoure with Cadwall, in ſo muche that he tooke parte with Cadwall againſt his other Saxō kinges, as after ſhall appeare. Aboute this time, Kingylſus one of the kinges of Weſtſaxons, was by the doctryne of the bleſſed man Berinus conuerted to the ryghte belefe, and chriſtened of him at the citie of Dortike or Dorcheſter. And Oſwald kinge of Northumberlande was his godfather, and wedded his doughter afterward. And then that citie was geuen to the byſhoppe, to the ende that he ſhuld there ordeine his ſee, where the ſayde Berinus ſatte fourtene yeares after, and there was buried, tyll Beda Byſhop of Wincheſter tranſlated his body to the city of Wincheſter, albeit the chanonnes of Dorcheſter ſaye, that the ſayde bodye of holye Beryne was not taken thence but another in ſtede of hym. And yet in tokē therof, a Beeres of a wonder worke ſtandeth at this day ouer yͤ graue where this holye man was fyrſte buryed. It ſhoulde ſeme that this citie of Dorcheſter is nowe called Dorſet. This ſee was in the tyme of Wylliam conquerourе chaunged to Lyncolne.

Aboute this time Sigebertus, or after ſome Segebertus kynge of Eſt Englande or Norfolk, whiche reigned there next his brother Corpwaldus, ordained letters to be learned, and ſet ſcoles in diuers places of his kyngedome, and ordayned ouer them ſcolemayſters and Pedagoges, as he ſometyme hadde ſene in Fraunce.

The which Sigebert was conuerted to Chriſtes faith by the doctrine of an holy mā named Felix the whiche he was fyrſt acquainted with in Fraunce or in Burgoyne. The whiche Felix came ſone after that acquaintaunce into Eaſtanglia or Norfolk, where the kynge made him Byſhoppe of Dunwyche now called Thetford. Laſtly the kynge betoke his kyngdome vnto his neuewe Egrytys, and became a monke in an abbey whiche he him ſelfe buylded.

But when Penda kyng of Mercia warred after in that country, the ſayde Sigebert was againſt his wyll pulled out of the ſaid monaſtery, and went in armes, or (as ſome teſtifie) vnarmed, with a whyte rodde in his hande nicelye, and ſo was ſlayne, and welneare all his hoſte of knights that came with him to that feelde.

By this reherſal apeareth here diſcorde of writers of the beginninge of this ſayde kyngedome of Eaſtanglia. For if it were trewe that this beganne as witneſſeth Pollicronycon in the fourth Chapter of his fyfte booke, in the yere of grace foure hundred foure ſcore and twelue (as before alſo I haue ſhewed in the foure ſcore and, xvi. & twenty Chapter of this worke) then mighte it not agre with conueniencye of time, that this Sygeberte or Segebert ſhould reigne as kinge at thoſe dayes now minded. Wherefore the ſaying of Guidois more concordaunte, whiche ſheweth this kingedome to haue his beginninge in the yeare of grace, fyue hundred and, lxx. as in the ende of the foreſayd Chapter it is there ſhortlye touched.

Then it foloweth in the ſtory, after the death of this Sygeberte, Anna was made kyng of Eaſtanglis.

And duringe the reygne of Sygebertus, befell the wonder that is tolde of that holye man Furceus, as is ſhewed at length in the xiii. Chapiter of the fyfte booke of Pollycronicone aforeſayd, and in the. xiii. tytle of the. vi. chapter of the ſeconde parte of the famous worke called Summa Antonini.

And about this ſeaſon reygned or began to reygne the curſed ſecte of the deteſtable and falſe prophet Machomet, the which ſynce that tyme hath ſo infected, that it hath corrupted two principall partes of the worlde; as Aſia, and Affrica and the moore parte of the thyrde named Europa, and daylye wynneth vpon the chriſtē people great landes and poſſeſſions. About the vii. yere of this forenamed Cadwal kynge of Brytons reygned in Kente a Saxon kynge named Ercombertus, the whiche had that principate.xx. yeares noblye.

And amonge other of his famous dedes, he reuiued and quickened agayne the faith of Chriſte, that in ſome places of his kyngedome was ſore appaled. For he deſtroyed the temples of falſe gods through al that countrey, and ordayned by the aduiſe of his clergy. the tyme of lente to be faſted. He wedded the daughter of Anna, kynge of Eſtanglis named Sexburga of whome he receaued a daughter and named her Eukendoga, the which after was a menchon or Nunne in the abbeye of Bridgence in Fraunce before minded, where Ethelburga the wyfe somtyme of Edwyn king of Northumberlande ſerued God, as in the hundred and.xxx. chapter preceadynge it is ſhewed, and either of theym was abbeſſe of the ſame place. And though at thoſe dayes there were manye abbeys in this yſle of muche Brytayne, yet many both of men and of wemen ſayled into other landes, as Fraunce and Burgoyne and other places, becauſe the conuerſation and lyuinge of thoſe countreis were of more fame & perfection then was then vſed in this yſle of Brytaine. About this time as it were about the.viii. yere of Cadwal, died Kingilſus king of Weſtſaxons, when he had reygned with his brother and alone.xxxi. yeares. And Kenwalcus his ſonne was kinge after him, the which in yͤ beginning of his reygne wolde not be chriſtened, and forſoke his wife yͤ doughter of Penda, and toke to hym a nother. Wherfore Penda in aduēginge his doughter, gathered his hoſte, and chaſed Kynwalcus out of his kyngedome, and kepte hym thens.iii. yeares. By whiche ſeaſon was Anna kynge of Eaſtanglis, and there conuerted to the faith of Chriſte, and chriſtened of Felix aforenamed then Byſhop of Dunwike or Thetford, and after he recouered his kingdome, by the ayde and aſſyſtence of the ſayd Anna. When Kenwalcus was reſtored to his lande, he made a Byſhops ſee at Kaerguente or Wyncheſter, and ordeyned there a byſhop named Agylberte a frenche man of byrthe, but he was called out of Irelande. The which when he hadde ſitten there a certaine of time, he was put thens I ne wote for what cauſe, & in his place was ſet another named Win. Of this Wyn as ſayeth Policronicon, the towne of Wincheſter toke yͤ name as he declareth in the.liii.chapter of his fyrſt boke, as it were Wynnes citie. But he was alſo putte thens, & thē was Leutherius biſhop, & after Leutherias ſucceded Cedda. And after Theodorus the archbyſhop of Caunterbury ordeined two byſhops to that prouince of Weſtſaxon. That one at Wyncheſter, and to that was ſubiecte two countreis Southrey & Southampſhyre. And that other ſee he ordeined at Shireborne, to yͤ whiche were ſubiecte ſyxe countreys, that is to ſay Berkſhire, wiltſhire

Somerſetſhyre, Dorſetſhyre, Deuenſhyre, and Cornwayle. But in Wylliam the conquerours tyme the ſea of Shyreborne was turned to Saliſburye with the ſee of Rammeſbury.

It was not long after that Kenwalcus was warred with ÿ king of Britons, ÿ which foughte with hym at a place called Wight Goſneborough, and was of him there ouercome. Then Cadwall aſſembled a newe hoſte of Brytons, and met with Kenwalcus, at a place called the hyll of Pent, where after longe fyght the Brytons were put vnto flyght.

¶ The .cxxiiii. Chapter.

Of Oſwal kinge of Northumberlande. Ca.6.li.9.

Ye haue herd before how that bleſſed man Oſwal the ſonne of Ethelfride was ordeyned kynge of Northumberlande, the which continued his lyfe in iuſtice and vertue as kynge, by the tearme of .ix. yeares. But Penda king of Mercia, that to him and to all chriſten men had great diſdaine & enuy, abowt the .ix. yere of Cadwal, made war vpon Oſwald, and ſlewe him in a feld called *Meſerfeld, wher after his death God ſhewed for him many miracles. But after one yere of his death, Oſwy his brother reſcowed the kyngdome, and buryed his head in the churchyarde of Lyndeſfarne, for the bodye was conueyed by the pagans, and deuided in ſondry peces.

The death of Oſwald

*Burne.

Oſun.

When Oſwy had a ſeaſon ruled his kingedome, he founde vnlawful meanes to ſlee Oſwyn, that was king of Deyra. This Oſwin was the ſonne of Eaufrid, elder brother of Oſwalde, which Oſwyn was goodly of condicions and therewith both meke & milde. When this Oſwin was ſlaine by the conſent of his neuewe Oſwy, then Oſwy toke to him as felowe of that kyngedome, his brothers ſonne Odylwaldus the ſonne of Oſwalde. This Oſwalde gaue vnto Cedda Byſſhoppe of Wyncheſter before named, a ground in a place of the North countreye in the high hylles called Laſtingay, for to build vpon an abbay, which he there buylded, and after there taughte his brother Chimbillus, how he ſhoulde rule that place. Penda kynge of Mercia, whiche forgat not the ſtrengthing and fauouring that Anna kyng of Eaſtanglis had ſhewed to Kenwalch' his daughters huſbande and his enemy, gathred a power of knightes, and yode agayne the ſaid Anna, and ſlewe him in playne battayle. And the ſame yere one Botulphus buylded an abbay beſyde Lyndecolne or Lyncolne, in a place that hyght Icanno.

Oſwine kynge of Deyra.

The death of kynge Anna.

And as witneſſeth Beda in the .iii. chapter of his third boke, this yere whiche ſhould be the .xxi. yere of the reigne of Cadwall, Penda that of this former victorie was ſupprized with greate pride, came with his hoſt into the boundes of Northumberlande, entendinge to ſlee Oſwy, as before he had ſlayne his brother Oſwalde. whereof when Oſwy was ware, he aſſembled hys knyghtes, and made towarde him. And for affynytye of maryage that was betweene theyr chyldren, as after ſhall be ſhewed, and other cauſes, Oſwy offered vnto hym many greate offers, to thintent to haue had him releſed that battayle. And to haue

Ca.6.li.9.

had peace with hym.

When Oſwy perceaued the obſtinacy and pride of Penda, & ſaw that by no reaſonable offers he myghte of him winne peace, he ſayde: ſence this paynym can not receaue oure gyftes and proffers that we haue offered to him, we ſhall offer them vnto him that can receiue them. And anone he made his auowe vnto God, that yf he myghte haue the vyctorye of his enemies, he ſhuld offer his doughter Elfleda to him with ſufficient poſſeſſions for to buylde twelue abbays, and after ioyned in batayle with the ſayd Penda in the countrey of Ledis, not farre frō Yorke which was ſo ſore foughten, that the like thereof was not ſene many yeres before.

The vowe that Oſwi made to haue the victory.

But finally Penda was ſlaine and .xxx. of his cheife Captaines with him, and yet he had thrice the people that Oſwy had. And thoſe that ſcaped the ſword thereafter, were for the more parte drowned in the ryuer of ǂ Winwed, which was next vnto the place of that batail. And among the priſoners that were taken at this felde, the wife of Penda was one, and her ſonnes vncle named Egfridus was another. Then Oſwy yelded his thankes vnto God, and accordynge to his former promyſe, he offered his doughter Elfleda an Innocent of the age of thre yeares vnto God, and toke her to the lady of Hilda, Abbeſſe of Herteſey, or Herteſey landes. And after that ŷ ſayde Hylda remoued to the Abbaye of Strenſhalt, in the vale of Whitby, thyrty myle from Yorke, where ſhe was after abbeſſe, & the ſayde Elfleda alſo. And Oſwy as he had

The death of Penda.

ǂ Winned

promiſed, gaue landes and rentes to buyld .xii. abbayes. Wherof .vi. were in the prouince of Bernicia, & .vi. in the prouince of Deira.

How Oſwy bylded .xii. abbays

This forenamed Penda had diuers ſonnes by accord of writers, that is to meane Wolferus, Weda and Egfridus, beſyde other not minded. To this ſecond ſonne Weda, Oſwy had before tyme maried a doughter of his, by conſent of Penda his father. The which Weda by helpe of Oſwye was made kinge of ſouth Mercia, the which lordſhip is ſeuered from ŷ North Mercia, by the riuer of Trente, and conteyned by wrytynge of holye Beda fiue thouſande houſholdes. This Weda alſo promiſed when he maried the doughter of Oſwy, that he ſhould become a Chriſten man, the which he perfourmed after the death of his father. But when he had ſcantely reigned thre yeares ouer the ſayde Southmercis, he was by treaſon of his wyfe ſlayne. And after that kyngdome fel to Wolferus the other brother the which had wedded the doughter of Ercombert kynge of Kente, named Ermenilde. This Wolferus was [illegible] before, ſo that he is accompted for the fyrſte chriſtened kyng that reigned in Mercia. This was father to Kenred [illegible] that holye virgin and mayden Werburgan.

And for it is longe that I ſpake of Kenwalcus kyng of weſt Saxons, it is to be noted that after he had ouercome the Brytons as before is ſhewed, and at that tyme had [illegible] the Byſſhoppes ſee of [illegible] Wyncheſter, he then [illegible] there about. And accordinge to the will of Kyngyllus his father, he gaue to the sustentation of ỹ saide see all the lande whiche lay within .vii. myles of the sayde citie, as affyrmeth the Auctor of the floure of hystories, and finished it somedeale to this purpose.

ow Ken-
walc king
f Westsa-
ons furni
hed the see
f winche-
er.

But let no man thinke that it was builded as it is now. For nother that nor none other beinge at this daye standing, monastery, paleys, or other, but that they haue ben sens those days altered, & new chaunged, & some clerely throwen downe, & some new builded, albeit that many stand vpon theyr fyrste foundation as this yet doth.

Sone after that Kenwalcus had ended this worke, he made warre vpon Wolferus of Mercia. But in that iourney fortune was not to him fauourable, for he lost therby, and wanne nothynge of his entent.

It was not longe after that Ercombert kynge of Kent died, and his sonne Egbert was king after him .ix. yere. And soone thereafter fel great mortalitie and sickenesse in this lande of Britaine, ỹ which continued and encreased more and more, duringe the lyfe of Cadwallowe kynge of Brytons, and of Cadwaldir his successour or sonne after some writers. In the which season and beginning of this mortalitie and sickenesse, dyed manye byshops in this lande, in so muche that Vitalianus then beynge bisshoppe of Rome, ordeyned Theodorus archebysshoppe of Caunterburye to haue the rule of the churches of Brytayne. Somwhat before this time, Benet that was in good fauoure with kinge Oswy, and descended of ryche kynne, forsoke [illegible], and honour, and all his kinred, and became Christes seruaunt.] This Benet was the fyrst that brought the crafte of glasyng into this lande, and fostered vp this holy Beda, when he was but seuen yeres of age, and taught him during his lyfe. Of the vertue and pacyence of this holy monke and Byshoppe Benette, I myghte make a longe rehersall.

he death
Ercom-
ert.

A great
eath.

Who brou-
ghte the
craft of gla
synge into
this lande.

But I wyl retourne agayne to Oswy, The whiche when he had longe reigned ouer the Northumbers, he made Ceada that was Abbot of Lastingay, archebishop of Yorke, more by wil then by skil, and put out Wilfrida the Archebishop of that see. But it was not longe after that Ceada was depryued of that dignitie, by the auctoritie of the Archebishop Theodorus, as he depryued diuers other at that tyme, whiche came to theyr benefices agaynst the ordynaunce of the lawes of the churche, and made him by greate instaunce after this, byshop of westsaxons. And about the thirty yere of the reygne of Cadwall, Cissa that was father to Iue kynge of westsaxons, buylded the abbeye of Abyndon.

In these dayes the monkes and clergye of Brytayne, set all theyr myndes to serue God and not the world, the heart and not ỹ wombe. Wherefore they were then had in great reuerence and honoure, so that they were then receued with all worshyp. And as they went by the stretes and wayes, men that saw them, woulde runne to them, and desyre theyr blessynges. And well was hym that then myghte

The
on that in
tymes past
men hadde
in monkes

geue vnto them poſſeſſions, and buylded to them houſes and churches. But as they encreaſed in ryches of worldlye treaſures, ſo they decreaſed in heauenly treaſure, as in the dayes of Aluredus ſomdele began, and ſythen that tyme hath ſpronge not all to the pleaſure of God, wherof all is to be committed to his pleaſure. Then they plied nothinge that was worldelye, but gaue them to preachinge and teachinge of the worde of our ſauioure, and folowed the lyfe that they preached, by geuynge of good example. And ouer that they were ſo voyde of coueteouſe, that they receaued no poſſeſſions, but yf it were perforce.

The good lyuinge of the Monkes at the fyrſte.

The .xxxv. Chapter

Poli. lib. 5. Cap. 18.

Oswy kynge of Northumberland died, and Edfridus his ſonne was kinge after him .xv. yeres. His father had reygned with his felowes Oſwynus and Odyſwald .xxviii. yeares. Edfridus or Egfridus had to wyfe that holy womā Ethelfryde, that before was the wyfe of Tonbertus Prince of the ſouth Eyrwaies the which when Egfridus hadde holden .xii. yeares as his wyfe, and might not in that while haue leaue of her to deale with her carnally for prayer nor greate gyfte, he then gaue to her lycence to be a menchion at Colud vnder Aebba, that then was aunte vnto hym. And after ſhe remeued to Ely, and there was abbes, & lyued in great penaunce and abſtinence, and died there, after ſhe had ben .vii. yeare abbeſſe.

Gyrwyes.

And Kenwalcus kynge of weſt-Saxon, dyed about the yere of the reigne of Cadwal king of Britōs the .xxxix. When he had reigned ouer them .xxx. yeres. And his ſone Kenewynus ſucceded hym, after that Sexburga his mother or wyfe vnto his father, hadde ruled that prouynce one yere.

The death of Kenwalcus.

Cedda the byſhop of weſtſaxons dyed, and his Deacon Wenfrede was his ſucceſſour. And when he was put downe, the abbot of Medampſtede that now is called Peterborough, was there byſhop after him.

Sone after this time dyed Wyna byſhop of London, after whom was biſhop Erkenwald, the whiche was brother to Ethelburga or Alborough the menchen, and after Abbeſſe of Berkynge in Eſſex. This holy Byſhop Erkenwalde founded the monaſteries of Chertſey in Southerye, and Berkynge aforeſayde, whiche place hath ben preſerued ſens the fyrſt foundation. But that of Chertſeye was throwen downe by the Danes, and reedified by Edgar kinge of Englande, as after foloweth.

After the death of Wolpherus kinge of Mercia, reigned his brother Etheldredus. And the wife of Wolpherus named Ermenilda, was made a menchen at Ely, and Wereburga his doughter was alſo made a Nonne at Trikingham, and dyed at Hamburgam. This Etheldredus kyng of Mercia had .iii. holye doughters, that is to ſaye Mylburga, Mildreda, and Milguida, & a ſonne of greate holyneſſe named Merelyn.

But after ſomme wryters all theſe foreſayde chyldren ſhoulde be the children of Wolpherus, and not of Etheldrede. And Wolpherus alſo hadde two holye ſyſters, named Kinedda, and Kineſwida, both nunnes, and buryed at Peterborough, where Ethelwolde bulded after an abbey of maidẽs.

Ye haue heard before howe Wylfryde was putte oute of the ſee of Yorke, wherfore he wẽt to Rome and complayned him to Agathon the byſhoppe of that ſee, and was well allowed in ſome thinges. But the kinge & Theodorus had there ſuch protectours and frendes, that he retourned withoute ſpedynge of his cauſe. Wherefore he retourned vnto the Southſaxons and buylded an abbey in Sileſey, and preached to the South ſaxons .xv. yeares, and conuerted much people, and taught to them the craft of fyſhinge.

Egfridus kynge of Northumberlande claymed the lande that Etheldrede kyng of Mercia held, for the which diuerſe aſſembles of treatye betwene them were had, but all were diſſolued without agrement, wherfore eyther partye gathered his ſtrength, and mette vpon a playne nere vnto the riuer of Trente, where was foughten betwene them a longe and ſharp fighte. In the whiche amonge a greate number on both partyes, was ſlain the brother of Egfride, named Elſwinus, but Edfride, or Egfride had the better. Then after this batayle, meanes of peace were agayne treated, ſo that finally Edfride had great ſummes of money, in recompencemente of his brothers death, and ſo reſted the ſayde two kynges accorded.

A blaſyng ſtarre.

And in this yere apeared Stella cõmeta, a blaſinge ſtarre, which betokeneth death or mortalitie of the people. And in the yere folowinge died of the Epedemie ſickneſſe, the holy abbes of Ely S. Etheldrede, her ſiſter Serburga that ſomtyme had ben wife to Ercombert kynge of Kent, was her ſucceſſoure. And this yere alſo died Helda that holy abbes of Whytby before ſpoken of, whiche was neuewe to Edwin lately kinge of Northumberland. In this abbey were alſo brethren vnder ẏ rule of Hylda, as at theſe dayes ben at Syon vnder the abbes there. Wherfore ſondry of thẽ were made byſhops, as Beſa, Wilfride, and other. Amonge theſe brethren was one named Cedmã, a man of great perfectiõ, the whiche vſed to make dities & ſonges to moue men to deuotion, wherin he paſſed al other at thoſe dayes.

A Synode kepte by Theodorꝰ.

Sone after this time Theodorus for diuers cauſes, kepte a ſynode or counceyle of Byſhops and other men of the churche at Hatfelde. By auctoritie of which counceyle, he deuided the prouince of Mercia, that Serwolphus then ruled alone, into .v. byſhoprykes, that is one to Cheſter, the ſeconde to Worceter, the thyrde to Lychefelde, the fourth to Cedema in Lindeſye, and the fyft to Dorcheſter.

About the .xlvi. yere of the reign of Cadwall, Kenewinus, kynge of weſtſaxons had occaſiõ of warre agayne the Brytons, ſo that they met nere vnto the weſt ſee, where after a ſharpe ſkyrmiſhe the Brytons were chaſed. And ſoone after Egfridus kynge of Northumberlande made warre vpon the Pyctes or Scottes, bycauſe they fauoured greately the Eaſte anglys agayne hym. But laſtelye by colour of flieng back, they broughte

Edfryde into a ſtreite among hilles and mountaines, & ſlewe him there with a great part of his people. And after his death a baſtard brother of his named Alfridus Notus was Kinge of Northumberlande, and reygned there .xviii. yeares, as witneſſeth Wyllyam wryter of ſtoryes of Kynges.

Alfridus Not⁹ was Kynge of Northumberlande.

And ſhortly after dyed Cadwal or Cadwalin kinge of Britons, when he had reigned, as teſtifieth Gaufryde, Guido, & other. xlviii. yeares. But nother Policronica, nor none of the other auctores of auctoritie, which Policronica alleged, ſheweth anye lyke actes of this Cadwall as Gaufryde doth, nor yet that he ſhoulde be buryed to the terrour and fear of the Saxons, or an Image of braſſe ſet of hym vpon an horſe ouer the Weſt gate of London called Ludgate, or yet the churche of S. Martine there nowe ſtandynge, ſhoulde be buylded by the Brytons, to that ende to pray for the ſayd Cadwal and his friendes, or that Cadwaladrus, whiche of Beda is named Cedwalla, ſhould be his ſonne, as of the ſayd Gaufryde is affermed.

The death of Cadwal Kynge of Brytayne.

Francia.

¶ The .cxxxvi. Chapter.

Clodoue⁹.

CLodoueus the yonger ſonne of Dagobert, and of Nautylda his wife, began his reigne ouer the middell part of Fraunce, and other partes thereof, in the yeare of our Lord .vi. hundred .xlv and the tenth yere of Cadwal thē Kynge of Brytons. And his elder brother Sygeberte was made kinge of Auſtracy or Lorayne, accordynge to the wyll of Dagobert theyr father.

This as before is ſayde of ſome writers is called Lowes, the whiche was guided by his mother, & by the counſaile of Agaynus then maiſter of his Palays, to whom the father had by his lyfe committed hym, for he at this daye was yonge of age and of diſcretion.

And ſhortely after he was made kynge, all ſuche porcion as belonged to the ryghte of his brother Sygebert, whiche was the third of his fathers treaſure and iewelles, was to hym delyuered.

Which dyſtribution made, he ſped him to Orleaunce, and thyther called to him the lordes of Burgoine, and receaued of them feautye and homage, and ordeyned there for his lieutenaunte or deputye, a noble Burgonion named Flantans, and gaue to him in mariage the neuewe of his mother Nautylda, named Ranebert. And after with a due charge to hym geuen for guiding of the ſayd countrey, ſent hym and the other lordes into Burgoyne.

But within a ſeaſon of time after, Wylibaldus a greate man of byrthe and myghte, enuyed thys Flantans, in ſuche wyſe, that he hadde hym in diſdaynynge, and beganne to dyſtourbe the countrey and the kynges peace. Wherof hearynge Clodoueus, in al haſt commaunded the ſayde Wilibaldus to appeare before hym. But whyle Wilibaldus ſente an Earle and a byſhop to the kinges court to purchaſe him frendes aboute the kynge, he was in that whyle ſlayne by the gyle of his ennemye Flantans.

How Wilibaldus was ſlayn.

About the .iiii. year of the reigne of Clodoueus, dyed his mother Nau-

A darthe of corne.

The churche of ſaint Denis beſide Paris was couered wyth plates of ſyluer.

Nantilda, a woman of great wiſdome and of vertuous condicion, and was honourablie buried by Dagoberte her huſbande in the churche of S. Denis. Soone after enſued ſuche ſcarcitie of corne that wheate and other graynes were at excedynge pryce. For after the rate of money now curant, a quarter of wheat was worthe two markes ⁊ an halfe, by meane of whiche ſcarcitie muche poore people were famiſhed, and dyed for defaute. Wherefore the kynge entendinge a remedye for the nedye people, cauſed the houſe or churche of S. Denys that his father before time hadde couered with plates of ſyluer, to bee raſed of and couered it wyth leade, and that ſyluer to bee diſtributed amonge the poore commons, to ſuccoure them agaynſte ſo greate and huge famin that then raygned, albeit that thys deede was ſomedeale withſtanden by Agulſus Abbotte of that place for that tyme.

The death of the fyrſt Pepyn.

Aboute the eyghte yere of his raygne, the fyrſt Pepyn that then ruled the houſe of Sigerbert king of Auſtracie died.

And ſoone after dyed Againus maiſter of the Palays of Clodoueus. For whiche two prynces in either countreys that they ruled, great doler and ſorowe was made After the death of whiche ſayde Prynces, a noble man and coſen to Dagobert late kyng, was choſen mayſter of the Palays wyth Clodoueus.

Thus king Clodoueus otherwiſe called Lowes, continued his raigne in great peace and proſperitie, and laſtlye died when he had raygned ſycke and whole by the terme of .xvi. yeres, not wythoute vice, as glotonye, lecherie, and excedinge auarice. And was buryed by hys parentes in the monaſterye forenamed, leauing after him thre ſonnes, named Clotharius, Childericus, and Theodoriche. After whoſe death hys wyfe named Batylde, became a Nunne in the monaſterye of Corbey, that before tyme ſhe hadde newelye reedified, and ended there her life.

¶ The .cxxxvii. Chapter.

Clotharius.

CLothariꝰ the eldeſt ſon of Clodoueus, was ordayned king of Fraũce, in the yere of oure Lordes incarnation .vi. hundred .lxii. and the .xxvi. yeare of Cadwall then kynge of Britons. The whiche anone as he was ſomewhat ſtabliſhed, he made maiſter of his palays, a mightye man, and tyrannous of condicion named Elborym, as ſhal apeare by his condicions enſuynge when the tyme conuenient of the expreſſement of them ſhall come. But of this Clotharius is lefte nothinge in wrytynge of worthye memorie, excepte that the Frenche chronycle ſayeth that he raigned about .iiii. yeres.

¶ The .cxxxviii. Chapter.

Theodoricus.

THeodoricus the ſeconde ſonne of Clodoueus, beganne hys raygne ouer the Frenche men, in the yere of grace, ſixe hundred .lxvi. ⁊ the .xxx. yere of Cadwal then king of Britons. The whiche by the counſayle of hys Lordes ſent his yonger brother Childeriche into the lordſhyppe of Auſtracie or Lorayne, to guyde that countrey:

with

wyth the ayde and aſſyſtence of Wolphanus a noble man of that countrey. For Sygeberte laſte king of that prouince, was before this time deed, withoute heire of his bodie.

This Theodorich gaue him al to ſlouthe and reſte, ſo that the gouernaunce of the realme was all in the power of the maiſter of the palayes, whiche was ſtyll continuinge the forenamed Eboryne. The whiche amonge other cruell deedes by him doen, he impriſoned the Biſhoppe of Oſton, called Leodegayre. And laſtelye after manye tormentes and vyllanies to hym doen, he raced hys eyen out of his head. This deede he with many other to the kinges diſhonoure, whiche were all laied to the kinges charge, for ſo muche as the kinge kepte moſt what his palays. (Except that ſeaſon of the yeare in the moneth of Maye, he ſhoulde be broughte with greate pompe into a place where the people ſhoulde beholde him, and geue and offer vnto him giftes, and retourne vnto the Palayes that he was broughte fro, and there reſte all the yere folowyng.) By meane whereof Eboryne dyd what to him was likinge, and vexed and troubled the people greuouſlye.

The depoſition of Theodoricus.

Wherefore by aſſente, the lordes aſſembled them and by authoritie depriued the kinge of all dignitie, and cloſed him in a monaſtery ther to continue the reſidue of his life, when he hadde borne the name of a kinge without execution of the acte thereunto belonginge, three yeres, and the cruell Eboryne thei exiled to Luxon or Luxunborgh, in the prouince of Burgoyne, and not to departe thence vpon paine of his life.

¶ The. xxxix. Chapter.

Childericꝰ.

CHildericus or Hyldericus the thirde ſonne of Clodoueus, that was ſente to rule the Prouince of Auſtracie was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce in the yeare of grace. vi. hundred. lxix. and the xxxiii. yere of Cadwall before named. Of the whiche deede the ſaid lords ſhortly after repented them. For this Childeriche was yonge and of lighte maners: oppreſſed his ſubiectes greuouſlye, and vſed the lawes of his progenitours after his pleaſure and wyll, & wold nothinge be aduertiſed nor ruled by Wolphanus aforenamed, the whyche was before time aſſigned to hym for hys counceloure and guyde. But in augmentynge hys malice, he cauſed a noble man of his realme named Bolyd, wythout gylte or treſpace or greuous offence doinge, to bee bounden to a ſtake, and there beaten tyll he yelded the ſpirite. For the whiche crueltie wyth other, the Lordes wyth the commons murmured ſoore agaynſte hym, ferynge lyke puniſhement without deſeruyng. Wherefore they conſpired againſt him, and moſte ſpeciallye two noble men of byrthe and of myghte, named Iugebert and Amabert.

A cruell tirannous deede.

A conſpiracie againſt the kynge.

Whiche two with other awayted their time & ſeaſon when they myghte fynde time conuenient to brynge the kinge out of lyfe. And vpon a daye when the kinge with his wife and ſmall company with them, were in the woode in theyr diſporte and game, the ſayde two lordes accompanied purpoſely, fel

vpon

Childebert is ſlayne.

vpon him and ſlewe him there, and his wife alſo greate with childe, the whyche ranne betwene her lorde and theim, to the intente to haue ſaued her lorde and huſband from the dynte of the ſworde. The whiche deed was done when the ſayde Childerich had reigned ouer the frenchemen after mooſte writers two yeres.

The.cxl.Chapter.

Theodori-
us reſto-
red to hys
ingdome.

THeodoricus before depoſed was by the lords of Fraunce agayne reſtored to his former dignitie, in the yere of our Lord.vi. hundred thre ſcore and.xi. and the xxxv.yere of Cadwal aforenamed. Therof when Eboryne was warned, he anone drewe vnto the kinges preſence. By whoſe fauour and his owne ſtrengthe, he was againe reſtored to his former dignitie and honour, ſo that he was in like authoritie as before tyme he had been.

Then he gathered to him great ſtrengthe, and chaſed Lyndeſyle then maiſter of the palayes vnto a place named Boccauile, & ſhortlye after was poſſeſſed of the kinges treaſurie. After the whiche ſeaſon, this Eborine fayning loue and amitie vnto the ſayde Lyndeſyle, traiterouſlye ſlewe hym. And when Eboryn had thus delyuered Lyndeſyle, he thoughte he myght the better exerciſe hys oled tyrannye and wilfull actes. So that then he exiled diuers prelates, and menne of the churche, and ſette in their places ſuche as him lyked. Whereof the nobles of Fraunce beinge aduertiſed, and ſpeciallye Martine and Pepyn two of the moſte nobles of the region: they called to theim aſſiſtance to wythſtande the tyrannie of Eboryne: the whiche yf he mighte bee ſuffered, ſhoulde deſtroye the common weale of the lande. Then this Pepin (which after the rehearſal before made in the hundred and two & thirtie chapter, ſhould be the ſecond of that name, and ſurnamed Vetulus & Breuis, alſo yet by conuenience of time, to me it ſeemeth to bee one man that ruled in the time of Dagobert and now, albeit, the Frenche cronicle meaneth two ſondrie perſonnes) with the forenamed Martyne, aſſembled a greate hooſte and gaue battaile vnto the ſaide Eboryne. But that was to their harme, for they loſte the feelde and were coacted to flee, the one to the Citye of Loan, and that other to Auſtracie.

And Eboryne whiche amonge vſed hys accuſtomed treaſon, vnder diſſimuled loue ſlewe the ſayd Martyne, as he before had ſlaine Lyndeſyle.

In this time floured Hermofreditus a dere kinſman of the biſhoppe Leodegayr, that Eboryne before had martyred, as before is ſhewed. The whiche Hermofreditus bearinge in minde the paſſion of the ſayde kinſman, wayted his time and ſlewe the ſayd Eboryne. After whoſe death diſcention grew amonge the Frenche men, for the admiſſion of a maiſter of the Palayes, albeit that after the ſayde variaunce, one Graccon was choſen and admitted. But it was not longe after that Gyllomarus his ſonne putte hys father from the rule thereof. This, after he hadde a while occupied, he died of ſodain death: after whom ſucceded again his hys father Graccon or Gracon, the whyche alſo dyed ſhortelye after.

Then beganne newe queſtions amonge the nobles of Fraūce for thys office, ſo that laſtlye they chaſe a man of lowe byrth and vnmeete to that rome, named Bethayre or Bathayre. But Pepyn whiche by all this ſeaſon was in the countrey of Auſtracie, & heard of the controuerſyes and dyuerſe opinions of the Frenchmen, aſſembled to him a ſtronge hooſte, and ſpedde hym towarde the Kynge, entendynge to haue the rule of him, rather then ſuche other that were of leſſe authoritie and honoure. Whereof the kynge being warned, by the prouiſion of Barthayr aforeſayde, he gathered his armye and mette with Pepyn. And after a ſharpe fyght betwene bothe Hooſtes hadde, Bathayre was ſlayne, and the kinge chaſed, and finallye was forced to admit Pepyn for the maiſter and gouernoure of his Palayes. But for as muche as Pepyn hadde then the rule of Auſtracye and myghte not well ouer ſee bothe charges, he therefore purueyed vnder hym a Subſtitute, named Nordoberte, whyle he retourned into Auſtracie or Lorayne. And ſhortly after died the kyng, when he had borne the name thereof by the terme of ninetyne yeares, leauynge after him two ſonnes named Clodoueus and Childebertus.

Anglia.

¶ The .cxli. Chapter.

Cadwaladrus.

CAdwaladrus that of the reuerent Beda is named Cedwalla, beganne to ryſe and rule the Brytons and alſo the Weſtſaxons, in the yeare of grace ſyxe hundred and foure ſcore and three, and the twelue yere of Theodoricus then king of Fraūce and alſo the laſte yere of Kenewinus or Kentwinus then kyng of Weſtſaxon. This of * Gaufride & other authours with the Engliſh cronicle is called the ſonne of Cedwall.

Ca.6.li.

But William that wrote the actes and deedes of kynges, ſaieth that he was the ſonne of Kenebryghte, and deſcended lynallye of the bloud of Cedericus the firſt king of the Weſtſaxons.

The whyche Cadwallader or Cedwalla made warre vppon Lotharius king of Kent, and deſtroyed muche of that prouince, & wanne the Iſle of Weyght, and gaue the fourth parte thereof vnto S. Wylfrede: in the which ſaid fourth part were accompted thre hundred houſholdes.

The while that Cadwallader was beſyed in one part of Kente, his brother named Mulkyn with a certayne of knightes was beſeiged, and laſtlye brente in another parte thereof. In reuengemente wherof Cadwallader of newe deſtroyed a moore parte of the ſayd Prouince.

Continuinge the whych warre Lotharius forenamed was wounded and dyed: After whome Edricus was king, the which raigned but a ſhorte ſeaſon.

Aboute thys time Cuthberte was biſhoppe of Hegulſtalde or Durham, and after byſhoppe of Lyndeferne. But laſtly he refuſed that, and became an Ancre in the Iſle of Farne, and there dyed. This Iſle is nowe called holye Iſlande.

Then Cadwallader made war vpon Athelwold king of Southſaxons or Southſex, and ſlewe him in playne battayle, and after made hys Companyons thrall to hym.

But this agreeth not with the former ſayinge rehearſed in the lxx. [illegible] xiiii. chapter of this worke preceding, wher it is ſaid that the kingdom of Southſaxons endured but an hundred and .xii. yeres. By the which reaſon this Ethelwolde or Athelwolde ſhoulde at [illegible] be king of the South Saxons.

For the terme of a hundred and twelue yeres was expired moore then [illegible] yeres before this daye. But ye ſhal vnderſtand that this foreſaide terme of a hũdred and twelue yeres, is mente for the continuaunce of this kingdome, or they were ſubdued: and the kinges thereof named vnderkinges, as this Ethelwolde was.

Then it foloweth, when Cadwallader had ruled the Britons and alſo the [illegible] by the terme of three yeres [illegible] [illegible] to Rome [illegible] Sergius then biſhop of Rome, he was [illegible] which [illegible], and continued there hys life tyme in perfect holynes.

Of this Cadwallader or Cedwalla many and diuerſe opinions are written of authours bothe of hys reigne, and alſo of the continuaunce thereof: and ouer that, of the time when he forſoke hys lande, wherin is great variaũce, as I ſhewed in the table at the begynninge of this ſimple worke. So that it ſhould ſeme that theſe two names ſhoulde ſounde to bee ſundrye perſons; wherof the contraries is acertayned by the foreſayd Ranulphe, where as he ſaith that Cadwaladrus or Cedwalla was but one perſone; the which was laſte kinge of Britons and Weſtſaxons. And alſo for ſo much as they reygned next vnto Cambria or Wales.

If I ſhould here medle in the cauſe of the auoydinge of this lande by Cadwallader as is before ſhewed in Gaufride, it would aſke a long proceſſe of tyme; and alſo it appeareth the more doutfull, that it is not teſtified of the auctoure of Polycronicon, conſideringe the greate number of auctours, which he ſoughte and alleged for his authoritie, as it is ſhewed in the fyrſte chapter of his fyrſte booke. And ſpecially ſence that holy Gyldas and Bede is amonge the ſayd authours accompted, which [illegible] great diligence in [illegible] of the dedes & actes of the Britons.

[illegible] to folowe the [illegible] as before is ſaid, when this Cadwallader had reygned thre yeres he went to Rome, and there [illegible] and was buried in the Church of S. Peter, with

The death of Cadwallader.

this Epitaphye or ſuperſcription vppon his tombe, as foloweth in mytre.

Culmē, opes, ſobolē, potēcia regna triūphos,
Eximias, proceres, mœnia, caſtra, lares,
Queq; patrū virtus, et que congeſſerat ipſe
Cadwald armipotens, linquit amore dei.

¶ The whiche verſes maye bee engliſhed in maner as foloweth.

Worſhypfull ryches, kynred, tryumphes aſſured
Plenteous wealth, with clothes richely dight,
Houſes, caſtels, and townes ſtrongely mured,
And other honors which by his parētes might
And his owne, this marciall verteous knight
Cadwald the ſtrong, deſcended of knightes blood
For Chriſtes loue renounced all his good.

And thus here endeth the lyfe and rule of the Britons now called Welſhemen, which tooke that name of their Duke or leader as ſayeth Guydo, called Walle or Gualo, or els of a queene of Wales named Galaes or Wales. But howſo that name came firſt to them, nowe are they called Welſhe men, that ſometime were named Britons or Brutons, deſcended fyrſte of Troyans, and after of Brute, and laſtlye of Dunwallo Molyuncius or Molmucius Dunwallo. Albeit, they were greatly mingled or medled wyth other nations, as Romaines, Pictes, and other, as by the reading of the premiſſes ye maye well perceyue and knowe. And nowe bee they Engliſhe, that in their begynninge, were Saxons or Anglis. But yet for ſo muche as the Welchmen extoll ſo hugely their bloude and alyaunce, fetchynge it from Priam, but not from Eneas, and regarded ſo litle the progenye or lineal diſcent of the Saxons or Anglis, therefore to the intente to keele ſomewhat their hyghe corage or to preſſe in partye their brutiſhe blaſtes, I wil bring in here the ſayinge of Guydo and other, that auaunce the bloude or diſcent of the Saxons to be farre aboue the Britons, as they that are diſcended of Goddes and men immortall, where the Brytons clayme the ofſprings to come of men that were mortall, and not moſte allowed in honoure, yf they thinke vpon Eneas vntrueth and treaſon.

Then to folowe the foreſayde authour Guydo, that ſayeth: Woden of whome the Saxons take their originall, was the ſonne of Frealoffe, the ſon of Fredewolfe, the ſonne of Flyn, the ſonne of Flokwalde, the ſonne of Geta, that was the ſone of [illegible], that is nexte in honoure to Pluto god of hell, and chiefe Iudge of the infernall iuriſdiction.

¶ Therfore ye Welchmen hereafter nurtour lerne,
And diſpyſe not Saxons that bee to God ſo nere.

Thus then appeareth by the contrepaunce of this worke, that the laſt or thyrde yere of Cadwallader was the yeare of Grace ſixe hundred. lxxx. and. iii. which he maketh the yere of the worlde v. M. viii. C. lxxx. and v. By which reaſon it appeareth that the Britons had the rule of this land for the moſte partye, to reken from the fyrſte cominge of the Duke or leader Brute, by the ſpace of a thouſande eyghte hundred and two and twentie yeres.

And thus here endeth the

fifte parte of this woorke, for the conſideration before rehearſed, that Bryton kyuges after thys daye, raigned none in this realme and the Saxons or Anglis beganne fullye to haue dominion thereof. Thys. v. parte to bee accompted from the laſte yere of the miſerie of Britons, or the firſte yeare of Conſtantine brother to the kynge of Armorica, vnto the thyrde or laſte yere of Cadwallader, includeth of yeres. ccliii.

¶Thus endeth the fifte part.

¶The ſyxte parte.

¶The. cxl. Chapter

After that Cadwalader was thus departed the lande, as ſome authours meane, this lande of Brytayne was in greate diſcencion, by meane of the Britons and Saxons, by the terme of eleuen yeares. And ouer that the mortalitie before ſpoken of encreaſed ſo hugelye, and therewith greate hunger and famyne ouerſpredde the lande, that by the occaſion of one and other, the people of thys realme was wonderfullye miniſhed and leſſed, ſo farforthly, that (as witneſſeth Gaufride, and alſo the Engliſhe cronicle) the quicke bodies ſuffiſed not to burye the dead. But in ſo much as of this ſpeaketh not the monke of Cheſter nor other authoures, as before is ſhewed in the foreſayde table (the whiche I remitte to the correction of the learned, writynge thys onelye to Engliſhe readers as there is furtherlye declared.) I therefore folow the ſaid Ranulph monke of Cheſter, wher he ſayeth that Iewe or Iue was kynge of Weſtſaxons nexte after the forenamed Cadwalader: The whiche I ſhall firſte ſhewe the ſtorye of, and ſo of the ſucceſſours of hym in that kyngedome: for that that they ſubdued laſtye all the other kingdomes: and ſomedeale touche of the other kyngdomes or lordſhyppes, as tyme conuenient ſhall requyre, in expreſſinge of the ſtories of the ſayde Weſtſaxon kynges, tyll the lande be brought agayne to one monarchie.

And for the deuiſion of the ſayd kyngdomes ſhall ſtande ſomdeale farre a ſunder, ſo that to the readers it were ſomewhat paynefull to ſearche for eueryche of them: I therefore haue ſette them oute in the compaſſe folowynge, that it may appeare to the reader the beginning of eueryche of them, and howe longe ſeaſon or tyme eyther of the ſaide kingdomes contynued or endured, with the names alſo of euerye kyngedome, and in what part of this land euery lordſhip was ſtabliſhed for the tyme, and ſette.

¶The. cxli. Chapter.

Iue or Iewe diſcendinge of the bloud of the Saxons, was ruler or kyng of Weſtſaxons, next after the forenamed Cadwalader had renounced the pompe of the worlde. The whiche to folowe the opinion of Policronicon, beganne his raigne the yere of grace. vi. hūdred & .lxxxvii. and the. xvi. yeare of the seconde Theodoricus then king of Fraūce and ruled the Weſtſaxons knightlye, and mayntened ſuche warre agaynſte the Kentiſhe Saxons, that the men of Dorobernia or Caunterburie graūted vnto hym to haue peace. And alſo for a recōpenſement of the death of Mulking brother to Cadwaladir before ſlayn, as is ſhewed in ẏ preceding Chapter by the ſaid Kentiſh Saxons, they gaue vnto him for the ſayd conſiderations thre thouſande pounde.

About the. vi. yere of the raigne of Iue the holye man Cutlake about the. xxiiii. yere of his age, renounced the pompe and pryde of this world, and tooke the order of monkes in the abbey of Repindon And the. iii. yere after he wente to Crowland, and there ledde for the whyle an ankers life, and there finally was buried.

In whiche yſle and place of his buriyng ſtandeth now a fayre abbey, the whiche for the greate reſorte of geſtes that thyther draweth, and for the good and frendlye chere that geſtes there receiue & take; the place hath purchaſed a ſurname and is named Crowlande the curteys, the whiche is a place of good fame. And there lieth alſo the holye confeſſour Noetus, ſometime diſciple of Erkenwalde biſhop of London.

In the. xi. yere of the raigne of Iue, befell the wonder and meruayle that is tolde of Brightwaldus: the whyche after that he hadde been a longe whyle deade, was reſtored to lyfe agayne, and tolde many thynges of great wonder to manye menne, whereby he cauſed great almes, and manye other deedes of charitie to bee executed. And after the diſpoſition of his owne goodes, by the agremente of hys wyfe, he wente vnto the abbey of Maylroos, & ther in greate holyneſſe contynued the reſidue of his life.

Aboute the ſyxtene yere of the raygne of Iue, Etheldredus before minded in the hūdred and. v. and thyrtye chapter king of Mercia: forſoke his worldlye honoure and became a monke at Bardeney, when he hadde lōge tyme ruled the menne of Mercia or myddle Angles. Hys brother Kenredus was king after hym the whiche alſo after he hadde raigned. v. yeres, left his kingdome vnto Colredus the ſonne of his vncle, and he wyth Offa the ſonne of Iue nowe kynge of Weſtſaxons, and with Egwynus biſhoppe of Wikcies or of Wike, whiche ſee is now at Worceter, with this foreſayde company this Kenredus yode vnto Rome in pilgrimage, and there ended his life.

And aboute the. xviii. yere of the raigne of Iue died the holy biſhop Adelme, which firſt was a monke and abbot of Malmeſburye, and the laſte byſhoppe. Of hym it is wrytten that when he was ſtired by his ghoſtlye enemie to ẏ ſinne of the fleſhe, he to do the moore tormēt to him ſelfe and of his bodie, wold holde within his bed by him a faire maidē, by ſo lōg time as he might ſay ouer ẏ whole ſauter: albeit that ſuche holynes is no article of Sayncte Benettes lore, nor yet for diuers inconuenience moſte alowed by holye doctours.

tours. And amonge many of hys vertuous and holye deedes Ranulph monke of Cheſter ſheweth that for the fame of his holynes ſprange wide, Sergius the fyrſte of that name, being B. of Rome, ſent for him to Rome, In whiche ſeaſō of his there being, the ſayd Sergius was accuſed or defamed of the getting of a childe, the which the .ix. day of the ſayd childes age, was brought to holy Aldelme to bee chriſtened. By vertue of whoſe praier, the childe anſwered vnto certayne queſtions, and clered the B. of Rome of that crime that was before put vpon hym.

Colredus ynge of ercia.

Neare aboute the .xxiii. yere of Iue, Colredus than king of Mercia for cauſe of variaūce betwene him and Iue vnremembred of myne authoure, aſſembled hys knightes, and began to warre vpon him. Wherof the other hauing knowledge, in like wiſe gathered his power, & laſtly mette, to bothe their harmes, at a place called Wodinſburgth. Where after longe fight either of them ſped ſo vnhappely, that it was not knowen whether hoſt had moſt domage.

Ca.23.li.5.

And nere aboute the .xxv. yere of Iue as witneſſeth holye Beda, S. Iohn of Beuerlay that than was biſhop of Yorke died, & was buried in the porche of the mynſter of Deyrwood or Beuerlaye.

Then Iewe or Iue callynge to mind the coūſeyl of holy Aldelme, that before time had counſayled him to build an abbey at Glaſtenbury, began the ſaid worke about the .xxxii. yere of his raigne, and founded there an abbey, the whiche continued proſperouſlye tyll the commynge of the Danes, by whoſe crueltie it was then ſore blemiſhed. But afterward by the helpe of S. Dunſtane, in the time of Edmunde and Edgare, it was agayne ſufficientlye repaired, and ſo continued tyll the commyng of the Normans, after whiche ſeaſon it was agayne beſette wyth hard happes. But now at this day it ſtandeth in a place of greate wealth and honour.

Ca.24.li.5

Then as foloweth, when Iue had ruled the Weſtſaxons noblye, by the terme of .xxxvii. yeres, by the aſſiduate laboure of his wyfe Ethelburga, as ſhe that long had laboured hym to leaue the worlde and coulde not brynge aboute her purpoſe vppon a ſeaſon when the kynge and ſhe hadde reſted theym in a fayre palayes richelye behanged, and were vppon the morne thence departed, ſhe by her commaundement, cauſed the ſayde palayes to bee repleniſhed wyth all kynde of fylthe and dunge, and hogges and vyle beaſtes therein to bee layed, as well in the chambers as other houſes of office.

And when ſhe knew that this palayes was thus deformed, ſhe beſought the king to viſite the ſaid paleys. And when ſhe had brought hym thereunto ſhe ſayde to hym: I praye you my Lord behold nowe thys houſe. Where are nowe the riche tappets and clothes of gold and ſylke, and other ryche appairell that we lefte here thys other daye? And where bee the delyces and pleaſaunt ſeruitours & coſtlye diſhes, that you and I lately were ſerued wyth? Bee not all theſe paſſed and gone? My Lorde in like maner ſhal we paſſe as ſodenlye,

lye, as ye ſee theſe worldly things been paſſed. And our bodies whiche nowe been dilicatelye keeped, ſhall fall and tourne into fylth of the earth. Wherfore haue in mind my wordes that before thys time to you I haue often ſhewed and tolde, and buſye you to purchaſe that Palayes that euer ſhall endure in ioye wythoute tranſmutation.

By meane of theſe wordes and other, the Queene touched ſo the Kinges minde, that ſhortly after he reſygned the gouernaunce of his kingdome vnto Ethellardus his neuewe, and for the loue of Chriſt tooke vpon him the habite of a poore man, and ſetting a part all the pompe and pryde of thys world, accompanied him in the felowſhip of poore men, and yode vnto Rome in pilgrimage wt greate deuotion, when he had been king of Weſtſaxons, as before is ſayde xxxvii. yeres. After whoſe departinge, the foreſayde Ethelburga his wife went vnto Barking. vii. myles from London, where in the abbey before of Erkenwald founded, ſhe continued & ended an holy life, when ſhe had ben abbeſſe of the place a certayne of time. It is ſayde & teſtified of William writer of kinges, that this Iue was the firſt kinge that graunted a penye of euery fyre houſe throughe this realme to bee payed vnto the courte of Rome, whiche at thys day is called Rome Skot, or Peter pence, and yet is payed in manye places of Englande. But why it was graunted the cauſe is not here ſhewed, howebeit it ſhalbe ſhewed after.

Iue graunted the Peter pẽce to the courte of Rome.

¶ The.cxlii.Chapter.

Clodoueus

Clodoueus ẏ thyrd of that name, and the ſonne of the ſeconde Theodoricus, beganne hys dominion ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yeare of grace ſyxe hundred and nynety and in the thyrde yeare of Iue, then Kynge of Weſtſaxons. Of this Clodoueus is of writers left no maner of memorie, ſoundynge to good nor euyll: but Pepyn before named continued as maiſter of the Palayes by all the tyme of the raygne of the ſayde Clodoueus. The whiche after that he had borne the name by the ſpace of. iii. yeres, he died wythoute yſſue, and was buryed by hys father. By reaſon of whoſe deathe, the ſayde kingdome fell by ſucceſſion vnto his brother Childeberte.

¶ The.cxliii.Chapter.

Childebert

Chyldebertus the ſecond ſonne of Theodoriche, and brother of Clodoueus aforeſayde, began his dominion ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. vi. hundred and .xciii. and the ſyxe yere of Iue then kynge of Weſtſaxons. In the tyme of whoſe raygne alſo the foreſayde Pepyn contynued as chiefe Ruler of the kynges houſe, albeit that he for ſuche other charge as he hadde of ouerſeing of the realme, ſet in hys place a Subſtitute or Deputie, as hys ſonne Grimonarte and other.

This Pepin contrary to the law

of the Churche, helde beſyde hys laweful wife called Plectrude, a woman named Alpayde. For the whiche the Biſhoppe of Tret named Lamberte, blamynge and rebukinge the ſayde Pepyn, was by the brother of the forenamed Alpayde, whiche is called Dodo or Dodon, ſlaine and martyred in the yere of oure Lorde .vi.C. and xcviii. as teſtifieth Antonynus in the .vi. Chapter of the .xii. title of the ſeconde parte of his worke, called Summa Antonini. And affyrmeth the ſayde Antonynus and the Frenche cronicle, the ſayd Pepyn receyued of the ſayde Alpayde a ſonne, the whiche he named Charles, whiche Charles was ſurnamed Martellus, & was right profitable to the realme of Fraunce as after ſhall appere.

¶ Of the foreſaide kinge Chyldebert is nothing lefte in wrytinge worthye memorie, except that he receyued of his wife a ſonne named Dagobert, and kept the name of a kinge by the terme of .xviii. yeres as ſayeth the cronicle in Frenche, and than dyed, and was buried in the abbey of Caus, in the churche or chapell of ſainct Stephan.

¶ The .cxlviii. Chapter.

Dagabertꝰ

Dagobertus the .ii. of that name, and ſonne of Childebert before named, began his raign ouer the Frenche men, in the yere of grace .vii. hundred and tenne, and the .xxiii. of Ine than kinge of Weſtſaxons. The whiche was vnder the rule of Pleſtrude the wife of Pepyn than dead, and of Theodowalde than mayſter of the Palayes. This Plectrude as before is ſhewed, was ſtepmother to Charles ſonne of Pepyn and of Alpayde. Wherefore ſhe bearynge malyce vnto the ſayde Charles, cauſed hym to be holden as pryſoner wythin Coleyn. Where he as pryſoner remaining, the foreſayde Theoldowalde exercyſed ſuch tyrannies, and putte vpon the people ſuche exactions, that diſſencion grewe betwene hym and the Lordes of Fraunce, ſo that diuers conflictes and ſkirmiſhes were hadde amonge the nobles of Fraunce, for partyes were taken vppon eyther ſydes, wherby the Kynges partye at length was weked. And finallye, the ſayde Theoldowalde was depryued of his roome, and one Rangafredus was made mayſter of ye palayes. The whiche beynge accompanied wt conuenient ſtrēgth, tooke wyth hym the Kynge, and conueyed hym throughe the Foreſt of Charbonnur, tyll he came to the ryuer of Meuſe. In the whiche paſtime the forenamed Charles beinge as aboue is ſaid priſoner, by the fauour of his keepers or otherwiſe brake priſon and eſcaped. And ſhortlye after dyed the kinge, when he hadde raygned or borne the name of a king as other of his progenitours had done, by the terme of .xi. yeres, leauyng after him nother any childe as then knowen, nor anye nere of allye, whiche was cauſe of miſorder of the title of Fraunce, as afterward ſhall appeare.

¶ The .cxlix. Chapter.

Daniel that of the Frenche mē was after named Chilperiche, was by aſſent of theym made kinge in the yere of grace

Danſell.

grace. vii. hundred and. xxi. and the. xxxiiii. yere of Iue then king of Weſtſaxons.

This as teſtifieth maiſter Robert Gagwyn, and alſo the french cronicle, was a Prieſte or Clerke, and for his wyſdome was cheriſhed before time in the kynges palayes: in the whiche time and ſeaſon he ſuffered his crowne to bee ouergrowen. Or elles after Antoninus, thys Daniell after the deathe of Dagoberte, for ſo much as he lefte after hym none of the royall bloude, the Frenche men ſuppoſynge him to bee a man apte for the rule of the lande, for ſuche experience as before time in hym had bee proued, kepte hym ſecrete a certayne of tyme tyll hys heare was fullye growen, and then declared hym to bee the brother of Dagoberte, and chaunged hys name, and called hym Chylperyche, and ſo by one aſſent admitted hym for kinge of Fraunce.

Charles before ſpoken of ſonne of Pepyn, being eſcaped the daunger of priſonmente, ſoughte and compaſſed by all maner of waies howe he might obteyne the rome that ſometyme hys father occupied. And this to bringe to effecte, he purchaſed to hym a yonglynge of fayre and goodlye maners and ſtature named Clothayre, & ſayde that he was deſcended of the royall bloude of Fraunce, by meane whereof in ſhorte whyle he gathered to hym great ſtrength. Wherof hearing Chilperyche commaunded Rangafrede to aſſemble hys knightes to withſtonde the purpoſe of Charles. And ſoone after bothe Hooſtes mette neare vnto the forenamed ryuer of Meuſe, where was foughte a ſtronge and cruell batayle, of the whyche Rangafrede was victor, and compelled Charles to forſake the felde. But he ſhortlye afterwarde aſſembled and gathered agayne together all ſuche as before were diſperſed, and fought eftſones wyth the ſayde Rangafrede at a place called Ablaue. Of the which battaile wyth greate difficultye Charles was laſtlye victoure, and chaſed Rangafrede and hys hooſt greatlye deminiſhed and waſted. Than thyrdlye theſe royal hooſtes mette in a felde called the wyne felde, where alſo was preſent the ſayde Daniell or Chilperiche, hauing in hys ayde amonge other Princes, the Duke of Gaſcoyne, and there fought a ſore and cruel battayle, whereof laſtlye was victour the ſayd Charles, and conſtrayned the kinge with the ſayde duke to flee vnto Orleaunce: where they takinge with theym ſuche treaſure as belonged to the kinge, and fled from thence vnto the Dutchye of Gaſcoyne.

When Charles conceyued that the king was eſcaped his daunger, and knew that Raganfrede was in the citie of Aungiers, he ſpedde him thither in al haſt, and compaſſed the citie with ſo ſtrong a ſiege, that finallye he obteyned the citie withall that was therein. But it was not longe after that Charles ſhewed vnto Raganfrede ſuch beneuolence, that he was ſet at hys libertie & fredome. The next yere folowing, the duke of Gaſcoyn before minded, hauinge perfect information by ambaſſade or otherwiſe, that Charles entended to make ſharpe & cruell warre vpon the Gaſcoines, for that, that they fauoured and kepte with them Danyell or Chylperich, he in auoidynge the ſayd daunger of warre, in ſhort tyme after ſent vnto Charles, and vnder certaine condicions betwene them agreed. Charles receyued vnder his charge ye ſayd Chylperyche, with all ſuche treaſure and iewelles as to hym or the royalme of Fraunce belonged.

In this paſſe tyme and ſeaſon dyed the forenamed Clothayre, that Charles before had made kynge. Wherfore to the more contentacyon of the realme, he allowed the forenamed Chylperiche for kynge, and he as mayſter of the kynges paleis and other his predeceſſours, ruled the lande of Fraunce. Than Charles hauynge thus the rule and gouernaunce, ruled it well and [illegible], and defended it from al enemies, durynge the lyfe of the ſayd Chylperiche. And after that Chilperiche had continued as kyng by the terme of .v. yeres, he dyed, and was buryed, as ſayth the Frenche Cronicle, in the citie of Noen, or Noyen, without iſſue of his body.

Anglia.

¶ The .cxlvi. Chapiter.

Ethelard⁹ li.5.ca.24

Ethelardus the neuewe of Ine, began his reygn ouer the weſt Saxons, in the yeare of grace .vii. hundred and .xxviii. and the thyrde yeare of Danyell, otherwyſe called Chilperich than king of Fraunce. This after ſome wryters is named Ethelredus.

In the tyme of his reygne, Oſricus as kyng reigned in Northumberland, to whom holy Beda wrote the ſtorye, called hiſtoria Anglicana, or more verely to his ſucceſſoure Colwolphus. Of the which Beda and of his workes, Ranulph monke of Cheſter ſheweth a compendious proceſſe in the .xxiii. chapiter of his .v. boke called Policronicon.

The forſaid Oſricus is named in the Engliſhe cronicle Oſwyght, of the which in the ſayd cronicle is reherſed a longe proceſſe. But for I ſe no autor of autoritie affirme the ſame, I therfore in this worke paſſe it ouer.

It ſhoulde appeare alſo by the meaning of Policronicon, that aboute this tyme dyed Ethelredus before touched kynge of Mercia, the which when he had long tyme ruled that countrey, he laſtely renounced the pompe of this worlde, and was ſhorne a monke at Bardeny.

Of the foreſayd Ethelard king of weſt Saxons, is lefte no memorye of any actes or dedes by him done. But as agree manye wryters, he dyed whan he had reigned .v. yeares without yſſue of his bodye.

And in Northumberland after the forenamed Oſricus, reygned Colwolphus, after whom Egbertus, and after whome Oſwolph, and after Oſwolph reigned Ethelbald or Ethelwalde. Albeit that dyuers authores of theſe names of kynges and continuaunce of theyr reygnes ſo dyuerſly and ſundryly reporte and wryte.

Francia.

¶ The .cxlviii. chapter.

Theodoricus. — Theodoricus was brought up in an houſe of Nonnes & not knowen. — Endo.

Theodoricus, the whiche of maiſter Robert Gagwyne is allowed to be the ſonne of the ſecond Dagobert, began his reigne over the Frenchmen in the yere of grace .vii. hundred and foure and the ſeconde yere of Ethelbaldus than king of Mercia was. The whiche was from his yonge and tender age foſtered and nouriſhed in a houſe of nonnes in womans clothing, and lately eſpied, and by conſente of Charles maiſter of the palayes, admitted for kynge.

After the whiche ſolempnities finiſhed, Charles hearing of the rebellion of a people called ye Sueuis or Sueuons, aſſembled an hoſte, and lightly them ſubdued. Which done, he tourned him toward an other part of ye Almains, and in like wiſe overcame them, and after retourned into Fraunce with great triumphe and riches, that he had wonne at thoſe two iourneyes.

It was not longe after, that Charles had thus ſubdued ye foreſayd people of Almaine, with alſo a great part of Germany, but that tidinges came to him, that Endo duke of Gaſcoyne rebelled agayne the kynge of Fraunce. Wherefore he in all goodly haſt prepared his army, and ſped him into Gaſcoin, where he made ſo cruell war, that he in ſhort time damaged greatly the countrey, and helde the Duke Endo ſo ſtreyte, that he was compelled to hyde him in ſecrete places of the countreye, where after greate ſearche he mighte not be founde. Wherfore he after ſettinge the countrey in ſome reſtfulneſſe, retourned him into Fraunce.

When Endo was ſure of the retourne of Charles into Fraunce, for ſo muche as he had proved the marciall knighthode of him, and knewe wel ye he might not him ſelf withſtand his knightly power, he therfore allied him with the king of Spayne than beyng a pagan or ſaraſyn, and named Abyderamus, and excited and ſtyred him to make warre upon the lande of Fraunce, promiſinge to him not all onely his ayde, but alſo that lande to him and to his heires for ever. Upon the comfort of which promeſſe and aſſiſtaunce of the ſaid Endo, this forenamed Abyderamus thorough [illegible] many [illegible] and cruell [illegible] [illegible] deſolation and deſtruction of the realme of Fraunce, as in the [illegible] hoſte of peoples (which theyr wyues, chyldren, and cattayle [illegible] the lande of Fraunce. And what they wan, they enioyed it as their owne. And ſo in proceſſe came they to the citie of Burdeux, the which after a certayne time of the citeſens defended, the ſayde miſcreantes wanne into theyr poſſeſſion, and diſtroyed the people thereof with all theyr churches and temples of the ſame. And from thence paſſynge the countrey in waſting it with yron and with fyre, laſtlye came unto Poytiers, Which citie as before ye haue hearde in the ſtory of the fyrſte Dagoberte, in the C. and .xxxii. chapter, was by him ſubuerted, and at this day newly reedified.

This citie alſo of them poſſeſſed, they in lyke maner as they hadde

dealte

dealt with Burdeaux, ſo dyd they with this, not ſparinge that holy place of S. Hyllary, but dyd vnto it great ſhame and vyllanye. And from thens they yode vnto Towers, waſtynge and ſleyng the people without mercy by all the way that they paſſed, and waſted that citie as they had done the other.

In the whiche paſtime Charles hearyng of the crueltie of this Arbideramus, aſſembled his power, and ſhortelye met with hym nere vnto Towers. Where he bare him ſo knyghtly, that he ſlew of the Pagains to exceadynge a nomber to be accordant with reaſon. But for I ſe it teſtified of ſo many wryters, it boldeth me to expreſſe the number, whiche was. iii hundred. iiii. ſcore and. v. thouſand and odde. And of the Frenchemen were ſlaine but. xv. hundred onely.

The nom-
er of Hea
then ſlaine
deſtroied.

For the whiche victorious acte, the ſaide Charles obteined a ſure name, and was called after that day Carolus Marcellus, the whiche is to meane, Charles the hammer. For lyke as the hammer maketh all metals plyable, ſo Charles made his foes or enemies pliable to his heſtis. And as the hammer cutteth, breaketh, or diſſeuereth yron and other hard metals, ſo didde this Charles diſmember and cutte or breake the enemyes of Fraunce through his hygh proweſſe.

It is ſhewed in the bokes called Cronica cronicarum, Supplementum cronicarum, Policronica, and other, that this victorye was obteyned by Charles of the Saraſins, but not as inhabitaũtes or incolers of Spayne, but that they were iſſued out of Africa, and then warred ⁊ had wonne great countreys in Spaine. The whiche is more accordaunte with hiſtories. For in theplegis or rehearſalles of the names of kinges of Spaygne, I finde no kinge of that name. Then it foloweth in the ſtory, when Charles Martell hadde thus obteyned victorye, he commaunded all the pillage to be brought to one place. That done, he deuided it amonge his knightes. And ſhortly after Endo knowledginge his offence, and ſekynge meanes of mercy, was agayne reſtored to the lande of Gaſcoyne.

The. cxlviii. Chapter.

Charles
Martell.

CHarles Martell hauinge the duke of Gaſcoine thus reconciled, ſent hym with a certain of knights againſt the reſt of the ſayde Sarazyns, the whiche by his manhode he oppreſſed and ſubdued, and clearly voyded the land of them. Then ſoone vpon this, begamne the Burgohions to rebell, and made ſharpe warre vpon the Frenchemen nexte adioynaunt to them, and dyd vnto the countreye and inhabitauntes of the ſame, great harme. The whiche warre, the ſayde Martell that therein toke greate payne, not withoute great trouble, laſtelye it appeaſed and them ſubdued.

In tyme of the whiche warre ſo continuinge, Endo before rehearſed duke of Gaſcoyne, dyed. Wherfore Charles to ſet that prouince in an ordre ⁊ due obeyſaũce, yode thether. Where he beyng buſied about the nedes of the ſame, tidinges to him were broughte that the wandales, whiche bene of the kind or linage of the Hunes before touched, hadde entred the land with an houge power, and in waſting the countreye, approched the citie of Senons or Sens, and it enuironned or becypped with a ſtronge ſiege. But by the vertue and ſtrength of the archbyſhop of the citie named Ebe, Ebbe, or Obbo, with the aſſiſtence of the citeſins of the ſame, the ſaid citie was defended and deliuered frome the power of the Wandales, and the power of theim abated and ſubdued.

For theſe manyfold incurſions and aſſautes of ennemies, and rebellion of the countreis that were ſubiecte to the crowne of Fraũce, the treaſour of Fraunce, and ſpecially of the temporall people, was ſore miniſhed and waſted. Wherefore in defence of all the lande, Charles Martel made requeſt to the ſpirituall men, & with greate difficultie hadde it graunted, that he mighte leuy certayne dimes to wage therewith ſouldiours, and prepare therewith other neceſſaryes for the warre.

Then Charles moued his hoſt towarde the Burgonions, that agayne were of newe ſtyrred, and exhorted by dyuers perſonnes to new rebellion. And after his comminge thither, did execution vpon ſuch perſons as he found culpable and not without battayl ſette the country agayne in quiet, and then retourned into Fraunce.

But he reſted not longe there, or he hearde worde that the Almaynes whiche dwelled ouer or beyond the riuer called the Rine, brake ouer into Fraunce. Theſe people are named in the Frenche boke Seſues, the which did great domage vppon the countreys adioyninge to the ſaid ryuer. But it was not longe after, or he hadde them chaſed and ſubdued, with alſo another people called the Hunis or Gothes, that he before had alſo vanquiſhed. The which after this ſeconde diſconfiture, they aſſociated vnto them the kynge of Longobardes named Luytprandus: By whoſe aſſiſtence and power, the foreſayde Gothes wanne the citie of Auignon and other ſtrõge holdes, to the greate hurte of the Frenche men.

And for at this ſeaſon Charles was greeued with ſickeneſſe, he therefore ſent his brother named Chyldebert to withſtand the ſaid enemies, the whiche bare hym ſo manfullye, that he chaſed the ſayd enemies.

But this ſayinge diſcordeth with other authores, whiche ſhewen that betweene this Charles and Luytprandus was continual amitie and frendſhip, in ſo muche that Luytprandus ayded and aſſyſted the ſayde Charles to auoyd the Saraſins that were entred a countreye of Fraunce called the Gallia Ciſalpina.

The death of Theodoricus.

In this time that Fraũce was thus wrapped in theſe hard happes and battayles, dyed the kynge Theodoricus, when he hadde occupied the name onely of a kynge xiiii. yeares.

Anglia.

¶ The. cxlix. Chapiter.

Cutbertus the neuewe of Etherladus, begāne hys reygne ouer ẏ Weſtſaxons, in the yeare of grace. vii. hundred and xxix. and the thyrde yeare of the ſeconde Theodoricus then kinge of Fraunce. In tyme of whoſe reygne Colwolphus reigned in Northumberland, to whom as before in the ſtory of Ethelard is touched, holye Beda wrote the ſtorye called Hiſtoria Anglicana. Aboute the. ii. yeare of the reygne of this Cutberte appeared in the fyrmament. ii. blaſyng ſtarres, or ii. ſtarres with creſtes, and caſte as it were brenninge brondes towarde the North.

And aboute the. vi. yeare of the reygne of Cutberte dyed the forſayde holy Beda, the which in his tyme made and wrote. lxxviii. bokes, ouer & beſyde his manyfolde workes of vertue that he vſed by al his lyfe time. It is told of him, that in his latter dayes when he was blynde, he was broughte by ẏ fraud of his leader vnto a great hepe of ſtones, the whiche his leader ſhewed to him was an aſſemble of men and women that were thether comen to here him preach the worde of God. Then he thinkynge his report to be true, anone with great deuocion began there a collation. And thereof when he came to the ende, the ſtones by diuine power, in likeneſſe of a great multitude of people ſayde. Amen, or after the ſaying of Antoninus, Deo gratias.

He was ſo noble of learnynge, and excellent in conning, that the fyrſte Sergius B. of Rome ſente for him to aſſoyle queſtions there made in his vniuerſitie. Alſo his conning is apparent in the bokes whiche he wrote ſuper Geneſim, ſuper Thobiam, ſuper Eſdriā ſuper Neemiam, with other, which woulde aſke a longe tract of time to reherſe, with alſo the homelies made vppon the goſpelles, but I paſſe ouer. When he was dead, he was buryed at the abbay of Gyruy, albeit the commoning is that he reſteth now with Saynt Cutbert of Durham.

Soone after this tyme and ſeaſon. Colwolphus kynge of Northumbelande when he had reygned. viii. yeares, reſigned his dominion to his coſynne Egbertus, and was ſhorne a monke in the abbaye of Geruye, or after ſome writers in the abbay of Lyndeſar or holy ylande.

Thus for as muche as litle is ſhewed of the deedes of Cutberte kynge of Merſaxons, therefore I haue made the more rehearſall of other thinges done in his time. For of him is nothynge lefte in wrytinge worthye to be remembred or mynded, ſauynge that he often and many tymes made war vpon Ethelwalde kynge of Mercia, and ſpedde therein diuerſelye, and laſtely dyed when he had reygned after mooſte wryters. xvi. yeares.

Francia.

The. cl. Chapter.

Hylde

Hildericus or childericus the ſecond of that name, and ſonne of Theodoricus, beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen in the yeare of oure lordes incarnation. vii. hundred and .xl. and the. xi. yeare of Cutbertus then kyng of Weſtſaxons. Of the which for his dulneſſe and his other enormities in him exerciſed, lytle or nothyng of his actes or dedes are put in memorye.

Ye haue before in the ſtorye of Theodorych, hearde of the puyſſaunt and ſtronge dedes of Charles Martell, the whiche ſtyll durynge his lyfe, continued in great honour, to the great ſuertye of the realme of Fraunce, & to the greate terrour and fear of theyr enemies wherof to rehearſe al the circumſtaunce, it woulde occupye a longe tyme. Wherefore ſhortely to conclude, laſtely after his manyfolde trauayles ſuſteined for yͤ weale of the realme of Fraunce, he dyed, leuynge after him thre ſonnes, that is to wytte Charlemayne, Pepin, and Gryffon, to the whiche he bequethed his poſſeſſions & goodes. But for the yongeſt named Gryffon helde him not contented with ſuche bequeſt as his father to him gaue, he therefore made warre vppon his other twoo brethren. The whiche behaued theym ſoo wyſelye, that withoute notable battayle, they toke theyr ſayd brother, and putte hym in a ſafe kepynge. And that done, the ſayde twoo brethren aſſembled theyr knyghtes, and ſped them agaynſt Hanualde duke of Guyan, then rebellynge agaynſte the realme of Fraunce. The whiche Duke with the countreye they brought vnder the fyrſte obeyſaunce. After the whiche vyctorye of the ſayde countreye obteyned, the ſayd two bretherne ſpedde them to the cytie of Poytyers, where they by aduyſe of the nobles of the lande, conſyderinge the vnhableneſſe of Hylderich the kynge. that he was vnſufficiente to rule ſo greate a charge, diuided the land of Fraūce betweene theim. So that eyther of theym ſhoulde vnder the kynge rule and gouerne ſuche porcion as then there was to theim appoynted.

After the which portion, Charlemayne heavynge of the dyuyſyon and ſtryfe amonge the Almaines, as a thynge belongynge to his charge, ſpedde hym thyther in all haſte. And after a part of that countreye waſted and ſpoyled, and dyuerſe of theyr ſtronge holdes caſte playne with the earth, he broughte them to due ſubiection.

And ſoone after he went againſt the Bauares, the whiche by hys knyghtly ſtrength, he appeaſed in lykewyſe. In all which tyme and ſeaſon, Pepyn his brother was occupied in defēding of the other partyes of Fraunce.

Then this foreſayde Charlemayne ſodeynely renounced and gaue ouer all wordelye proſperitie and dominion, and with pure deuocion yode to Rome, where of the Byſhoppe of Rome then named Zacharias, he with all honoure and ioye was receaued, and of hym ſhorne a Monke, and dwelled a ſeaſon in an abbaye of hym ſelfe builded in the mounte

Sarapte. But for he ſawe that dayly drewe to him many greate lordes of Fraunce, by mean wherof he was let from his diuine ſeruyce and contemplacion, he therfore yode thence to the mount Caſſine, and there ended his naturall lyfe.

How Pepin ruled Fraunce.

After whoſe thus departynge, & geuinge ouer of the ſayd Charlemayne, Peppyn as onelye ruler, toke vppon him the charge of the hole realme.

In this paſſe tyme Gryffon the yonger brother was enlarged fro pryſon, and by fauour of his brother was aſſygned to ſuche poſſeſſions, as to hym was demed ſuffyciente to leade an honorable lyfe.

Pepyn and his brother began to fall oute.

Howbeit, when he ſaw that his brother Peppyn hadde all the rule and he nothing: he diſdayned his ſayde brother, and thoughte no lenger to continue in that maner, but to be partener of the rule of the lande as Charlemayne his brother hadde bene. And this to brynge to his purpoſe, he drewe vnto the Saxons which as after ſhall apeare were named Paynims. And with the Paynims then made aliaunce, ſo that with theyr ayde he moued warre agaynſt his brother, and alſo hyred a ſtronge hoſte, wherof whan Peppyn was warned, gathered his people, and paſſynge thorowe Saxonye came to the ryuer of Sunaha, after the latyn tonge [illegible], and Gryffon ſped hym tyll he came to a ryuer called Ouacre.

When theſe two hoſtes were thus nere, meanes of treaty were ſoughte on both partyes. Durynge whiche communicacion, Gryffon hauinge ſuſpection to the Saxons that were on his parte, leaſte they would betray hym, and yelde hym into the handes of his brother, made for that tyme a ſleyght agrement, and ſhortlye after departed frome the ſayde Saxons, and fledde to the Bauyres or into Bayon. Where he allyenge hym with dyuers nobles and barones of Fraunce, vexed and diſtourbed ſore the duke and lorde of that countreye called Taſſylon, and laſtely diſceaſed hym of that lordſhyppe. Wherof Peppyn beynge warned, ſped hym thether with great ſtrength, and ſo bare hym that he had the better of his brother, and reſtored the ſayd Taſſylon vnto his ryghtes, and after returned into Fraunce, leadynge with hym his brother Gryffon as his pryſoner.

Pepi toke his brother Gryffonne pryſoner.

But it was not longe after, that by mediacions the ſayde Gryffon was reconſiled to his brother. And for he ſhould be content and haue no more cauſe to warre with his brother, there were aſſigned vnto hym, as witneſſeth the Frenche cronicle and other, .xii. earldomes within the realme of Fraunce. With the which bounteous gyfte he not beynge content, the ſelfe ſame yeare fled vnto the duke of Guyan named Gayffer, and with hym newly conſpired agaynſt his ſayd brother. But laſtly he was there ſlayne, as after ſhall appere.

The death of Gryffon

Peppyn then conſyderinge in his mynde in what [illegible] his fathers before hym had ruled the land, & he now for his time, [illegible], to whom belonged all the thinges kepte his paleys, and folowed all his delytes and pleasures, without takynge of any payne, wherefore consideringe the premisses, and for a reformation of the same, sente his ambassade to the B. of Rome then beynge, Zacharye before named, askynge his counsayle, whether it was more necessarye or healfull for the realme of Fraunce that he shoulde be admitted for kinge, that dyd nothinge but applye his mynde to all pleasurs of his bodye, without care or charge takyng upon him for the guiding of the lande and the people of the same: or he that toke upon him all the charge and payne, in defence of the land, and keping of the people in due subiection. To this the Byshop of Rome aunswered and wrote unto Pepyn, that he was beste worthy, and most profitable for the realme to be admitted for kynge, that ruled well the comynalty by iustice and prudence, and the enemies therof defendeth and subdueth by his polycye and manhode. The which aunswere thus receaued from the Bishoppe of Rome, and declared unto the lordes and barons of the realme, anone they of one assent and mind proceded unto the deposinge and puttyng downe of theyr kynge and gouernour Hylderych. And in shorte space after closed him in a monasterye or house of religion, when he had ben occupier of a kynges roume by the ... onely .x. yeares. And that space, the Frenchemen elected and chose Pepyn for theyr soueraygne and kynge.

Kyng Hylderich deposed.

In the which Hilderich or Childerich ended the lyne or progenye of Meroneus, of whome the Frenche kynges linially descended by continuaunce of tyme as foloweth.

The linia[l] descente o[f] the Frenc[h] kinges.

Meroneus	x. yeares.
Childericus	xxiiii. yeares.
Clodoueus	xxx. yeares.
Dagobertus	xliiii. yeares.
Clodoueus	xvii. yeares.
Clotharius	iiii. yeares.
Theodoricus	xiiii. yeares.
Childericus	.xii. yeares.
Lotharius	xl. yeares.
Chilpericus	xxiiii. yeares.
Lotharius	xliiii. yeares.
Clodoueus	iii. yeares.
Childebertus	xvii. yeares.
Dagobertus	xi. yeares.
Daniel	v. yeares.
Theodoricus	xiiii. yeares.
Theodoricus	xv. yeares.
Hildericus	x. yeares.

Anglia

¶ The .xl. Chapter.

Sigebert. Li. 5. ca. 2[5.]

Sygebert or Sigibertus the sone of Cutberte, late kinge of the west Saxons, began hys reygne ouer the sayde Saxons, in the yeare of the incarnation of Christ. vii. C. and xlv. and the v. yeare of Hildericus then kynge of Fraunce. He was cruell and tyrannous to hys subiectes, and turned the lawes and customes of his forefathers after his owne wyll and pleasure. And for that one of the noble men of his dominion somedeale sharpely aduertised hym to chaunge his maners, and to behaue him more prudently towarde his people, he therefore maliciouſly cauſed hym to be put to cruell death.

About this time Egbertus, after the younger Wylfryde, was made archbyſhop of Yorke. The whiche brought agayne thyther the pall that his predeceſſoures hadde forgone, ſyns the tyme that the fyrſte Paulinus had lefte that ſee and fled to Rocheſter in Kente, and there lefte the ſayd pall. This Egberte was brother vnto Egberte kynge of Northumberland, by whoſe aſſiſtence and comforte, he did many thinges for the weal of the ſee, and made there a noble lybrary.

Then it foloweth, forſomuche as the kynge Sygebert continued in his malyce and cruell conditions, hys ſubiectes conſpired agaynſt him, and put him from all kyngely dignitie. So that he fell after to great deſolation & miſery in ſuche wyſe, that he was founden after in a woode or deſolate place wandringe alone without comfort. Where he beyng ſo founden by a ſwyneheard or vylayne, ſometime belonginge to the earle Combranus, that he before time wickedly had ſlain, in auengemẽt of his ſaid lordes death, ſlewe him in ẏ ſaid place. Which ſaid Sigebertus was thus depriued frõ all honor, whẽ he after moſt writers had reigned or tyrãniſed. ii. yeres.

he depo-
g of Si-
bert.

he miſe-
of Sige-
rte.

¶ The.clii. Chapter.

cnulph⁹.

Kenulphus of the line or bloud of Cerdicus firſt kyng of Weſtſaxons, began his dominion ouer the ſayd Weſtſaxons in the yeare of grace. vii. C. and. xlviii. and the. viii. yeare of Hildericus then king of Fraunce. The vertue of thys man paſſed his fame. For after he hadde with the agremente of the Weſtſaxons depryued Sygeberte theyr kynge from his authoritie and regally, he fyrſte appeaſed dyuers murmurs and grudges that kyndeled amonge his ſubiectes, and ſet his lordeſhyppe in greate quietnes and reſt, touchyng theyr ciuile diſcorde.

Aboute the. viii. yeare of the reygne of this Kenulphus, Offa ſlewe a tyraunte named Beornredus, that before had ſlayne Ethelwalde kinge of Mercia. After whoſe death the ſayde Offa as neuewe to the ſayd Ethelwalde, reigned as kynge of that prouince.

Of this Offa is tolde many notable dedes, wherof ſomwhat I entende to ſhew. He hadde warre with the Northumbres, and thẽ for a tyme ſubdued. He alſo hadde warre with Etheldrede kynge of Eaſt anglis, and with Egberte otherwiſe called Pren kynge of kent: whom he toke pryſoner, and led him bounden with hym into Mercia.

Then after theſe victories, Offa builded the churche of Wychcom. In time of the which buyldynge, in preſence of. xiii. biſhops and many other great eſtates, king Offa enlarged the ſayde Egbert of impriſonment. In token wherof the people beynge there preſent, made ſuche an exclamation of ioye and gladneſſe, that the churche therof range.

This king Offa had ſuch diſpleaſure vnto the citizens of Caunterbury, that he remoued the archebiſhops ſee by the agrement of the firſt Adryan then biſhop of Rome

Howe the ſee of Caũterburye was remoued to Lichefelde.

vnto Lychefelde. He alſo chaſed the Brytons or Welſhemen into Wales and made a famouſe dike, betwene Wales and the vtter bōdes of Mercia, or mydle England the whiche to this daye is named Offedyche. And after he buylded there a churche whiche long time after was called Offekyrke.

This Offa alſo maried one of his doughters to Bryghtricus, that was kynge of Weſtſaxons. And for that in his time was variaunce betwen him ⁊ the Frenchmen, that paſſage of marchaunts was forboden, therefore he ſente that famouſe doctoure Anſelmus Alcuynus. vnto Charles the great then king of Fraunce, to comon the meanes of peace. Whyche Charles hadde after thys Anſelmus in ſuche fauoure, that he becamme his diſciple.

Then returne we to Kenelphus, the whiche before tyme had had often warre with Offa, and with hym many conflictes, and laſtelye agreed. Aboute the. xi. yeare of this Kenelphus, Egbert kinge of the Northumbers renounced his kyngelye dignitie, and became a monke.

And laſtly the ſayd Offa, when he hadde reygned ouer Mercia xxxix. yeares, as ſayeth Guydo, he lefte the kyngedome to his ſonne, alſo named Kenelphus, and yode to Rome.

And this Kenelphus kynge of Li.5.ca.27 Weſtſaxons, kepte ſtrongelye his lordſhippe agaynſte the power of all his enemies, and had his ſubiectes in due order of obedience. Laſtely, Kenulphe was ſupprysed with the loue of a womanne that he kepte at Merton, and haunted her more ſecretely then ſtode wyth his honnoure. Whereof hauynge knowledge a kynſeman of Sygebert late kynge, entendynge to reuenge the depoſynge of his kynſeman, awayted the tyme, and beſet the houſe where Kenulphe and his paramour was ſmally accompanyed. But ſo ſoone as Kenulphe had eſpyed his enemies, he ſet vpō them, whiche as ſayeth Policronicon, were. lxxx. in number, and foughte with them a long whyle. But in the ende he was ſlayne of Clyto or Clyton his enemy.

Kenulp was ſla

It was not long after or word ſprange of the kynges death. Wherefore Offricus then beynge maiſter of the kynges knightes, tooke with him a certayne of the ſayde chiualry, and purſued vpon the ſayde murderers, and laſtelye encountred with theim, and ſlewe the ſayde Clyto theyr Captayne, with the more part of his companye. And that done, he retourned to Merton, and there toke the corpes of Kenulphe, ⁊ with great ſolemnitie conueied it vnto Wincheſter, where it was with all reuerence enterred, when he hadde ruled the Weſtſaxons (albeit that of him the Englyſhe cronicle maketh no mencion) xxxi. yeares.

Francia.

The. c. liii. Chapter.

Pipinus the ſecōde ſonne of Charles Martel, began his reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yeare of grace. vii. hundred

Pipinus.

hundred and. l. and the ſeconde yeare of Kenulphus then kyng of Weſtſaxons. This as before ye haue hearde, was elected to that honour, by aſſent of zachary biſhop of Rome, and the conſente of the nobles of Fraunce, & after he was confirmed of the ſecond Stephan when he ſat after as B. of Rome.

The fyrſte yeare of his reygne, the Saxons otherwyſe called Danes or Normans, beganne to warre vpon hym. The whiche he encountred at the ryuer of Iſayr, and theim knightelye ouercame, and chaſed and broughte them fynallye vnder his ſubiection. And in his retourninge into the countreye of Fraunce, worde was broughte to him of the death of his brother Gryffon, the which as before is ſayde fledde vnto Gayferus duke of Guyan, and there held hym, to the ende for to haue cauſed the people of Guyan to haue rebelled, and to make war agayn his brother Pepyn. Whereof whē ſome of them conſidered the malicious and vnſtable conditions of him, in auoidinge more daunger that to theyr country by his meanes might enſue, they fell ſodenly vpon him and ſlewe him.

When Pepin was retourned into Fraunce, he by the aduiſe of Remigius then biſhop of Roan, amēded the ſtate of the Churche, and cauſed goddes ſeruice to be ſonge, that before tyme had ben with lytle deuotion and reuerence doone and vttered. And other ſpyrituall thynges that before were myſordered, he cauſed them to be ſette in a better fourme. And ſhortely after Stephan aboue named, confirmed this Pepin and his heires for kinges of Fraunce, and of him aſked ayde and aſſiſtence to withſtand the power of Aiſtulphus thē kyng of Longobardes, the which then warred vpon certain landes belonginge vnto the churche of Rome. The whiche kynge Pepin to him with good wyll graunted, and the begynninge of the nexte yeare folowing, with a great hoſt entred the boundes of Italy, and in the ſame made ſharpe and cruell warre. In defence wherof the ſayde Aiſtulphus made his beſte prouiſion, and defended the ſtraites and mountaynes, by the whiche the Frenchmen ſhuld haue further entre into his lande, & there gaue vnto his enemies a ſtronge fyghte. Albeit, he with his people was forced to geue backe, and for his refuge toke the citye of Papy. Whereof Pepyn hauinge information, beclipped the ſayde citie with a ſtronge ſiege. When Aiſtulphus had a ſeaſon defended his citie, and ſawe by experience dayly his enemyes encreaſe, and his power mynyſhe and feble, in auoydynge of extreme daunger, he ſoughte meanes of peace, and in ſuch wiſe purſued the ſame, that he fynally hadde peace to hym graunted, vppon condytion that he by a day lymitted, ſhoulde reſtore to the Byſhoppe of Rome all ryghte to his churche belongynge, that he or any for him held, or before time had withholden, with other thinges concernynge the ſayde peace. And for the perfourmaunce of the ſayde conditions, he deliuered immediatly good hoſtages and pledges. After whiche peace thus ſubſtancially confyrmed, Pepin with hys hooſte with greate tryumphe

Pepyn warred agaynſte Italye.

retourned into Fraunce.

But notwithſtanding this aſſured peace, by the confyrmation of othe and other circumſtaunce before ſhewed, the next yeare folowynge he truſtinge vppon better fortune of warre, denied and reuoked all his former grauntes, and refuſed to do as before he hadde firmelye promyſed. For this vnſtablenes and vntruth to remedy, the byſhop of Rome of newe made requeſte vnto Peppyn. The whiche without longe tarienge, reaſſembled his knightes, and made good ſpede towarde Italy, & not without daunger paſſed the mountaynes, and fynallye beſieged Ayſtulphus within the foreſayde citie of Papy. By meane whereof he laſtly was conſtrayned to reſtore certayne cities and other poſſeſſions that before tyme he hadde taken from the B. of Rome.

Pepi. was the B. of Romes warrioure

After the whiche agrement ended and perfected, within a ſhorte terme the ſayd Aiſtulphus being in his diſport of hunting, fel from his horſe, or with his horſe, by violence whereof he was ſo broſed, that he died ſhortly after, when he hadde ruled the Longobardes, Lumbardes, or Italyans. viii. yeares.

The death of Aiſtulphus.

After this victory thus obteined by Peppyn, the lordes and prynces that dwelled aboute him, feared, and dreade hym, and ſoughte to him for aliaunce and amitie. Among the whiche Taſſilon duke of Bayon before ſpoken of, that newelye had conſpyred agaynſte him, yelded him to the kynge, and becamme his true liege man, and ſwore to him and to his two ſonnes feawte.

But the Saxons, whiche in the French boke are named Soiſons coulde neuer holde them contente without diſturbyng of the French men. Wherefore kynge Pepin aſſembled a greate hoſte and made toward them, and had with them diuers conflictes and battayles. So that at length they were dryuen to aſke peace, vpon condition that yerely after they ſhould yeld vnto the kynge of Fraunce three hundred good horſes in waye of tribute.

Howe th Saxons b came trib taries.

And that done, he retourned into Fraunce, and immediatlye after ordeyned by the aduiſe of hys counſayle a court or counſaile, the whiche at this day is called yͤ parliament of Fraunce, and is like vnto the courte of requeſtes nowe at this day holden in Englād. Howbeit, that is of much greter reſort of people, and therwith very delaious, in ſo much that I haue heard credible perſonnes ſaye, ſome one matter hath hanged there in dyſputation ouer. xx. yeares. The whiche parliament at this day is kept at Paris, at Roan, and other two places of the lande. And for iudges of this counſaile or parliamente, is deputed of the kynges coſt in euery place where it is kept and hundred perſons, what of one and what of another.

How ma ters are laied in th parliamẽ of Parys.

Than it foloweth, Gaifer duke of Guyan before minded, of wyll more than of reaſon, ſet a trybute or impoſition vppon the ſpyrytuall landes wythin hys lande, wythoute agremente of the clergy: Wherefore the biſhoppes for a redreſſe and remedy complained theim vnto kynge Peppyn. Then Peppyn ſente vnto hym, monyſhinge

Peppyn defended the clergie.

ſhinge him in a fayre and goodlye maner, that he ſhoulde eſchewe and forbeare ſuche doinge. And for the duke woulde not abſtayne for the kinges commaundement he in ſhorte while aſſembled hys armie, ⁊ entered the territorie of Guyan, in waſtinge and ſpoiling the countrey. And in ſhort whyle after putte the Duke in ſuch feare that he was fayne to applie him to the kynges minde and pleaſure and bounde him to reſtore to the clergie, al that he hadde before taken by extorte power. But when the ſaide duke was aſſured of the kynges retourne into Fraunce, he gathered a ſtrength of knightes and ſente them to the citye of Chalours in Burgoyne, and dyd that he coulde or myghte, to the domage of that towne and countrey. In whiche ſeaſon the kynge was at the towne or citie called Dury, whither and to the whiche towne, tidinges were brought to him of the vntrewe dealynge of this foreſayde duke. Wherewith he beinge ſoore diſcontent, retourned with his people into Guyan, and therein beate downe manye ſtronge holdes and caſtelles, and toke or wonne at length Burbon, Cancaruyle, and Clearemounte, and from thence waſtynge the countrey with yron and fyre, yode tyll he came to Lymoges. And for for the wynter came on harde, the kinge for eaſe ⁊ ſauegarde of hys people, ſtrengthed theſe foreſayde cities, townes, and holdes, that he before hadde wonne, and than yode to a place called Cauſe, or Caus, and there kepte his Chriſtmaſſe and Eaſter. And when the new ſeaſon was come, not forgetting his former purpoſe, reentred the foreſayde duchye of Guyan; in waſtinge the lande as he before had done, and afterward tooke by ſtrẽgth the cities of Burgies and Towres. In whyche ſeaſon and tyme the Duke woulde neuer appeare in the playne feelde, but kepte hym in ſtronge holdes, and as one was wonne, he fled into another.

Gayfer the Duke of Guyã murdered.

This warre thus continuing, the countrey and people were ſore empoueryſhed. Wherefore they laſtlye conſideringe the obſtinacie of theyr Duke, and alſo the great daunger whiche they ſtode in: murdered theyr Duke, and after yelded theym and theyr countrey to the kynges obeyſaunce, wyth all ſuche treaſure and Jewelles, as to the ſayd Duke belonged, whereof Pepyne offered a greate parte of theym vnto Sayncte Denis.

The death of Pepyn.

This warre thus ended with manye other notable woorkes, whereof the rehearſall in order, woulde aſke a long tracte of time: thys victorious Prynce Pepyn was vexed wyth greuous ſickeneſſe. Wherefore, in all haſte he ſpedde hym vnto Saincte Martines, where he made certayne oblations and prayers, and thence (his ſickeneſſe encreaſynge) was conueyed vnto Parys, where he ſhortly after died, when he hadde raygned as kynge by the terme of eyghtene yeres, leauynge after hym two ſonnes, that is to ſaye: Charlemayne and Charles.

¶ The. cliiii. Chapter.

Charlemaine and Charles.

CArolomanus, and Charles, ſonnes of Pepyne, beganne their raygne ioyntly ouer the Frenchemen, in the yeare of oure lorde ſeuen hundred, and the .xx. yeare of Kenulphe then Kynge of Weſtſaxons, ſo that Charlemain had to hys part middle Fraunce, and Charles had Auſtracye, with the other deale of Fraunce.

Of the elder brother Charlemain litle is lefte in memorie, for he died when he had raigned litle ouer .ii. yeres. Wherfore to Charles fel the whole realme of Fraũce the whiche of all the nobles was ioyouſly admitted.

Charlemaine beinge dead, Charles had wholy the rule of Fraunce.

It was not long after, Hunildus whom Pepyn by hys life had ordeyned ruler of Guyan, rebelled againſte the kynge. wherfore Charles prepared anone hys armie, and ſpedde him thither, and in proceſſe of tyme, conſtrayned the ſayde Hunildus to forſake the countrey, and for his tuition to flee vnto Lupus than duke of Gaſcoyne. Wherof Charles beyng aduertiſed, ſent his meſſage vnto the ſayde Lupus, wyllynge and commaundinge him, that he in ſpedye maner ſhoulde ſende to him his rebell Hunildus, or elles he woulde wᵗ his army inuade and ſpoile his people and countrey. Vpon receit of whiche meſſage Lupus by coũſaile condeſcended to the kynges pleaſure, ſo that he cauſed Hunild⁹ to ſubmit him vnto the kinges grace and mercie. Wherewith the kinge was ſo well contented, that vpon aſſuraunce taken of the ſaid Hunildus, that there after he ſhoulde bee of good abearyng towarde the kynge, he clearelye forgaue vnto him all his former offence. And after he had ſette that countrey in a rule and order he retourned into Fraunce. Where to him ſoone after came an embaſſade from the firſte Adrian, than B. of Rome, requiringe him of aid agaynſt Deſiderius than kynge of Longoberdes, the whiche then hadde taken from the churche of Rome manye cities and other poſſeſſions.

Then Charles acceptynge the B. of Romes requeſte, or he beganne any warre againſt the ſaid Deſiderius, ſente vnto him an embaſſade, willinge and requirynge him in moſte humble wiſe, to reſtore vnto the churche of Rome al ſuche poſſeſſions as he from the ſame churche before time had taken, and yet withhelde: and alſo to reſtrayne him from ſuch warre as daylye he made vppon the landes of the ſayde churche. But for he ſaw no fruite enſue of the meſſage, he made prouiſion for all thinge nedeful to ſuche a iourney. And ſhortly after paſſed the moũtaynes, not all without battayle and in proceſſe of time cõſtrayned Deſiderius to take the Cytye of Vercile. Where after he hadde refreſhed his Italians, he gaue vnto the Frenchmenne a ſharpe and cruell battayle. But in the ende Deſiderius was compelled to forſake the feelde, and fledde after to the fornamed citie of Papy, wher he kept him as after ſhal appeare a longe while.

A ſharpe
cruel bat

And for to ſhewe you ſomwhat of the foreſayde battayle, ye ſhall vnderſtande that for the great occiſion of menne that there were ſlayne, the place was called longe after Mortaria, that is to meane in oure vulgar or mother tonge, the place of death. In this fighte were ſlayne amonge other, two knightes greatlye famed, Amys

The fiel
of death.

and Amilion of whom ſome fables are reported, becauſe they were ſo like of ſemblaunt.

These two knyghtes as witneſſeth the Frenche ſtorye, and alſo Antoninus, were broughte vp in the courte of the foreſaid Charles, and with him well cheriſhed, and finallye here ſlayne and buried after ſome writers in the two chappelles, whiche in the foreſaid place were buylded to pray for the greate multitude of the ſoules of theſe knyghtes that there were ſlayne. But who that is deſyrous to knowe the whole lyfe of theſe two knyghtes, lette hym ouerſee the thyrde chapter of the .xiiii. tytle of Antoninus, and he ſhal ther fynde a compendious and goodly ſtorye, the whiche for the lengthe I ouerpaſſe, and retourne my ſtile agayne to Charles. The whyche when he was ware that Deſiderius had taken this citie of Papy, and it greatly ſtrengthed both with men and vitell, in ſuche wiſe that he well vnderſtoode that it myghte not be ſhortlye wonne: he therefore layde aboute it a ſtrong ſiege, with the ouerſighte of ſure and wiſe captains, and after rode to Rome, to viſite yͤ holye apoſtles Peter and Paule, & alſo to ſpeake with the B. of Rome for diuers matters. Where he taried a great parte of the wynter folowynge, and after retourned vnto Papy, whiche as yet was not deliuered nor giuen vp.

But it was not longe after his returne that the citie was wonne wherein was taken as priſoner, the ſayde Deſiderius, wyth hys wyfe and chyldren. The whych to make ſhorte proceſſe, he at length forced hym to reſtore vnto the B. of Rome, all ſuch poſſeſſions as he before tyme hadde taken from his churche, and added moore thereunto, the two cities of Spoletis and Beneuent. And finally depriued him of all kynglye honour, and ladde him as Priſoner into Fraunce, and as a priſoner or exile from hys naturall countrey, kepte hym at the citie of Lyons, as witneſſeth cronica cronicarũ, Jacobus Philippus, and other. And after by agrement of the B. of Rome, gaue that kyngdome vnto Pyppynus hys ſonne, the which continued ſo in the Frenchemens rule and poſſeſſion, ouer the terme of .cc. yeres.

For this victorious dede thus obteyned by Charles, the forenamed B. of Rome graunted vnto him manye great priuileges. Amonge the number whereof, one was that no B. of Rome durynge the lyfe of Charles, ſhulde be in no wiſe elected or choſen, tyll there came from him a commaundemẽt to goo to that election. And alſo he graunted vnto hym inueſture of benefices ſpirituall. Whiche grauntes and priuileges were cõfirmed and authoriſed in a Synode of an hundred and three and fyftye byſhoppes, kepte in Fraũce by commaundemente of the foreſayde Adrian.

Of this Charles longe and tedious it were to telle the whole actes and deedes. Wherfore I entende to touche but a part of them and for the other deale I remitte to theim that haue further deſyre of knowledge, vnto the bookes of Turpin and Egyueaux chaplaine to the ſayde Charles, or elles to the

the ſayde Byſhop Turpyn, which wrote a longe worke of his vertuous dedes.

¶ The. clv. Chapter.

THys Charles Martell after his retourne into Fraunce, without long taryinge there ſpedde hym to the forenamed people called Soyſons or Saxons, whiche newely rebelled, & warred ſharpelye vpon them, and foughte wyth them ſondrye battayles. Amonge the whiche two been ſpecially noted, wherof that one was foughten at a place called Onacre, and that other at the riuer of Eſam or Heſayre. By which two batayles the Saxons loſte muche of theyr people, and were ſo ſoore feblyſhed that they were fayne ſhortly after to putte them in the mercye of Charles: By reaſon wherof he bounde them vnto certayn lawes and ordinaunces, whereof ſpecially one as principal of them, was: that they from that daye forthe, ſhould renounce and forſake their worſhipping of Idolles and falſe Goddes, and beleue in the faythe of Chriſtes churche, with manye other. For the perfourminge of the which couenauntes, the kyng tooke of them good pledges and hoſtages. And moore ouer to the ende to miniſhe and make leſſe their ſtrength, he chaſe out of thē tenne thouſande of the moſte apte men for the warres, and conueyed theim with him into Fraunce. And after he hadde clothed them with the mantell of Baptime, takinge of theim aſſured othe to bee trewe to him and to his heyres: he after inhabited them in diuers places of his realme. Of the whiche people, as affirmeth myne authoure, deſcended the Fleminges and Brabanders. And thus ended the warre of the Saxons or Soyſons that had continued by the terme of many yeres paſſed.

Of whō the Flemings and Brabanders deſcended.

And forthewith by aſſente and aduiſe of hys counceyle, he prepared al abilimentes and ordinaunce of warre, to goo agaynſt the Hunys that then hadde wonne great grounde in Spayne. And for to brynge thys warre to the moore effectuall ende, he chaſe twelue Piers, whiche after ſome writers are called Dozepers or kinges. Of whiche ſixe were biſhops, and ſixe temporall lordes. Of the whiche Byſhoppes thre were named dukes, whiche were archbiſhops, and .iii. erles, which were biſhops. Of the temporall lordes thre were dukes and three erles, that is to ſaye, the duke of Burgoyn, & duke of Neuſtria or Normandye, and the duke of Guyan, and for the .iii. erles, the erle Palantine, the erle of Tholous, & the erle of Chaympayne. Of the whiche alſo ſome writers afferme, that the famous knightes Rowlande and Oliuer were two, as Rowlande erle of Palantyne, & Oliuer erle of Tholous. When Charles had prepared all thynges neceſſary to thys great iourney, he fyrſte made hys pylgrimage vnto Sainct Denis and there offered ryght great giftes, and after proceded towarde hys iourney, and fyrſte beſieged the citie called Pampilona, the which after thre monethes he ſubdued to his obeyſaunce. This citie ſtode in the entre of Spain, in the mountaynes called Montes Pyreni.

Firſte ch ſing of th xii. piers Fraunce.

And

After the obteynynge of which citie, as ſaieth Antoninus, Charles commaunded all ſuche as to Chriſtes faith woulde be conuerted, ſhould be ſaued, and the other to paſſe by ſentence of the ſworde. And after he had wonne the firſte citie, he wanne all the countrey adioynynge to the ſame, by reaſon whereof, he caſte great feare vnto the miſcreauntes; and wanne by hys ſtrength and by appoyntment (ſo that they became his tributaries) theſe countreys and prouinces hereafter enſuynge, that is to ſaye (as witneſſeth Vincente hiſtorial, Antoninus, and other) the lande of Landeluſſe, the lande of Pardis, the lande of Caſtell, the lande of Mauris, the prouince of Nauerne, the countrey of Portingale, the lande of Biſcaye, and the lande of Palauge, and deſtroyed in them all ydolles, and buylded in theim churches and monaſteries, and broughte the moore parte of them to Chriſtes religion. And moſte ſpeciallye the churche of Sainct James he builded in Compoſtella with ſumptuous coſte, and gaue thereunto greate poſſeſſions, to the mayntenyng of the diuine ſeruice of God, and the miniſters of the ſame. And ouer that with the treaſure that he gat in theſe foreſayde countreys, he buylded manye and diuerſe churches, as well in other places as there.

That coũ cis Char wanne

Longe it were to tell all the circumſtaunce of this viage and victories of the ſame. Wherefore I paſſe ouer. And when Charles had ſpeade his nedes, he had good wyll to retourne into Fraunce. In the which retourne Charles caſtinge no doubte nor peryll, by the treaſon of Gauelon a knighte or ruler of Gaſcoyne, the whyche Gauelon had receyued of a Paynim kyng named Marſyll, great and riche giftes for to betraye the hoſte of Charles, was deceyued as after is ſhewed. This Gauelon the better to compaſſe & bring to effecte his purpoſe, aduertiſed Charles with a certain of his people to paſſe the porte of Ceſayre, and to leaue behinde hym in the rerewarde Rowlande and Oliuer with twentye thouſand of the reſidue of the hooſte. And when the kynge was paſſed with his hoſte, he gaue warnynge vnto the forenamed Marſyll and other, they ſhoulde cloſe the ſayde Rowlande in the place called Rouncenale.

The whiche accordynge to that falſe counſayle, wyth an hooſte of thre ſcore thouſande or moe, beclypped Rowlande and his people on euerye ſyde, and there fell vpon chriſten men, and ſlewe them without mercye or pitie. In the whiche fyghte, notwithſtanding the great ſlaughter that they had of the Sarazyns, finallye was there ſlayne the ſayde Rowlande and Oliuer, and manye of the nobles of Fraunce. But this Gauelon eſcaped not without puniſhemente. For he was after taken, and with other to him condenſcendinge were put to moſt cruel deth at the citie of Aquiſgrany.

Of thys great victorie of Charles in ſubduynge of Spayne, are diuers opinions. For the Frenche cronicle and Antoninus agreen, that it ſhould be after that Charles was anoynted Emperoure of Rome. But maiſter Robert Gagwyn

wyn and other ſaye, that it was before he was emperour.

Thus this victorious prince retournynge into Fraunce, ſubdued then after diuerſe countreis as Gallia Narbonenſis, Campania, or Champayne, and Beneuentana, and other, whiche of one mynde hadde rebelled agaynſte hym.

Aboute the .xxxi. yeare of hys raygne as moſte wryters agree, certayne perſons of Italy conſpired agaynſt Leo the thyrde, than Byſhoppe of Rome, and hym vngoodlye entreated. But laſtly eſcapinge their daunger, came vnto Charles, and requyred hym of his comforte and ayde, whereof he was not daungerous. But when he hadde well ſearched, and vnderſtod that the Biſhop of Rome had ſuſtayned wronge, he wyth al diligence ſpedde hym thither. And after he had ſubdued the byſhops enemies, he reſtored the ſayde byſhoppe to his former dignitie. For the whiche deede and other that he hadde done for the churche of Rome, he was by the ſayd Leo or Leon, ſacred or annoynted emperour of Rome.

Charles made emperoure of Rome.

¶ The .clvi. Chapter.

Charles than thus elected as Emperour, in yͤ yeare of oure lorde, viii. hundred and one, when he had accompliſhed his nedes for the weale of the Churche and the Biſhoppe of Rome, he with great gyftes retourned into Fraunce,

In this tyme or ſoone after as witneſſeth the Frenche cronycle, landed in Fraunce the famous clerkes Alcuynus or Albinus, Rabanus, and Iohannes, and other of the diſciples of Beda. The whiche Charles receyued wyth great honoure, and by theyr counſayles inſtituted and ordeyned fyrſte the ſcole of Paris, and another in Papia in Italye before mynded. Wherefore it ſhoulde ſeeme that the ſayde Alcuynus was not ſent for anye entreatiſe of peace betwene the two realmes of Fraūce and greate Brytayne, as in the ſtorye of Kenulphus before is ſhewed.

After this time and ſeaſon manye greate and noble dedes were done by the ſayde Charles, and by hys ſonnes, and captaynes vnder hym, and by hys commaundement.

And for the perſonage of ſo noble a Prince ſhoulde be hadde in minde, therefore diuers authours teſtifie that he was fayre and wel faryng of body, and ſterne of looke and of face. His bodie was eyghte foote longe, and hys armes and legges wel lengthed & ſtrengthed after the proportion of the bodye. Hys face of a ſpanne brede, & his berde very longe. Of hys ſtrength wonders are tolde, he woulde at one meale eate a whole Hare or two Hennes, a whole Gooſe, or lyke quantitie of other meat, and drinke thereto a litle wine mingled with water.

Diſcripti
of Charl
& of his di

Amonge his other notable dedes he made a bridge ouer the ryuer of Ryne, of fyue hundred pace longe by the citie of Magunce. And he buylded as witneſſeth Antoninus and other, as manye abbeys or monaſteries as there been letters in the Croſſe rowe of the A.B.C.

A Bry
made on
the Ryn

And in the front of either of the

ſayde Abbayes, after the tyme of their foundacion, he pight or ſet a letter of Golde of the value of an hundred pounde turnoys, whiche is neare to the value of Englyſhe money nowe currant. xx. marke. For a pounde turnoys is muche lyke. ii. s. viii. d. ſterlynge, and a pound Pariſien is nere vpon. xl. d. ſterlynge. But it ſtandeth at no certayntie, for highinge and lowinge of theyr coynes.

He alſo buylded or newe reedified the citie of Aquiſgrany, and endowed the churche of our Lady there with manye greate gyftes, whiche yet remayne there to this day. In which cite and nere about he vſed muche to abide & lye. And for his great dedes and victories, he deſerued to be named Charles the greate. And for all his greate myght and honoure, yet that notwithſtandinge he was meke and lowly in heart, and myld and gratious to the poore, and mercyfull to wretches and nedy, and ſet his ſonnes to lerne, as well letters as marcial and knightly feates. And his doughter he ſet to ſpinninge and woll worke. And he was expert in al ſpeches, ſo that he neded none interpretours to explane or expreſſe to hym the meſſage of ſtraūge ambaſſatours. And in the tyme of his diner or meales, he vſed to haue red before hym leſſons and epiſtles, and ſpeciallye of the workes of S. Auſtyne de ciuitate dei. In him was nothing to be diſcommended, but that he held his doughter ſo longe vnmaried.

harles yͤ
perour
his dou-
ter to
nning &
ol work.

godly en
une of an
perour.

This noble man Charles. iii. yeares before his death, he hadde peace with all countreys, as well ſuche as were obeyſaunte to the empyre, as ſuche as longed to his dominion of Fraūce. In the time of reſt amonge other goodlye and vertuous dedes, he made his teſtament, and diſtributed his temporall moueable goodes in. iii. partes, wherof twoo partes he gaue to the mayntening of byſhoppes and other miniſters of the church and for the reparatiō of churches and neceſſaries to the ſame, and to the mayntening of the diuine ſeruice of God, with alſo ayde and fedynge of poore and nedy people, and the thyrde parte to his chyldren and other of his allye.

Charles yͤ
emperour
made hys
teſtament.

Ye ſhall vnderſtand, this Charles had in his treaſorye ſpeciallye noted before his other iewelles iiii. tables or bordes, wherof thre were of ſyluer, and the fourth of gold. In one was grauen the likenes of the citie of Conſtantine the noble, the which he bequath to the church of Rome. In another was grauen or wroughte the likeneſſe of the citie of Rome, and that he gaue to the byſhoppe of Reynes, and to his churche. And the thyrd table of ſyluer, wherein was grauen the Mappa mundi, and the fourthe of Golde, he gaue to hys ſonnes.

Charles
had in hys
treaſorye
iiii. tables.

Many thynges there were and cauſes of the exaltyng of the fame of this prynce. But among other, one is ſpecyallye remembred of myne authour Gagwyn, that the kynge of Percye then rulynge a great parte of the Oriente, ſente vnto Charles an ambaſſade honourable with manye ryche preſentes. Amonge the whiche was an horologe or a clocke of laton of a wonder artificiall makynge, that at euerye houre of the daye and nyghte when the ſayde clocke ſhoulde ſtrike, ymages on horſe backe appeared out of ſondry places, and after departed agayne by meane of certayne vyces.

He ſente to hym alſo tentes of ryche ſpike, and balme naturall, with certayne Olifauntes, requiringe hym of amitye and frendeſhyppe. And in lykewiſe dydde the Emperour of Conſtantine the noble, al be it that he in his minde was not well contented that the B. of Rome had in that wyſe diuided the empire, and ſet ſuch a man of myght in the rome therof.

This Charles had diuers wyues. But of the ſeconde named Eldegard, he receiued .iii. ſõnes, that is to ſay, Lewis, Pepin, and Charles, yͤ which Pepin he made kinge of Lõgobards, or Italy, as before is ſhewed.

The death of Charles

Of this great conquerour what ſhauld I holde lenger proceſſe: For like as I before ſhewed, of his notable deedes might I make a great volume, if I ſhould of thẽ ſhew the clereneſſe, and the circumſtaunce of euerie conqueſt that he in his time acheued. But deathe that is to all perſons egall, laſtely tooke him in his dimme daunce, when he had ben king of Fraunce with his brother and alone .xlvii. yeares. Of the which he ruled the empyre as before is ſhewed .xiiii. yeares, in the yeare of his age as ſayen the French Cronicles .lxxii. and was buried at Aquiſgranye with great pompe, in the yeare of our lordes incarnation .viii. hundred and .xv. with this ſuperſcription vpon his toumbe.

Caroli Magni, chriſtianiſſimi imperatoris Romanorum, corpus ſub hoc ſepulchro conditum eſt.

Which may be englyſhed as foloweth.

Of Charles the great and Emperoure mooſte chriſten,
Of Rome, the bodye is hid this toumbe within.

Of the forenamed ſonnes of Charles, ſurnamed the eldeſte, Lewes by name, and the other two Pepyn and Charles, dyed before theyr father.

Anglia.

❡The.clvii.Chapter.

brigthri
Li.5.ca.

Brigthricus of the bloud of Cerdicus fyrſt king of Weſtſaxons deſcended, began his reygne ouer the ſaide Saxons, in the year of oure lorde .vii. hundred and .lxxviii. and the .x. yeare of Charles the greate then kynge of Fraunce.

This before tyme had maryed one of the doughters of Offa king of Mercia, as before is touched: by whoſe ayde and power he put oute of his rule Egberte the ſonne of Alchmundus, the whiche Egberte at that daie was an vnder kynge or ruler in the Lordſhippe of Weſtſaxon: whiche Egberte was deſcended of the bloud of the holie Genulphus, of whome ſome part of the ſtorie is declared in yͤ .xxv. Chapter of yͤ .v. booke of Policronica. And after he was thus of Brigthricus expulſed, he ſailed into Fraunce, & there exercyſed him ſelfe in feates of warre with the knightes of Charles courte, durynge yͤ life of yͤ ſaid Brigthricus.

Aboute

e

A ſtrãuge ight.

Aboute the ſecond yere of this Brigthricus, was ſeene in greate Britaine a wonder ſighte. For ſodeynlye as menne walked in the ſtreate, croſſes lyke vnto bloud fel vppon theyr clothes, and bloude felle from heauen lyke droppes of rayne.

Thys after ſome expoſitours, betokened the commynge of the Danes into this lande, the which entred ſhortlye after. For as wytneſſeth Policronica, aboute the ix. yeare of Brigthricus the Danes fyrſt entred this lande. In defence whereof, this ſayde kynge ſent forthe his ſtewarde of hys houſholde with a ſmall company, which ſhortly was ſlayne. But by the ſtrengthe of Brigthricus and the other kinges of Saxons thei were compelled to voyde the land for that time and ſeaſon.

Brigthricus thus wel & knightlye rulynge his land, his wife named Ethelburga not with him cõtented as ſhe ought to bee, ſought diuers wayes and meanes howe ſhe myght brynge her lorde out of lyfe, ſo that finallye ſhe poyſoned hym wyth manye other of hys houſholde meyny. Wherefore fearynge punyſhement, fledde into Fraunce, and by ſuche frendſhyp as ſhe there had, was well cheryſhed in Charles courte ſurnamed the greate.

Other it is tolde, that when he had ſeme information of the vnſtableneſſe of thys womans condicions, he at that ſeaſon beynge a wydowar, vpon a ſeaſon in paſſynge of the tyme wyth her, ſayd: nowe I putte to youre choſe whither ye wyll haue me vnto youre wedded Lorde or elles my ſonne ſtandynge in youre preſence: And hym that you choſe, hym ſhall you haue and enioye for your huſband But ſhe chaſe the ſonne and lefte the father. Then ſayde the kynge yf thou haddeſt choſen me, thou ſhouldeſt haue hadde my ſonne. But for thou haſte forſaken me, thou ſhalt haue nother of vs. And after he cloſed her in an Abbey, where in proceſſe a lewde manne kept with her ſuch company, that ſhe was voyded that place, and after demeaned her ſo viciouſlye, that in proceſſe of tyme ſhe fell in ſuche pouertie, that ſhe died in greate penurie and miſerie. For the which miſdemeanure of this woman, that ſhe hadde vnnaturallye ſlayne her Lorde and huſbande, the kynge of Weſtſaxons, woulde not ſuffer theyr wyfes to bee called Queenes, nor yet ſuffer them to ſitte by theim in places of great honour or kingly ſeate by a longe time after. Thus as before is ſhewed by the impoyſonyng of hys owne wyfe, dyed the kynge Brigthricus when he hadde ruled the Weſtſaxons after moſte concorde of writers by the terme of .xvii. yeres.

Brigthricus poyſoned by hys owne wife

The .clviii. Chapter.

Egbertus Li.5.ca.28

Egbertus the ſonne of Alcumundus as before is ſhewed, beganne his raygne ouer the Weſtſaxons in the yeare of grace .viii. hundred .lxxx. and .xv. & the .xxvii. yere of Charles the greate then king of Fraunce. This (as before is ſaid) was driuen out of the land of Britaine by yͤ ſtrength of Brigthricus. But he hauynge knowledge of his deathe, ſpedde oute of

Fraunce, and in ſo knyghtly wiſe him demeaned, that he obteyned the regiment and gouernaunce of the aboueſayd kyngedome.

Bernulphus kynge of Mercia had this Egbert in deriſion, and made thereof dyuers ſcoffes and tappynge rymes, the whiche he ſuſteyned for a tyme. But when he was ſomdeale ſtabliſhed, and had proued the myndes and hartes of his ſubiectes, he laſtlye aſſembled his knyghtes, and gaue to hym a battaile in a place called Elinden, in the prouince of Hampton. And albeit that in that fight was great diuerſitie of nomber, as .vi. or .viii. agaynſte one, yet Egberte had the victory. For his knightes were lene, megre, pale, and longe breathed, ſo that they mighte endure to fighte. But Bernulphus Knightes were fatte, corpulente, and ſhortbreathed, ſo that they were ſone ouercome with ſweate and ſhorte labour.

Here is to be noted: that after the death of Offa king of Mercia or middle England (of whō ſomewhat is touched in the ſtory of Kenulphus) reigned his ſonne Egfertus, and after Egfertus reigned Kenulphus, or Ken wolphus, the whiche Ken wolphus was father to the holy martyr Kenelme, and to .ii. fayre virgins Quindreda and Burgenulda or Ermenilda. And after Kenwolphus ſucceded the foreſayd Kenelme, and after Kenelme reigned Colwolphus and after him ſucceded Bernulphus before named.

Then to retourne agayn to Egbert, the which when he had as before is ſayd ouercom Bernulphus he ſeaſed that lordſhippe into hys hande. And that doone, he made warre vpon the Kentiſh Saxons and at length in likewyſe of them obteyned victory. And as witneſſeth Policronica, he alſo ſubdued the Northumbers, and cauſed the kynges of theſe three kyngdomes to lyue vnder him as tributaries, or ioyned them to his kyngdome, as teſtifieth the authoure of the Floure of hyſtories.

This Egbert alſo wanne from the Brytons or Walſhmenne the towne of Cheſter, that they hadde kept poſſeſſion of, tyl that day. For the which victories thus by hym obteyned, he ſhortly after called a counſayle of his lordes at Wincheſter, and there by theyr aduiſes crowned hym kinge and cheif lord of this land, that tofore this daye is called Brytaine, and ſente then oute into all coaſtes of this lande his commaundementes and commiſſions, charging ſtraitelye that frome that daye forthwarde, the Saxons ſhulde be called Anglis, and the lande Anglia.

Brytain
was na-
medangli

About the .xxiiii. yere of ẏ reigne of Egbert, which ſhuld be the yere of our Lord as meaneth Policronica .viii. hundred and .xix. Kenelmus before mynded, the ſonne of Ken wolphus, was admitted for king of Mercia, being then a child of the age of .vii. yeres. The whiche by treaſon of his ſiſter Quendreda was ſlaine in a thick wood, by a tyraunt called Heſbertus.

Li.5.ca.29

Heſkeber-
tus.

Li.5.ca.36

In the .xxix. yeare of the reigne of Egbert, or after the Englyſhe cronicle Edbright, ẏ Danes with a greate hooſte entered the ſecond tyme this lande, and ſpoyled the yſle of Shepey in Kent or nere to Kente: Whereof hearynge the

kinge

kynge Egbert, aſſembled his people, and met with them at a place called Carrum.

But he wanne of that fyght lytle worſhyppe, for the Danes compelled hym and his knightes to forſake the felde. And by preſumption of that victorye, they drewe weſt warde, and made a confedery with the weſt Britons that liued in ſeruage: By whoſe power they aſſayled Egbertus landes, and dyd muche harme in manye places of his dominiõ & els where ſo that after this daye, they were continually abidinge in one place of the realme of Englãd or other, tyl the tyme of Hardekinitus laſt kinge of the Danes bloud, ſo that manye of them were marryed to Englyſhe wemen, and many that nowe bene or in tyme paſſed were called Englyſhmen, are diſcended of thẽ. And albeit that they were manye and ſondrye tymes dryuen out of that land, and chaſed from one countrey vnto an other (as after ye ſhal hear) yet that notwithſtandinge, they euer gathered new ſtrengthes and power, ſo that thei abode ſtyll within the lande.

Of the kinge of theſe Danes, and of what people they be diſcended, dyuers opinions of wryters there be, whiche nowe I paſſe ouer, for ſo muche as I entende to ſhewe ſomewhat of theim in this worke folowynge.

The death of Egbert.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorye, the tyme continuynge of the perſecution of theſe foreſayd Paganes and Danes, Egbert or Edbryght dyed, when he hadde well and noblye ruled the Weſt Saxons, and other the more parte of England by the terme after mooſt wryters of .xxxvii. yeares, and was buried at Wynchester as ſayeth Guydo, and left after hym a ſonne named Athenulphus.

Francia.

¶ The .clix. Chapter.

Lodouicus

Lodouicus the firſt of that name, and ſonne of Charles ỹ great, beganne his reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce and alſo his Empyre ouer the Romaynes, in the yeare of grace .viii hundred and fiftene, and the twentith yeare of Egbertus then king of Weſte Saxons. This for his mekenes was called Lewes the mylde or meke.

Lewes the mylde.

In tyme of his fathers deceſe, he was occupied in Guian, which he before time had the rule and dominion of, by commaundemente of his father. But when he was aduertiſed of his fathers deathe, he anone ſped him toward Aquiſgrany, ſo that the .xxx. daye after his departinge oute of Guyan, he came vnto the foreſayd citie, wher he was mette with all the nobles and barons of Fraunce.

And fyrſt or he medled or toke vpon hym anye cure or charge of hys owne buſyneſſe, he with moſt deuotion cauſed greate obſeruaũces and much diuine ſeruice to be done about the ſepulture of his father. Whiche obſeruaunce & prayers fyniſſhed and ended, the ſayde Lewes commaunded to come before hym diuers Ambaſſadoures, that frome dyuers Princes were ſente vnto his Father Charles, and to them gaue aunſwers concerning theyr legations and meſſages, and then proceded vnto the nedes of his realme, for the weale therof and of his people.

Wherin he beyng buſyed, word was brought to hym of an ambaſſade royall, that was come frome Michael the emperoure of Conſtantyne the noble. Agaynſte the whiche he ſent certayne of his lordes to receaue them, and ſo with all honoure to bringe theim vnto his preſence. Of whoſe commyng the entente was, to preſente hym with certayne ryche gyftes, and to deſyre him of his amitie and frendſhyp.

Alſo ſone after came vnto him meſſengers from the Beneuentanes offeringe vnto his magnificens obligations and bondes to be his true lieges, and to paye to hym yearelye in waye of tribute, ſixe thouſande ducates of golde. A ducate is of ſondry values, but the leaſt in value is. iiii. s. iii. d. halfepeny, and the beſt, iiii. s. vii. d Then the Soiſons or Saxons that were ſo diuerſe of condition, began to murmour and rebell againſte this Lewis. Wherfore or he woulde aſſemble any people agaynſt them, he ſente thyther certayne perſons to knowe the cauſe of theyr rebellion.

And when he was enfourmed that it was for the takyng a way from them of certaine landes and poſſeſſions by his father, he then reſtored agayne the ſayd landes: and ſo reconciled the countreye to his ſubiection. For this dede ſome of his lordes grudged, and ſayde, ſuch myldenes was not to be vſed to people of ſuche obſtinacye and ſterneſſe, but to haue forced them by dynte of ſworde to haue lyued in due obedience.

In this paſſetime died Stephan the fourth of that name byſſhop of Rome, after whoſe death was elected to that dignitie the fyrſte Paſcall, without conſent or knowledge of this Lewes, and ſomedeale to the diſcontentyng of his mynde and pleaſure. But in ſhorte tyme after he receiued ſuch wordes and preſentes frome the ſayde Byſhoppe of Rome, that he was well ſatiſfied and pleaſed. And for at thoſe dayes in Fraunce was vſed of preiſtes and men of the church precious and ſhewing veſture, and golden and ryche ſtarynge girdelles, with ringes and other ornamentes of gold, the ſaid Lewis purchaſed of the Biſhoppe of Rome a correction for all ſuche as vſed ſuche diſordinate apparel, and cauſed them to vſe and weare browne and ſad coloures, accordyng to theyr honoures and ſadneſſe.

This Lewis had thre ſonnes, that is to ſaye Lothayre, whome he made felowe of the Empyre, Pepin the ſecond, whom he made duke of Guyan, and Lowis the thyrde, vnto whom he betoke the rule of Bayon. To this yongeſte ſonne word was brought, yͭ Bernard a ruler in Italy had aſſēbled a greate power, & with the aydes of two other Captaines named Jylis & Reyner, the which Charles the great by his life greatly fauored, occupied the ſtrengthes of the mountaines, and entended to kepe the countrey of Italy, frome the ſubiection of his father the emperoure. Whereof he geuynge his fa-

father knoweledge, ſtronge power was gathered, as well by the father as by Lothayre his ſonne, and ſpedde theym towarde the mountaynes. But when the ſaid Bernarde was ware of the Emperours commyng wyth ſo great a ſtrength, and conſidered his lack of power to mayntayne hys purpoſe, with alſo the greate mercye and pitie that he knewe to bee in the emperoure, he ſubmitted him holy to his grace and mercie, and diſcouered vnto him the authours of that rebellion, the whiche thys Lewys cauſed vnder ſafe kepyng to be had vnto the citie of Aquiſgrany. The whiche rebelles were the biſhop of Mylan, the biſhop of Cremoun, and the biſhoppe of Orleaunce. The kynge paſſed all the winter folowynge at the forſaide citie, and laſtlye cauſed to be brought before him the foreſaide tranſgreſſours, and examined the circũſtaunce of the foreſayde treaſon, and after remitted theym to the rigoure of Lewys: where by proceſſe they were condempned to death, as manye of them as were temporall men.

Then the emperoure hauynge compaſſion of the forenamed Bernarde, for ſo muche as he was the ſonne of Pepyn laſt king of Italy and his nere kinſman, tranſmuted the ſentence of death, vnto perpetuall priſon, and loſynge of his ſyght. But the foreſayd Bernard, Reyner, and other, chaſe rather to die then to liue in priſon with that deformitie, they paſſed by the dint of ſworde, and were beheaded within or nere vnto the ſayde citie of Aquiſgrany. And the ſayde biſhoppes were depriued of theyr dignities ⁊ put into priuate houſes of religion.

And while this Lewes was occupied in litle Britaine, in ſubduinge of that countrey, Lothayre the eldeſt ſonne of this Lewys, was ſent to rule the landes of the empyre. Where he bare him right noblye, and executed diuers actes for the weale of the empyre. But in thys ſeaſon two frendes of hys father and hys, were for certayne crimes to them putte, moſt cruellye condempned to vyle deathe within the citie of Rome. Wherof hearyng Lothayre then beyng at the citie of Papy, ſente word therof to his father in all haſtye wyſe, the which was like to haue tourned the biſhop of Rome to greate trouble, yf he by politike and wiſe meanes had not ſhortlye pacified the matter. That one of the foreſayde two perſonnes ſo condemned was Scrybe to the Byſhop of Rome, and that other was Donar.

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that this Lewys hadde two wyfes, by the fyrſte he had the forenamed three ſonnes, and of the ſeconde he receyued a ſonne, and named hym Charles, the which when he came to mannes ſtature, was ſurnamed Charlis the boolde. He loued entierlie this Charlys, and wolde often kiſſe him in the preſence of his brethren. For the whiche they enuied their ſayd brother, and alſo diſdained their father, as here after ſhall appere.

Thus in proceſſe of time Lewis gaue vnto this Charlis the countrey of Neuſtria or Normandie, the which cauſed great diſcencion amonge the brethren, and alſo for this and other cauſes, Lotharius tooke partie agaynſt his father.

¶ The. clx. Chapter.

THis ſeconde wife of Lewys was named Iudith, the which was accuſed to the biſhoppe of Rome to be within ſuch degree of alliaunce to her huſband, that ſhe might not lawfully continew his wife. Wherefore contrary to the wyll of Lewis, by the labour of ſome biſhoppes and other lordes of Fraunce, ſhe was deuorced frō him, and put into a houſe of nunnes, and there ſtraytlie kept.

But Lewes for a time ſuſteyned this iniurie, to the ende that he might know whither his ſonnes fauoured the cauſe or not. But in proceſſe of time, when he had experience of his freende, and of his ſōnes, he then aſſembled to him a ſtronge hoſt, and recouered his wife malgre to al his enemies For the whiche deede Lothayre, with dyuerſe of the Barons of Fraunce, aſſembled their people, and entended to depriue Lewes from all imperial and kingly dignitie. Wherefore Lewes fearyng his ſonne and his aſſiſtence, and alſo for the entent yͭ he might aſſemble the ſtrength of yͤ Empire, he yode vnto Magunce. And after he had purueyed and garniſhed his retinew, he retourned toward Fraunce and met with ſome of his enemies, and them ſubdued, and ſo kepte on hys iourney, till he came to Aquiſgrany, where he reſted him and his people.

Thus continuing this diſcencion, the ſonnes ſent writinge to the Biſhop of Rome then beinge named Gregorie the fourthe, requiringe him of ayde and counſeil to deuiſe a concorde and peace betwene theyr father and them. At whoſe requeſte, and for to cauſe a naturall charitie to be quickened betwene the father and his three ſonnes, he came in his proper perſonne into Fraunce, and endeuored hym to the vttermooſt of hys wyttes to agree the ſaid partyes. In the tyme of this entrety made by the Byſhoppe of Rome, I can not ſaye for what cauſe, manye of the lordes, on the party of Lewes forſoke hym, and fled to the ſōnes partye, ſo that the emperour was in great feare of hym ſelfe, and of his perſon. When Lewes hadde ſeene his frendes thus in tyme of nede refuſe and flee from him, and lefte hym in great feare and daūger of ſtraungers, he thē thought better for hym to put hym ſelf vnder the rule and tuition of hys owne chyldren, than to abyde the doubte of the ſayde ſtraungers, Wherefore he ſent vnto his ſayde ſonnes, requyrynge them to prouyde for hys ſafegarde, and aſſurynge of his perſon, and that he were not there oppreſſed or murdered.

Lewes th
emperour
gaue hym
ſelfe to th
tuicion
his ſonn

And within ſhorte ſpace after this meſſage ſent to thē withoute anſwer of them againe receyued, he rode toward them ſmally accōpanyed. Whereof then Lothayre and hys brother hauynge warnyng, in all humble wyſe encountred hym, and receyued him vpon their knees, and ſo conueyed hym with all reuerence vnto theyr pauilion or tent. And after for a beginning of a peace to be ſtabliſhed betwene hym and them, he to ſa-

tyſfye

tiſfie their minds refuſed the forenamed Iudith, and cloſed her in a place of religion called Torton, as teſtifieth myne authoure maiſter Roberte Gagwyne. But the Frenche booke ſaieth, that thys deede was done by Frederyke biſhoppe of Utrike, wherefore he was after pitouſlye ſlayne by ſuch as fauoured the quene, and not al without her cōſent, as witneſſeth the ſaid cronicle.

And when Lewys had in this and other thynges agreed vnto his ſonnes, and thought him ſelfe to bee in ſuertie of their amitie and fauoures, ſodeynlye he was conueyed vnto the monaſterye of ſainct Mildrede: or as ſayeth the Frenche boke, he was conueyed to a town called in Frenche Melanguye, wyth hys yonge ſonne Charles.

ewis and
harles
mpriſond.

And that done, the ſayde thre ſonnes deuided theyr fathers poſſeſſions amonge them thre. That is to ſaye: Lothayre the eldeſt had to hys poſſeſſion the landes of the Empyre: Pepyn, the countrey of Guyan: and to Lewys the yongeſt ſonne, fell the Countrey of Bayon.

The em-
ler deui-
ed amon-
eſt his. iij
nnes.

Whiche miſerie of the Emperour when the biſhoppe of Rome hadde beholden and ſeene, he with great mourninge retourned into Italy, and ſo vnto Rome.

In whiche time of priſonmente of the Emperour, the ſayde Lewys made dities and epiſtles of great ſorowe and lamentation, to the example of all earthlye Prynces: and to the entent that hys ſonnes ſhoulde of hym haue the moore compaſſion and pitie. The which I ouerpaſſe for lengthe of tyme, and the rather: for in time of impriſonmente of Edwarde the ſeconde called Carnaruan, was by hym made the lyke complaynte, whereof when tyme and place cōmeth, I entende to expreſſe ſome parte thereof.

When Lewes had thus a ſeaſon remained in priſon, for ſo much as the cōmons ſhould not thinke that this ſhoulde bee done by the authoritie of the thre ſonnes onelye: therefore they cauſed a counſayle to bee called at the Citie of Compeyne, and there by theyr meanes and labours, cauſed their father by authoritie of ſpirituall and temporall Lordes, to bee diſcharged of all rule and dominion, as well of the Empyre as of the realme of Fraunce, by authoritie of the ſayde counſayle or parlyament, and after cauſed hym to renounce all hys temporall habyte, and to become a monke in the monaſtery of Sainct Marke, where he was lefte of hys ſonne Lothair not wythoute ſure watche and kepinge.

Lewis deposed of his iij. ſonnes.

Lewis cōpelled to be a monke.

But full often it is ſeene, that when the earthlye power of man fayleth or weaketh, God of hys great mercye the repentaunt ſynner to grace calleth, and hym by hys deuine power aydeth, and ſtrengtheneth: and ſo he dyd thys Lewes, For after thys miſerye and tribulation thus to hym fallen, the people in diuers places of this lande murmured and grudged verye ſoore agaynſt the innaturall dealing of the ſons againſt their father.

In theſe daies was a great ruler in Fraunce named Guilliam, and Stewarde and Conſtable of that

The emperoure diſcharged.

that lande, the whiche with one Egebarde or Edgare a manne of great byrth and aliaunce, counſailed together for the enlargynge of the Emperoure. And laſtlye with ayde of theyr frendes, aſſembled a great people. And drew vnto theym two noble men of Burgoyne: called Barnarde and Gueryn, the whiche ſome time hadde been well cheriſhed with the emperoure Lewes. All this ſeaſon Lathayre had reſted hym for the moore parte at Aquiſgrany. But when he heard of the aſſemblynge of theſe foreſayde Lordes, he ſped him towardes Parys. And when he was thither comen, the foreſaid lords ſent vnto him two noble men Rowlande and Gantelyne the whiche made requeſt vnto Lathayre, in the name of the other Lordes, that it would lyke hym to reſtore his father vnto his former dignitie, with other thinges concerninge their legation.

Lothayres
anſwere.

To the whyche two Lordes Lothayre gaue anſwere, that of hys fathers reſtoringe to hys firſte or former dignitie, no man lyuynge would be more fayne thereof then he woulde. But the depoſynge of him was done by the whole authoritie of the lande. Wherfore if he ſhoulde bee agayne reſtored, it muſte bee by the ſame authoritie, and not by him only. Albeit ẏ thei mighte knowe of his beneuolence and fauoure that he bare toward his father, he willed them to ſtand a parte, while he hadde ſome communication of hys Lordes for the ſame matter. By reaſon whereof, were it for feare or fauour the emperour was ſhortly putte at libertie, and reſtored to all his former honoure and dignitie, and then with great honour conueyed to a citie or town called Ciriake, wher met with him his other two ſõnes Pepyn and Lewes, and there reſted hym certayne dayes, in makynge feaſte and ioye, and after rode to Aquiſgrany, and there reſted another ſeaſon.

The empe
roure reſto
red ſodenly

In which time of his there beinge, was brought vnto him from the place where ſhe had been priſoner, his wife Iudith. But when Lotharius knewe that hys father had her agayne receyued contrary to his mynde and pleaſure, he in wrathe and diſpleaſure entered the countrey of Burgoyne, and made in it ſharpe and cruell warre, and executed therin many ſpoylinges and other inordinate deedes. The whiche crueltie to withſtande and lette, hys father with his ſon Pepyn with a great hoſte ſpedde him thitherwarde.

But anone as he had knowledgh therof, miſtruſtynge hys ſtrength he yelded hym vnto hys fathers grace ⁊ mercy, whom the meke father receiued and forgaue him his treſpaſſe.

The emp
rours me
cie towa
his ſonn

And after that of him and diuers of his lordes he hadde taken aſſured othes and other ſuertyes, he than ſent the ſayde Lothayr into Italye with a certayne number of knightes, to defende that countrey from the daunger of enemies, ⁊ ſtrengthinge of ẏ ſtraytes and mountaynes.

And that with other thynges ordered and done for the weale of his realme, Lewes then toke vpon him to ride aboute his lande, to the intent that he myghte bee ſomewhat enfourmed of the rule of his officers, and how the countreys were ruled by the rulers of them. And where he founde anye miſgouernaunce, he puniſhed the executers thereof, as well the biſhoppes as other, as farre as hys authoritie in that behalfe ſtretched.

Then Iudith conſideringe the Emperoure fell into greate age, and her ſonne and his Charles by name, had as yet no ſufficient landes nor poſſeſſions to mayntaine any eſtate with: ſhe compaſſed manye wayes in her mynde, how ſhe might atchiue her entent, and to bringe it to good purpoſe. Where finally by counſayle of her frendes to the ende to purchaſe the loue and fauoure of Lothayre, ſhe aſked of her lorde and huſband that the ſayde Lothayre myghte be tutour and gyder of hys yongeſt ſonne Charles. Of this requeſte the emperour was very glad, and graunted her petition. And ſo it fell ſoone after certaine meſſangers came to the Emperour from Lothayre his ſonne. To the which when Lewes had geuen anſwere to ſuche matters as they were ſente for, and geuen vnto them other inſtructions, he ſent theym forth agayne, and with theim certaine other, to will his ſaide ſonne to come vnto him in as goodlye wiſe as he might. But at yͤ ſeaſon he excuſed him by ſickeneſſe, and when he was recouered he fained another excuſe.

In this meane time word was brought to the emperour that his ſōne Lothayr had greued yͤ church of Rome, and taken from it certen poſſeſſions. Wherwith Lewis being before amoued, ſent vnto hys ſonne cōmaunding him in ſharpe wordes, that he ſhoulde haue in mind the oth before by him made, and that he ſhoulde in eſchewing his diſpleaſure, make reſtitution of all thinges that he before had taken from the churche, the whiche commaundement Lothayre promyſed to obey in alwiſe. And where Lewes was determined to haue goone to Rome, to haue ſene the ſaide promeſſe fulfilled, and alſo to haue ſpoken with the B. of Rome for diuerſe matters needefull for the churche, he was let by the occaſion of the Danis or Normans, that then had newely inuaded the landes of Frau͂ce, the whiche he ſhortlye after expelled and draue out of his landes.

And that done the emperoure yode vnto Aquiſgrany, where by the frends of Iudith and other of the nobles of Fraunce, the emperour gaue vnto his yongeſt ſonne Charles a porcion of the empyre: which after ſhall moore clearelye apeare. And ſoone after at a counſayle holden at Ciriake, before named, in the preſence of his ſonne Lewis, he gaue to him the order of knighthod, and adorned him with kinges clothing.

And ouer all this, in the preaſence of manye lordes of Fraunce he gaue to the ſayde Charles the whole countrey of Newſtria that nowe is named Normandye. Of whiche honoure and gyftes, though hys mother were ioyous and glad, yet hys brother Lewis was therewith nothinge contented, whiche of Iudith and of her frends was well apperceiued and knowen.

Wherfore as ſhe before time had

done, then of newe ſhe made requeſt vnto her Lord and huſbād, that he woulde of hys moſte eſpeciall grace graunte vnto her, that Lothayre myghte haue the gouernaunce of her ſonne Charles, the whiche of him was the ſecond time graunted. Uppon whyche graunte thus to her made, the Emperoure ſente vnto hys ſonne Lothayre pleaſaunte letters willynge him in all goodlye haſte to reſort vnto hys court. The which obeinge hys fathers commaundement, retourned into Fraunce ſhortlye after the receypte of the ſayde letters: and came vnto hys father to the citie of Uernayſe, of whome he was ioyouſlye receiued And after he hadde a ſeaſon dwelled with the Emperoure, he gaue vnto him the countrey of Auſtracie, the whiche countrey as ſhall after be ſhewed in thys Lotharius ſtorye, was after his name named Lorayne. But a parte of the ſayde Prouince or countrey, that ſtretched towarde Hungrye, the ſayde Lewys gaue vnto hys yongeſt ſonne Charles. And immediatlye after theſe gyftes before manye lordes confyrmed, the Emperoure in preſence of the ſayd Lordes, tooke Charles by the hande, and delyuered hym vnto hys brother Lothayre, wyllynge and ſtrayghtlye chargynge hym that he ſhoulde take him vnto his cure, and be to hym as curious as he woulde be vnto hys owne child and to guide him, and hys poſſeſſions, as the father ſhoulde guyde the chyld. And to Charles he commaunded that he ſhould take and obey hym as hys father, and loue and worſhyppe hym as hys brother: the whiche vpon either partie was promiſed to bee obſerued. And ſhortlye after the ſayde Lothayr wyth hys brother Charles tooke lycence of father and mother, and retourned agayne into Italy.

Aboute thys time died Pepyn the ſeconde ſonne of Lewes, and duke of Guyan, the whyche (yf all ſhoulde bee expreſſed) putte hys father to great trouble and vexation, wherfore for hym was made the leſſe mournynge. Thys lefte after hym a ſonne named Pepyn, of whome the ſtorye ſome what ſpeaketh after. But now I wyll retourne vnto Lewes the thyrde ſonne of the Emperoure.

The.clxi.Chapter.

TRueth it is that when the yongeſt brother Lewes ſaw the bountie of hys father ſo largelye extende toward hys two brethren and to him nothing, he was therwith in hys minde greatlye diſcōtent: albeit that for the tyme he kepte it ſecrete to hym ſelfe. But when he was departed from hys father, and retourned to his owne lordeſhyppe, he gathered than a mightye power, & began to make war vpon yͤ dwellers neare about the Rine. Wherfore the emperoure with a conuenient power approched vnto the citie of Dodange, and ſent from thence vnto his ſaid ſonne wordes of reconſiliation: by meane whereof the ſaide Lewes putte hym wholye in the grace of hys father, and was to hym reconcyled withoute the ſhedyng of mans bloude.

But while the emperour was

beſyed

beſyde at the cytie of Cleremount in the countrie of Auerne, to ſet a direction amonge the Gaſcoines for opinions ỹ were reryd among them, for the ſōne of Pypen there lately kyng or duke deceſſed, whiche ſonne as aboue is ſayd, was alſo named Pepyn, and there about had taken great payne & laboure, thither to him tydinges wer newlye brought, that this ſayde ſonne Lewes had with the Saxons or Soyſons, & with the Thoringes, made allyaunce, and was entred into Germany, and therein made warre in moſte cruell wyſe. With whiche tydynges Lewes was ſo greuouſelye paſſyoned, that to his great age was by mene of this vnkynde anger, fyred a ſycknes that left him not while he lyued.

After yet this notwithſtanding he lyke a ſtronge harted knyghte, ſhewed forth a good and comfortable countenaunce. And after he had in knightly wyſe prepared all thinge neceſſarye to the warre, he ſped hym towarde Almayne, and cōtinued his journey tyll he came vnto Thoryng, where a ſeaſon he reſted hym and his people, tyll he might be better aſſured wher his ſonne Lewes reſted him. But the ſonne hauynge knowledge of the great power of his father, and alſo beynge in dyſpayre of purchaſynge of mercy, conſyderynge his many offences: fled by the country of Slauonye; and ſo by that coaſtes retourned into Bayon or Bauerye, and ſo eſcaped the daunger of his father.

Lewes fled
t the com-
minge of
is father.

Then the Empeeour beynge ſurelye enfourmed of the eſcape of his ſonne, held on his iourney tyll he came to Magounce. And after came vnto the Citie of Wermayſe where he called a counſayle of his Lordes ſpirituall and temporall, and ordeyned there diuerſe thynges for the eſtate of the Empyre. And more intended to haue done, but ſyckeneſſe increaſed ſo ſore in him that by the ſpace of fortie dayes he toke no temperal ſuſtenaunce. But in that tyme he vſed often to take te bleſſed Sacrament, the whiche as he often ſayde, ſtrengthened bothe the Soule, and the bodye.

Thempe-
rour called
a counſail.

Then he ſente for Lothayre to come vnto hym, the whiche without any tarienge obeyed his commaundemente, and abode ſtyll with hym.

Of this Lewes Polycronycon maketh a ſhort reherſall, and ſaith that by his fyrſt wyſe named Harmyngarde, he had thre Sonnes, Lothayre, Pypen, and Lewes. The fyrſte beinge felowe with his father of the Empyre, was crowned of Paſcall B. of Rome, vpon an Eaſter daye, and he was alſo kynge of Italye. And Pepyn he made duke of Gaſcoyne and Guyan. And Lewes was made ruler of Baueraye.

And by his ſeconde wyfe, named Indyth, and doughter to the Duke of Bayon, he had Charles the Bawlde, to whome he gaue the countrie of Burgoyne, as the ſayde Policronica ſaythe. And for this Lewes was milde, he was often troubled of his owne men & of other, tyll he delt with them more ſharpely and wyſely, and ruled the people more ſtraightly.

It is there alſo ſhewed, that whē this Lewis had promoted a yong man named Fredrike to the ſee of

Themperors exhortation to a younge biſhoppe.

Wtrike, and to him had geuen ſad and good exhortation, that he ſhoulde folowe the ſtableneſſe of his anteceſſours, & that he ſhulde purpoſe the ſothe and trueth without exception of perſones, and puniſhe miſdoers, as well the ryche as the poore: the ſayde byſhoppe ſhoulde anſwere to him and ſaye: I beſeche thy maieſtie ſyr Emperoure to take in pacience that I maye diſcloſe to thee that thynge that hathe longe walowed and tourned in my mynde. Saye thy pleaſure ſayde the Emperoure. I praye thee (ſyr Emperoure) ſhewe me thy minde, whither is it more accordinge to attame thys fyſhe here preſent, firſt at the head or at the tayle. The Emperoure anſwered ſhortlye and ſayde: at the head the fyſhe ſhalbe fyrſte attamed. So it is lorde Emperoure ſayde the biſhoppe, that chriſten faythe maye cauſe thee to ceaſe of thyne erroure, that thy Subiectes bee not boldened to folowe thy myſdoinge. Wherefore, firſte forſake thou thy vnlawfull wedlock, that that thou haſt made with Iudith thy neare kinſwoman.

By meane of thoſe wordes the kinge was reconciled and left the companye of his wife, till he had purchaſed a licence of the biſhoppe of Rome, and the emperoure forgaue the ſayde biſhoppe all treſpaſſes, but the woman hyred two knightes that ſlewe him in his veſtmentes, when he had ended his maſſe.

After thys the Empreſſe was falſely accuſed of a wronge crime, and made a menchon. But yͤ ſame yere the Emperour deliuered her frō that habite, when he had ſufficientlye proued the ſaide crime to be falſe.

Then to returne where I lefte, when this Lewis had long lien in this agonious ſickenes, and knew wel that he amended nothing but febled more and more, he commaũded his iewelles to be brought before him. Whereof by hys owne hande he gaue a parte vnto the churche of Rome, and to Lotharius his ſonne there preſente he gaue hys crowne and hys ſword commaundynge hym ſtraightlye vpon hys bleſſynge, that he ſhuld haue in honor his mother Iudith, and that to Charles his brother he ſhould owe trewe loue and amitie, and that he ſhoulde hym and his landes defende to the vttermoſt of his power.

Then the lordes ſpirituall and temporall, and ſpeciallye the archbiſhop of Meawes made lamentable requeſt to the Emperour for his ſonne Lewes, that he woulde accepte him to his grace and mercye, and to forgiue him his inſolent and wanton wylde deedes. Whereof when the Emperoure heard, he fell in ſuch weeping, that he might not ſpeake a good while after.

And whē he had refrained him thereof, he remembred to the lordes the manye and greate benefites that he had doone to him, and the innaturall vnkindneſſe that the ſaid Lewes had again ſhewed vnto him: & how often times he had pardoned his vnkind ſonnes treſpaſſe. And finally all this notwithſtanding, he was at yͤ houre in perfect charitie with him, & forgaue him as he truſted to be forgeuen, praying the lordes there preſente, and ſpecially charging the ſayd byſhop, that he woulde ſhewe vnto his ſayde ſonne that great daunger that he was in agaynſte God for the dyſpleaſures done to hym, and ſpecially that he was a cauſe of the abrygement or ſhortyng of his dayes.

Then to brynge this ſtorye to effect, whereof if I ſhould declare the ſpecialties, wolde aſke a long tyme (for ye ſhall vnderſtand that theſe.ii. ſtoryes of the great Charles & of Lewes, occupy in French of leaues in greate ſcantlyn ouer lxiiii.) Wherefore I conclude that he died like a good chriſten prince when he had bene Emperoure of Rome and kynge of Fraunce by the terme of.xxvi. yeares, & was buried with great ſolempnitie at Mawes or Mets by his mother Hyldegarte, as ſayth maiſter Robert Gagwyne, in the yeare of his age.lxiiii. leauinge after hym the foreſayde three ſonnes, Lothayre Lewes, and Charles the Ballid.

e death
Lewes
perour.

Anglia.

¶ The.clxii.Chapter.

eulphus,
Ethel-
lphus.
.ca.30.

Adulphus or Ethelwulphus the ſonne of Egbertus, began his raygne ouer the Weſtſaxõs, or Anglis in the yeare of oure lordes incarnation viii. hundred and. xxxii. and the xvii. yeare of Lewes the mylde, then kynge of Fraunce.

This in his youth was wyllynge to be a preiſte, and was entred the order of ſubdeacon.

But thereafter by diſpenſacion of Paſchall the fyrſte of that name byſhoppe of Rome, he was maried to Oſburga a woman of lowe byrth, by whome he hadde foure ſonnes, that is to meane Ethelwalde, Ethelberte, Etheldrede, and Alurede, the whiche after theyr father, raigned as kynges of Englande that one after that other, as after ſhall appeare.

This Adulphus after he had a certayne tyme ben kyng, went to Rome, and tooke with hym his yongeſt ſone Alurede or Alphrede and taryed there by the ſpace of a yeare.

In the whyche ſeaſon he repayred the Saxon ſcole, the whiche before time was there founden by Offa, kynge of Mercia, as Guido ſayth and other, but more verelye of Iue kinge of Weſtſaxons, as ſayth the authoure of the Floure of hyſtories. And for that, he graunted of euery houſe of his kingdom a penye, as in his ſtorye is before ſhewed.

A Saxon
ſcole buylt
at Rome.

But this ſcole was ſore decaied, and the houſe thereof latelye brent, the which this Adeulphus newely repayred, and ſet in better order, then it before was vſed.

This kinge alſo to refourme the greuouſe corrections that he ſawe there executed to Engliſhe men for ſpirituall offences, as in wearynge of yrons and gyues: he graunted of euery fyre houſe of his lande, i.d. as Iue foreſayd had done.

By the which ſaying it ſhould ſeeme, that by theſe two kynges ſhoulde be graunted vnto Rome ii.d. of euery fyre houſe thorough theyr lande.

But that may not be ſo vnder-

Rome ſcot

ſtande, for this Rome Scot is gathered of euery houſe a peny without moore.

Wherfore it muſt folow that it is miſtaken of the writers, that alledge this dede to that one king for that other. Howe be it, it may ſtande by reaſon, that Iue made the fyrſt graunte, and this kinge after confirmed the ſame. But the authoure of cronica cronicarum ſayeth, that thys Adeulphus graunted to Saynct Peter theſe Peter pence, & ſpeaketh no worde of Iue nor of none other.

Li.5. ca.30

It is alſo ſhewed of this kynge by * Polycronica, that he ſhoulde for the acquitinge of the churches of Englande of all maner of the kinges tribute, paye yearelye to Rome thre hundred markes. That is to meane to Sainct Peters churche a hundred markes, to the light of Saincte Paule, a hundred markes, and to the Popes treaſurie a hundred markes. And ouer all this, of his pure deuotion, he offered to God and to Sainct Paule the .x. parte of hys moueable goodes.

Oxeforde vniuerſity

Alſo one cronicle ſaieth, that this kinge founded firſte the vniuerſitie of Oxforde, whiche was likely to bee doone by Offa kinge of Mercia, for ſo muche as in hys daies floured that famous clerke Alcunius or Albinus, the whiche (as ſaieth the french cronicle) was the firſte founder of the ſcole of Paris and of Pappa, as is before ſhewed in yͤ ſtorie of Charles the great, in the third chapter of the ſaide ſtorie.

When Adeulphus had thus ſped his buſines at Rome, he returned by Fraunce where at yͤ time was king of that land Charles Ballid of whome he was ioyouſly receyued. And after he had diſported him there a ſeaſon, he ſpouſed the doughter of the ſaide Charles, in the .xx. yeare of the raigne of the ſaide Adeulphus as teſtifieth Policronica in the .xxx. Chapiter of his .v. booke, which ſhould be the yeare of the raygne of the ſayde Charles the .xi. But of this mariage is nothing touched in yͤ french cronicle.

Juditha.

Then Adeulphus taking leue of the kynge, tooke ſhyppynge and landed in Englande wyth hys wyfe, Judith by name. And for that he (contrarye to the lawe made in the time of Brigthricus) ſet his wife in the kinges trone, & magnified like a quene, the lordes of hys lande aroſe agaynſt hym, and pulled from him a great part of his dominion, and made his eldeſt ſonne ruler thereof, whiche was all done in reproche of Ethelburga, which ſlewe her lord Brigthricus as before is ſhewed.

Adeulph

His lan

take aw

His lan

reſtored.

Laſtly, the matter was appeaſed and he to his kingly honour reſtored. In the yere folowing died the ſaide Bertulphꝰ king of Mercia. After whoſe deth, Burdredꝰ was made kinge of Mercia or middle England, the whiche before tyme had ſpouſed the doughter of kyng Adeulphus.

In the latter dayes of this Adeulphus, the Danes did muche harme in Lyndeſey, and alſo in Kente, and from thence came to London, and robbed and ſpoyled the citie. Wherefore Adeulphus gathered his people, & laſtlye met with them in Southerye, vpon a downe called Oclea, and there diſcomfited theim, not withoute ſhedinge of greate plentye of the Anglis bloude, and forſed them to take the ſea, ſo that after thei landed in Eaſt Anglia as after ſhall appeare. Then laſtlye died this good kinge Adeulphus or Ethelwolphus, when he had ruled hys ſubiectes nobly by accorde of moſt writers, fully .xxii. yere, and was buryed at Wincheſter, leauing after him foure ſonnes aforeſayde.

Francia.

¶ The .clxiii. Chapter.

Charles

Charles the yongeſt ſonne of Lewes the mylde, began his raigne ouer the chyefe parte of Fraūce, in the yere of oure lorde .ix.C.xli. and the .ix. yere of Adeulphus then kynge of Weſtſaxons, the whiche as before is ſayde, was ſurnamed Ballid.

Anone as hys father was buryed hys brother Lothayre, to whome the father, as ye before haue hearde, committed the gydinge of this Charles, by the entiſyng of his brother Lewes, malygned agaynſte this Charles, and ſought manye waies to putte him from ſuche landes as hys father had geuen him. This ſayde Lothayre was after the death of his father emperour, and Lewes the yonger brother duke or knight of Bayon. But for Charles was yongeſt, and hadde to hys parte the principall porcion of Fraunce which was called myddle Fraūce therefore hys two brethren and ſpeciallye Lewes, maligned greuouſlye agaynſte him. Whereof this Charles beinge ſomedeale infourmed, bare him ſo wiſely and ſo egallye to his Subiectes that he hadde their loues and fauours, and truſted alwaye by their good ayde that he ſhoulde bee of power to withſtande theyr vnkynde malyce.

And like as the hidde fyre in proceſſe breaketh oute, and ſheweth greate lighte and flammye blaſſe, euen ſo did this couered malice at laſte breake oute to greate ire and open wrath. For after foure yeres was paſſed, the ſaide two brethren without defiaūce or groūdlye cauſe of warre, aſſigned or aſſembled a greate hooſte, ſuche as before this day had not been ſene, and entred the limittes of kynge Charles.

Charles aſſaulted by his two brethren.

Then Charles aſſembled in all the haſt his Lordes, and required their aydes and counſayle to withſtande the malice of hys brethren. And when he hadde knowledge of their good myndes, anone their knyghtes were gathered, and all thing was ready to the fight.

Nowe, in this while the two brethren with their people, were commen to a place called Fountaynes or Fountanet, whervnto Charles ſpedde him. And when bothe Hooſtes were neare, either part made prouiſion to ſubdue his enemie.

Then were the battayles vpon both parties ordered and aſſigned to their ſtanders and captaynes, and the winges ſette to the moſte aduauntage. What ſhoulde I lenger proceſſe of thys ordynaunce make, finallye the ſhotte of croſſebowes began on bothe ſides whiche ouerthrewe manye an horſe

they begin to fyght.

and man, and ſpecially the foreryders that put themſelfes in preace with their longe and ſharpe launces to winne the fyrſte brunte of the fielde.

The cruell bloudſhed.

Pytye it was to beholde the goodly bright armed knyghtes, lyinge and walowyng with their great ſteedes in the fielde, wyth deadly woundes gapyng againſt the Sonne, that were ſlayne at the fyrſte encountre. But when the ſhotte was ſpente, and the ſpeares ſhatered, then bothe hoſtes ranne together with Rowlandes ſonge, ſo that in ſhorte whyle the grene fielde was dyed in a perfite red. For there was heades, armes, legges, and trunkes of dead mens bodyes lyinge as thicke as floures grow in time of Maye, in the floriſhing medowes: miſerable & piteous it was to beholde the perſonnes halfe lyuinge and halfe dead, wyth theyr gryſely woundes piteouſlye gronynge and cryinge without comforte. So that there was ſhewed all rigoure withoute mercye, and all cruelties without compaſſion.

Charles was victo

Thus endured thys mortall fight by a long ſeaſon, that doubtfull it was to knowe whiche partie had the aduauntage of other. Howe be it Charles was putte to an afterdeale by two meanes. The fyrſte, was for ſo muche as Charles entended to haue forborne for the reuerẽce of the high feaſt, as the daye of the Aſcencion of oure lord, and that daye not to haue foughten. And the ſecond was, that he was farre leſſe in numbre. Whiche twoo cauſes of diſaduauntage notwithſtanding yet in concluſion he wanne the honour of that iorney. But not withoute great loſſe of his people, and manye of the nobles of hys land, whereof the Frenche booke rehearſeth the names. But for they be to vs vnknowen, I paſſe them ouer.

And as it is teſtified of manye writers, there was ſlaine that day moe French men, then was ſlaine at any fielde euer before that day. Wherof the number is not expreſſed, for it was ſo great. Than Lothayr was forced to take Aquiſgrany for his ſafegarde, and Lewes elles where. But Charles w a ſmall company that to him was left, folowed his brethren and conſtrayned Lothayr to forſake the citie, and thence to go to Lion, a citie that ſtandeth at this daye in the vttermoſt border of Fraunce, and after to Vien. To the whiche citie of Vien ſhortly after came vnto him his brother Lewys where they two aſſembled a newe hoſte.

Peace w treated.

In the whiche paſſetime, as Charles was comminge towarde hys brethren, meſſangers mette wyth him from hys brethren to common of peace. So that finallye he was accorded, that the realme of Fraunce ſhoulde bee deuyded in thre, as their father had before dyſpoſed it. That is to meane, Lothayr ſhoulde enioye ouer the landes belongynge to the Empyre, the countrey of Auſtracye, the whiche in proceſſe of time was called Lothayre or Lotharingia, which is to meane Lorayne after his name. And to Lewes ſhould remaine the prouince of Germany with the countrey of Baion or Bauare: and to Charles ſhoulde remaine the countrey called

led myddle or cheif Fraunce, with the prouinces of Normandy and Burgoyne. Whiche ſayde myddle Fraunce is reported to be in ſpace from the Occean of Brytayn, unto the ryuer of Mawzel.

The which concord thus fermely ſtablyſhed and fynyſhed, either of other toke their departing, and reſorted unto theyr owne lordeſhippes. But Lothayre dyed ſhortlye after, leauinge after hym thre ſonnes, named Lewes, Lothayre, and Charles. But this deathe of Lothayre is not taken for temporall death, for it is ſayde that he forſoke the trauayle of the worlde and became a monk at the abbay of Pruny, and lyued there a ſolytary lyfe many yeares after.

The. clxiiii. Chapter.

CHarles the Ballid thus beynge in peaſible poſſeſſion of the cheife part of the realme of Fraunce, and guidyng it with all ſobernes and indifferente iuſtice, was well dread and alſo beloued of his ſubiectes. In proceſſe of time, aſtopõ viii. yeares after that Lothayre aboue ſayde renounced the pompe of the worlde, dyed fyrſte Charles the yongeſte ſonne of the three of the foreſayd Lothayre. And after dyed Lothayre the ſeconde ſonne, ſo that the ſayd Lewes onely ſuruyued, whiche was after his father, enoynted Emperour.

When Charles kynge of Fraunce knewe certaynely of the death of theſe two foreſayde brethren, and that withoute iſſue, anone he aſſembled his power and entred the prouince of Auſtracy or Loraine, yͭ which his brother Lothayre had geuen unto Lothayre his ſonne. And in ſhort whyle after crowned him king of that prouince, within the church of Saint Stephane, of the cytye of Meawes, cheſe cyti of that lordſhip and kingdome. With the which dede Lewis hys brother, and kinge of Germanie and Bayon, was diſcontented, thinking him ſelf more rightfull enherytour then Charlys, for ſo much as he was the elder brother, and alſo brother to the fyrſte Lothayre of father and of mother, where as Charles, was but halfe brother, and by the fathers ſyde onely.

Charles was crowned kynge of Auſtract

For this the ſayd Lewis ſent to Charles the Ballyd certayn meſſegers, geuyng to hym monicyon that he ſhulde call to memory the couenaunts betwene them before time ſtablyſhed, and that he ſhuld not meddell hym nor haue to do within the landes of his coſin lately dead, unto ſuch time as it were determined by theyr bothe counſailes, whether of them hadde the better ryght, and this to be obſerued upon payne of excommunicacyon or curſynge.

But for to Lewys was wel ſene that his brother Charls nothing abſteyned him from the occupyig of the forenamed countrei, he therfore gathered an armye to warre upon his ſayd brother.

Lewes agayne gathered an armye agaynſt his brother.

In the whiche paſtyme Charles toke to his ſeconde wife a woman named Rychent or Rycẽt, the whiche he before time had uſed as hys concubyne or paramoure.

And ſone after the Danes or Normans inuaded the lands of Charles, yͭ which for that tyme he was faine to appeaſe & pleaſe with rich gyftes and other pleaſures.

Then Charles receiued from his brother a ſeconde ambaſſade or meſſage, the which ſhewed vnto him, excepte he woulde voyde his knightes and ſtrengthes that he had ſette and putte in diuerſe places of the lande of Auſtracie, he ſhould be ſure to haue of his ſaide brother an enemie, and that in all haſte he woulde entre his land with great force and warre. Wherupon was ſuche anſwer ſet, that by bothe their agrementes the matter was had in ſuch communicacion, that finallie it was agreed that yͤ ſayd landes ſhould egallie be departed betwene thẽ. Which cõcluſion perfited, Lewes with his people retourned into Germanie.

A peace cõcluded.

But it was not long after that Lewes repented him of his agrement, ſo that new legacions were made vpon bothe parties, and laſtlie with muche payne newlie agreed. After whiche agreemente and accorde finiſhed, Lewes the Emperoure and ſonne of the firſte Lothayre, ſent an ambaſſade vnto bothe the forenamed brethren, admoniſhing and warning them that nother the one nor the other ſhould intermypt wyth the foreſayde landes, for ſo muche as the right therof belonged to him, as nexte heyre to his brother, and not to them that were a degree further. The anſwer of this was deferred by Charles, how be it his brother Lewes as ſayeth myne authoure, gaue ouer hys parte ſhortlie after to Lewes the Emperour.

In this paſſetime, Charles the ſonne of Charles the Ballid by his fyrſte wife, whome the father had made ruler of a countrey called Belge, had ruled him inſolentlie, and done in that countrey diuerſe outragious deedes. For the which he being complained of was broughte to his father: and ſo by him commaunded to priſon. But ſhortlie after he was deliuered at the requeſt of ſome nobles of Fraunce, and kept after in hys fathers court, where he continued but a ſhort whyle. For within a litle ſeaſon after, his father being at Lions, he departed from yͤ ſaid courte, & gathered to him a wilde companie of euell diſpoſed perſõs and wente agayne to the ſayde countrey of Belge, and did more harme then he had done before ſeaſon, & ſo continued a longe while. But laſtlie he was taken and caſt againe in priſon, where after long puniſhement he was reued of his ſight, and then ſent vnto the Monaſterie of Corbenike, there ſafely to be kept. But at lengthe by the enticement of his vncle Lewes kinge of Germanie, and the treaſon of two Munkes of that place he ſcaped thence, and fled vnto the ſayd Lewes his vncle. In the whiche time Charles his father was occupied in the defence of the Danes or Normannys, that thẽ by ſtrength had won the Citie of Angiers, and doone therein much harme: whome the kinge cloſed within the ſayde Citie with a ſtronge ſyege, and finallie compelled thẽ to ſeke meanes of peace at the kinges pleaſure. After whiche peace concluded, and the ſayd Danes auoided, the king repoſſeſſed the ſayd Citie.

It was not long after, that tidinges were brought vnto Charles

les of the death of Lewes the Emperour. After knowledge wherof, the king ſent his other ſonne named Lewes: into Auſtracie, to haue the rule and the guidinge of the countrey. And after other thinges ordered for the weale of his Realme, he wyth a ſtrong cōpanie of men of armes paſſed the Mountaynes, and ſo into Italie toward Rome. But Lewes hys brother and kinge of Germany, being therof warned, ſente in all haſte hys ſonne Lewes with a ſtronge hoſte to let his paſſage.

But how it was for feare or other mean, the ſaid Lewes yelded him vnto his vncle Charles the Ballyd. Wherwith the father beinge greuouſlie diſpleaſed, ſent his ſeconde ſonne named Charlon, to withſtande the paſſage of the ſaid Charles. But this for feare or other cauſe that he ſaw yͤ he might not preuayle againſt his vncle, retourned him agayne vnto his father. After whoſe retourne, he for ſo much as the ſayd Lewes kinge of Germanie well perceyued that his brother Charles was paſt his daunger, he then with a more nōber ioyned vnto his ſonnes hoſte, entred the land of Fraunce, in domaging it to the vttermoſt of his power.

In whiche ſeaſon, Charles the Ballid kepte on his iourney towarde Rome, wherof hearing the viii. John then biſhop of that ſee, ſente agaynſt him certayne perſones of honour, and welcomed him, as Auguſtus or Emperour. And after his comminge thither, the ſayd Biſſhop of Rome receyued him with great reuerēce, and crowned hym with the imperyall diademe, and denounced hym as Emperour.

¶ The.clxv. Chapter.

Charles the Ballid thus beinge aucthoriſed for emperour exerciſed him for a time for the nedes of the Church of Rome, and after tooke his leaue of the biſhop therof, and retourned vnto Papie a Citie of Italie. where he calling a generall counſayle of the lordes of the Empyre and other, he by theyr aduiſes prouided and ordered diuers thinges for the weale of the ſaid Empyre. And ouer that by their agreementes, he ordeined for his Liuetenaunt or debite of the ſayde Empyre in his abſence, a noble man: brother to his wyfe Recent named Beſonne, or Beſō, and aſſigned to him ſuch pleople as was thought neceſſarie and conuenient.

when Charles had ſped his nedes in Papy, he hied him into Fraunce, but or he came within the territorie therof, worde was brought vnto him that his brother Lewes was retourned into his owne countrei, without great damage doone to the Realme of Fraunce.

In proceſſe the Emperour came to Paris, where he was receyued of the citizens wͭ moſte triumphe and ioye, and kept his Eaſter tide at Saynt Denys.

It was not longe after that Charles was thus retourned into Fraunce, but that he receyued meſſengers from his brother king of Germanie, the whiche in hys name claimed his part of the empire, as his right & enheritaunce. Which anſwere for that time was

deferred

Then Charles receiued from his brother a ſeconde ambaſſade or meſſage, the which ſhewed vnto him, excepte he woulde voyde his knightes and ſtrengthes that he had ſette and putte in diuerſe places of the lande of Auſtracie, he ſhould be ſure to haue of his ſaide brother an enemie, and that in all haſte he woulde entre his land with great force and warre. Wherupon was ſuche anſwer ſet, that by bothe their agrementes the matter was had in ſuch communicacion, that finallie it was agreed that ẏ ſayd landes ſhould egallie be departed betwene thē. Which cōcluſion perfited, Lewes with his people retourned into Germanie.

A peace cōcluded.

But it was not long after that Lewes repented him of his agrement, ſo that new legacions were made vpon bothe parties, and laſtlie with muche payne newlie agreed. After whiche agreemente and accorde finiſhed, Lewes the Emperoure and ſonne of the firſte Lothayre, ſent an ambaſſade vnto bothe the forenamed brethren, admoniſhing and warning them that nother the one nor the other ſhould intermypt wyth the foreſayde landes, for ſo muche as the right therof belonged to him, as nexte heyre to his brother, and not to them that were a degree further. The anſwer of this was deferred by Charles, how be it his brother Lewes as ſayeth myne authoure, gaue ouer hys parte ſhortlie after to Lewes the Emperour.

In this paſſetime, Charles the ſonne of Charles the Ballid by his fyrſte wife, whome the father had made ruler of a countrey called Belge, had ruled him inſolentlie, and done in that countrey diuerſe outragious deedes. For the which he being complained of was broughte to his father: and ſo by him commaunded to priſon. But ſhortlie after he was deliuered at the requeſt of ſome nobles of Fraunce, and kept after in hys fathers court, where he continued but a ſhort whyle. For within a litle ſeaſon after, his father being at Lions, he departed from ẏ ſaid courte, & gathered to him a wilde companie of euell diſpoſed perſōs and wente agayne to the ſayde countrey of Belge, and did more harme then he had done before ſeaſon, & ſo continued a longe while. But laſtlie he was taken and caſt againe in priſon, where after long puniſhement he was reued of his ſight, and then ſent vnto the Monaſterie of Corbenike, there ſafely to be kept. But at lengthe by the enticement of his vncle Lewes kinge of Germanie, and the treaſon of two Munkes of that place he ſcaped thence, and fled vnto the ſayd Lewes his vncle. In the whiche time Charles his father was occupied in the defence of the Danes or Normannys, that thē by ſtrength had won the Citie of Angiers, and doone therein much harme: whome the kinge cloſed within the ſayde Citie with a ſtronge ſyege, and finallie compelled thē to ſeke meanes of peace at the kinges pleaſure. After whiche peace concluded, and the ſayd Danes auoided, the king repoſſeſſed the ſayd Citie.

It was not long after, that tidinges were brought vnto Charles

les of the death of Lewes the Emperour. After knowledge wherof, the king ſent his other ſonne named Lewes: into Auſtracie, to haue the rule and the guidinge of the countrey. And after other thinges ordered for the weale of his Realme, he wyth a ſtrong cõpanie of men of armes paſſed the Mountaynes, and ſo into Italie toward Rome. But Lewes hys brother and kinge of Germany, being therof warned, ſente in all haſte hys ſonne Lewes with a ſtronge hoſte to let his paſſage. But how it was for feare or other mean, the ſaid Lewes yelded him vnto his vncle Charles the Ballyd. Wherwith the father beinge greuouſlie diſpleaſed, ſent his ſeconde ſonne named Charlon, to withſtande the paſſage of the ſaid Charles. But this for feare or other cauſe that he ſaw yͤ he might not preuayle againſt his vncle, retourned him agayne vnto his father. After whoſe retourne, he for ſo much as the ſayd Lewes kinge of Germanie well perceyued that his brother Charles was paſt his daunger, he then with a more nõber ioyned vnto his ſonnes hoſte, entred the land of Fraunce, in domaging it to the vttermoſt of his power.

In whiche ſeaſon, Charles the Ballid kepte on his iourney towarde Rome, wherof hearing the viii. John then biſhop of that ſee, ſente agaynſt him certayne perſones of honour, and welcomed him, as Auguſtus or Emperour. And after his comminge thither, the ſayd Biſhop of Rome receyued him with great reuerẽce, and crowned hym with the imperyall diademe, and denounced hym as Emperour.

The. clxv. Chapter.

Charles the Ballid thus beinge aucthoriſed for emperour exerciſed him for a time for the nedes of the Church of Rome, and after tooke his leaue of the biſhop therof, and retourned vnto Papie a Citie of Italie. where he calling a generall counſayle of the lordes of the Empyre and other, he by theyr aduiſes prouided and ordered diuers thinges for the weale of the ſaid Empyre. And ouer that by their agreementes, he ordeined for his Liuetenaunt or debite of the ſayde Empyre in his abſence, a noble man: brother to his wyfe Recent named Beſonne, or Beſõ, and aſſigned to him ſuch pleople as was thought neceſſarie and conuenient.

When Charles had ſped his nedes in Papy, he hied him into Fraunce, but or he came within the territorie therof, worde was brought vnto him that his brother Lewes was retourned into his owne countrei, without great damage doone to the Realme of Fraunce.

In proceſſe the Emperour came to Paris, where he was receyued of the citizens wͭ moſte triumphe and ioye, and kept his Eaſter tide at Saynt Denys.

It was not longe after that Charles was thus retourned into Fraunce, but that he receyued meſſengers from his brother king of Germanie, the whiche in hys name claimed his part of the empire, as his right & enheritaunce. Which anſwere for that time was deferred with pleaſaunt wordes, ſo that the nexte worde that he had from his ſayde brother, was that he was dead and buried in the Churche of ſaynct Nazer in Frankeborught. Whereof when Charlis was aſcerteyned, anone he yode vnto Fountenays, and ſet his meſſẽgers to the lordes of the countrey, cõmaunding them that they ſhould meet him at the Citie of Mettes.

The death of Lewes ẏ brother of charles.

This foreſayde Lewes left after him two ſonnes named Lewes and Charlon: as before is touched, the whiche deuided betwene them their fathers patrimony, ſo that Lewes had Germanie, and Charlon had Bayon.

How Lewes the ſone of the laſt Lewes gathered an hooſte agaynſt his vncle charles Emperour.

This Lewes fearinge his vncle Charles, gathered to him a ſtronge power of Saxons and of Thoringes. And in the time of their aſſemble, he ſente an ambaſſade of certayne Biſſhoppes and temporall Lordes vnto his vncle Charles, praiyng him of his loue and fauour, with other requeſtes to him made: of the whiche they might purchaſe no graunt. Wherof when they were returned, he hauing by them knowledge, the ſayde Lewes incontinently with his hoſt drew nere vnto the Rine. But this Lewes was not ſo couert in his worke and aſſembling of his people, but that his vncle had therof witting, and purueied his people as faſt vpon that other ſide, ſo that he with an hoſte was ready to fight w the ſaid Lewes.

When Lewes was ware of the great power that the Emperour had aſſembled, he made no haſt to paſſe the water, but houed & cauſed his people to fal vnto praier, And Charles alſo fearing his neuew, vnder a colour ſent a legaciõ of entreatie. Duringe the which entreatie, the Emperour contrarie to his honour, led his people by a ſecret waie, thinking to haue fallen vpon his neuew ſodeynlie, and bi that meane to haue diſtreſſed him.

The Emperours pollecie agaynſt his neuew.

But Lewes being ware of his vncles treaſon, prouided ſo for his people, and kept them in ſuch aray that they receiued theyr enemies vpon their ſpeares poynctes, and to their great damage. For where the great rayne and tediouſneſſe of the harde and ſtrayte wayes, which they had paſſed, had ſore tired & weried them: than the freſh fearceneſſe of their enemies, whiche they thought they ſhould haue taken ſleping and vnpurueyed, abaſſhed them in ſuch wyſe, that they were ſoone ouercome, & fled from the feeld as ſheepe flee from the Wolfe. By meane of whiche flight great ſlaughter of thẽ was made, and manie nobles & great eſtates of Fraunce bothe ſlayne & taken priſoners, and the Emperour him ſelfe ſcaped with greate daunger. And of ẏ priſoners that were taken thei were ſo nere ſpoiled that they were fayne to take Vyne leaues to couer with, theyr ſecrete membres.

The diſc fiture of ẏ Emperours m

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that thys warre between the Emperoure Charles the Ballyd and his brothers ſonne Lewes, was for the prouince of Auſtracie or Loraine the whiche ſometime belonged to the Emperour Lothayre, & halfe brother to Charles. The whiche countrey after this batayle, was by mediatours ſet in an order.

The cauſ of the wa betwene the emperour and Lewes h neuew.

Then the Emperoure with great trauayle came to a towne called Tygny, And Lewes kepte his waye to Dandoniquike, and from thence to Ayes the chapell.

In this whyle the Danes or Normans knowing that Charles was occupied in the warre agaynſt his neuew, apparayled the a ſtronge hoſte, and entred oft the landes of Fraunce. But for Charles was at that tyme letted with chargeable buſyneſſe, he therfore ſente a noble man agaynſte them called Comarde, unto the riuer of Sayne, to withſtande the ſayde enemies. And alſo to him was geuen counſayle, to haue with them communication to make a peace ythe nyghte.

And to this trouble immediatlye was ioyned an other. For in this time and ſeaſon a citie belongynge to the churche of Rome rebelled. Wherefore to withſtande theyr malyce the byſhop of Rome then beyng Iohn the .viii. of that name, ſent meſſengers to Charles for the defence of the ſayde landes and other. And ſone after the byſhop of Rome for to haſt the ſayde emperoure, or elſes to quicken his deputy before named to aſſemble the Italyans & other people ther adioynaunte, came downe to the city of Papy, and taried there the emperours comynge.

Charles then beſet with troubles aſſembled his knyghtes and ſpedde hym toward Italy. And whe he was paſſed the mountaynes, worde was brought to hym of the byſhop of Rome beynge in Papy, wherfore he ſped him thither with al diligence.

In this time and ſeaſon Charlone the brother of Lewes, and ſonne of Lewes kynge of Germanye, whiche Charlon as before is ſhewed, was duke of Bayon or Bayory, gathered a ſtronge hooſt and entered the boundes of Italy. Whereof hearing the biſhop of Rome and the emperour, then, as before is ſayde, beinge at Pappe, buſyed in a great counſayle, diſſolued the ſame. And the byſhoppe of Rome incontinently toke leue of the emperour & departed agayne to Rome. And Charles with a great power that he had gathered as wel of Italyans as of his own people, made towarde his neuew. Whereof hearyng the ſayd Charlone, turned agayne by the waye that he had comen, tyll he came to his owne country, as ſayth mine author and alſo the French boke. But more verely Charlon keping together his hoſt and hauyng fauour of dyuers lordes of Italye, the emperoure Charles remoued to the citie of Mantue, where he was grudged with a feuer. For remedy whereof he toke a pocion of a phiſition Iew named Sedechias, whiche was intoxicate, by meane of whiche venymous pocion he dyed ſhortlye after, when he hadde reygned as kinge and Emperour after moſt accorde of writers, by the ſpace of .xxxvii. yeres, whereof he reigned as Emperour .iii. yeares, leauynge after hym a ſonne named Lewes, which as before is ſhewed was ruler of the countrey of Auſtracy or Lorayne.

How charles themperour was poiſoned by takyng a medecine of a Iew.

When this Charles was dead, his frendes entendyng to haue caried the corps into Fraũce, cauſed it to be ſeared and enoynted wyth rych and precyous bawmes, and other oytementes and aromatikes. But al might not ſtop the intolarable ayre of his bodie: ſo that they were fayne to burie him at Vercile, within the monaſtery of Saynct Euſeby. where he lay ouer.vii.yeares after, and then taken vp and conueyed to Saynċte Denys in Fraunce, and there honourablie buried.

¶ The.clxvi.Chapter.

When the Erledome of Flaunders begã.

IN the time of this Charles the Ballyd, as witneſſeth manie writers, began the Erledome of Flaunders, the which euer before theſe dayes, the ruler therof was called the foreſter of the kynge of Fraunce. Which Erledome had hisbeginning by this meane.

Ye haue harde before in the ſtorie of Adeulphus king of Weſtſaxons how in his returnyng from Rome he maried the daughter of Charles the Ballyd named Iudith.

The which Iudith after the death of her ſayd huſbande, returned by Flaunders toward Fraunce: thinkinge to paſſe without daunger, becauſe the ſayd countrey was vnder the obedience of her father.

But at thoſe daies was ruler or foreſter in that parties a noble yonge amorous mã called Bawldwyne, the whiche hearinge of the great bewti of this Iudyth, gaue attendaunce vpon her. And receaued her in beſt maner, making to her al the cheare that to him was poſſible: and finalli caſt to her ſuch loue, that whan ſhe ſuppoſed to departe ⁊ to haue gone into Fraũce, he delayed the matter in ſuch curties and wyſe maner, that he wan ſuch fauoure of her, that ſhe made no great haſt to departe from him albeit that moſte authours agree that he kept her perforce.

Whan Charles had weting that Bawdewine thus held his daughter Iudith, he ſent to him, ſtraytlie charginge him to ſende home his daughter: but that holpe not the matter. Than he purchaſed againſt him the cenſours of holye Churche, and accurſed the ſayde Bawdewine. But whan the king conceaued that the yong man had ſuch loue to Iudith that he ſet not by that puniſhemẽt, and alſo was certaynlie enformed that her hert was geuen vnto him: he in proceſſe by the meane of ſome byſhoppes ⁊ freendes of the ſayd Bawdewine, agreed that he ſhould take her to wife, and in the name of her dowar, he ſhould holde and enioy the ſayd countrey of Flaunders. And for he would haue his daughter to be more honoured, he created the ſayde Bawdewine an Erle, ⁊ commaunded him to be called after that daie, Erle of Flaunders.

Anglia.

¶ The.clxvii.Chapter.

Ethelw
dus.

Li.5.ca.

EThelwaldus or Ethelwouldus yͤ eldeſt ſonne of Adeulphus, began hys reygne ouer the weſt Saxons or ouer the more partie of England, in the yere of our lorde. viii. hundred and.lv. ⁊ the.x.yere of Charles yͤ Ballyd than king of Fraũce. The which became ſo vnhappie that he maried that woman whiche his father had ſometime kept or holden for his concubyne, as witneſſeth the aucthoure of the

Floure of hiſtories. But Policronicon ſaieth that he wedded his ſtepmother which diſacordeth wͭ the ſaiyng of other writers, whiche teſtifie his ſtepmother to bee maried to Baldwin earle of Flaūders, as in the ſtorie of Charles laſtly before is ſhewed.

This Ethelwolde though it be not expreſſed by what hap he died when he had raigned one yere, as ſaieth Policronica. But another cronicle beareth witneſſe, that he was ſlain of Hinger and Hubba prince of the Danes.

The.clxviii. Chapter.

Ethelbertus the ſeconde ſonne of Adeulphus, began his raign ouer the more party of England in the yere of our lorde.viii.hundred.lvi. ⁊ the.xi.yere of Charles the Balled then king of Fraunce. In whoſe time the Danes with more ſtrengthes entred the weſt parte of his landes, ⁊ robbed and ſpoyled the countrey before them till thei came to Wincheſter, and tooke the citie by ſtrengthe, and did therin what thei would. But the king made ſuch prouiſiō, that by him and his dukes thei were forced to forſake the citie. And as thei yode towarde their ſhippes, thei were fought with, ⁊ a great part of them ſlaine and taken.

Of this king is nothinge elles left in memorie more then before is ſhewed, but ẏ he died when he had raigned after moſte writers.vi.yeres, ⁊ was buried at Sherborne, leauinge after him none iſſue of his bodie: wherefore the rule of the land fel to his brother Etheldrede.

The.clxix. Chapter.

Etheldredus ẏ.iii. ſonne of Adeulphꝰ began his raigne ouer the Weſt Anglis, and the more part of Englande, in the yere of our lorde.viii.hundred.lxiii. and the.xviii.yeare of Charles the Balled then king of Fraunce.

In the beginning of this kinges raigne, the Danes landed in Eaſt Englande or Norffolke, and Suff. But thei were compelled to forſake that coūtrey, and ſo toke againe ſhipping, ⁊ ſailed Northward, and landed in Northūberland: where thei were met with of the kings then there raigning called Oſbright and Ella, which gaue to them a ſtrong fight. But that notwithſtandinge the Danes with helpe of ſuch as inhabited the countrey, wanne the citie of Yorke, and helde it a certaine of time.

Then the people of Northumberland varied within them ſelf, and hadde more leuer to ayde the Danes then to raigne vnder the king of Weſtſaxons. For here is to be noted that all ſuche kinges as raigned there after Egberte, which as before is ſaied, ſubdued that prouince and other, reigned as tributaries to the king of weſt ſaxons or Anglis.

Wherfore Etheldredus hearing of the auauntage that the Danes then had, aſſembled hys people and ſped him thitherwarde, and ſent vnto the forſaied twoo kinges, cōmaunding them alſo to prepare their people againſt his com ming. But howe it was or ÿ king came with his hooſte, the Danes ſo prouoked the Northumbres to battaile, that thei met in plaine fielde and fought a long bataile. But finally the Danes wan the price, and ſlew both the foreſaied kinges with a great multitude of their people.

After which victorie thei ſubdued much of the ſaied countrey, & deſtroyed the towne of Aklinte or Aclind the whiche as teſtifieth Beda, was ſometime one of the ſtronge cities of the North.

When Etheldrede had prepared all thing for the war, & was purpoſed towarde the North, for conſideration aforeſaied, worde was brought unto the ſaied king Etheldrede of the diſcomfiture of the Northumbres, & alſo diuers of the ſaied Danes with other ÿ were comen to Mercia, and had wonne the towne of Snotinghā or Nottingham, whiche tidinges letted him of his forthſpede in ÿ iourney. But this ſaiyng is diſagreeable vnto Policronicon. For he ſaieth that the Northumbres were wery of their king Oſbritus or Oſric? after ſome authors and choſe vnto theim a tyraunte named Ella, by meane whereof great diſcenſion grew among thē to the great hurt of the countrey. But when the Danes had paſſed the countrey, and wanne the citie of yorke that than was feblely walled, then by conſtraint and feare for the defence of their countrey they were faine to agree and to gather ſtrengthe on all ſides, ſo that bothe the foreſaied kynges went againſt the foreſaid Danes and both were ſlaine. After whiche the diſcomfiture the people ſo deſolate, ſome fled the countrey, and ſum made peace with the Danes and liued vnder their tuitiō. And ſo the Danes kepte the poſſeſſion of that countrie in ſuch wiſe that no Angle had rule thereof, til the time of Adelſtone or Ethelſtone, or after ſome writers til the time of Edredus, ſo that thei helde the poſſeſſion thereof of the terme of xl. yeres.

Then the Danes beinge thus poſſeſſed of the North countrey, manned the ſame, and fortified the ſtronge holdes thereof. And the other of them came downe into Mercia or middle Englande, and wanne a part thereof with the foreſaied towne of Nottingham, and dwelled there the more part of the yere folowing.

Wherfore king Etheldred with aide of Burtredus then kinge of mercia, laied ſeege vnto ÿ towne. The which when the Danes perceaued ſhoulde be wonne they refuſed the towne, and tooke the towre or Caſtell, and defended it in ſo ſtronge maner, that they helde it til a peace or apointment was concluded betwene the two kinges and theim. Whiche was that they ſhoulde goo free where thei would, and cary with theym their horſe (and harneyſe without anye pillage) And when this peace was thus made, eyther of the kinges departed to their own, and the Danes returned vnto yorke, and dwelled there the yere folowing.

And the yeare folowinge that ſaid yere, a part of ÿ ſaied Danes takinge ſhippynge in the North, entending to ſaile towarde Eaſt

Englande, met in the ſea with a flote of Danes, wherof the Captaynes or leaders were named *Hynguoar and Hubba. The which by exhortacion of the other comming out of the North, made al one courſe, and laſtlie landed in Eaſt England or Norffolcke, & in proceſſe of time came vnto *Therforde.

unger.

The lan-
ng of the
Danes in
orffolke.

hetfourd.

Thereof hearinge Edmundus then king of that prouince, aſſembled an hooſt, that gaue vnto thē battayle. But Edmunde and hys hooſte was forſed to forſake the fielde, and the kinge with a few perſons fled, vnto the Caſtell of Framilinghā or Framingham, whom the Danes purſued. But he in ſhorte whyle after yelded hym ſelfe vnto the perſecucion of the Danes. And for this bleſſed man Edmund would not reny or denie Chriſt & his lawes, they therfore moſte cruellie bounde him vnto a tree, and cauſed him to be ſhot to death, and laſtlie cauſed his head to be ſmitten from the body, and caſte among the thicke of the buſhes.

ow Ed-
und yel-
d him to
e Danes

he cruel
ath that
e Danes
at kinge
dmund
nto.

Then his freendes with greate ſolemnite caried the bodie & head vnto Eglydon or Egliſdon now called S. Edmundes Bury, and there buried him, about the yere of our Lord (as witneſſeth Policronica, Guydo, and other) viii. C. & .lxix. as before is ſhewed in the Chapter of this worke foure ſcore and .xvi. for whom dayly god ſhewed there manie miracles.

¶ The .clxx. Chapter.

dmund.

When thys bleſſed Edmunde was thus martired for the loue that he bare towarde hys maſter Chriſt and his lawes, hys brother named Edwoldus ſetting aparte the likinge and pleaſure of the worlde became an Hermit at the Abbey of Cerſi in the coūtrey of Dorſet, albeit that of right, the kingdome belonged vnto him.

Of this ſayde Abbey of Cerſi, Policronica ſayth that it was after theſe daies rich and right welthie. But the gouernours therof miſpente the patrimonie therof in exceſſe & glotony, and not among the ſeruauntes of God.

The monkes abuſed the patrimony of their Abbeys.

Wherfore he ſayth farther, that couetiſe and pride had ſo chaunged all thing in England in theſe daies, that al thinges that before time were geuen to Abbeys, were then more waſted in glotonie and outrage of the owners, then in ſuſtenaunce and ayde of nedy men and of geſtes or nedy waygoers. Albeit he ſayth the firſt doers or geuers loſe not theyr reward. For theyr wil and intent is ful heuenlie payſed in a balaunce, before him that is the rewarder of all good. But though Treuyſa that was the tranſlatour of this boke of Policronicon out of latin into our vulgare tongue, reporte thys to be done, or this miſorder to be vſed in his dayes, whiche lyued in yͤ time of that honourable prince Edwarde the third: if he now lyued, he wold not in no gouernours of Munkes blacke or yet white, lay no ſuche outrage. For now at theſe daies pride & glotonie is clerlie baniſhed from theyr monaſteries and celles, and in the rome of pride with his frende diſobedience haue they now lodged humilitie wyth hyr ſiſter obedience. And in the ſteade of Glottonye and vnclenes of liuinge, haue they now newlie profeſſed them vnto al chaſtite, temperaunce, abſtinence, auoyding al ſlouth and idelnes, and exerciſe them in goſtlie ſtudie and preache the worde of God with al diligence. So that now the holie rules & ordinaũces made by that holy father & Abbot S. Benet, which through ignoraunce haue longe time ſlept, now by grace of good gouernaunce are newlie reuiued and quickened. And here an ende, leaſt I be accuſed of diſſimulacion.

Li.5.ca.3.

The Danes came into Sothery.

Then to returne vnto the Danes from whome I haue made a longe digreſſion, truth it is that when they had as before is ſayde, martired the bleſſed man Edmũd and robbed and ſpoyled that countrey, they tooke againe their ſhippes and landed in Southery, and continued their iourney till they came to yͤ towne of Reding, and wan the towne with the Caſtell.

Two princes of the Danes wer ſlayn. Hungar.

Policronica ſayth that the third daie of theyr thither commiuge, Hinwar and Hubba as thei went in purchaſinge of praiers, were ſlaine at a place called Engelfelde Whiche Princes of Danes thus ſlayne, the other deale of the kept hole together in ſuch wiſe that the Weſtſaxons might take of them none aduauntage. But yet within few daies after yͤ Danes were holden ſo ſhort, that thei were forſed to yſſue out of the Caſtell, and to defend them in playne battaile In the which by comforte of king Etheldrede and of Alurede hys brother, the Danes were diſcomfited, and many of them ſlaine.

The diſcõfiture of yͤ Danes.

Whereof the other beinge ware, flep agayne to the Caſtell, and kepte them within the ſame a certayne tyme.

Ethelwol fus.

Then the kinge commaunded Etelwolde then duke of Baroke or Barkſhyre, to attend with his people vpon that Caſtell, and to ſe that the Danes breke not oute at large, while he went in other coaſtes of that countrey to ſubdue other of the ſayd Danes. But whẽ the Danes knew of the kinges departure, they brake out ſodenlie anon out of their holde, and tooke the Duke vnpurueyed and ſlewe him and much of his people: and cauſed the other to withdraw thẽ farther from that towne or caſtel.

The deat of Ethelwolde.

Then theſe Danes drew them to other that were their lordes in that countrey, and enbatelled thẽ in ſuche wyſe, that of them was gathered a ſtronge hoſte.

It was not longe after Duke Ethelwolde was ſlayne, but the kynge was aſcertayned thereof. The whiche renewed his heauyneſ, and made him full heauie, to conſider his loſſe of his freende, & the increaſe and multiplyinge of his enemies. For the daie before reporte of theſe tidinges, as affirmeth an olde chronicle, word was brought to him of the landing of a Dane named Oſrike, whiche of Policronica is named kinge of Denmarke. The which in ſhort time after wyth aſſyſtence of the other Danes hadde gathered a great hooſte, and were enbatelled vpon Aſhdowne. To thys battayle Alured was forced by greate neede to come before hys brother the kyng that then was hearinge of a Maſſe wyth greate deuocion, not knowynge of that haſtie ſpeed of his brother. Where the

How O
ke king
Denmar
landed.

the kyng thus beyng in his meditacions, the hoſtes of Anglys and Danes ſtrake together with huge violence. And how be it the Danes had wonne the Hyll, and the Chriſten men were in the valley, yet by grace of God and manhode of them ſelues, thei at length wan the Hyll of the Danes, and ſlew theyr Duke or king called Oſcike or after the Engliſh chronicle Oſeg, and fiue of theyr Dukes, with muche of theyr people, and chaſed yͤ other dele vnto Reding towne.

w oriſke
e duke or
nge of
enmark
as ſlaine
ith many
her.

Wherfore the Danes reſſembled their people, and gathered a new hooſte, ſo yͤ within .xv. dayes they met at a Towne called Baſinge Stoke, and there gaue battayle vnto the kyng, and had the better.

Then the kinge gathered hys people, the whiche at that feilde, were chaſed and diſparkled, and wyth freſh ſouldiers to theym accompanied, met the Danes within two monethes after at a town called Merton, & gaue vnto them a ſharpe battayle, ſo that muche people were ſlayne as well of the Chriſten as of the Danes. But in the ende the Danes had the honour of the fielde, and the kyng of Anglis was wounded and fayne to ſauegarde hym ſelfe by polycie when might fayled.

he Da-
s wan
ſecond
lde or
ttell.

After theſe two fieldes thus won by the Danes, they obtained great circuite of grounde, and deſtroyed man & childe that to them were inobedient. And churches and Temples they turned to the vſe of ſtables, and other vyle occupacion. And to thys ſorow was added another.

he great
tory of
Danes

For where the king hoped wel to recouer his loſſes by aide of his ſubiectes, as well of other partes of his land, as of his owne of Weſt ſaxons, when he had ſent his commiſſions into Northumberlande, into Mercia, and Eſt Anglia, He had of them ſmall or lytle comfort ſo that the countrey of weſtſaxon was brought in great deſolacion. For the king was beſet with enemies vpon euery ſide, & ouer that his knightes and ſouldiours wer tyred and palled with ouer watche and laboure. Which manyfold aduerſities and troubles ſynking in the kynges mynde, with brooſe or hurte enſuinge of the wounde before taken at the battel beſyde Merton, ſhortened hys dayes: ſo that he died when he had raigned in greate perſecucion of the Danes, after moſte wryters, eyght yeres, without yſſue of his bodie. By reaſon whereof the rule of the lande fell vnto hys brother Alurede.

The death of Ethel-drede.

It is wytneſſed of ſome chronicles that notwithſtandinge the greate trouble and vexacion that this king Ethreldred had wyth yͤ Danes, he founded the houſe or colledge of Chanons at Exeter, and was buried at the Abbey of Wynbourne or Wobourne.

The .lxxi. Chapter.

ALuredus the .iiii. ſonne of Adolfus, and brother to Etheldredꝰ laſt king began his reigne ouer the Weſtſaxons and other prouinces of Englande, in the yere of oure Lorde eyght hundred .lxxii and the .xxxi. yere of Charles fore named, then kynge in Fraunce.

Aluredus.

Li.6.cap.1

How Alured builte the firſte Grammer ſcoole in Oxenford & diuerſe other ſcoles.

This Alured or after ſome writers Alphred was xii. yere of age, or he were ſet to ſcole. But for all that he ſped ſo well his tyme, that he paſſed his brother & other that were longe ſet forth before hym. And by the counſayle of Neotus or Notus, he ordeyned the fyrſte grāmer ſcole at Oxenford, and other free ſcoles, and fraunchayſed that towne with manie great lyberties, and tranſlated manie lawes, and Marcian law and other out of Bretiſh ſpeche vnto Saxō tongue. He was alſo a ſubtill maſter in building and deuiſing therof, and excellent conning in al hunting. Fayre he was of ſtature, & moſte beloued of his father of all his children.

Longe time it woulde aſke to reherſe all his vertue. But for he was in his youth diſpoſed to the ſinne of the fleſh, and therbi letted from manie vertuous purpoſe, he laſtlie after manie reſiſtences by him done to auoyde the temptacion therof, beſought God entierlie, that he woulde ſende to hym ſome continuall ſickenes in quenching of that vice, & that he were not vnprofitable to worldlie buſines and ſerue God the better.

Then at gods ordinaunce he had the euell called Ficus, with the whiche ſickenes he was greeued manie yeres, and laſtlie cured of that holie virgin Saynct Modwenna then dwelling in Irland. But after this cure by her doone, ſhe came into Englād, for ſo much as her monaſterie or church that ſhe there dwelled in, was deſtroied Wherfore Adulphus father to Alured, knowing the vertue and holineſſe of this maiden, gaue to her ground to builde vpon .ii. Abbais of maydens. That is to ſay, one in Arderne at a place called Polliſwortham, an other at Streneſalte in the Northe. But this holy mayden died in the yland of Andreſe beſide Burton, after manie yeres of the building of theſe ſaid two Abbays, and after .vii. yeres that ſhe had bē cloſed within ſtone walles in the yſle before named.

When Alurede was cured of this ſickenes, to him fell an other, the which continued with him frō the .xx. yere of his age, tell the .xlv yere of his ſayd age. But that notwithſtandinge he wedded a noble woman named Ethelwida, of the which he receiued two ſonnes, Edwarde ſurnamed the elder, and Egelwarde, and three doughters Elphleda that after was ladie of Mercia, Ethelgota a Menchon or Nunne, and the thyrd was named Elfrida. The which he cauſed all (as well doughters as other,) to ſtudie the arte or ſcience of grāmer, and to be noriſhed with all vertue. And when this Alurede was admitted to be king, he well conſidered the great daunger that his lande was in, wherfore he gathered to him his lordes: and ſuch as he might not wynne without ſtrife, he wanne with great iuſtice and fayre heſtes. So that he ſhortlie aſſembled a ſtronge hoſte, and in the ſecond moneth that he was made king, he met w̄ the Danes beſide Wilton, and yelded to them battayle, but not wythout greate loſſe of men on bothe parties.

ethelſwi

Thē he remeued his people, and in ſondrie places faught with the Danes in the fyrſt yere .vi. times. By meane wherof his people wer ſo ſore mynyſhed and weked, that he was forſed to take peace with his enemies, vpon couenaunt that they ſhulde auoyde the countries and prouynces that he had domynyon of.

Upon whiche agrement fermly concluded, the Danes for a tyme voyded thoſe countries, and drew towarde London, and reſted them about that coaſt the more parte of the yere folowyng, and from thēs to Lyndeſey, in robbinge and ſpoylynge the townes and villages as they went, and holdynge the common people vnder theyr ſeruage, and ſo contynued ouer the terme of .ii. yeres: But or the thirde yere were ended they yode vnto Repindon, and there put downe or ſlewe Burdredus then kyng of Mercia and betoke that kyngedome vnto a ſeruaunt of his, named Colwolphus, vpon cōdicion that he ſhuld kepe it to theyr behofe. And then they beſyeged a towne therby called Hambourgth, and aſſauted it ryght ſharpely. Then the inhabytauntes of that towne of Hambourgth, fled vnto Wincheſter.

Then the kinge made oft peace with the Danes, in truſt wherof, he rode with yͤ fewer people: wherof they beyng ware, layde buſſhementes for him, & ſet ſo nere him, that they ſlewe a greate parte of his company in a night as he rode towarde Wincheſter.

For this treaſon the kyng was ſore amoued againſte the Danes, and i as ſecret maner as he might he aſſembled a choſen company of knightes, and as witneſſeth Guido, fell vpon them ſodeynly, and deſtreſſed many of them, and left thē not, tyll he hadde chaſed them to Cheſter, or after another authour to Exetour. And there kynge Alured kept the Danes ſo ſhorte, that he conſtrayned thē to giue to him pledges to kepe the peace, and to dwell no longer there, then they might puruey ſhyppinge at yͤ next porte to ſayle into Denmarke.

ow Alu⸗ ſharpe aſſauted Danes

After whiche accorde thus fynyſhed the kyng returned vnto Mercia, or middle England: and for he hard that Colwolphus was dead to whome the Danes had taken that lordſhip to kepe, he therefore ſeaſed that kingdome, and ioyned it to his owne of Weſtſaxons. By whiche reaſon the kingedome of Mercia ſurſeaſed, that had continued from their fyrſt king named Penda, as in the chapyter of this worke. C.xxix. precedyng, is more at length declared.

The nauy loſte by the Danes.

About the .v. yere of the reygne of Alurede, the Danes as affirmeth Policronica, ſailed fro Warham toward Exetour, in the whiche iourney they loſte .vi. ſcoore of their ſmall ſhippes by a tempeſt in the ſee. But ſome of them occupyed the towne of Chepinham and the countrey therunto adioynyng and chaſed the Angles, or made them as ſubiectes to the Danes. And ſo ſore the power of them augmented, that the Angles loſt dayly, and they encreſed, and the more by reaſon of the landinge of a prince of the Danes, named * Gutteron or Gowthram, whiche is named kinge of Denmarke.

Guttrun. How Gutterō a prince of the Danes landed.

The .c.lxxii. Chapiter.

ALured beyng thus ouerſet in multitude of enemies, as affirmeth Policronica and other, lad an vncertaine lyfe and vneſy with fewe folkes about him, in yͤ wood countrie of Somerſet ſhyre, and had ryght ſcant to lyue with, but ſuche as he and his people myght purchaſe by huntinge & fyſſhinge.

Notwithſtandinge, at lengeth he was well comforted, and ſhewed hym ſelfe moore at large, ſo that dayly reſorted to him men of Wylteſhyre, Somerſetſhyre, and Hamſhire, tyl that he was ſtrongly companied.

Howe the Kynge aduentured hym ſelf to goe to the Tentes of the Danes apparelled lyke a minſtrell.

Then the kyng put him in a great ieoperdy, as ſayth William de regibus. For he did on hym the abyte of a mynſtrell, and with his inſtrument of muſike, he entred the tentes and pauylyons of the Danes, and in ſhewynge there his enterlude and ſonges, he eſpied all their ſlouth and idlenes and harde muche of their counſayl and after retourned vnto his company, and told to them all the maner of the Danes.

Howe the Kynge fell vppon the Danes by nyght.

Then the kynge with a choſen companye, fell vpon the Danes in the nyght, and dyſtreſſed and ſlew of them a great multitude, & chaſed them from that coaſt. And whē the kynge had thus chaſed the Danes, by counſayle of his knyghtes, he buylded there a towre and named it Edelyng, whiche is to meane in oure ſpeche a towre of noble men. Out of whiche toure he and his ſouldiers made many aſſautes vpon their enemies, & did to them muche harme and ſcath, and clerely voyded the countrey of them betwene that and Selwodes.

This Edelynge or Ethelingſey, ſtandeth in a great mares or moore, ſo that men maye not wyn to it without ſhyp or bote, and conteyneth no great groūd, but yet therin is venyſon and other wyld beaſtes, and fowle, and fyſſhes greate plentye.

Thus kynge Alured dayly purſued his enemyes by helpe of God and his ſubiectes, whiche hearing of his victories and manful dedes drewe to hym dayly out of all coaſtes. By whoſe powers and aſſyſtence he helde the Danes ſo ſhort, that he wan from theim Wincheſter and many other good townes and forced them laſtely to ſeche for peace, the whiche was concluded vpon certaine couenauntes. Wherof one and princypalle was, that theyr kynge named, as before is ſayde Guttrun or Gothram, or after that Englyſſhe Cronicle Gurmunde, ſhulde be chriſtened, and a certayne of his Dukes with him. And for the kynge wolde haue the Danes banyſſhed out of the Weſt parties of England, he graunted to hym Eaſt Anglia to abyde and dwell in.

A peace c
cluded be
twene th
kynge an
the Dane

Howe th
Prynce
the Dan
was Ch
ſtened

Then this prince of Danes) according to the couenauntes) was chriſtened at Wyncheſter, and .xx. of the greteſt of his dukes. And to this ſayde Danes prince. Alured was godfather to the funtſtone, & named him Athelſtane. And after he had a ſeaſon feaſted the ſayde Danes, he accordynge to his promyſe, gaue vnto their kinge the countrye of Eaſt Anglia, whiche then cōteined Norffolk, and Suffolke, and parte of Cambridſhyre. And alſo (as witneſſeth Polcronica) he graunted to the Danes that were Chriſtened, the countrey of Northumberlande. And the other that wold not be chriſtened, departed the lande & ſayled into France where thei reſted them with their coſins and kineſmen, that at thoſe dayes waſted the land of Fraunce as in the frenche ſtory is ſomwhat apparent. When this Dane kinge Athelſtane, had the poſſeſſyon of theſe conntries, ye ſhall vnderſtande that all ſuch Angles as dwelled there, and within the precincte of theim, were vnder his obedience. And albeit that he helde the ſayd prouince as in fee of the king, and promiſed to dwell there as his liege man, yet that promiſe notwithſtandinge, he continued like a tyraunte by the terme of eleuen yeares fulle, and died in the twelueth.

The death
f Athel-
tone kyng
f the
Danes.

In the whiche time kinge Alurede amended the citie of Septon that nowe is called Shafteſburie, and other townes and ſtrong holdes, yͭ by the Danes were ſore abated ⁊ empaired. And as witneſſeth Guido and other, he builded the houſe of Nonnes at Shafteſburie, or was the firſt founder thereof.

He alſo founded the houſe of religion in the aboue named place of Ethelingeſei, and another in Wincheſter, that was named the new monaſterie: In the which he was after buried. And ouer this he endowed the churche of ſainct Cuthberte in Dorehame, as before is touched.

l.6. ca.3.

About the .xv. yere of the reigne of Alured, the Danes whiche before, as ye haue harde ſayled into Fraunce, retourned into England and landed in Kent, and ſo laſtlye came vnto Rocheſter and beſieged that cytie: and lay there ſo longe, that they buylded a towre of tymbre and not of ſtoone, againſt the gates of the city. But by ſtrength of the cytezins that towre was deſtroyed, and the cytie defended tyl kyng Alured reſcowed them. The whiche hadde made ſuche purueyaunce for the diſtreſſynge of them by water and by lande, that they were ſo nere trapped, that for fere the left theyr horſes behinde them and fled to their ſhippes by nyght. But whan the kynge was therof ware, he ſent after them, and toke .xvi. of their ſhips and ſlewe many of the ſaid Danes. After this iourney, the kyng retorned to London and repaired certaine places therof, that before had ben hurte or febled with the Danes, and betoke the guiding therof vnto Ethelredus, thã earle or duke of Mercia, to whom as wife he had giuen his doughter Elfleda.

owe the
Danes be-
eged Ro
heſter.

The flyenge of the Danes.

About this time dyed Dunbertus, than Byſſhop of Wincheſter, and the kynge made Dunwolfus byſſhop after him. The whiche (as ſayeth Polycronycon) the kynge fande in the wode kepynge of beaſtes, in the time whan he him ſelfe kepte the woodes for feare of the Danes.

Aboute the .xxi. yere of the reygne of this kinge Alured, the Danes landed in foure places of this lande, that is to witte in the Eaſte Englande, and the North, and in the Weſt, in .ii. places. But for the kynge before theyre landinge had warnynge of the death of Athelſtan kinge of the Danes of Eaſte England, ⁊ of other complaintes of the Danes. He therefore yode thyther: in whiche tyme of his there beynge, theſe tydinges came vnto hym.

Howe the Danes landed in .iiii. places of this Realme.

¶ The .clxxiii. Chapter.

WHan kinge Alured was aſcertayned of theſe tydynges, for ſo muche as ſome of the ſayd Danes were landed in that coaſt, & knew well that the further they drewe vnto theſe parties, the more they ſhulde be ayded and ſtrengthed: he therfore ſent meſſengers in al haſt vnto Etheldred Erle or Duke of Mercia, charginge hym to aſſemble vnto an hoſt of the men of Mercia, and the boorder there aboute, and to make reſyſtens againſt the Danes, which landed in the weſt. And that done, the kinge ſped him toward his enemyes, and purſued them ſo ſharpely, that in the ende he droue them out of Eaſt Anglia. The whiche than landed in Kent, whither the king with his peaple ſped him, and in lyke maner draue the Danes from thens. Howbeit of any ſpeciall fyghte or battayle, authours therof leue no memory. After this again the Danes toke ſhippynge and ſayled into Northe wales, and there robbed and ſpoyled the Britons, and from thence retourned by the ſee into the Eaſt Anglia, and there reſted them, for ſo muche as the kynge then was gone weſtwarde.

Thei Danes robbed and ſpoiled Northwales.

In this whyle ſome of the foreſayde Danes had won the towne of Cheſter. But for the countries adioynaunt preaſed ſo ſoore vpon them, the ſayde Danes were compelled to kepe thē within the ſayd towne or citie, and to defend them by that maner. But that holding of the towne laſted ſo longe, that the Danes were compelled to eate their horſes for hunger. But by apoyntement they laſtly gaue ouer the towne and wente theñs in to Northumberlande. And in the while that the kyng with his hoſt ſped him thitherwarde, they leauinge the ſtronge holdes and Caſtels garniſſhed with men and vytaile, toke againe ſhipping and ſet their courſe in ſuch wyſe that they landed in Suſſex, and ſo came vnto the towne of Lewes, and from thens towarde London, and buylded a toure or caſtel nere vnto the ryuer of Lewes. But the Londoners hearynge of theyr doynges, mãned out a certaine nōbre of mē of armes, ẏ whiche with aſſyſtens of the men of that countre, put the Danes from that toure and after bet it downe to the grounde.

Howe th londoners diſcōfited the Dan

Soone after the Kynge came downe thider, and for he thought that Ryuer ſhoulde be a meane to bringe enemies eftſones into that country, therfore he commaunded the ſtreeme to be deuyded into dyuers ſtreemes: ſo that by reaſon thereof, where a ſhyp might ſayle in tyme afore paſſed, then a lytell bote might ſcantly rowe. Then by preſence of the kinge, the Danes were forced to flye that countrie, and from thens toke againe way towarde Wales, and kept a parte of the riuer of Seuerne; and vpon the border therof buylded them a caſtell nere vnto Wales, and ſo reſted them there for a tyme, ſo that ſo that iii. yeares after this lande was vexed with iii. maner of ſorowes, that is to ſaye, with warre of the Danes, peſtilence of men, & moreine of beaſtes: whiche troubles and aduerſities not withſtandyng, the kyng knightly and manfully reſiſted the malyce of his enemies, and thanked God alwaye what trouble ſo euer fyll to him or

Stopping & turnyng of the riu

thre grea plages.

vnto his realme, and ſuſtained it with great humilitie & pacience.

Jt is tolde of him that he deuided the day and night in thre partes, if he were not let by warre or other great buſines. Wherof. viii. houres he ſpent in ſtudie and lerning of ſcience, and other. viii. he ſpent in praier and almes dedes, with other charitable dedes, and other. viii. houres he ſpent in his naturall reſt, ſuſtenaunce of his body, and the nedes of the realme The which order he kept duely by waxen Tapers kepte by certaine perſonnes.

Thus this mercial knight continuing in all proweſſe and vertue, laſtly died, when he had raigned ouer the moore parte of this lande, by the terme of. xxviii. yeres full. And was firſte buried at Wilton, and after certayne yeres remoued & caried vnto Wincheſter, leauing after him a ſonne named Edward, ſurnamed Edward the elder. For the other brother called Egelward died before hys father.

Francia.

The. clxxiiii. Chapter.

LEwes the ſeconde of that name, and ſonne of Charles the Ballyd, began his raigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our Lorde. viii. C. lxxviii. and the. vi. yere of Aluredus then kinge of the more parte of England. This was named Lodowicus Balbus, whiche is to meane, Lewes the ſtamerer, for ſo much as he had an impediment in his tonge.

ye haue before, in the ſtorie of Charles the Ballyd harde, howe Charlon the neuewe of Charles foreſaied, with his hooſte had entred Jtaly, and entended toward Rome. The which after the deth of his ſaied vncle Charles, kepte on his way, and laſtly came vnto Rome. But yͤ biſhop thereof then being Jhō the. viii. of that name fauoured yͤ aboue named Lewes Balbus, and entended to make him emperour: therfore he refrained the enoyntinge of the ſayed Charlon. For the whiche deede he finally was compelled to auoyde the towne and countrey, and fled into Fraunce. Where he beyng honorably of Lewes receiued, declared and admitted him for Emperour, as witneſſeth the Chronicles of Rome: but after two yeres of his raigne, or ſhorte time after this admiſſion to that dignitie, this Lewes died. Wherefore the ſaied B. of Rome to enioy his biſhoprike in reſt, returned to Rome and anointed yͤ forenamed Charlon, & crowned him with the imperiall diademe, the which in the Romain cronicle is named Carolus tertius, the thirde Emperour that is to meane of that name.

But of al this ſpeaketh nothing the Frenche cronicle, except that it is there teſtified, that he was of the ſaid B. of Rome admitted for Emperour.

Polichronicon ſheweth, that the ſecond Lewes king of Fraũce was accurſed of the B. of Rome Nicholas the firſte of that name, for ſo much as he refuſed his lawful wife, and toke to him his concubine named Waldrada. But that is vnſtande by Lewes the ſeconde Emperour of that name, whiche was ſonne of Lothayre, whiche Lothaire was eldeſt ſōne of Lewes yͤ milde, as in the ſtory of Charles the Ballid appeareth And for the genelogie of Charles the conquerour, or of his ofſpring may the clearelier apeare, & alſo that the reader maye haue the more certaintie of yͤ names whiche were Emperours, which kinges of Fraunce, and which were kinges of Germany: I ſhal in the ſtory of Lewes the. v. (in whome for a time ſurſeaſed that bloode) make a remembraunce of euerye Emperour, & kinges of Fraũce & Germany yͤ raigned frō the ſaied Charles the great or conquerour til Hugh Capet, the which Hugh vſurped the crown of Fraũce; as after ſhall appeare.

Then it foloweth in the ſtory, that for partition of the lande of Auſtracie or Loraine, grudge and variaunce continued alwaye betwene the kinges of Fraunce and Germany, which both kinges at this day were named Lewes, albe it that the king of Fraũce was ſurnamed Balmus, as before is ſhewed. For the which variaunce by labor of frendes theſe. ii. kings mette at the Citie or place called Gundeuile, wher after long communication, it was final agreed that the ſaied prouince of Auſtracie ſhoulde than be deuided, as it ſomtime had been parted betwen Charles the Ballid, and Lewes kinge of Germanye their bothe fathers.

After which peace was cōcluded, either parted from other in frendly wiſe. And Lewes Balbus yode vnto Arderñ, where he halowed the feaſte of Chriſtmas. And from thens he yode to Compaine wher he herd of the rebellion of a Marques of his Realme, called Barnard, or more verely after the Romain ſtory, a marques of Italye. For this Barnarde with one Helberde had before time taken from the church of Rome certain poſſeſſions, whiche by meane of this Lewes & the ſentence of the churche denounced againſt them by the foreſaid Jhon B. of Rome were again reſtored, and the parties alſo reconſiled. But nowe of newe, this Barnarde rebelled againe: wherfore the B. of Rome, ſent to Lewes for the defenſoure of the churche of Rome, ſente for ayde, for (as before I haue ſhewed you) this Lewes of the ſaid Jhō B. of Rome, was authoriſed for Emperoure. But for he was not crowned at Rome with the imperial diademe, he is not accompted amonge the Emperours.

For this new rebellion of Barnarde, Lewes aſſembled his armie at Compaine aforeſaied, and from thence roode to the citie of Troyes in Vincent, wher he was taken with ſodain malady of the whiche he died ſhortly after, and not without ſuſpection of venim when he had ben king of Fraunce fully. ii. yeres, leauing after him two ſonnes, that is to ſay Lewes and Charles, or after ſome wryters Charlemaine.

¶ The. clxxv. Chapiter.

LEwes and Charles the ſonnes of Lewes Balbus, or of Lewes the ſtamerer, began their raigne ouer the Frenchmē, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion, viii. hundred. lxxx. and the. viii. yere of the reygne of Alurede thã king of Englande. The which for they were yong of age, were put vnder tuiſſion & guyding of Barnarde the Earle of Auergij, to whome the father by his lyfe had them committed. Wherefore the ſayd Barnarde with other of his affinitie aſſembled ſhortlie after at Meaux in Lorayne, and thyther called vnto them the lordes of the lande to treate maters for the common weale of the ſame.

In thoſe dayes was a man of greate myght in Fraunce named Goſſeleyñ, the whiche enuied the foreſayd Erle Barnard and other for certayne harmes to him by them done in time before paſſed. In auenginge wherof, the ſayde Goſſeleyñ intended to putte hym and other from the rule of the lãd, whiche he knew well they ſhould occupie whyle the ſayde two children had rule of the ſame.

And thys euel purpoſe to bring to effect, he wente vnto Conrade Erle of Paris, and ſhewed to him muche of his wyll. And among other thinges let him witte, that if Lewes king of Germani might wyth hys helpe be made kyng of Fraunce, that he ſhould by hym by greatly auaunced. By whiche meanes, he cauſed the ſayde Conrade to take his parte, ſo that he and other of his affynytie whan they came vnto the foreſaid counſayle at Meaux, ſayd that Lewes kynge of Germanie was more apte to rule the lande of Fraunce: than anie other was. And alſo after ſome writers, theſe Lewes and Charles aforeſayd were not the legittimate ſonnes of the fore named Lewes Balbus, but gotten in baſte of a concubyne of the ſayd Lewes.

Thys matter thus debated and argued amonges the counſayle, laſtly by moſte in numbre it was agreed, that Lewes king of Germany ſhould be by ambaſſade requyred to come and take vpon him the rule of the land of myddel Fraunce. The whiche with ſmall requeſt was agreable: & in ſhorte time after came vnto the ſayd Citie of Meaux, and after to Verdũne. But as ſoone as the knowledge was come to Barnarde & other of his affinitie, by counſel of Hugh and Terry two nobles of Fraunce, the biſhop of Orliaunce with an Erle and other were ſent to Verdũne vnto the ſayd king of Germanye with this meſſage. That yf he were contente to take vnto him all ſuch parte of the prouince of Lorayne, as Charles the Ballid kept frõ his father Lewes without more clayme of the land or Realme of Fraunce, he ſhoulde gladli haue it: and if not he ſhould abide the iudgemente of Mars and hys battayle. Wyth whiche offer Lewes was well contented, and beyng of it in a ſuertie, departed agayne into Germany.

Thorough that doynge, the forenamed Goſſelyne & Conrade wyth other of theyr freendes, wer with it ſore diſcontẽted of the departure of Lewes aforeſayde. But the ſayd Bernard with other of his ſide, in goodlie haſte after conueyed the ſayde two Chyldren vnto the Cytie of Ferrer, and there Crowned and Proclaimed theim for Kynges, as wytneſſeth mayſter Robert Gagwin. But yͤ foꝛenamed Goſſelyne and Conrade not leauing ſo the matter, ſente meſſaungers vnto the Queene of Germayne, complaynyng them vnto her of the vnſtablenes & timerouſneſſe of her loꝛd wherby he had not alonely loſt the poſſeſſion of the realme of Fraũce, but alſo he had put them and all theyꝛ freendes in great feare and daunger. Whereof hearynge the queene, in her mind was ſoꝛe diſcontented with her loꝛde and huſbande: and as ſhe durſt ſhewed it to him as hys repꝛoche and diſhonour. And finally to ſatiſfie the myndes of the ſayd Goſſelyñ and Conrade, ſhe ſente into Guyan her Bꝛother named Boſo, by whoſe aydes and aſſyſtence, he was of that pꝛouince pꝛoclaymed kinge.

how Boſo was pꝛoclaymed kinge of Fraunce.

How the Danes entred into Fraunce.

Enduring which troubles, the Danes entred the lande, & came vnto the riuer of Lyger, and robbed and ſpoiled the countrey without mercy. wherfoꝛe the kynges aſſembled theyꝛ people, and gaue to them batayle nere vnto the riuer of Uien. Where they diſtreſſed the ſayd Danes and ſlew of them ix. thouſand, and dꝛowned of them ouer that a greate multitude in yͤ ſayde Riuer. After which victoꝛie by the kinges obteyned, a new vexaciõ and trouble was to them aſcerteyned, that Lewes kyng of Germany with a great puyſaũce was comen vnto a place called Ducie, and to hym was gone the foꝛenamed Goſſelyñ & Conrade wyth all the power yͭ they might make, and by theyꝛ leadyng was from thens conueyed vnto Rybemaunt. But how ſo it was, foꝛ lacke of perfoꝛmaunce of pꝛomiſe made by the ſayd two Earles vnto the kinge of Germanie, and not obſerued, he hearynge of the Kynges of Fraunce dꝛawynge towarde him with ſtronge hoſte, concluded a peace and retourned into Germany. And the two bꝛethꝛen roode together vnto the Citie of Damens oꝛ Demeus, wher they deuyded the land of Fraunce betwene them. So that Lewes helde to him the cõtrey nere and aboute Parys, with the pꝛouince of Neuſtria oꝛ Noꝛmandie, and Charles had vnto his parte Burgoyne an Guyan, with pꝛomyſe made and aſſured on eyther partie, that eyther of thẽ ſhould ayde and aſſyſt other.

The dyſcomfiter of the Danes

How the lande of Fraunce was deuided.

¶ The. clxxvi. Chapter.

After this particion betweene the two bꝛethꝛẽ thus made, by the meanes of Lewes kinge of Germanie, the foꝛeſayde Earles of Goſſeliñ and Conrade were vnto the ſayde bꝛethꝛen reconcyled and agreed. And foꝛ to them redy woꝛde was bꝛought, that Boſo befoꝛe named king of Guyan had wonne the Citie of Uien, & therin left hys wyfe whyle that he occupied the Hylles and Mountaynes beyng there about: they ioyntlie aſſembled theyꝛ knightes, and ſped them thyther, and layd their ſyege aboute the Citie. But durying this ſyege, the Danes often waſted the land of Fraũce: Wherfoꝛe Lewes the elder bꝛother, departed from that ſyege, leauyng there hys bꝛother Charles. But oꝛ the ſayd Lewes myght winne to the ſayd Danes, they as tyꝛaũtes and cruel enemies to Chꝛiſtes

fayth

ſayth, had ſpoyled and deſtroyed a great numbre of people, with manie Churches and Temples, and alſo a Monaſtery of Saynt Peter in Corby, & throwen it downe to the grounde. After which vile and cruel deede by them done, Lewes gaue vnto them batayle, and ſlew of them a great nomber, and chaſed the remnaunt.

But after this victorie enſued a great wonder: For when the chriſten had (as before is ſaide) chaſed the Pagans or Danes, they returned as confuſed and diſparkled, like all the hoſt of Danes had thē purſued: ſo that wel was him that might ronne faſteſt, and hide himſelfe from the daunger of his enemie. For it was thought to them and apparent to theyr ſight, that theyr enemies folowed at theyr backes with all kinde of weapen, and yet folowed them no man. The whyche feare and flyght of Frenchemen, as ſayth myne autoure, was ſent to them by diuine purueaunce, forſomuch as they ſo often before time had wonne the pryce of theyr enemyes, and had not therfore geuen due thanke vnto GOD, but alſo referred it to theyr owne ſtrengthes and vertue.

ſtraung
nge.

Then the Danes hearinge of thys dyſparklyng of the Chriſten hoſt, reaſſembled theyr power and prepared then to new fyght. Wherefore the kinge called together his knightes (ſo as before is ſayd) diſparkled, and met wyth them nere vnto the aboue named Ryuer of Lyger. But when bothe hoſtes were within a daies iourney, yͤ king was aduyſed by ſome of hys counſayle, yͭ he ſhould not as then fyght with them. For the which cauſe he rode vnto Cōpeygne, and there kept the feaſte of Chryſtmaſſe.

And whyle the king was lodged in Compeygne, he deliuered hys hoſte vnto a noble man of his land named Theodorich, willing hym to go agaynſt the Danes. Of whoſe exployt or ſpeede myne Aucthoure maketh no mencion, but ſayth that ſoone after the foreſayd feaſt, the kynge ſped hym to Turō, where he ſent to rayſe the Britons of litel Britaine to withſtande the foreſayd enemyes.

In the whyche paſſetyme he was there taken with a maladie, and from thens in a lytter caried vnto ſaynte Denis, where he died and was buried. Or as ſaythe Mayſter Gagwyne, he dyed at Turō, and was after conueyed vnto Saynete Denes, and there buried. But for all writers ioyne the reygne of theſe two brethren in one, therfore I wyll now ſhew vnto you the fyne or concluſion of the other brother called Charles or Charlemayn, yͭ whych al thys whyle mayntened the ſiege about Vienne, where his brother as before is touched, left him. To whō the Lordes of Fraunce ſent in all haſt, geuing to him knowledge of the death of his brother, and alſo of the greate daunger that the lande was in, by reaſon of the Danes. Wherfore when the ſayd Charles had thus witting, he left a parte of hys people at the ſayde Syege, and wyth the other deale he ſped him towarde Champayne for ſo muche as he was enfourmed that the Danes were drawē towarde that coaſte. And as he

The death of Lewes kinge of Fraunce.

Charles or Charlemayne.

was in his iourney, worde was broughte vnto him that Vyenne was deliuered vnto ſuch perſones as he had there left to maynteyne the ſiege.

And after this came another meſſenger, which ſhewed to hym that the Danes had deſtroyed dyuers Churches in Champayne and other places, and how the biſhop of Meaws that agaynſt thẽ had lad an hoſte of people, was of them ſlayne, and his people chaſed: and ouer this at the foreſayde Ryuer of Lyger another hoſte of Danes, with their leader called Haſtinges, was aſſembled. The which in that parties waſted the countrey as the other in other places did, which ſomdeale apalled the herte of the king Charles. Howbeit by the comforte that he had dayly receaued from the lordes of Fraũce, he kept on his iourney, and made toward the next of his enemies.

But when he drew nere vnto them, were it for his owne cowardiſe, or of the counſayle of his lordes, he fell to a communicacion of peace. And finally concluded that Godfrey the prynce of Danes, to confeſſe the faythe of Chriſte and to be chriſtened, ſhould enioye the whole prouince of Friſe. And within the ſame, he with his Danes to inhabite them.

A peace cõcluded betweene Charlemaine and the prince of the Danes.

The which condicion of peace was ẏ beginning of greate ſorow and loſſe vnto Fraunce, as after ſhall appeare. For albeit that the ſayd Godfrey to deceaue ẏ frenchmen, ſhewed outward cõtenaũce to be a Chriſten man for a whyle, he ſhortly after with an hoſt of .xl. thouſand Danes entred the land, waſting the countrey till he came to Parys, & layed there his ſiege aboute the ſame Citie. But by the Archebiſſhop of Parys, then named Joſſeleñ, and the inhabitaũtes of the ſame, the Citie was mãfullie defẽded, ſo that he with his Danes was fayne to breake his ſiege, and from thence yode to the Citie of Laoñ, and wanne it by ſtrength, and after ſpoyled, robbed, and brente it. And fro thens to Soyſons in pilling and deſtroyinge the countrey as they wente, in ſo cruell wyſe, that the byſhops and prieſtes fled from theyr churches, with reliques and adournamentes or ornamentes belonging to the ſame: as the bodies of ſaint Germayne, ſaynt Remigius, and diuers other.

The Da nes not withſtan ding the peacem new wa

What w doeth.

In the time of this perſecucion, lyke as the land of England was in great daunger, ſo alſo was the lande of Fraunce, by meane of theſe Pagans or miſcreauntes Danes. The which reſorted from that one realme to that other, & releued them ſelf in that one land, when thei were chaſed out of that other. But one miſhap amonges other befell in Fraunce at theſe dayes. For Charles theyr kinge was taken from them in ſuch wiſe that no writer leaueth of him any mencion how he died, nor whẽ he died, nor no mencion is made in ẏ French cronicle, nor of mine autoure, how long whyle he and his brother Lewes reigned. Albeit Vincent hiſtoriall, & Antoninus, which grounded him vpon ẏ ſaide Vincent, and Jacobus Philippꝰ ſay that theſe two foreſayde brethren reygned together and alone, by the terme of fiue yeares

How Char les king Fraunc was ſo neyd, t none ca tel how died.

without moꝛe.

How cro- icles do yffer.

And the frenche cronicle ⁊ alſo mine autour ſayen, that Lewes died without heyꝛe, ⁊ that Charles lefte after hym a ſonne, whiche was named Lewes, and after foꝛ his ſimple dedes ſurnamed in laten Nihil faciens, oꝛ in Frenche, Ryen feſant whiche is to meane in our ſpeeche nought doynge.

The ſur- ame of Charles is ſonne.

But who that lyſteth well to aduertiſe and remember the oꝛder of this cronicle, he ſhall finde in this latter ſaiyng ſome error. Foꝛ where it is ſayd ẏ this Charles ſhould leaue a ſonne after him, to me it ſemeth, that conſideringe his youth he ſhould not be of anie lawfull age to gette a chylde. Foꝛ by all lykelyhode of conuenience of the ſtoꝛie, ẏ ſhall be veryfied as it is befoꝛe declared, he could not paſſe the age .viii. yeres at the mooſte.

Wherefoꝛe it muſt folowe of a congruence, that other they reygned lenger time, oꝛ els this child oꝛ heyꝛe Lewes aboue named, was the ſonne of ſome other man. But to folow mine autoure, I ſhall procede as foloweth.

¶ The .c.lxxvii. Chapter.

ewes the urth.

Lewes ẏ fourth of that name, ⁊ ſonne of Charles as befoꝛe is ſayd began his reigne ouer the Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our loꝛde viii. C. and. lxxxvi. and the .xiiii. yeare of Aluredus then kinge of Englande. Of thys Lewes it is teſtified of diuers wꝛiters, that he ſhould enamoure him ſelf vpon a Menchon of the Monaſterie of Chyel, and her dꝛaw out by foꝛce, and marie her vnto his wife. Foꝛ the which deed and other, he purchaſed the aboue ſayd name, and was called Lewes nought doynge.

How the Danes made new warre.

In this time the Danes, contrarie to they promiſe befoꝛe made, made new warre within the land of Fraunce. Wherfoꝛe the Frenchmen hauinge litell hope in theyꝛ king, ſent vnto Charlon oꝛ Charles themperour, ſonne of Lewes kinge of Germanie, as befoꝛe is ſhewed, requiring him in al humble wyſe to viſite the Realme of Fraunce, and to defende it from the perſecucion of the Danes.

In theſe daies alſo was liuing in Fraunce the foꝛenamed Hugh, which (as ye befoꝛe haue hearde) mainteyned the quarel of Lewes and Charles laſt kinges, agayne Lewes king of Germanie. The whiche Hugh of ſome wꝛiters is called Hue le graund, ẏ is Hugh the great. This man gathered an hoſte of Frenchmẽ, and gaue battayle vnto the Danes, and ſlew of them a great nombꝛe.

It ſhould ſeme by the wꝛiters of the Frenche Stoꝛie, that theſe noble men of Fraunce, as thys Hugh and other, ſhould haue the rule of the ſpiritual poſſeſſions of abbayes and other houſes of relygion. Foꝛ of mine autour maiſter Gagwin, thei are in laten named abbates, and in the Frenche boke abbis, which is to meane Abbottes.

And alſo it is teſtified of the ſayde wꝛyters, that thys Hugh and Robert Earle of Paris, were the firſt that left the diſtribucion of thoſe ſpiritual goods vnto their knightes, & gaue ouer that name of abbot, the which in ſome other eſtates continued til the dayes of Robert king of Fraunce.

The Emperour cāe into Fraūce and ſubdued the Danes.

Then it foloweth, according to the requeſt made vnto the emperour as aboue is ſhewed, he gathered a ſtrong hoſte of Italians and perced the land of Fraunce, & bare him ſo victoriouſlye agaynſt the Danes, that he forced theym to obey to all their former promiſe and condicions. But Euſebiꝰ and other that wrote the actes of the emperours, ſayen, that this Charles which they name the thyrd of that name, and alſo Groſſus, that is greate, ſubdued the Danes of Fraunce, and compelled theyr leader or prince named there Rodefredus, to take the habite of Chriſtes religion, and receaued hym at the colde water. In which time or ſone after (whereof the time is not duely aſcertained) died the forenamed kinge Lewys ſurnamed nought doyng, when he had reigned after moſt writers.viii.yeres leuinge after him a ſonne named Charles, the which after was ſurnamed ſymple. But for he was to yonge to take vpon him ſuche a charge the Lordes put him vnder good and conuenient guydinge, & chaſe an other as foloweth, to guide the lande tyll he were come to his lawfull age, which was named Eudo.

The death of Lewes the.iiii.ſurnamed, nought doynge.

The.c.lxxviii. Chapter.

Eudo.

EUdo the ſonne of Roberte Erle of Augeow, began his reygne ouer the Frenche men, in the yere of our lord.viii.hundred.xcv. and the.xxiii. yere of Alurede then king of Englande.

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that the aboue named Robert Earle of Angeow was as tutor and guider vnto the forenamed kinges of Fraūce Lewes and Charles, and laſtelie was ſlayne of the Danes. The which Robert left after him two ſonnes, Eudo and Roberte. Whiche Eudo for the greate fame that he was of, & alſo for the great truthe that in him was proued & knowen, the lordes of one aſſente choſe him to be kinge of the lande for the terme of hys life. And as affermeth the frenche boke & other he was crowned of Walter then Archbiſhop of Senys.

How Eu do wasch ſen kinge of Frau terme of his lyfe.

Howbeit this is ſomdeale doubtfull to be geuen credence vnto, for dyuers reaſons that therevnto might be made. Maiſter Gaguin ſayth, that he hath ſeene ſome authoures, that teſtifie this forenamed Charles the ſymple, to be the lawfull ſonne of Lewes Balbus and the foreſayd Lewes & Charles late kinges of Fraunce, to be the baſtarde ſonnes of the ſayde Lewes Balbus.

Then to folow the matter, this Eudo in conſideracion that the ſayde Charles the ſymple was inſufficient to guyde the lande, he was put vnder yͤ guiding of this ſaid Eudo, and he was made king in his ſteede. The which mightely defended the lande from all daunger of enemies. And ouer that he cauſed the ſaid Charles the ſimple to be noryſhed and brought vp with moſte dylygence, ſo that he was informed and exercyſed with all vertuous doctrine, and other thinges neceſſary vnto a prynces ſōne. And fynally whē this noble & vertuoꝰ knight Eudo knew yͭ he ſhuld die, he called before him yͤ lordes and nobles of Fraunce the which he charged by ſolempne othe, that after his death, they immediately ſhoulde crowne Charles for theyr kinge, and dyed ſoone after, when he had reigned, as affyrmeth auctours by the terme of .ix. yeres.

The death of Eudo.

Anglia.

England.

The .clxxix. chapiter.

Edward.

i.6.ca.4.

Edwarde Surnamed the elder, and ſonne of Aluredus began his reygne ouer the more part of England, in the yere of our Lorde .ix.C.i. and the .vii. yeare of Eudo, then kynge of Fraunce. This was lower then his father in letter and connynge, but he was hygher in honour and worſhip. By his fyrſt wyfe he had a ſonne named Ethelſtane, the whiche was kinge after him. By his ſecond wife he had .ii. ſonnes Edredus, and Edwinus, and .vii. doughters, and of the thirde wyfe he receiued two ſonnes, Edmunde and Edrede, and two Doughters Edburga and Edgina.

Egwina.

The mariyng of the daughters of edward.

The fyrſte of theſe three wyues hight Edwina, the ſeconde hyght Edgina, and the third was named Ethelſwyda. Of the forenamed .vii. doughters, whiche he had by his ſeconde wife, one named Alunda or Almyda, was maried to the fyrſt Otto the Emperour. And another named Algina, was maried to Charles the ſymple kynge of weſtfraunce. And the yongeſt of his doughters (as ſayth Polycronica) he wedded vnto Lewis king of Guian. But therof ſpeaketh no thyng the Frenche cronicle. He ſet his ſonnes to ſcole, and his doughters he ſet to woll worke, takinge of Charles the conqueſtour. By authorite of Formoſus the byſhop of Rome, he made .vii. Byſhoppes in Englande. Whereof he ordeyned .v. in weſt Saxon, one in Southeſaxon, and one in Mercia at Dorcheſter. He alſo for that the Munkes of wincheſter ſayd that his father Alurede walked, cauſed him to be remoued vnto the newe Abbay. About yͤ .v. yere of his reygne Clyto Ethelwaldus a nere kynſeman of his, rebelled agaynſt hym and occupyed the towne of Wynbourne beſydes Bathe, and tooke thens by force a Nunne, and wēt thens vnto the Danes dwellyng in Northumberlande, and excited them to aryſe againſte kynge Edwarde. But the king purſued him ſo ſharpely, that he was conſtrayned to leaue the countrie, and ſayled into Fraunce, and lefte the Nun behinde him, the whiche the kinge cauſed to be reſtored againe to the howſe that ſhe was taken from.

How king Edwarde his doughters were brought vp.

The next yeare folowynge, the ſayd Clyto with his company landed in Eaſt Englande, and gathered to hym the Danes of that coũtrie, and with their ayde deſtroyed and pylled the country about Crekinforde and Crikland. And then paſſed the ryuer of Thames, and ſpoyled the land to Bradeneſtoke, and ſo from thens retourned into Eaſt Anglia, that is Norffolk and Suffolke.

The king folowed his enemies and ſpoyled of their landes, whiche they helde by cōpocicion from the ryuer of Owſe, to the bordour of S. Edmundus lande cõmaundinge his knyghtes of his hooſte, that none ſhoulde dragge or tarye after his hooſt, for feare that they were not beclypped of their enemies. But the Kentyſhemen, whiche truſted to muche in theyr owne ſtrength, diſobeied that commaundemente. wherfore the Danes awayting their pray fel vpon them by buſhmentes, and ſlew the more parte of them, wherwith the king was ſore dyſcontented.

The meting of the hoſt of the Danes & Englyſhemen.

Soone after both thoſtes met, wher after long fyght, Clito with many of the Danes was ſlayne, and the remnaunt conſtrayned to ſeche peace, the whiche was graunted vpon certaine condicions, that they ſhould hold them within the boundes to them lymytted, and ouer that pay yerely a certayne money in way of tribute.

A peace cõcluded betwene the Danes and kinge Edwarde.

After whiche peace with them ſtablyſhed, he repayred Cyties, townes, and caſtelles, that by the ſayde Danes were all ſhatred and brooken.

And about the. viii. yere of his reigne, kinge Edwarde repayred the walles, and alſo the Cytie of Kaerlion, that nowe is called Cheſter. To the whiche were great helpers Etheldredus duke of Mercia and Elfleda his wyfe, doughter of Alurede as before is ſhewed, and ſuſter of this kynge Edward. And that don the king buylded a ſtrõg Caſtell at Herforde in the edge of Wales. And he enlerged ſo greatlye the walles of Cheſter, that the caſtell whiche before tyme was wͭout the wal, is nowe within.

And the. ix. yeare of his reigne, Etheldredus Duke of Mercia, by counſayle of his wyfe, tranſlated the bones of the holy kyng Oſwalde, from Bradenye to Gloucestre, and there buylded a faire monaſtery in the worſhip of S. Peter.

In the. xii. yeare of kinge Edwardes reygne, the Danes repentynge them of theyr couenauntes before made, myndinge and entendynge the brech of the ſame, aſſembled an hooſte and mette with the kinge in Staffordſhyre, at a place called Toten hall, and ſoone after at Wodneſfyelde. At whiche two places the kinge ſlewe two kinges two Earles, and manye thouſandes of the Danes that then occupyed the Countrey of Northumberlande.

Howe th Danes a gayn thei promes a ſembled a hoſt at To ten hall. Li.6.cap.

The grea victor tha the Kyng hadde ouc the Dan

And ſoone after dyed the noble man Etheldredus duke or Erle of Mercia or myddell England. After whoſe death, the Kynge for ſo muche as he had often proued her wiſedome, he toke the rule of that cõtry to his wyfe Elfleda, * London alonely excepted, the which he toke vnder his owne rule.

Howe ky ge Edwa de commy ted the cu dome of Mercia, the gouer naunce o Etheldr dus wyfe. And Orc forde.

¶ The. clxxx. Chapter.

OF this noble woman Elfleda, yf I ſhuld ſhewe all the vertues, it ſhuld aſke a longe time and leiſure. But amonges other of her noble dedes, ſhe buylded and newelye repaired manye townes, Cyties, and Caſtelles, as Tomworthe beſyde Lychefyelde, Stafforde, Warwyke, Shrowesbury, Watryſbury, Eldyſburye, in the foreſt beſyd Cheſter, that now is ouerturned and deſtroyed. Alſo ſhe buylded a cytie with a caſtell in the North ende of Mercia, vpon the ryuer of Merce, that in thoſe daies was named Rumcofan, but nowe it is called Runcorn.

Elflea the wife o the late E theldredus Duke, or Earle of Mercia. Li.6.cap.5.

The tow nes and ca ſtels buyl ded by El fleda, king Edwarde his ſuſter.

And ſhe alſo builded a bridge ouer the Riuer of Seuern which is or was named Brimmiſburi bridge. This ſtronge vyrago through fauour of Citizens and feare of enemies, helped muche the kinge her brother, in geuing of counſayle & buildinge of Cities. Of her it is tolde that when ſhe had ones aſſayed the woe and ſorow that women feele and ſuffer in bearinge of a childe, ſhe hated the embraſing of her huſbande euer, and tooke witneſſe of God and ſayde, that it was not conuenient or ſemely to a kinges doughter to vſe ſuch fleſhlie likinge, whereof ſuche ſorow ſhould enſue or folow.

owe the e Danes ain ſpoy the real with a eat Na- of ſhips

In the. xiii. yere of the reygne of this Edwarde, a great Nauye of Danes, whiche in the tyme of Alured were driuen into Fraunce nowe returned againe and ſayled about the weſt countrie, and landed in diuers places, & toke prayes and wente to theyr ſhyps againe. And at one tyme amonges other, they robbed and ſpoyled at a place called Irchinfielde, & toke a Brytyſſhe byſſhop, and caryed hym to their ſhips, and finallie raunſomed him at. xl. pound. But as ſoone as kinge Edward had knowledge of their being, he aſſēbled his knightes, and ſped him Weſtwarde by lande, and ſent an other hoſte by ſhip to encounter the Danes vpon the ſea. Wherof hearing the ſayde Danes, fled into Irelande, and by that courſe voyded the lande and handes of the king.

he flyen- of thee anes in- reland

Then the king for ſtrengthing of the countrey, made a Caſtell at the mouthe of the water of Auene and another Caſtell at Bokyngham, and ẏ third faſt therby, that is to meane vpon euery ſyde of the ryuer of Owſe one. And after retourned into Northampton ſhyre and Bedfordſhyre, & faught there with the Danes of theſe countries, and at length ſubdued theim, with their leader, or Duke called Turketyllus.

Howe he ſubdued ẏ Danes in Northampton ſhyre.

About the. xvii. yere of this kinges reigned Elfleda lady of Mercia before mynded, gathered her knightes. And where the britons or walſhemen brake into the land aboute Brekenocke, ſhe with her people withſtode them, and amōg other priſoners and prayes, tooke there the Quene of walſhmen.

The takinge of the Queene of the Walſhmen.

And the yere folowynge kynge Edwarde bulded or newely reedyfyed the townes of Towſetoure and Wygmore, and deſtroyed the Caſtell that the Danes had made at Temeſforde.

And that yere the noble Elfleda wan the towne of Derby from the power of the Danes, where they put her in ſuche aduenture, that. iiii. knightes, whiche were called Gardeins of her corps, were ſlaine faſt by her.

The daungers that Elfleda was in.

And the. xviii. yere of his reigne dyed that noble princes Elfleda in the mouth of June, and was buried in the monaſtery of S. Peter whiche her Lorde and ſhe before tyme hadde buylded within the towne of Gloceſtoure, as aboue is touched, whiche monaſterye was after throwen vnto the grounde by the Danes. But Aldredus byſſhop bothe of Yorke and of Worceſtour, made there another, whiche is nowe chiefe houſe or Abbaye of that towne or cytie.

The death of Elfleda.

When Elfleda was deade, her doughter named Elſwina, helde the

Howe Elſwina, the

Doughter of Elfleda, poſſeſſed yͤ lordſhyp of Mercia.

the Lordſhyp of Mercia a ſeaſon. But for the kynge conſydered it to be to great a thinge for her to rule he therfore diſcharged her therof, and ioyned it to his kingdom, but not all without ſtrife. For diuers townes ſhe kept of the kinge for a tyme, as Snottyngham or Nottyngham, Tomworthe, Derbye, and other: ſuppoſynge the doughter wolde haue defended them, as the mother by her lyfe had done. But fynally they came to the kinges ſubiection.

Howe the kinge won the Dukedome of Mercia, to his owne kingdome.

Henry archbyſhop of Huntyngdon, that wrote muche of the cronicles of Englande, in praiſe of this noble woman Elfleda made dyuers dities, of the which ſome ben expreſſed as foloweth.

Ceſers triumphes were not ſo muche to prayſe
As was of Elfleda, that ſhieldes ſo oft did rayſe
Agayne her enemyes this noble venqueres
Virago & maide, whoſe vertue can I not expres.

When Edward had reconcyled theſe foreſaid townes he then builded a newe towne, ryghte againe the olde towne of Nottyngham, on the South ſyde of the ryuer of Trente, and made a bridge ouer the ſayd ryuer, betwene the ſayde two townes. And as witneſſeth Policronica, the yeare folowinge in the ſayd towne or cytie of Nottingham two kynges, that is to ſay of Scotlande and Wales yelded them vnto king Edward. The cauſe why, nor of warre betwene them to be cōtynued, is not of him expreſſed.

Howe the kynge of ſcotlande & Wales yelded theym to kynge Edwarde

Howbeit diuers bokes of wryters of cronycles of Englande, as of Maryanus the ſcot, william of Malmeſbury Henry of Huntyngdon, & other it is ſhewed that this Edwarde ſubdued the kynges of ſcotland & of Cumbris, about the ix. yeare of his reygne. And of the ſayd authours it is alſo teſtifyed, that aboute the .xx. yeare of the reigne of the ſayd Edward, theſe ſayd kinges of Scottes and Cumbris, ſhould choſe this kynge Edwarde for their lorde and patrone whiche ſhuld be about this ſeaſon before expreſſed.

Then this noble prince Edwarde after theſe thynges ſet by hym in an order, he in the north ende of Mercia by the Ryuer of Merce, buylded a Cytie or towne and named it Thylwall, and ſtrengthed it with knightes, and after repayred the cytie of Mancheſter, that ſore was defaced with war of the Danes. After whiche notable dedes by the puyſaunte prince fynyſhed, with the mariage of his chyldren and many other, whiche I omit & paſſe ouer for length of time: fynally this noble man died when he had reygned with greate trauayle by terme of .xxiiii. yeares at Faringdon, and from thence conueyed to Winceſter, and there entered in the monaſtery of S. Swythine, leauynge after hym dyuerſe ſonnes as before is ſhewed, of the whiche Ethelſtane was eldeſt.

The dea of kynge Edward.

Francia.

Fraunce

The .clxxi. chapiter.

Charles the ſymp

Charles ſurnamed the ſymple and ſon of Lewys the .iiii. or Ryen Fayzande began his reygne ouer the frenchmē in the yere of our lordes incarnacion, as witneſſeth Iacobus Philippus and other ix. C.iiii. and the iii. yeare of Edwarde the elder, then kynge of Englande. In tyme of whoſe reigne the Danes whiche contynuallye ouer the terme of .l. winters, that is to ſay from the .x. yeare of Charles the Ballyd ſomtyme kynge of Fraunce, vnto the ſayd dayes had waſted and ſpoyled the lande notwithſtandinge the agrementes made with Charles the Emperoure and theim, as before in the ſtorie of the .iiii. Lewis is ſhewed: yet they with great hooſtes arived in the countre of Neuſtria or Normandye, & robbed and ſpoyled the countrie before theim, and ſlewe the people therof without pytie, and from Cytie to Cytie kept on their iorney, till they came vnto the cytie of Roan. wherof the byſhop beynge in great drede, of ſubuerſyon of the cytie and deſtruction of the chriſte people with in the ſame, delyuered the cytie by appointment, that he with the people myght departe thens without bodely harme whiche vnto yͤ ſayd Danes was a great ſtrength, and hurte vnto the lande of Fraunce.

owe the anes wͭ reat hooes arived Normãe.

Of this hooſte of Danes was ruler and leader: a myſcreaunt named Rollo, the which was a man of lowe byrth, but he was of great ſtrength. The which when he had a ſeaſon reſted him and his hooſt, and refreſſhed them within the cytie of Roan, he then ſette forth his waye: commaundinge his vaunwarde to kepe theyr iourney toward Paris. And for yͤ more ſpede to be made, he ſhypped his Danes ryght there, and one parte he ſent by the riuer of Scan, the ſecond by the riuer of Liger or Leyr, and the thirde by the water Geronde.

ollo the uler of yͤ Danes.

Then the Danes that paſſed by the ryuer of Leyr came at length, to the cytie of Nauntes, and wan that Cytie by ſtrength, and ſlewe therin muche people. And the byſſhop of the ſame named Guymert, beynge at maſſe, they ſlewe at the aultare. And when they had ſpoyled that cytie and the countre ther about, then yode they to the cytie of Angiers, and brent and robbed it moſt cruelly. And that don they yode vnto Towres, and layd ſyege to that cytie, & wan it, and brente the abbey before the towne or ſtanding without the towne, and ſpoyled and robbed the cytie and townes, thorough all the countrye of Guyan.

Howe the Danes robbed & ſpoyled Frãuce

When the Danes had thus ſubdued the more parte of Neuſtrya, or Normandye. They with their duke Rollo by the ryuer of Seyn drewe towarde paris, and fyrſt entred the landes of Burgoyne and Auerne, and in effect to Senons. Wherof hearynge the munkes of the monaſtery of Florye they fled, in tyme that the Danes thus perſecute the countre of fraunce, (and the kinge was not of power them to reſyſt, for ſo muche as Charles knew wel that the biſhop of Roan named Franke, was in good fauoure of Rollo: he therefore ſente him in Ambaſſade to the ſaid Rollo, to require a true or truſe for iii. monethes the whiche was graunted. The whiche truſe ended, the ſayde Rollo beſyged the Cytie of Chartris. Duringe whiche ſyege, the duke of Burgoine named Rycharde with his retynewe aſſayled the Danes. In tyme of which fyght Ebalde Earle of Poytowe was preſente, and draue backe the Danes,

A truſe taken for .iii. monethes.

Danes & made vpon them a great diſcomfyture. So that by the proweſſe of the foreſayde two temporall Lordes, Rollo was compelled to flye and forſake his ſyege, & not without huge ſlaughter.

Rollo then hauynge great dyſdaine and diſpleaſure of this ouerthrowe and dyſcomfyture of his Danes, reſembled them that were abrode ſcattered, and cōmaunded them to ouer ride the countre, and to deſtroy it in al that they might After which cōmaundement thus to thē giuē, this cruel people ſlew man, woman, & chylde, ẏ were not apt to do to them ſeruice: and brēt the churches and temples, and rauyſſhed Virgyns, as well relygyous as other.

The cruel tyranny of the Danes

So that miſerable it was to beholde the great abhomynacion of theſe Tyrannouſe Danes, that brent, robbed, and ſlewe the innocent people without mercy.

Howe the cōmons cōplayned of the kinges fere fulnes

The Lordes and cōmons thus beſet with cruell fury of their enemyes, aſſembled them by ſondrye companyes, and wente vnto the kynge, ſhewynge vnto him theyr myſery, and blamed as they durſt, his fearefulneſſe and neglygence, that he nor none for him, otherwyſe withſtoode the crueltie of the Danes, that had deſtroied a great parte of his lande.

¶ The.c.lxxxii. Chapter.

CHarles hearynge this exclamacion of his ſubiectes, and conſyderyng his lacke of power to withſtande that malyce of his enemyes, was right penſyfe and heauy in his hert, and caſtynge in his mynde manye ſondrye wayes, he laſtly determyned to ſende agayne the aboue named Franke byſſhop of Roan, vnto Rollo prince of the Danes, ſhewynge him that yf he wold reny his pagan lawe and become a chriſten man, he woulde to hym gyue in maryage Gylda his doughter, with the whole countre of Neuſtra for her dowar.

When Rollo had receyued this tydynges frome the kynge by the mouthe of his friende Franke, he ſomwhat attempred his fury and cruelty, and cōdeſcended to a true, by the counſayle of his Lordes for the terme of.iii. monethes, in the whiche tyme he myght haue ſome communicacion with the kynge, for further proces of this matter.

The metynge of Charles & Rollo.

So that after it was concluded by the counſayle of both princes, that their metyng ſhould be vpon the ryuer or flod named Ept. wher ſhortly after the ſayd princes had communycacion the one with the other, their people ſtandyng vpon eyther ſyde of the ſayde Ryuer. Where it was concluded, that Rollo ſhould forſake his Pagan lawe and take vpon hym the lyuerye of Chriſtes baptym, and after to marye the forenamed Gylda, and to receyue with her as is aboue ſhewed. Whiche concluſyon thus taken, either fro other departed, and ſhortly after at the cytie of Roan, all the foreſayd couenauntes were executed and fulfylled. And when the ſayde Rollo was chriſtenned, his name was chaunged and called Roberte, after the Earle of Poytowe, whiche receiued him at the fonte ſtone.

How Rollo was chriſtened, and maried the Doughter of Charles kinge of Fraunce.

Of this Rollo prince of the Danes cāe duke Wyl

Of this Rollo or Robert, deſcended lynallye Duke Wyllyam of Normandie, whiche conquered Englande, as after ſhall be more clerelye clerely ſhewed. Then this Robert thus chriſtened, was ſeaſed of the countrye of Neuſtria, whome the kynge created Duke, and named him duke of Neuſtria.

But it was not long after, that this name of Neuſtria was chaũged and called Normandye, after the name of Normaynes, or men commynge out of the North, or of Nor, that is to meane North, and men, whiche two ſyllables togyther makes Norman, or a man of the Northe.

Whiche Normans or Danes, after the expoſycion of Mayſter Gagwyn, ſhuld be diſcended of the nacion called the Gothes, whiche Gothes of the cytis or men of Sithica bene dyſcended. The which Gothes in the dayes of the great Conſtantyne, for their fearſeneſſe and crueltie, were driuen fro their countrie then by them inhabyted nere to the riuer called *Thamis in the Northe parties of Europe, and nowe ben inhabited in Dacia, whiche in our ſpeche is called Denmarke. And wher ſome men holde an opinion, that Danes and Saxons ſhould be one maner of people (it may well ſo bee.) For Saxons bene of the countrie of Germany, and conteygne the lande after the ſayenge of Strabo: in the Weſt parte of Germania. From the flod called Viſtergus, or Wiſera, vnto the famous riuer called the Ryne. And Dacia or Denmarke, in the North partes.

Then to returne to this Rollo or Robert, the ſtorie ſayth that he became a chriſtian man. In token wherof as affyrmeth the Frenche boke, he gaue vnto dyuers Churches and monaſteryes of Fraunce greate gyftes, as well of poſſeſſyons as of mouable goodes, and continued his peace with the king as he before had promyſed.

Howe Robert yͤ brother of Eudo, late kinge of Fraũce, ſeazed certein landes perteynyng vnto king Charles.

After whiche peace thus ſtabliſhed betweene the Kynge and the Danes, Robert brother vnto Eudo laſt king of Fraunce, contrary his treuth and allegiaunce, ſeaſed certaine Cyties and other holdes of the kinges enherytaunce, wherfore the kinge ſeyng that he could not reforme him of that errour by no meanes of entreatye, or other lyke wayes, aſſembled an hooſte and met with him in playne battayle, in the whiche the ſayde Roberte was ſlayne. This Roberte had a ſyſtre, whiche was maryed vnto Heberte, Earle of Vermendoyes, whiche Earle hearynge of the death of his Brother in lawe, by entycement of his wyfe, as the ſtorie demeth, met the king at the retourne of the fyelde, and requyred him in mooſte humble wyſe, that he would vouchesafe to lodge with him in his manier called the caſtell of Perone.

Howe Robert yͤ brother of Eudo was ſlayne.

The crafty and traiterous delynge of yͤ brotherin law of the ſayd Robert, in diſtroyeng the kynge.

The kynge caſtynge no peryll, thanked hym of his kynde requeſt and graunted to goe with hym. Where he was receyued and feaſted with all honoure. But when this Earle had conueyed the kinges friendes, and ſtrength frome him, he then kepte him there as a priſoner, or murdered him, ſo that he neuer came at large after, whiche tydynges certaynely knowen, Algina wyfe vnto the ſayd Charles the ſymple, myſtruſtynge the Frenchemen, with fewe accompanyed, tooke ſecrete Shyppynge, and with her yonge Sonne named Lewes ſayled into England,

Howe the wyfe of Charles wͭ

her yonge ſon Lewes fledde in to Englande

there be comforted of her father, Edward ſurnamed the elder. And thus ended the reigne of this Charles the ſymple, when he had reygned after the ſayenge of Vincente hyſtoriall and other, by the terme of .xvi. yeare full, leauynge after hym the foreſayde chylde, named Lewes.

¶ The .clxxxiii. Chapter.

Radulphꝰ, or Rauſe ẏ ſon of Rychard duke of Burgoyne.

Radulphus, the ſonne of Rycharde duke of Burgoyne began his reigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yeare of our Lorde. ix.C. xxii. and the .xxi. yeare of Edwarde the elder, than kynge of Englande.

Here is to be noted, that forſomuch as Algina wyfe vnto Charles the ſymple, was thus ſecretely voided that land of Fraunce with her ſonne Lewes, and that the lande myght not be without a ruler, the lordes aſſembled at Paris and there toke theyr counſayle for the admiſſion of an hede or king of the land. Which lords after long debatynge of this matter fynally agreed that this aboue named Radulphus or Rauſe, ſonne of the Duke of Burgoyne, as aboue is ſayde, as nexte heyre to the crowne ſhould be admytted for kyng, and ſo was admytted. Of the whiche, lytell of his deedes are put in memorie, excepte that in the tyme of his reygne the Sarazins entred the land of Borgoyn with a great armye, and dyd muche harme in that duchy. wherfore the king gatheringe his hoſte, met with them at a place called in latin Carrolas and in Frenche, Callo the leſſe, where the Frenchemen were vyctors, but not without great loſſe of their people.

Then it foloweth, whan this Rauſe, had reweled the lande of Fraunce by the ſpace of .xii. yeres he dyed withoute yſſue male. And was buryed in the churche of S. Columb in the prouince of Senis.

Anglia.

Engl

¶ The .clxxxiiii. Chapter.

Ethlſt the ſo Edw Li.6.

Ethelſtane the ſonne of Edwarde the elder, beganne his Reygne, ouer the more parte of Englande in the yere of our Lorde nyne hundred and .xxv. and the thyrd yere of Rauſe, than kynge of Fraunce.

In the ſecōde yere of the reigne of Ethelſtane, for an vnitie and a peace to be had betwene the kinge and the Danes of Northumberlande, he maried to Sythericus theyr kynge, his ſyſter. But after fyue yeares this Sithiricus dyed. After whoſe death he ſeazed the countrey into his owne hand, and put oute the ſonne of the foreſayd Sythyricus. And when he hadde thus accorded with the Danes of Northumberland, he ſhortly after made ſubiecte to him Conſtantin kinge of Scottes. But the ſaide Conſtantine meked him ſo lowly to the kinge, that he reſtored him to his former dignitie.

Howe Kynge Scotla was ſu iecte to ge Eth ſtane.

Wherefore, the ſayde Conſtantyne ſayde in prayſe of the kynge, that it was more honour to make a kinge, then to be a kinge.

Whiche acte was done by the affyrmaunce of Polycronicon, in in the yere of grace nyne hundred and.xxvi. whiche then after that ſaiyng, ſhould bee the ſecond yere of the reigne of this Ethelſtane. It is teſtified of Polichronica, that this Ethelſtane ſhould mary one of his ſiſters named Editha, or Edith, vnto Otto the firſte of that name Emperour of Almain and receiued from him many precious Jewelles. But of this ſpeaketh nothyng the chronicle of the Romaines. Howbeit it is ſhewed there, that the foreſaid Ottho or Otto had a wife named Alunda, whiche as before is ſaied in the ſtorie of Edward the elder, might bee the doughter of theſaied Edward, and of Edgina his ſeconde wife. But Vincentius hiſtorialis ſaieth, that Henry duke of Saxonie, which was father vnto yͤ firſt Otto, ſent vnto Ethelſtane, requiryng of hym his ſiſter, to marie vnto his ſone Otto, by which reaſon it maie followe, that this Ottho maried the ſiſter of Ethelſtane, but not Edithe.

Of theſe foreſaied iewels ſent by Otto, one was a precious veſſell of ſtone, called Onechinus, which was of ſoche clerenes and alſo ſubtely and craftly wrought that it appered to mannes ſight, as grene corne had growen within it, and it moued and waued, as corne doeth ſtandyng in the field, Moreouer in it appeared Vines, burgenyng and bearyng fruicte, and men alſo to fight, mouyng & ſtiring. He alſo receiued the great Conſtantines ſworde, wherein was grauen with greate letters of Golde, the name of the owner. And the hiltes thereof were couered with greate plates of Golde. And one of the nailes was faſtened to the croſſe of theſaid ſword, that Chriſt ſuffered with his paſſion. But in this report or ſaiyng Polichronicon varieth from his former ſaiyng, wher he reporteth two of the ſaid nailes to be ſpent vpon the bridell of theſaied Conſtantine, and the third naile to be caſt into a daungerous ſwallowe of the ſea, as before is rehearſed in the.lxix.chapi.of this worke

He alſo receiued the Speare of Charles the greate, whiche after the opinion of ſome writers, was the ſpeare that Longeus opened Chriſtes ſide. And the baner of S Moris, with a parte of the holie croſſe, and a part of the croune of thorne of our ſauiour.

Of the whiche iewelles, Kyng Ethelſtane gaue a part vnto. S. Swithins at Wincheſter, & ſome he gaue vnto the Abbaie of Malmeſburie.

I haue ſeen a chronicle of England, which teſtifieth, that this Ethelſtane was the firſte Kyng, that euer was annoincted in this land. Albeit, I finde thereof little aucthoritie, excepte that Guido and other teſtifieth, that he was crouned at the kinges towne, now called Kyngſtone, ten miles from London, of Atheline then Archebiſſhop of Cantorburie. But that proueth not or argueth hym, to bee the firſte for that reaſon. For right ſo was his father Edward, crouned of Plemounde Archbiſſhop of yͤ ſaid ſee. But Guido aforſaied affirmeth, yͭ Alured graund father of this Ethelſtane, was annoincted kyng, by aucthoritee of Leo, the fifth then Biſſhop of Roome, wherefore it agreeth better, that he ſhould be the firſt, Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, that aboute the eight yere of the reigne of this Ethelſtane, died Friſtane biſhop of Wincheſter, ⁊ Briſtane was biſhop after hym.

Sone after Conſtantine kyng of Scottes, did break couenaunt with kyng Ethelſtane. Wherfore he aſſembled his Knightes, and made toward Scotlande. And in his waie he tourned to S. Jhon of Beuerley, and offered there his knife vpon the altar, ſaiyng, that if he retourned with victorie, he ſhould redeame his knife with a noble price. And that doen he proceaded vpon his iourney, and in concluſion diſcomfited the Scottes, and them brought again vnto due ſubiection. And after, accordyng to yͤ promiſe before made, he retourned to Yorke, and ſo to the Churche, where the corps of ſainct Jhon of Beuerley laie, redemyng of his knife worthely, as he before had promiſed.

In the ſixte Chapiter of the.vi. Booke of Polichronicon, it is remembred that Kyng Ethelſtane, after this ſubduyng of the Scottes, beyng with his Lordes and familiers, nere vnto the caſtell of Dunber, praied to God and ſaint Jhon of Beuerley, that in that countrey he might leaue ſome remembraunce or token, that thoſe that then were liuyng, and alſo ſoche as ſhould come thereafter, might knowe that the Scottes by right, ſhould be ſubdued to the Engliſhmen.

And ſone after, with his ſword he ſmote vpon a great ſtone, ſtandyng nere vnto the ſaied Caſtell, with which ſtroke, the ſtone was riuen to an elle in length, that in the time of king Edward the.iii. was there remainyng to be ſeen. And whether at this daie it is ſo, I am in doubt.

Ye haue heard before, that king Ethilſtane, after the death of Sithericus Kyng of Northumberlande, ſeazed that lande or Prouince into his owne handes, and put out his ſoonne: whiche after allied hym with Cõſtantine king of Scottes, ⁊ married his doughter. By whoſe ſtirryng and exhortacion, he gathered a companie of Danes, Scottes, and other, and entered the mouthe of Humber, with a ſtrong nauie.

Whereof hearyng Ethelſtane, in all goodly haſte, prepared his armie, and at length mette with hym and his pleople, at a place called Brimforde, where he had a greate ſolempne victorie. For as it is ſhewed in the foreſaied chapter and booke, after the king by the help of God, had defended the ſubtile aſſaulte made vpon hym by night of his enemies, he vpon the morne by the helpe of his brother Edmunde, and Odo the Archebiſhop, chaſed his enemies, and ſlue there Conſtantine kyng of Scottes, and fiue ſmall or vnder Kynges, and twelue Dukes, with the more parte of all the ſtraunge nacions, at that tyme there gathered, whiche battaill ſhould be doen by the meanyng of the ſaid Polichronicon, about the laſt yere of his reigne.

¶ The.clxxxv. Chapiter.

IT is teſtified of diuers writers, yͭ Ethelſtane after this victorie thus obteined of the Danes and Scottes, or Scottis ⁊ Danis

He alſo ſubdued the Northe Brytons that dwelled at Herford and there aboute and compelled them to paye to him yerely for a tribute iii. C. pound of ſyluer. xxv. C. head of neate, and. xx. pounde of golde. But Guydo ſayeth that kynge Ethylſtane cauſed to come before hym at Herforde Cytie the rulers of al the North Britayne, and there had with them ſuche communycacion, that he forced them to graūt vnto him as a yerely tribute. xx. pound of golde. iii. hundred pounde in ſyluer, and of heades of neate. xxv. hundred, with dogges & hawkes to a certaine nomber. After whiche victoryes he wente vnto Exeter, and repayred it, and the walles therof ſuffyciently.

he tribu
that the
orthum-
es payed
the king

Dane John Lingate a monke ſomtime of S. Edmundes burye, made a goodlye treatyſe of this king Ethilſtane, ſhewynge that he was in ſo great perſecucion of the Danes, that he was conſtreyned to call at Wincheſter a great counſayle of his lordes. Where after longe debaitinge of the matter and diuers Ambaſſades and meſſages ſent about by the kinge and the Danes. It was faſtly concluded that the kinge ſhoulde purney him a Champion to fyghte with Colybronde or Colbronde, a Gyaunt and Dane, which the Danes had appointed for theyr Chieuetaine. Wherfore the kinge enſerchinge thoroughe his landes for ſuche a knight and myghte none fynde, was in great daunger and dyſtreſſe and heuynes. And for ſo muche as he well perceyued that mans power fayled, he by the aduiſe of lordes ſpirituall and temporall fyll to faſtinge and prayer and continued therin by a certain of time with perfecte and charitable deuocion.

treatyſe
ade, bye
ohn Lyd-
te.

olbronde
great gy-
ante.

In time of whiche ſayde abſtynence, a vyſyon was ſhewed vnto Ethelſtane comfortynge him, and alſo commaundynge him, that erly vpon the next morning he ſhuld ſtand at the Northgate of the cytie of Wyncheſter, and there he ſhulde fynde amonges the porayll a man clad in a Palmers wede, whom he ſhuld choſe for his champion. After whiche vyſyon thus to him ſhewed, he did accordingelye, and founde a man of goodly ſtature and ſomdeale ſtriken in age, and clad as he was monyſſhed by the vyſyon. Wherof he fyrſte gaue vnto God thankinges, and after made requeſt to this man, that he wolde take vpon him this batayle for the defence of this lande, which layde for him many reaſonable excuſes, as well for his age as otherwiſe. Howbeit fynallye he graunted the king to fulfyll his requeſte and commaundement. And at the day before lymitted and aſſygned met in the fielde with the forenamed Giaunte called Colbronde, without the gate of the cytie in a meddowe or paſture, called Hyde mede, where betweene them two was foughten a longe and cruell fyghte, ſo that the kinge was in great feare of his champion. But fynally by the helpe of god the man wan the honour of that fight, and ſlew that giaūt yͤ was of exceding ſtature, & therunto of great & paſſing ſtrength, which victory by the man thus by grace obteyned, the kinge with his Baronye ſet him into yͤ cytie of Wincheſter with ſolempne proceſſyon, & conueyed him

A vyſyon.

The victo-
rye of the
ſtraunger
gotten of
the Danes
champion.

vnto the cathedrall church of the ſame, wher he thanked God with greate deuocion, and offered there the Axe, with the whiche he had ſlaine the Danes champion. After whiche oblacion with dewe reuerence, & other obſeruances by him and other fyniſhed, the kinge cauſed him to be conueyed vnto his courte, where he taried that night with muche daunger. And vpon the morne erly he made ſuch meanes, that he wolde nedely departe, and that in the ſame aparaille that he came thyther. When the kinge was aduertyſed that his mã wold ſo haſtely departe, whom he intended to haue holden with hym in his courte, and to haue endowed with ryche poſſeſſions: he cõmaunded him to be broughte vnto his preſence.

Howe the king receyues this man with proceſſion.

And when he ſawe he could not cauſe him to tary he required him to ſhewe his name, wherof alſo he beſoughte the kynge to pardone him. Wherefore the kynge conſyderinge his haſty departing, with manye other thinges in him to be cõſydered, was the more deſyrous to haue of him ſome knowledge. And for that was efferteous in his deſyre, when the man perceyued that he coulde not with the kynges pleaſure departe without diſcloſynge of his name, he ſayde he might not diſcouer his name within the walles of the citie, without the offence of his conſcience.

Wherefore the kinge graunted to go with him till he were in the brode fyeldes. Uppon the whiche graunte thus made, the kynge cõmaunded dyuers great gyftes to be to him preſented, whiche all he vtterly refuſed.

Shortly to conclude, the kyng with a certaine of his lordes conueyed this ſayde manne vnto the townes ende. And when he was thyther commen, he there requyred of the performaunces of the promyſe. Wherfore this man ſyttinge on his knee, beſought the kyng of his eſpecial grace, that he wold put aparte his Lordes and other, ſo that he myght ſhewe vnto hym his name onely.

Whiche done, he in moſt humble wyſe beſought hym, that he wold kepe his name ſecret for the ſpace of .xxiiii. houres. Wherof by the kynge aſſuraunce to hym fyrmely made, he ſhewed vnto him, that he was his naturall lyege man and Subiect, and that his name was Guy of Warwycke. Of whiche tydynges the kynge was very ioyous, and offered hym then of newe manye ryche rewardes and gyftes. But all was in vayne, for he wolde nothinge receyue, ſo that the kinge and he laſtely departed with weepynge eyen. And after as affyrmeth my ſayde Authoure, not farre frome Warwycke, in a wyldernes, he purchaſed by Gods purueiaunce a lodgynge in an harmytage, where by the terme of .ii. yeares and more, he dwelled and kept an hard lyfe.

Guye
Warwy

And hearinge that dame Felice his owne wyfe fed daylye thirtene poore men for Chriſtes ſake. He wente thyther ſondry tymes, and fette there his almes. His ſayde wyfe then lyenge at the Caſtell of Warwycke, not knowinge of any man what he was, tyll laſtelye he was vyſyted with ſoore ſyckenes that he knewe well that he ſhoulde dye.

Wherfore he ſente hys weddynge Ring vnto his wyfe, requiringe her in all haſte to come and ſpeake with him. Which ſhe obeyed in hūble wyſe, and ſped her vnto the ſayd Hermytage with al womanlie diligence, and founde him dead at her commyng, whome ſhe beſprent with many a ſalte teare. And as ſhe was enfourmed of the meſſenger as he died ſhe buryed him right there. And more ouer as ſaythe my ſayde authour, he moniſhed her by the ſaide meſſenger, that ſhe ſhuld prouide for her ſelfe, for ſhe ſhould alſo alter her mortal lyfe the.xv.day folowing. Whiche alſo ſhe obeyed, and made ſuch prouiſiō, yͭ ſhe was in yͤ place buried by him. Al which matter yͤ ſaide Dane Iohn̄ Lidgate affirmeth yͭ he tooke out of yͤ booke of Gerarde Cambres, which wrote much of the deedes and ſtories of princes of Englande, as Polycronica and other authours teſtifien and as the ſaid Lidgate in yͤ ende of his ſayd treatyſe witneſſeth, as by yͤ matter folowing apeareth.

he death
Guy of
arwike

For more authorite, as of this matter
This tranſlacion, ſuch as in ſentence
Out of Latin made by the Cronicler
Called of olde Gerardus Cambrence,
VVhich wrote the dedes, with great diligēce
Of them that were in VVeſtſaxon crowned
kynges,
Greatelie comended for their knightly excellence.
Guy of VVarwyke, in his famouſe writinges.

All whiche ſayde treatyſe is ſhewed at length in meter of.viii.ſtaues after the maner of the precedentes, by the dyligent laboure of the ſaid Dane Iohn̄ Lidgate. The which I haue here ſet in, for ſo muche as it concerneth mater that was done in the time of the reygne of this Ethelſtane. The which after accorde of moſte writers, brought this lande agayn to one monarchie, and reygned as kinge therof by the full terme of xvi.yeres, and buried at the Monaſtery of Malmeſbury: leauyng after him no childe. Wherfore the rule of the land fyll vnto Edmūde his brother.

The death of Ethelſtane.

Francia.

Fraunce.

¶ The.clxxxvi. Chapter.

Lewes the fifte.

Lewes the ſonne of Charles yͤ ſymple began his reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our Lorde.ix.hundred and.xxxiiii.and the.ix yere of Ethelſtane thē king of England.

Ye haue heard before in the end of the ſtory of Charles the ſimple, how Elgina the queene wͭ Lewes her yonger ſonne, was fled into England to her father Edwarde the elder. Wherfore the lordes of Fraunce not knowing where ſhe with the child was gone, choſe the forenamed Rauffe for theyr king. After whoſe death the ſaid lordes of Fraunce beyng aſcertayned of the beinge of the ſayde Lewes in England, ſent vnto him the archbyſhop of Senes, and Hugh ſurnamed le graund, deſyring him to returne into Fraunce, and take therof poſſeſſion.

Then Elgina hearing the meſſage of yͤ lordes, and truſting vnto them by counſaile of her freendes made her redi with her ſonne, and ſayled ſhortlie after into Fraunce.

Where ſhe was receyued wᵗ muche honoure, and ſhortlie after crowned her ſonne Lewes king at the Citie of Loan̄.

A greate famin.

How king Lewes deuyſed the reuengemēt of his fathers death againſt Hebert whōe he murdered.

This Lewes is named the fift Lewes. In ẏ thyrd yere of whoſe reygne fel a ſcarſitie of corne and vytayle, by reaſon wherof enſued a great famin: in ſo much that the people voided the realme and manie died for defaute. For as wytneſſeth the Frenche Cronicle, a quarter of wheat was then worth xx. pounde, of that mony, which is of value after ſtarling money .l.s. or there about. This king bering in minde the murder and treaſon done again his father by Hebert as before in the ſtorie of Charles the ſimple is declared, caſt & ymagined in his minde how he might without ſheddinge of bloud, reuenge the death of his father, and after manie ymaginacions and thoughtes reuolued in his minde he laſtly deuiſed a letter, the whiche he charged a ſeruaunte of hys to bryng to his preſence, when he was ſet among his lordes in coūſaile. When king Lewes had compaſſed this in his mynde, he fornedes of his realme called a great counſayle of his baronie at Laon̄ whyther amonges the other, the ſayde Heberte Earle of Vermendoys was warned to come. And when the kinge was acertayned of theyr commynges, he appoynted a certaine company in harnes to be in a ſecret chamber, nere vnto the place of the ſayde counſaile and at cōuenient time after yode vnto the ſame, and all his Lordes with him. And when he had a ſeaſon cōmoned wᵗ his lordes of ſuch matters as him liked, ſodēly came one to him, and ſayde that a man was comen with a letter dyrected vnto his grace out of Englande, the which he commaunded to be brought vnto his ſight.

When the kyng had vnfold the letter, and read a parte therof, he ſmyled. Wherof the Lordes being ware, ſuppoſed the kinge to haue receiued ſome iewelles or ioyous nouellys out of England.

Whyle the king was about to deliuer this letter to his ſcrybe or ſecretorie, one of his lordes ſayde vnto him. Syr, we truſte ye haue ſome iocande and mery tydinges out of England, ẏ ye haue cauſe of ſmiling. I ſhall ſhew the cauſe vnto you ſayde the king. There is dwelling in England a kinneſmā of mine named Harman, ẏ which is a mā of great might, and mine eſpeciall freende. He ſheweth me by this letter, that an huſbandeman or a vyllaine had or requyred hys Lorde vnto his houſe to dinner, and vnder the coloure therof he ſlew his ſayd lorde. And for the ſayde Harman thinketh the lawes of that land to fauourable for ſuch an haynous deede; he therefore wryteth to me to haue mine aduiſe in this matter. Wherfore ſens ye be al preſente, I pray you ſhew to me your opinions in this matter. which with one voyce ſayde, that the murtherer was worthie to ſuffer the moſte ſhamefull and cruel death, and to be hanged and ſtrangled in a rope. But for the king would be certaynly enfourmed of the conſentes of them all, he began at the higheſt, and ſo purſued thē till he came to Hebert Earle of Vermendoys, the which allowed the ſentence as the other had

How He
bert ga
ſentenc
him ſelf

had done.

Then the kinge made a token to the Walſhmen betwene him & them before appoynted, ſo that anone thei were preſent, & ſet ſure holde vpon the ſaied Heberte. To whome the kinge ſaied, Heberte thou art the huſband man or vilaine that I haue ſpoken of, whiche ſlew his lorde vnder colour of biddinge or geſtinge him in his houſe. For traiterouſly thou diddeſt reqnire my Lord and father vnder thine houſe or caſtel of Peron, and there not remembringe the kindeneſſe to thee by him before daies ſhewed, nor thine allegiaunces & trouth that towarde him thou ſhouldeſt haue borne, kept him like a priſoner, & falſely murthered him, to thy great daunger againe God, & to thy worldly ſhame. Wherfore according to thy deſert, and after thine owne ſentence and iudgement, take nowe thy rewarde and guardon.

After whiche ſentence thus geuen by the kyng, the ſaied Hebert was by the executours lad vnto an hill without a Citie of Laon, and there moſte ſhamefully hanged. Which hil for that cauſe was named Hebertes hill longe tyme after.

Aboute this time the ſeconde Duke of Normandie named William longa Spata, the ſonne of Rollo or Robert firſt duke of Normandie, was ſlaine by treaſon of one Arnolde earle of Flaunders, by occaſion that the ſaied William ayded a noble man of Picardie named Herloyn, againſt the ſaied Arnolde.

This William left after him a ſonne named Richard, whiche at the time of his fathers deth, was not of ſufficiẽt age to rule ſo great a dukedome. Wherefore Lewes king of Fraunce deſirous of that Prouince, which of late daies belonged to his anteceſſours & progenitours, ſought buſily yͤ waies and meanes, to haue this childe Richarde vnder his tuition and guidynge. And this to bringe to effecte, he ſpedde him vnto Roan calling there before him the lordes and rulers of the coũtrie, hauing vnto them many pleaſaunte and faire wordes, in promiſyng them aide and aſſiſtence to reuenge the death of their lord and duke, and in the concluſion deſired of them that he mighte haue the nouriſhing & bringing vp of the childe til he came to his lawfull age.

Whiche thing thus by the kyng deſired, the lordes anon coniectured in their mindes, that he deſyred the kepibg of their yong lord, to the ende that hee mighte the more eaſely obtaine the poſſeſſion of that dukedome. For the which the lordes and other of the Citie, were in greate rumour & grudge againſt the King. Whereof he beyng moniſhed, to appeace yͤ multitude, the king tooke the childe in his armes, and ſo bare him into the place of the aſſemble of the people, & there ſhewed vnto them with affirmaunce of great othes that his entent was onely for the weale of the childe: and for the defence of the countrey, and not to claime any righte or title of the duchy, excepte onely the homage therof, whiche belongeth to hym by iuſt title.

By meane of which faire ſpech, the king obteyned his purpoſe, &

caried the childe with hym into Fraunce, not forgettyng the vnkinde dealyng of the Normans.

When Arnolde Erle of Flaunders vnderſtoode that the king of Fraunce, the guiding of the yong child was cōmitted, fearyng that he with power of the Normans, would run vpon hym in reuengyng of the childes fathers death ſent vnto the king tenne pounde weight of Golde, whereof euery pound conteineth.xii.vnces, and euery vnce in value of fine golde, xl.s. ſo ẏ after this rate his preſente ſhould bee in value to the ſomme of.CC.xl.pounde. Albeit maſter Gagwin ſaith, he ſent vnto hym but.xl.marke, beſechyng hym to be his good and gracious lorde, and not to giue to haſtie credence to his accuſers. For he in ſoche wiſe would declare hymſelf and deliuer vnto the Kyng, the murderers of Duke Willyam, by meane wherof he ſhould certainly knowe, that he was innocente of the ſaied Dukes death.

And ouer this he made a friēd aboute the Kyng, whiche ſpake good wordes for hym, and put in the kynges minde the greate hurtes and iniuries, that he and his progenitours had ſuſteined of the Danes or Normans, by meane wherof this murder was forgotten, and more and more the Kyng maligned againſt the Normans, and to the childe he bare not ſo good mynd, as ſum men thought that he would doe.

Upon a daie, when the Kyng was retourned from his diſporte of huntyng, a light complainte was brought to hym of the childe Richard, of an offēce that he had committed. For the whiche he rebuked hym, otherwiſe then was ſittyng to his honour, and called hym opprobriouſly, and threatened him greuouſly, and after that cauſed hym to be kept more ſtraitly, then he before had vſed to be.

To this child Richard, was aſſigned a maſter or teacher, named Oſmunde, whiche Oſmunde had a familier named Iuon. Theſe twoo apperceiuyng the Kynges indignaciō, that he bare toward the childe, ſtudied for his enlargyng, and laſtly counſailed hym, that he ſhould fain himſelf ſicke. The whiche was dooen in ſoche wiſe, that all ſoche as awaited vpon hym, ſuppoſed hym to be verie ſicke, by reaſon whereof, his kepers toke the leſſe cure of hym.

Wherof Oſmund beyng ware, alſo beyng ſure of the kyng, made a greate truſſe of herbes or graſſe, wherein he wrapped the childe, and ſo conueighed him out of the citee of Laon, and there receiued him an horſe redy for the iourney and ſo ſped hym vnto Coſuy, and deliuered the child to the captain of that toune. And from thens he rode all night, till he came vnto Senlis, and there ſhewed all his doyng vnto the erle of that countrey named Bernard, which was nere kinneſman vnto the yong Duke.

¶The.clxxxviii.Chapiter.

Bernard hauyng knowledge of the eſcape of his kinſman Richard, ſent in all haſt vnto Hughe le graund erle of Paris, for to haue his aide and aſſiſtēce. The which without tariyng, aſſembled his knightes knyghtes, and conueyed the child from Couſie to Senlys or Saynlis to his neuew Bernard, where he was receyued with much ioye and honoure.

When Lewes was aſcertained of the ſcape of Rycharde, and how he was in the guydynge of Hugh the great or graund, anon he ſent vnto him, geuing him in cōmaundement that he ſhould reſtore the childe to him. The which excuſed him, and ſayd that the childe was in the kepinge of Earle Bernarde and not in his.

The king ſeynge how he was deluded, ſente for Arnolde or Arnulfe Earle of Flaunders, which at his commaundement counſayled the kinge to wynne Hugh le graund with riche beheſtes or giftes. After whoſe counſayle worchyng, kinge Lewes wylled the ſayd Hugh to meete with him at the croſſe of Compeyn, where the ſayd Hugh ſhortly after met with the king: to whome the king promiſed great parte of the Duchy of Normandy, with that yͭ he would refuſe the party of the Normans, and take his parte agaynſt them. By meane of which promiſes this Earle Hugh was ouercomen, and agreed with the kinge to warre vpon one parte of the countrey, whyle he warred vpon that other And forthwith receyued an army of the king, and ſped him to Baiō and made cruell warre vpon that cōtrey. And king Lewes entred vpon the prouince of Caux, and waſted and ſpoyled that coſte in all that he myght.

Whan Barnarde the Dane, and alſo Barnarde Earle of Senlys, conceyued the vntrouth of Hugh le graund, and alſo the great hooſtes that they were beſet with, by theyr counſayles and other, they ſent vnto the kinge certayne meſſengers, geuing them in cōmaundement to ſay, that in vayne the kynge had entred that countrey with his armie, for the Citie of Roan and all the prouince was at his commaundement. Beſeching him not to waſte nor ſpoyle the countrey, but to ayde and helpe to defende it agaynſt theyr enemies.

Of this meſſage the king was ryghte fayne, and forthwith ſped him till he came to Roan, where he was according to his honoure receiued. For the which cauſe he ſent in all the haſte vnto Arnulfe Earle of Flaunders, willyng him to ſeaſe of hys warres in Bayon, vntyll he receyued further knowledge.

The king thus reſting in Roan, deuiſed his matters at his pleaſure, ſo that yͤ Normains obeyed them to all his requeſtes. And for the good abearing that Barnard the Dane was of agaynſt yͤ king, he graunted to him the guidinge of the yonge Duke. And when he ſhould departe, he ordeined as his deputie, one named Raoulle or Rauf. The whiche after yͤ kinges departure, behaued him ſo cruellie to the Normans, that they were very yrke of him. And ouer thys, the foreſayde Barnarde fearynge the kinges retourne, and other more greuous punyſhement than they before had ſuſteyned, ſent his meſſengers vnto * Grolle, king of Argrote. Denmarke than beyng at Chierbourk, willinge him to aſſēble his people and to make of them two hooſtes, whereof to ſende that one by lande & that other by water, & ſo enter the countrey of Normandie in waſting and ſpoyling it, by reaſon whereof he might bringe the king to ſome communicacion Which all was done as the ſayde Barnarde had deuyſed.

When the king had witting of the Danes, ỷ they with ſo great a multitude were entred the prouynce of Normandy, he aſſembled his hooſte and ſped him thytherward, and in proceſſe of tyme cam vnto the Citie of Roane. Wher by his counſayle it was condeſcended, that a meeting and freendlie communicacion ſhould be had betweene the king & the ſayd Grolle at a place called in Frenche, Herlicum. Where at the day appoynted bothe Prynces met, wyth bothe hooſtes ſtanding or houering a litell diſtaunce of. And while ỷ two Princes were there in communicacion of the death and murder of Duke Wyllyā, a Dane marking Herloyne (for whoſe cauſes, as before is ſhewed Duke Wylliā was ſlayn) with a ſpeare wounded him ſo greuouſly that he died forthwͭ: which deed his brother called Lābert with other of the Frenchemen entendinge to reuenge, wyth their weapons fell vpon the Danes, whiche them receyued wyth great violence. So that of that affray enſued a ſkyrmyſh, and after the ſkyrmyſhe, a ſore batayle. For bothe hooſtes ioyned on bothe ſydes, and faught cruelly eyther wͭ other a longe whyle. But in the ende ỷ Frenchmen had the worſe, and were compelled to flee. And the king to ſaue hys lyfe fled alſo, whiche by reaſon of hys vntruſtie horſe, was taken, and kept ſecrete a certayne of time by his taker. But laſtly he was dyſcouered and brought vnto the Citie of Roan as a pryſoner.

Howe th
Frenche
kinge wa
taken.

The king thus beyng in holde vnder the kepinge of the Danes, Engeberge his wife makinge for him greate dole and ſorow, tooke her iourney to the king of Germanie, whoſe doughter ſhe was, beſeching him to prouide for the delyuerie of her lorde and huſbande. But of him had ſhe no ſuccour, but rather diſconforte, ſhewyng to her that ỷ trooble that her huſband ſuſteined he had well deſerued, for his vnſtedfaſtneſſe that he againſt William the Duke and Richarde his ſonne had vſed.

Howe the
Frenche
queene la
boured he
huſbande
deliuery.

Wherefore the queene beynge thus anſwered of her father, rode vnto Hugh le graunde, beſeching him of helpe in thys great neede. The whiche at the requeſt of the Queene ſent vnto Barnard Earle of Sēlys, requiring to moue ſome ways vnto the Danes for the enlarginge of the kyng. By whoſe laboure and meanes laſtly a counſayle was kepte at Saynt Clere: vpon the Ryuer of Epte. Where after many argumentes and reaſons made finallye it was agreed that the kinge ſhould be enlarged tyll an other daye of communicacion: laying for pledges his ſonne and heyre named Lothayre, the Byſhop of Senlys, and ỷ Byſhop of Beauuayre. Whiche doone the king was ſet at large, and forthwith rode vnto the Citie of Laon Where he abode the other day of communicacion, which after was holden at the foreſayde Ryuer of Ept. And concluded a peace, whiche laſted but a ſhort while after.

peace cō-
ded.

This peace thus confirmed, Grollo the kinge of Danes wyth great giftes was retourned from whence he was deſyred. And Rychard yͤ yong duke toke vpon him the rule of hys owne Signory, ⁊ grew and encreaſed forthwardlie Wherof Hugh the graund taking heede, and beholding hys wyſe demeanure and conuerſacion, made ſuche laboure and meanes vnto Barnarde Earle of Senlys that he maryed to hym hys doughter named Emmacet. Wherof beyng enfourmed the French king, caſte in his mynde this great aliaunce betwene the yonge duke and two great peres of his land, ⁊ thought that theſe three knit in amyte and aliaunce ſhould diſturbe him whẽ them liked. Wherfore he called to him Arnold Earle of Flaunders, by whoſe counſayle he ſente the ſayde Arnold vnto Ottho kinge of Germanye, requiringe him of ayde to warre vpon the Normaynes, and to breake this affinitie of this yonge Duke, and of Hugh le graunde, and of Barnard earle of Senlys: and for his labour he ſhould haue to him and to his heires the prouynce or lordeſhyp of Lorayne.

owe the
renche
ng ſou-
t an oc-
ſion to
ake new
arre.

Ottho with this couetous promeſſe deceyued, aſſembled hys knightes, and at yͤ day and place apoynted, met with the king, and with theyr people ſped theym to Roan, and layde ſyege vnto the Citie. And whyle yͤ kynges were occupied in waſtynge and brennynge the vyllages nere vnto the City, to put the Normanes in the more feare, Ottho ſente his neuew wyth a certayn of his people in ſecrete wiſe vnto the gates of the Citie. But when he was comẽ to to yͤ gate that opened towarde the riuer of Seyan, and thought there to win his enterpriſe, the citeſins iſſued out vpon him ſodeynlie, and gaue to him batayle, and ſlew him and manie of his company, and the remnaunt they chaſed from the walles of the Citie.

Howe the
neuew of
Ottho was
ſlayne.

When Ottho had wyttinge of the ouerthrow of his men ⁊ death of his neuew, whome he entierlie loued, he made inwarde heuineſſe ⁊ caſt in his mynde how he might reuenge the death of his neuew. But when he approched the Citie and behelde the ſtrength thereof, wyth alſo the fearceneſſe of the Normandes, he repented hym of enterpriſing of that iourney, and turned al his hatered vnto arnold earle of Flaunders, by whoſe ſtearinge and counſayle that vyage was fyrſt begon, in ſo muche that he ſought the meanes to bring the ſayde Arnolde into the handes of Normanes.

Whereof Arnolde beyng warned, truſſed his ſtuffe and harneis ſecretlie, ⁊ in the night ſtale away and ſo retourned into Flaunders with his retinew. The whiche thinge knowen to the two kinges in as ſecrete wyſe as they myght, departed alſo from the ſiege. But yet theyr enemyes beinge ware thereof, purſued theym and ſlewe many of theyr companie. And or yͤ yere that this was doone in, had runne his ful compas, Lewes the kinge died, and was buried in the temple of the Byſhop ſaynt Remigius within the Citie of Raynes, when he had reigned in great trouble. xxi. yeres, leauing for hys heyre a ſonne named Lothayre.

The death
of Lewes
the fyfte.

Englande

Anglia.

Edmund.

Li.6.ca.7.

¶ The.clxxxviii. Chapter.

Edmunde the brother of Ethelſtan and ſonne of Edwarde the elder, & of Ethelwida the thyrde wife of the ſayde Edward, began his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde nyne hundred and forty, & the.vii.yere of the fift Lewes thẽ kinge of Fraunce.

In the firſt yere of his reygne, the Danes of Northumberlande rebelled agaynſt him. And for to make theyr partie the ſtronger, they ſente for a Prince of Danes named Aulaffe, then beynge in Irelande. The whiche brought wyth him an other Prynce or ruler of Danes named Reygnalde with a great hoſte of Danes, and other ſtraunge nacions, and entred the foreſayde countrey, and warred vpon the next borders, in waſting and ſpoyling the inhabitauntes of the ſame.

Wherof when king Edmunde was warned, anone he aſſembled his people, and ſped him towarde the countrey: and laſtlie faught with the two ſayd Prynces of the danes, or at the leaſt chaſed them from Towne to Towne, tyll he forſed them with all their companie of ſtraungẽ nacions, to forſake vtterly that prouince, & bet down the countrey of Cumberland that had muche fauoured and ayded the ſayde enemies agaynſt hym, and tooke therein greate prayes, and deuyded them amonges hys knightes, And that doone, eyther for the good ſeruice that Malcoline king of Scotland had in this viage done vnto the kynge, or for the trouthe and allegiaunce that he in time folowing ſhould beare vnto him, or for bothe, the kinge gaue there to the ſayd Malcolyn the countrey of Cumberland, and ſeazed all the reſidue of the kyngdome or lordſhip of Northumberland, and ioyned it vnto his owne kingdome.

But yet the Danes returned agayne in the time of Edredus the nexte kynge as after ſhalbe ſhewed, ſo that as yet the fyne or ende of thys kyngdome is not accompted.

This kinge Edward had a noble woman to wife named Elgina, of whome he receyued two ſonnes named Edwine & Edgar.

And as teſtifieth Henry archedeacon of Huntingdon, thys Edwarde had ofte warre wyth the Danes, the whiche (as he affirmeth) held then manie good townes in myddle Englande, as Lincolne, Notingham, Derby, Stafforde, and Laycetour, the whiche by his knightly manhode he wan from them. And amended manie thinges within his realme yͭ had ben lõg time miſordered by meane of the Danes. Of the ende or fyne of thys Edmunde dyuers opinions there be. For Marianus the Scot ſayeth, that whyle this kyng Edmunde endeuoured hym ſelf to ſaue his ſewer from the daunger of his enemy that would haue ſlayne him at Pulker Church, the kyng in ryddyng of the fray was wounded to the death, and dyed ſhortlie after.

How the king was ſlayne.

But William de regibus, ſaieth that

he dout- nes of ath.

that the king being at feaſt at the foreſayd towne or place, vpon the daie of Saint Auguſtine, eſpied a felon ſittinge in the halle named Leof which he before time for hys felonie had exiled, and lepte ouer the table and plucked that theefe by the heare of the head to ẏ groūd In whiche doynge the ſayde felon with a knife wounded the king to the death, and alſo with the ſame knife wounded many other of the kinges ſeruauntes, and at length was all to hewen and died forthe with. If this be trew, it ſhould ſeeme that kinges at thoſe dayes vſed not ẏ honour that they now haue and exerciſe: But whyche of theſe two meanes was vſed in the kinges death, by agrement of all writers this king died, whan he had reygned. vi. yeres and more, & was buried at Glaſtenbury, the which before he had ſumptuouſlie repayred: and lefte after him two yonge ſonnes, as before is remembred, Edwyn and Edgar. But for they were to yong to rule the land therfore the rule therof was committed to Edredus theyr vncle & brother to theyr father.

¶ The. clxxxix. Chapter.

redus other dmūd

6. cap. 8

w the g was ync.

Edredus the brother of Edmunde, and ſonne of Edwarde the elder, and Ethelſwyda his thyrde wyfe began hys reygne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred and. lxvii. & the. xiii. yere of the. v. Lewes thā king of Fraunce. The whiche as before is touched, was admitted king by aucthorite of his barony: For ſo muche as the two forenamed children of Edmund, Edwin and Edgar, were thought to yōge and inſufficient to take vpō them ſo great a charge. The whiche Edrede was apointed king of Oddo Archbiſhop of Caunterbury in ẏ towne of Kingeſtone. And ſoone after he warred vpon the Danes, that then were reentred into Northumberland, or (after ſome wryters) there dwelling vnder tribute of the king, ſubdued before of Edmunde his brother, and bet them downe, and cauſed them to holde and obey vnto theyr former couenauntes. And the Scottes than beganne to varye, whiche he alſo brought vnto due obedience.

After a certayne terme, the Danes of Northūberland, which euer continued full of gyle, and doublenes, not beynge contente to holde the couenauntes before made and promyſed vnto Edredus the kinge, called vnto them theyr olde acceſſaiers and helpers, and bereued from the kinges ſubiectes the Citie of York and other ſtronge townes and caſtels, to the great hurt of the coūtrey, and vtter diſpleaſure of the kyng.

Wherfore he beyng there of aduertyſed, in goodlie and conuenyente haſte aſſembled hys people, and ſped hym thyther, & deſtroyed muche of the land. And in that furie brente the Abbey of Rypon, which the Danes kepte for a fortreſſe and ſtrengthe, and wanne from thē muche of the ſtrengthes that they tofore had wonne, and brought them agayne vnder hys ſubiection.

When thys kinge Edrede had thus ſped hys iourney, and was returnynge into Englande, nothinge ſuſpecting the ſayd Danes a companie of theym by the exitinge of Hircus a kinge or prince of the Danes, then folowed the kinges hooſte, and on thys halfe Yorke fell vppon the Kynges rereward: and deſtroyed and ſlew many a man. For the whiche doynge the kinge was ſore amoued, and turned his people agayn, entending to haue deſtroied the coũtrey vtterlie.

Wherof the Danes being ware ſo lowlie meeked them vnto him, and gaue vnto him ſuch giftes, yͭ the kynge refrayned hym of the great yre that he had purpoſed to them. But amonges other artycles that he bounde them vnto, one was that they ſhould banyſh and vtterly refuſe theyr foreſaide Duke or kinge called Hyrcus: Whiche thinge with dyuers and many other graunted, and fermelie bounde to kepe, as well by hoſtages taken as other ſuretye, the king returned into England, ioynyng this kingdome to his other. So that here is rekened the ende of this kyngdome, whiche ſhould endure as before is ſhewed in the hundred and .ix. Chapter of thys worke, by the terme of foure hundred and .ix. yeres.

In the ſame yere that the king had thus ſubdued the Danes, a ſtronge ſickenes toke him ſo, that he died and was buried in the cathedrall Churche of the Cyty of Wyncheſter, in the .xxviii. yeare of his age, and the tenthe yere of his reygne, as teſtifieth Guydo and other.

¶ The .cxc. Chapter.

Lothari LOtharius yͤ eldeſt ſonne of the fyfte Lewes, began hys reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacion .ix. hundred and .lv. & the .viii. yere of Edredus thē king of Englande. Thys Lothayre by meanes of Thebaud or Theobald Earle of Chartres, tooke partie agaynſt Richard duke of Normādie. And for to haue agayne him ſome groundly cauſe, he ſent vnto the Duke moniſhing him to haue in minde the fayth & allegyaunce that the Dukes of Normandie ought to beare vnto the kinges of Fraunce. And for mayntayninge of yͤ ſame, and for other matters that he had to ſpeake wyth him of he willed him to come to a place apoynted, where all ſuche matters might haue farther expedicion. All which commaundement or requeſt was graunted of the duke.

When the kinge had receaued this anſwer from the duke, wherof he demed before the contrarie, he ſent for Arnolde Earle of Flaūders, Godfrey Earle of Angewe, and Theobalde before named. By whoſe counſayles after manie argumentes made, yͭ king agreed to call the Duke vnto the ryuer of Iſayr, and there to betray him. At which day and place apoynted the duke with a conuenient companie came vnto the ſayde Ryuer ſide, there abydyng the commyng of Lothayre vpon the other ſyde: whiche laſtlie came thither with a great people. Whereof when the Duke was ware, he feared treaſon, for the which cauſe he ſent eſpies to know of the kinges intente. And they as wyſemen eſpied all the purpoſe of the hooſte, and ſhortelí returned, and ſhewed to the Duke that he was in great daunger. The whiche ſhortlie after appered: for the Frenchmen began to paſſe the Riuer in great number.

Then Duke Rychard conſideringe yͤ he was of ſo litle mighte to wythſtand the great power of the Frenche hooſte, ſent a parte of his men to defend the paſſage, and wyth the remnaunt returned into the Citie of Roañ. Wherof the kyng beyng ware that the Duke was him eſcaped, called agayne hys people, and with greate dyſpleaſure returned vnto Laon.

It was not long after that the kinge aſſembled a great hooſte of Burgonions and Frenchmē, and entred into Normandie, and beſyeged the Citie of Bayon: ⁊ laſtlie wanne it by the treaſon of one Gylberde a ſmyth belongyng vnto the Earle Theobald aboue named. When the kinge had thus wonne the Citie of Bayon, he betooke the keping therof vnto the ſayde Earle. The which puttyng therin a ſtrength of knightes, yode vnto a Caſtell called Harmanyle, and beſieged it with a certayne of knightes. In whiche ſeaſon the king for nedes of his Realme, returned into Fraunce.

When duke Richard was ware of the kinges departure, he wyth his people paſſed the water of Saiñ, and coſted the countrey; ⁊ fell ſodaynlie vpon Earle Theobalde lying at the foreſayd ſyege, and ſlew of his men. vi. hundred and .xl. parſons, and put the Erle in ſuch a fear that he ſcapped with great daunger: ⁊ fled with ſmall companie, till he came to his own Citie of Charters.

Then Duke Richarde conſidering the great malice of his ſonne and ſtrength of them, ſente vnto the kynge of Denmarke then named Erarde, requyringe him of ayde or helpe for to withſtand the malice of his enemies.

The whiche Erarde receyued gladlie that meſſage, and promyſed to them all theyr requeſt: and ſhortlie after ſent to the ſayd duke a greate armye of Danes, whiche ſped them by the ſea tyl they came to the place where the water of Sayñ falleth into the ſea. Wherof the Duke beyng aduertyſed, in ſhorte ſpace drew vnto them with his people, and ſo with them entred the countrey, of the Earle of Chartris, in waſtinge and deſtroying it without mercy, and after entred the land of Fraunce in waſtinge it, and ſlew the people without mercy and pitie.

For this miſery ⁊ tiranny thus exerciſed by the Danes, the kinge being therwith confuſed, ſente for the biſſhops of his lande, to haue theyr aduice. Amonges the which the biſſhop of Chartris being preſent, was by the hole counſayle admitted to go to yͤ duke, and know the cauſe whye that he beinge a chriſtian man, made ſuch deſtruccion of the chriſtien people, ⁊ occupied yͤ land of chriſtēmen with ſo manyfolde harmes and ſcathes, and to conclude yͤ trew or trewce for a certayne of tyme. The ſayde byſſhop accompliſhinge the kynges pleaſure, was anſwered of the duke, yͤ this vexacion that he put the lande of Fraunce to, was for the iniurie that the kinge had before time doone vnto him, and yet continued the ſame in holdinge from him his Citie of Bayon, the whiche he had geuen to his great enemie the Earle of Chartrys. So that inconcluſion a reſtraunt of warre was graunted, vpon condicion that by a day aſſygned, the king would apoynt a day of communicacion, and in the meane time reſtore vnto him his Citie of Bayon.

How duke Rycharde & the king were agreed.

When the kynge had receaued anſwer from the Duke he made ſuch meanes that the duke receaued his Citie of Bayon, with all diſpleaſure forgeuen agaynſte the forenamed Theobald. Which was done by mediacion of a relygyous munke, as affirmeth the Frenche booke. And after the day of meetinge was appoynted at a place called Gyndolfoſſ. Wher the duke made ordinaunce for receiuing of the kinge, and commaunded the Paynims and Danes to behaue them reuerentlie agaynſt yͤ kinge and his people, the whiche was obeyed in all due maner.

How the Duke receaued the kyng.

And the king there receyued wᵗ much honour, had vnto the Duke manie godlie wordes, requyringe him to forget all his former vnkindeneſſe, truſting to ſhew vnto him ſuch pleaſures in time to com that ſhould recompence al the former diſpleaſures and vnkindnes by him before committed. Wyth whiche fayre ſpeeche the Duke takinge it withoute diſſimulacion, was well ſatyſfyed and contente, ſo that after aſſuraunce of amytie and peace betweene them ſtablyſhed, eyther geuing vnto other greate and ryche gyftes, they departed as freendes. The whiche peace contynued durynge theyr lyues.

¶ The.cxci.Chapter.

Lothayre thus beyng in loue and amyte wyth the Normanes, caſt in hys mynde howe he might wyn from hys neuew Othon kinge of Germany, the prouynce of Auſtracy or Lorain, that in the time paſſed was belonging to his progenitours. And thys to bringe to effecte, he gathered in ryght ſecrete wyſe a choſen hooſt of Frenchmē, and with them paſſed the countrey in ſuch wyſe that he was entred the Citie of Aquiſgrani, or anie great fame or noiſe were thereof made. Wherewyth Ottho beynge diſmayde, fled for that ſeaſon, and ſuffered the ſayde Lothayre for that time to execute hys pleaſure: ſo that the ſayd Lothayre ſpoiled the kinges palayes and other places, to the greate enrichyng of hym and hys hooſte. And when he had taryed there a certayn of time, he returned without battayle wyth greate pompe into Fraunce.

It is ſhewed before in the begynninge of the Storie of Ethelſtane king of England, that Henrie Duke of Saxony, the whyche is mente for Germany, ſent vnto the ſayde Ethelſtane to haue hys ſiſter Alunda to marye vnto hys ſonne Ottho.

Ye ſhal vnderſtande this Henrie is of ſome wryters admytted for Emperour. But hys ſon Ottho forenamed, was Emperoure in deede, whoſe ſonne this Ottho was aboue named, and called the

ſecond

ſeconde of that name, and Emperoure after his father, and ſonne of the forenamed Alunda, ſyſtre to Ethelſtane.

Then this ſeconde Ottho Emperoure and kinge of Germanye, beynge thus as ye haue hard ſurpriſed of his neuew Lothaire king of weſt Fraunce, gathered a ſtrõg hoſte & entred ẏ realme of Fraunce and as witneſſeth Gererdus wryter of hiſtories, deſtroyed the countrie of Soyſons, and laſtely came to Paris, and brent the ſuburbes of that cytie, and had a great part of his wyll of the ſayd Lothayre. But the Frenche cronycle varieth from this ſayenge, and ſayth that Lothayre (by the helpe of the duke of Burgoyne, and Hughe Capet, Earle of Paris) after the ſayde Otthon had fyred the ſuburbes of the Cytie of Paris, yſſued oute of the towne & fought with the Emperoure, and cõpelled him to giue backe and flye. Whome the kinge purſued tyll he came to the Ryuer of Iſayr or Sue, where ether hoſt encoũtred with other, and fought cruelly. But at length the Emperour was forced to forſake the feld and muche of his people ſlayne & drowned within the ſayde Riuer. And ſo greate a nombre, as affyrmeth the Frenche ſtorye, that the courſe of the water was ſtopped, and ouerflowed the fyeldes neere vnto the ſayde ryuer.

But this victory notwithſtandynge as witneſſeth M. Gagwin the kynge contrary the mynde of the duke of Burgoyne, and alſo of Hughe Capet, releaſed vnto the Emperour, the tytle and ryght of Lorayne. The whiche was cauſe of coueytyng of the realme by the ſayde Hughe, and vſurpyng of the ſame, as affyrmeth the ſayde auctour. Whiche agrement betwene theſe two princes ſtablyſhed and ended, eyther retourned into their owne countrie. After the whiche ſeaſon no notable dede is put in memory of the ſayde Lothayre, ſo that he fynally ſykned and died, in the yere of our Lorde. ix. C. lxxxvi. when he had ruled his princypate vygurouſlye, by the full terme of. xxx. wynter, and was buryed in the Mynſter of S. Remigius, in the cytie of Reynes, leuynge after hym a ſonne named Lewes.

The death of lothayre

Anglia.

Englande

¶ The. cxcii. Chapter.

EDredus or Edwin the eldeſt ſonne of Edmunde brother of Ethelſtane, began his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lord. ix. C. lvi. and the ſecond of Lothayre then king of Fraunce. This Edwyn was crowned king at kingſton or kingſtowne beſyde London, of the archebyſſhop of Canterburye. The whiche ſelfe day of his profeſſyon or coronacion, broke ſodeinly from his lordes, & entred a ſecret chambre, and there occupyed hym ſelfe ſynfully with another mans wife. Whoſe huſbande as one authour teſtifyeth he ſlewe, for to haue the vnlawfull vſe of her beautye, not conſyderynge the alyaunce of affynite of kyndred betwene them, as affyrmeth the ſayd auctour. Guido wryter of ſtories, ſayeth that Edwyn cõtrary the lawes of the churche, helde a woman as his Concubyne

Edredꝰ or Edwyn. Li.6.cap.8.

The Coronacion of Edwyn.

Howe Edwyn was accuſed by Dunſtane.

byne. Wherefore Dunſtane accuſed him vnto Oddo archbyſhop of Canterbury, by whoſe power the king was cauſed to refuſe and forſake the company of that woman. For the whiche Edwin bare great malyce vnto Dunſtane, and at the length by his extorte power, banyſhed him his lande, and forced hym for a ſeaſon, to holde him in Flaunders. And for that malyce that he bare towarde hym, he did muche dyſpleaſure to all blacke munkes of Englande, in ſo muche that at Malmeſburye he put oute the monkes and ſet in ſeculer prieſtes in theyr ſtead.

Howe the ſubietes of of Edwyn rebelled, & depoſed hĩ, of all his kyngly honoure.

It is red of him, that he tooke ſuche precious iewelles as Ethelſtane had before receiued from Othon the Emperoure, and gyuen vnto Wyncheſter and Malmeſbury, and gaue them vnto aliauntes and ſtraungers. And thus was not onely vnkinde to the munkes but alſo he vſed ſuche tirauny, and other vnlefull meanes to his ſubiectes, that laſtly they rebelled againſt him, and ſpecially the inhabytauntes of the countrie of Mercia or myddle Englande, & alſo of Northumbres, and put him clerelye from all kyngely honoure and dignite, when he had reigned after moſt writers the full terme of .iiii. yeres, and was buried after, in the cathedrall churche of Wyncheſter leauynge none heyre of his bodye: wherfore the rule of the lande fyll vnto Edgar his yonger brother.

¶ The.cxciii. Chapter.

Edgar brother of Edwin.

Li.6.ca.9.

EDgar the ſeconde ſonne of Edmunde, and Brother of Edwin laſt king began his reygne ouer the realme of England, in the yere of our Lord nyne hundred and .lx. and the .v. yere of Lotharius then kynge of Fraunce. The whiche of dyuers writers is witneſſed to be of the age of .xv. yere when he was admytted for kynge tyll he had reigned the full terme of .xii. yeares. Whiche terme ended and expyred, he was enoynted & crowned king in the cytie of Bath vpon a whytſonday, fallyng then vpon the .xv. daye in Maye, of Dunſtane and Oſwolde byſhoppes, and that one of Caunterburye, and that other of Yorke.

In the beginning of his reigne he called home Dunſtane, that before was exiled of kinge Edwine.

Howe an
by whom
Englan
was ma
one mon
chy or kin
gedome.

Then he made Dunſtane that was Abbot of Glaſtenbury, Byſſhop of Worceter: and vnyed and knit into one the prouince and lordſhyps of Englande, and made of them one Monarchye and kyngedome.

In many places he put awaye clerkes and prieſtes that lyued vycioſlye, and ſette there for theim munkes. And as witneſſeth Guydo, Policronica, and other, he builded and repayred to the numbre of .xl. houſes of relygion, wherof Abyndon, Peterburghe, Thorney, Ramſeye, and Wilton were percelles of them,

And at Wyncheſtre in the new Abbaye, he put in Monkes: wher before daies were ſeculer prieſtes.

The cauſe whereof was, for ſo muche as the prieſtes fled or neglygently ſlowthed the deuyne ſeruice of God, and ſet vicers in their places whyle they lyued at pleaſure in other places, and ſpent the patrymony of that churche, after their ſenſuall wyll, Then kinge Edgar gaue to the vycars of the lande that before belonged to the prebendaries, truſtynge therby that they would do their duties. But it was not long to, or the ſayde vycars were as negligent as the other. Wherfore fynally, the kynge by auctorytie of John B. of Rome the .xiii. of that name, voyded clearely the prieſtes and ordeyned there Munkes, although ſome of his prelates were not therwith contented.

e iuſty- hat Ed kept.

This Edger kept ſuche iuſtyce and did ſo ſharpe execuciõ, that neuer before his daies was vſed leſſe felonye or robberies. And for he would haue the rauenous beaſtes deſtroyed throughe his lande, he cauſed Ludwallus prince or kyng of Wales, to yelde to him yerely by way of tribute iii. C. woulues. By meanes whereof within the ſpace of .iiii. yeres after, in England and Wales myght ſcantly be founden one woulfe alyue.

The de- tion of wolfes were Englan nd in les.

It is witneſſed of dyuers auctoures that Kynadus kynge of Scotland diſpiſed Edgar, for that that he was lytle of ſtature, wherof Edgar beynge warned, deſyred the ſayde Kinadus to dyner, and made to him good countenaunce. After whiche dyner ended, he toke the ſayd Kinadus by the arme, and ſo with him helde companye tyll they came into the fyeldes. Where beynge diſſeuered from both their ſeruauntes. Edger drewe from vnder his garment two Swordes, and deſyred Kinadus to take the choyſe of theim and ſayde to him: nowe thou haſt good leiſure to ſay thy ſtrength with myne, that before tyme thou haſte ſo muche deſpiſed. And let vs now proue which is more worthy to be ſubiect to other. It is not ſitting for a knight to make great boaſte at the table, and to do lytle in the fyelde.

we Ed. offered ght wt adus, of the ts han hand.

When the Scotyſhe king hard the kinge thus challenge him, he knewe well his wordes before ſpoken were dyſcloſed to the kynge, whereof he was not a lytell abaſhed. But for to appeace the kyng, he behaued hym ſo lowlye, & gaue to hym ſuche pleaſaunte wordes, that the kynge forgaue hym al the treſpaſſe.

The pollecye of Edgar.

This Edgar amonge other of his polytike dedes, vſed in the ſommer tyme to ſcoure the ſea with certaine ſhips of warre. And againſt the wynter he prouyded to lay the ſaid ſhips i ſure hauẽs: & had redy in his owne ſeruice & in his lordes houſes, a certayne nombre of ſouldiours that were alway redy whẽ the kynge had nede of them. And his ſhypmaiſters were in wages with him throughe the yeare that euer attented vpon the ſhippes, to ſe that nothinge fayled, that vnto them was neceſſarye. By meane wherof he kept his lande in great quyet fro outward enemyes. And in the winter he vſed to ryde ouer the lande, and to ſe howe his offycers entreated the people. And yf any were accuſed of extorcion or other crimes, and againſt them ſufficientely proued, he did vpon all ſuche ſharpe correction.

The progreſſe of Edgar.

And for ſo moch as in his daies great multytude of Danes dwelled in dyuers places of Englande whiche vſed many vices, and ſpecially great drinkynge, whereof enſued dronkennes and many other vices, to the euyll examples & hurt of his commons and ſubiectes: he

The pollecye of Edgar to auoide dronkennes.

therfore ordeined certayne cuppes with pyns or nayles ſet in theim, and ordeyned and made a lawe, that what perſon dranke paſt that marke at one draught, ſhould forfayte a certaine peny. Wherof the one halfe ſhold fal to the accuſer & that other halfe to the ruler of the borough or towne that the offence was done in.

Howe Edger ſhewed him ſelfe lord & king of all other that reygnid within Englande

It is tolde of this Edgar by dyuers authours, that he vpon a ſeaſon beynge at Cheſter, entred the ryuer of Dee, and there ſyttyng in a bote, toke the rule of the helme, and cauſed .viii. kynges, whiche of Guido ar called Reguli, whiche is to meane ſmall or lytell kynges or vnderkynges, the whiche he commaunded to rowe him vp & downe the ryuer vnto S. Johns churche and from thens to his own paleis in token that he was Lorde and kynge of ſo many prouinces.

This noble Edger had .ii. wyues. By the fyrſte that was called Egelfleda the whyte, he had a ſon that was named Edward, he was after kynge, and ſlayne by reaſon of his ſtepmother Alfrida, called in the engliſhe Cronycle Eſtrilde. and vpon his ſeconde wife Alfrida or Eſtrylde he gat a ſonne named Egelredus, or after the Englyſhe boke Eldred, whiche was kyng after Edwarde the martyr, as after ſhalbe ſhewed. And of S. Wilfrid, which of ſome wryters is accompted for a mencion, he had a doughter named Edyth. But this was of baſte and not wedlocke.

For as Guydo and Polycronicon teſtifyen, this virgin Wylfrid knowynge that the kynge caſte to her vnlawfull loue, put vpon her the habite of a Nunne, thinkynge therbye to withdrawe the kinges loue. But that notwithſtandynge ſhe was at length brought to the kynges bedde. For whiche dede he was greatly blamed of the byſhop Dunſtane, and dyd therefore .vii. yere penaunce, by the heeſt or byddynge of the ſayd Dunſtane. And the forenamed wylfrid after that chylde borne lyued ſo relygiouſly, that ſhe is now compted for a S. in heuen. Of her doughter Edyth it is redde, that at lawfull age ſhe was at Wylton ſhorne a Nunne. Many verſes ben reherſed of this holy virgyn Edyth, in the .ix. chapter of the .vii. booke of Polycronicon. The whiche I paſſe ouer for length of the matter.

¶ The .clciii. Chapter.

Howe E
ger was
ceaued o
his wife
the knigh
whiche
ſente to
her.
Li.6.ca.

Edgar thus rulynge the lande after the death of his fyrſt wife Egelfleda word was broughte to him of the beauty of Alfrida or Eſtrilde doughter of Orgarus erle of Deuenſhyre. Wherfore he ſent a knyght of his courte named Ethelwolde, to eſpye whether the mayde were of ſuch beautie as ſhe was reported of or not, chargyng him yf ſhe were ſo beuteous that then he ſhoulde aſke her to wyfe for the king. But this knight hauing ſight of this mayden, was ſo wounded with the darte of thys blinde God Cupide that he forgat his trouth and allegyaunce that he ſhould owe to his maiſter and ſoueraigne, and returned, ſhewing to the king that ſhe was nothyng of the beautie that ſhe was reported of, but of meane fayreneſſe as other wemen were. Wherefore he beſought the king conſidering ſhe was her fathers heyre and a good mariage,

Howe t
knighte
was i lo
with th
lady whi
thee kin
ſent hym
to.

owe the nyght de- yued the nge and as mary- o to the la ye.

mariage, that he wolde be ſo good lord to him, as to wryte to her father, that he myght haue her vnto wyfe. The whiche grace he obteined, and at length was maryed vnto her.

In proceſſe of tyme the fame of the beauty of this woman ſprang ſo wyde, that laſtly it came to the eares of Edger. wherewith the kynge in mynde beynge ſore dyſcontented with Ethilwold, which hym had diſceyued, yet kept good countenaunce, and made ſuch ſemblance, as though he had nothing forced the matter.

owe the ynge wol lodge. i. yghte in e knigh- s howſe,

e knyght treateth is wife to ake her lfe foule.

he wyſe- om of the oman.

And vpon a tyme as it were in game, warned this Ethelwolde, that then was an earle by reaſon of his wyfe or otherwyſe, that he woulde lodge one nyghte in his houſe, and appointed the day whē it ſhould be. With this monition the earle beynge nothinge contented, ran home nighe dead for fere, and prayed his wyfe of helpe, in that tyme of neade, and that ſhe would in all that ſhe might make her ſelfe as foule and as vnſemely as ſhe could, and ſhewed to her all the reſydue of the matter. Then the woman caſt in her mynde the great diſpleaſure that myght enſue to warde her againſte God, to make that foule, whiche he had made goodly and faire, and alſo to her lorde and huſbande agayn the kynge thinkynge, that he ſhoulde cauſe her thus to do, to the ende to mocke and deceyue him. Wherfore in conſyderacion of the premiſes, ſhe enourned her in mooſt coſtlye and ſhewinge aparayle. And ouer that yf dame nature had had any thyng forgotten or myſprinted in her, ſhe lefte not that by womans helpe myght be amended or reformed: and at the kynges commyng receyued him with all ioye & gladdes. By which meanes this yong amorous kinge was ſoone caught in the deuylles ſnare, ſo that he ſet reaſon aparte, & folowed his owne ſenſualytie. And for to brynge his purpoſe the better aboute, he kept forthe a countenaunce, as he had ben well contented with all thing and deſyred the earle that he wold with him ryde on huntynge in to the wood, of welwerley, that now is called hoorewoode, where he awaytynge his Seaſon and tyme, ſtroke the earle throwe the bodye with his ſhaft, ſo yͤ he dyed ſonne after. And then he maryed this Elfrida or Eſtrild ſhortly, and had by her Egelredꝰ, as before I haue ſhewed. For the whiche dede ſaith Ranulfe, this Elfrida buylded an houſe of Nunnes at warwel. But other authours ſay, it was for the ſlayeng of her Stepſonne named Edwarde.

Howe the kinge was rauyſhed with the ſight of the woman.

Howe the kynge kylled the knyght becauſe he wold mary his wyfe, as in dede he dyd.

Alſo the engliſhe Cronycle ſheweth that this Ethelwolde was ſlayne by another meane, and not by the kynge.

Li.6.ca.10

Aboute this tyme dyed Oddo, archebyſhop of Cantorbury, that was of the nacion of the Danes. Of him is tolde a longe proces in the tenth chapter of the vi. boke of Policronicon. And after him Briglinus, that then was Byſhop of wyncheſter, was made his ſucceſſoure. But for he was not ſuffycient for ſo great a charge he went againe to wincheſter.

And Dunſtane byſhop of London and of worceter, was ſacred Archebiſhop of Caunterbury, and wente to Rome, and receyued the

pall

Dunſtane, what dygnytyes he had.

pall of John the thirtene of that name. This Dunſtane was fyrſte Abbot of Glaſtenbury, and byſhop of London and Worceter, and laſtly Archebyſhop of Caunterbury. In his dayes the ordre of munkes was relygious and ful of vertues For it had relygious rulers, clere of ſcience and of clergy, ſo that thē men were lad as much with their dedes and good examples of vertuous liuing, as by theyr famous and vertuous preachinge.

The lyuinge of monkes in king Edgars tyme.

Then Edgare as before is ſaid was Crowned kynge at the cytie of Bath, of Dunſtane Archebyſhop of Caunterbury and Oſwold Archebyſhop of Yorke, when he had ruled his land .xii. yeres. The cauſe why it was ſo longe or this Edgar were enoynted, was (as teſtifyeth Guydo) for his vnlefull lechery, an ſpecially for the offence done with Wylfryde. For whiche dede he was of Dunſtane ioyned to ſeuen yeares penaunce.

Howe Edgar was crouned in the .xii. yeare of hys reygne.

The whiche penaunce durynge he was kept from the ſayd enoyntment as affyrmeth the ſayde Guido. But for what cauſe ſo euer it was by agrement of dyuers wryters, he was not crowned vntyll ſuche tyme as he had reygned .xii. yeares.

Li.6.ca.11.

It is tolde alſo of this Edgar, that he beynge vppon a ſeaſon at the towne of Andeuyr, he was enamored vpon a noble mans doughter whiche was of paſſynge beautye, and made ſuche meanes by force or otherwyſe that the parentes were agreed that the kynge ſhould haue his pleaſure. But the mother ſubtyll of wyt, bethought her of a wyle, and ſent a ſeruaunte of hers, whiche was bothe comely and fayre, to the kynges bed.

Howe the kinge was enamored, vpon a noble mānes doughter.

Howe th Mother o the mayd beguyled kinge.

In the mornyng when the day began to waxe cleare, the woman begā to ſtyrre, and wolde haue departed from the kinge. But the kinge refrained her and aſked the cauſe of her haſty departinge. For I muſte be at my worke with my felowes ſayd the waman, at myne houre to kepe my taſke. And when the kyng had queſtioned with her further, he learned that ſhe was a bonde woman, and aſked of the kynge freedome for that nyghtes ſeruyce. The kinge at this hadde good game, and cheryſhed that Damſell, ſo after that he made her Ladye of Lordes. For theſe inſolent and wanton dedes, it is ſayde that by the counſayl of Dunſtane he buylded and repayred ſo manye Abbayes and houſes of relygyon, as aboue is reherſed.

For wh cauſes th king buy ded ſo m ny abbay

Thus this noble Edgar in paſſynge his tyme in vertue meddled with vyce, laſtly had wrytynge of the rebellyon of the Brytayns or Walſhemen. wherfore he aſſembled his knightes, and entred the lande, and dyd them great harme and waſte. And amongeſt other prayes, he ſpoyled the countrie of Glamorgan, and alſo toke or ſpoyled the countre of Ono.

The death of kynge Edgar.

But the kynge dyed within .x. dayes after, when he had reygned after moſt wryters the full terme of ſyxtene yeres. And was buryed at Glaſtenburye, leauynge after hym two ſonnes, Eward the martyr, and Egelredus, by two ſondry wyues.

Henricus, the Hyſtoryographer made of hym, theſe verſes folowynge.

Ayder of the poore, and punyſſher of treſpas
The gyuer of worſhyp, kynge Edgar is now gone
To thy kingedome of heauen, whiche lyke to
prayſe was
As Salomon, that for wyſedome aboue all ſhone
A father of peace, a Lion to his fone,
Founder of temples, and of monkes ſtronge pa-
trone,
Oppreſſour of al wrong, and of iuſtice guerdone.

☞ The .cxcv. Chapter.

In the ſtorye of this noble prynce Edgare, I fynde wrytten a ſtorye, the whiche is alledged by the authoure, that it ſhuld be done by a kinge of Syrie named Cambyſes, in the tyme of the reigne of this Edgar. But in that ſayinge he varieth from other authores and writers very farre, as Vincentius hiſtorialis, Antoninus, Ranulphus and other. For all be it the ſayde acte was done by the ſayde Cambyſe, as the forenamed authour affyrmeth, yet it was by the ſayde Cambyſes executed, longe before the incarnation of Chriſte. For this Cambiſes was of the ſonne of Cirus king of Parſes & of Medes, which reigned ouer thoſe prouinces about ÿ yere of the worlde .iiii. M.lxx. before the coming of chriſt, folowing the accompt of this work .v.C.xx. yeres & .xxix. But it mighte be, that the white monke that was autor or writer of this acte to the ſtorye of Edgar, was moued for ÿ great iuſtice that he redde in the ſtory of this Edgar, thinking to enhaunce it by the reaſon hereof, where he ſayeth that in the time of this Cambyſes, a Judge was to him accuſed and conuicte vpon the ſame accuſation, that he had geuē a wrōg ſentēce by meane of takinge of mede. Wherfore this Cambiſes to the terrour and feare of other, commaunded ÿ ſayd iudge to be ſlaine quicke, and the ſkin to be ſpred ouer the place or ſtole of iudgement and that done, made the ſonne of the foreſayd iudge to ſit as iudge in the place where his father before ſat, with theſe verſes wrytten vpon the face of the ſayde place of Judgement as foloweth.

The ordeʒinge of a wycked iudge.

Sede ſedens iſta, iudex inflexibilis ſta,
A muneribus reuoces manus, pla aure preces:
Sit tibi lucerna, lex, lux, pelliſq; paterna:
Qua recedes natus, pro patre ſponte datus.

Whiche verſes maye be englyſhed in maner and fourme as foloweth.

Thou that ſytteſt in this iudiciall place,
Sit vpright, and holde thine handes from mede,
Thine ears from prayer, & fauour frō the chaſe.
Let law be thy guide, kepe iuſtice in thy rede:
Thy fathers ſkin, which doth thy chaier ſprede
Haue in thy mynde, fall not to like offence,
Leſt for thy faulte thou make like recompence.

As I haue before ſhewed, this acte was put in execution the eleuen hundred yeare and odde before the comminge of Chriſt. And ſince the ſayde comminge or incarnacion, haue expyred .xv. hundred yeares and more, whiche all maketh ouer two thouſande .vi. hundred yeares. In all which time I haue not read in anye cronicle of this lande nor other where, that any iudge hath ben put to like ſentence. Wherfore it is to preſuppoſe that in the lawes both ſpiritual & temporall, all iudges haue well borne theſe verſes in mynde, and exercyſed them in miniſtrynge of dewe iuſtice perfytelye as theyr cuſhons had be freſhly lyned with the foreſayde ſkynne, and empryn-

The minde of the auctoure concerninge Judges.

Dunſtane, what dygnytyes he had.

The lyuinge of monkes in king Edgars tyme.

pall of John the thirtene of that name. This Dunſtane was fyrſte Abbot of Glaſtenbury, and byſhop of London and Worceter, and laſtly Archebyſhop of Caunterbury. In his dayes the ordre of munkes was relygious and ful of vertues For it had relygious rulers, clere of ſcience and of clergy, ſo that thē men were lad as much with their dedes and good examples of vertuous liuing, as by theyr famous and vertuous preachinge.

Howe Edgar was crouned in the .xii. yeare of hys reygne.

Then Edgare as before is ſaid was Crowned kynge at the cytie of Bath, of Dunſtane Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury and Oſwold Archebyſchop of Yorke, when he had ruled his land .xii. yeres. The cauſe why it was ſo longe or this Edgar were enoynted, was (as teſtifyeth Guydo) for his vnlefull lechery, an ſpecially for the offence done with Wylfryde. For whiche dede he was of Dunſtane ioyned to ſeuen yeares penaunce.

The whiche penaunce durynge he was kept from the ſayd enoyntment as affyrmeth the ſayde Guido. But for what cauſe ſo euer it was by agrement of dyuers wryters, he was not crowned vntyll ſuche tyme as he had reygned .xii. yeares.

Li.6.ca.11.

Howe the kinge was enamored, vpon a noble mānes doughter.

It is tolde alſo of this Edgar, that he beynge vppon a ſeaſon at the towne of Andeuyr, he was enamored vpon a noble mans doughter whiche was of paſſynge beautye, and made ſuche meanes by force or otherwyſe that the parentes were agreed that the kynge ſhould haue his pleaſure. But the mother ſubtyll of wyt, bethought her of a wyle, and ſent a ſeruaunte of hers, whiche was bothe comely and fayre, to the kynges bed.

Howe the Mother of the mayde, beguyled kinge.

In the mornyng when the day began to waxe cleare, the woman begã to ſtyrre, and wolde haue departed from the kinge. But the kinge refrained her and aſked the cauſe of her haſty departinge. For I muſte be at my worke with my felowes ſayd the waman, at myne houre to kepe my taſke. And when the kyng had queſtioned with her further, he learned that ſhe was a bonde woman, and aſked of the kynge freedome for that nyghtes ſeruyce. The kinge at this hadde good game, and cheryſhed that Damſell, ſo after that he made her Ladye of Lordes. For theſe inſolent and wanton dedes, it is ſayde that by the counſayl of Dunſtane he buylded and repayred ſo manye Abbayes and houſes of relygyon, as aboue is reherſed.

For wha cauſes th king buylded ſo ma ny abbay

Thus this noble Edgar in paſſynge his tyme in vertue meddled with vyce, laſtly had wrytynge of the rebellyon of the Brytayns or Walſchemen. wherfore he aſſembled his knightes, and entred the lande, and dyd them great harme and waſte. And amongeſt other prayes, he ſpoyled the countrie of Glamorgan, and alſo toke or ſpoyled the countre of Ono.

The death of kynge Edgar.

But the kynge dyed within .x. dayes after, when he had reygned after moſt wryters the full terme of ſyxtene yeres. And was buryed at Glaſtenburye, leauynge after hym two ſonnes, Eward the martyr, and Egelredus, by two ſondry wyues.

Heinricus, the Hyſtoryographer made of hym, theſe verſes folowynge.

Ayder of the poore, and punyſſher of treſpas
The gyuer of worſhyp, kynge Edgar is nowe gone
To the kingedome of heauen, whiche lyke to prayſe was
As Salomon, that for wyſedome aboue all ſhone
A father of peace, a Lion to his fone,
Founder of temples, and of monkes ſtronge patrone.
Oppreſſour of al wrong, and of iuſtice guerdon.

The. cxcv. Chapter.

IN the ſtorye of this noble prynce Edgare, I fynde wrytten a ſtorye, the whiche is alledged by the authoure, that it ſhould be done by a kinge of Syrie named Cambyſes, in the tyme of the reigne of this Edgar. But in that ſayinge he varieth from other authores and writers very farre, as Vincentius hiſtorialis, Antoninus, Ranulphus and other. For all be it the ſayde acte was done by the ſayde Cambyſe, as the fore named authour affyrmeth, yet it was by the ſayde Cambyſes executed, longe before the incarnation of Chriſte. For this Cambiſes was of the ſonne of Cirus king of Parſes & of Medes, whiche reigned ouer thoſe prouinces about ẏ yere of the worlde iiii. M.lx. before the coming of chriſt, folowing the accompt of this work. xi. c. yeres & xxix. But it mighte be, that the white monke that was autor or writer of this acte to the ſtorye of Edgar, was moued for ẏ great iuſtice that he redde in the ſtory of this Edgar, thīking to enhaūce it by the reaſon hereof, where he ſayeth that in the time of this Cambyſes, a Judge was to him accuſed and conuicte vpon the ſame accuſation, that he had geuē a wrōg ſentence by meane of takinge of mede. Wherfore this Cambiſes to the terrour and feare of other, commaunded ẏ ſayd iudge to be ſlaine quycke, and the ſkin to be ſpred ouer the place or ſtole of iudgement and that done, made the ſonne of the foreſayd iudge to ſit as iudge in the place where his father before ſat, with theſe verſes wryten vpon the face of the ſayde place of Judgement as foloweth.

The ordeꝛinge of a wycked iudge.

Sedã ſedens iſta, iudex inflexibilis ſta,
A manibus reuoces munus; ab aure preces.
Sit tibi lucerna, lex, lux, pelliſq; paterna.
Quã recedes natus, pro patre ſponte datus.

Whiche verſes maye be englyſhed in maner and fourme as foloweth.

Thou that ſytteſt in this iudiciall place,
Sit vpright, and holde thine handes from mede,
Thine eares from prayer, & fauour frō the chaſe
Let law be thy guide, kepe iuſtice in thy rede:
Thy fathers ſkin, which doth thy chaier ſprede
Haue in thy mynde, fall not to like offence,
Leſt for thy faulte thou make like recompence.

As I haue before ſhewed, this acte was put in execution the eleuen hundred yeare and odde before the comminge of Chriſt. And ſynce the ſayde comminge or incarnacion, haue expyred xv. hundred yeares and more, whiche all maketh ouer two thouſande vi. hundred yeares. In all which time I haue not read in anye cronicle of this lande nor other where, that any iudge hath ben put to like ſentence. Wherfore it is to preſuppoſe that in the lawes both ſpiritual & temporall, all iudges haue well borne theſe verſes in mynde, and exercyſed them in miniſtrynge of dewe iuſtice perfytelye as theyr cuſhons had bē freſhly lyned with the foreſayde ſkynne, and emprinted

The mind of the auctoure concerninge Judges.

ted ſo narowly theſe verſes in the boke of theyr conſcience, that thei in all theyr iudgementes ſet aſide all parcialitie and fauoure, and holde theyr handes from al medes and rewardes, ſo that nowe it is thus with more, or elles thus it ſhoulde be.

¶ The. cxcvi. Chapter.

Edwarde the ſonne of Edgar. Li.6.ca.12

EDwarde the ſonne of Edgare, and of his fyrſte wyfe named Egelfleda, beganne his reygne ouer this realme of Englande, in the yeare of our lord ix. hundred. lxxvii. and the twelfe yeare of Lothayre than kynge of Fraunce.

Alpherus.

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that after the death of Edgare, ſtryfe aroſe among the Lordes, for admiſſion of theyr kynge. For Elfrida or Elſtryde with * Alphrede duke of Mercia, made dyuers frendes to haue her ſonne Egelredus promoted vnto that dignitie, a chylde of ſeuen yeares of age, that ſhe and he might haue the rule of the lãd. But Dunſtan with ayde of other Byſhoppes, and of the Earle of Eaſt England, or Eſſex, withſtode ſo that doynge, that he crowned this Edwarde kyng at the towne of Kyngeſtowne, to the greuouſe dyſpleaſure of his ſayde mother Elfryda and other of her affinitie.

The apearing of ſtella cometa.

In the tyme of this Edwarde appeared ſtella cometa, a blaſynge ſtarre, whereafter enſued manye inconueniences as wel to men as to beaſtes, as ſyckneſſe, hunger, moreyne, and other like miſeries. But none of this fyll in the dayes of this Edwarde, but after hys death. The forenamed Alpherus Duke of Mercia, whiche in all thinges fauoured much the dedes of the quene, put out the monkes at Wyncheſter, that kynge Edgar as before is ſhewed, had ther ſet in, and broughte in for them wanton clarkes, or (as Ranulphe ſayeth) clarkes with concubines. But Dunſtane and the Earle of Eſſex withſtayde that doyng, and helde agayne the Duke and ſuche as fauoured his partye. For the whiche aroſe great ſtryfe betwene the preiſtes and the Monkes of Englande. For the clearkes that were before tyme put oute by Edgar, ſayd that it were a wretched and curſed dede, that a newe commen company vnknowen, ſhould put out olde landyſhe men frome theyr place, nor it ſhoulde not be pleaſynge to God that had graunted the place to the olde wonner, nor no good man oughte to alowe ſuche doynge, for thenſample that therof might enſue. The monkes ſayde that Chryſt alowed nother the olde dweller, nor yet the perſon but who ſo woulde take the croſſe of penaunce vpon hym, and folow Chriſte in vertuouſe lyuynge, he ſhoulde be his diſciple. For thys was holden a generall counſayle of byſhoppes and all the clergy of the lande, at Wyncheſter.

A conten on betw preeſtes monkes.

A gener counſall Biſhop

But for all this the ſtryfe ceaſed not. In ſomuche that a newe aſſemble of the clergye and other was appoynted after at a place called the ſtrete of Calue, where the counſaile was kepte in an vpper lofte. In this counſayle Dunſtane was greuouſly deſpiſed and rebuked of ſome vnſkylfull men. But yet he kept his opinion grounded vpon iuſtice and vertue. And whyle they were ther in this greet diuiſion ⁊ argument, which waye

A new ſemble clergy.

ſhuld

ſhulde be admitted and alowed, ſodeinly the ioyſtes of the lofte fayled, and the people fell downe, ſo that manye were ſlayne and greuouſely hurte. But Dunſtane eſcaped, with fewe other that toke his partye vnhurt. This wonder with the other, cauſed ſcilence amonge them that entended to mayntayne this foreſayd quarel, ſo that Dunſtane had all his wyl.

Thus paſſynge the time of the reygne of Edwarde the kynge, he came vpon a ſeaſon from hũtinge in the foreſte or woode after ſome wryters, nere vnto the caſtell of Corfe, in the Weſt country. Wher he loſynge his companye and ſeruauntes, reſorted vnto the caſtell before ſayde, where at that tyme his mother with her ſonne Egelredus, kept her houſholde. When the Quene was warned of his cōmynge, anone ſhe called to a ſeruaunte of hers whiche ſhe muche truſted, and tolde to hym all hyr counſayle, ſhewynge hym further howe he ſhoulde behaue hym in accomplyſhynge of her wyll and mynde. And that done, ſhe wente towarde the kynge, and receaued hym with all outwarde gladnes, and deſyred him to tary with her that nyghte. But he in curtoyſe maner excuſed hym ſelfe, and for ſpede deſyred to drynke vpon hys horſe ſyttynge, the whiche was ſhortly brought.

owe his
epmo-
er trayte
uſelye wͭ
r ſeruāt
ew kyng
dwarde.

And while the cup was at hys mouth, the ſeruaunt before of the Quene enformed, ſtrake hym to yͤ hert with a ſworde or a long dagger ſharpe on both ſides. After which ſtroke by the king receiued he toke the horſe with the ſpores, & ran towarde yͤ place that he was comen fro, or elles ſuch way as he ſuppoſed to mete of his company. But he bled ſo ſore, that for faintneſſe he fel from his horſe his one fote beyng faſt in the ſtyrop: By reaſon wherof he was drawen of the horſe ouer wayes and feildes, tyll he came vnto a place named than Coryſgate, where he was founde deade. And for the maner of his death was vnknowen, and alſo he for kinge not knowen, he was buryed vnworthelye at the towne of Warham, and there reſted by the tearme of thre yeares after. In whiche tyme and ſeaſon god ſhewed for hym diuers myracles, as ſyght to the blynde, helth to the ſycke, and hearynge to the deafe, with diuers other which I ouer paſſe.

The diſſeblynge of biſi ſtepmother.

Whereof hearyng his ſtepmother, began to take repentaunce, and entended to viſit him by way of pilgrimage. But howe or for what cauſe ſhe entended inwardly, I can not ſaye, but the horſe or beaſt that ſhe rode vpon, myghte not nygh the place by a certayne ſpace, for beatynge or anye other thyng that to him might be done by man. But after this by her meanes he was tranſlated frome thence to Septon, that nowe is called Shafteſbury, and there buried with great honour. But ſince that tyme, part of his bodye was tranſlated vnto the abbay of Leof, beſide Herefoorde in the edge of Wales, and ſome parte thereof to Abyndon. And it is reported that at Shafteſbury remayne his lunges, in the place that is called Edwardſtowe.

For the murdre of this bleſſed mā it is ſayd as before is ſhewed

The cauſe whye, this eltrida ſtep mother to kynge Edwarde builded two abbayes.

in the ſtory of Edgar, that his ſtep mother founded two monaſtaries of women, the one at Ambriſbury and the other at Warwell. In the which place of Warwell, in her latter daies, ſhe refuſynge the pompe of the worlde, helde there a ſolytarye and ſtraite lyfe: and ended her lyfe with great penaunce and repentaunce, and was there buryed when ſhe dyed.

And thus as ye haue hard was this vertuous yonge kinge Edwarde murdred, when he had reigned after moſt wryters .iiii. yeres, leauynge none yſſue, whereof the rule of the lande fyll to Egelredus his brother.

¶ The .cxcvii. Chapter.

Egelredus

Li.6.ca.13.

EGelredus the ſonne of Edgar & Alfryda or Eſtrylde hys laſt wyfe, beganne his reygne ouer England, in the yere of oure Lord nyne hundred, and .lxxxi. and the .xxvi. yeare of Lothayr then kinge of Fraunce.

Thys is named of ſome wryters Etheldredus, and in the Englyſhe cronycle Eldrede. In whoſe begynnynge the grounde waxed barayne, and all myſeryes before boded by the apperinge of the blaſyng ſtarre, in ẏ dayes of Edward, nowe began to take place and encreaſe vpon the earth. This as the other of his progenitors, was Crowned kynge at kyngſtone, of the Archebyſhop Dunſtane, and of Oſwald archebyſhop of Yorke. To whome as it is red in the lyfe of S. Dunſtane amonge his propheſyes, that in the day of his coronacion, he ſayde vnto the kinge: for thou comeſt to this kingdome by the deathe of thy Brother, in whoſe death Englyſchmen conſpired with the wicked mother, they ſhall not be without blodſheddinge and ſworde, tyll there come people of vnknowen tonge, and bring them into thraldome. And this treſpaſſe ſhall not be clenſed without longe vengeaunce.

Note that in theſe daies kynges were for ẏ moſt parte crowned at kingeſtowne.

The Pr
pheſye of
Dunſtan

Of this Egelredus wryters agreen that he was goodly of ſhape and of vyſage, but that was myngled with Lecherye and crueltie. It is alſo redde that when Dunſtane ſhoulde chryſten hym, as he dyd hold hym ouer the fonte, he fyled therein.

Egelredu
was leche
rous.

Wherefore Dunſtane ſware by God and by his mother, this ſhall be vnkinde to god and his church. whiche fayled not in his forth goyng, for he was vngracious in his begynnynge, wretched in the middle of his lyfe, and hatefull to men in the ende therof.

The life
Egelredu

In the ſecond yere of his reygne, a clowde was ſene in England the which appered halfe lyke blod and the other halfe lyke fyre, and chaunged after into ſondry coloures, and diſapeared at the laſt. In the .iii. yeare of his reigne, the Danes arriued in ſondrye places of his lande, as in the iſle of Thanet beſyde Kent, in Cornewall, & Suſſex, and didde in thoſe coaſtes muche harme. And after ſome of them came to London, but there they were put of. Howbeit they deſtroyed a greate parte of Cheſterſhyre.

What tro
ble happe
ned the ſe
conde an
thyrd yea

And in the ende of the ſame yeare, a greate parte of the cytye of London, was waſted with fyre. But howe it beganne mine aucthoure myndeth not. But ye ſhall vnderſtande, that at this

A greate
fyre in Lon
don.

daye

this daye the cytie of London had moſt houſyng and buyldyng from Ludgate towarde Weſtmynſtre, and lytell or none where the chiefe or herte of the citie is nowe except in dyuers places was houſynge, but they ſtode without ordre. So that many townes and cyties, as Caunterbury, Yorke and other dyuers in England, paſſed London, in buyldynge, at thoſe dayes as I haue ſene or knowe by an olde boke ſometyme in the Guylde Halle of London named domes daye. But after the conqueſt it increaſed and ſhortly after paſſed and excelled al the other.

any tow
es and cy=
es in eng
ndc, dyd
cell Lon=
n in tho=
dayes.

Aboute the eyght yeare of this kynges reygne, the kynge maried erle Edgbertus daughter named Ethelgina or Elgina. Of the whiche in proceſſe of tyme he receyued a ſonne named Edmunde, whiche after was ſurnamed Ironſyde, & ii. other ſonnes named Edwyn & Ethelſtane, and a Daughter named Edgyna.

owe the
ng mari
Ethelgi
ȳ dough
of Erle
gbertꝰ.

In this paſtyme dyed Ethilwalde Biſhop of Wincheſter. He was borne in Wincheſter, and noriſhed vnder Dunſtan at Glaſtenburie, and there ſhorne mũke, and after was choſen Abbot of Abindon, in the time of ȳ reigne of king Edredus: And in the time of Edgar he was ſacrede Biſhop of Wincheſter, where he made an Abbey of Nunnes.

After which ſayd Ethilwalde, Alphegus Abbot then of Bathe, was ſacred Byſhop of Wincheſter the which was after archbiſhop of Caunterburie, and was cruellie ſlaine of the Danes, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Aboute the, ix. yere of Egelredus for ſtryfe that was betweene the Byſhop of Rocheſtre, and him, he with his knightes beſieged the ſayd cytie. Wherof Dunſtane ſent to the kynge admonyſhynge him that he ſhold refrayne him of that cruelty and ſuffre the byſhop and his cytie in peace.

Howe dunſtane wold haue had ȳ kyng to let the Biſhop of Rocheſter alone.

But this meſſage myldeđ nothinge the kynges caurage. Then this man ſent to hym an hundred pounde in golde, willynge hym to refrayne of that outrage, the whiche he dyd receyue, and brake the Syege.

About the eleuenth yere of his reygne dyed Archebyſhop Dunſtane. Of whom Ranulphe in the xiii. Chapter of his fyxte booke of Polycronycon, maketh reherſall, of dyuers of his vertues and myracles, the whiche I paſſe ouer, and the rather becauſe of his Legende or lyfe is manyfeſt. Syricus was archebyſhop after hym, and after hym Wulrycus, and after Wulrycus, Elphegus was archebyſhop of that ſee.

Howe the Danes agayne vexed england

It was not long after ȳ death of Dunſtane, but that the Danes perced England in many and ſondrye places of the lande, in ſuche wyſe that the kinge was to ſeeke, to whiche coaſt he ſhulde go fyrſte to withſtand his enemyes. And in concluſyon in auoydynge of more harme, he was compelled to appeaſe theim with great ſummes of money. But when that money was ſpente, they fell to newe robbinge of the people.

Then the kyng graunted more money. But for al that the Danes robbed an ſpoyled the countrye of Northumberlande, and beſyeged London at the laſt.

And for the augementacion of the kynges ſorowe, Elfrycus that then was mayſter or admyrall of the kinges nauy fled as a falſe traitour : And after that reconciled ⁊ fled yͤ ſecond tyme to the Danes. Wherfore the kynge in wrecke of the father, comaunded the eyen of his ſonne Algarus, to be plucked or done out of his heade.

How Egelredus poniſhed the offence of the Father, in the ſonne.

But while this perſecuciō thus contynued, by meanes of the Byſſhop of Wyncheſter Elphegus, a peace was concluded for a tyme betwene the kynge and the Danes. And the prince or chiefe Captaine of them named Aulaffe, was ſo exhorted by the ſayde byſſhop, that he became a Chriſten man, to whom the kinge was Godfather, ſo that after the ſayde Aulaff returned to his owne, without doinge of more harme, ſo that for a while the war of Danes ſeaſed.

Howe Aulaff the prince of the danes was chriſtened.

But that whyle reſted, the blodye flyxe with a burnynge Feuer, vexed the people through the land that muche folke dyed therof.

A gret plague of the blody flyxe

Contynuynge whiche myſery, the Danes againe aſſayled the lande, and dyd in dyuers places great harme, ſo that for lacke of a good head or gouernor, many thynges in the land periſhed. For the lordes were at ſuche dyſſencion that one with that other, that when they were aſſembled to ſpeake or treat of peace betwene that one Lorde and that other, and yf any good thynge were deuyſed for the hurte of their enemyes, anone yͤ Danes were warned thereof by ſome of the ſame counſayle. wherof there were ſuſpected Elfrycus and Edrycus.

The danes again aſſailed yͤ lande

And to this ſorowe, was ioyned hunger and penury amonges the commons that euerye one of theim was conſtrayned to plucke and ſtele from other: ſo that what by the pyllage of the Danes, and inward thieues and bribers, this lande was brought in great myſery and miſchefe.

Hung
and penu
among th
commons

¶ The.cxcviii. Chapter.

EGelredus thē wrapped in myſery, left not to gather of his Subiectes what he might, as well by vnlawefull meanes as other wyſe. For ſayth (Ranulphe myne authoure) he woulde for fayned or ſmall cauſes, dyſinheryte men of theyr poſſeſſyons, and after cauſe men to redeme their owne for gret ſommes of money.

And ouer that, he wallowed in Lechery, gyuinge him to all vycious and incontinent lyfe of his body.

The in
tinente b
uyng of E
gelredus.

By which vngracious meanes he brought this lande in ſuche ruine, that what he might not helpe by ſtrēgth, he warred with mony. So that frō the fyrſt enter of the Danes, (as witneſſeth * Policronica in the xviii. chapter of his. vi. booke and alſo Guydo with other aucthours) that from the fyrſt trybute of. x. M. pounde, he broughte it at the laſt in proceſſe of. v. or. vi. yeres to xl. thouſande pounde.

Li.6.ca.

The gre
tribut th
thys La
de was
brought

The whiche yearelye durynge to the commynge of S. Edwarde his lyfe and after, was leuyed of his ſubiectes: and named for the continuaunce therof Dane gelte, whiche is or was to meane money payed to the Danes, or ſhortelye Dane money.

Dane g
and how
came.

In

6.ca.14

In this time as it wer aboute the .xv. yere of hys reygne, died Oſwalde the archbyſhop of Caũterburie, and ſoone after died Ethelgina the Queene.

Thus continuing this land vnder the greuous tribute of the Danes, and alſo by ſuſtaynyng of manie vylaynes and iniuries by the Engliſh men of ẏ ſayd Danes as after ſomdeale ſhal apere, this Egelredus by counſayle of his familiers about the .xxi. yere of hys reygne maried Emma the daughter of Richard Duke of Normandie, before minded in the ſtorye of Lewes the fift and Lothayre his ſonne kinges of Fraunce. The whiche Richarde was the thyrde Duke of Normandy, and the fyrſt of that name, and alſo was ſurnamed Richarde without feare or the hardie as more of him ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtory of ẏ ſixt Lewes king of Fraunce.

.6.ca.15

w egel-
us ma-
d Em-
the
ughter
Normã-

By reaſon of marying of thys Emma, which in the French cronicle is named the floure of Normaundye, this Egelredus was greatlie inhaunſed in his owne mynde: By preſumpcion wherof, he ſent into all good burghes, cities, and townes of his lande, ſecret and ſtraight cõmicions, charginge the rules that vpon a certayne day, that is to ſaie vpon the day of Saynt Brice at an houre aſſigned in euery place of his land the Danes ſhould be ſodaynelie ſlayne. And ſo it was done.

6.ca.

And as the commen fame telleth this murder began at a lytle towne in Hertfordeſhire, within .xxiiii. miles of London called Welawin or Wealwin. For the which deede it tooke firſt that name: as who wolde weene, that the weale of that countrey was there fyrſte wonne. But who that well conſidereth the ſequele of thys ſtorye: ſhall finde litle winning or weale enſuynge of this deede.

But or I procede further, here I will touche ſomwhat of ẏ pride and abuſion of the Danes, that they exerciſed in England, in ſome part therof, as I haue ſeene in an olde cronicle, wherof the authoure is vnknowen. There it is ſhewed that the Danes by ſtrengthe cauſed huſband men to eare and ſow the lande, and do all other vile laboure that belonged to huſbãdrie and the Dane helde his wyfe at his pleaſure, with doughter and ſeruaunt. And when the huſband man came home, he ſhould ſcantlie haue of his owne as ſeruauntes had: ſo that the Dane had all hys commaundement, and eate and dranke his fylle of the beſt, when the owner had ſcantlie his fyll of the worſt. And ouer that the commen people were ſo of theym oppreſſed, that for feare and dreade, they called thẽ in euery ſuch houſe as they had rule of, lorde Dane.

The wickednes of the Danes

But in proceſſe of time, after the Danes were voided the land, this worde Lorde Dane, was in dyriſion and diſpite of the Danes, turned by Engliſhemen into a name of opprobry called Lurdayn, whiche [illegible] our dayes is not forgotten. But when one Engliſhman wyl rebuke another, he wyll for the more parte call him Lurdayn.

Then to returne to oure fyrſte matter: Truth it is whẽ the Danes were thus murdered through England, tidinges therof ſprange into Denmarke. Whiche kindled them thē ſuch a furie, yͤ the king therof named Swanus, aſſembled ſhortly a great hooſte and nauy of Danes: and in ſhort proceſſe after landed in Cornewall. And by treaſon of a Norman named Hugh, which by fauour of the Queene Emma was made Earle of Denſhire, the ſayde Swanus tooke Exetoure, and after bet downe the walles.

The landing of the kinge of Denmark in Cornewale.

Then he entred farther into the lande. In which ſeaſon the kynge ſent vnto Edricus, charging hym to aſſemble the weſt Saxons, and to withſtand the further entry of the Danes. The which according to his commiſſion aſſembled the weſt Saxons, and made good coūtenauuce to withſtande the ſayde enemies: But when the hooſtes ſhoulde ioyne, were it for feare or for treaſon, he fayned hym ſicke and fled from his people. The whiche for lacke of an hed were fayne to geue backe, to theyr hurte, and to theyr enemies greate aduauntage and comforte.

Wherefore the Danes reſorted them to Wylton and Shyrborn, and anon ſpoyled bothe theſe townes, and there refreſhed thē. But for Swanus had wyttinge that the kinge was comynge towarde hym with the power of his lande, he therfore departed thence & returned with great pillage to hys ſhips, and ſayled aboute the land and laſtlie landed in Norfolke. Where he waſting and ſpoyling yͤ the countrey, came in proceſſe vnto the Citie of Norwych, and robbed and ſpoyled it, and after rode to Thetforde, and likewiſe to that towne, and fyred it, and deſtroyed the countrey nere there aboute.

Howe the Danes robbed & ſpoyled the Realme.

But ſoone after a noble man of that countrey called Duke Vlkatell met with the hooſt of Danes, and gaue vnto them an hard and ſharpe batayle, and ſlew many of the enemies and put them backe. For this, and for hunger that then aſſayled this lande, Swanus returned oft vnto his ſhips, and departed agayne into Denmarke, and taried there all the winter folowing. In which ſeaſon he made great prouiſion to reenter the lād of England.

¶ The .xxix. Chapter.

Li.6.ca.

ABoute the .xxv. yeare of the reygne of Egelredus, the forenamed Swanus wyth a ſtrōg armie, landed at Sandwych, and ſpoyled all the countrey neare vnto the ſea ſide, & reſted hym there tyl he heard of an armie cōmynge agaynſt hym. And when he was ware therof, he returned to hys ſhippes agayne: and hearinge the king was farre weſtward, he landed in Suſſex, and ſpoyled it wonder ſore. And when he there was warned of the comming of bataile of Engliſhmen, anon he toke ſhipping agayne. So that when the Engliſh men wende to haue met with them in one coaſt, than wold they ſodenly lande in another.

And when that the kinge prouided to meete with theym vpon the ſea, other they wolde fayne to flee, or els they would with gyftes blinde the admyrall of the kinges nauie.

By whiche ſubtile & crafty meanes, they weried & tyred the hoſte of Engliſhmen: And where euer they went, they ſlew, brent, & robbed without compaſſion and pity. The king thē being at Shrewesburie

burie, and hearinge of the greate ſleight and crueltie of the Danes called his counſayle to rede what were beſt to be done for the defecte of his enemies. Wher it was concluded, that ẏ kinge to haue peace with the Danes ſhould pay vnto them.xxx. thouſande pounde. But while this was in doing, ẏ Danes deſtroied a great parte of Baroke or Barkſhyre.

conclu-
n made
at the
ng ſhold
y to the
anes.xxx
ouſande
unde to
ue peace

Whē this peace was thus made Swanꝰ ẇ his cōpanie returned into Denmarke. And that yere folowinge, the kinge made Edrycus forenamed, duke of Mercia. This Edricus was of low birthe, ritch, of tongue falſe, and ſubtill of wit, ſoft & eloquēt of ſpeeche: vntruſty & falſe of thought & promiſe, as of him ſomedeale before is ſhewed, and after more ſhall appeare.

.6.ca.

In the.xxvii.yere of Egelredus a prince of Danes named Turkillus landed in Kent: The which ſo greuouſlie warred in that countrey, that the Kentiſhemen were fayne to make theyr peace, and ſo departed.

And yet the perſecucion of Danes ſeaſed not: For in one Countrey of Englād or other, they euer in whiles robbed and pilled the Engliſhmen, ſo that al ẏ countrey a longe the coaſt, from the North parte of England vnto the yſle of wyght, was by them deſtroyed or hugelie ſet a backe. And when the king entended to make prouiſyon for to withſtand them euer Edricus woulde counſayle him to the contrarie: ſhewinge him that he ſhould ſpende his treaſure & trauaile his people in vain. By mean wherof the Danes entred.l.miles within the land, and brent & robbed by diuers times manie vylages and townes. So that they increaſed and waxed paſſinge ritche and the Engliſhmen nedie, bare and poore. Thus continuing this miſerie, Swanus or after the Engliſh Swayne, then beynge in Denmarke, and hearinge of the encreaſe of his people within Englande, repented him of his former couenaunt, and thought that the hole dominion of England ſhould belong to him of right. For the which he prepared his armie and nauie in moſt defenſable wyſe, and ſped him into England, and to the Ryuer of Humber, and landed in Northumberland. Where the erle or ruler of that countrey wythall the rulers of ẏ ſame, ſware feaute vnto the ſayd Swanus, and promiſed to kepe that countrey vnto his vſe. And when he had done his wil in that coaſte, he entred again the water, & by the riuer of Trent he paſſed to Gayniſburghe, and ſo by North watlingſtreete, and ſubdued the inhabitauntes of that countrey, and forced them to geue vnto him pledges: Which pledges with alſo his nauie, he be tooke vnto Canutus his ſonne, whyle he went further into the lande. And that done, he wyth hys people kept on his iourney tyl he cam into Mercia, killing and ſleaynge the men of that prouince, and reſerued the women to vncleane lyuinge, as well the religious as other: and tooke by ſtrength Wincheſter and Oxenford, and dyd in them what he liked.

Li.6.ca.16

The arriual of ſwanus kynge of Denmarke

And after he had thus paſſed the lande, he drew the next waye towarde London. But in paſſyng the ryuer of Thames he loſt ſome parte of his people, other for lacke of a bridge, or for ieopardyng their paſſage vnaduiſedly. And ſo in proceſſe he cam vnto London, where at yͤ time kinge Egelredus was. Wherefore Swanus left the citie and drew into Kent, & ſo towarde Caunterburie without let, welding the country at hys will, and laſtlie beſieged yͤ citie. The which manfully defended their enemies by the ſpace of .xx. dayes.

The Citie of Caũterbury withſtode the tyrannye of the Danes for .xx. dayes.

Whiche ſiege began vpon the day of ſaynt Mathew in the moneth of September, and endured as is aboue ſayde: and then taken by the treaſon of a deacon named Almarycus, yͤ whiche before time Elphegus than archbiſhop of that ſee, had preſerued from death.

A falſe deacon.

Then the Danes fyred the citie when they before had ſpoyled it, and tooke the archbiſhop and put him in ſtrayght priſon, and the Monkes of ſaynt Auguſtines abbay they tithed: that is to meane, they ſlew .ix. bi cruel torment, and the tenthe they kepte a lyue: the whiche after was ſolde and ſet to all ſeruile laboure. And as wytneſſeth Antoninus or Vincente hyſtoryall, they ſlew and brought in ſeruage ouer the ſume of .ix. hũdred parſons of religion, they ſlew of men, women, and children, beyonde the number of .viii. thouſande, with muche crueltie as it is ſhewed, in the .vii. Chapter of the .xvi. tytle of the worke of the ſayde Antoninus.

The tythyng of yͤ Monkes of Caunterbury.

The nomber that yͤ Danes deſtroyed.

And finallie for this biſhop Elphegus wolde not condeſcende to geue vnto them (as ſaith Policronica) thre thouſand pounde, after they had kept him in harde priſon by the ſpace of ſeuen monethes, vpon an Eaſter euen, they after manie vilanies vnto hym done, at Grenewiche within thre myles of London, they ſtoned him to death Where he laye in the fielde vnburied a certayne of time, and after caried to London, and buried reuerently in the Church of Saynt Paule. But afterwarde in yͤ time of Canutus, he was taken vp agayne, and caried to hys owne Churche. Of this Elphegus Antoninus and alſo Polycronicon ſhewen many vertues and miracles, the whiche I paſſe ouer for lengthyng of time.

The cruelnes of the Danes agaynſt Elphegus biſ ſhop of C terbury.

¶ The .cc. Chapter.

IN thys paſtime, kinge Egelredus fearynge the ende of this perſecucion, ſente Emma yͤ queene with her two ſonnes Alphrede and Edwarde, vnto Richarde the ſeconde of that name, then fourth Duke of Normandie, which was brother vnto the ſaid Emma, with whome alſo he ſent the byſhop of London.

Aboute the .xxxiiii. yere of the reygne of Egelredus, the Danes when they had wõne a great part of the countrey of weſtſaxon, returned agayne towarde London: Wherof hearing the Londoners, ſent vnto theym certayne gyftes and pledges.

The poll cie of Lon doners towardes yͤ Danes.

In all this ſeaſon mine authour maketh no mynde, that euer the kinge gaue vnto the Danes anie notable battayle, but kepte hym in holdes or places, for hys owne ſauegarde, and lytell frute or profite to his land. At the laſt he was chaſed vnto yͤ yſle of wight, where with a ſecrete companie, he helde a great parte of the wynter: and finallie

The fly ing of E gelredus leauinge his lande.

finallie without catal or comforte: ſailed ouer to his wife into Normandie, and there helde him a certayne of time.

he pryde
Swanꝰ.

When Swanus was aſcertained of the departing of Egelredꝰ out of the lande, he was enflamed with exceding pride: ſo that he arered exceding impoſicions of the people, and greeued them wonderfullie. And amonges other of his tirãnies he aſked a great ſumme of money of Sayne Edmundes landes, Which the rulers denaied for ſo much as they claymed to be free of al kinges tribute. For this he entred the terrytory of ſaynte Edmunde, and waſted and ſpoiled the countrey, and ouer that deſpiſed that holie martyr, with manaſſynge of the place of his ſepulture. Wherfore, the men of that countrey fearinge this tiraunte, gaue them to faſting and prayer: ſo that ſhortlye after he was ſtycked in an euenynge amonges hys knyghtes, with the ſworde of S. Edmunde, in the towne of Shetforde as ſayeth Guydo: but after Policronicon and other, in the towne of Gayneſborough. Where he died wyth yellinge and cryinge the .iii. day after.

The de-
ction &
e of
anus.

In feare wherof, Canutus his ſonne after that he was kyng, cloſed in the land of that holy Martir with a deepe diche, and graunted to the inhabytauntes therof, greate freedome, and quit them of all knightlie taſke or tribute: And after builded a Church ouer the place of his Sepulture, and ordeyned there an houſe of Munkes, and endued them wyth fayre poſſeſſiõs. And after it was vſed that kinges of England whẽ they were crowned, ſente for an offeryng theyr crownes vnto S. Edmũdes ſhrine, and redemed thẽ afterwardes wͭ a condigne price.

utus
ſonne

of Swanꝰ
builded ỹ
Abbey of
Edmunds
bury.

When Egelredus had writing of the death Swanus, by procurement of his frendes, he made meanes to returne vnto his owne: By whoſe meanes he was ſente for, with condicion that he ſhould refourme his olde condicions. And for perfourmaunce of the ſame, he ſent his ſonne Edward into England before him: And in the lente folowing, the king came hym ſelf and with his people ſped hym towarde Lyndeſey. Where Canutus was at that time reſſeaunte, not prouyded of the kinges ſo haſtie commynge.

Li.6.ca.17

The retournynge
of Egelredus into
Englande

Wherfore he being not purueied to withſtande the kinge, fled into Sandewiche in Kent. And for he there proued ſuche perſons as before time his father and he had taken pledges of, and fand them not perſeueraunt in theyr promyſſes, he made to be cut of all the Noſes and handes of the ſayde Engliſhe people, and ſayled into Denmarck when he had done: and retourned the nexte yere wyth a great nauie and ſayled aboute the lande, and tooke prayes in the South countrey. Wherefore the kinges eldeſt ſonne named Edmunde made prouiſion with the ayde of Edricꝰ to go agaynſt him.

The tirannie of Canutus.

But when he ſhoulde haue met with Edricus at a place aſſigned and hys hooſte, he was of him diſceyued: wherfore he was compelled to geue place vnto his enemies And as it was after knowen, the ſayde Edricus had promyſed hys fauoure and ayde vnto the ſayde

Canutus. By reaſon wherof Canutus entred the countrey of weſt Saxon, and foꝛſed them to ſweare to hym feautie, and to geue vnto him pledges, and other countreis adioynyng did the ſame. In thys ſeaſon Egelredus beinge at London, was taken wyth a greuous ſickenes and died, and was there buryed in the Churche of Saynt Paule, where at thys daye in the Noꝛth yſle behinde the quere, appereth in the wall a tooken of his ſepulture: which reygned as ſayth Policronicon and other, he reygned in England, by terme of xxxvii. yeres full, leauing after him a ſonne named Edmunde Ironſide, ouer Alphrede, and Edward ſonnes of Emma.

The death of Egelredus.

Francia.

¶ The .cci. Chapter.

Lewes the fyfte.

LEwes the fyfte of that name & ſonne of Lothayre, begã hys reygne ouer Fraunce, in ẏ yere of oure Loꝛdes incarnacion. ix. hundꝛed and. lxxxvi and the .v. yere of Egelredus then king of england. Of the which eyther foꝛ his youth, oꝛ foꝛ the ſhoꝛtneſſe of his reygne lytell of his dedes is left in memoꝛie, except that the French booke witneſſeth that, foꝛ he had none yſſue, and Hughe Capet (befoꝛe in the ſtoꝛye of Lothayꝛe mynded) was his familier and chiefe counſayler, he ſhoulde therefoꝛe oꝛdeyne and admyt the ſayd Hugh foꝛ his heire. But moꝛe verely as befoꝛe is touched in the aboue named ſtoꝛy, and in the end therof, thys Hugh was ſtronge & mightye, and in the latter dayes of Lothayꝛe, exercyſed the rule of the land. Wherfoꝛe after the death of this Lewes, foꝛ ſomuch as he leſte no childe after hym, he then hauing the chief rule of Fraunce, by ſtrength and power made hym ſelf kyng.

¶ But foꝛ I promyſed in the ſtorie of Egelred, ſomwhat to ſhew of Rychard the fyrſt of that name and thyrd Duke of Noꝛmandy, I ſhall ſowden at length this ſtoꝛye with the ſtoꝛye of the ſaid Rychard. This Richard as affirme all wryters, was named Rychard wythout feare. And foꝛ this cauſe (as teſtifieth the Frenche bookes) he vſed much to bydd his bedes foꝛ all Chꝛiſten ſoules. And vpon a night when he had longe watched, he entred a Churche, where ſtoode a coꝛps vnburyed, and no man watchinge it. And whyle he ſayde hys oꝛiſons foꝛ that ſoule and other, he layed his gloues vpon a deſke by him. And when he had ended hys deuocions, he went out of the Church foꝛgettyng his gloues behinde. But ſhoꝛtlie after he remembꝛed him of them, and retourned towarde the Church foꝛ to fetche hys ſayd Gloues. When he came at the Churche doꝛe, he found the coꝛps there ſtandynge, with hys armes ſpꝛed abꝛode, and makyng great noyſe and crie: wherfoꝛe ẏ Duke made the ſygne of the croſſe in hys foꝛehead, and coniured the coꝛps that he ſhoulde reſte, but all was in vayne. Wherfoꝛe the duke dꝛew hys ſwoꝛd, and ſtroke at the coꝛps, and to hys thinking parted him in two peces. And that done entred the Church, fet hys gloues & ſo departed. And foꝛ this chaūce he ordeyned after throughe hys Realme that a corps ſhould be watched the fyrſt nyght or lenger as men had deuocyon. Which giſe was ſomtime vſed in England, & began of the Normans as men may coniecture, after they hadde fyrſt conquered this lande.

Polycronicon ſheweth in the. vii chapyter of his. vi. boke, that this Duke Richard dremed on a night that a Monke of the houſe of S. Audoenus in Roan, as he wente toward his lemman by night, fell beſyde a bridge and was drowned whoſe ſoule after was in ſtryfe betwene an angell and a feend: The which after a long ſtryfe, condeſcended to put the iudgement to Duke Rycharde. Then the Duke gaue ſentēce, that the ſoule ſhould be reſtored agayn to the body, and then the bodye to be ſet vpon the brydge that before he was fallen fro. And if he then went to his lemman, he ſhould be the feendes: and yf not, he ſhould then be ſaued.

And this ſentence was put in execucyon, the Monke fled vnto the church therby. Upon the morne when the duke awoke, and called this viſiō to his memory, to know the certaynty therof he wente to the ſayde churche, and fande the monke there his clothes yet wete and after wēt to the abbot of that place, & tolde to hym al this deed, aduertiſing him to take better ouerſight of his flocke. To theſe narracions the hearers may geue credence as them liketh. For they be nother in the pyſtle: nor yet in ẏ goſpel. Albeit Antoninus archbyſhop of Florence, when he reherſeth any like narracions, whiche he thinketh ſomwhat doubtful, he ioyneth theſe wordes and ſayeth, pium eſt credere. The thyrd narraciō is tolde of this Duke (which by al preſumpcyon was regeſtred of ſome women ſcribe.) This duke wyth Gunnore his wife, liued lōg while a diſhoneſt life, and contrarie to the lawes of the churche.

Beleue heſe tales s ye liſt.

Olde wyues tales.

Whereof hys people murmured ſore, ſo that at lengthe by the holſome doctrine of ſome of his clerkes or ſpirituall men, he maried her to his lawful wife. The fyrſte night after the weddinge, were it in game or otherwyſe, the ducheſſe turned her buttockes in the Dukes lap, as ſhe before time had neuer done, When the duke frained ẏ cauſe of her ſo doyng: for now (ſaid he) maye I doo what me liketh, wher before I might do but what you liked. Upon this Gunnore he gate, beſyde other childrē, Emma that was the wife of Egelredus, as before ye haue heard, and died when he had ruled Normandy by the terme of. lii. yeres.

The death of Lewes.

Then to returne to ẏ. vi. Lewes king of Fraunce, from whome we haue made a longe digreſſion: as witneſſeth maſter gagwin, he died in the yere of our lorde. ix. C. lxxxix. when he had reygned. iiii. yeres & was buried at Compayne.

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that thys Lewes was the laſte king of the bloude of Pepyn. And for I promyſed before to ſhew the diſcente of the ſayd Pepyn, to ẏ ende that ye may the better know this ſtori & alſo to know ẏ kinges of Fraūce from the kynges of Germanye, which both deſcended of this Pepin: hereafter I ſhal more clerely ſet it out in braūches. But fyrſt I will expreſſe the kinges of Fraūce as they reygned linallie, and ioyned to eyther of theym the terme that he reygned, that thereby it may appere how longe this bloud continued in ỷ houſe of Fraũce, or it were appeached by Hugh Capet, as after appereth.

¶ The yeres.

Pepyn.	xviii.
Charles.	xlvii.
Lewes the fyrſt	xxvi.
Charles the Ballyd.	xxxvii.
Lewes Balbus.	ii.
Lewes and Charles.	v.
Lewes the fourth	viii
Eudo.	ix.
Charles the ſymple.	xvii.
Radulphus.	xii.
Lewes the fift.	xxi
Lotharius.	xxx.
Lewes the ſyxte.	iiii.

Of the which kinges .ii. were not of that bloude, as Eudo and Radulphus, but admitted of the barony of Fraunce to rule the lãd, til two of that progeny, that is to meane Charles the ſymple, and Lewes the fift were comẽ to their lawfull age. So that from the fyrſt yere of Pepyn, whiche began his reygne in the yere of grace, ſeuen .C. and .l. to the fyrſte yere of Hugh Capet ỷ began his reygne in the yere of our lorde god .ix. hũdred and .lxxxix. expyred or paſſed .ii. hundred and .xxxix. yeres.

¶ The lyniall diſſent of the Emperours and kinges of Fraunce.

Pyppyn the father of Charles the great.

Charles the great Emperour.

Lewes the fyrſt Emperour.

The kynges of Germany.

Lothayre Emperour, and the ſonne of Lewes the firſt.

Lewes Emperour ỷ ſonne of Lothaire.

Lothayre ỷ ſecond ỷ ſonne of Lothayre.

Charles the .iii. and ſonne of Lothayre.

Lewes king of Germany & brother vnto the ſayd Lothayre.

Lewes ỷ ſone of Lewes, which was brother vnto Charles groſſus Emperour.

Lewes the ſonne of Lewes, whiche of ſome is compted Emperoure.

Arnulphus the ſone Lewes emperour.

Lewes the ſonne of Arnulph, laſte Emrour of Fraunce.

The kinges of Fraunce.

Charles the Ballyd the ſonne of Lewes the firſt of his ſecond wife, emperour.

Lewes Balbus, the ſonne of Charles the Ballyd.

Lewes & Charles ſones of lewes Balb9

Lewes the fourth, and ſonne of the foreſayde Charles.

Charles the ſymple, the ſonne of Lewes the fourthe.

Lewes the fyfte, and the ſonne of Charles the ſymple.

Lothayre ỷ ſonne of the foreſaid Lewes

Lewes the ſone of Lothayre and the laſt kinge of that ſtocke.

¶ The .ccii. Chapter.

Hugh the ſonne of Roberte.

Hugh the ſone of Robert the tyraunte, deſcended of Hugh le graund, began to take the rule, or vſurpe the crowne of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred & lxxxix. and the eyght yere of Egelredus then king of Englande.

Thys as witneſſeth the Frenche Chronicle, was Earle of Parys. And as ſaieth Antoninus, he maried one of the doughters of Edwarde the Elder. Thys alſo was named Capet, forſomuche as in his youthe, he vſed in game to lay aſyde his felowes hodȝ. In whoſe beginning, Charles that was the brother to Lothaire, & vncle vnto Lewes the ſixte, laſte kyng, hearing ringe of the death of his neuew Lewes withoute yſſue, as nexte heyre, with ayde of ſome lordes of Fraunce, and alſo of Loreine (the which then he was lord of) gathered an army: and entred Fraunce and then came to yͤ Citie of Laon Within which Citie, he with his wife and people, by the treaſon of the Biſhop of the ſame Citie, was taken and deliuered with his wife and chyldren into the handes of hys enemyes, the whyche ſente them vnto Orleaunce, there ſafeli to be kept.

he treaſõ
a biſhop.

Then thys Hughe was crowned in the Citie of Rayns, & welded the lande wyth more ſuretye. Howbeit the Earle of Flaunders named Arnulphus or Arnolde before ſpoken of, wold not be vnder hys obedience. Wherfore thys Hugh aſſembled hys knightes, & by hys ſtrengthe tooke from him the countrey of Artoys, with manie ſtronge holdes and Caſtels, and laſtlie forced the ſayd Arnold to flee into Normandy, to aſke aid of Rychard the fyrſt of yͤ name before ſpokẽ in yͤ ſtory of yͤ vi. Lewes. By whoſe menes after ſome writers Williã Longa Spata father to yͤ ſaid duke Richard was ſlain. But that notwythſtandinge, by freendſhyp of the ſayd Duke Rycharde, this Arnold was reconciled vnto the king, and contynued after as hys ſubiecte.

In the Citie of Raynes was Archebiſhop at thys daye a noble prelate named Arnolde, ſonne of baſte of Lothayre, and neuew to Charles then pryſoner as before is touched. The which for malyce that the king bare vnto hym, for cauſe of the forenamed Charles, called a counſayle of the Clergye of his land, and layed againſt him ſuche obiections, that he by theyr aſſent was put from that benefice and ſente him to Orleaunce there alſo to be kepte in pryſon. And ſette in hys place one Gylberte, or after the Frenche booke Gerbres, a conninge man in Philoſophie, whiche had before time bene tutoure or Mayſter vnto Robert ſonne of the ſayd Hugh. But after three yeres, the Byſhop of Rome, John the ſyxt of that name, ſente downe his commaundement vnto Guyan, archbyſhop of Senes, chargynge him that he ſhould remoue the ſayde Gerbers, & reſtore the ſayd Arnolde to his proper ſee Whiche was done ſhortly after, & the ſayd Gerbers was after thys preferred by one of the Othons Emperour vnto the church of Rauẽne and contynued there tyl the death of the. xvii. Johñ. After whoſe death he was electe byſhop of Rome, and was named the ſeconde Sylueſter, and lyued foure yeres.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, when thys Hugh had reygned ful viii. yeres and more, he died in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred. xciii. and was buried at Saynt Denis leauyng after him a ſonne named Roberte.

The death
of Hugh.

¶ The. cciii. Chapter.

Robert yͤ ſonne of Hugh Capet began his reygn in the yere of our Lorde ix. hundred and. xcviii. & the. xvii. yeare of Egelredus then kyng of Englande. Thys was connynge in many ſciences, and a man of good manner and ver-

Robert the
ſonne of
Hughe
Capet.

tue. He made diuers hymnes, ſequences, and reſpõdes, as O Iuda et Hieruſalem, O conſtãtia martirum, Adſit nobis ſancti ſpiritus gracia, or more congruẽtli, Sancti ſpiritus adſit nobis gratia, with diuers other.

In the beginning of his reign while Bowchard Erle of Meleon was at the kinges court, Galtyer or Walter a knight and ſeruaunt of the ſayd Bowchard, to whome the ſayd Bowcharde had delyuered his caſtell of Meleon to kepe in his abſence, for great giftes deliuered the ſaid Caſtel vnto Eudo Earle of Carnotens: Wherfore ẏ king at the requeſt of ẏ ſayd Bowchard, ſent ſtreight commaundement vnto the ſayde Eudo, charginge him in al goodlie wiſe to reſtore the ſayde Caſtell vnto Boucharde: The which commaundement he vtterlie refuſed to obey. For the whiche the king being ſo amoued, ſent for Rychard the ſeconde of that name, then fourthe Duke of Normandie, and wyth theyr bothe armies: beſieged the Caſtell vpon euery parte, and at length wanne it, and tooke ẏ ſayd Walter within the ſame: whome the kinge for his vntrouthe, commaunded ſone after to be hanged vpon a gybet, and the Caſtel to be reſtored vnto the forenamed bowcharde, and after returned euerie man to hys owne.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys Roberte, died Henrye then Duke of Burgoyne. The whych for lacke of iſſue of his bodye, bequethed his dukedome vnto kyng Roberte. But the Burgonyons withſtode that legacie, and drewe to them for an head and captayne Lawdrye Earle of Neuers, and wyth him helde by ſtrength, or for a ſtrength the Citie of Anxerre. Wherof hearing king Robert, ſẽt for the foreſayde Duke of Normãdie, and ſo ſped them toward Burgoyne, and beſyeged the foreſayde Citie. But at length the Citie was yolden, and Lawdry put at the kynges grace. And that done, the king with his hooſte beſieged an other ſtronge Citie called Aualon, and not without great daunger, wanne it alſo at length: & after receyued the countrey wᵗ dewe obeyſaunce, and ordered it at hys owne pleaſure, and ſo retourned into Fraunce.

Arnolde Earle of Sens vſed great tyrannie amonges the byſhops and Miniſters of the Churche. Wherfore Leophricus biſhop of that ſee, thorough the ayde and counſayle of Regnalde byſſhop of Parys, put out the ſayde Arnolde and delyuered the citie vnto king Robert. But the brother of the ſayd Arnolde wyth a certayne of his knyghtes, fled to the Caſtell and it helde with ſtrength. Wherfore the kinge layde ſyege to the ſayde Caſtell, and at length wan it, and tooke the brother of Arnolde named Fromonde and ſente him to Orleaunce there to be priſoned, where he died ſhortly after.

Thys Robert as ſayth the frẽch booke buylded fyrſt the Caſtell of Mountfort. He founded alſo dyuers Monaſteries and temples, & at Orleaunce the temple of ſainte Anyan, at Stãp a church of our lady, and dyuers other in diuers places of hys realme. And he endowed the church of S. Denis wᵗ many greate libertes, & had eſpecial deuocion to Saynte Ypolyte ouer all other ſayntes.

It is red of this kinge Roberte that vpon a ſeaſon when he had longe whyle lien at the ſeyge of a Caſtel neare vnto Orleaūce, and ſawe it was defuſe to wynne by ſtrength, he founde the meanes to take the ſame by policie.

And when he had reygned after moſte accorde of writers, and ruled hys lande nobly .xxx. yeres, he died, and was buried in the houſe of Saynt Denis, leauynge after him of hys firſt wyfe Conſtaunce a ſonne named Henrye, and another named Robert, and of hys ſeconde wife two ſōnes named Symond, & Almarich. But it ſhould ſeme by the ſequele of the nexte ſtorye, that Conſtaunce ſhoulde be his laſt wyfe, and the other ỷ fyrſt and deuorſed from him for ſome cauſe, ſo that her chyldren ſhoulde not be legittimat, albeit the authour of this maketh no mencion.

Anglia.

The.cciiii. Chapter.

dmunde

i.6.ca.17

Edmund Ironſide the ſonne of Egelredus, and alſo Canutus the ſonne of Swanus kinge of Denmarke, begā to rule the Engliſhe men, in the yere of our lorde a thouſande and xvi. and the .xxix. yere of Roberte then king of Fraunce. For the Lōdeners with the aſſiſtence of ſome of the Lordes of Englande, fauored Edmunde.

But the more party of the Lordes fauoured Canutus, and ſpeciallie, the ſpirituality, that before time had ſworne feauty to his father. And he thē being at Southhampton, ſwore to them to be vnto them a good and trew iuſtice, and to intreate the people ſoberly and right wyſely. Then Edmund beyng of the archbiſhop of Yorke crowned at London, and the ſolēnite finiſhed and ended, he ſpedde hym to Weſtſaxon, & ſubdued the countrey. In which tyme Canutus, which in the Engliſh ſtory is called Knought, drewe with his people to Lōdon, and would there haue entred: But that was forboden him of the Londeners. For the whiche he layd hys ordynaūce aboute the Citie entendinge to haue entred perforce. But it was not longe or he was fayn to breke his ſyege, and to departe thence.

How Edmund was crowned at London

How Canutus beſieged the Citie of London.

When Canutus was putte of from London, he drew weſtward and mette in proceſſe with Edmunde in Dorſet ſhyre beſide Gilyngham, where betwene theym was foughten a ſtrong and cruel battayle. But in the ende Canutus was ouercome; and compelled to forſake the field. After this they met agayn in Worceter ſhire where they fought a more ſtronger battayle. For thys was ſo ſtronglie bydden by, ỷ men coulde not iudge whyche parte had the better, or whyche the worſe. But as wytneſſeth Polycronica ether of the departed from other, ether for werynes of fyght, or for lacke of the day. But vpon the morne folowyng bothe hoſtes ioyned agayne, and fought egerlie. Continuynge whiche fyght Edrycus eſpyeng Edmunde to be at aduaūtage of wynnyng of the fielde, ſodaynly pight a dead mannes head vpon

The battayle betwene the king and Kanutus.

The police of a traitor

vpon a ſpeare head, and cried to the hoſte of Engliſhmen fleſle ye Engliſhmen, and ſaue your ſelfes: lo, here is the head of Edmunde your kyng. But Edmunde therof beynge warned, ſped hym towarde that parte of the fielde, and behaued hym ſo comfortably amonges hys men, that by hys knyghtlie courage his people recouered that they before had loſte, and continued the battayle tyll night in ſuch wiſe, that he had rather the better then the worſe, & cauſed Canutus to refuſe that coũtrey, and to retourne towarde London agayne.

The diſcõfyture of Canutus.

Then Edmunde beyng aduerſed that Canutus was retourned toward London, he folowed hym and paſſed the riuer of Thames, and deliuered the Citie from daũger of the Danes, and afterward encoũtered the Danes, at a place called Brentforde: where wyth them he had a cruel fight, and diſcomfited them at length.

The battayle at Brentford

In thys paſſetyme Emma the wife of Egelredus, fearinge the fortune of the war, ſente her two ſonnes Alphred and Edward, vnto her brother Richard, the ſecond of that name, and fourth duke of Normandy.

But Edrycus then, whiche as before is ſayde, was euer ſubtill of wytte, conſyderyng the good fortune of Edmunde and his knightlie courage, thought at lengthe he ſhould ouercome the Danes: Wherefore to ſaue hys lande, and alſo to brynge aboute hys malycious treaſon, he ſought yͤ wayes and meanes how he myght ſtande in hys grace and fauoure. And at lengthe obteyned hys entente, and ſwore to him to be hys trew ſubiecte.

When kynge Edmunde had a ſeaſon ſoiorned at London, he then made towarde the Danes that then were in Kente, and met with them at a place called Otforde or Otforde, and there dyſcomfyted them, and chaſed Canutus to the yſle of Shepey. And there Canutus toke ſhippinge, and ſayled aboute the lande, and entred laſtlie in the country of Mercia and ſpoyled a parte therof.

Then the two hoſtes met ſoone after at a place called Aſhedowne, where after a longe fyght Edrycus wyth his retinew fled to the comforte of the Danes. By meane wherof kynge Edmunde was put to the worſe: for manie noble men were ſlayn vpon hys party. Amonges the whyche the biſhop of Lincolne and the Abbot of Ramſey were two, that thither were come to treate a peace betweene bothe Prynces. But when thys was layde to the charge of Edricus, he by his vntrew meanes ſo excuſed hym, that no man mighte charge him with any defaute.

The tre ſon of E drycus.

Thus continuynge thys mortall war betwyxt theſe two marcial princes, to the great deſolació and mortaliti of people, one of the knyghtes of the party of Edmũd, gat hym to an hyghe place, where he might be ſomwhat heard of yͤ hoſte, & ſpake in this wiſe: Daylie we die: & no mã hath yͤ victory, for Edmũd may not be ouercome, for his great ſtrength, and Canutus may not be ouercome for fauoure of Fortune. What ſhal then be the fruit of this cõtinual ſtrife? None other but when the knightes bene all

The wordes of one of yͤ knightes of Edmunde.

al ſlain on either parties, then the dukes compelled by neede ſhall accorde, or elles they ſhall fyghte alone without knyghtes. Then ſeing this ſhalbe the ende, why doe they not one of theſe two? If they accorde, why is not this kyngdome ſufficiente for twayne that ſometyme ſuffiſed for ſeuen? If theyr couetyſe of Lordeſhyps be ſo greate that eyther hath indignation to take and haue part with other, or elles that one to be vnder that other, then let them fyghte alone, that wol be lordes alone lefte. If al men fyght all men be ſlayne, by meane wherof no men ſhalbe left to be vnder theyr lordſhyp, or leadynge of dukes, nor yet to defende the kynge agaynſte ſtraunge enemies or nations.

These wordes thus ſpoken, were right well allowed of bothe hooſtes. For as affyrmeth myne aucthoure, at this tyme a trewce was made betwene both princes for a certayne tyme. After whiche peace ended, were it by occaſion of theſe wordes or otherwiſe, the ſaid two dukes Edmunde and Canutus agreed to try theyr quarelles betwene them two onely.

conclusi-
made ỹ
.ii. prin-
s onelye
ould trie
eir qua-
lles.

And for this was aſſygned by their both agrements, a litle yſle called then Olney, nere vnto Gloceſter, or after ſome wryters named Oneledge: becleped with the water of Seuerne. In whiche place at the daye appoynted, the two champions met without cōpany or aſſiſtence within the ſayd iſle, the hooſtes of both parties ſtāding without the iſle, and there abiding the fortune of this batalle. There eyther proued other, fyrſte with ſharpe ſpeares, & after with kene and cutting ſwordes. What ſhall I of this make longer proceſſe when either had other well proued and aſſayed, by receauyng of hardes and ſore ſtrokes, by the fyrſt motion of Canutus (as moſt wryters teſtify) they laſtly accorded and kyſſed together as louers to the great comforte of both hooſtes.

'way
of one
knigh
of Ed
de.

These.ii.
prynces
ught to-
ther.

And ſhortly after by the aduyce of both theyr counſayls, condeſcended vpon particiō of the land, whiche immediatly was done to both theyr agremētes: and loued after as two brethren duryng their natural lyues. But the ſerpent of enuy and falſe conſpyracy, whiche euer burned in the hert of Edrycus was kyndled ſo ſore, that of pure force it muſte breake oute vpon a light flame, ſo what he might not accompliſh by his owne perſon, he fulfylled by his ſonne, as teſtyfye diuerſe authors. For as affirmeth Guido, this ſonne of Edrycus awaytyng his tyme, eſpied when the king was at the widdraughte to purge his belly, & with a ſpear ſtrake him into the foundamente and ſo into the body, wherof king Edmund died ſhortly after at Oxford. The king thus beyng ſlayne anone Edricus thinking thereby to be greatly exalted, ſped hym in all haſte to Canutus, and ſaluted hym as kyng, and ſhewed him of this treaſon onelye for his loue done.

The agrement of both prynces.

The traytrous dede of Edricus his ſonne which ſlew the kynge.

The death of Edmūd.

When Canutus had wel vnderſtanding of the confeſſion of Edricus, he lyke a diſcrete and ryghteous prince ſayde vnto him in this wiſe: For thou haſt (Edricus for ỹ loue thou beareſt vnto me) ſlayne thy naturall Lord, which I moſt loued

The iuſte rewarde of a traytour

loued, I ſhall exalte thyne head aboue all the lordes in Englande. And forthwith commaunded him to be taken, and his head to be ſtriken of, and pyghte vpon a ſpeare head, and after ſet vpon the higheſt gate of London. But Marianus the Scotte telleth, that Edmunde dyed at London by naturall ſyckenes, aboute the feaſte of S. Andrewe.

And the engliſhe cronicle affyrmeth the forenamed treaſon, but by another maner of doyng. But howe ſo euer this noble prince dyed, truth it is after agremente of mooſt wryters that he ended his lyfe when he had reigned one yere and more, as muche as frome the moneth of June vnto the ende of Nouember, and was buryed at Glaſtenburye, by his graundfather Edgare. Polycronica ſheweth in the .xviii. chapter of his ſixt boke, that Canutus after yͤ death of Edmunde, gaue vnto Edrycus the lordſhyppe of Mercia: and by his counſayle exyled the brother of Edmunde called the kynge of Chorles: and thorough his counſayle executed many cruell dedes. Of this Edmund remayned two ſonnes, that is to witte, Edmund and Edwarde.

The .ccv. Chapter.

Canutus.
Li.6.ca.18

Canutus, or Knought after the engliſh cronicle ſonne of Swatius, as before is touched, ⁊ yonger brother as apereth by the ſtory folowing, began his dominion alone ouer Englande in the yeare of our lorde. M.⁊.xix. and the .xxi. yeare of Roberte then kynge of Fraunce. The which anone after the death of Edmund, aſſembled a counſayle at London, where amonge other thinges in that counſayle debated, a queſtion was put whether in the compoſition made betwyne Edmunde and Canutus any ſpeciall remembraunce was made for the chyldren or brethren of Edmunde, for any particion of any parte of the lande.

Howe the Lordes greed to make Ca nut⁹ kyng

Whereunto it was aunſwered of the lordes naye. Affyrmyng farthermore with an oth for the kinges pleaſure, that they to the vttermoſte of theyr powers woulde put of that bloude of Edmund in all that they myght. By reaſon of whiche aunſwere and promyſe, they thoughte manye of them to haue ſtanden in the greate grace and fauoure of the kynge, but it turned all otherwiſe.

For many of them, or the more partye, ſuche as Canutus apperceaued and knewe, that they before tyme were ſworne to Edmũd and his heyres, and alſo were natyue engliſhemen, he myſtruſted and diſdayned euer after. In ſo muche that ſome he exyled, and ſome were ſlayne, and ſomme by Goddes punyſhment dyed ſodeinlye.

But amonge all, Edricus with his ſugred wordes continued in the kynges fauour, as ſayth Maryanus before mynded: By whoſe counſayle and other, he ſhortelye after outlawed the foreſayde brother of Edmunde ſurnamed king of Chorles, as before is touched. But he afterwarde was reconciled to the kynges fauoure, and laſtly ſlayne of his owne ſeruauntes.

he wyc-
d pur-
ſe of Ca
tus.

Canutus alſo by the ſayd counſayle, ſent the two ſonnes of Edmunde, named as before is ſayde Edmund and Edwarde, unto his brother Swanus then kynge of Denmarke, to be ſlayne, after the opinion of ſome wryters. But he abhorring that dede, ſent them to Salomon then king of Hungary as witneſſeth Guydo, and other. Where in proceſſe of tyme, Edmunde dyed, and his brother Edwarde in tracte of tyme, maryed Agatha the doughter of the. iiii. Henrye, then Emperoure of Almayne.

Of the whiche Edwarde and Agatha proceded Margaret that after was quene of Scotlande, ⁊ Chriſtian that was a menchon, and a ſonne named Edgar and ſurnamed Ethelyng.

This Edwarde of the Cronicles of Englande is named Edwarde the outlawe, for ſo muche as he neuer retourned into Englande, as ſayeth the foreſayde Englyſhe Cronicle, after his fyrſt exyle.

Then to retourne unto Canutus the whiche after ſome thinges ordered in his lande, deuided his ſayde lande in foure partes. That is to meane, the fyrſte principall whiche at thoſe dayes was Weſtſaxon, he helde under hys owne guydinge. Eaſt Englande, whiche conteined Norff. ⁊ Suff. he betoke to the rule of the earle Turkillus a Dane, of whom ſomwhat is in the. iii. chapter of the ſtory of Egelredus. Mercia he betoke to the ſubtyll earle Edrycus, And the. iiii. Northumberlãd, unto a Dane named Hyrcius. But like as the mã of Inde at no time chaungeth his colour, ſo this Edricus chaunged neuer his falſe maners. But notwithſtandinge the great benefites that he dayly receaued of his princes, ther as he to other had ben falſe and deceueable in dayes paſt, euen ſo now he demeaned him againſt Canutꝰ

we Ca-
us deui
yͤ land.

Wherfore he being accuſed and proued with defaute, was commaunded of the king to haue iudgemente. The whiche was done immediately, and his head for diuerſe cauſes ſmytten of, ⁊ it with the body for ſpite caſt into a foule and fylthye place. But Ranulphe ſayeth that he was ſlaine by the kinges agrement within his palays at London, and his bodye wt the hed thrown after into yͤ town diche. Thus with ſhame he ended that in falſhod and diſſimulation had continued muche of his lyfe.

The death of Edricꝰ a traytour.

About the. ix. yere of his reigne Canutus called a Parliament at Oxenforde, where amonge other thinges it was enacted, that Englyſhmen and Danes ſhould hold the lawes of Edgar lately kynge.

In this paſtyme died Swanus brother to Canutus kyng of Denmarke, withoute iſſue, wherfore that lande fyll to Canutus. For the whiche cauſe he with a ſtronge armye ſayled thyther to take the poſſeſſion, and to ſet the country in an order, or after ſome writers to apeace and withſtande the Wandales, that then had perced that lande, and done therein much harme.

The death of Swanꝰ brother to Canutus.

Wher Goodwin the Erle, whoſe daughter Edward yͤ confeſſor after maried, with a certaine nũber of Engliſhmen fyll upon the Wandales by nighte, and diſtreſſed thẽ in ſuche wyſe, that Canutus had of thē his pleaſure. For this dede the kynge had Erle Goodwin euer after in good fauoure, and loued Englyſhmen more ſpeciallye. And when he was retourned into Englande, he ſhortely after or before, maried Emma, the wife latelye of Egelredus. Of the whiche he receaued in proceſſe of tyme a ſonne, and named hym Hardicunitus, or after ſome Hardikinitus and after the Englyſh boke Hardyknought.

¶ The.cxcvi. Chapter.

IN the time alſo of this Canutus, aboute the xvi. yeare of his reign the Scottes rebelled agayne hym. Wherefore he with a great army entred Scotlande, and at length ouercame the kynge of that lande named Malcoline, and brought thē agayne to his ſubiection, as is recorded in the bokes of Marianus the Scot. By reaſon of which vyctorye, Canutus was then kynge of.iiii. kyngedomes, of Englande of Scotlande, of Denmarke, and Norwaye.

Canutus was kinge of.4. kingdomes.

Then as witneſſeth diuerſe authours, after he had betaken this lande of England to the guiding of Leofricus Egelnothus, and other, he then returned into Denmarke. And from thence he yode to Rome in the.xv. yere of his reigne, and redemed the ſcole of Saxons fre of al former tribute grau̅ted, as before in the ſtories of Iue and Offa, and other kynges of Saxons, is ſomedeale more touched. Whyche redemption of trybute, as ſayth Guydo, was called Rome Scot. But there ſemeth in that ſayinge ſome doubte, for ſo muche as at this daye in dyuers places of Englande, as in Northamtonſhyre and other, the Peter pence are yet gathered.

Li.6.ca.20

Canutus alſo after he hadde in Rome accomplyſhed his purpoſe, he in his returne toward Englād executed wonderfull deades of almes, in releuyng of the poore, and other ghoſtly workes, and payde greate good for raunſome of Chriſten priſoners, amonges other of his dedes.

It is witneſſed that he ſhoulde agre with the Byſhoppe of Rome that was called Benet the.viii. of that name, and paye to hym certayne ſummes of mony, that hys archebyſhoppes after that daye myghte haue the palle withoute payinge of money therefore.

Whyle Canutus was occupyed in his iourneye, a complaynte was broughte vnto hym of ſome yll demeanoures and rule, that were occupied and exerciſed in his abſence within this realm. Wherfore he wrote home letters to the lordes, charging them ſtrayghtly that all ſuche defautes were redreſſed agaynſt his coming home.

This kynge, as wytneſſeth Guydo, was of greate magnificence, and vſed ſuche iuſtice and temperaunce, that in his dayes in the weſte partes of the worlde, was no prynce of renowme as was Canutus. And ouer that he was greatlye beloued and dred of his ſubiectes.

Of Canutus it is read, that after his comminge from Rome, he beganne ſomedeale to preſume in pride, ⁊ ſet more by hym ſelf than good

Howe C
nutus
uaunced
him ſelf

good wyſedome wolde. In tyme of which exaltation of his mynde, he went vnto the Thames ſyde, and behelde how the water ſwelled or flowed: And ſo ſtandynge nere the water, the water touched his fete. Than he charged the water that it ſhuld flowe no higher, and that in no wyſe it ſhoulde touche his Lordes clothes. But the water kepte his courſe, & wet at length the kynges thighes. Wherwith the kyng abaſhed ſtert backe and ſayd: al earthly kinges maye know that theyr powers be vayne, and that none is worthye to haue the name of a kynge, but he that hath all thinges ſubiecte to his heſtes, as here is ſhewed by workynge of his creature thys water.

owe Ca-
tus con-
ſed God
e kyng
ynges.

It is alſo witneſſed of the ſaid authoure, that Canutus maryed his daughter, had by his laſt wife vnto Henrye ſonne of Conradus the Emperour the ſecond of that name, as alſo it is teſtified of the author of Cronica Cronicarum.

And he repayred many monaſteries, and ſpeciallye ſuche as before tyme were hurte or throwen downe in the tyme of his fathers perſecution. And began and ended the monaſtarye of Saint Edmundes Burye, and endowed it with ryche poſſeſſions as before is touched. And dyed finallye at Shafteſbury, and was buryed at Wincheſter, when he had reigned xix. yeares, leuyng after hym two ſonnes of his wyues, the eldeſte was named Harold, and the yonger Hardikanutus, the which lyuinge his father, was made king of Denmarke.

e death
anut⁹.

Francia.

¶ The .ccvii. Chapter.

HEnry the ſonne of Robert, began his dominion ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our Lord a thouſande.xxix. & the tenth yeare of Canutus then kynge of England. To the whiche Henrye, Conſtantine the mother was ſo vnkynde, that ſhe by her meanes would haue preferred her yonger ſonne Robert duke of Burgoyne, to the rule of the lande before this Henrye, ſo that by her meanes, both cities and caſtelles were withholden from hym, and was by her and ſuche other as toke her parte, ſo ouer lad, that he was forced to reſort vnto Robert then duke of Normandye, for to aſke helpe of hym to withſtande his enemies.

Henry the
ſonne of
Robert.

Ye ſhall vnderſtande that this Robert was the .vi. duke of Normandy, and ſonne of Rychard the ſecond, and alſo father vnto William baſtarde, that conquered Englande.

This Robert was liberal, and noble of condition, but defamed of the death of his elder brother Rycharde the thyrd. For the whiche murther as witneſſeth diuers authoures, the .vii. yere of his duchery he went to Jeruſalem, and dyd in that pylgremage many honorable and lyberal actes, the whiche in good ordre ben remembred in the .xix. chapiter of the .vi. boke of Policronicon.

This Robert receiued king Henry with al honour, and gaue vnto hym greate and ryche gyftes, and ſent foꝛ his frendes and knightes ſo that the kynge had by his ayde a greate and myghty hoſt. And retourned agayne into Fraunce, & in ſhoꝛt whyle after recouered frõ his ſayd mother, both cities, townes, and caſtels, that ſhe and her fautours from him withhelde.

And fynallye agreed ſo wyth her, that he and ſhee continued frendes theyꝛ lyfe tymes enduringe. After whiche accoꝛd, about the ſyfte yeare of his reygne, he made warre vpon Eudo Earle of Champayne, and vpon Baldwyn earle of Flaunders, and in pꝛoces of tyme wanne frome them certayne cities and caſtels, the whiche Conſtance his mother had befoꝛe tymes geuen to them in time of diſcention.

In this warre was ſlayne Eudo earle of Champayne. Wherefoꝛe his twoo ſonnes Stephan and Thybaude maynteyned the warre agaynſt the kynge but to theyꝛ both harmes in the ende. Foꝛ Stephan loſt thereby the cyties of Charters and Towers, & Thybaude the cities of Troyes, and Maulx with other.

When Henrye had ended this warre, and ſet his lande in ſome quyetneſſe, he then buylded a monaſterye of Saynt Martine called Des Champs beſyde Paris, and ſet therein ſeculer pꝛeiſtes.

In this paſſetyme, Roberte Duke of Noꝛmandye, moued to vyſyte the holye ſepulture of oure Loꝛde, called befoꝛe hym his loꝛdes of hys lande, wyllynge and commaundynge theym, to owe theyꝛ trewe allegaunce vnto his younger ſonne Wyllyam, and to take hym foꝛ theyꝛ loꝛde and duke yf he retourne not agayne.

And to this, he cauſed to ſweare Roberte then Archbyſhop of Roan, with the other of hys Loꝛdes, and after departed vpon the ſayd iourneye, and dyed in the Citie of Bethnia, as he was commynge home warde. Whereof the loꝛdes of Noꝛmandye, beynge aſcertayned, accepted the foꝛeſayde Wyllyam to their Loꝛde and Soueraine.

The d
of Ro
Duke
Noꝛm

Of this Wyllyams pꝛocreation, it is wytneſſed of Vyncent hiſtoꝛiall and other, that his father paſſynge by the Citie oꝛ towne of Faloys in Noꝛmandye, he ſawe a company of maydens daunſynge by the ſtrete. Amonges the whiche was one of paſſynge beautye called Arlet, and doughter to a ſkynner. To the whiche, duke Robert caſt vnleful loue, in ſuch wiſe that he cauſed her to be bꝛoughte to his bed the nighte folowynge, and helde her to his concubyne a certayne of tyme after, and begat on her this Wylliam. When his mother was with him conceyued, ſhe dꝛemed that her bowels were ſpred ouer all Noꝛmandy and Englande. And when he was boꝛne of his mothers wombe, he fyll to the ground, and cloſed his handes with powder of the floꝛe oꝛ pauement; therfoꝛe the midwife made an exclamation, and ſayde thys chylde ſhall be a kynge.

Then it foloweth, when this Wyllyam was thus admytted Duke, ſome of his Loꝛdes by the meane of the kynge of Fraunce, began to withdꝛawe them frome hym. In ſo muche that earle Gylbert, to whõ duke Robert had betaken his young ſonne to guide, was ſlaine, and other that were eſpeciall frēdes to the child. There was fightyng and manſlaughter and the countrie foule faren with by reaſon of the opiniōs that wer emonges theim ſelues, whereof Guy a Burgoine was one of the chief cauſers, For he with his adherentes ſaied alwaies, that thei would haue no baſtarde to be ruler of theim.

The de
of Rob
Duke
Normā

This Guy as ſaith the Frenche booke, was nere kinneſman vnto the young duke, deſcended of the doughter of the ſeconde Richard, and entended to haue been Duke hymſelf. For the whiche he encenſed the Kyng of Fraunce againſte hym in all that he might: But at length duke Willyam tooke hym, and put hym to death.

e the
che
war-
pon ẏ
duke
Normā-

Thus the Frēche kyng forgettyng the kyndneſſe ſhewed to him by duke Robert his father, tooke partie againſte hym to the vttermoſte, and ordeined him twoo hoſtes. whereof one he deliuered vnto his brother Ilmarik, and warned hym to entre the Countrie of Caus, and he hymſelf lad that other, and entred with it the countrie of Eurour.

discō-
at the
e had
french

But Willyam not fearyng the kinges greate power, beyng growen well towardes mannes ſtature, like a luſtie younge knighte, made toward the kinges brother and gaue to hym battaile, & hym ouercame: and chaſed the French men to their great vilany. wherof hearing the French king with his people, ſped him toward Willyam, to reuenge the ſhame doen to his men. But in concluſion he wan there no honour. Then peace was made betwene the kyng and the Duke, and the Frenche priſoners were deliuered.

A peace taken.

But this peace endured not long, for the Frenche king calling to remembraunce the loſſe of his menne, at Mortmere or dead ſea, with other diſauauntages by him ſuſtained of the ſaid duke Willyā, called vnto his aide Geoffrey erle of Aungiers: and when his hoſte was aſſembled, thei entered the Prouince of Normandy, and continued their iourney till thei came to an arme of the Sea, where the hoſte ſhould paſſe ouer.

Howe the Frenche king made newe war vpon duke Wylliam.

Of this newe warre duke William beyng warned, in all haſt aſſembled his Normans, and ſped hym the nexte waie to mete the Frenche men.

In this meane while, ẏ Frēche kyng had paſſed the water with certain of his hoſte, truſtyng that the remnaunte ſhould haue folowed: but ſone after the water flowed ſo faſt, that his people might not paſſe. And in this while came the duke, and ſet vpon the kynges hoſte, and bet theim doune cruelly, ſo that at length, the king was compelled to flee, and loſt a greate nomber of his knightes, reconing theim that were ſlain, with the other that were taken priſoners.

The diſcōfyture of ẏ Frenche hoſte.

When Kyng Henry had well diſgeſted in his minde, the wrongful trouble that he by enuious perſones had put the duke vnto, and remēbred the euill expedicion that he had in that warre, he reconſiled hym ſelfe, and made meanes that the Duke and he might bee agreed and accorded. The whiche by diſcrete ſolicitours, was shortly after brought to good effecte,

A peace taken again.

ſo that thei continued as frendes, duryng their liues after.

Then Henrie abſteinyng him from all warre, and vſed the reſte of his life, in peace and quietnes. This Henrie had twoo wiues, & of the laſte, whiche was doughter to the Kyng of Ruſſie, he had thre ſonnes, that is to ſaie, Philip ẏ which he made kyng of Fraũce by his life, Roberte that was after duke of Burgoine, and Hughe that was after named Hughe le Graunde, and was father vnto Raufe Erle of Vermendoiſe.

And in this kinges daies, Burgoine that had been vnder the Frenche Kynges obeiſaunce ouer a hundred and thirtie yeres, refuſed the Frenche Kynge a parte of theim, and tourned vnto Conradus the ſecond of that name, then Emperoure. So that, that parte whiche ſtretched to Campaine, belonged to Fraunce, and that other parte, whiche ſtretched towarde Baſainz, belonged to the Almains.

The death of Henrie.

And that yere that the Kynge had admitted his ſonne Philip to the guidyng of the realme, he died and was buried at ſaincte Denis, leauyng after hym the iſſue forenamed, whẽ he had reigned after moſte writers. xxxi. yeres.

Englande

Anglia.

❡The. ccviii. Chapiter.

Harolde.

Li. 6. ca. 20

HArolde the ſoonne of Canutus, and of Elgiua therles doughter of Hampton, beganne his reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion one thouſande thirtie and nyne, and the tenthe yere of Henrie then Kyng of Fraunce. This for his deliuerneſſe & ſwiftneſſe, was ſurnamed Harefoote. In whoſe beginnyng, ſtrief was emong the Lordes, for ſo moche as of his birthe ſhould be doubte, whither he wer the kynges ſonne or not: and ſpecially through Erle Goodwine, that did the vttermoſte of his power to ſette hym by, and put Hardikinitus his brother to that honour. But Leofricus that Canutus ſo moche loued and truſted, with the aide of the Danes, withſtoode ſo mightely Goodwine and his ſoonnes, that thei failed of their purpoſe.

Ha rolde calle foote.

Anone as this Harolde was crowned Kynge, he baniſhed his ſtepmother Emma, and tooke frõ her ſoche goodes and iewelles as ſhe had. The which Emma ſailed then into Flaunders, and there of Bauldwine the Erle, was reuerentely receiued, and there abode durynge the life of this Harolde. The whiche continued his life, to litle fruict or profite of the lande, nor yet of the ſubiectes: ſo that of hym, either for the vice that clerkes liſt not to put in memorie, either for the rudeneſſe, whiche is worthie no memorie, nothyng of hym is put in remembraunce, but that he died at London, or after ſome at Oxenforde, and was buried at Weſtminſter, when he had reigned as moſte writers agreen thre yeres and odde monethes, leuing after him none heire. Wherfore his brother king of Dẽmark, was nexte kyng after hym.

The of Ha

❡The. ccix. Chapiter.

kiki-

ca.21

Hardikinitus the ſonne of Canutus and Emma, was made Kynge of Englãde, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion a.M. xli. and the.xii. yere of Hẽry then kinge of Fraunce.

This of ſome wryters, is named Hardykynytus, and Hardyknought, and was anon after the death of his brother, ſent for into Denmarke, and receiued ioyouſly and crouned at London of Ethelnotus then archebiſhop of Caunterbury. But this was of ſuch crueltie, that he ſente Alphricus Archebiſhop of Yorke, & earle Goodwyn vnto Weſtminſter, cõmaundynge them for the iniurye by his brother Harolde before done vnto his mother Emma, yͭ they ſhoulde drawe the Corps out of the place where it was buryed, and to be throwen into the Ryuer of Thamis, whiche was doen according to his will. Which corps after (as teſtifieth Guido and other) was founden by a Fiſcher, and buried vnreuerently, within the churche yarde of S. Clement ſtanding wͭ out the temple barre of London.

coro-
n of
ikini

cruel
e of
iki-

And as Policronicon ſaieth, for a more crueltie, he cauſed firſt the heade of his ſaid brother to be ſmitten from the bodie, and then throwen into the ſaied riuer. Let the hearers to this giue credence as them like, for to me it ſeameth though the king had been of ſoche crueltie, that the biſhop fornamed woulde not haue been the executour of ſo foule a deede.

This kyng alſo leuied the forenamed tribute named Dane gelt, and ſpent it to the litle comfort of the realme: but gaue vnto Shipmenne and mariners, and other leude perſones, greate & vnſittyng fees and wages, and was of ſoche prodigalitie, that his bordes and tables of his courte were ſpreade fower tymes in the daie, and the people ſerued of great exceſſe both of meate and alſo of drinke.

The prodigalytie of Hardikinitus.

With leuiyng of the forſaid tribute, the commons greatly grudged; ſo that in Worceſter twoo of his ſeruauntes, whiche wer aſſigned to gather that money, were there ſlain. For the which dede the kyng was ſo ſore diſpleaſed, that he brẽt a great part of that toune.

This Hardikinitus after ſum aucthors, maried his ſiſter named Gunilda, vnto the thirde Henrie Emperoure. The whiche was of paſſynge beautie, and was the doughter alſo of Emma, laſt wife of Canutus. But in proceſſe of tyme this Gunilda was falſly accuſed of ſpouſebreche, for trialle whereof ſhe was putte* vnto her champion. Wherfore ſhe beyng in greate agonie, laſtly truſtyng to God, and knowyng her ſelf without gilt of that offence, put a child that ſhe with her had broughte out of Englande, in ſteade of the campiõ. The whiche fought with a man of Gyauntes ſtature, and finally hym ſlewe, and broughte vnto confuſion.

*Note that thorder in this tyme was that if a Quene, or any other noble woman were accuſed, either of treaſon, or aduoutrie, and could not bee proued by ſufficiente witneſſe, that then ſhe ſhould choſe a knighte, to fighte for her in that cauſe, with any other that ſhould bee matched to hym. And if it fortuned the ſame knight to bee diſcomfited or ſlaine, then ſhe to ſuffer ſoche paines of death, or otherwiſe, as offendours in like caſe ſhould doe, and if the knight had the vicſo that thei continued as frendes, duryng their liues after.

Then Henrie abſteinyng him from all warre, and vſed the reſte of his life, in peace and quietnes. This Henrie had twoo wiues, ⁊ of the laſte, whiche was doughter to the Kyng of Ruſſie, he had thꝛe ſonnes, that is to ſaie, Philip yͤ which he made kyng of Fraũce by his life, Roberte that was after duke of Burgoine, and Hughe that was after named Hughe le Graunde, and was father vnto Raufe Erle of Vermendoiſe.

And in this kinges daies, Burgoine that had been vnder the Frenche Kynges obeiſaunce ouer a hundꝛed and thirtie yeres, refuſed the Frenche Kynge a parte of theim, and tourned vnto Conradus the ſecond of that name, then Emperoure. So that, that parte whiche ſtretched to Campaine, belonged to Fraunce, and that other parte, whiche ſtretched towarde Baſainz, belonged to the Almains.

The death of Henrie.

And that yere that the Kynge had admitted his ſonne Philip to the guidyng of the realme, he died and was buried at ſaincte Denis, leauyng after hym the iſſue foꝛenamed, whẽ he had reigned after moſte wꝛiters .xxxi. yeres.

Englande

Anglia.

¶ The .ccviii. Chapiter.

Harolde.

L.i.6.ca.20

Harolde the ſoonne of Canutus, and of Elgina therles doughter of Hampton, beganne his reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Loꝛdes incarnacion one thouſande thirtie and nyne, and the tenthe yere of Henrie then Kyng of Fraunce. This foꝛ his deliuerneſſe ⁊ ſwiftneſſe, was ſurnamed Harefoote. In whoſe beginnyng, ſtrief was emong the Loꝛdes, foꝛ ſo moche as of his birthe ſhould be doubte, whither he wer the kynges ſonne oꝛ not: and ſpecially thꝛough Erle Goodwine, that did the vttermoſte of his power to ſette hym by, and put Hardikinitus his bꝛother to that honour. But Leofricus that Canutus ſo moche loued and truſted, with the aide of the Danes, withſtoode ſo mightely Goodwine and his ſoonnes, that thei failed of their purpoſe.

Howe
rolde
called
foote.

Anone as this Harolde was crowned Kynge, he baniſhed his ſtepmother Emma, and tooke frõ her ſothe goodes and iewelles as ſhe had. The which Emma ſailed then into Flaunders, and there of Bauldwine the Erle, was reuerentely receiued, and there abode duryng the life of this Harolde. The whiche continued his life, to litle fruict oꝛ pꝛofite of the lande, noꝛ yet of the ſubiectes: ſo that of hym, either foꝛ the vice that clerkes liſt not to put in memoꝛie, either foꝛ the rudeneſſe, whiche is woꝛthie no memoꝛie, nothyng of hym is put in remembꝛaunce, but that he died at London, oꝛ after ſome at Oxenfoꝛde, and was buried at Weſtminſter, when he had reigned as moſte wꝛiters agreen thꝛe yeres and odde monethes, leuing after him none heire. Wherfoꝛe his bꝛother king of Dẽmark, was nexte kyng after hym.

The
of Har

¶ The .ccix. Chapiter.

Hardikinitus

ikl- s.

ca.21

Hardikinitus the ſonne of Canutus and Emma, was made Kynge of Englāde, in the yere of our Lordes incarnacion a.M.xli. and the.xii. yere of Hēry then kinge of Fraunce.

This of ſome wryters, is named Hardykynytus, and Hardyknought, and was anon after the death of his brother, ſent for into Denmarke, and receiued ioyouſly and crouned at London of Ethelnotus then archebiſhop of Caunterbury. But this was of ſuch crueltie, that he ſente Alphricus Archebiſhop of Yorke, ⁊ earle Goodwyn vnto Weſtminſter, cōmaundynge them for the iniurye by his brother Harolde before done vnto his mother Emma, ẏ they ſhoulde drawe the Corps out of the place where it was buryed, and to be throwen into the Ryuer of Thamis, whiche was doen according to his will. Which corps after(as teſtifieth Guido and other) was founden by a Fiſcher, and buried vnreuerently, within the churche yarde of S. Clement ſtanding ẇout the temple barre of London.

coro- on of dikini

cruel de of diki- s.

And as Policronicon ſaieth, for a more crueltie, he cauſed firſt the heade of his ſaid brother to be ſmitten from the bodie, and then throwen into theſaied riuer. Let the hearers to this giue credence as them like, for to me it ſeameth though the king had been of ſoche crueltie, that the biſhop fornamed woulde not haue been the executour of ſo foule a deede.

This kyng alſo leuied the forenamed tribute named Dane gelt, and ſpent it to the litle comfort of the realme: but gaue vnto Shipmenne and mariners, and other leude perſones, greate ⁊ vnſittyng fees and wages, and was of ſoche prodigalitie, that his bordes and tables of his courte were ſpreade fower tymes in the daie, and the people ſerued of great exceſſe both of meate and alſo of drinke.

The prodigalytie of Hardikinitus.

With leuiyng of the forſaid tribute, the commons greatly grudged; ſo that in Worceſter twoo of his ſeruauntes, whiche wer aſſigned to gather that money, were there ſlain. For the which dede the kyng was ſo ſore diſpleaſed, that he brēt a great part of that toune.

This Hardikinitus after ſum aucthors, maried his ſiſter named Gunilda, vnto the thirde Henrie Emperoure. The whiche was of paſſynge beautie, and was the doughter alſo of Emma, laſt wife of Canutus. But in proceſſe of tyme this Gunilda was falſly accuſed of ſpouſebreche, for trialle whereof ſhe was putte* vnto her champion. Wherfore ſhe beyng in greate agonie, laſtly truſtyng to God, and knowyng her ſelf without gilt of that offence, put a child that ſhe with her had broughte out of Englande, in ſteade of the campiō. The whiche fought with a man of Gyauntes ſtature, and finally hym ſlewe, and broughte vnto confuſion.

*Note that thorder in this tyme was that if a Quene, or any other noble woman were accuſed, either of treaſon, or aduoutrie, and could not bee proued by ſufficiente witneſſe, that then ſhe ſhould choſe a knighte, to fighte for her in that cauſe, with any other that ſhould bee matched to hym. And if it fortuned the ſame knight to bee diſcomfited or ſlaine, then ſhe to ſuffer ſoche paines of death, or otherwiſe, as offendours in like caſe ſhould doe, and if the knight had the victorie, ſhe to bee acquited of the crime.

Likewiſe was it with all noble men, that were accuſed of treaſon, if thei had not ſufficiente witneſſe to proue it.

When Gunilda had thus clered her ſelf, ſhe vtterly refuſed the Emperours compaignie: and ended her life in the ſeruice of hym the onely God, that ſo had defended her right.

But it ſhould appere by Policronicon, and alſo by Antonius, that this maiden was maried to theſaied Henry, by the life of her father Canutus, and alſo duryng the life of theſaied Henries father named Conradus the ſeconde, as before is touched, in the ſtorie of theſaid Canutus, and not by this Hardikinitus her brother.

It is read yͤ the king betoke al the rule of the lande vnto his mother and erle Goodwine, the whiche had maried, as witneſſeth the Engliſhe Chronicle, the doughter of Canutus, gotten vpon his firſt wife Elgina. By whom many thynges wer miſordered, and ſpecially by the ſubtiltie of this erle Goodwine.

This Erle had many ſoonnes, as witneſſeth Policronicon in the xxv. Chapiter of his ſixte Booke. By his firſt wife that was Kyng Canutus ſiſter, and not his doughter, as is aboue ſaied. He had but one ſonne, the which by vndiſcrete ſtriking of an horſe, was throwen into the Thamis, and drouned. And the mother was laſtly ſmittē with lightenyng, and ſo died. Of whom it is ther remembred, that ſhe was ſo vngracious, and of ſo vile condicion, that ſhe ſet young women to whoredome, for to gather by that vnlefull meane, riches. After the which wife ſo died, he maried the ſecond, of whom he receiued ſixe ſoonnes. That is to wete, Swanus, Harolde, Toſtius, wilinotus, Sirthe, or Surthe, and Leofricus, and a doughter named Goditha, whiche after was maried vnto Edwarde the Confeſſoure.

The twoo ſoonnes of Egelredus Alphredus and Edwarde, whiche as ye before haue harde, wer ſent into Normandy by Emma their mother, came in the time of the reigne of this Kyng into England, for to viſite and ſe their mother, and brought with theim a greate nomber of Normans. Then this Goodwine imagined in his mynde, how he might preferre his doughter Godith, to one of theſe brethren, and thought in his mynde, that the eldeſt would diſdaine that mariage. And for he thought to ioyne her vnto the younger, and to make hym Kyng and her Quene, he compaſſed the death of the elder.

And by this meane Goodwine warned the Lordes of Englande, and ſaied it was a greate ieopardie for the lande, to ſuffer ſo many ſtraūgers to entre the land without licence: wherfore it wer neceſſary that thei wer puniſhed, to the example of other. By whiche meanes he gatte aucthoritie, to order that matter, as to hym ſemed beſt or of his owne power, bicauſe he was of moſte might next the king Wherfore he yode and mette with theſaied Normans, and ſlewe of theim the moſte nomber. For vpon Guilde doune he ſlewe alwaie ix, and ſaued the tēth. And yet for he thought to many by that mean

How
ſwyn
the No
mans.

lefte alyue, he efte agayne tythed agayn the ſayd tith, and ſlewe euery tenth knight of them, and that by cruell death: as wyndyng their Guttes oute of theyr bodyes, as ſaith Policronicon: and amonge othen, put out the eyen of the elder brother Alphredus, and ſent hym to Ely, where he dyed in ſhort tyme after: Albeit that the Engliſhe boke ſayeth, that he was ſlayne by the forenamed torment. And Edward was conueyed, and by ſome other way brought to his mother.

ty
ne of
dwin.

But ſhe fearynge the treaſon of Goodwin, ſent him ſoone ouer the ſea agayne. Howbeit the Engliſh cronicle telleth all other wiſe, whẽ Goodwin was after accuſed for this cruell dede, he ſware depely that he was forced of the kyng ſo for to doe: But in one Cronicle I fynde that this dede was executed by Goodwin, in the tyme of Harolde Harefote, beynge kinge.

6.ca.22

Then it foloweth in the ſtorye this kinge Hardikinitus being at a feaſt at Lambehith beſyde London, merye and iocande, whyle he ſtoode drinkinge he fyll downe ſodeinely, and died, or waxed dumbe and lay tyll the .viii. day after, the whiche was the eyght daye of the Moneth of June, and then dyed, when he had reigned after moſte writers two yeres, leauinge after hym none yſſue of his body lawful and was buried by his Father at Wincheſter.

e ſoda-
eath of
diki-
s.

Here endeth the line or of ſpring of Swanus: and all other Danes ſo that after this kinge, the blode of the Danes was clerely extyrct and put out from all kingely dignytie, within this realme of Englande.

ende of
reigne
the Da-
within
glande

And alſo the perſecucion of thẽ ſeaſed clearely after this kynges death: the whiche had continued (to reken from their firſt landyng in the tyme of Brighttricus kyng of Weſt Saxon, the .ix. yere of his reigne, as in the ſtory before is reherſed) by the terme of .ii. C. lv. yeares.

¶ The .ccx. Chapter.

Edward, the ſoonne of Egelredus, and of Emma his laſt wife, began his reigne ouer Englande, in the yere of our Lorde one thouſande .xliii. and the .xiiii. yere of Henry, then kyng of Fraunce. The whiche after the death of Hardikinitus, was ſente for into Normādy, & pledges laied for him that he without fraude ſhould be made kyng. And then he came with a fewe ſtraungers. But as ſaieth Marianus, ſome of the lordes had ſent for Edward the outlawe, ſonne of Edmunde Ironſide for to be their kyng. But after the affirmaunce of the ſaied acthor, when he knewe that Edward his neuewe was in poſſeſſion of the lande, he would medle hym no farther.

Edwarde the ſoonne of Egelredus.
Li.6.ca.23

Then this Edwarde by the greate aduiſe of Goodwin erle of Weſte Saxon, and of Leofricus erle of Cheſter, was crouned king at Weſtminſter, of Edſius then Archebiſhoppe of Caunterburie, and wedded in proceſſe of time after, Goditha the doughter of erle Goodwine, whiche of Guido is called Editha. The whiche he entreated in ſoche wiſe, that he putte her not from his bedde, nor yet delte with her fleſhely.

The chaſt liuyng of kyng Edward.

Whether it were for hate of her kynne, or for loue of chaſtitie, the treuth is not ſhewed. But al wryters agreen that he continued his lyfe withouten offence with women.

Kyng Edwarde dyſcharged ẏ dane gelte.

This kynge dyſcharged Engliſhmen of the great tribute called Dane gelte, the whiche before is ſundry times ſpoken of, ſo that after that daye it was no more gathered. And alſo he ſubdued the Britons or Walſhmen that made warre within the boundes of the lande. But after that their Duke or leder called Griffyn or Griffeth, with ayde of the Iriſhmen entred the ryuer of Seuerne, and tooke many prayes, and departed again without fyght.

The ſubduinge of the walſhmen

Howe the kinges mother was accuſed to be familiar wᵗ the byſhop of Wincheſter.

In the tyme of the Reygne of this Edward, Emma his mother was accuſed to be famylier with the byſhop of Wyncheſter. Vpon whiche accuſacion, by counſayl of earle Goodwyn, he toke from her many of her Jewelles, and cauſed her to be kept ſomdele more ſtraitlye in the Abbey of Warwell: and the byſhop he commited to the examynacion and correction of the clergy. But his mother more ſorowynge the defame of Alwyne the byſhop then her owne eſtate, wrot vnto dyuers byſhops, & beſought them of Juſtice, affyrminge that ſhe was redy to abyde all leful and moſt ſharpeſt tryall.

Then dyuers of the byſhoppes made labour to the kynge for her and for the byſhop. But Roberte then archebiſhop of Caunterbury beynge with their labour dyſcontented, ſayd vnto them in this maner. My brethren Byſhops (ſayde he) howe dare ye defende her that is a wyld beaſt and not a woman: ſhe hath defamed her owne ſonne the kyng, and taken her lecherous lemman the byſhop.

But yf it be ſo that the woman would purge the prieſt, who ſhall then purge the woman, that is accuſed to be conſentinge to the deth of her ſonne Alphred, and procured venim to the poyſoninge of her ſonne Edwarde. But how ſo it be, that ſhe be gyltye or gylties, yf ſhe wyll go barefoted for her ſelfe .iiii. ſteps, and for the byſhop .v. contynuallye vpon .ix. ploughe ſhares, brenninge and fyre hote, then yf ſhe eſcape harmeleſſe, he ſhalbe aſſoyled of this chalenge & ſhe alſo.

The
ce of
che
of Ca
burye,

This was of her graunted, and the day of purgacion aſſygned. At whiche daye the kynge and great parte of his lordes were preſente: but this Robert fayled, were it for pytie or other wiſe. This Robert was a monke of an houſe in Normandy, and came ouer by the ſendinge for of the Kinge, and was fyrſt made byſhop of London, and after Archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye.

A ſtra
thinge
were t

Then ſhe was blindfielde, and led vnto the place betwene .ii. men where the yron lay glowyng hote and paſſed the .ix. ſhares vnhurte. Then at laſt ſhe ſayde: good lorde, when ſhall I come to the place of my purgacion? When they opened her eies, and ſhe ſaw that ſhe was paſt the payne, ſhe kneled downe, and thanked God.

Then the Kinge repented him, and reſtored vnto her, that he before had taken frome her, and aſked of her forgiuenes. But the archebiſhop of Caũterbury fled into Normandie, It was not longe after,

ter that kinge Edward gathered a ſtronge nauy at Southampton or more verelye in the Hauen of Sandwitche, for ſo muche as he was warned that Swanus king of Denmarcke entended to make warre vpon him.

But Policronicon ſaith that he gathered this nauy to withſtande Harolde Harfagar then kinge of Northgaines, that entended to haue entred England. But he was letted by yͤ forenamed Swanus, that ſhortly after made warre vpon the ſayde Harolde and other. Another Cronicle ſheweth, that the Danes and Norgaines, whiche is to meane men of Norwaye, were ageed to come iointelye into Englande. And while the kinge was ſhippinge of his menne, one brought forth a bowle ful of mede or meth to drinke vpon bon viage. And after that, came bowle after bowle, ſo that after drinke came dronkennes, and after ianglinge: and ianglinge tourned into ſtrife, and ſtrife tourned into fightinge, where throughe many were ſlaine and yͤ other turned to their owne, ſo that that iourney was lefte of. But the Legende of his life in the churche telleth, that he beinge at maſſe in the churche of Weſtminſter vpon a Whitſondaye, in the tyme of the leuacion of the ſacrament, he laught: whereof the lordes being aboute him, meruailed greatly, and after frained of him the cauſe: wherunto he anſwered and ſaide: that the Danes with the Norwaies of one aſſente were purpoſed to haue come into this lande, & here to haue taken praies But as the kinge of Danes ſhold haue entred his Shyp, he fell into the ſea and was drowned, ſo that I truſt in my daies they ſhall not nor none other ſtraungers, make any warre in this lande.

¶ The.ccxi.Chapter.

A greate Snowe.

Li.6.ca.24

IN the tyme of this Edward, fell paſſing great ſnowe, the which began in the beginning of Ianuarie, and ſo contynued tyll the xvii. day of Marche, or S. Patrikes daye, wherof the great quantitie fell in the Weſt countries of Englande. And after that enſued great death of men, and moreine of beaſtes, and by lyghtninge the corne vpon the grounde that yere was wonderfully brent & waſted.

The landynge of yͤ erle of Bologne.

About the.x.yere of Edwarde, as moueth Policronica and in the moneth of Septembre, Euſtace earle of Bologne came a lande at Douer, whiche earle had wedded (after the ſayenge of the ſayde authoure) kynge Edwardes ſyſter. This was parted from his companye in ſo ſecrete wyſe that his knightes were fayne to ſerche for him, wenyng to them that he had ben ſlaine, by ſome of the dwellers of the towne.

An euyll chaunce.

In the whiche ſearche, they demeaned them ſo vndyſcretly, that they ſlewe a citezine of Douer: By meane whereof the people aroſe, & in the queſtioninge of this mãnes death ran at length vpon the erles company and ſlewe.xx.of his men and wounded many moe. Haſtely the earle appeared, and tooke his mens parte: but in concluſion, he was fayne to withdrawe himſelfe with a fewe perſons, and rode vnto the kinge then beinge at Glocceter, and made vnto him a greuous complainte of the men of Douer.

Then Earle Goodwine, for ſo moche as to hym was committed the rule of Kent, was charged to ride thither, and to take wreche of the inhabitauntes of that toune. But he withſaid that commaundemente, and counſailed the kyng to ſende for the Wardeins of the caſtell of Douer, and rulers of the towne, for to aunſwere to ſoche matters as wer laied againſt thē and if thei were giltie, to puniſhe them, and els not.

The good counſail of the Erle Goodwin.

This aunſwere of Goodwine pleaſed nothyng the Kynge, nor ſoche as were about hym, wherefore many mo Lordes were ſente for. Emong the whiche Leofricus erle of Cheſter, and Seward erle of Northumberland, of mine aucthour been named. After whiche aſſemble of the lordes, erle Goodwine had ſoche monicion of ſome of the coūſaile, that he withdrewe hym from the court, and gathered to hym ſtrengthe of knightes, out of diuers Shires, as Weſt Saxō and Kent, and houed at Beuerſton till his ſoonnes came vnto hym with mo people. Sone after came vnto hym his eldeſt ſonne named Swanus, and brought with him a faire compaignie, that he had arreired in Oxenfordeſhire, and Glouceſterſhire, and Harolde his other ſonne with a felowſhip that he had aſſēbled in Eaſt Englande, and Huntyngdon ſhire: ſo that of theſe people was made a greate hoſte.

The flying of the Erle Goodwin.

An hooſte gathered by the erle Goodwin.

Then Goodwine to the Kyng was accuſed, for gatheryng of ſo greate an hooſte. But he excuſed hym, and ſaied, it was dooen to withſtande the Walſhmen. The whiche contrary proued, he was commaunded to ſende awaie the people, and to come with a certain nomber vnto the courte. But that he refuſed. Then the Kyng with his counſaile beeyng at London, Goodwine and Harolde, was eft ſente for, and charged to come to the Courte with twelue perſones, without mo, and to rēder into the kynges handes all knightes fees, that he and Harold his ſonne had within Englande. To this by thē was aunſwered, that thei might not come to the counſaile of treachours and gilefull men, and that alſo with ſo fewe men in nomber, thei might not without parell or ſhame, paſſe by the countrie.

Harol
Good
with
rolde
ſonne
ſent f
the ky

In this while a part of Goodwins knightes withdrewe them, and his power began to miniſhe, and the king in this while had gathered a ſtrong hoſte. Then Proclamaciōs was made, that Goodwine ſhould come to the courte, as before is ſaied, or auoide the lande within .v. daies. Wherfore Goodwine conſideryng the ieopardie that he was in, toke with him .iii. of his ſoonnes, that is to meane, Swanus, Toſty, and Gurth, and ſailed into Flaunders, where he was receiued of the erle Bladwin after ſome writers, whoſe doughter Swanus his ſonne had before ſpouſed, and was named Iudith. And Harolde and Leofricus, two of his other ſoonnes, with a fewe ſhippes ſailed out from Briſtowe into Irelande.

A Pro
macio
gainſt
Good

The fl
of Ea
Good
into F
ders.

When the Kyng was aſcertained, that erle Goodwine with his fiue ſoonnes, was in this maner departed out of his lande, he ſhortly after called a Parliamēt, and by auctoritie of the ſame, outlawed

How
win is
lawed

wed Goodwine and his three ſonnes that wer gone with him. And that dooen, he put his owne wife, and doughter of Goodwine, into the Abbaie of Warwell, with one maiden, as ſaith Marianus. And ſo Goodwine and his ſaid ſonnes continued twoo yeres outlawed. In the which ſeaſon, he or his retinue, tooke diuers tymes praies in the Marches of Englande, and in the eande drewe to hym ſoche ſtrength, that he was purpoſed to haue entred the lande with force, and to haue warred vpō the king. But by mediatours that fauoured Erle Goodwine, a peace was made betwene the kyng and him: ſo that in proceſſe he was receiued to grace with his ſonnes, and his doughter reſtored to her firſt and former honor. And for this peace to bee continued, for Goodwins parte was deliuered for pledges a ſoonne of his called Wilnotus, and a ſoonne of Swanus named Hacum, or Hacun. The whiche twoo pledges kyng Edward ſent vnto Willyam Duke of Normādie to be kepte. And Algarus the ſonne of Leofricus erle of Cheſter to whom the kyng had giuen the erledome of Harolde, and ruled it diſcretly in tyme of his abſence, at his returne deliuered it to hym again, gladly and without grudge

to king
warde
his
e wife
ch was
dough-
f good

earle
dwine
again

Pro
acion
ed to
, and
ough-
o her
er dy-
e.

Cheſt
f Ea
Good
nto F
ers.

How
win is
lawed

¶The.ccxii. Chapter.

DUryng the time of this outlawrie of Goodwine, William baſtard duke of Normādy came with a good compaignie into this lande, and was honourably receiued: to whom the kyng made greate chere.

And after he had taried here a certain of tyme, to his agrement and pleaſure, he retourned to his owne with great giftes and pleaſures. And Emma the kinges mother, died ſhortly after, and was buried at Wincheſter. And Swanus the eldeſt ſonne of Goodwine wente to Hieruſalem, and from thens towarde Licia, and died by the waie of colde, that he had taken of goyng barefoote. Then the Normans that had giuen to the king euill counſailes againſt Engliſhemen, were by Goodwin and his frendes exiled. Among which Robert Archebiſhop of Caunterburie, that had ſpokē ſore againſt them, was one, whiche after went to Rome, to complaine to Leone the.ix. or Victour the ſeconde.

And when he had receiued letters of the Biſhop of Rome, directed to the Kyng, he retourned to his Abbaie of Gemeticum in Normandie, where he ſometyme had been Monke and Abbotte, and there died.

After hym Stigandus was made his ſucceſſoure, the whiche (as ſaieth Policronicon) had before tyme lefte the Biſhopriche of Shirborne, and tooke the ſee of Wincheſter by ſtrength.

He alſo vſed faires of holy churche thynges, and was a lewde or vnlettred man, as the more parte of the Biſſhoppes of Englande at thoſe daies were. And ouer that he paſſed other in riches and diſſimulation. But yet he neuer had the palle from Rome, thoughe there be greate ſale, that maketh many maſteries.

Euyll byſſhoppes in thoſe daies

The thynges that ar vncomelie for a Byſhop.

Then was openly ſpoken, that he was not worthie a biſhoprich, that could vſe the brag or pompe of the worlde, the vſe of voluptuoſitie, of glotonie and lecherie, the ſhinyng arraie of clothyng, the coūtenaunce of knightes, and the gatheryng of horſemen, and thinketh full litle on the profite of ſoules. And if men ſaie to them that a biſhop ſhould be choſen for holineſſe of liuyng, & for his good clergie, and not for couetiſe of money thei would aunſwere as foloweth

Nunc aliud tempus, alii pro tempore moris.

The whiche verſe maie be Engliſhed in this maner.

As tyme requireth, ſo menne dooen theim vſe.
In Winter warme clothes, in Sommer light and leſſe:
In tyme of ſadneſſe men doen games refuſe,
And in mirthe tyme, men to mirthes theim dreſſe.
So in tyme paſſed, was vſed greate ſadneſſe
In the churche. But now mē light be
Wherefore the maners muſte with menne agree.

So that by ſoche light anſwer thei planed or excuſed the ſharpeneſſe of their miſliuyng.

Li.6.ca.25.

About this tyme, which ſhould by Ranulphe, bee aboute the .xii. yere of the reigne of Edwarde: Marianus the Scot, that before I haue often named, that wrote moche the deedes of the Kynges of Englande, at the age of .xxv. yeres was ſhorne a Mounke at Collein in Almain, in the Abbaie of Scottes. Whiche Marianus after ſome writers, was in great fauoure with Malcollin kyng of Scottes.

In the .xiii. yere of Kyng Edwarde, the Scottes rebelled againſt the Kyng. Wherefore Seward erle of Northumberlande, by the kynges commaundemente gathered a greate hooſte, and entred that lande: and behaued him ſo mãfully, that in proceſſe he ſubdued the Scottes, and chaſed the Kyng out of his countrie, ſo that after Kyng Edwarde gaue that kyngdome vnto Malcoline ſonne of the kyng of Cambris, to beholden of hym and his heires kinges, as chief lordes of Scotlande.

The
ſyture
Scott

Upon Eaſter Mondaie about the ſaied yere, Goodwine ſittyng at the kynges bourde with other lordes, in the Caſtle of Winſore, it happened one of the Kynges Cup bearers to ſtumble, and to recouer again, ſo that he ſhed none of the drinke. Whereat Goodwin lough and ſaied: nowe that one brother hath ſuſtained that other. Wherby he meante that the one foote or legge hath ſuſtained the other frō fallyng. With whiche wordes the kyng marked hym, and ſaid: right ſo my brother Alfrede ſhould haue holden me, ne had Goodwin been. The erle then conceiued that the Kyng ſuſpected hym of his brothers death, and ſaied vnto the kyng in defendyng his vntrothe: Sir, as I perceiue well that it is tolde to thee, that I ſhould be the cauſe of thy brothers death. So moughte I ſauely ſwallowe this morſell of bread, that I here hold in my hande, as I am giltleſſe of the deede. But as ſone as he had receiued the bread, foorthwith he he was choked. Then the Kyng commaunded hym to bee drawen from the table, and ſo was conue-

The
ne de
erle G
wyn.

yed to Wincheſter, & there buried.

Marianus ſaieth, that as erle Goodwine ſat at the Kynges table at Wincheſter, he was ſodainly taken with a palſaie, or ſome other ſickeneſſe, vppon the Eaſter Mondaie, and died the third daie after. And his Lordſhips were giuen vnto Harolde his eldeſt ſonne then liuyng, and Haroldes Erledome was giuen to Algarus the ſonne of Leofricus, whiche was the erledome of Oxenforde, after ſome writers.

It was not lōg after that king Edwarde ſente vnto the fowerth Henrie, then Emperoure of Almaine, Aldredus Biſhop of Worceter, & other noble men, praiyng him that he would ſend vnto Englande his coſin Edward, ſoonus of Edmund Ironſide, for ſo moche as he entended to make hym his heire. The which requeſt was fulfilled, ſo that he came into Englande ſone after: the whiche (as ye haue harde before) was named Edwarde the outlawe. But as witneſſeth Guido and other, the yere after he came into England, he died at London, and was buried at Weſtminſter.

This yere folowyng, king Edward through euill counſaile exiled without gilte, Algarus the ſoonne of Leofricus. The whiche aſſociate hym with Griffine kyng or Duke of Wales, and deſtroied the countrie of Harforde, and did moche harme to the toune, and ſet the Minſter on fire, and ſlewe ſeuen Chanons thereof. Then the kyng ſente Harolde againſt him, the whiche chaſed the Walſhemenne into their owne boundes, and recouered the ſaied Toune by appoinctmente, holden by the ſaid Algarus, and amended all hurtes before doen by the Walſhmenne, and laſtly reconſiled the ſaied Algarus and his compaignie, vnto the Kynges grace.

¶ The .ccxiii. Chapiter.

ABoute the .xv. yere of kyng Edward, died the noble duke Sewarde ruler of Northumberlande of the ſixe: of whom Guydo reherſeth diuers notable actes, whiche I paſſe ouer. Of whom it is read, that whē he ſawe wel he ſhould die, he cauſed his armoure to be put vpon hym, and ſo armed and ſittyng in a chaire, hauyng al the rightes of the churche ſaied: that ſo it became a knighte and man of honour to die, and not lyinge, as an other meane man: & ſo died, and was buried at Yorke. And his Erledome was after giuen to Toſtie or Coſtie ſoonne of Goodwine.

The maner of dyenge of the Duke Sewarde.

In ẏ yere folowing, or the .xvi. yere of king Edward, died alſo the good erle Leofric⁹ erle of Mercia and of Cheſter, & was buried in ẏ Abbaie of Couentrie, the whiche before he had builded. This man purchaſed many great priuileges for the Toune of Couentrie, and made it free of all maner of toule, excepte onely of Horſe. For the whiche to haue alſo free, the commen fame telleth, that after long requeſte made vnto hym by his wife, named Godina, he graunted her to haue it thereof freed, with that, that ſhe would ride naked throughe the Towne: By meane whereof it was freed.

Li.6.ca.26

The death of Leofrycus.

Howe Cōuētre was made free.

Then Algarus his ſoonne was erle after hym. Harolde then the eldeſt ſoonne of Goodwine, was in greate auctoritie, and ruled moche of the kynges armie.

The yere folowyng, Algarus was accuſed by malice, and exiled the lande. Wherfore he fled again to Griffine Duke of Wales, as he before had doen, of whom he was ioiouſly receiued and maintained The king thereof being informed, ſent Harold into Wales to make warre vpon Griffine. The which quite him in ſo knightly wiſe, that he chaſed the Walſhemen, brente the ſaied Griffins Palaies at a place called Rutlan, and his nauy and then returned into Englande aboute Midlente. But aboute Rogacion daies nexte folowyng, the ſaied Harolde with his brother Toſtie was ſente thither again, with a ſtrong army. At whiche ſeaſon thei deſtroied a greate parte of wales, and inconcluſion brought the walſhe menne vnto dewe ſubiection: and forced theim to giue pledges for the continuaunce of theſame. And that doen, purſued ſo ſore vpon theſaid Griffine, that in the eande his owne people for purchaſe of their owne liues, ſlewe theſaied Griffine, and ſente his heade vnto Harolde, in the monethe of Auguſte: So that after the death of this Griffin, by the commaundement of the king, the countrie of Wales was committed to the guiding of the twoo brethren of Griffine, the whiche had fauoured moare the kynges partie, in tyme of the forſaid war, then their brother. And this warre in Wales thus brought to eande, Harold by his pollicie reconſiled againe Algarus Earle of Mercia, to the kynges grace, ſo that he continued in his fauor, duryng his life after.

The diſcōfyture of ẏ walſhmen

About the .xx. yere of the reigne of kyng Edwarde, Harolde ſailed toward Normandie, to viſite his brother Wilnotus, and Hacun his neuewe, the whiche (as ye before haue harde) were laied there for pledges, for the peace to beholden vpon erle Godwines ſide, againſt the Kyng. But he in his courſe of Sailyng, was wether driuen by tempeſt, into the countrie or Prouince of Pontife, or more verelie, into the Prouince of Pountith, where he was taken as a priſoner and ſente vnto duke Willyam of Normandie: The whiche forced hym to ſwere, that he in tyme folowing ſhould mary his doughter and that after the death of kynge Edward, he ſhould kepe the lande of Englande to his behofe, accordyng the wille and mynde of Edwarde, after ſome writers. And after thopinion of an other Chronicle written in Latine, the ſaied Harolde for to bee in the more fauoure of Duke Willyam, ſhewed to hym that Kynge Edwarde in preſence of his Baronie, had admitted the ſaied Willyam for his heire, and couenaunted with him that if he ouerliued the Kyng, he would in ſafe wiſe kepe the land to his vſe. For the whiche tydynges and promiſe, Wylliam graunted to hym his daughter to wife, that then was within lawfull yeres of Mariage, with greate dower.

And for to cauſe Harolde to be the moore ſtablier in his promiſe keping, he deliuered to him Hacun his neuew and ſonne of hys brother Swanus, whiche he muche deſyred, and kepte ſtyll Wilnotus the brother of the ſayd Harolde. After which couenauntes ſufficientlie ſtabliſhed and enacted, Harolde departed from Duke Wylliam with great and riche giftes, and in proceſſe of time landed in Englande. And at his commynge to the kinges preſence, he ſhewed to him all that he had done in the foreſayde matters, where with, ẏ kinge was well contented, as affirmeth the ſaide Latin Cronicle.

¶ The.ccxliii.Chapter

6.ca.27

In the.xxii.yere of king Ewarde, as teſtifieth *Ranulphe, Toſtius ẏ brother of Harold, was for cauſe not ſhewed, diſdayned in the kinges courte, and went vnto Harford in the marche of walys, where at that time the ſeruaũtes of Harold by commaundement of theyr maſter, were beſied to make prouiſion for to receaue the kyng. But whan this Toſtius was thither commen, he cruellye ſlew the ſayd ſeruauntes of his brother, & hacked them in ſmall peeces, and caſt theym after in mere ſowce or ſalte. And that doone ſent worde vnto the king, yͭ yf he would come vnto his feeſt, he ſhould lacke no powdered meate, what ſo euer he had deſyde.

A cruell
rther
mitted
Toſty-
rother
Harold.

This cruell deede ſprang wide, ſo that for it he was hated of all men, in ſo muche that hys owne tenauntes the men of Northumberland, of which prouince, he thã was lorde, aroſe agaynſt him and tooke from him that he had, and laſtly chaſed him into Flaunders, with a few perſons then awaiting vpon him. But the verteous king Edward not being cõtented with the commens doynge, conſidering it to be doone without his aduyſe and cõmaundement, ſent thither Harolde to do correction vpon the heades or Captaynes of the Northumbres. Wherof they beyng aſcertayned, cõtinued theyr ſtrẽgth and met wyth Harolde and hys people, and ſet him to vnderſtand that they were frelie borne, & frely noriſhed, and that thei might not ſuffer no cruelnes of Dukes. Alſo they had learned of their elders & ſoueraynes to mayntaine fredom or to ſuffer deathe, and to lyue in quietnes vnder an eaſy Duke.

e ſiege
Toſty.

Whan Harolde had receyued thys meſſage, & aduertiſed the ſtrength of the Northumbres, he perceyued well that without great effuſion of bloude he myght not correcte the myſdoers: wherefore it ſeemed to him better to fauour the countrey, than to take heede of the ſyngular profite of his brother, ſo that he returned to ẏ king wyth thys aunſwere, and purchaſed theyr pardon of hym, and alſo procured ſo the Kynge that he aſſygned to theym an other Duke or Earle, that was named *Malcharus. And Toſtius hys brother wyth his wyfe and children remayned in Flaunders, during the kinges lyfe. And to conclude this Story, trouth it is that this bleſſed kinge died the.iiii. daye of January, whan he had reygned. xxiii.yeres. vii. monethes & odde daies, and was buried in ẏ monaſtarie of Weſtminſter, yͭ whiche he before had greatly augmẽted & repaired, but not in ẏ maner & forme

Malcherꝰ.

that it is now in. For the Church that now there ſtandeth, was ſo redified and builded new of Henrie the thyrde, and ſonne of kinge Johñ. The which alſo after ſome writers, tranſlated thys bleſſed kynge Edwarde from the lower parte of the Churche and ſhrined him there he now lieth. And thys kynge Edwarde left after hym no chylde, for he was accompted for a vyrgyn whan he died.

Francia.

¶ The.ccxv. Chapter.

Phylip the fyrſt.

Phylip the fyrſte of that name, and ſonne of Henry, began hys domyon ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our Lorde. M. lviii. and the. xvi. yeare of Edwarde the confeſſour than king of England. And of thys Phylyp it is read, that he maried a wyfe named Berta, the daughter of Baldwyne Earle of Hollande and of Fryce. Of the whych Berta thys Philip receyued a ſonne, & named him Lewes, and a daughter that was called Cunſtaunce.

But in proceſſe of tyme he haunted ſo much the company of a woman named Bertande, that he hated his lawful wife, and at length helde her in priſon, & kepte that other in her ſteede: and gat vpon yͤ ſayde Bertrande two ſonnes named Philip and Flores, and a daughter whiche myne authoure nameth not. For thys aduoutry he was often monyſhed of the Byſhop of Rome, that he ſhould leaue the company of all euill women, and take to him his lawfull wife that he ſo longe had holden in priſon wythin hys Caſtell of Monfruell. And for he would not be obediente vnto the Byſhop of Romes counſayle, he was finally accuſed of Urbane Byſhoppe of Rome the ſeconde of that name. By meane whereof, he was reconſyled and reſtored agayne to hys wyfe, and refuſed hys concubyne.

And in the tyme of thys Phylip, Godfray de Bullion with manie other Chriſten princes, at the exhortacion of Peter the hermite ſayled into the holy lande, & wan the Citie of Hieruſalem out of the Saraſins handes. Which princes laſtly crowned the ſayd Godfrate king of the ſayde Citie. And after it ſo continued in poſſeſſiõ of chriſten men, by the terme of iiii. ſcore and ten yeres, vnder. ix. Chriſten kynges: and lenger might haue endured, had not diſcencion fallen amonges them ſelfes. And ſo by Antoninus, Peter Deſrey, and other, it is manifeſtli ſhewed. This viage after moſt accorde of wryters, began in the yere of grace. M. lxxxvi. and the. xxvii. yeare of thys Phylyp. And the ſayd Godfrey was crowned kynge of the ſayd Citie of Hieruſalem after affyrmaunce of the ſayde wryters, in the yere of grace a thouſande & foure ſcore and. xix.

Hieruſ
in the p
ſeſſion
chryſte
princes

Of this Philip litel worthy memorie is left in writinge. For like as hys father Henrye made hym kynge by his life, and ſuffered him to haue the rule of the land: right ſo thys Phylyppe after a certayn of time, commytted the rule of the land vnto Lewes his ſõne. And he ſet his mynde to huntinge and other diſportes, and ſo led his life in all ſlouthe and ydelnes.

Than Lewes taking vpon him the charge of the realme, ſubdued the Earle of Mount Meruſy and other, that laboured to take from the Church of Saynt Denis, certayne preuileges, & alſo conſtrayned them to reſtore and ſatiſfy all hurtes and harmes to the ſayde Churche by them doone.

Thys Lewes (as affyrmethe the Frenche Cronicle) maryed the daughter of Guy Earle of Cottheforde, the whiche after for nearenesse of kin was deuorſed from the ſayd Lewes, to the great diſpleaſure of the ſayd Earle Guy. Wherfore he moued warre agaynſt the ſayde Lewes, and toke from him certayne holdes and Caſtelles, of the whiche the Caſtell of Gurney was one. But at lengthe Lewes had the better of that warre, and recouered dyuers of the ſayde holdes.

And amonges other priſoners by him and his knightes taken, he tooke a mighty and a ſtronge captayne of the ſayde Earle Guy named Hembolde, the which he ſent to the Caſtell of Stampes, and there ſafely to be kept.

he death
Philip.

During whiche warre, Philip the king ſickened, and dyed yͤ yere of grace a thouſande, an hundred, and ſixe, when he had raygned ful viii. and fortye yeare, and was buried at ſaynte Benet ſur Loyr.

Anglia.

The .ccxvi. Chapter.

Li.6.ca.28
Harolde.

Harolde the ſeconde ſone of Erle Godwyn, and laſt kyng of Saxons, began to rule the Realme of England the fift daye of January, and the yere of our lorde. M. and lxvi. & the. viii. yere of Philyp the fyrſt then king of Fraunce. This as moſt mighti for ſo muche as the bleſſed kynge Edwarde died without yſſue, not mynding the promyſſe of hym before made vnto Wyllyam Duke of Normandy (as before I haue ſhewed) tooke vpon hym as kyng & was crowned of Aldredus then Biſhop of Yorke. Albeit as affyrmeth Guydo and other, ſome of the lordes entended to haue made Edgar Adeling king: whiche Edgar (as affirmeth the ſayd authoures) was ſonne to Edward that was the ſonne of Edmund Ironſyde, and named of ſome Edward the outelaw. But for this Edgar was yonge, and ſpecially for Harolde was ſtronge of knyghtes, & rycheſſe, he wan the reygne. How beit, Marianus ſayth that kynge Edward ordeyned before his deth that Harold ſhould be kyng after him. By reaſon wherof the lordes crowned hym therevpon at Weſtmynſter.

Anon as he was crowned he began to fordo euell lawes and cuſtomes before vſed, and ſtabliſhed good lawes, and ſpecyallye ſuche as were for the defence of holye Churche, and punyſhed the euyll doers, to the feare and example of other.

The returne of Toſty brother to harold which dyd muche hurte.

In ſhorte tyme after that Harolde was thus made kyng, Toſtye or Coſtye hys brother, whych as before is ſayd was of Northũbres chaſed into Flaũders, made him a Nauye of three ſcoore ſmal Sailes, and ſayled aboute the iſle of wyght, and tooke prayes with in the ſayde yſle and other places of Kente: And from thens he ſayled into Lynſey, & dyd there much harme both with fyre and ſword. But ſoone after he was chaſed thens by Edwin and Malcarus Earles of Marcia and of Northumberland. And then he ſayled into Scotlande, and taryed there tyll the Sommer after. When Toſtius was thus wyth hys robbers chaſed, then Harolde Harfager king of Northganes or Norwayes, with a great Nauy of .iii. hundred ſhippes or mo, entred the mouthe of the Ryuer of Tyne.

The ariuall of Harold harfager the ſon of Canut⁹, kinge of Denmark.

Harold Harfagar as ſayth Guide was the ſonne of Canutus, and kinge of Denmarke and of Norway. The whiche hearinge of the death of holye Edward purueyed the ſayd great army to wyn England, as hys rightful enheritaũce When Harolde was warned of his great flote of Danes he ſente vnto the forenamed Erles or dukes of Mercia and of Northumberlande, commaunding them to wythſtande theyr landinge; while he gathered his ſtrength. Then ŷ foreſayd Dukes ſped them to wardes the Danes, & gaue vnto them a ſharpe and a ſtrong fyght. But in concluſion ŷ Engliſhmen were put to the worſe, and were fayne to geue back, ſo that the enemies entred farther into the land. The Kynge hearinge of the dyſcomfyture of hys people, made the more haſte towarde his enemies, ſo that the ſyxt day after, he came to Stemyſforde bridge. In this while was Toſtius before named, come out of Scotlande, and gone to the parti of Danes againſt his owne Brother. In this foreſayde place bothe hoſtes ioyned & faught then, and there a ſharpe cruel batell. Wherin fell many a ſturdye knight vpon the Engliſh partye, but mo vpon the Danes ſide, ſo that in the end Harold theyr king was ſlayne, and that of the hand of Harolde kinge of Englande, as ſayth Guido, and Toſtius was alſo ſlayne in the ſame fight. Olanus brother to the ſayde Harolde Harfagar, with Paulus Duke of the yſles or Orkies, were there taken priſoners. The whiche the kinge cauſed to him to be ſworne to kepe ſuche promiſes as they to him there made: and tooke good pledges for performaunce of the ſame, & after ſuffered them to returne frõ thence they were comẽ.

How the Dukes aſſayled the Danes.

Harold kinge of Englan victoure.

It is alſo ſpecially remembred of the ſayd authour, ŷ one knight ſtode vpon the foreſayde bridge, & with his axe defended the paſſage maugre the whole hoſt of the Englyſhmen, and ſlew .xl. Engliſhmen or mo with his axe and might not be ouercome, till an Engliſhman went vnder the brydge & ſticked hym vpward wt his ſpere through an hole of the bridge.

A valia knight.

For this victory Harold was ſuppreſſed with pride, and alſo wyth couetiſe, ſo that he deuided not the prayes of his enemies among his knightes, but he kepte thẽ to hym ſelf, or gaue parti vnto ſuch knightes as he fauoured, and ſpared to them that had well deſerued: by reaſon wherof he loſte the fauour of many of his knightes.

.6.ca.29

In this paſtime, the daughter of Duke Wylliam, the which Harolde ſhoulde haue maried, dyed within age: wherefore Harolde thought him the more diſcharged of his promiſe before made to her father. But Wyllyam warned Harolde of couenauntes broken, and medled menaſſes wyth prayers by ſondrie times. Whereunto Harold aunſwered that a nyce folyſh couenaunte ought not to be holden, and namelie the beheſt of other mens ryght and kyngdome without the whole aſſent of the ſenatours of the ſame lande. And furthermore a lewde othe myght and ought to be broken, & ſpecialie when it is cōpelled to be ſworn for neede or for drede.

he cauſe
the con=
eſt of
ngland.

Upon theſe anſweres receiued by Duke Wylliam from Harolde, in the whyle that meſſaungers wente and came, Duke Wyllyam gathered hys knyghtes, and prepared his nauy, and al other thinges neceſſary unto the warre, and had aſſente of the Lordes of hys lande, to ayde and aſiſt him in his iourney.

And ouer that, he in ſuche wiſe enfourmed the Byſhop of Rome, than being named Alexander the ſeconde, that he confyrmed him in takyng of that vyage, and ſent unto him a Banner, the whyche he wylled hym to beare in the ſhyp that he hym ſelf ſhoulde ſayle in. And ſo beyng purueyed of al thinges cōcerning his iourney he ſped him to the ſea ſyde, and tooke ſhipping in the hauen of ſaint Ualery where he taried a long tyme or he might haue a conuenable winde. For yͤ which his ſouldioures murmured and grudged, and ſayde it was a woodneſſe and greate diſpleaſynge unto God, to deſyre an other mans kyngdome by ſtrengthe, and namely when God withſayde it by the workyng of hys elemente.

At the laſt, the wynde ſhortlye after came aboute, and thei tooke ſhyppyng, and helde his courſe towarde England, upon this groũd and tytle folowyng.

The tytle whereby Duke wilIyam of Normandi calenged yͤ realme of England.

The fyrſt and pryncypall was to chalenge his right, and to haue the dominion of the lande that to him was geuen (as he affirmed) of king Edward the confeſſoure, and hys neuew.

The ſecond was, to take wreche of his death, and cruel murdor of his neuew Alfrede, and brother of the bleſſed kyng Edward, that was ſlayne of earle Goodwyne & hys adherentes as before ye haue harde in the ſtorye of Hardykinytus: the whiche deede he aſcrybed cheefely unto Harold. And yͤ third was, for to auenge the wronge done unto Robert Archbyſhop of Caunterbury, whiche (as he was enfourmed) was expled by yͤ meanes and labour of Harolde, in the tyme Edwarde the confeſſour, as before is ſhewed.

The.xxvii. Chapter.

The landynge of duke wylyam.

Duke Wyllyam keping his courſe, landed in proceſſe of tyme at Haſtyng in Suſſex, in a place called Peueneſſey. And in his goying out of hys ſhyp & taking yͤ land, his one fote ſlode, & that other ſtack faſt in yͤ ſãd: the which eſpieng one of hys knightes yͭ was there unto him, cried alowde & ſayd, now ſyr Duke thou holdeſt England, and thou ſhalt ſoone be tourned from a Duke to a king.

The duke of this made game, ⁊ entred further into the lande, and made his proclamacions ⁊ cryes, ẏ no man ſhould take any prayes, or doo any force to the people. For he ſayde that it was reaſonable ẏ he ſhoulde ſpare that thinge that ſhould be his owne.

The ſtayinge of duke William at London

Harolde in this whyle was in the Northe partes of Englande, and had witting of the landing of the Normaynes, and ſped him towarde them in all that he myght, and gathered his ſtrengthe by the countreys as he came. But the Duke made ſo good ſpeede, that he came to London before ẏ king. Where he was holden out, tyll he had made good ſuertie, that he ⁊ his people ſhould paſſe thoroughe the Citie without taryinge: The whiche was obſerued. And ſo he paſſing the citie, paſſed the bridge and wente ouer into Suſſex.

Kyng Harolde entendinge for to know the ſtrength of his enemyes, ſent eſpies into the Dukes hoſte, the which made reporte vnto the kynge that all Duke Williams ſouldiours were preeſtes. For they had their ouer lyppes ⁊ cheekes ſhauen, and the Engliſhmen at thoſe dayes vſed the heare of their ouer lippes ſhad, and not ſhauen. But Harolde vnto that aunſwered and ſayde, they be no preeſtes, but are ſtalworthe and ſturdy knyghtes.

Then Gurth or Surth one of the yongeſt brethren of Harolde, counſayled hym that he ſhoulde ſtande aparte, and ſuffer him with other of his Lordes to fight with the Normans for ſo muche as he was ſworne vnto the Duke and they were not: alledging furthermore, that if they were ouerthrowen, that yet he might defend his quarell, ⁊ fight for the countrey.

The o
that D
Willia
made to
kynge
rolde.

In this meane time, William ſent a Monke vnto Harolde, and proferred to hym three maner of wayes, and to thoſe one of the three.

The fyrſte, that accordinge to his othe he ſhould render the land or delyuer it vnto the poſſeſſion of Wyllyam. And that done, to take it agayne of him, and holde it of him as in fee, and ſo to reygne vnder hym for terme of his life: and after his death to retourne it to the ſayde Wylliam, or to ſuch one of hys ſonnes as he would aſſigne it vnto. Or ſecondlie, leaue the kingdome without more ſtryfe. Or thirdlie in exchewynge of ſheddynge of the more plentie of chriſten mennes bloud, that he would defende his quarell in hys owne perſon agaynſt the Duke, ⁊ they two onely to trie the matter by dynte of ſworde. But Harolde refuſed theſe offers, ⁊ ſayd he would trie hys quarell by dynte of ſwordes, and not by one ſworde: and that he and hys knyghtes would defende theyr countrey agaynſt al ſtraunge nacions, praying to god to deeme the ryght betwene them twayne.

When duke William had receyued thys anſwer from Harolde, ⁊ ſaw wel that there was no mean but fortune in battaile, he charged his people ẏ might watche, to occupie them in prayer, and ſpecyally the preeſtes and the religious people, where ẏ Engliſhmē gaue them all to drynke and ſong.

Then vpon the morow being ſaterday, ⁊ the .xiiii. day of October both hoſtes aſſayled other, in the place where as nowe ſtandeth the abbey of Bataile, in Suſſex, In the begynning of this battayle, a banner or a bannaret called Thilfer, a Norman ſplayed before the hooſte of Normans, and ſlewe an englyſhman, or knyght that came againſt him, and after that one other, and ſo the thyrde, and was ſlaine at the laſt.

e place
ere the
all was

Then the Sheltrons ſmote togither with a great noyſe and crye, and faught ſore a long ſeaſon, and the Englyſhe men defended them manfully, and the better for that that they kepte them hole together without ſcattering or ſpryngynge abrode. The whiche when william apperceiued, he gaue a ſigne vnto his knightes, that thei ſhould geue backe, and make countenaunce as though they dyd ſlee. Thẽ the Normans imbateled the fotemen, and ſet horſemen for winges on euery ſyde. By the whiche wile the englyſh men were deſeuered, and ſone out of aray, and the Normans turned againe vpõ the engliſhmen, & ſlew them down on euery ſide. This battaile was ſore foughten of the engliſhmen, that Duke William was thriſe felled yͤ day by reaſon yͤ thre horſes were that day ſlaine vnder him. Laſtly Harolde was wounded in the eye with an arow, & fil to the ground and was ſlain, and his people ſcatered, ſo that well was him that might ſaue him ſelf by ſleinge.

e Will
victour

Then duke Williã buried his men that there were ſlaine, and ſuffered his enemies to do the ſame.

Of the death of this Harold is diuerſly written. For Geraldus Crãbrenſ. in his boke called Itinerarius ſaith, that after Harolde had receiued many woundes, and loſt his left eye, he ſled from that felde to the countrey of Cheſter, & liued long after an holy life as an ancre in the ſelle of S. James faſte by ſaynt Johans churche and made there an holy ende.

the diuers
opiniõs of
the death
of Harolde

When the death of Harold was knowen to the erles of Mercia & of Northumberlande, the whiche for ſtreightnes of waie might not bring theyr people to that felde, or elles for that they wilfully withdrew them ſelfes frõ Harolde, becauſe he none otherwiſe departed the praies amonges them & their knights at the former feld of the Norgaines: then thei drew yͤ next way to London, and toke Agatha Haroldꝰ wife & ſẽt her to Cheſter. And they & Aldredus biſhoppe of Yorke wͭ the Londoners, agreed and promiſed eyther vnto other, that they would make Edgar Atheling king, & defend his righte to the vttermoſt of their powers.

But that promiſe notwithſtanding, when they heard of yͤ great ſtrength that daylye fell to duke Wylliam, & of his prouiſions, thei were fayne to break that appointment. And the ſayd earles ſubmitted them and gaue vnto him pledges, & became vnto him his liege men by homage and feauty.

And thus when Harold had ruled the land from the .v. day of January, to the .xiiii. day of October he was ſlaine, when he had reygned nine monethes and od dayes, and was buried at the monaſtery of the holye croſſe of Waltham, which he before had founded, and ſet therein chanons, and gaue vnto them fayre poſſeſſions.

Thende of
Harolde.

And here endeth for a tyme the bloud of the Saxons, the whiche continued to reken from Hengiſtus firſte reigne, by the ſpace or tyme of fyue hundred and. lxxxxi. yeres. And yf it be rekened frõ the beginning of the Weſtſaxons, thẽ it endureth by the terme of. v. C. lxv. yeares. Whiche continued as rulers and kinges of this land all the ſayd tyme, onely except that ỹ paſſed betwene the fyrſt yeares of Canutus, and the laſt yere of Hardekinitus. In the whiche ſeaſon paſſed or flowed vpon. xxiiii. yeres Albeit that the perſecution of the Danes laſted much lenger, as tofore I haue ſhewed in the ſtory of the forenamed Kinitus.

The. ccxviii. Chapter.

When forasmuch that god of his vnknowẽ iudgements to man, and by his high & hid cõſayl, wuld ſuffer this duke to conquer ſo noble a land, and to be lord and ſoueraigne ouer ſo many noble enheritors as were, and now be within the ſame, I think it conuenient to ſhew here the diſcent of the ſayde duke, and howe nere of bloud he was vnto the bleſſed king Edward the confeſſour.

Wherefore as before to you I haue ſhewed in the ſtory of Charles the Symple ſometime king of Fraunce, a miſcreaunt or a pagan named Rollo, perſecuted ſore the Realme of Fraunce, and laſtelye wan by ſtrength the citie of Roan the head or cheife citie of Normandy. And in concluſion for a finall peace betwene the ſaid kinge and Rollo to be had, the ſayd Rollo, was chriſtened and named Robert, and maryed Silla ỹ doughter of the ſayd Charles. To whom the king gaue in waye of Dower, the hole duchy of Normandy. The whiche Robert after he was chriſtened ruled that dukedome as a good chriſten man by the terme of xiiii. yeres, and receiued of the ſaid Sylla a ſonne, and named Wyllyam the whiche after was ſurnamed Longa ſpata, as who wolde ſaye Wyllyam with a longe ſworde. This william was duke after his father. xxv. yeares, and lefte after him a ſonne named Richard, whiche as before is ſhewed in the ſtory of Lewes the. vi. was named Richarde the hardye. Then Richard the hardy was the. iii. duke and reigned. lii. yeares, and had by his wyfe a ſonne named Rycharde the good, and Emma that was wyfe to Egelredus and mother to ſaynt Edwarde the confeſſour. After him the good Richard was duke, and reigned. xxviii. yeres, and lefte after hym two ſonnes, that is to ſaye Richarde and Robert. The firſt after two yeres was ſlayne by treaſon of his brother Robert, ſo that Roberte was then duke, and reigned. ix. yeares The which Robert, as it is before ſhewed in the ſtory of Henry kyng of Fraunce, was father vnto this duke Wylliam. And this Wylliã was the. vii. duke of Normandye, and ruled it or he conquered Englande, after mooſt wryters. xxx. yeares.

Wherby it appeareth that Emma was aunt to duke Robert, father of Wylliam Conquerour. And ſaint Edward and this duke william were by the fathers ſide coſin iarmaines remoued, as ſheweth by this draught folowyng.

1 Rollo or Robert the firſt duke.

2 Wyllyam Longa ſpata, ſonne of Robert and ſeconde duke.

3 Rychard the hardy, the ſonne of William, and thyrde duke. { Richard ẏ good, ſon of Richarde the .i.
Emma mother of Edward confeſſour
and doughter of the ſayde Rycharde.

4 Richard the .ii. ſurnamed the good, and ſonne of Richard ẏ firſt, and forth duke.

5 Richard the thyrde ſonne of Rycharde ſeconde, and fyfte duke.

6 And Robert the ſonne of Richarde .ii. and brother of Richarde the thyrde, and ſixt duke.

7 Wylliam the ſonne of Robert, and the ſeuenth duke and noble Conquerour.

AND thus here an ende of the ſyxt parte of this worke, forſomuch as the lande was here conquered, and put vnder the rule of another nation.

THis ſixt part, to be accompted from the fyrſt yere of Iue, vnto the laſt daye of the reigne of Harolde, or beginninge of Wyllyam conqueroure, includeth of yeres thre hundred and .lxxx. and one.

AND ſo this lande was conquered after the fyrſt coming of Brute to folow the accompt of this worke, by the force of this duke William and his Normans .ii. thouſand two hundred and two yeres.

The ſeuenth parte,

Mayſter Fabian to the Reader.

Nowe ſhaketh my hand,my penne waxeth dulle,
For weried and tyred, ſeynge this worke ſo longe,
The authoures ſo rawe,and ſo farre to culle,
Dymme and darke,and ſtraunge to underſtonge,
And farre out of tune to make true ſonge.
The ſtories and yeres to make accordaunt,
That it to the reader myght ſhewe trewe & pleaſaũt

But vnder correction all thinge may be borne,
And ſo I remitte it vnto ſuche as bene expert,
Prayinge to them, as I haue done beforne,
Of theyr protection,this may ſhewe a parte,
Howe men are rewarded after their deſert,
Holeſome and playne,fruytefull and profitable,
And to the readers and hearers,ioyous and delectable.

For were not that,I durſte no further wade,
The ſtreame is ſo depe,and therto ſo daungerous,
But one thinge there is,that ſomewhat doth me glad,
The great daunger and ſtoryes doughteous,
Ben ouerpaſſed,ſo that more bounteous,
The authoures bene,and more manifeſtly,
The ſtoryes folowynge,they done certifie.

Wherefore as before to you I dyd promyſe,
This ſeuenth part now wyll I take in hande,
Beſechinge alwayes in mooſt humble wyſe,
The welle of bounty,that floure moſt adorande,
By whoſe humilitie man fyrſt comfort fande,
And was redemed from his captiuitie,
This part to fynyſhe,he wyll myne helper be.

And brynge to ende this worke that I haue take
On hand to wryte,onely of entent,
To bringe to lyght,and for it ſhoulde not ſhake,
The olde honoure that to England was ment,
Of famous writers,whiche haue theyr dueties ſent,
Unto theyr folowers all vyces to ſubdue,
Honoure to mayntayne,and to exalte vertue.

❧ Here after foloweth the ſtory of Duke Wyllyam Conquerour.

¶ The.ccxix. Chapter.

illiam
ke of
mandi
, cap.I

Vylliam Duke of Normandy ſurnamed conquerour, baſte ſonne of Roberte the vi. Duke of ẏ ſayde Dukedome, and neuew vnto Edwarde the confeſſoure, as before is ſhewed, beganne his dominion ouer this realme of England, the. xv. daye of October, in the yeare of our lordes incarnation a thouſād and.lxvii. and the.ix. yeare of the firſt Philip then kynge of Fraūce and was crowned kynge of the ſame vpon Chriſtmas daye nexte folowynge, of Aldredus archbyſhop of Yorke, forſomuch as that tyme Stigandus archbyſhop of Caunterbury was then abſente, or durſte not come in the preſence of the kyng, vnto whom he ought no great fauour, as in the ſequele ſhall appeare.

illiam
e the
ing of
ealme
s bro-
the bi
e of
on.

When Wyllyam had ſet in quiet a greate parte of this lande, he betoke the guyding thereof to his brother the byſhop of Bayon, and in lent folowing ſayled into Normandie, and ledde with hym the cheif rulers of England, for doubt of ſturring in time of his abſence. Amonge the whiche, the two earles Marcarus, and Edwyne, rulers of Northumberland & Mercia were twoo, with alſo Stigandus and Edgare Ethelynge. To the whiche Stigandus William ſhewed great reuerence and countenaunce of fauoure. But all proued to greate diſſimulation after, as was ſhewed by the depriuyng of the ſayd Stigandus & priſonment of him in Wincheſter towne by a longe terme and ſeaſon.

How William taxed the people

In the next winter when William had ſped his buſyneſſe in Normandye, he retourned into Englande with great pompe, and ſet a greuous tribute vpon the Engliſhmen, By reaſon wherof ſome parties of the lande rebelled agaynſte hym, and ſpecially the citie of Excetour, the whiche defended hym for a certayne of tyme. But laſtely by force he wanne the ſayde citie, and puniſhed the cyteſyns greuouſly.

Exeter rebelled.

For this and other ſterne dedes of Wylliam, Marcharus earle of Northumberlande, with Edgare Athelynge and dyuers other, as his mother and two ſyſters, Margarete and Chriſtian, ſayled into Scotlande, But another Cronicle telleth, that Edgare entendynge with Agatha his mother, and his two ſyſters, to haue ſayled into Almayne, where he was borne, was by tempeſte of the ſea dryuen into Scotland, Where of Malcolyne than kynge of Scottes, they were ioyouſlye receyued. And in proceſſe of tyme, the ſayde

Malcoline caſt ſuch loue vnto the ſayd Margaret, that he toke her to wyfe, as before is touched in the fyrſt chapiter of the ſtorye of Canutus. Of the which Margaret the ſayd Malcolyne receaued two daughters and ſyxe ſonnes, thereof thre named Edgare, Alexaunder, and Dauid, were kinges of Scotland next folowing their father.

And Molde one of the foreſaid doughters was after maried vnto the fyrſt Henrye kynge of Englande. And the other daughter Marye, was maryed to Euſtace Earle of Boloygne. Of Mold the fyrſte daughter, Henrye receaued two ſonnes named wyllyam and Rycharde, the whiche both dyed before their father, as after in the ſtory of the ſayde Henrye ſhall appeare. And he receaued alſo two daughters named Mold and Marye, which Mold or Mawd was maried to the v. Henry Emperour of Almayn. After whoſe death ſhe was agayne maryed to Godfreye or Geoffrey Plantagenet earle of Aungeowe. Of whome deſcended Henry ſurnamed ſhortmantell, & kynge of Englande, called Henry the ſeconde. And the other daughter Marye was maried vnto the Earle of Blaines, of whom diſcended Molde or Mawde, that was wyfe vnto kynge Stephen.

Then it foloweth, that this wylliam after this foreſayd trybute ſo leuied of the Englyſhmen and knowynge of the departynge of the Lordes aforeſayd, kept the other the ſtrayghter. But it was not longe after that Marcharus was reconſiled to ẏ kynges grace and fayled agayne as folowynge ſhalbe ſhewed. For this and other cauſes whiche were tedious to ſhewe, Wylliam exalted the Normans to the cheife poſſeſſions of the lande, ſo that they greatly encreaſed in greate honour & welth and the Englyſhmen as faſte decayed. Kyng Wyllyam alſo made foure ſtrong caſtels, wherof two be ſet at York, the thyrd at Lingetingham or Notingham, & manned them with Normans, and the iiii. at Lyncolne.

Foure
ſtels b
ded bi
Willi

About the thyrde yeare of his reygne, Harolde and Canutus, ſonnes of Swanus kyng of Denmarke, came on land on the north of Humber with a ſtronge nauye and in all haſt drew them toward Yorke. Then the Normannes which had the rule of the towne and caſtelles, fearynge that the Englyſhmen would ayde the Danes and with the houſes of the ſuburbes of the towne haue fylled the towne dyches, ſette the ſuburbes on fyre: Wherof the flame was ſo bygge & with the winde ſo ſtrong that it toke into the citie, & brent a parte thereof, with the mynſter of ſaynt Peter. In tyme whereof the Danes by fauoure of ſome of the citiſens entered the citie, and ſlewe more then thre. M. of the Normans.

Howe
rold &
nutus
ded in
North
ber.

Howe
Norm
ſet a f
Suber
of yo

But it was not longe or kyng Wylliam chaſed the Danes to theyr ſhyppes, and toke ſo greate diſpleaſure with the inhabitauntes of that prouynce, that he deſtroyed the lande lyinge betwene Yorke and Durham in ſuch wyſe, that. ix. yeares after or there aboute, the lande laye vnlaboured and vntylled, onely out taken S. Johns lande of Beuerley.

How
Wyll
chaſed
Danes,
deſtro
count

And of the famine that the people of that Countrie ſuſtaigned, wonders are reported, that thei ſhould eate all maner of vermine, as Cattes, Rattes, Dogges and other, ſo harde thei were kepte by the warre of the kynge. And in that yere alſo Molde or Mawde the wife of kyng Willyam, was crouned Queene of Englande, of Aldredus Archebiſhop of Yorke.

In the .iiii. yere of the reigne of this kyng, the Scottes with Malcolyne their kynge entered Northumberlande, and waſted and deſtroied ſore that Countrie, and ſlewe therein moche people, and many thei tooke priſoners, and helde them as bonde men.

But in the fifte yeare of his kyngdome, Willyam made ſuche warre vpon the Scottes, that he laſtly forced the ſaied Malcoline, to ſweare to hym bothe homage and feautie, as it is witneſſed of Willyam of Malmeſburie and other writers.

¶ The .ccxx. Chapiter.

KIng willyam by counſaile of therle of Hartforde and other, cauſed the Abbaies of Englande to bee ſearched. And what money in theim at that ſeaſon was found, he cauſed it bee broughte to his Treaſoure.

Sone vppon this in the tyme betwene Eaſter and Whitſontide was holden a ſolempne counſaile at Wincheſter, of the Clergie of Englande. At the whiche counſail were preſente twoo Cardinalles, ſente from the ſeconde Alexander, then Biſhoppe of Rome. In this counſaile, Stigandus Archebiſhop of Caunterbury was depriued from his dignitie, and that for three cauſes.

Stygādus depriued of the byſhopricke of Caūterbury, and the cauſes why.

The firſt was, for that he had holden wrongfully that Biſhopriche, while Robert the Archebiſhop was liuyng.

The ſecond cauſe was, for that he had receiued the Paule of Benet Biſhop of Rome the fiueth of that name.

And the thirde cauſe was, for that he occupied the ſaied Paule, without licēce and lefull aucthoritie of the courte of Rome.

Then Stigandus proued the beneuolence of kyng Wyllyam. For where before he made to hym louyng and frendly countenaunce and did vnto hym great reuerēce, then he chaunged all his mildeneſſe into ſterneſſe, and excuſed hym by the Biſhop of Romes aucthoritie: ſo that in the ende Stigandus was depriued of his dignitie, and kept in Wincheſter as a priſoner, the terme of his life.

It is recorded of hym, that he was ſo couetous and ſparing, that he would take nothinge of his owne, and vſed to ſweare by Alhalowes, that he had not one penie. But that othe was proued vntrue after his death, by a litle keie that was founde faſtened aboute his necke. For by that keie was founden greate Treaſoure vnder the yearth, in mo places then one.

In this counſaile alſo wer put doune diuers other Biſhops, Abbottes, and Priours, by the meanes of kyng Willyam, and all to thentente that he might preferre Normans to the rule of the churche, as he had preferred his knightes to the rule of the tēpoꝛaltie, that he might ſtande in the moꝛe ſuertie of the lande.

In this counſaile Wolſtane that then was Biſhop of Woꝛceſter, aſked buſilie of the kyng certaine poſſeſſions fallen into his handes, by the death of Aldredus laſt archbiſhop of Yoꝛke, that wer withholden by the ſaid Aldꝛedus. But the kynge might not heare then of any ſoche matters, foꝛ hurting of the libertie of the churche of Yoꝛke.

Then vpon Whitſondaie after the kyng gaue the ſaied Archebiſhopꝛich of Yoꝛke, vnto Thomas a Chanon of Baion, and ſent foꝛ Lanfrancke an other Noꝛman then Abbot of Cadomonēcie, and gaue vnto hym the Archebiſhopriche of Caunterburie. This Lāfrancke was an Italian boꝛne, and was perfectly learned in the ſciēce of Theologie oꝛ holy wꝛit, & right apt in gouernīg of thynges bothe ſpirituall and tēpoꝛall.

Lanfrank Archebyſſhoppe of Caunterburie.

Upon our lady daie the Aſſumpcion, the kyng made hym Archebiſhoppe of Caunterburie. Then Thomas that was choſen Archbiſhop of Yoꝛke, came vnto Lanfrancke foꝛ to bee ſacred, as the vſage would. Of whom Lanfrank aſked an othe, and his pꝛofeſſion in wꝛityng, concernyng his obedience. Thomas aunſwered and ſaid, that he would neuer do that, but if he might thereof heare ſufficiēt authoꝛitie and ſkilfull reaſons and bindyng, by the whiche it might be knowē that he ſhould ſo doe, without any pꝛeiudice of his Churche. Then Lanfrancke ſhewed and pꝛoued ſkilfully, that his aſaynge was reaſonable and rightful. But yet Thomas would not aſſente, but with ſaied it, and went foꝛ that tyme frō Lanfranke vnſacred, and ſhewed vnto the kyng, that Lanfrancke entended to doe wꝛong vnto him and to his churche of Yoꝛke.

Then the kyng callyng Lanfranche befoꝛe hym, ſaied that he truſted moꝛe to his cunnyng, then he did in good faithe oꝛ reaſō. But he aunſwered ſo reaſonably vnto the king, that in thende Thomas by the commaundemente of the kyng was fain to come againe to Lāfranke to be ſacred, and wrote his pꝛofeſſion with his owne hand of his obedience, and reade it, in the whiche was contained that he ſhould be obediente, in all that belōgeth to the woꝛſhip of God and all chꝛiſtien faithe. Whiche doen, he was Sacred and ſo departed. And ſhoꝛtly after Lanfranke aſked, and toke pꝛofeſſion of all the biſhops of Englande.

¶ The. ccxxi. Chapiter.

IN the. v. yere of Willyā the Cōquerours reigne Edwin and Marcharus erles of Mercia, and of Noꝛthumberland, beyng in feare of daungier, voyded the Kynges courte ſecretly, and were rebelles ſome what of time. But at length it tourned to bothe their harmes. Foꝛ Edwin was ſlain as he went toward Scotlāde, and erle Marcharus with the biſhop of Durhā named Egelwinus, toke the Iſle of Ely foꝛ their ſauegard. But the kyng helde them ſo ſhoꝛte, that in proceſſe they wer fain to yelde thē to the Kynges grace and mercie. Then he ſent the Biſhoppe to the Abbeie of Abindon, to bee kepte there as a priſoner, where he was ſo daintily fedde, that he died for hunger.

But ſome writers teſtifie, that he was ſo high harted, that after he knewe he ſhould remain there as priſoner, he would neuer eate meate after. And erle Marcarus was had to the tower of London.

In the ſixte yere of his reigne, kyng Willyam as before is touched, went with a great armie into Scotlande, and ſubdued Malcolin their king, as before I haue ſhed in the precedyng Chapiter.

In the ſeuenth yere of Kynge Willyam, Thomas Archebiſhop of Yorke, not beyng content to be vnder the rule and obedience of Lanfranke, appeled to the Court of Rome, ſo that the ſaied twoo Archebiſhoppes appered bothe in proper perſone before Alexander biſhop of Rome afore named. In whoſe preſence Lanfranke was ſo wel fauoured, that where Thomas aboue named, and Remigius Biſhop of Dorcheſter, were for ſkilfull cauſes depriued of their Croiſes and ringes, he by his fauour and meanes, reſtored thẽ to their former dignitie. The cauſe of Thomas was, for that he had holpen duke William toward his iourney into Englande. For the whiche the ſaied Duke promiſed hym a Biſhopriche, if he obtained victorie.

And the other was depriued, for that he was proued a prieſtes ſoonne. Then Thomas moued the cauſe of the primacie of Caunterburie, and of ſubiectiõ that to him ſhould belong, and ſaid that theſe twoo Seas were farre a ſonder, that is to meane, Caunterburie and Yorke, and that nother of thẽ by the conſtitucions of Gregorie, ſhould bee ſubiecte vnto an other, but that the one is more worthie then the other, for ſo moche as he is of elder tyme. To this aunſwered Lanfranke, and ſaied that the conſtitucions of Gregorie, made no mencion of Caunterburie, but of Yorke and London. Then the Biſhoppe of Rome remitted this matter to bee determined before the Kynge, and the Biſhoppes of Englande, and gaue the Palle to Lanfranke.

What a Palle is.

But for this terme or woorde Palle, is to many one vnknowen, I ſhall therefore here ſhewe vnto you what thyng it is. This Palle is an indument that euery Archebiſhoppe muſt haue, and is not in full aucthoritie of an Archbiſhop, till he haue receiued the Palle, and it is a thing of white, like the bredth of a Stole. But it is of an other faſſion. For where the ſtole is made in lengthe, and is worne aboute the prieſtes necke, this is ioyned together aboue, ſo that it lieth a parte thereof vpõ his ſhulders. And that one ende hangeth ſtreight doune to the grounde before, & that other behinde, garniſhed in diuers places thereof with Croſſes.

And where the ſtole is worne next vnto the Albe, whẽ the prieſt is reueſted to Maſſe, this Palle is worne vpon the Veſtemente ouermoſte of all, when an Archbiſhop ſingeth his Maſſe.

When Lanfranke had thus ſped his needes at Rome, he with the other twoo Biſhoppes retourned into Englande, where this matter hanging in variaunce betwne the

The arche-byſhop of Caunter-bury is pri-mate of Englande

the ſaied twoo Archebiſhoppes, was had in communicacion. For triall whereof, Bedeas ſtory was brought forthe. wherein it appered, that from the firſte Auguſtines time, to Bedeas laſt daies, vpon the ſeaſon of a hūdred thirtie and nine yeres, the Archbiſhop of Caunterburie had primacie of all the biſhoppes of Englande, then called Britaine, and of Irelande alſo: and that the Archebiſchoppes of Caunterburie, had kepte counſailes nere vnto Yorke, and cleped thereunto the biſhoppes of Yorke and made ſome Biſchoppes, and depriued diuers from their dignities, and to this wer adioined certaine priuileges, that wer graunted for this maner of doyng.

When Thomas had heard all the allegacions, he denied all, and ſaied for hym the Epiſtle in the whiche Gregorie biſhop of Rome demed, that the Churche of Yorke and of London, ſhould bee euen peres, and neither of theim ſubiecte to other.

To this was anſwered by Lāfrancke, that he was not biſhop of Lōdon, nor this queſtiō was not moued for the churche of London.

But Thomas ſaied that Gregorie had graunted to Auguſtine, power to haue vnder hym all the biſhoppes of Englande, and that Londō at that daie was the principall ſea of all Englande. Albeit that the biſhop of Romes mynde was, that betwene London and Yorke, ſhould bee no diuerſitie of honour, bicauſe thei were Archeflamines, and that by their vnitie all other might lyue vnder dewe obedience. And though Auguſtin chaunged the ſea from London to Caunterburie, yet Gregorie would not that Auguſtines ſucceſſours, ſhould bee aboue the Biſhoppes of Yorke: For he would then haue ſet in his Epiſtle theſe woordes folowyng: I graunte to thee Auguſtine and to thy ſucceſſours. But for he would that no ſuch power ſhould ſtretche to his ſucceſſoures, therfore he made no mencion of his ſucceſſoures.

Lanfranke to thys anſwered and ſayd: If that authorite were graunted to Auguſtin alone, and not to his ſucceſſoures, it was a ſymple gift that the Byſhoppe of Rome gaue vnto Auguſtine, that was ſo famyliar wyth hym, and namelie while Auguſtine ordeyned nor ſacred no Byſhop of Yorke while he liued. For the ſee was ful during his life, by reaſon wherof he put not his authoritie in execucion. But pryuyleges of Byſhops of Rome cōfirmeth this dignitie to Auguſtynes ſucceſſoures of Caunterburie, and demeth that it is ſkyll and good reaſon, that all the Churches of Englande ſhould take lore and lyght of that place.

Howe two a biſho conclu

By theſe reaſons and other at length Thomas was ouercomen and graunted gladlie that the farther brinke of Humber ſhould be the beginninge of hys dyoces. And ouer that it was there demed, that in all thynges, concerninge the worſhyppe of God and the faythe of holie Churche, the Archebyſhoppe of Yorke, ſhoulde be ſubiecte to the Archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury. So that yf the Archebyſhopp of Caunterburie would call a counſayle in any parte of Englande, the Archbyſhop biſhop of Yorke ſhould bee thereat, with all the Biſhoppes of his Prouince, and bee alſo obediente vnto the lawfull heſtes.

And at all ſeaſons when the Archebiſhoppe of Caunterburie ſhould bee Sacred, the Archebiſhop of Yorke, with the biſhoppes of that Churche, ſhould come to Caunterburie & ſacre hym there.

And if the Archbiſhop of Yorke ſhould be ſtalled or Sacred, then ſhall he come to Caũterburie, and els where in all Englande, where the Archebiſhop of Caunterburie will hym aſſigne, and there to be Sacred of him; and he ſhall make to him an othe, with profeſſiõ and obedience.

When Lanfranke heard this iudgemente giuen thus, he reioiſed inwardly. And for it ſhould remaine of recorde, that his ſucceſſours ſhould not newly pleade for that cauſe, he cauſed it to be regeſtred in moſte ſubſtanciall wiſe. And ouer that ſente a Piſtle for that cauſe to Alexãder forenamed biſhop of Rome of all this doyng, with the profeſſiõ of Thomas the Archbiſhoppe aforeſaied. Of this Lanfranke is many notable thinges written, of diuers writers.

¶ The.ccxxij. Chapiter.

ca.3. ABoute the. x. yere of kyng Williams reigne, Roger erle of Hertforde, by whoſe counſaile the Kyng as before is ſaid, had ſearched all the Abbaies of Englande, whiche Earle had wedded his ſiſter vnto Raufe erle of Eaſte Angles, that is to ſaie, Norffolke and Suffolke, againſt the Kynges mynde, he with the ſaied Raufe, made conſpiracie againſt the Kyng, and cauſed an othe Erle by their ſubtile meanes, to be agreable vnto their vntroth whiche erle had to name walref.

But at length when this Erle Walrefe, had knowen the fine of their entente, he went vnto Lanfranke, and ſhewed to hym the whole matter. By whoſe councell he ſhortly after ſailed vnto the Kyng, then beyng in Normandie, and diſcloſed the matter vnto him and put hym wholy in his grace and mercie.

When the Kyng had heard of theſe tidinges, he made good ſemblaunce vnto this Earle Walref, and ſped hym the faſter into Englande. But howe ſo it was, the forenamed twoo erles were warned of diſcloſyng of this matter, in ſoche wiſe that thei gathered to theim ſoche ſtrength, that the Kyng could not haue theim at his pleaſure, but as he was faine by ſtrong hande, to chaſe and outlawe them. And for that he failed of his purpoſe of theim, he empriſoned erle Walref at Wincheſter, and laſtly cauſed hym to bee behedded, more of tyrennie, then of Iuſtice, as affirmeth myne auctour, whoſe corps was buried at the Abbaie of Crowlande.

The behedding of erle Walrefe.

In the leuenth yere was holden a greate counſaile or Synode of the Clergie, of the lande of S. Paules churche of London, wher emonges many thynges ordained for the rule of the Churche of Englande, diuers Biſhoppes Seas, were tranſported from one place to an other, as Selweie to Chicheſter, Kyrtoñ to Exceter, Welles to Bath, Shirbourne to Sa-

A greate Sinodie or counſaile.

The tranſporting of diuers Biſhoprikes.

liſburie, Dorcheſter to Lincolne, and the ſea of Litchefelde to Cheſter. Whiche thinges thus ordred, with many other for the churche, theſaied counſaile was diſſolued.

In the thirtene yeare of his reigne, after the death of Harman Biſhoppe of Saliſburie, ſucceded Oſmunde the Kynges Chauncelloure, the whiche builded there a newe Churche, and brought thether clarkes that were garniſhed with vertue and connyng. And he hymſelf wrote and bounde bokes that were occupied in the deuine Seruice of the Churche, as the Ordinall or Conſuetudinarie, the whiche at this daie is occupied in the more partie of Englande, with Wales and Irelande, and is now named Saliſburie vſe, or thordinarie after Saliſburie vſe.

This Oſmūd made the Ordinall of ſeruice wherof to this daie it is called Saliſbury vſe

In the. xv. yere of his reigne, Roberte the eldeſt ſoonne of king Willyam, the whiche was ſurnamed Curthoſe or Shorthoſe, and Shorte boote alſo, for he mighte not haue the Duchie of Normandie, whiche his father had ſometyme aſſigned and giuē vnto him, and after for his wildneſſe, had againe reſumed it: he with fauoure and aide of the Frenche Kynge, Philip and Lewes his ſonne, toke praies in that Duchie, and putte his father to moche trouble: in ſo moche that at length the father and the ſonne mette in plain field with twoo greate hoſtes, and either with the other foughte a cruell battaile.

Robert the eldeſt ſone of Willyā rebelled.

It is read that during this battaile, Willyam was throwen frō his horſe, and in greate ieopardie of his life. Whereof his ſonne Roberte beeyng ware, was ſo moued with pitie, that he reſcowed his father, and deliuered hym free frō all daungier of his enemies. But how ſo it betide of the kyng, troth it is, that many of his men were ſlaine, and his ſeconde ſonne William the Redde ſore hurte: ſo that in the eande Kyng Willyam was faine to refuſe the field, and gatte at that tyme none aduauntage of his ſaied ſoonne. For the whiche deede and rebellion thus made by the ſonne, the father accurſed him after the opinion of ſome writers.

While kyng Willyā was thus occupied in Normandie, the Northumbers warte ſterne and rebell, and ſlewe in their rage Walkerus the biſhoppe of Durham, but for what cauſe, myne aucthoure expreſſeth not.

Aboute this time, Waring erle of Shreweſburie made twoo Abbaies, whereof one was ſet in the Suburbes of Shreweſburie, and that other at Wenlok.

In the ſeuentene yere of Kyng Willyam, a curſed ſtrife was arrered betwene Thurſtone Abbot of Glaſtenburie a Norman, and his Monkes. Whereof a parte of the cauſe was, that the Abbot deſpiſed, and would haue ſet aparte ſoche ſong and offices, as by Gregorie biſhop of Rome, and Auguſtine his Diſciple, of olde tyme to theim was aſſigned, and would haue compelled theim, to haue folowed the vſe of Willyam of Feſcampe. And ouer that, this Thurſtone waſted and ſpended the goodes of that place inordinatly, in lecherie, and by other inſolent meanes, and withdrewe from the mōkes their old and accuſtomed diet. For the whiche cauſes firſt began greate wordes with chiding, and after ſtrokes and fightes, ſo that the Abbotte gat vnto hym armed men, and fell vpon the Monkes, and ſlue twoo of them at the high Altare, and wounded of thē.xviij. And the Monkes with fourmes and candelſtickes defended theim in ſoche wiſe, that thei hurte many of the armed men.

Thē the cōplaint was brought before the Kyng, by whoſe iudgemente Thurſtone was againe retourned vnto Cadonie, frō whens he was broughte, and the Monkes were ſpred abrode into diuers houſes through Englande. But it is ſaid that in the tyme of Willyā the Redde, this Thurſtone obteined the rule of that Abbaie again for the price of.v.C.pounde.

In the.xix. yere of his reigne, Kyng William then raiſed a newe maner of tribute. For he cauſed to be gathered through England, of euery hide of lande ſixe ſhillinges An hide of land conteineth.v.yardes, and euery yarde conteineth fower acres. And ſo an hide of land conteineth twentie acres, an acre conteineth.xl. perches of lengthe and fower in breadth, and fower acres make a yarde, and fiue yardes make an hide, and eight hides make a knightes fee. By the whiche reaſon, a Knightes fee ſhould welde.c.lx.acres, and that is demed for a Plough till, a yere.

And not longe after he cauſed to bee ſearched, how moche lande eche of his Barons held, how many knightes fees, how many tounes, and what nomber of menne and of beaſtes, were within this lande: whereof he commaunded a Booke to bee made, whiche all was doen. For the whiche deede, this land was after greued, with many ſonderie plagues, as after ſhall appere.

Li.7.ca.4. How Canut⁹ kyng of Denmarke began to aproche toward Englande.

In the.xx.yere of the reigne of Kyng Willyam, Canutus Kyng of Denmarke, with helpe of the Flemynges, to whom he was called with a greate armie, came towarde Englande: but by the prouiſion of the Kynge, thei were ſo feared, that thei were let of their iourney.

A good ſcraper.

Then king Willyam gaue vnto fower of his Champions three biſhopriches. To Morice he gaue London, to Willyā he gaue Thetforde, and to Robert he gaue Cheſter, whiche Robert was after remoued to Couentre. Of this Robert reporteth Rannulph, that he ſcraped frō one beme of his church in Couentre fiue hundred marke, to fille with the hande of Kyng Willyam. For Earle Leofricus that was Duke of Mercia, in the tyme of Edward the Confeſſour, had adourned that churche, with greate riches of golde, ſiluer, and other precious iewelles.

In this yeare Edgare Ethelyng, whiche was reconciled vnto the Kynges fauoure, by licence of the kyng, ſailed into Apulia.

Greate plagues.

A greate fire.

Then began the foreſaied plagues to ſpryng. For greate morraine fell vpon brute beaſtes, and brennyng Feuours emonges the people, and alſo great honger and barrenneſſe of the yearth. Alſo in this yere greate hurte was doen in many places of the land by fire, and ſpecially in the citee of London, where vppon the.vij.daie of the Monethe of Julie, ſodain fire began, the whiche brent a greate parte of the churche of S. Paule, with alſo a great part of the citie.

Then kyng willyam beyng in Normandie was ſicke, and kepte his chamber at Roan a lōg tyme. wherefore Philippe the Frenche king in his game, ſaied that William laie in childe bed, and nouriſhed his fatte wombe. The which woordes, when thei were blowen to kyng willyams eares, he was greuouſly diſcontente, and ſaied, when I am churched, I ſhall offer vnto hym a thouſande candelles light, with the which he ſhall hold him ſmally contented. The which promiſe he after performed. For in the moneth of Julie, when corne fruicte and Grapes, were moſte floriſhyng, he entred into Fraūce with a greate armie, and ſette on fire many Citees and tounes, in the weſt ſide of Fraunce, and laſtly came vnto the citee of Meaus, and fired it, and brent a part therof, with the churche of our Lady, wherein he brente a woman, beyng cloſed in the walle of the ſaied churche, as a recluſe.

How king Willyam ſpoiles and deſtroyed Fraunce.

But of this thing ſpeaketh not the Chronicle of Fraunce, nor yet for the moare parte of any thyng that ſoundeth to their diſhonour, doen vnto them by Engliſhmen.

How king Willyam toke his death.

The exhortacion that kyng Willyam gaue to his ſonnes.

In this heate, or as ſome writers haue, by the leapyng of an horſe, kyng Willyam toke ſoche a diſeaſe or ſickneſſe, that it was the cauſe of his death. And when he felte hym thus greued, he called his ſonnes before hym, and exhorted theim in his beſt maner, that thei ſhould charitablie loue and fauoure, euery of theim the other, and holde togither as louyng brethren: and after made his Teſtamente, and therein ordeined Wyllyam Rufus, or William the Red to be king of England. And Normādie he beſet vnto Robert Curthoſe. And to Henry his youngeſt ſonne, he bequethed his treaſoure and mouable goodes. And that doen he enformed his twoo eldeſt ſonnes, of the diſpoſiton of bothe peoples, and warned Willyam to be louyng, and liberall to his ſubiectes, and Roberte to bee ſterne and ſturdie vnto his.

Then he was moued with mildeneſſe, and deliuered from priſon his owne brother the Biſhop of Baion, Marcharus erle of Northūberland, Wilnotus the ſonne of Harolde, or after ſome, the ſon of Godwine, that was ſente to Willyam by Edward the confeſſoure, to remaine for a pledge for his ſaied father Goodwine. And ſhortly after theſe thynges with other doen, he died in Normādy, & was buried in the citee of Caā, when he had reigned as kyng of Englande .xxi. yeres, and vpon .x. monethes, in the moneth of Juli and the yere of his duchery ẏ. lii.

The d
of Wil
Duke
Norm
die, and
querou
Engl

When William was ded, men ſpake of him, as thei doe of other Princes, and ſaied that he was wiſe and gilefull, riche and couetous, and loued well to bee magnified and praiſed, a faire ſpeaker, and a greate diſſimuler, a mā of ſkilfull ſtature, but ſomedeale fatte in the bellie, ſterne of face, and ſtrong in armes, & therwith bold, and had greate pleaſure in huntyng and in makyng of great feaſtes. But he paſſed all other in leuiyng of taſkes. Whiche condicion his ſubiectes conſtrued. iii maner of waies, and ſaid it was to the entente that he would excelle all other in richeſſe, or els for to withſtande and defende his enemies or els to ſtaunche the appetite of his couetous mynde. He builded twoo Abbaies in Englande, one at Battaile in Suſſex, where he wanne the fielde against Harold, and is at this daie called the Abbay of Battaile, and an other he ſet beſide London, vpon the Southe ſide of Thamis, and named it Barmoũdeſay. And in Normandie he builded. ii. alſo,

foreſt
by
Wil

This manne made the newe Foreſt in the countrey of Southhampton, the whiche to bryng aboute, he caſte doune diuers churches, by the ſpace of thirtie miles, and repleniſhed it with wilde beaſtes, and made harde and ſharpe lawes for the encreaſyng of them, as loſyng of iyen and other.

The
of Wil
Duke
Norm
ie, an
ueror
Engla

lyam
rour
ted to
tie of
n, the
Char-
hat e-
hey

And he helde Engliſhmenne ſo lowe, that in his daies was almoſte no Engliſhman, that bare any office of honoure or rule. But yet ſomedeale he fauoured the citee of London, and graunted vnto the citezeins the firſte Charter that euer thei had, the whiche is written in the Saxon tonge, and ſealed with Grene waxe, and expreſſed in eight or nyne lines.

¶ The. ccxxiii. Chapiter.

lyam
us.
. ca. 5.

WIlliam Rufus, or William the Red, the ſeconde ſoonne of William Conqueror, began his reigne ouer Englande, in the moneth of July, and the yere of our Lorde a thouſande and fower ſcore and nine, and the thirtie and one yere of the firſte Philip then kyng of Fraunce.

Ranulphe Monke of Cheſter ſheweth in his booke of Policronicon, that Roberte Curthoſe eldeſte ſoonne of William Conqueroure, was at the tyme of his fathers death abſente. The whiche hearyng that his father had preferred his yonger brother, to the kingdome of England, was therwith greatly amoued: in ſomoche that he laied his Dukedome to pledge vnto his brother Henrie, and with that good, gathered vnto him a ſtrong armie, and ſo lauded at Hampton.

Howe Robert yͤ brother of Willyam Rufus was appeaſed and retourned with his hooſte.

Whereof Willyam his brother beeyng warned, in all haſte ſente vnto hym meſſangers, to whom he gaue commiſſion, to ſay in maner as foloweth: thy brother William praieth thee, to take no grief with that he hath doen, for he clepeth hymſelf not king, but as vnderking, to reigne vnder thee, and by helpe of thee that arte greater then he and better, & rather borne

And if thou conſider it well, he hath nothyng miſuſed hym againſte thee: For he hath taken vpon hym for a tyme, bicauſe of thyne abſence. But for he is nowe in auctoritie by thy ſufferaunce, he praieth that he maie vnder the ſo continue, paiyng to thee yerely three thouſande marke, with condiciõ that who ſo euer liueth maie enioye the Kyngdome. When Roberte had heard that meſſage vnto the eande, he wagged his head, as he that conceiued ſome doubleneſſe in this reporte. But for he was liberall & allowed more the honour, then he did his profite, as in other thynges folowyng of his deedes it ſhall appere, therfore he lightly aſſented to all that was deſired, and retourned ſhortly after into Normandie, with pleaſaunt wordes without profite.

The coronacion of Willyam Rufus.

This willyam was crouned the. xxvii. daie of September, vpon the daie of ſainct Coſma and Damian, and was well aided of Lanfrāke, while he liued. He was diuers and vnſtable of maners, ſo that betwene hym and his lordes was often diſcencion.

In the ſpringyng of Sommer folowing his coronacion, Odo biſhoppe of Baion, whiche as before ye haue heard, was deliuered out of priſon by Willyam Conqueror came into Englande: whom the Kyng ioyouſly receiued, and gaue vnto hym ſhortly after the Earledome of Kente. But he toke vpon hym in proceſſe of tyme to rule, in ſoche wiſe as the Kyng grudged with his doyng. And for this the king and his ſaied vncle fill at vnkyndeneſſe, ſo that he withdrewe hym from the kyng, and alied him with the Biſhop of Durham, the Erles of Northumberlande and Shreweſburie, with other. The whiche confedered together, toke partie againſt the Kyng, and did thynges to his diſpleaſure & hurt. And emonges all other damages by theim doen, Roger de Mounte Gomorik, erle of Shreweſburie, deſtroied the countrie and endes of Englande, to Worceter toune, with aide of the Walſhmen. But in the eande, through the praier of the holie Biſhoppe Wolſtane, the Walſhmen wer ſo weaked and febled, that a fewe knightes diſcomfited of them a greate hoſte.

Confederacie.

When Kyng Willyam conceiued, that welle neare all the Normans toke partie againſt hym, he then forced of neceſſitie, drewe to hym the Engliſhmen, and fauoured theim by giftes and eaſie lawes: ſo that by their ſtrength, he laſtly recouered the erle of Shreweſburie, and chaſed ſome other of his enemies, and ſhortly after occupied the caſtle and ſtrong holdes in Kente, belongyng to Biſhop Odo his foreſaied vncle, and in the eande compelled hym to forſweare Englande.

The b
gyng
Roche

And that doen he beſieged the citee of Rocheſter, wherein the biſhop of Durham, therle of Northumberlande, and other noble mē were gathered, & wan it at length by appoinctment, ſo that his enemies were vnto him reconciled.

Li.7.c
The d
of Lāf

In the third yere of his reigne died Lanfranke, whē he had been Archebiſhoppe of Caunterburie eightene yeres. By whoſe meanes the Monkes of Englande, were brought vnto thuſe of their religyon, the which before his cōmyng, liued more like to ſeculer Prieſtes thē religious men, & exerciſed thē in huntyng and haukinge for to auoide idleneſſe: and Diſyng and Cardyng in the Winter nightes, that thei might bee ready to kepe their howres & night ſeruice. And in their apparell thei wer like vnto Conſuls, and not vnto Monkes, with many other deformities. The which in the beginning of Lanfrancke, he of policie ſuffered for a ſeaſō, leſt he had brought all in his toppe atones, and thereby might haue cauſed ſome ſciſme or variaunce to haue riſen in the Churche. In auoydyng whereof, with other inconueniences, he litle and litle refrained theim,

The ll
uyng
Monk

of their outrage, and in proceſſe of tyme, cauſed and conſtrained thē to liue after the conſtitucions and rules of their religion.

About this tyme, Robert Curthoſe Duke of Normandie, entendyng to take his voiage into the holy land, laied his dukedome to wedde vnto his brother Wyllyam, for tenne thouſande pounde, For leuiyng whereof, Kyng Wyllyam ſette a taſke vpon his commons and ſubiectes, and reiſed a farre excedyng ſomme, vnder coloure of the ſame, ſo that Biſhops melted their veſſelle, and Lordes ſpoiled their tenauntes.

The Kynge of Scottes alſo brake the peace before made with Willyam Conqueroure, and waſted and tooke praies in the countrie of Northumberlande. Then the Kyng prouided a Nauie, and ſailed thither in the Winter time. But by the tempeſt of the ſea, half his Nauie, or a greate parte of it was drowned, and many of his knightes were loſte for colde and honger. But yet in the ende after diuers conflictes ond bikeringes, by meditacion of frendes, a peace and vnitie was concluded: ſo that Malcoline then kyng of Scottes ſhould bee obediente to kyng Willyam, vnder the ſame othe that he was before time ſworne vnto his father, and kyng Willyam ſhould yerely giue vnto hym in the waie of a fee. xii. markes of golde.

In the fourth yere of his reigne and the fiueth daie of October, paſſyng greate tempeſte of wederyng, fell in ſondrie places of Enlande, and ſpecially in the toune of Winchecome. For there by tempeſte of Thunder and lightening, a parte of the ſteple of the churche was throwen doune, and the crucifixe with the Image of our Ladie, alſo ſtandyng vpon the Roode lofte, was in like wiſe ouerthrowen, and broke and ſhatered. And after folowed a contagie and a foule ſtenche.

The rage of wyndes.

Alſo this yere at London was greate harme doen by force of the winde, whiche blewe with ſoche violence, that it ouertourned or rined, as witneſſeth Polichronicon, ouer the nomber of ſixe hundred houſes. And the rofe of ſainct Marie Bowe in Chepe was alſo rined, were with two menne were ſlain. And alſo at Saleſbury was hurte doen with the ſame winde, or the like thereof.

In the fiueth yere of Williams reigne, he went into Northumberlande, and repaired ſoche holdes and Caſtelles, as the Scottes by their warres had blemiſhed and apaired, and cauſed a newe Caſtell to be made at Caercol the citee or toune, whiche the Danes of twoo hūdred yeres paſſed had deſtroied. Then the Kyng retourned vnto Glouceſter, where he was greuouſly vexed with ſickeneſſe, ſo that he wende he ſhould haue died In tyme whereof he tooke greate repentaunce, and promiſed if he might eſcape, he would amēde his liuyng, and become a newe man.

But after he was reſtored to healthe, that promiſe was ſhortly forgottē. And in that yere he gaue vnto Anſelme the Archbiſhopriche of Yorke. But he might take of it, but as the Kynges pleaſure was, till ſoche tyme as the Kyng had taken his Tribute thereof. And more ouer he auouched, that the

the ſea of Lincolne belōged to the ſea of Yorke, til the biſhop of Lincolne had pleaſed him with a gret ſumme of money, as. v. thouſande Marke, after the writyng of Ranulphe.

Great floddes.

In the ſixte yere of his reigne wer excedyng floudes, wherof the like in many yeres paſſed had not been ſeen. And after that enſued wonderfull froſt, whiche froſe the greate ſtremes in ſoche wiſe, that Horſe and Carte paſſed ouer the great riuers. And in thende when the iſe melted and brake, the paiſe therof brake many a ſtrōg bridge, bothe of timber and of ſtone.

A greate Froſt.

¶ The.ccxxiiii. Chapiter.

Li.7.ca.7.

ABoute this tyme the Welſhemen with their kyng or Duke named Rees, brake out vpō the Engliſhemenne in the Bordoure, where ſtandeth the caſtell of Brekenocke, and there made maſteries for a while: but in thende his people were chaſed and ſlain, and he wounded vnto death, ſo that he died the thirde daie folowyng. This Rees is accoumpted of writers, to be the laſt kyng of Wales. For after this daie thei wer ſo daūted, that Kynges of England had them in ſoche rule, that thei were vnder more ſtedfaſt obediēce then thei were before tyme. How beit thei rebelled full often, as after ſhall appere.

Rees the laſte kinge of Wales.

And the yere folowyng kyng Williā to haue the countrie in the more quiete, hewed doune moche of the woode, and builded in ſondrie places ſtrong Caſtles and piles, by meane whereof moare and moare thei were plucked to obedience: but not ſhortly after, but ſpecially in the daies of Edwarde the firſt, and Edwarde the thirde.

Malcoline king of Scotlande came vnto Glouceſter, to comen with the king of diuers matters, and to take a final agrement: but for kyng William would haue demed hym in his Courte, therefore Malcoline departed frō the kyng in great diſpleaſure. For the whiche and other cauſes, the warre betwene Englande and Scotlād was reuiued: ſo that vpon ſainct Bricius daie folowing, Malcolin with his retinewe fought with an erle named Roberte, and then Earle of Northumberlande, and there was ſlaine with his eldeſte ſoonne Edwarde.

For ſorowe whereof, Margarete Quene of Scotlande, and ſiſter vnto Edgare Ethelyng (as in the firſte Chapiter of the ſtorie of Willyam Conquerour is ſhewed) died ſoone after. Then the Scottes made Dunwalde brother of Malcoline their kyng, and put by his ſoonnes. But by the aide of kyng Willyam, Edgare which of ſome writers is named Dunkam was made Kyng, as eldeſt ſoonne of Malcoline.

In the. vii. yere of the reigne of kyng Willyam, Aunceline or Ancelme that was Archebiſhoppe of Yorke, was remoued to Caunterbury, as affirmeth one Chronicle. But Policronicon & Guido ſaien, that Hughe erle of Cheſter beyng ſicke and diſeaſed, in the ſixt yere of William Rufus, ſent into Normandie for Ancelme then Abbot of Barry, for thre cauſes. The firſt to viſite and ſee hym, and to bee reconciled of hym, as the manne that he moſte truſted. The ſecond

cauſe

The ſeconde cauſe was, that he ſhoulde relyeue ſome Abbayes of Englande that yͤ king vexed with greuous trybutes. And the thyrd cauſe was, that he ſhoulde founde an abbay of Cheſter, whiche place he after buylded, & made one Rycharde his chaplaine fyrſte Abbot of the place, & ſoone after he was made archebyſhop of Caunterburye. Wherby it appeareth that the ſayd ſee was voyde ouer the terme of three yeres.

ca. 8.

This ſayde .vii. yere, Englande and Normandy were greued with tribute & morreyne of men, ſo ſharply yͤ tyllinge of the earth was ſpared or put of for that yere, and therafter enſued greate hunger. This yere alſo the Scottes ſlewe theyr kinge Edgar, and reſtored againe to the rule of the lande, the forenamed Dunwald. And many gryſely and vncouth ſyghtes wer this yere ſene in England. As hoſtes of mē fyghting in the ſkye, and fyre leames and other.

cap.9

In the .x. yere of William Rufus, ſtryfe & deſenſion fell betwene hym and Ancelme biſhop of Caūterburye, for Ancelme myght not call his ſynodus nor correct the biſhops, but as the kynge woulde. The Kynge alſo chalenged the inueſtyture of byſhops, and pylled yͤ ſpiritualtie and temporaltie, with vnreaſonable taſkes and tributes, the which he ſpent vpon the towre of London, and the makynge of Weſtmynſter hall. And ouer that the kinges ſeruauntes greued and pylled Engliſh men vnreaſonably. And to this miſeri was ioyned the miſerable tormentys of Ranulphe, that was ſomtime chapleine vnto Wylyam conquerour, the whiche was at this day the kinges procuratoure, and gathered his taſkes ouer all. He was ſo couetous and ſo euyll diſpoſed, that he would leuey thre taſkes for two. He pylled the rytche, and he bare downe the poore, and cauſed many mē to loſe theyr landes for ſmall cauſes, and therfore the kinge had him in his ſynguler fauour. And by his meanes biſhoprikes were bought and ſolde as playnelye as other Marchaundyſes.

llyam
us byl
Weſt,
ſter.

The beha-
uyoure of
prieſtes in
thoſe daies

For that tyme, clarkes vſed buſhed and braided heedes, long tayled, and blaſyng clothes ſhyninge, Golden gyrdelles, and roode with gylt ſpurres, wͭ vſynge of dyuers other enormites. All which vices Ancelme woulde haue corrected, but he lacked aſſyſtence of his brethren the byſhops. For the whiche cauſe and other, he departed the lande. Wherewith the kinge beynge myſſe contented, ſente after hym ſuche perſons as robbed and ſpoyled hym, and entreated hym in moſt cruell maner. For the whiche dede Rauſe byſhop of Chycheſter blamed the kynge, and alſo rebuked all ſuche byſhops as had refuſed the partie of Ancelme, & had fauoured the kinge in cauſes concernynge the beforeſayde varyaunce.

And furthermore he withſtode the kynge and his offycers in takynge of fynes of pryeſtes for the cryms of fornycacion. For whiche cauſes, the kynge with the ſayde Rauſe was ſore amoued and dyſcontented, and opteyned ſuche fauour that he ſuſpended many churches of his dyoces. But in thende, Rauſe demeaned him in ſuch wiſe that he had his owne wyl, and his churches enlarged and freed that before were ſtopped with thornes And the king gaue vnto hym the fines of prieſtes within his dioces and endued the ſee of Chicheſter with many great giftes.

The beſeiging of a city in Normandy.

And vpon a time king William was riding towarde his diſporte of hunting, and ſodeynly a meſſenger came vnto him and ſaid: that the citie of Cenemona in Normãdye was beſeiged: Wherfore he wout long tarying or aduiſement, toke the ſtraighte way to the ſeaſyde, and ſent to his lordes charginge them to folowe. When the ſaide lordes came to his preſence, thei aduiſed him to tarye tyll his people were aſſembled. But he would nothing do after their coũſayle, but ſayde: ſuche as hym loued, he wyſte well woulde folowe hym ſhortly, and ſo yede to ſhyppe ſetting a part all parylles.

The hardines of the kynge.

The maiſter of the ſhyppe was afrayed, he ſaw the wether ſo darke and ſo cloudye, and counſayled the kynge to tarye tyll the wynde woulde blowe moore fauourably. But he cõmaunded hym to make all the ſpeede that he coulde vpon hys lyfe, ſayinge that he neuer heard, that any kynge was drowned. And ſo he paſſed the ſea, and landed in Normandye, and gathered vnto him there hys knighttes.

When the captaine of the ſeige (whoſe name was Helyas) knew of the kinges landing, he feared, & anone began to breake the ſiege. But by treaſon he was taken and broughte to the kinges preſence. To whome the kinge ſhewed ſuch pitie, that he ſuffered him to be at his libertie, Whych after the opinion of William de regibus was done moore of pryde than of compaſſion.

The.cclxxv.Chapter.

Fincha ſtede.

IN the eleuenth yere of the raigne of this William the Redde, at a towne called Finchanſter in the country of Barkeſhyre, a well caſt out bloud as before it had done water. And after by the ſpace of fyftene dayes great flames of fyre were ſeene in the elemente in ſodrye places and tymes. Thys yeare alſo the two Earles of Shroſweſburye and of Cheſter, eyther named Hugh, by the kynges commaundement entred with their knightes the Ile of Man, or Angleſay, and ſlewe therein manye Welſhemen, and geldyd manye moe.

A ſtra thynge.

Welſh gelded.

Amonge the whyche a Prieſte named Kynredus. was drawen oute of a Churche and ſerued the ſame wyſe, and alſo cutte hys tonge out of his head, and put out hys one eye.

In the whyche ſeaſon and time the kynge of the Northgaynes of Norwaye, wanne the Iles called than Orcades, and nowe Orkeyes, and after came wyth his ſtrengthe into the foreſayde Iſle of Manne, where at the ſame ſeaſon, were the ſayde two Earles. Than betwene theym was a mortall fyghte, in the whyche Hugh Earle of Shroweſburye was ſtricken with an arrowe in the eye, and dyed within eyghte dayes after.

But as ſaith Guydo, the Danes

were chaſed and the Engliſhmen had the victorie.

Kinge william was muche in Normandie, for ſo muche as Robert his brother was all this ſeaſon in the holy lande, of whoſe actes ſhall ſome deale bee touched in the ſtorie of Henrye the fyrſt. And william hadde muche payne to rule the Normans, for they rebelled often againſt him.

hat the
g ſaids
Weſt-
ter hall

In the .xii. yeare of his raygne, he came oute of Normandye, and when he ſawe the hall of Weſtminſter that he hadde cauſed to bee builded, he was therewith diſcontented, that it was ſo lytle. Wherfore, as it is rehearſed of ſome writers, he intended yf he had lyued to haue made a larger, and that to haue ſerued for a chamber.

orʒaũce

Roberte Loſaunge, that ſome time hadde bene abbot of Ramſay and than biſhoppe of Thetforde by gyfte of a thouſande pounde to the king, repented him after, and bewept that vnſkylful deede, and tooke hys waye to Roome, and did for it his adioyned penaunce, and after retourned into Englande, and tourned his ſee from Thetforde to Norwich, and founded there a fayre monaſtery of his owne goodes, and not of the patrimonye of Chriſtes church. But therin is a doubt to conſider. For he was firſte an abbot and after a biſhoppe.

7.ca.10

About this time, by the meanes of one Stephen Harding a mõke of Sherborn, an Engliſhman, the order of Siſteaux or white monkes had his beginning in the wildernes of Ciſterye within the prouince of Burgoyne, as witneſſeth Ranulphe monke of Cheſter. But other writers, as Jacobus Philipus, and the authour of Cronica cronicarum, Matheolus, wyth other, ſayen ŷ this Stephen was the ſeconde abbotte of that place, and that it was fyrſte founded by the meanes of one Roberte abbot of Molinenſe, in the yere of grace m.xcviii. which to folow their ſayinge ſhould be in the .ix. yere of the reigne of this kynge.

This order was after brought into Englande by one called Walter Eſpeke, that founded the fyrſte abbaye of that religion at Ryuall aboute the yeare of grace .xi. C. xxxi. The whiche ſhould be about the .xxxi. yeare of the fyrſt Henrye then kinge of Englande. Somewhat of their religion is touched in the .x. Chapter of the .viii. boke of Polichronicon.

Li.7. ca.11

The returne of William Ruf into Englande.

After that kyng william as before is ſayde, was retourned oute of Normandye, many wonderfull prodegies, and tokens, were ſhewed in Englande, as the ſwelling or riſyng of ŷ water of Thamis, in ſuch wiſe that it drowned many townes, & did much harme by out paſſinge hys boundes in dyuers places aboute London and elles where, with diuers other thinges which I ouerpaſſe.

Straunge wonders & tokens.

The king was warned of thys and tolde by hys familiers that god was not contente wyth hys lyuynge. But hee ſette all at noughte, and made of it a ſcoffe or iape.

In the .xiii. yere of his reigne and beginning thereof, the third daye of Auguſt, after the ſaying of Ranulph, this king William beinge at his diſport at hunting within the new foreſt by glauſing of an arowſhot of a knight named Walter Tyrell, was wounded to the death, in the.xliiii. yere of his age. After which dede, the ſayd Walter escaped and ſaued himſelf, for few there were that him purſued. And ſo the kinge thus wounded was layde vpon an horſe litter, and ſo conueyed to Wincheſter, where ſhortlye after he died and was buryed.

Of this man might be made a much longer ſtory, yf all his dedes ſhoulde be touched. The whyche tooke vpon him great thinges, & much greater entēded if he might he haue liued. The daye before he was ſlayne, one aſked him where he woulde kepe his Chriſtenmas. At Poitiers (ſaide the kinge) for the Earle intendeth to go toward Jeruſalem, and I wyll aſſaye to haue his earledome in morgage, for well I knowe he muſte cheuiche for money to perfourme that iourney. The daye when Wyllyam died, he helde in his handes ẏ thre biſhopriches, of Chaunterbury: of wincheſter and of Saliſburye, and diuers abbayes, of the whiche he let ſome to ferme.

Alſo he refrayned the money that of olde tyme was payed to Rome called Rome ſcotte.

Of this William reporteth Herye of Huntingdon, and ſayeth, that though this man were light of ſome thinges: yet he was ſtedfaſte and ſtable of his promiſe, ſo that what he promyſed, good or euyll ſhoulde bee perfourmed. And thoughe hee were named couetouſe, he ſhould ſeeme that he was lyberall, as is ſhewed by this narration folowing.

Upon a ſeaſon when the abbot of a place in England was dead, two monkes of the ſame place, the which before hadde gathered money, made their frends to king William, and offred large offers either of them to bee promoted to that dignitie. There was alſo a thyrd monke, the whiche of mekeneſſe and of humilitie folowed the other two, to the intent that vpon him that the kinge had admitted for abbot, he would haue geuen attendaunce, and as his chaplayne to haue wyth hym retourned. The kinge called before hym the two monkes ſeuerallye, and either outprofered other. As he caſt his eye aſide, he ſpied the third the which he demed hadde comen for the ſame cauſe. Then the king called hym and aſked hym yf hee woulde geue anye moore then hys brethren hadde offered to bee abbotte. But he anſwered to the kynge and ſayde, that would nother offer nor yet gene for it one penye, nor woulde hane ſo greate a charge by anye meane wrongefull.

When the kynge had well vnderſtanden this thyrde Monkes anſwere, he ſayde that he was beſt worthye to bee abbotte, and to haue the rule of ſo holye a charge: and ſo he gaue vnto hym that benefice without taking any penye.

This kinge Wyllyam vſed alwaye lemmans, wherefore he died without iſſue legittimate, whē he hadde raygned as before is ſayde, fullye twelue yeares and adde dayes.

¶ The.ccxxvi. Chapter.

7. ca. 12

HEnry the. iii. ſonne of Wyllyam Conquerour, and fyrſt of that name, whiche for his conning was ſurnamed beu clerke, began his reygne and dominion as kinge of Enlande, the fyft day of Auguſt, in the yeare of our Lord. xi. hundred and one, and the. xliii. yere of the fyrſte Philip, then kinge of Fraunce, and was Crowned at Weſtminſter, ryghte ſhortely after, of Thomas archebyſſhop of Yorke, and Morys byſſhop of London.

This Henry in his youth plyed him to ſuche ſtudye, that he was inſtruct in the vii. Artes lyberall. Anone he made holy churche free, and vſed Saynete Edwardes lalawes, with the amendemente of theym.

He put out of his Courte, nyce and wanton men, and cloſed Ranulphe Byſſhop of Durham in the towre of London, the which as ye before haue harde, was ſo greate with wyllyam his Brother, and ſent for Ancelme archebyſſhop of Caunterburye, which before was fled for the tyrannye of Wyllyam Rufus.

ing Hen
made
r mea-
res.

This Henry chaſtyſed the olde vntrue meaſure, and made a yerde of the length of his owne Arme, with diuers other thynges refourmyng, that longe before his daies hadde bene myſſe vſed, and he abhorred the exceſſe of meates and drinkes, and vſed to fyghte more with good Counſayle, then with the Sworde.

he conti
ence of
is king.

In the ſecõde yere of his reigne Roberte his Brother, that by all this ſeaſon had bene occupyed in warres vpon Chriſtes ennemies, hauinge worde of the death of his brother wyllyam, and howe his brother Henrye had taken vppon him as kinge, returned into Normandye, and there made preparacion for to come into Englande.

The return of Robert brother to kig Henry.

In this ſeaſon alſo, was broken out of priſon Ranulphe Byſſhoppe of Durham, and comen to the ſaide Robert into Normandy. The which excited Duke Robert in all that he myght to warre vpon his brother Henry: ſo that he aſſembled a ſtrong army of knightes, and toke ſhyppynge, and landed in proceſſe of tyme at Portyſmouth. But by mediacion a peace was made, and that in ſuche condicion, that he ſhoulde haue three thouſande markes yearely, as before was promyſed vnto hym by william Rufus his brother, with other condicions of ſucceſſion and other thinges, the whiche I paſſe ouer for lengeth of tyme.

Thus Roberte beynge contented, contrarye to the myndes of his Lordes; after a ſeaſon he had dyſported him in England, returned into Normandy, where of his Lordes he was for this and other deedes before doone, as after is ſhewed, lytell or leſſe and leſſe ſette by. For albeit, by his fathers lyfe he had victorye, and vtterly dyſpleaſed him, as ſome deale before is touched, yet by his manhoode and manfull dedes, he fell into the fauour of the people, and dyd manye and great notable actes, and ſpeciallye at the wynnynge of the Cytie of Acon vppon the myſcreantes and Turke.

And ſo he was choſen Kinge of Jeruſalem. The whiche he refuſed for paine and trauayle that he ſhoulde haue withall, and alſo for the couetouſneſſe of the crowne of Englande. For as ſoone as he hadde knowledge of the deathe of his brother Wyllyam anone he departed the countrey, and ſped him homewarde in all that he might. For the withe deede as after affirmeth myne authour: he ſpedde the worſe in all hys deedes after.

Thys Roberte was wyſe in counſayle, ſtrong in battayle, and alſo right liberall: and in hys retourne from Hieruſalem, maryed the doughter of Wylliam de Auerſana Lorde of Apulia, with whom he receyued great ſommes of money for his dower, the whiche by meane of his liberalitie he ſpente ſhortlye after. Then fortune beganne to frowne vppon duke Robert, and ſette his owne Lordes agaynſt him, that they ſente vnto kinge Henrye hys brother, wyllynge hym to come into Normandye, and they woulde delyuer the countrey vnto hym, and hold him for their chiefe Lorde and gouernoure. Whereunto as ſayeth the Engliſhe cronicle, kinge Henrye ſoone conſented.

But or euer thys warre betwene the ſayde duke Robert and kinge Henry beganne, this Henry maryed Maude or Molde, the daughter of Malcolyne kynge of Scotlande, and of Margarete his wife doughter of Edwarde the outlawe, as in the beginninge of William Conqueroure is touched.

Of the whyche Molde thys Henrye receyued after ſome wryters, two ſonnes and two doughters, that is to ſaye: Wyllyam and Rycharde, Maude and Marye.

And alſo the ſayde Aucthoure with other, ſaye that Robert of Normandye came into England in the fourth yeare of the raygne of kynge Henrye, and had good chere of his brother and ſyſter. For the whiche he at the requeſte of hys ſayed ſyſter releaſed to hys brother the forenamed tribute of three thouſande markes. But by euyll tale tellers and couetouſnes of Signorye, thys brotherly loue was after diſſolued, in ſuche wiſe that the kynge with a ſtronge armye ſayled into Normandye, and helde hys brother wyth ſo ſharpe warre, that he chaſed him from one countrey to another, and wan from hym Roan, Caan, Faloys, & all the good townes of Normandye: and laſtlye conſtrayned hym to aſke helpe of Philippe kynge of Fraunce, and after of the Earle of Flaunders, but he fayled of theym bothe. Then wyth ſuche power as he coulde make he gaue battayle vnto his brother kynge Henrye. In the which he was taken and ſent ouer into England, and putte into the Caſtell of Cardiffe in Wales, where he remayned as pryſoner while he liued. And when he was deade, he was buried at Gloureſter.

Henry th
firſt ſail
into Nor
mandye
a great
my to w
vpon hys
brother.

Duke Ro
bert was
taken.

In this tyme and ſeaſon, as it were in the thirde yeare of kynge Henrye, the Churche of Saynċte Barthelmewe in Smythfiede of London was begonne to be founded, of a minſtrell of this kynge Henries, named Rayer, and after perfourmed and ended by good and well diſpoſed Citizins of the Citie

S. Barth
mewes in
Smithfie
buylded
a minſtre

Citie of London.

mithfeld
s a lay-
w for
Citie.

Thys place of Smythfield was at that daye a lay-ſtowe or ſtall or dure or ſyth, and the place where the felons and other tranſgreſſours of the kynges lawes were put to execution.

¶ The .ccxxvii. Chapter.

l.7.ca.13

oliſme.

So as kynge Henry had fynyſhed his warre in Normandie, and was returned into Englande Robert de *Boleſin whiche was the eldeſt ſonne of Roger de Montgomerike Earle of Shrewſbury, aroſe agaynſte the kinge, and manned his Caſtels of Shrewſburi, of Bruggys, of Arundel, and of Tekynhyll, and incoraged the Walſhmen agayne the king. But the king purſued ſo cruelli the ſaid Robert, that within .xl. dayes he wan all thoſe Caſtelles, and ſlew many of his men, and gat the fauoure of the Walſhmen by gyftes and pleaſaunte wordes, and alſo compelled the ſayd Robert to forſake England. The whiche ſailed into a corner of Normandye, and kept him there ſecretlye, till ſuche time as to him was thyther commen william Earle of Cornewal which william was alſo Earle of *Norton in Normandy. When theſe two Earles were aſſociate, they gathered to theym a greate ſtrengthe of Normans, and dyd great harme within the prouince. Wherfore the king ſayled thyther and made ſharpe warre vpon thē. In the which he loſt many of his men. But in the ende he put from them their ſtrength, & tooke them both priſoners, and ſo helde them the terme of theyr liues. And that doone, he ſet that country in good reſt and peace, and after retourned into Englande. After whiche retourne, king Henry made ſharp lawes agaynſt theeues, and other that vſed vnlefull meanes. In whiche lawes was contayned loſinge of life, of eyes, of ſtones, and other mēbers of man as the gilte required.

olom

King Henrie made ſharpe lawes for tranſgreſſours.

And ſoone after Ancelme archebiſhop of Caunterbury, aſſembled a great counſell at London of the Clergie of Englande. By aucthoritie of the whiche counſel, dyuers Abbottes and other, wer put frō theyr dignitie, for that they had taken before tyme theyr Abbayes by vnleful meanes. *And among all other decrees one was, that Preeſtes ſhould forgo theyr wyues. Then ſtrife fell between the king and Ancelme, for that that he woulde not ſacre the Preeſtes yͭ had taken inueſtiture of lewde mens handes, whiche before was forbodden vpon payne of curſing. But Gyrald archbyſhop of Yorke, for the pleaſure of the king, ſacred ſuch Biſhops. Wherfore Ancelme beyng diſcontent, departed yͤ land and yode to Rome, to ſhewe thys wyth other thinges to the biſhop therof, which at yͭ day by moſt accorde of writers, ſhould be Paſcal the ſeconde.

It ſhould apere that vntyll this time preeſtes had wyues in Englande which was ten.C.and odde yeres after the incarnaciō of Chriſt.

In the ſixt yere of the kyng, the countrey of Flaunders was ſore blemyſhed and hurte by meane of the ſee, ſo yͭ the Flemminges yode aboute to haue ſuccoure of dwelling, and requyred of the kinge to haue licence that they myght inhabite them in the eaſt part of the ryuer of Twede, the which to thē was graunted. But after a certaine of yeres, thei were remoued into Weſte wales, where they remayned a longe whyle, but after they ſpred al England ouer.

A prodigie or token.

In the ſeuenth yere of this king vpon a Fridai at night in the firſt weeke of cleane Lente, was ſeene an vncouth ſtarre betwene yͤ ſouth and the weſt, the whyche nightly appeared at one howre, and continued ſo by the ſpace of .xxv. daies. And for agaynſte that oute of the eaſt parte, apeared a greate leuyn or beme of brightneſſe, which ſtretched towarde the ſayd ſtarre. And vpon there Thurſeday next enſuinge, where ſeen two Moones, that one in yͤ Eaſt, and that other in the Weſt.

Two Moones ſene at once.

And in this yere, Ancelme by the kinges agreement retourned agayne from Rome, and ſhortlye after called a conuocacion at London. In the whiche by the byſhop of Romes auethorite, it was newlie confirmed and enacted that no temporall man after yͤ day ſhould make inueſture wyth Croſſe or with rynge.

Li.7.ca.14

In the .viii. yere of the reygne of king Henry, the fourthe Henry Emperour of Almayne, the whyche had maried Molde the eldeſt daughter of king Henry, when ſhe was of the age of .v. yeres, priſoned Paſcall Biſhop of Rome, and diuers of the Cardinalles. Thys Henry alſo warred agaynſte hys father Henrie the third, and laſtly caſte him in ſtronge priſon. For which deed as affermeth Ranulph he wylfully when he had ruled the Empire .xx. yere, reſigned his dignite into the handes of Calyxtus the ſeconde of that name, then byſhop of Rome: and after came ſecretlye into Englande, and vnto Cheſter, vnwittinge his wyfe or any of his freendes, where he lyued longe after a ſtraight lyfe, and he was buried there at laſt. But to this ſaying dyſagreeth the wryters of the ſtories of Emperours. For of theim it is witneſſed, that this Henry the Emperour after he had ruled the empyre as before is ſayde .xx. wynter, he died at a place in Almayne called Spyre, & there was buried, with this ſcripture vpon his tombe.

The Ep
taphe of
Henry th
iiii. Empe
rour of Al
maine

Filius hic, pater hic, auus hic, proauus iacet iſthic,

Whiche is to meane in our vulgare tonge as foloweth.

The ſonne here lieth, with alſo the father.
The belſyr, for and the great graūd father.

When Henrye the Emperoure was thus dead as after it ſhalbe ſhewed, when cōuenience of time requyreth, what became of hys wyfe it ſhall there be declared.

In the .ix. yere of the reygne of kynge Henrye, the Archebyſhop Ancelme profeſſed Gerarde Archbyſhop of Yorke, to the yoke of his obediēce, as he was before taught by the lore of Lanfranke his predeceſſour. And the tenth day of Auguſt folowinge, he ſacred fyue byſhops at one time, as of Wyncheſter, of Saliſburi, of Exeter, of Hartforde, and Clamorgan. And king Henry ordayned a Byſhops ſee at Ely, & ordeyned there Hērie that had been Byſhop of Bangor, & beſet Cambrygeſhyre to yͤ ſee of Ely. And to the byſhops ſee of

Lincolne

Lincoln, he gaue his owne towne of Spalding, for he had miniſhed that ſee by the preferment of Ely.

he death ancelme

In the tenth yere died Ancelme archbiſhop of Cãterburie. After whoſe death the ſee was voyd. v. yeres, and the goodes of the churche ſpente to the kinges vſe. And when he was prayed to helpe the Churche, that was withoute an head and a paſtor, he vſed to aunſwere, that his father and alſo his brother had accuſtomed to ſet there the beſt proued men yͤ they might finde: And to the entente that he myght do yͤ ſame, he tooke the more tyme and leyſure. Wyth ſuch mylde anſweres ſo put of the time, that he fylled his cofers wͭ the great ſummes of the benefice.

contra-
ſie be-
ne
wes the
nche
ge and
g Hen-

About this time (as witneſſeth the French cronicle) a contruerſie began betweene the king and Lewes king of Fraũce ſonne to Philip the firſt: This Lewes was ſurnamed Lewes yͤ greate, other for his bigneſſe of perſon, or els for greatnes of his deedes. This Lewes ſent vnto king Henry beyng in Normandy, and gaue vnto him monition or homage for the duchy of Normãdie, and alſo that he ſhould reſtore vnto him or bete downe to the ground, the Caſtell of Gyſours, and alſo recompence and reſtore for hurtes & harmes that hys Normans had doone in thoſe partes. But all this of king Henry was denied, and ſhortly after ſkyrmiſhes and Cockefights began betwene the ſayd two princes, king Henry liynge at the ſayd Caſtel of Gyſours, and Lewes at a place called mounte Calue. But this increaſed in ſuch wiſe, yͤ after either Prince ſought more roome places, whoſe knyghtes ſõdry times met. But of any notable battaile I fynde no remẽbraũce, albe it that yͤ ſayd warre continued by the terme of two yeres. In the ende of which two yeres William the eldeſt ſonne of king Henry, beinge a childe and within age, contented ſo wel the minde of Lewes that he refrained of his warre for that time.

A greate erthquake

In the. xiii. yere, at Shreweſbury was a great earthe quake, and at Notingham frõ the morne to the vndertyde. The riuer of Trente was ſo foredryed in the moneth of June, as ſayth Guydo that men went ouer drie. And the ſtarre called ſtella cometa, or the blaſing ſterre, apered ſoone after. Thervpon folowed an harde winter, great death of the people, and ſcarſete of vitayle, by the greate morayne of beaſtes, in thys yeare alſo the kinge founded the Abbey of Hyde withoute the walles of Wincheſter, that of olde time was within the walles.

¶The. ccxxviii. Chapter.

Li. 7. ca. 15

IN the. xv. yeare of his reygne the king entended to haue promoted Farycus Abbot of Abyndon vnto the ſee of Canterbury: But by a counſell kept at Wynſore of the Byſhops, the kinges mynde was chaunged and to that ſee was then admitted Raufe that was Byſhop of Rocheſter.

And the ſame yeare one Thurſtoone was choſen Archebyſhop of Yorke, the whiche wyth ſayde his profeſſion of obediente that he ſhould owe vnto the ſee of Canterbury, wherfore at lengthe he was depriued of hys dignite. But after by labour that he made to Paſcall the byſhop of Rome be forenamed, the ſayde byſhoppe of rome wrote vnto the king that he ſhould reſtore Thruſtone agayne to the ſee of Yorke. By whiche meane he was again reſtored, but yet he diſdayned to do hys lawful obedience vnto Raufe archbiſhop of Caunterbury. Then the ſtryfe was renewed, whiche Lanfranke before (as ye haue heard in yͤ third Chapter of Wyllyā Conquerour) did appeace, and was brought in argument before the byſhoppe of Rome.

The whiche at the kinges requeſt, promiſed that he would nothing do nor ordeyne, that ſhould be derogacion to the Archbyſhop of Caunterbury, or to the dignity of his Church. But in concluſyon the Byſhop of Rome gaue ſuch a defuſe ſentēce in this matter, that he lefte the ſtrife vndetermined & vnaſſoyled.

And when the kinges procuratours with alſo the Archbiſhop of Caunterbury were abſente, were it for mede or for fauoure, the byſhop of Rome was ſo bowed, that he forſooke the olde rule vſed before his dayes, and ſacred the ſaid Thurſtone, and gaue vnto hym yͤ palle. For thys deed the king was ſore diſcontented with Thurſtone and warned him the entre of hys lande. Wherefore the Byſhop of Rome wrote after ſhortely to the king, willing him to ſuffer Thurſtone to occupie the ſee peaſeably, or he ſhoulde be accurſed and ſuſpended by the dignity of the office of Caunterbury, and ſo Thurſton enioyned his ſee.

In the yere of our lorde .xi. hundred & .xviii. (as ſayth the Frēche cronicle) which was the .xvii. yere of this king Henrie the firſte, the warre was agayne quickened betweene kinge Henrie and Lewes king of Fraunce. Wherof was the occaſion, as ſayth the ſayd French cronicle. Thibaude Erle of Chartres. whych Thibaud was greeued by the Frenche kinge, and for neceſſitie requyred king Henrie of ayde and helpe: to whome yͤ kinge as to his kinſman ſente ayde and ſuccoure. And afterward the king ſayled ouer with a ſtronge armie, and ſent a noble man named Stephan into the Lordſhyp of Bry, to defend it agaynſt yͤ French kinge. When Lewes vnderſtoode that king Henrie, was landed in Normandie wͭ ſo greate power, he in all the haſt aſſembled a ſtrong power, & drew him toward the king.

The wa
betwen
king He
rie and t
French
king re
nued.

But there were ſo ſtronge holdes manned with Normans, and alſo ſuch deepe and great Ryuers, that the Frenche king might not winne vnto king Henry.

Then laſtly by a feate of warre whiche wer longe to reherſe, he wan a Towne named Lingues in Cauſe, in the whiche Towne was a bridge to paſſe the Riuer of Thee, and ſo into Normandie. When a certayne of the knightes of Lewes, had thus wōne the foreſayd Towne, the ſayde Lewes wͭ his people ſped him ſhortlie after, and reſcued his foreſayde knyghtes: and then ſpoyled and robbed the towne which was riche, for ſo much as it had bene in quiet and reſt manie yeres before. He alſo ſlew ſlewe and tooke pryſoners all the Normans there dwellinge, & put in theyr ſteed Frenchemen. And yͤ doone he ſped hym toward kyng Henry, the whiche was at a caſtel called Male aſſyſe, & there made purueyaunce for the defence of the Frenchemen. And when he had garniſhed it to hys pleaſure, he departed thence. But not long after the Frenche kynge came thyther with his whole hoſte of Frenchemen, and after manie ſore and cruell aſſautes, wan the ſayd Caſtell, and bet it downe euen wyth the grounde, After which ſeaſon (as ſaith the ſayd Cronicle) fel to the Frenche kynge manie and dyuers myſfortunes. For ſhortly after amonge other myſchaunces, a noble captayne of his named Angueran de Chanmounte, the whiche hadde doone muche harme in Normandie, to kinge Henry, and wonne there ſome Caſtels and other ſtronge holdes, died ſodaynelie. And in ſhort tyme after, Baldwyne Earle of Flaunders a man of great ſtrength and puyſſaunce, as he beſieged a Caſtell was wounded in the face, and died wythin ſixe daies after. Then Fauques Earle of Aungeos, in whom alſo this Lewes affyed much and truſted, maried hys daughter vnto Wylliam the eldeſt ſonne of kyng Henrie, and refuſed the kinge of Fraunces parte, and ayded and aſſiſted king Hērī in al yͭ he might ſo that daylie the power of kynge Henry increaſed, and the Frenche kinges miniſhed. Laſtly theſe two Prynces mette wyth bothe theyr hoſtes in a playne field, and fought a deadly and cruel battaile where in the ende yͤ French kinge was ouercomen, and loſt much of his people, and was compelled to flee vnto a place called Audely for his ſauegarde. But thys ouerthrow of Frenchmen is excuſed in the moſte fayreſt maner, ſo that they excuſe them ſelues & ſay that king Hery ſet vpon king Lewes, when he was not ware, but hys knightes all out of araye and order, and alſo kyng Henrye had far exceedyng number of men ouer yͤ theyr kinge had, with other wordes of boſte of theym ſelues, and ſlaunder of Engliſhmen, the whiche as to me appereth is an augmentacion of theyr owne ſhame. But Ranulphe the Monke ſaieth ſhortlie, that kinge Henrie ouercame the Frenche kyng royally in battayle.

William the ſonne of Henrie did homage to the Frenche king for the landes of Normādie.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorye, finallie theſe ſayd prynces were agreed, and Wyllyam the ſonne of kinge Henrie did homage vnto yͤ French king for the lādes of Normandie, by the agreement of hys father: For the king thought hym ſelfe to good to be vnder the obeyſaunce of the French kyng. Then king Henry cauſed his freemen of England and of Normandye, to do homage vnto hys ſonne Wyllyam.

And ſoone after Fauques before named left hys Earledome of Angeoy or Angers, in guidyng of king Henry, and rode him ſelf into the holy land, and willed in his teſtamēt that if he retourned not agayne, that the ſayd Earledome ſhould remayne vnto his ſonne in law Wyllīā, ſonne of king Henry, which had maried his daughter.

Li.7.ca.16

Aboute the twentie yere of the reygne of kinge Henrie, Queene

Mold or Mawd hys wife died in Normandye, the whyche in her youthe was ſet by her father, king of Scottes into a Nunry, & there ware and uſed the vayle and Abbite of a Nunne. For the whiche cauſe when kynge Henry was agreable to take her vnto wife, this matter fill in great diſputacion, and Ancelme then Archebyſhop of Caunterbury was ſore agaynſte that mariage a ſeaſon of tyme. But at length it was ſufficiently proued that ſhe was there as a fygure, a woman wearynge that Abbyte wythoute profeſſyon of order: And this was thus ordred by her father, to the ende to put by vnworthie wowers. Thys of writers was reputed for a bleſſed and holy woman, after the lyuing of a worldlie woman.

When kinge Henry had contynued in Normandy vpon the ſeaſon and terme of .iii. yeres, he toke ſhipping at Harflete in Normandie, and ſailed haplie into Englãd the ſame daie, that is to meane the .xxiiii. daie of Nouember, as ſayth ſome writers: And ſhortlie after William Duke of Normandie, with Richarde his brother. Notha the Counteſſe of Perſie, Rychard Earle of Cheſter, wyth his wife the kinges nice, and the archdeacon of Harford and other to the numbre of an hundred and .xl. perſons, tooke ſhipping at the ſayde porte, and were all drowned a Bocher onlie except. Which miſfortune fell by the ouer ſight of ỹ maiſter and other, which fell at a diſſencion in the nyghte amonge thẽ ſelues, by reaſon whereof they ranne vpon a rocke as ſhewed the foreſayd Butcher. From this daũger William Duke of Normandy was eſcaped, and was in the ſhyp boate neare vnto the lande. But when he hearde the lamentable crie of the Counteſſe Notha, he commaunded the rowers to returne and ſaue the ſaid Counteſſe Which done, by what miſfortune I cannot ſaie, after ſhe was receaued into the boate, were it by tempeſt or ouer charging of the boate or otherwiſe, they were all ſwalowed of the ſea, ſo that none of thẽ was after found, but part of their goodes. Of this Duke William ſome diſclaunderous wordes are left in memorie, both in the Engliſhe Chronicle, and alſo of other writers, the which I ouerpaſſe.

¶ The .ccxxix. Chapter.

The p
of Wod
ſtocke.

IN the .xxi. yere of his reygne, kynge Henrye made the parke of Wodſtock beſide Oxenforde, with other pleaſures to the ſame. Fauques Erle of Angiers returned out of the holie lande, and maried the ſiſter of her that before he had maryed vnto William duke of Normandy, vnto the ſonne of Roberte Curthoiſe and gaue with her the Earledom of Cenomannia. And ſtrife began to kindle betwean kinge Henrie & the ſayde Fauques, for the withholdinge of the dowre or ioynture of his firſt doughter, maried vnto Wylliam the kinges ſonne.

In the .xxiii. yere of king Henrie died Rauffe archbyſhop of Cãterburie, and one named William was ſet in the ſee after him. And the kinge in this yeare began the founda-

e foun-
ion of
Abbey
Reding.

foundacion of the Abbey of Redinge. And Johñ a Cardinall of Rome was ſent from Calixt the ſeconde of that name then Biſhop of Rome, for certaine matters cõcerning the Byſhop of Rome. In the tyme of whiche his ſo beynge here, the Cardinall made ſharpe proceſſe agaynſt preeſtes that noryſhed Chriſten moyles, and rebuked theym by open publiſhmente and other wyſe, ſo that he wanne him there but ſmal & litle fauour. But thys diſimuled doctour toke ſo great feruēce in the correction of the iudgemente of Preeſtes of England, that he forgat the lore & counſaile of the famous Philoſopher Caton, which in the boke of hys counſayle or of wyſedome, thus ſayeth.

Quæ culpare ſoles, ea tu ne
feceris ipſe.
Turpe eſt doctori, cum culpa
redarguit ipſum.

The whiche two verſes maye be Engliſhed as foloweth.

Auyſe thee well, let reaſon be thy guyde
VVhen other folke thou art aboute to blame,
That ſuche defaute in thee be not eſpied.
For yf there be, then ſhalte thou haue the ſhame.
A mannes honour ſuche thinges woll reclayme.
It is full foule when that a mã wol teache.
If that his deed agaynſt his ſaiyngs preache.

A chaſte Cardinal.

This counſayle was not remembred of the ſayd Cardinall. For in the euening after he had le wolie blowen his horne, and ſaid it was a deteſtable ſinne to aryſe from ẏ ſyde of a ſtrumpet and ſacre the body of Chriſt, he was taken with a ſtrumpette to hys open ſhame and rebuke.

In the .xxv. yere of kyng Henrie was called a councell at London, where the ſpyrytuall condeſcended that the kynges offycers ſhould punyſhe preeſtes that cheriſhed the foreſayd Mules: But ẏ ſayde officers tooke money, and ſuffered the preſtes to ſpurre their Mules at theyr pleaſure. whiche offence at this day is ſo clearly renounced of all ſpiritual men, that neither kinge nor biſſhop taketh for it any fines, nor yet correction neceſſarie to be done for the ſame.

Li. 7. ca. 17

The firſt comminge of ẏ Gray Freers into Englãd

In the .xxvii. yere of his reigne (as reporteth an olde cronicle) the Gray Freres by procuring of the king came fyrſt into Englande, & had theyr fyrſte houſe buylded at Caunterburie. And aboute thys time by moſte accorde of wryters died Henry the .iiii. Emperour of ẏ name, whiche (as before is touched) maried Mold the daughter of king Henry. After whoſe death the ſaide Empreſſe came vnto her father in Normandie. When king Henry was aſcertained of ẏ death of Henry themperour, for ſo much as he had nõ heire male, he cauſed ſoone after the more party of hys lordes of Englande, as wel ſpirituall as temporal, to ſwere in his preſence ẏ they ſhould kepe ẏ land of England to the vſe of Mawde the Empreſſe, yf he died withoute iſſue male, and ſhe then ſuruiued.

In the.xxviii.yere of Kinge Henrie, Geffrei Plantagenet Earle of Angeou, maried Molde the Empreſſe. Of the which two deſcended Henry the ſeconde, that after Stephan was king of England. And after his comming then into England, he then founded the abbey of Reding before ſpoken of. And ouer yͭ he releſed vnto Engliſhmen the Dane gelte, that was by his father & his brother renued

The dane gelt releaſed.

In the.xxx. yere of this kinge Henry, died the Earle of Flāders and kinge Henry (ſaith Ranulph) was by agreement of Lewes the Frenche king made Earle, & next heyre and inheritour to the ſayde Earldome. But it is not expreſſed by what maner of title or ſucceſſion.

In the.xxxii. yere of the kynge died Robert Curthoſe the kinges brother, the which he had kept as priſoner in the Caſtell of Cardyfe from the fourth yere of his reigne or there aboute, whoſe corps (as before is ſhewed) was buried at Glouceter before the high aulter. And aboute this time was founded the Priorye of Norton in the prouynce of Cheſter, by one wylliam, the ſonne of Nychelle. And the Abbey of Combremer in the ſame prouynce, was alſo founded aboute the ſame time.

The byrth of Henry the ſecond.

In the.xxxv.yere of king Henrie, was borne of Molde the Empreſſe, Henry ſhort mantel, or Hẽrie the ſeconde.

Kinge Henrie beynge in Normandie after ſome writers, fell from or wyth hys horſe, whereof he caught his death. But Ranulphe ſayeth, he tooke a ſurfet by eating of a lamprey, and therof died when he had reygned full.xxxv. yeres and odde monethes.

Then the kinges bowels were drawen out of his body, and then ſalted with much ſalte. And for to auoyde the ſtenche which had infected many men, the bodie was laſtlie cloſed in a Bulles ſkyn, and yet it was not all ſtinted. He that clenſed the head, died of the ſtrenche of the brayne.

The d
of He
the fyr

Then laſtly yͤ body was brought into Englande, and buried in the Abbey of Reding, that he had before founded. Then yͤ fame of him was blowen abrode, as it is blowen of other Princes, & ſayd that he paſſed other men in three thinges. In wit, in eloquence and fortune of battayle. And other ſayde he was ouercomen with three vices, with couetiſe, with crueltie, and with luſt of Lecherie.

¶ One other made theſe verſes of him as folowith.

Kyng Henry is dead, bewty of the
worlde, for whome is great dole.
Goddes now maken rowm for theyr
kinde brother. For he is ſole.
Mercurius in ſpeche, Marce in battayle, in harte ſtrong Appollo.
Iupiter in heſt, egall with Saturne
and enemie to Cupido.
King he was of right, & mã of moſt
myght, and glorious in rayninge.
And when he left his crowne, then
fell honour down, for miſſe of ſuch
a kynge.
Normandy than gan lowre, for loſſe
of their floure, and ſange wel away
England made mone, and Scotlande
did grone, for to ſe that day.

¶ The.ccxxx. Chapter.

wes the
ne of
firſte
ilip.

Lewes ẏ ſone of the fyꝛſte Phylip begã his reigne ouer ẏ Frenchmenne, in the yere of oure loꝛde. xi. hundꝛed and. vii, to reken hys beginning from the death of his father and the ſixt yere of the fyꝛſt Henry then kinge of Englande. This Lewes as befoꝛe is touched, was admitted vnto the rule of the land certayne yeres oꝛ his father died, and was ſurnamed Lewes the greate, foꝛ groſeneſſe of his body.

Anone as this Lewes had finiſhed the obſequy of the funeralles of his father, he wythout taryeng called a coũſayle of his loꝛdes ſpirituall and tempoꝛal, at the Citie of Oꝛleaunce, where of the Byſſhop of the ſame ſee wyth other adioynynge, he was ſolemlye anoynted and crowned. But not wythout grudge of the Archbyſſhop of Raynes, foꝛ ſo much as of cuſtome the Frenche kynges vſed there to be crowned.

Soone after the Coꝛonacion of Lewes, Guy le Rous, and Guy de Creſſie hys ſonne, whyche befoꝛe tyme had bene at debate and warre wyth Lewes, and Lewes had from theim taken the Caſtell of Gurnay: thys Guy le Rous wyth hys ſonne, ſeyng they might not pꝛeuayle agaynſte the Kyng, awayted theyꝛ tyme and ſeaſon, and eſpyed when Eudo his owne bꝛother ⁊ Erle of Coꝛbueyl went fooꝛthe on huntynge, and tooke him, and as a pꝛiſoner kept hym in the Caſtell of Bawdum. Wherof the cauſe was, foꝛ ſo muche as the ſayde Eudo woulde not aſſiſte noꝛ ayde the ſayde Guy le Rous hys bꝛother agaynſt the kynge. When this was knowen, anone the frendes and tenauntes of the ſayde Earle ſhewed thys matter vnto the kynge, beſechinge him that he woulde ayde ⁊ aſſiſt them to recouer theyꝛ naturall loꝛde. Whereunto the kinge graunted, and fooꝛthwith ſente a knight oꝛ captayne of his, named Aunceline accompanied with. xl. hoꝛeſemen befoꝛe, foꝛ ſo muche as it was ſhewed vnto the kinge that ſuche as had the rule of the Caſtel wold receyue ſuch perſons as were ſent from him, and deliuer the Caſtell with the pꝛiſoner vnto them.

Upon which appoyntment this Ancelyne as befoꝛe is ſayde, was ſent to enter this Caſtell. But all contrarye to the foꝛmer pꝛomyſe made, thys Auncelyne was betrayed and taken, and manie of his men ſlayne, and him ſelf ſet in pꝛiſon, where the ſayde Earle of Coꝛbueyll was. Whereof when the king was enfourmed, he was paſſing greuouſlie diſcontente: Wherfoꝛe in all haſte he ſped hym thyther, and compaſſed the Caſtell wyth a ſtronge ſyege, and thoſe that were within defended them manfully. In the time of ẏ whiche ſiege, nother Guy the father, noꝛ Guy the ſone, were with in the ſaide Caſtel of Baudum.

But Guy the ſonne as a luſty ⁊ ieperdous knighte, put him ſelfe in aduenture diuers wayes and times to haue entred the ſayde

Caſtell for comforte of hys men, but all was in vaine: Finally the king made ſo ſore & cruel aſſautes, that he wan the firſt warde wyth great difficultie, & after the whole and deliuered the Earle and Auncelin his ſteward, the which were in great doubt of their liues. And ſuche as he tooke priſoners of the ſouldiours, ſome he put to deathe & ſome he priſoned to their lyues ende, to the terrour and feare of other.

In proceſſe of tyme at a place called the Roche of Guy, whiche one Guy of olde time had buylded dwelled at this daye one of that ſtocke named alſo Guy, the which had to wyfe a fayre and good woman, the daughter of one William a Norman. Which William entending to diſherite the ſayde Guy, & to be lorde of that ſtronge place, vpon a time when the ſayde Guy was in the Churche or Chapel to heare his dyuyne ſeruice, entred the churche with a certain of harneſſed knightes vnder their mantellis, and fell vpon him, and al to hewed him. wherof hearinge the wife, ran as a mad woman, and fell vpon her huſband, to the entẽt to ſaue him from the ſtrokes. But the tyrauntes were ſo cruel, that they forbare nothing of their crueltie, but wounded her with her huſbande, ſo that bothe were ſlain and that doone entred the Caſtel, and ſlewe all ſuche as they founde therin.

When this William father to ẏ wife of Guy or brother to her, as affyrmeth maiſter Roberte Gagwyne, was poſſeſſed of the Caſtell of Guio, he thought therbi to rule all the countrey enuiron. But the gentiles and commons hearynge of this ſhamefull murder, aſſembled them togither, & of one mind while ſome of theym yode to the kinge to enfourme him of ẏ cruell dede, the other prepared abillementes of warre, and layde ſiege to the ſayde Caſtell. The kinge Lewes hearing of this ſhamefull deede, and the winning of ſo ſtrōg an holde, fearynge the reſcue of Englyſhmen and Normans, leaſt that Caſtell by that meane might fall in their handes, ſent his commiſſion vnto the rulers of ẏ countrey, charging them with all diligence to aſſaute that place. And if they might winne it, to putte the executours of that murder vnto moſte ſhamefull death. whiche commaundement receyued from the king, ſtrong aſſaute and cruel was made, and manfullie it was defended. But the loſſe ranne to them of the Caſtel, ſo that in proceſſe of time when this william conceyued well that he might not continue the defence thereof, he began to treate and agreed that if he might haue free yſſue for him and his, & aſſuraunce that he with his knightes might go quietlie vnto a place that he wold choſe, he would thẽ deliuer the Caſtel with all that was therin. The whiche requeſt of diuers of the head capitaynes was graunted & ſworne. But ſo ſoone as the Caſtell was deliuered, and the Frenchmen entred, the multitude not withſtanding the former promiſe and othe fell vpon the ſayde Wyllyam and his ſouldiours, and theim put vnto death by manie cruell tormentes, & finallie caſt al their careyns into the Riuer of Sayn, vpon the brinke wherof the ſayd rocke and caſtell was ſtanding.

And ſhortlie after this, enſued the warre betwene this Lewes and king Henrie of England, as it is before ſhewed in the tenthe yere of the ſaid Henrie. And after the warre ended betweene theſe two Princes, Hughe Puyſſake a mã of great myght at thoſe daies in Fraunce, rebelled agaynſt the kyng, and warred greuouſly vpon or agaynſt the counteſſe of Chartres, and robbed & pilled the churches of the countrey, as well as other places: ſo that the ſayd counteſſe with her yonge ſonne Thybaude, were faine to ſeeke ſuccour of the king. wherof the king called a counſell at his Citie of Meleyne, where againſt ẏ ſayd Hugh manye greuous cõplayntes were put. But for ſo muche as the ſayde Hugh at that time was not preſẽt to make anſwere vnto ſuch thynges as then were layed to hys charge, the king cõmaunded that the caſtell of Terry, or of Thoree in all the haſt ſhould be manned & vitayled, to the ende that by the comfort and ſtrenghth of that caſtell, the kinge yf neede required might lay ſiege to ẏ caſtel of Puiſſake, for ſo much as that one was neare adioyning vnto that other.

In whiche paſſetime the ſaide Hugh was ſommoned to appeare before the king and his counſayle but he refuſed to appeare

When the kyng was enfourmed of the garniſhing of the caſtell of Thorre, & of the diſobedience of Hugh, he aſſembled a ſtrong hoſt, and compaſſed the caſtell of Puiſſake with a ſiege, & ſet Thibaude ſonne of the Counteſſe vpon that ſide that ſtode toward ẏ prouince of Chartres, ſo that ſtrong aſſautes and cruel warre was made on euery parte.

What ſhould I make long proceſſe, to tell of the fearefull ſhot of the gunnes vpon both parties, or of the ſharpe ſhot of arrowes, the caſting of ſtones, or ſcaling of the walles, or filling of the diches, the firing of the gates, or yet the mortall & cruel fight on both parties, nor of the manifold dead bodies & maymed, by reaſon of the ſaid aſſautes, or yet ẏ manaſſes or mockes, or great boſtes or crakes vſed of ẏ ſouldiours, during this ſiege. But finally after ẏ king had lien before the ſayd Caſtel a certayn of time, he wan it by pure force, and tooke the ſayd Hugh with his acceſſaries. The which he commaũded to be kept as priſoners in the Caſtell of Thorre for a ſeaſon.

Then the king caſt downe the ſayd Caſtell of Puiſſake vnto the groũde, except a litle towre made of tymber, the whiche he reſerued for a lodginge. And that doone, ſome of the foreſayde priſoners he put vnto death, and ſome he dyſherited after the greefe of theyr offence. And ſo this foreſayd Coũteſſe of Charters with her ſonne Thybaude was in quyet of theyr countrey and caſtel of Puiſſake belonging vnto the ſaid Earledome. But howe it was, in proceſſe of time folowinge, this Thybaude entended to haue reedified there a new Caſtel, wherby as the king was enfourmed, he woulde haue encroched thinges appertayning to the Crowne of Fraunce, wherfore ẏ king withſtode it. For this a grudge fell betwene the kynge and Earle Thybaude, ſo that in proceſſe deadlie warre was made betwene them.

The which continued in ſuche wyſe to theyr both damages, that finallie the warre was agayn reuyued betwen king Lewes and king Henrie, as in the ſeuentene yere of the reigne of the ſayd Henrie is declared: by meane of thys warre betwen ẏ kinge and this Earle Thybaude, wherof the circumſtaunce wolde aſke a long leyſure to reherſe, as it is ſhewed in the French ſtory. But finally this Earle. Thybaude loſte none honoure, all be it that the Frenche cronicle wonderfully fauoureth ẏ partie of the Frenche kinge, that the reader maie well apperceyue. Quis pinxit leonem.

¶ The.ccxxxi. Chapter.

THis Lewes alſo hadde great warre with Henrie, the. iiii. of ẏ name Emperour, the whyche maried Molde the doughter of Henry the fyrſt king of England, as before is ſhewed. Wherfore the occaſion was as ſayth the French chronicle, for ſo much as the ſayde Henrie the Emperour had before time bene accurſed of Gelaſius ẏ ſeconde of that name then byſhop of Rome, at Raynes a Citie in Fraunce. For the which cauſe as there is ſurmitted, the ſayd Emperour aſſembled an houge hoſte of Almaynes and Italians, and entred the land of Fraunce, and dyd therin muche harme. But in the ende when he knew of the greate prouiſion ẏ Lewes made to mete him, and of his greate power, he then as affirmeth the French cronicle, withdrew him, and ſo auoyded the land of Fraunce without ſtroke ſtrikinge. But of this ſpeaketh nothinge the authoure that wrote the ſtory of this Henry the Emperour.

After this the Earle of Flaundres named Charles, the ſyſters ſonne of king Lewes, next Duke after Baldewyn, whiche died, as before is ſayd in the thirde Chapter of the ſtorie of kinge Henry, of a wounde in his face, this foreſaid Charles was ſore hated of the prouoſte of Brudges. The whiche to bringe his malice to ſome effecte, counſayled with hys adherentes how he might ſlea the ſayd Charles. By whoſe counſayle a meane was founde to bringe the Earle vnto Brudges, a towne of Flaundres, for the weale of the ſayde towne. After whoſe commynge vpon a day he beinge in a churche and hearinge his dyuyne ſeruice, was ſlayne of the ſaid prouoſt and his complices. Wherof hearynge king Lewes, anon with a greate army entred Flaunders, and beſieged the towne of Brudges, and laſtly toke the ſayd prouoſte. The which firſt was bounden to a poſt & then his eien with a reede ſtryken out of his head. And then ſhot with arowes, and laſtly ſet vpon a wheele, where he remayned tyll he died. And a felow of his named Bartopus, the which was conſenting to the ſame murder, was hanged vpon a galous by the waſte and armes, and by him a maſtife or great curre dogge, ẏ whiche as ſoone as euer he was ſmittē bote vpon the ſayde Bartopus, ſo ẏ in proceſſe he al to rente him, & did to him ſo great payne, ẏ laſtly he ended his

A cruell death.

ded his life in great myſery.

In the tyme of the raygne of this Lewes, the Biſhop of Clermonde was voyded hys ſee by the cruelneſſe of the earle of Auerne. Wherfore the kinge aſſembled his knyghtes and by ſtrength ſet the byſhoppe in his place agayn, maugre hys enemyes. And agayn the ſeconde time when he was putte oute by the ſayde earle the kynge reſtored hym, and tooke pledges of the earle, yͤ he remayned after in good quiet. In the latter daies of thys Lewes, hys eldeſt ſonne named Philippe, wyth a conuenient companye, vppon a daye for his diſporte rode aboute certaine ſtreetes of the citie of Parys, and as he rode, an hogge ſodeynlye ſtarte amonge the horſe feete of the chyld, wherewyth yͤ horſe beinge frayde, lepte ſodeynlye, and caſt the chyld to the ground with ſo great violēce, that he died that night folowing.

lip the
ſt ſone
Lewes,
royed
neane
hogge

For his miſhappe the king toke great heuineſſe, ſo that he waxed daylye moore feeble. And for he was vnwel die, by reaſon of ouerladynge of the fleſhe, and myghte not well trauayle, he therefore by the aduiſe of hys Lordes, admitted hys ſeconde ſonne named Lewes to the rule of the realme, and hym hee crowned by his lyfe time and alſo maryed hym vnto Elynoure, the doughter of the Duke of Guyan, by whyche he was made inherytoure vnto hys father.

rruell
ath.

And ſhortly after the kyng ſickened, and to his greate payne in an horſelitter was broughte vnto Saincte Denis, where he lyinge a ſeaſon ſicke, and knewe that the houre of hys death was nere, commaunded ſuche as were aboute him, that they ſhoulde ſprede a tapytte vpon the grounde, and then laye him vpon the ſayde tapytte, and vpon hym to be made a croſſe of aſhes, whiche all was done accordyng to his commaundement. And there he laye ſo tyll hee dyed, in the yere of hys raygne to reken from the death of hys father, vnto hys owne endynge daye, thirty yeres, ſo that he raygned .xxix. yeres full, and odde monethes, and was buryed in the monaſterye of Sainct Denis wyth great pōpe, with this ſcripture folowing vpon his tombe.

The maner of the dyinge of Lewes.

Illuſtris genitor Lodouici rex Lodouicus,
Vir clemens, Chriſti ſeruorum ſemper amicus,
Inſtitui fecit paſtorem canonicorum,
In ſella veteri trans flumen Pariſiorum,
Hanc vir magnanimus almi victoris amore,
Auro reliquiis ornauit rebus honore,
Sancti Dioniſi, qui ſeruans corpus humanum,
Martyr & antiſtes, Lodouici ſolue reatum.

¶ whiche verſes maye bee expounded in our vulgar tonge as foloweth.

The noble father of Lewes, Lewes the kynge,
To Chriſtes ſeruauntes ryght meke and louynge,

Cauſed

and Earle Thybaude, ſo that in proceſſe deadlie warre was made between them.

The which continued in ſuche wyſe to theyr both damages, that finallie the warre mas agayn reuyued between king Lewes and king Henrie, as in the ſeuentene yere of the reigne of the ſayd Henrie is declared: by meane of thys warre between ẏ kinge and this Earle Thybaude, wherof the circumſtaunce wolde aſke a long leyſure to reherſe, as it is ſhewed in the French ſtory. But finally this Earle. Thybaude loſte none honoure, all be it that the Frenche cronicle wonderfully fauoureth ẏ partie of the Frenche kinge, that the reader maie well apperceyue. Quis pinxit leonem.

¶ The.ccxxxi. Chapter.

THis Lewes alſo hadde great warre with Henrie, the. iiii. of ẏ name Emperour, the whyche maried Molde the doughter of Henry the fyrſt king of England, as before is ſhewed. Wherfore the occaſion was as ſayth the French chronicle, for ſo much as the ſayde Henrie the Emperour had before time bene accurſed of Gelaſius ẏ ſeconde of that name then byſhop of Rome, at Raynes a Citie in Fraunce. For the which cauſe as there is ſurmitted, the ſayd Emperour aſſembled an houge hoſte of Almaynes and Italians, and entred the land of Fraunce, and dyd therin muche harme. But in the ende when he knew of the greate prouiſion ẏ Lewes made to mete him, and of his greate power, he then as affirmeth the French cronicle, withdrew him, and ſo auoyded the land of Fraunce without ſtroke ſtrikinge. But of this ſpeaketh nothinge the authoure that wrote the ſtory of this Henry the Emperour.

After this the Earle of Flaundres named Charles, the ſyſters ſonne of king Lewes, next Duke after Baldewyn, whiche died, as before is ſayd in the thirde Chapter of the ſtorie of kinge Henry, of a wounde in his face, this foreſaid Charles was ſore hated of the prouoſte of Brudges. The whiche to bringe his malice to ſome effecte, counſayled with hys adherentes how he might ſlea the ſayd Charles. By whoſe counſayle a meane was founde to bringe the Earle vnto Brudges, a towne of Flaundres, for the weale of the ſayde towne. After whoſe commynge vpon a day he beinge in a churche and hearinge his dyuyne ſeruice, was ſlayne of the ſaid prouoſt and his complices. wherof hearynge king Lewes, anon with a greate army entred Flaunders, and beſieged the towne of Brudges, and laſtly toke the ſayd prouoſte. The which firſt was bounden to a poſt & then his eien with a reede ſtryken out of his head. And then ſhot with arowes, and laſtly ſet vpon a wheele, where he remayned tyll he died. And a felow of his named Bartopus, the which was conſenting to the ſame murder, was hanged vpon a galous by the waſte and armes, and by him a maſtife or great curre dogge, ẏ whiche as ſoone as euer he was ſmittē bote vpon the ſayde Bartopus, ſo ẏ in proceſſe he al to rente him, & did to him ſo great payne, ẏ laſtly he ended his

A cruell death.

ded his life in great myſery.

In the tyme of the raygne of this Lewes, the Biſhop of Clermonde was voyded hys ſee by the cruelneſſe of the earle of Auerne. Wherfore the kinge aſſembled his knyghtes and by ſtrength ſet the byſhoppe in his place agayn, maugre hys enemyes. And agayn the ſeconde time when he was putte oute by the ſayde earle the kynge reſtored hym, and tooke pledges of the earle, ỷ he remayned after in good quiet. In the latter daies of thys Lewes, hys eldeſt ſonne named Philippe, wyth a conuenient companye, vppon a daye for his diſporte rode aboute certaine ſtreetes of the citie of Parys, and as he rode, an hogge ſodeynlye ſtarte amonge the horſe feete of the chyld, wherewyth ỷ horſe beinge frayde, lepte ſodeynlye, and caſt the chyld to the ground with ſo great violẽce, that he died that night folowing.

lip the
t ſõne
ewes,
oyed
eane
hogge

For his miſhappe the king toke great heuineſſe, ſo that he waxed daylye moore feeble. And for he was vnwel die, by reaſon of ouerladynge of the fleſhe, and myghte not well trauayle, he therefore by the aduiſe of hys Lordes, admitted hys ſeconde ſonne named Lewes to the rule of the realme, and hym hee crowned by his lyfe time and alſo maryed hym vnto Elyñoure, the doughter of the Duke of Guyan, by whyche he was made inherytoure vnto hys father.

cruell
eath.

And ſhortly after the kyng ſickened, and to his greate payne in an horſelitter was broughte vnto Saincte Denis, where he lyinge a ſeaſon ſicke, and knewe that the houre of hys death was nere, commaunded ſuche as were aboute him, that they ſhoulde ſprede a tapytte vpon the grounde, and then laye him vpon the ſayde tapytte, and vpon hym to be made a croſſe of aſhes, whiche all was done accordyng to his commaundement. And there he laye ſo tyll hee dyed, in the yere of hys raygne to reken from the death of hys father, vnto hys owne endynge daye, thirty yeres, ſo that he raygned. xxix. yeres full, and odde monethes, and was buryed in the monaſterye of Sainct Denis wyth great põpe, with this ſcripture folowing vpon his tombe.

The maner of the dyinge of Lewes.

Illuſtris genitor Lodouici rex Lo
  douicus,
Vir clemens, Chriſti ſeruorum
  ſemper amicus,
Inſtitui fecit paſtorem canoni-
  corum,
In ſella veteri trans flumen Pa-
  riſiorum,
Hanc vir magnanimus almi vi-
  ctoris amore,
Auro reliquiis ornauit rebus ho-
  nore,
Sancti Dioniſi, qui ſeruans cor-
  pus humanum,
Martyr & antiſtes, Lodouici ſol-
  ue reatum.

¶ whiche verſes maye bee expounded in our vulgar tonge as foloweth.

The noble father of Lewes, Lewes
  the kynge,
To Chriſtes ſeruauntes ryght meke
  and louynge,

Cauſed to bee made of Chanons an
houſe
In a ſell of Paris, where the ſtreame
flowes,
VVhich this man myghty for loue
of Sainct Victor
VVith golde and reliques enorned
with great honour,
VVherefore Sainct Denis whiche
kepeſt his body graued,
Martyr and biſhoppe, pray that his
ſoule be ſaued.

Anglia.

¶ The.ccxxxii. Capter.

Li.7. ca.18

STephan erle of Boloyne, & ſonne of the earle of Bleſence, and of the wiues ſyſter of Henry the firſte, named Marye, beganne hys raygne ouer the realme of England in the yere of our Lord. xi. C. xxxvi. and the fyrſte yere of Lewes the, viii. of that name then king of Fraūce This was a noble man and hardie. But contrarye to his othe, after the affirmaunce of ſome wryters that he made to Molde the empreſſe, he tooke vppon him the crowne, and was crowned vppon Sainct Stephans day in Chriſtmas weeke at weſtminſter, of the archebiſhoppe of Caunterburye, the whiche in lykewyſe had made lyke othe vnto the ſaide Empreſſe in preſence of her father, as before is touched. In puniſhement whereof as menne deemed, the ſayde Archebyſhoppe dyed ſhortlye after.

And many other lordes which did accordinglyke, went not quite withoute puniſhement. A greate cauſer of this periurie (as rehearſeth one authour) was this: one Hugh Bygot ſtewarde ſometime with Henry the fyrſt, immediatly after the deceaſe of the ſayde Henrye came into Englande, and before the ſaide Archebiſhoppe and other lordes of the land tooke wilfullye an othe, and ſware that hee was preſente a lytle before the kinges deathe, when king Henry admitted and chaſe for hys heyre to bee kyng after him, Stephan hys neuew, for ſo much as Molde hys doughter hadde diſcontented him: Whereunto the archbiſhop with the other lordes gaue to haſtie credence. But thys Hughe eſcaped not vnpunyſhed, for he dyed miſerablye in a ſhorte tyme after.

When kynge Stephan was crowned, he ſware before the lords at Oxenforde, that he would not holde in his hande the benefices that were voyded, & that he wolde forgeue the Dane gelte, as kynge Henry before hym had done, with other thynges whiche I paſſe ouer. And for this Stephan drad the comming of the Empreſſe, he therefore gaue lycence vnto hys lordes, that euerye of them might buylde a Caſtell or ſtronge fortres vpon his owne ground. And ſoone after he agreed with Dauid kyng of Scottes, and receyued of him homage, after he had from hym wonne ſome townes and holdes.

The towne of Exceter rebelled againſt

…ter …lled.

agaynſt the kynge in the ſeconde yere of hys raygne. But he in the ende ſubdued them. And william archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye dyed the ſame yere, whoſe benefice was after geuen vnto Thybaude Abbotte of Becco in Normandye.

…uid kig …cottes …rary to …romis …aded yͤ …me.

Aboute the fourth yere of hys raygne, Dauid kyng of Scottes repentynge hym of hys former agrement made with the kyng, entred of newe the boundes of Northumberlande aboute the riuer of Theyſe towarde the Prouince of yorke, and brent and ſlewe the people in moſte cruell wyſe, not ſparinge man woman nor chylde. Agaynſte whome Thurſtone by the kynges commaundment was ſent. The whiche with his power quitte him ſo knightly, that he ouerthrewe the hoſte of the Scottes, and ſlewe of theym a great number, and compelled theym to wythdraw again into Scotland.

…e Scot- …discom …d.

In the whyche paſſetyme the kinge layd ſiege to the Caſtell of Bedford, and wanne it. And that done, he then made a voyage into Scotlande, where he dyd lytle to his pleaſure or profitte. Then in his retourne homewarde, he toke Alexander byſhoppe of Lyncolne, and helde him in duraunce tyll he hadde yelded or geuen vnto hym the Caſtell of Newewarke. And then he chaſed Nygellus biſhoppe of Ely.

Alſo in this fury he tooke ſuche diſpleaſure with his louing frend Roger biſhop of Saliſburye, that he caſt him in bondes, till the ſayd Roger had rendred vnto him the two Caſtels of Vyes and Shyrborne, For the which this Roger in remembringe the great ingratitude of yͤ king, toke ſuch thought that he died ſhortly after, and left in readie coyne fourtie thouſande marke which after his death came to the kinges cofers.

A riche biſhoppe.

One Cronicle ſaith, that kyng Stephan obteined theſe foreſayd caſtels, to the intent he might fortifie theym with his knightes to withſtande the Empreſſe, whoſe comminge he euer feared. And the yere folowynge, he wanne wyth ſtrength the Caſtels of Glouceſter, of Herford, of Webley, of Briſtow, of Dudley, and of Shrewſbury: for the whiche cauſe Robert Earle of Glouceſter beganne to withdraw his alleageaunce from king Stephan. This Roberte was the ſonne of Henrye the fyrſt by reaſon of baſte, and for this diſpleaſure ſent letters vnto Molde the empreſſe his ſiſter, promiſynge vnto her great ayde to winne her ryght.

In the meane whyle that the Empreſſe made prouiſion for her iourney, kynge Stephan concluded a mariage betwene Euſtace hys ſonne, and Conſtaunce the kings ſiſter of Fraunce, doughter of Lewes the great, the whiche continued the amitie betwen England and Fraunce.

The landing of the empreſſe.

Then in the moneth of Julye and the ſixte yeare of Stephan, Molde the Empreſſe (as teſtifieth Henry the Chanon in his nyneth boke) entred this land by the port of Porteſmouth, and ſo kepte on her iorney, til ſhe came to Briſtow and did great harme by the mean of her paſſage through the countrey. In whiche time of her ſayde landinge, kyng Stephan laye at the ſiege of Wallingford caſtell.

But as ſoone as he hard of the landynge of the Empreſſe, he anone ſent out commiſſions for the more ſtrengthe, and ſo drewe towarde his enemies. But in thys time and ſeaſon, Robert Earle of Glouceter, and Ranulph Earle of Cheſter, went vnto the Empreſſe with al the power that thei might make. The empreſſe hearing of yͤ great power comminge with the king, drew vnto the citie of Nicol now called Lincolne, & there held her a longe ſeaſon for all that the king might do.

But laſtlye the empreſſe wyth her people eſcaped, and the kynge was poſſeſſed of the citie, & there abode tyl Candelmas. After whiche ſeaſon, Earle Robert and Ranulph before named, with a great power of Welſhmen, and the power of the empreſſe, came againſt the kyng. where as when bothe Hooſtes were nere ioynynge, the Earle Ranulphe of Cheſter, ſpake to hys knyghtes and ſayde: I require you that I that am cauſe of your peryll, maye be the fyrſt that ſhall enter into peryll. Then anſwered Earle Robert, and ſayde, it is not vnworthye to thee that aſkeſt the fyrſt ſtroke and dignity of this fight. For vnto thee it is fitting for noblenes of bloud, and vertue of ſtrength, in the whiche thou paſſeſt other men.

But the kinges falſe othe moueth men to warre and to fyghte, where we muſte nowe winne the maſtery or bee ouercomen. And he that hath none other ſuccoure, is conſtrayned to defende hym by knightly and ſtrong deedes of armes and of manhode, And ſo ſhal we now agaynſt them that be entriked with gyle and wickednes, as Robert Earle of Mellent, the Earle alſo of Albemarle, and Simon of Hampton the whiche is a man of great boaſte and of ſmall myght.

Then king Stephan repayred to ſette forwarde his people, and earle Bauldewine had woordes of comfort to the kinges people, & ſaid: men that ſhall fight, to them is behouefull thre thinges.

Thre th
ges nec
ſary for
that ſhal
fyght.

The firſt is the right of the cauſe, leſt men fall in perill of the ſoule. The .ii. is, quantitie of men of armes, leſt men be oppreſt with exceding nomber. And the third is, the effect, corage, & ſtrẽgth of knights that the quarel ſhuld not fayle for lacke of hardy & aſſured fighting. As touching which thre poyntes, I truſt we bee well ſped. But and ye take heede furthermore what enemies we haue, fyrſt we haue agaynſt vs Robert earle of Glouceter, which vſeth great manaſſes and executeth litle or ſmale dedes In mouth he is like a Lion, but in heart a ſhepe. He is pompous in ſpeche and darke in vnderſtandynge. There is alſo Ranulphe Earle of Cheſter, a man without reaſon and full of folehardineſſe, readie and preſte to all conſpiracie & vnſtedfaſtnes of maner and deedes, haſtie and furious of hart, and vnware of peryls. He aſſaieth ofte to atcheue great deedes, but he bringeth none to effecte. And what he fierſly and freſhly beginneth, he cowardly and faintly forſaketh, as vnhappy and vngracious in all his dedes, and is ouercomeen in euery place. For he holdeth hym with banyſhed men and ſculkers. And thē mo of thē that bee in a companye, the ſoner they bee ouercomen, and weake they bee in fighting, for either of them putteth truſt in his felowe, whyle hym ſelfe is ouerthrowen.

But or he might haue finiſhed hys wordes to moſte mennes audience, the crie of the enemies, with noiſe of trompets and groūtynge of horſes approched and ſmote together: and forth goe the arrowes, and griſelye and cruell fyght was continued vpon bothe ſydes for the whyle that it endured. Where through the greene fielde was tourned into a perfyte redde, ſo that manye a pale & wan viſage was there ſeene yeldynge the ghoſt, with armes and legges diſſeuered and departed. A longe whyle thys fyght ſtode in queſtion, wheeher partye ſhoulde obtayne victorie. But in the ende kynge Stephans partye gaue backe and fled, and he ful knightlye abode on fielde wyth a few of his knightes, and was taken, and ſo he was broughte vnto the Empreſſe: the whiche cōmaunded him to be conueyed vnder ſure keping vnto Briſtowe, where he was kepte as a pryſoner, frome the ſayde tyme of Candelmaſſe, vnto holy Rodde daye then next enſuynge.

Aboute this time was founded the Abbaye of Stratforth Langthorne within foure miles of London, by a Knyght called ſyr Wyllyam de Mount fichet.

¶ The.ccxxxiii. Chapter.

When the Empreſſe had wonne this victory and had cōmitted the kynge to warde, as before ye haue hearde, ſhe was not therewith a litle exalted, but thoughte in her mind that ſhe was in a ſuertie of the poſſeſſion of the whole realme: But ſhe was diſceyued, for Kent tooke party wyth kynge Stephan. But yet after thys victorie thus obteyned, the empreſſe came vnto Wincheſter, and after to Wylton, to Oxenforde, to Readynge and to S. Albonis, into the whiche Cities and townes ſhe was receyued with al honour.

And finallye ſhe came to London, for to enter the ſtate of the lande. At her whiche there beinge the Queene made aſſiduate laboure for the delyuery of the kyng her huſbande, promiſynge that he ſhoulde ſurrender the lande into her poſſeſſion, and he to become a religious man, other els a pilgrim to his liues ende. But all was in vayne, for ſhe mighte purchaſe no grace as then vppon no maner of condicions.

The Citezins of London alſo made greate laboure that they might vſe the lawes of Edwarde the confeſſour as they were graūted by William Conquerour, and not the lawes of her father, whiche were of moore ſtraitneſſe.

Whereof in no wyſe they of her Counſayle myghte haue anye graunt.

For this the Citezins were diſcontented, and knowing that the countrey of Kent would ſtrength their partie, ordeyned to haue taken her. But ſhe being therof warned, departed in haſte, and left behind her her ſtore of houſhold, and ſo fledde vnto Oxenforde, where ſhe abode her people, the whyche was deuided and ſcatteryd. And in this while ſhe ſent vnto Dauid kinge of Scottes and her vncle, for to ayde her, the whiche in all haſte came vnto her, and ſo yode to Wincheſter, where ſhe layde ſiege to the byſhoppes towre, the which the kinges brother at that time helde with ſtrength.

A hoſt gathered by the queene wife of kīg Stephan. Ipreus.

Then the Queene with ayd of her frendes, of Kentiſhe men and other, made a ſtrong hoſte, wherwas Captayne a knight named Guylliam de Ypre. When the Empreſſe heard of the great ſtrength of the Queene, and ſawe that her owne miniſhed rather than encreaſed, ſhe fled ſecretlye and eſcaped vnto Glouceter. And Earle Roberte her brother was taken ſoone after, and putte in priſon. Then Dauid kynge of Scottes hearynge of this retourned into Scotland.

Then meanes was made vpon eyther ſyde, for delyuerye and exchaunge of priſoners, ſo that finally, it was agreed that the king ſhoulde bee deliuered for earle Robert. But or this agrement were concluded, muche ſorowe was wrought within this realme. For the empreſſe pylled and ſpoyled on her partye, and the Quene by promyſes and manaces borowed and tooke vpon the other ſide, and the ſouldiours ſtale and extorcioned vppon bothe partirs, ſo that riche men were made nedie, & the poore were oppreſſed.

In this meane whyle the empreſſe retourned agayne to Oxenforde, and vitailed and manned it in her beſt maner.

The delyueraunce of Stephā.

Then laſtly the kynge was delyuered vppon holye Roode daye in Harueſt, and ſoone after he becleped Oxenforde with a ſtronge ſiege, frō the time of Michelmas vnto the ſeaſon of Chriſtmas, at whiche time & ſeaſon the empreſſe vſed a new gyle for conſtraint and neceſſitie of vitaile.

In that time was great plentie of ſnow fallen vpon the groūd, and the froſte was therewith ſo great, that Thamis wyth other great ryuers were then froſen ouer, ſo that man and horſe myght paſſe the water vpon the Iſe. The empreſſe then conſtrayned of nede (as before is ſayde) apparayled her and her companye in whyte clothing, whiche a farre of appeared lyke ſnowe, and ſo vppon a plumpe goinge together as neare as they myght, eſcaped the daunger of theyr fone, and ſo came to Walyngforde. And thence in proceſſe of tyme, ſhe wyth a ſmal companye departed and retourned finallye into Normandye vnto her huſbande.

Li.7.

So ſoone as the Empreſſe was thus departed from Oxenforde, the towne was yelden vnto the kyng: where the kyng had muche of the empreſſe ſtuffe, as well harneſſe as other ſtuffe of houſholde. Then he entended to haue purſued her: but tidinges wer brought vnto him, ẏ Ranulph earle of Cheſter with an hoſt of Welſhmen was comming toward him. But by mediacion of frendes this Ranulphe in the ende to the kynge was recōciled, & was with hym agreed.

About this time & ſeaſon as it is teſtified of diuers authoures, the Iewes vpō Eaſter-euen crucified a child named William, in the citie of Norwiche. And in the time of Henry the .ii. about the .vi. yere of his reygne (as ſayeth Polycronicon) they crucified another at Glouceter. In the.xxii.yere of his raigne king Stephan was again crowned at Lincolne: and ſoone after he toke from Ranulph earle of Cheſter the caſtel of Lyncolne.

Robert erle of Glouceter made alſo newe warre vpon the kyng, and had the better of the kyng at Wylton, ſo that the kynge was lyke to haue fallen into Robertes daunger. But yet the kynge eſcaped with muche payne. And there was taken a Baron of the kings named ſyr wyllyam Martell for whoſe delyuerye, the kynge gaue after to the ſayde Earle the caſtell of Shyrbourne. And that doone, the ſayde Earle Roberte beganne to founde a ſtrong Caſtell at Faryngdone. Whereof the kyng beinge enfourmed, aſſembled hys knightes and ſped hym thytherward, by meane wherof the work was for that tyme empeached and let.

li.7.c

e riuer
Tha:
s ouer-
ſen.

In the fiftene yere of the reigne of kinge Stephan, the ryuer of Thamis was ſo ſtrongly ouerfroſen, that horſe and cart paſſed ouer vpon the yſe.

7.ca.20

In the.xvii. yeare, Ranulphe Earle of Cheſter died, that was ſurnamed Gercious, and was the fourth Earle after the conqueſt, & hys ſonne Hugh was Earle after him, whiche was a man of greate ſtrength and vertue. And in the ſame yere (as witneſſeth Guodo & other) died Geffrey Plantagenet huſband of Molde the empreſſe. After whoſe death, Henry ſhortemantel that was the ſonne of the ſaid Geffrey & Molde, was made duke of Angeou and Normandy. The which in few yeres after maried Elynour the doughter of the earle of Poytow, the which Elynour was before maried vnto Lewes kinge of Fraunce, and from him deuorced for nerenes of bloud when he had receyued of her two doughters named Mary & Alys, as witneſſeth the French cronicle And ſo this Henrye was Earle of Angeou by his father, and duke of Normandy by his mother, & earle of Poytow by his wife.

It was not long after, that Euſtace the ſonne of kyng Stephan wyth ayde of the Frenche kyng, warred vppon Henrye Duke of Normandye: the whyche after ſome wryters was ymagined by Stephan his father, to the entent to let or ſtop him that he ſhuld not come into England to clayme his enheritaunce. But duke Henrye defended him ſo knyghtlye, that the ſaid Euſtace wan thereby litle honour or profit.

An old cronicle ſheweth, that king Stephan entended to haue crowned the ſaid Euſtace his ſonne king of England by his dayes, but the biſhops of Englande refuſed that deede by commaundement of the biſhop of Rome.

In the ſeuen and twenty yere, the king layde ſiege vnto the Caſtelles of Newebery, or walyngforde, and of Warwyke, or Warwell, the whyche hadde bene kept by the Empreſſe frendes from the tyme of her departynge vnto that day, and hoped of reſcous by Henry Duke of Normandye: But the kyng then wanne the Caſtelles of Newbery and of warwell, & walingford defēded ẏ holders til the comming of Henry the duke. The

Hēry duke of Normādie landed wͭ a greate armye.

whiche in the ende of the ſaid yere with a great armie entred England, and firſt wanne the caſtell of Malmiſburye.

And thence he yode to London, and wanne the tower, as muche by pollicie and by faire promiſe, as by ſtrength. And ſuch ſtuffe of vitaile & armour as he fand therin, he ſent to Walyngford, that done he went to yͤ town of Walingford & wan ſuch holdes as were there about. Then king Stephan wyth his power drew toward the duke, and finallye by meane of mediatoures, as Thibaude archbiſhop of Caunterburye and other, bothe princes to common of peace, met nere vnto the water of Vryn or Vrne. But as faſt as ſome laboured to haue peace, ſo faſt other laboured to haue warre, ſo that at that cōmunication the peace was not concluded.

After the kinge and the Duke were departed, the kinge yode towarde Ippſwiche in Suff. And the Duke toke the way to Shreweſbury, where he wan the caſtell of the ſaid town. From thence the Duke went to Notingham and wanne the towne. Wherefore the ſouldiours that helde the caſtell, ſeing that the towne toke partye with the duke, brake out vpon the night, and fired the towne & brent a great part therof.

Euſtace the ſonne of Stephā drowned.

In thys whyle dyed and was drowned Euſtace the ſonne of kynge Stephan, and was buried at Feuerſham in Kent, in yͤ abbay that his father before had builded

Thybaude Archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury lefte not to labour and conclude the peace betwene the kynge and the duke, and endeuoured hym ſelfe there ſo dilygently, with the aſſiſtence of other that in the yeare folowynge, the peace was concluded vpon diuers condicions. Wherof one was that the king ſhoulde continue as king durynge his lyfe, and immediatly after the concluſion of this peace, the ſayde Henrye ſhoulde bee proclaymed in all the chiefe Cytyes and townes of Englande for heire apparante, and be kyng after the deathe of the ſayde Stepan, and that the kynge ſhoulde take hym for his ſonne of adopcion & rightful heyre vnto the crowne. To the whiche couenauntes iuſtlye to be holden, the kyng was fyrſt ſworn, and after hys Lordes ſpirituall & temporall, and ſo yode bothe vnto London, where they were royallye receyued. And when the kynge had feaſted the duke, and geuen to hym ryche gyftes, he toke leaue of the kynge, and ſo returned into Normandye, as affirmeth the ſayde authour the Floure of hiſtories. Howebeit the cronicle of England ſayeth, that the accord was made vppon deuiſion of the lande betwene theym; that is to meane, that bothe ſhoulde raygne together, and either of them to enioye half the land. But how that deuiſion was made, or whych parte of the land either of them ſhuld hold, no mencion thereof is made. And the former accord ſhould be (as aboue is ſaid) concluded. viii. daies folowinge the Epiphanie of oure lord in the town of Oxenford: and the king died in moneth of October folowing, whe he had raigned xviii. yeres full & odde monethes, and was enterred in the foreſayde abbay of Feuerſham.

A peace cluded twene king & duke.

The de of kyng Steph

Of dyuers authoures as Ranulphe and other, it is recorded that this Stephan liued in great vexacion & trouble all the terme of his raigne. It is ſaid alſo, that this Stephan married Molde or Maude the doughter of Marye, the whiche was the doughter of Henry the firſt, & counteſſe of Boloyne, by whom he claimed the title to bee crowned, as by the yonger doughter of Henry the fyrſt, & Henry ſhort mantell claymed by the elder. But after moſte certentie of writers, this Stephan was ſonne of Euſtace earle of Boloine and of Marye ſiſter vnto Molde that was maried vnto Henry the firſt, which Mold and Mary wer doughters of Margaret wyfe of Malcolyn kyng of Scottes, whiche Margaret was ſiſter to Edgare Ethelinge, and doughter of Edwarde the outlawe, that was the ſonne of Edmund Ironſyde.

Then the eldeſt ſonne of Molde bare Molde the empreſſe by Henry the firſt. And Molde the Empreſſe doughter of Henry the firſt, had by her ſeconde huſband Gefrey Plantagenet, Henrye the ſecond. And ſo by Henry ſhort mantell or Henry the ſeconde, retourneth the bloude of the Saxons to the crowne of Englande, and ſo it did by Stephan, but moſt conueniently by Henry the fyrſt, as by the diſſent of his mother. By whiche reaſon it foloweth, that the bloude of William Conquerour continued but.lxx.yeres, if it bee accompted from the firſt yeare of William conquerour vnto the laſt yere of Henry the fyrſt.

e bloud
Willyã
queror
tinued
yeares
thys
me.

This king Stephan at the requeſt of Molde his wife, builded in the yere of grace.xi.hundred.xl. the abbey of Coggeſhale in Eſſex, and ſet therein white munkes. Alſo about the ſame time, he foũded the Abbaye of Feuerſham in Kent, where he now reſteth. And the thirde he founded in Furneys in Lancaſhyre, and all he garniſhed with munkes of Ciſteaux order, and died (as before is ſaide) without yſſue of his body.

Francia.

¶ The.ccxxxiiii. Chapter.

Lewes.

Lewes ẏ.viii. of that name and ſonne of Lewes the great, began his raigne ouer ẏ French men, the yere of our lord.xi.C.and.xxxvi. & the firſt yere of Stephan then king of England. This alſo is called the yonger Lewes, in whoſe beginning Ioannes de tẽporibus dyed. This Iohn was ſomtime a ſquire in the houſe of Charles the conquerour, the which ouer liued.ccc.yeres, for the which cauſe he was named Iohn of time, as he ẏ might remembre things done of old time paſſed. This Lewes at the time of his fathers death was in the coũtrey of Guayn: for to receyue the dower of his wife Elynour, as before in the ſtory and.ii.chapter of kinge Stephan is touched. But when he heard of the death of his father, he ſped him into Fraunce: where after the neceſſaries for the weale of his realme ordeyned, he maried his wifes ſiſter called Alis vnto Arnold erle of Vermendoze.

One that liued.ccc. yeres.

After whiche mariage ſolempniſed, tidinges wer brought to him that the chriſten people beinge in the holy lande as warriours vppon the Turkes and Saraſyns, were diſtreſſed and ouerthrowen, and diuers ſtrong holdes from thē taken and wonne.

Wherfore by the exhortation of the Monke Barnarde, whych at this daye is called S. Barnarde, the ſayde Lewes, with alſo Conradus the thirde of that name, then Emperoure of Almayne, with Alphonſus then Kynge of Spayne, wyth diuers other nobles of Fraunce and other Prouinces, toke vpon them the croſſe, and prouided for the expedicion of that iourney, in the fourth yere of hys raygne after ſome wryters.
But of the takinge of his iourney diuers writers holde diuers opinions, ſo that the doubt reſteth betwene the yere of our lord. xi. hundred and fourtie, and the yeare of eleuen hundred and fiftie.

Lewes tooke hys iornei into the holye lande.

When all thinges were readye for that iourney, the kyng and the queene with the floure of the chiualrye of Fraunce, ſet forewarde vpon that iourneye, and came in proceſſe of time vnto Conſtantine the noble, wher he met with Conradus the Emperoure of Almain, and Alphonſus king of Spayne. Whome the prince Emanuel then Emperoure of Conſtantyne the noble, receyued ioyouſlye, & made to them by his outwarde countenaunce, louing and frendly chere, and promiſed vnto theym ayde in that iourney, bothe of vitayle and alſo guydes for the next and ſureſt way. But he contrary to hys promiſe did diſapoynt them, and nothing ayded them. For he deliuered vnto thē meale mingled with lyme, wherof grewe much harme vnto the chriſten hoſte after. And alſo he aſſigned vnto theym ſuche guydes, as broughte theym into places and countreys of ſterilitie and other daunger: ſo that laſtlye the Freche kyng with great difficultie and loſſe of men, came vnto the citie of Damas, and becleped with a ſtronge ſiege: the which he aſſaulted and enpayred very ſore, and was lykely to haue wonne it, yf hee had aſſaulted the place ſtyll where he beganne. But by counſayle of ſome falſe chriſtian men, the whiche (as witneſſeth Peter Diſcroy and other) had taken mede of the Turkes; the kynge by their counſayle remoued the ordinaūce from the weker place vnto the ſtronger. Where after diuers aſſaultes made, the kyng conceiued well that he was diſceaued.

The
ceate
manu
emper
of Cō
tinoble.

A cauſe of this treaſon as ſayeth the foreſaid Peter was this. The Earle of Flaunders, which by diuers experimentes ſawe that the citie was lyke to be gotten, made ſupplication to the kinge and to the Lords that he might haue the rule of the citie at ſuche tyme as it were wonne, the whiche to him was graunted. Whereof beynge aduertyſed diuers Suryons of that countrey borne, diſdayned that a Straunger ſhoulde be lord of theyr inheritaunce, and for that condeſcended and agreed to that treaſon, by meane whereof the Chriſtian Prynces loſte theyr trauayle.

Then the chriſten princes ſeing yͭ thei wer thus deluded, toke their aduice howe they might continue theyr their pilgrimage vnto the holy citie of Hieruſalem. But in thys councell ſourded and quickened ſo manye opinions, that eche was contrarious vnto other: by meane whereof the emperour was ſo diſcontented, that he tooke leaue of the Frenche kynge and other, and ſo retourned into his owne countrey. But the Frenche kinge taried there in that coaſtes a yere after, and did there but litle worthy any memorie. Albeit, of this voyage the Frenche booke maketh a great and long proceſſe, touching the winning of the citie of Antioche, with his being and councels keppyng within Jeruſalem, and other thinges there reherſed. But for I ſee the matter diſagreable to other writers, and alſo thinke that muche thereof is fayned, I therefore paſſe it ouer: howebeit, that to ſome perſons ſuche fables bene full pleaſaunt to here. Wherfore all ſuch I remit vnto the ſaid Frenche cronicle, and ſomewhat I ſhall folow the authour Gyraldus, the whiche with other teſtifien, that Lewes in hys retourne towarde Fraunce, waxed verye ſycke for the longe forbearynge of his wyfe.

Wherfore by the aduice of Phiſicions, and alſo of his biſhops he was counſayled to take a wenche because his wyfe was farre from him. But the king withſtode that counſayle, and ſayd that hym had been leuer to bee ſicke and dye of goddes hand, then to liue in ſpouſe breaking, and offende his lawes. And ſo the kynge put him ſelfe to the mercye of God, and receaued health ſhortly after. Alſo it is told of him that he vſed to faſte euerye Fryday bread and water, and by his familiers he was counſayled that he ſhoulde leaue that faſt for weakening of him ſelfe, and feede .C. of poore men euery Frydaye, the whiche vnto god ſhoulde bee much moore acceptable. To thys he anſwered and ſayd: we woulde gladlye feede ſo many poore men or mo, but our faſting we wyl not breake: For withoute the profyte that it doth vnto the ſoule, it profiteth alſo ryght muche to the bodye. For the purgation and reſte of one day, helpeth much to putte of the ſuperfluitye of the other, and alſo it maketh the ſharper appetite.

he cōtyncy and aſtitie of ng Leſ.

The profit of faſtyng.

When Lewes was retourned into Fraunce (for what happe it is of the Frenche Cronicle made doubtfull) he was from Elynoure his wife deuorced, of the which he had receaued before two doughters as before is touched, the whiche in proceſſe of time folowinge was maried vnto Henrye duke of Normandie, which mariage was a newe occaſion of the warre betwen England and Fraunce. For the landes of Poytowe, wyth Gaſcoyne and Guyan, Lewes claymed by hys former poſſeſſion, and Henrye by reaſon of the marryage of the ſayde Elynoure, as heyre to the ſayde landes. Of the which warre ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtory of the ſayd Henry folowing.

Lewes deuorced.

A newe cauſe of warre.

After which deuorce thus made kinge Lewes maried the yongeſt doughter of the king of Spayne, that was named Conſtance, & ſhe died of her firſt childe. Then for ſo muche as kinge Lewes had none heyre male, by counſayle of his barony he maried the .iii. wife, which was the yongeſt doughter of Thibaud earle of Bloys, and was named Alys. This ſaid earle died ⁊ left after him foure ſonnes and v. doughters. The eldeſt ſonne named Henry was earle of Troys, the ſecond named Thibaud, was earle of Bloys, the thyrde named Stephan was earle of Sancorū or Sancorer, and the fourth named wyllyam was archebyſhop of Raynes. The eldeſt of the doughters was Duches of Burgoyne, the ſeconde was counteſſe of Barre, the thirde was maryed fyrſt to the duke of Puell, and after to a knighte named ſyr William de Goer, the fourth was counteſſe of Perche, and the fift as before is ſaide, Queene of Fraunce, whiche was a woman garnyſhed with manye vertues, as the ſtory declareth.

¶ The.ccxxxv. Chapter.

In proceſſe of tyme after the ſolemniſation of this mariage, complaynt was broughte before the king of the Earle of Cleremount and Puy or Puyll, ſonne of the duke before reherſed, and of the earle of Plomet that they ſhould ſpoyle and waſte the churches, ⁊ landes to the ſayd churches belongynge. For the which deedes the king commaunded the ſaide.iii.earles to warde, but not withoute warre and ſheding of bloude.

And after the ſubduing of ẏ ſaid iii.earles, a knight or a great mā of might called William the earle of Chalon, with a company of tyrauntes aſſembled for to rob and ſpoyle the churche of S. Peter of Cluny in Burgoyn. Wherof hearing the prieſtes and miniſters of the church, to the intent to mittigate and apeace the crueltie of the ſaid tyrauntes, did vpon them the ornamentes of the ſaide church, ⁊ yode againſt them with proceſſion with a great company them folowinge of the people of the towne and the countrey there aboute, in peacyble and charitable wiſe.

But when the ſayde tyrauntes approched vnto the ſaid company, without compaſſion and pitie, as Turkes ranne vpon chriſten men or with leſſe pitie, ſo ranne they vppon the prieſtes and other, and ſpoyled them of all the ſayd ornamentes, and ſlewe of that companye to the nomber of fiue hundred or moe, and after ſpoyled the ſayd Churche, of ſuche ſtuffe as was therein left.

A blou proceſſi

It was not long after or king Lewes had witting of this cruel deede. Whereof in aduengyng the churche, he gathered a conuenient power and ſpedde hym thyther. But the ſayde wyllyam Earle of Chalon hearynge of the kynges comminge fledde the countrey, ſo that the kynge myghte haue no certayne knowledge where he became. Wherefore the kyng entred and ſeaſed hys landes, and gaue the moyty thereof to the Duke of Burgoyne as chiefe lorde of that ſoyle, and that other halfe he gaue vnto the erle of Neuers, to whoſe auncetrye in tyme paſſed the ſayd moytye appertayned. And that done, he commaunded inquirie to be made of his acceſſaries the prebenſons or prebenders, of the whiche he puniſhed by diuers maner of tormentes and deathes, to the great contentacion of the coūtrey.

when the king had thus fyniſhed this viage, and was returned into Fraunce, ſoone after was knowledge broughte vnto hym, that the Burgonyons and men of the towne of Verdeley, rebelled agaynſt the head Church or Abbey of that towne, and intended to haue doone ſome vilany to the Abbot and Munkes of the ſame: wherfore the kyng ſped him thyther in all haſte. But for theyr ſauegarde the Munkes were compelled to fortyfie the Church, and to defende them by force of armes ſo that betweene theym and the Burgonyons many an arbalaſter and ſtone was ſhot and caſte. And for the kyng myght not ſo haſtily furnyſh him of his ſouldiours, he therefore ſente vnto the Earle of Neuers bi whoſe meane as to the kinge was ſhewed, this riot begã commaunding him that he ſhould ſe this riot appeaſed, and that the church of Verdeley were reſtored of ſuch harmes as to theym was doone by the inhabitauntes of the towne. But of this commaundement the Earle ſet but lytle, ſo ẏ the burgeſes perſeuered in theyr erroure. Wherfore the Abbot ſent agayn to the king, beſechyng him of his moſte gracious ayde and ſuccoure. Then the kyng hearing of the Earles diſobedience, was therewith greatly diſpleaſed, and ſuſpected the Earle to be partie in the cauſe, and ſped him the faſter thitherward. But when the Erle was infourmed of the kinges cõmyng, he ſomedeale feared, & met with the kynge at a place called Moret, and there demeaned hym in ſuch wyſe, that ẏ kinge forgaue his offence. Then he promyſed that the kinges pleaſure ſhoulde be fulfilled in al thinges as he had before commannded, wyth more as it liked him to deuyſe. Vpon whiche promyſe ſo made, he commaunded that the Burgonyons ſhould fyrſt refrayne them of that rebellion againſt the Churrh, and that they ſhould newly be ſworne to be obedient vnto the abbot and vnto theyr ſucceſſours as theyr predeceſſours had bene: and ouer that for the hurtes & harmes that thei had done to that place at that ſeaſon, they ſhould pay to the ſaid Abbot and Couent. xl. thouſande ſous. A ſous is in value after ſterling money. i. d. ob, ſo that. xl. thouſand ſous amounteth in ſterlynge money. iii. C. and. lxxv. pounde. After which ende thus made, the kynge retourned into Fraunce.

As money goeth now iii. ſouce make. iiii. d. ſterling, and after that reconinge it ſhould be ns more but. iii. C. xxxiii. poũnes. vi. ſhillinges and viii. pence ſterlinge money.

It was not long after that the kyng receaued of queene Alys his wyfe, a ſonne, and named it Phylip. But for that king Lewes had made manie pylgremages, & vſed many wayes of charite, in geuing of almes & otherwyſe, for to haue a ſonne to be his heyre, therfore he ſurnamed this childe a dieu done, a chylde geuen of God. Then this Lewes for the intollerable dedes of the Jewes which in thoſe daies had great inhabiting within the lande of Fraunce, and vſed vſerie and ſleynge of Chriſtien chyldren, he punyſhed manie by death, and manie he banyſhed his lande, but yet manie remayned.

The ſurname of king Lewes chylde.

Of thys Lewes deedes is lytle more cronicled, excepte when hys ſonne Phylippe was of the age of xiii. yeres, his father cauſed hym to be crowned: & reſigned to hym all the rule of the lande and dyed the yere folowinge at Parys, in yͤ moneth of October, in the yere of grace.ix.hunded and.lxxix. By which reaſon he reygned (to reken frō his fathers death to his owne) vpon.xliii.yeres, and was rychely enterred by the meane of his laſte wife at the Monaſtery of Barbel, the which he founded in his yong dayes. After whoſe death the ſaid Queene Alys adoꝛned hys ſepulture in the moſte rycheſt maner, with Gold, Siluer, and pꝛecious gemmes: vpon whoſe tombe was grauē theſe two verſes folowing as a counſayle left vnto his ſonne Phyllyp.

Nunc ſuperes tu, qui ſuper es
ſucceſſor honoris
Degener es, ſi degeneres a laude
prioris.

¶ Which verſes are to be vnderſtand as after foloweth.

Nowe takē good heede, thou that
doeſt ouerlyue
Hym that in honoure and vertue
dyd excelle,
Se thou alter not, nor thy ſelfe de-
pryue,
But folow hym, whiche was of ho-
noure the well:
For yf thou doo not, men ſhall of
thee tell,
Thou arte degenerate, and growen
out of kynde.
Thy progenitours laude hauing no-
thynge in mynde.

Anglia.

¶ The.ccxxvi. Chapiter.

Li.7.ca. Henry ſeconde.

Henrie the ſeconde of that name & ſonne of Geffrey Plantagenet Earle of Angeou, and of Mold thempꝛeſſe daughter of Henry the firſt, began his reygne ouer the realme of England, in the moneth of October the yere of our Loꝛde God. xi.hundꝛed and.lv.& the.xix.yere of Lewes the.viii.then kinge of Fraunce.

The deſ cripcion Henry ſeconde.

This Henrie was ſomedeale red of face, and bꝛoade of bꝛeſt, ſhoꝛte of bodie, and therwith fat: the which to aſwage, he tooke the leſſe of meates and dꝛinkes, and exerciſed much huntinge. He was reſonable of ſpeech and well lettered and oꝛped, and alſo noble in knighthod, wiſe in counſayle, and dꝛed to much deſtinies: He was alſo free and liberall to ſtraungers, and hard, and holding from hys familiers and ſeruauntes. And whom he loued enterelie oꝛ hated harde it was to retourne hym to the contrarie.

He loued reſt and peace, to the ende he might the moꝛe folow his delectacion and pleaſure, wyth mo vices reherſed by Gyꝛalde, the which foꝛ length I paſſe ouer.

This Henrie yet, as witneſſeth Ranulphe, was not all baren of vertues. Foꝛ he was of ſo greate courageouſnes, that he would often ſaie ten ſaie that all the worlde ſuffyſeth not to a coragius herte. And he increaſed his heritage ſo mightlie, ẏ he wan Ireland by ſtrength and tooke William king of Scottes, and ioyned that kyngedome to his owne. From the ſouth Ocean to the Northe yſſe landes of Orkyes, he cloſed all the landes as it were vnder one principate, & ſpread ſo largely his Empire, that men rede of none of his progenytours that had ſo manie prouynces and countreys vnder their dominion and rule. For beſyde the Realme of England, he had in his rule Normandie, Gaſcoyne, and Guion, Angeou and Chinon: and he made ſubiecte to hym Aluerne and other landes. And by his wife he obtayned as her right, the mõtes and hilles of Spayne, called montes Pireni. Of the whiche wyfe Elinour by name, deuorced, (as before is ſayde) from the. viii. Lewes king of Fraunce, he receaued. vi. ſonnes, and three daughters. Of the ſonnes fiue were named wylliam, Henrie, Rycharde, Godfrey, and Iohn̄. The eldeſt of the maydens hight Molde or Maude, and was maried to the Duke of Saxon, the ſecond Elianour to the kinge of Spayne, and the thyrde named Iane, to wylliam of Scicile.

This Henrie was proſperous in hys beginninnge, and vnfortunate in hys ende, and ſpeciallye in ẏ laſt. v. yeres of his reigne. For in ẏ firſt of thoſe. v. yeres his ſtrẽgth began to minyſhe, the ſecond yere he loſte a vyage in Irelande, the thyrd he loſt Aluerne agaynſt the kyng of Fraunce, the fourthe yere he loſt Brutican and the fift yere he loſt the Citie of * Cenomenca and Turon, with manie holdes to them belonging.

Cenomãnia.

This Henrie the ſeconde aſcertayned of the death of Stephan, ſped him into England, and was crouned the ſonday before Chriſtmaſſe daie, of Theobalde archbiſhop of Caunterbury, in weſtminſter Church.

Thomas Becket.

The fyrſt yere of his reygne, he ſubdued Ireland. And ſoone after Thomas Becket, whiche after was Byſhop of Cãuterbury, was made Chauncellour of England. Thys king caſt downe dyuers caſtelles, that before in time of king Stephan were buylded, other for diſpleaſure of the owners, or elles for ẏ feare they ſhoulde be ſtrengthed agaynſt hym. And alſo he baniſhed many of the lordes & gentelmen that kynge Stephan had in hys fauour.

Tokens in the firmament.

Aboute the thyrde yere of hys reygne in the moneth of October, were ſene in the fyrmamente two Sonnes, and in the Moone was ſeene a redde croſſe.

But of thys wounder ſheweth the authoure of Cronica cronicarum and ſayth that aboute thys time in Italy in the mooneth of Nouember appeared three Sunnes by the ſpace of three houres in the Weſt, and the yere folowynge appered three Moones: whereof the middel Moone had a red croſſe ouertwhart the face. Which there is noted for a prodigie or a token of the ſcyſme, that after fel amõge the Cardinalles for the election of the Biſhop of Rome Alexander the thyrde, which ſcyſme by mean of the fyrſt Frederike then Emperoure, endured almoſt. xx. yeres.

Li. 7. ca. 22

Alſo aboute this time, Adꝛyan the fourth of that name was Byſhop of Rome an Engliſhmã boꝛn in the towne of ſaynt Albone, of whome is moꝛe declared in the beginning of the .xxii. chapter of the vii. booke of Policronicon.

The kinges iourney into Wales.

Alſo in this yere the king went with a ſtronge armie into Wales, and after that he had ſet that countrey in an oꝛder and quiet, he builded a ſtronge Caſtell at Rutlande, and founded the Abbey of Baſingwerk.

In the. vi. yere of his reygne, this Henrie maried his ſeconde ſonne Henrie, vnto the Kynges daughter of Fraunce, that is to mean Lewes the. viii. which the ſayde Lewes receyued of his ſeconde wife named Conſtance, the daughter of the king of Spayne as ye befoꝛe haue heard in the ſeconde chapter of the ſtoꝛie of the ſayde Lewes, this mayden was named Margaret. By reaſon of whiche mariage, was appeaſed ẏ warre that was begun betwene Fraunce and England foꝛ the landes of Poitow and other, the whiche kinge Henrie helde by reaſon of his wyfe. In the which warre muche harme was doone, & moꝛe would haue enſued if it had not by this meane haue bene agreed.

Thomas Becket.

In the. vii. yeare of his reigne, Theobalde archbyſhop of Caunterbury died, and Thomas * Becket Chaunceler of England was archebyſhop after him, of whome moꝛe ſhall folow.

In the ſame yere king Henrie with a ſtrong hoſte yode to Scotlande, and made ſo cruell warre vpon Wylliam kinge of that land that laſtlie he was taken, and did to the ſayd Henrie recompenſaciõ in yeldinge vnto him the Citie of Carlell, the Caſtell of Bamburgh the new Caſtell vpon Tyne, with diuers other holdes, and a greate parte of Noꝛthumberlande, the whiche he had wonne frõ the boꝛderers. And after fewtie and homage doone by the ſayd Wyllyam vnto the king, and a certaine ſum of money by him pꝛomiſed within ix. monethes folowing, the kinge ſuffred him to go at large.

But another authoure ſayth, that the king of Scottes was not taken but ſtronglie beſieged in a towne oꝛ Caſtell, ſo that finallie he was foꝛced to agree to the foꝛe ſayd couenauntes.

Caunt
buriet
by neg
gence.

In the. viii. yeare, the Citie of Caunterburie was fired by negligence, and a great parte thereof bꝛente. And in that ſeaſon, ẏ archbyſhop Thomas began to replie agaynſte the kinges mynde, foꝛ thinges that the kinge did exerciſe agaynſte the lyberties of the Churche.

¶ The. cclxxxvii. Chapter.

IN the ninth yere, ẏ kyng called a parliament at Noꝛthhampton, where he entended the refoꝛmacion of manie pꝛiuilegies that the Clergye had. Amonge which this was one ẏ although one of ẏ clergy had cõmitted felony, murder, oꝛ treaſon yet might not the king put him to death as he did the laye men. The which thing with many other, the king thought to redꝛeſſe in ẏ ſayd Parliamente.

But Thomas Beckecte then

archebiſhop of Caunterbury hearing that the kinge wente aboute ſuch thinges reſiſted him vnto his face. And perceyuing yͭ he might not preuayle againſt the king, gat him ouer ſtrayte to Alexãder then Biſhop of Rome, there complayninge of the kinge, what iniuries and wronges he woulde do vnto holie Churche: continuyng there ⁊ in Fraunce, yͤ ſpace of. vi. yeres.

e coro-
ion of
ry the
eldeſt
ne of
ry the
nde.

In the fourtene yeare of hys reigne, the kinge crowned Henry his eldeſt ſonne then lyuing, king of England at weſtminſter, to the ende he myght haue full power ⁊ authoritie to rule thys lande, and the people of the ſame, whyle hys father was occupied in Normandie and other countreys, where hys landes laye.

In much of this ſeaſon, the king ſent ouer Biſhops, and prectours to complayn vpon Thomas Becket to the Byſhoppe of Rome for well nere all the byſhops of Englande were agaynſt him.

In the. xvi. yere of the reigne of kynge Henry, Lewes the king of Fraunce agreed king Henrie and Thomas Becket, the kyng then beyng in Normandy. Upon whiche agreement Thomas Becket came to Caunterburie, and there ſo reſtinge hym, ſent for ſuch perſons as had ſpoyled and taken away his ſubſtaunce, aduertiſynge them by fayre meanes to reſtore the ſayd goodes. But whẽ he ſaw yͭ he might not haue hys goodes by fayre meanes, he then vſed cõpulſaries, and denounced theym accurſed, but yf they reſtored hys goodes agayn by a certayne day.

Wherwith the parties beynge agreued, ſayled ouer vnto yͤ kinge into Normandie, and ſhewed vnto him greuous complaintes, and not one whit more greuous then the cauſe or matter requyred. For the which the king ſayde in open audience of his knightes, that yf he had anye good knight aboute him, he had bene aduenged of that traytour longe or that time.

At the time of whiche wordes vttering, was preſent ſir William Bryton, ſyr Hughe Moruyll, ſyr Wyllyam Tracie, ⁊ ſyr Regnolde fytz Urle. Which foure knyghtes taking aduiſe eche of theym of other, of one wyl and mynde tooke ſhipping and ſayled to Douer, ⁊ ſo vnto Caunterburie: where the fifte daie of Chriſtmas, they ſlew the ſayd traytours byſhop, whiche a litell before had accurſed bothe the king and all other that either had taken and kepte anie of hys goodes, or els otherwiſe moleſted him: and this he did in an opẽ pulpet and great audience. In the yere our lorde a M. C. lxx. as appereth by theſe verſes.

Anno milleno, centeno, ſeptuageno.
Anglorum primas, corruit enſe Thomas.

The whiche is to vnderſtande in our vulgar as thus.

The yere, to reken from Chryſtes incarnacion
A thouſand, an hundred, and ſeuentie thervnto.
In Englande a primate with great abhominacion.
VVas ſlayne with ſwearde, Thomas

mas that woulde not do.
The kynges heſt, whiche erred the
right fro.
Of the popes Churche, and lyberties
of the ſame
VVherby of honour, he wonne perpetuall ſame.

The king his iourney into Ireland.

In the .xvii. yere of his reigne, the kynge made a iourney into Irelande, where with great trauayle he ſubdued the Iriſhe. And after with helpe of the prymate & Byſhop of Armach, he refourmed the maner of the dwellers & people of that countrey, and that in three thynges ſpecially. Fyrſte in ruling and ordering of the Churche by the curates, and how they ſhould order their deuine ſeruyce, & miniſter the Sacrament of matrimony as it was in Englande, and other chryſten regions. The ſeconde was, howe that the laye people ſhould behaue thē to theyr curates, & what wyſe they ſhould paie and offer to God theyr tithes The thyrde was, for makynge of theyr teſtamentes.

This was ordeined that euery man ſhould make hys laſt wyll in preſence of his neighbours, or at leaſt cauſe it to be red in their preſence. And fyrſte he ſhould recken what he ought, and to ſet ſo much of his goodes. And yf he had a wife and chyldren, then the reſydue of hys good, his dettes beyng payde, to be deuided in three partes, one to the wife, the ſecond for the chyldren, and the thyrde to be ſpent for the weale of the ſoule. And yf he had no chyldren, then the halfe to hys ſoule, and that other halfe to his wyfe. And yf he had no wife nor children, then to diſpoſe his goods at his pleaſure.

Gene
dite be
vnto
luſt.

In the retourne of the kynge out of Irelande, was a wunder thing ſhewed vnto him vpō Whitſonday, whiche in the calender is called Dominica in Albis. When the kyng ſhould take his horſe, ſodenlie appeared vnto hym a man of pale and wanne colour, barefoote and in a white kyrtell: the which boldely ſpake vnto the king in the language of Duche, and ſayde: ſyr kinge, Chriſte greeteth thee wel, and hys mylde mother Marye, with alſo John Baptiſt and Peter, and commaunded the ſtreitly ẏᵗ no Markets, nor ſeruyle workes be holden vpon the ſonday in the landes of thy lordeſhyp, outtake that longeth to dreſſyng of meate.

And yf thou do after this byddyng, I aſſure thee that all thinge that thou beginneſt to good entent or of good purpoſe, thou ſhalt brynge it to good ende. The kyng liked nothing this ſpeche, and ſaid vnto the knight that held hys bridell: Aſke of this churle whether he haue dremed al this that he telleth: Wherunto this man anſwered: whither I haue met this tale in my dreame or not, take thou heede well of my ſaiyng: For and thou do not as I haue aduertiſed thee, & amende thy life, thou ſhalt ſhortlie heare ſuche thinges, that thou ſhalt be heuie for, vnto thy liues ende.

The king tooke all in game, and the man vanyſhed ſodeynlie, that the kinge and his knightes wondered of hys departinge. Wherof when the kynge was warned, bothe of his fyrſt ſodeynly appearyng kynge, and of his departinge, the kinge ſet it neare his mynde, and entended to do ſome thynges after that mans coūſayle: But how it was, it had no forward.

After that Thomas Becket was ſlayne, the Munkes by aſſente of the kyng, chaſe Richarde Pryoure of Douer, the whyche was a man of euyll liuynge, and waſted the goodes of the Church inordinatlie.

¶The.ccxxxviii.Chapter.

ABoute the twenty yere of the kynges reygne, he purchaſed a dyſpenſacion for the voyage that before he had ſolempnely auowed, before two cardinalles to go into the holie land, and to ieoperde his proper perſon agaynſte Chriſtes enemies. The whiche diſpenſacion was graunted vpon one condicion, yͭ he ſhoulde builde three Abbayes in Englande.

In fulfilling wherof, the kinge put out of the houſe of Waltham, ſeculer Chanons, and ſette there in theyr ſteade chanons regular. And for the ſeconde, he auoyded the Munkes oute of the houſe of Aumbriſbury, and ſet there Menchons, that he had brought from beyonde the ſea. And for the third he renewed courſelie the Charter houſe of Wytham beſide Saliſburie.

By the whiche three deedes, he thought hym ſelfe excuſed of his former promiſe. Then began hys ſonnes for to make warre vpon him, the which were ayded by the Scottyſh kyng and the two earles of Cheſter, and of Lyncolne.

The cauſe of which warre was (after the declaraciō of ſome wryters) for ſo much as the kinge had empriſoned Elyanoure hys wyfe, and kepte the wenche Roſamund agaynſt all good order.

But other ſay it was for certain landes in Normandie, which by ayde of the French king, Richard the thyrd ſonne of byrthe, and ſeconde then liuing, would haue taken from his father. Of this war ſpeaketh nothynge the Frenche Cronicle.

Then as teſtifieth Ranulph, this innaturall warre endured by the terme of two yeres, vnto yͤ greate dyſturbaunce of the kinge and of his realme, till the kynge wyth greate deuocion viſited the graue of Thomas Becket.

After which pylgrimage was by him finiſhed, in ſhorte proceſſe after William king of Scottes, and the two forenamed earles of Cheſter and Lyncolne, were takē at the Caſtell of Anwike. But yet he left not the company of the forenamed Roſamund, vnto the whiche wenche he had made an houſe of wonder working, ſo yͭ no creature, man or womā might wynne to her, but if he were inſtuct by the kynge, or ſuche as were ryghte ſecrete wyth him, touching that matter.

Thys houſe after ſome writers was named Laberinthus, or Dedalus worke or houſe, whiche is to meane (after moſte expoſitoures) an houſe wrought like vnto a knotte in a garden called a maſe. But the common fame telleth, that laſtly the queene wan to her by a clewe of threde or ſilke, & delt with her in ſuche maner, that ſhe liued not longe after.

Of the maner of her death ſpeaketh nothing myne authour, but when ſhe was dead, ſhe was buried at the houſe or monaſterie of Goodſtowe beſide Oxẽford, with theſe verſes vpyn her toumbe.

Hic iacet in tumba, Roſa mundi, ſed non roſa munda
Non redolet ſed olet, que redolere ſolet.

¶ The whiche verſes to our vnderſtandinge maye thus as foloweth be Engliſhed and expoũded.

The Roſe of the worlde, but not the cleane floure,
Is here now grauen: to whome bewtie was lente.
In this graue full darke now is her bowre.
That by her life was ſwete and redolent.
But now that ſhe is from this lyfe blente.
Though ſhe were ſwete, now fowly doth ſhe ſtynke,
A myrroure good for al that on her thynke.

Longe tyme after the death of the ſayd Roſamunde, in the ſayde Abbey was ſhewed a cofer of the ſayde wenches of the length of .ii. foote, in which appeared fighting giãtes, ſtertling of beaſtes, ſwimming of fiſhes, & flyeng of foules.

In the foreſaid .xx. yere (after the opinion of Guido) the kinge had the ſeconde monicion of mending of his life, by an Iriſhman yͭ tolde vnto him manie ſecrete tokens, which the king ſuppoſed no man had knowen but him ſelf: But yet the king toke litel hede therunto.

In the .xxii. yere of his reigne, after the foreſayde taking of the Scottiſh king, and two earles, yͤ .xi. day before September, Williã kinge of Scottes, by aſſent of the lordes ſpirituall and temporall, did homage to king Henry at his Citie of Yorke. Where the ſayde William graunted by hys letters patentes, that he and his ſucceſſoures kynges of Scotlãd, ſhould make their homage and fidelite vnto the kinges of Englande, as often as they ſhalbe neceſſarilye required.

Li.6.

How
kinge
Scott
did h
ge to
king
rie the
conde

And in ſygne and token of that ſubiection, the kinge of Scottes offered his Hat and his ſadel vpon the aulter of ſaynct Peter in the church of Yorke, whiche for a remembraunce of that deede, the ſayde hatte and ſadell were there kept many yeres after. And ouer that the lords of Scotland ſwore that if their kinge at anye time woulde wythdraw him from allegeaunce, they woulde al aryſe againſt him, and be to hym as enemies, till he wer retourned vnto his fayth and kepinge of his promiſe. And for the more ſtrengthe of the ſayd compoſicion, the kinge of Scottes came after to kynge Henries Parlyamente holden at Northampton, and another ſeaſon into Normandy.

How
king
Scott
came
parli

Ranulphe Monke of Cheſter, ſayeth that Lewes the .viii. of yͤ name king of Fraunce, deliuered vnto kynge Henrie a daughter of his to haue in guydinge, and to haue bene maried vnto Rycharde his ſonne, the which after yͤ death of Roſamund, he defloured of her vyrginitie. After which deede, as affirmeth the ſaid author, ỳ kinge was in will to haue wedded that damoyſel. For expedicion wherof he made great meanes to Huguncia a Cardinall then beinge in his lande, that he woulde make a deuorce betwene him and Elianour the Queene. And thys he dyd, to the ende to haue the more fauour of the Frenchmen, that by theyr ayde he might the better diſheryte his ſonnes. But he fayled of hys purpoſe, and alſo it turned to his owne harme. For by this meane, he cauſed the ſayde Rycharde his ſonne to ſhew all his demeanoure vnto the Frenche king: ſo that by his informacion, vnkindnes kindled betwene them two, and therof enſued mortal warre, as ſaythe the Engliſh cronicle, and alſo Policronicon.

But of this warre ſpeaketh nothing the Frenche cronicle, nor of none other during the lyfe of the ſayd Lewes after this day, whiche died in the .xxiiii. yere of thys Henrie. But the warre that was betwene the two kinges of England & of Fraunce, was betwene this Henry & Philip ſonne of this Lewes, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Aboute the .xxiiii. yere of thys kinge as witneſſeth dyuers wryters, fell wonderfull wederinge & tempeſt of thunder in myd wynter tyme in Hampſhyre and other places, by violence wherof a preeſt amonges other was ſlayne. And in the ſommer folowinge aboute Mary Magdalene tide, fel hayle of ſuch bygneſſe, that it ſlew both men and beaſtes. And about this time were the bones of kyng Arture & his wife Gweynour found in the vale of Aualon: whoſe heere of the head of the ſayd Gweynour was then hole & of freſhe colours, but ſo ſoone as it was touched, it fell in pouder. Whiche bones were tranſlated and buried within the church of Glaſtenbury, and were founden by a ſinger of geſtes vnder an holowe Oke fiften foote within the grounde. Whiche fynding and tranſlating is an obiecte to the fantaſticall ſayinge of the Walſhmen, ỳ affirme his cōming agayn to reigne as he before dyd.

Then had king Henry the ſecōd monicion by a knighte called ſyr William Cheſterby or Lindeſey, which warned him ſpetially for ỳ reformation of ſeuē articles. The firſt was, that he ſhould ſet better diligence to ỳ defence of holi churche, and maynteining of the ſame. The ſecond, that he ſhould ſe hys lawes executed, with better iuſtice then at thoſe dayes was vſed. The .iii. was, ỳ he ſhould ſurmiſe no matter againſt riche men, & by that meane plucke from thē their landes & goodes. The .iiii. that he ſhould reſtore al ſuche landes and goodes gotten by ſuch vnlawfull meanes or by any other. The fifte that he ſhoulde for no meede tarie ryghtfull ſentence, but ſuffer the ryghte to haue hys proceſſe. The ſixte, that he ſhould ſe to the paymente of hys ſubiectes, for ſuche ſtuffe as was daylie taken to hys vſe, and alſo to the paymente of hys ſeruauntes and Souldyours wages, whiche daylie fell to robbing for defaute. The ſeuenth and the laſt was, that he ſhould in all haſte voide the Jewes of his land which daily wrought great ſorow to his cōmons, & to leaue them ſo what to ſpende in theyr iourney. But as he tooke the other monitions, ſo he tooke thys, and continued hys lyfe as he before had doone.

¶ The. cxxxix. Chapter.

The death of Henrye the eldeſt ſonne of Henry the ſeconde.

IN the. xxviii. yere of his reygne, After moſte writers died Henrie hys eldeſt ſonne then liuing. And in this yeare which ſhould be the fourth yere of Phylyp the ſeconde, or of Philip ſurnamed Guyuen of GOD. The warre began betwene king Henrie and him. Whereof was occaſion as teſtifieth the ſayd French cronicle, the deniyng of the deferring of homage, ẏ ſhould be doone to the ſayde Philip of Rycharde, then eldeſt ſonne of Kinge Henry, for the landes of Poytow.

An other cauſe alſo was, that where certayn couenauntes were ſtabliſhed and enrolled, betwene king Henry and Lewes, father of this Philippe, at the mariage of Henrie his ſonne and Margaret ſiſter of Philip, for certayne holdes and Caſtels: wherof the caſtel of Giſours was one, which were deliuered in dower with the ſayde Margarete, vpon condicion that yf the ſayd Henry had yſſue by the ſayd Margarete, then the ſayd Caſtels to remaine vnto the ſaide heyres: and yf the ſayd yong Henrie died without yſſue of the ſaide Margaret, that then the ſayd caſtelles and holdes to be reuerted vnto the crowne of Fraunce: and for that king Henry denied or deferred theſe two poyntes, & wold not anſwere when he was called, the Frenche king therfore entred the lande of Barry with greate ſtrength, and waſted the countrey of Guian without mercie. Wherof king Henry beinge warned, in al haſt aſſembled his people then beynge in Normandie, and drewe him towarde the Frenche kyng, whiche then had layde ſyege vnto the Caſtell, called in French, Raoull, or the Caſtell of Roaull.

When bothe hoſtes were nere and likely to haue ioyned, medyatoures were ſent vpon bothe parties, to treate a peace. By meane whereof in proceſſe a trewce was taken for a certayne tearme, ſo ẏ eyther hoſte departed wythoute ſtriking of ſtroke at that ſeaſon.

Aboute this time died Richard Baldewyne Byſhop of Worceter admitted to that ſee, thoughe the Munkes of Caunterbury withſayde it with all theyr power. Li.7.ca.

A patri of Hier lem.

In the thyrty yere of the king, Heraclius patriarke of Hieruſalē cam into Englād, for to haue ayde agaynſte the Sarazins that had wonne great part of the landes ẏ Chriſten menne had in the holye lande; and for to defende the holie Citie, whyche by Saladyne Prynce of Surrey, was wonne ſhortly after.

For by the reporte of Peter Diſroy, whyche made a booke in Frenche of the wynninge and loſynge of the ſayde Citie, it appeareth ẏ it was won by Godfrey de Bulyon, in the yeare of Chryſtes incarnacion, a thouſande. lxxx. and. xix. and ſo contynued vnder the rule of nyne Chryſten kynges, vntyll the laſte kynge named Guy de Leſyngham, or Leſynguam loſte it wyth the holy croſſe, in the yere of our Lorde. xi. hūdred lxxx. and. ix. whyche maketh the yere of the reygne of this kynge Henrie the. xxxiiii.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, this Heraclius made beſy requeſt vnto the king for ayde, and profered him the keyes of the Citie and of our lordes graue, and letters of Lucius the thirde of that name then Byſhop of Rome, charginge him that he ſhould take vpon him the iourney, and to haue mynde of the othe that he before time had made.

The kinge deferred his aunſwer, and Baldwine the Archebiſhop preached and exhorted men to take the Croſſe, by whoſe meanes manie there were that auowed that iourney. Laſtly the king gaue anſwere, and ſayde that he might not leaue his land without keping, nor yet leaue it to the prai and robbery of the Frenchemen. But he would geue largely of his owne to ſuch as would take vpon them that voiage. With this anſwere the patriarke was diſcontente, and ſayde: we ſeeke a man and not money. Welnere euery chriſten region ſendeth vnto vs money, but no land ſendeth to vs a prince. Therfore we aſke a prince that nedeth money, & not money that nedeth a Prince. But the kinge layde for him ſuch excuſes, that the patriarke departed from him diſcontented and comfortleſſe. Wherof the kyng beynge aduertiſed, entending ſomewhat to recomfort him with pleaſaunt wordes, folowed him vnto the ſea ſide: But yͤ more the king thought to ſatiſfie him with his fayre ſpeche, the more the patriarke was diſcontented, in ſo muche, that at laſt he ſayde vnto him: Hytherto thou haſte reygned gloryouſlie, but hereafter thou ſhalt be forſaken of him that thou at this time forſakeſt. Thinke on him what he hath geuen to thee, and what thou haſt yelden to him agayne. How firſte thou warte falſe vnto the kynge of Fraunce, and after ſlew Thomas Becket, and laſtlie thou forſakeſt the protectyon of Chryſtes fayth. The king was a moued with theſe wordes, & ſaide vnto the patriarke: Though all the men of the lande were one bodie, & ſpake with one mouth, they durſt not ſpeake to me ſuche wordes. No wonder (ſayd the patryarke) for they loue thine and not thee. That is to meane, they loue thy goodes temporall, and feare the for loſſe of promociõ, but they loue not thy ſoule. And when he had ſo ſayde, he offered his head to the king, ſaiyng: Do by me right as thou diadeſt by Thomas Becket, for I had leauer to be ſlayne of thee, then of the Saraſins.

A proude patriarke.

For thou art worſe then any Saraſin, & thy people foloweth pray and not a man. But the kinge kepte his pacience, and ſayde: I may not wend out of my land, for mine owne Sonnes wyll ariſe agaynſt me, when I were abſent. No wonder (ſayd the patriarke,) for of the diuell they come, and to the diuell they ſhall, and ſo departed from the kynge in greate ire. After the patriarke was thus departed, the kinge ſente John hys ſeconde ſonne into Irelande. In the which voyage he ſpent yͤ kyng great goodes, and did litle profite or none.

The wonderful pacience and modeſty of a prynce.

In the. xxxi. yere of kyng Henry

How the Jewes crucified a childe in Bury in Suffolke.

the Jewes crucified a chylde in the towne of Burie in Suffolke, named Roberte: for whome God ſhewed after many myracles.

And the.xxxii.yeare, the kynge made a voyage into Irelād to redreſſe thinges there out of order. But fortune was to him ſo contrarie that he loſte hys trauayle, lyke as the yere before his ſonne John had doone.

In the.xxxiii. yere of this king Henrie, at Dunſtable in the ayre was ſeen a crucifixe, and Chryſte nayled thereon whiche appeared viſiblie to manie a mans ſight. And in this yere the king loſte the countrey of Aluerne when he had ſpent great goodes aboute the defence of the ſame. Howbeit of this warre ſpeaketh nothing ẏ French Cronicle.

¶ The.cclx. Chapiter.

The ſonne agaynſt ẏ father.

IN the. xxxiiii. yere of the kynge, Rychard the Earle of Poytow arrered war agaynſt king Henrie his father, and tooke partie with the French kinge. By meane of the whyche warre, all ſuche ſummes of money as were before gathered by Dymys and otherwyſe, for the helpyng of the croyſie to be made into the holie lande, by the ſayde Rycharde and by many other nobles of the lande, were ſpente in the ſame vnnatural warre: wherfore the kinge ſayled into Normandie with a ſtronge armye. But or the kynge were there landed, the ſayd Rychard by helpe of the Frenchemenne had wonne the Cities of Towres, of Meaus, and alſo the Caſtelles of Raoul and Gyſours with other. At the laſt the French kyng Philip the ſecond, wyth the ſayd Richarde came vnto the Citie of Cenomanna, entendinge to lay ſiege vnto the ſame. Whereof king Henry being warned, ſet the ſuburbes on fyre, becauſe his enemies ſhould in them haue no ſuccour. But the flame of ẏ fyre was by the wynde driuen into the Cytie ſo ſharplie, that the kyng was compelled to forſake it. Wherwith the king was ſo amoued, that in his departing from the Citie, he ſayd theſe wordes. For thou haſte taken from me this daye, that I moſte loued in the worlde, I ſhall acquite the: for after this time I ſhall bynombe ẏ that thinge, that ſhould moſt haue pleaſed the in me which is myne hert. After this he loſte more daylye, ſo that his enemies preuayled ſtrongely agayne hym.

It is read of him, that he ſhould be at ſo greate an after deale in this warre, that laſtlie he ſhould put him in the kinge of Fraunces mercy, his honour and his crowne reſerued. But this is doubtfull of credence: For ſure I am, yf the French kyng had ſuch aduaũtage of him, it ſhoulde not haue fallen through the booke, but haue bene regiſtred in the moſt aduaunting maner, where as in the Frenche cronicle is touched no word of like matter. But truth it is that fortune was to him contrary, in ſuch wiſe that with, or for anger and impacience, he fell into a feuer. Wherof he laſtly died in the caſtell of * Conomeus or of Chynon in Normandye. In the moneth of July

Cynon

Julye, when he hadde raygned xxxiiii.yeres and eyght monethes with odde daies, and was buried at Founte Ebrarde, wyth thys Epitaphy vpon hys tombe.

Sufficit hic tumulus cui nō ſuffecerit orbis.
Res breuis eſt ampla, cui fuit ampla breuis.
Rex Henricus eram: mihi plurima regna ſubegi,
Multipliciq; modo, duxq; comeſq; fui,
Cui ſatis ad votum non eſſent omnia terræ
Climata, terræ modo ſufficit octo pedum.
Qui legis hec, penſa diſcrimina mortis: & in me
Humane ſpeculum condicionis habe.
Quod potes inſtanter operare bonum, quia mundus
Tranſit, & incautos mors inopina rapit.

¶The which Verſes are thus much to meane in ſentence.

Suffiſeth now this graue, to whom all earthly thing
Suffiſed not, my mynde ſo hyghe was ſet.
Tyme that was ſhort, my name full wyde dyd ſprynge,
VVhich fame by death is into ſhortneſſe fet.
Kyng Henry was I called, no man I thought my bet,
VVhoſe mynde ſometyme all earth not ſuffiſed,
Viij.foote of grounde now hath my body compriſed,

Thou that this readeſt waye the peryll of death in me.
Thou mayſte beholde the courſe of euery wyght
That earthly is: wherefore prouyde and ſee,
That thou well maye doo, ſhortlye doo it and ryght,
Defer not the tyme, for I aſcertayne thee ryght.
The worlde is tranſitorie, and vnwanly men taketh
Cruell death from whom none eſtate eſcapeth.

Gyraldus Cambrens whiche in hys booke of diſtinctions ſette out the lyfe of thys Henry, ſaieth: dreadfull it is to aledge agaynſt hym, that maye put a man oute of land, and to deſcribe hym wyth many wordes, that maye exyle a man with one woorde. Wherefore it were a notable deede to tel the ſothe of a princes deedes, and offend the prince in no meane. But yet when the prince is paſſed and gone, then men wyll talke wythout feare, that before tyme they ſpared for feare.

Then to folowe the ſothe, thys king Henry noriſhed ſtrife among his children with al diligence, hopynge thereby to lyue hym ſelf in the more reſt. When men would aſke of hym when he would leaue hys greate deedes, he vſed to anſwere that the worlde ſhuld faile, or a corragious heart ſhoulde ceaſe of greate deedes. He was pierles in

How the Jewes crucified a childe in Bury in Suffolke.

the Jewes crucified a chylde in the towne of Burie in Suffolke, named Roberte: for whome God ſhewed after many myracles.

And the.xxxii.yeare, the kynge made a voyage into Irelād to redreſſe thinges there out of order. But fortune was to him ſo contrarie that he loſte hys trauayle, lyke as the yere before his ſonne John had doone.

In the.xxxiii. yere of this king Henrie, at Dunſtable in the ayre was ſeen a crucifixe, and Chryſte nayled thereon whiche appeared viſiblie to manie a mans ſight. And in this yere the king loſte the countrey of Aluerne when he had ſpent great goodes aboute the defence of the ſame. Howbeit of this warre ſpeaketh nothing yͤ French Cronicle.

¶ The.cclx. Chapiter.

The ſonne agaynſt yͤ father.

IN the. xxxiiii. yere of the kynge, Rychard the Earle of Poytow arrered war agaynſt king Henrie his father, and tooke partie with the French kinge. By meane of the whyche warre, all ſuche ſummes of money as were before gathered by Dymys and otherwyſe, for the helpyng of the croyſie to be made into the holie lande, by the ſayde Rycharde and by many other nobles of the lande, were ſpente in the ſame vnnatural warre: wherfore the kinge ſayled into Normandie with a ſtronge armye. But or the kynge were there landed, the ſayd Rychard by helpe of the Frenchemenne had wonne the Cities of Towres, of Meaus, and alſo the Caſtelles of Raoul and Gyſours with other. At the laſt the French kyng Philip the ſecond, wyth the ſayd Richarde came vnto the Citie of Cenomanna, entendinge to lay ſiege vnto the ſame. Whereof king Henry being warned, ſet the ſuburbes on fyre, becauſe his enemies ſhould in them haue no ſuccour. But the flame of yͤ fyre was by the wynde driuen into the Cytie ſo ſharplie, that the kyng was compelled to forſake it. Wherwith the king was ſo amoued, that in his departing from the Citie, he ſayd theſe wordes. For thou haſte taken from me this daye, that I moſte loued in the worlde, I ſhall acquite the: for after this time I ſhall bynombe yͤ that thinge, that ſhould moſt haue pleaſed the in me which is myne hert. After this he loſte more daylye, ſo that his enemies preuayled ſtrongely agayne hym.

It is read of him, that he ſhould be at ſo greate an after deale in this warre, that laſtlie he ſhould put him in the kinge of Fraunces mercy, his honour and his crowne reſerued. But this is doubtfull of credence: For ſure I am, yf the French kyng had ſuch aduaũtage of him, it ſhoulde not haue fallen through the booke, but haue bene regiſtred in the moſt aduaunting maner, where as in the Frenche cronicle is touched no word of like matter. But truth it is that fortune was to him contrary, in ſuch wiſe that with, or for anger and impacience, he fell into a feuer. Whereof he laſtly died in the caſtell of * Conomeus or of Chynon in Normandye. In the moneth of

Cynom

July

Julye, when he hadde raygned xxxiiii. yeres and eyght monethes with odde daies, and was buried at Founte Ebrarde, wyth thys Epitaphy vpon hys tombe.

Sufficit hic tumulus cui nō ſuffecerit orbis.
Res breuis eſt ampla, cui fuit ampla breuis.
Rex Henricus eram: mihi plurima regna ſubegi,
Multipliciq; modo, duxq; comeſq; fui,
Cui ſatis ad votum non eſſent omnia terræ
Climata, terræ modo ſufficit octo pedum.
Qui legis hec, penſa diſcrimina mortis: & in me
Humane ſpeculum condicionis habe.
Quod potes inſtanter operare bonum, quia mundus
Tranſit, & incautos mors inopina rapit.

¶ The which Verſes are thus much to meane in ſentence.

Suffiſeth now this graue, to whom all earthly thing
Suffiſed not, my mynde ſo hyghe was ſet.
Tyme that was ſhort, my name full wyde dyd ſprynge,
VVhich fame by death is into ſhortneſſe ſet.
Kyng Henry was I called, no man I thought my bet,
VVhoſe mynde ſometyme all earth not ſuffiſed,
V iij. foote of grounde now hath my body compriſed,

Thou that this readeſt waye the peryll of death in me.
Thou mayſte beholde the courſe of euery wyght
That earthly is: wherefore prouyde and ſee,
That thou well maye doo, ſhortlye doo it and ryght,
Defer not the tyme, for I aſcertayne thee ryght.
The worlde is tranſitorie, and vnwanly men taketh
Cruell death from whom none eſtate eſcapeth.

Gyraldus Cambrens whiche in hys booke of diſtinctions ſette out the lyfe of thys Henry, ſaieth: dreadfull it is to aledge agaynſt hym, that maye put a man oute of land, and to deſcribe hym wyth many wordes, that maye exyle a man with one woorde. Wherefore it were a notable deede to tel the ſothe of a princes deedes, and offend the prince in no meane. But yet when the prince is paſſed and gone, then men wyll talke wythout feare, that before tyme they ſpared for feare.

Then to folowe the ſothe, thys king Henry noriſhed ſtrife among his children with al diligence, hopynge thereby to lyue hym ſelf in the moore reſt. When men would aſke of hym when he would leaue hys greate deedes, he vſed to anſwere that the worlde ſhuld faile, or a coragious heart ſhoulde ceaſe of greate deedes. He was pierles in chiualrye, in warre, and in lechery. He wedded Elynoure wyfe of Lewes kynge of Fraunce, contrary to the commaundement of his father. For he had ſhewed to him that he had lyen by her, when he was the ſayde kinges ſteward.

He raygned.xxvi.yeres, ſomedeale to his worthy bliſſe, and.iiii. yeares ſomewhat to hys payne, but the laſt.v.yeres to hys greate trouble and ſorowe. Furthermore the ſayde Geralde deſcriueth the progenye of thys Henry, whyche I ouerpaſſe becauſe it is ſo common.

Rycharde hys ſonne woulde often tell that wonder, and vſed to ſaye: no maruayle though they greued the people, that were commen of ſuche kynde. For of the deuyll they come, and to the deuyll they ſhall.

It is alſo read of thys Henrye, that in a chamber at Wynſore he cauſed to bee paynted an Eagle wyth foure byrdes, whereof thre of them all raſed the bodye of the olde Eagle: and the fourth was cratchynge at the olde Eagles eyen. When the queſtiō was aſked of hym, what thynge that picture ſhoulde ſignifye, it was anſwered by him: Thys olde Eagle (ſayeth he) is my ſelfe; and theſe foure Eagles betoken my foure ſonnes, the whiche ceaſe not to purſue my death. And ſpeciallye my yongeſt ſonne Iohn, whiche nowe I loue moſte, ſhall moſt ſpeciallye wayte and imagine my death.

Francia.

¶ The.ccxli. Chapter.

Phylyp the ſeconde of that name, ſurnamed Dieu done, or geuen of God, and ſon vnto Lewes the.viii. began to raygne ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord xi. hundred & .lxxix. and the.xxiiii. yeare of Henrye the ſeconde then kynge of Englande. Whiche ſayde Philippe raygned ſome what of tyme by the life of his father whiche time is accompted vnto the raigne of his father.

This in the firſte yeare of hys raigne, for the greate enormities that the Iewes vſed within the realme of Fraunce, as crucifiyng of chyldren, and exerciſing of their deteſtable vſery, he after due profe made, putte the malefactours to death, and the other in auoydyng of the moore daunger, he exyled and put cleare out of his realme.

Thys Phylyp alſo as before in the ſtorye of Henrye the ſecond is touched, excited the ſonnes of the ſayde Henrye to make warre vpon theyr father, by the whyche meane thys Philippe gat manye holdes and townes from the ſayd Henry within hys Duchy of Guion. But after the death of Henry, this Philip gaue ouer all the ſayd holdes and townes vnto Richard the eldeſt ſonne of the ſayde Henrye, and receyued of hym homage for the ſame: And as witneſſeth the French chronicle, the ſayd Richarde in token of obedience, was preſente at the coronation of the ſayd Philippe. But ye ſhall vnderſtande, that then he was not king of

The
cie of
lip fr
kynge

of Englande ten yeres after. But if it ſo were that he were preſente at the ſayde coronation, yet was he duke of Guion only.

Aboute the thirde yeare of hys raygne Eraclius, Patriarke of Hieruſalem came into Fraunce, & required ayde of thys king Philip to withſtande the furye & perſecution, whiche Saladine prince of the Turkes had executed and daylye continued in the countrey of Paleſtina agaynſt the chriſtian to the great deſtruction of them, and vndoyng of the countrey, and greate ieopardye of the loſynge of the holy Citie of Hieruſalem. For thys the kyng aſſembled a greate councell at hys Cytye of Paris. where the ſayd Eraclius made requeſt to the king, as before he had done to Henry the ſeconde. For he was in Fraunce in the yere of our Lorde a leuen hundred .lxxx. and two, and in Englande he was in the yere of grace .xi. hundred and lxxx. and .vii. After whyche councell there ſo holden, it was agreed that the kynge wyth ayde of the byſhops, and other of the ſpiritualtye, ſhuolde ayde the ſayde Patriarke, the whyche were ſet forth in all poſſible haſte. But after the reporte of Peter Wiſroye, whiche made a recule or lytle booke of the winninge and loſynge of Hieruſalem, they with mo Chriſten prynces were dryuen by the tempeſt of the ſea vnto the porte of Damas, where vnder coloure of a fayned truce, they were taken and caſte the moore parte of theym into priſon.

And when kynge Philip hadde thus deliuered the Patriarke, he then gathered hys knyghtes, and made an armye agaynſte Hughe duke of Burgoyne: the whiche at that ſeaſon and tyme had beclipped the Caſtell of Vergye with a ſtronge ſiege, and hadde promiſed not to depart thence, til ſuch time as he hadde wonne that holde by appoyntment or otherwiſe.

And for the defence of reſcouſe that myght be made for the ſame, he hadde manned foure caſtelles or towres thereunto adioynaunt with greate ſtrength of menne of armes. But after the king was thither commen with his hoſte, the ſaide towers were ſoone ouerturned, and the king with a certayne of hys people. of Guy captayne of the ſayde caſtell of Vergie was ioyouſly into the ſame receyued, and rendred to him the caſtell, and became his liege man. Wherewith the ſayde Hughe beinge ſoore amoued and diſcontented, ſeing there he was diſpoynted of his purpoſe, departed thence with his ordinaunce and people, and robbed and ſpoyled the countrey thereaboute, ſparyng nother churche nor houſe of religion, in ſo cruell and greuous maner, that the Byſhoppes and Abbattes of that party of Burgoyne made piteous requeſt vnto the ſaide Philippe, that he of his ſpeciall grace woulde ayde and ſuccoure theym and their Churches, againſte the tyrannie of the ſaid Duke Hugh. The king being moued with this piteous requeſt, made ſharpe war vpon the ſaid Hugh, and at length wanne from him a ſtrong Caſtell named Caſtelon, wherewithall the duke was put to ſuche a ſtudiall and feare, that he was forced to ſeeke meanes of treatie and of peace. Whereof the concluſiō was that he ſhould pay vnto the churches before by him hurted & harmed .xx. thouſande pounde. Whiche concluſion taken, and ſuretye for the ſame, the king returned into Paris. When the king ſo reſting him a certayne of time, & hauinge experience of the intollerable and foule ſtenches that dayly grewe by the fylthe of the earth and mire in the ſtretes, made prouiſion diligently with the ayde and helpe of the citezyns, whiche as than had lande within the citie, that the ſtreetes were ſhortly paued after. And at this time when the Cytye was thus paued, as affirmen manye authours, the name of it was chaūged from Luteſſe or Luceſſe, vnto Parys.

The .ccxliii. Chapter.

IN the .viii. yere of this kyng Philyp, (as ſayth yͤ French boke) Margarete ſyſter vnto thys Philip, late wyfe vnto Henry, late diſceaſed, and eldeſt ſonne of Henrye the ſeconde, king at this day of England, was maried to Belas king of Hūgrye.

In the .x. yere of this king Philip, the city of Hieruſalem was taken of Saladyne prynce of Egipt and Guy de Laſingnan laſt chriſten kynge of that citie, wyth the holye Croſſe, was taken in the fielde, whiche after that day came neuer to Chriſten mennes poſſeſſion. Of thys ſorowe and heuyneſſe woorde was broughte vnto kynge Philippe, with requeſt of ayde to reſkue certayne Cytyes, as yet reſted vnder the dominion of the Chriſten, as Tyre, Tryple, and Antioche, wyth other ſmale holdes. For ſauegarde whereof, manye nobles of Fraunce tooke vppon theym the Croſſe, as the Duke of Burgoyne, the Earle of Flaunders, Theobalde Earle of Bloys, the Earle of Rochford, the Earle of Champayne, wyth manye other noble knyghtes, which for length I paſſe ouer, and the reporte of theyr deedes, for ſo much as it concerneth nothynge the matter that I haue promyſed to ſpeake of.

In thys iourney alſo kynge Philippe intended to haue gone, and for the ſame great taxes and dymes were leuyed throughoute his realme, the whiche to thys daye are called Saladynes dymes. But the let of this iourney (as ſayeth the Frenche Chronicle) was Richarde Duke of Guyan: and after his father Henrye the ſeconde, that made war vpon the French king, as before is touched in the ſtorie of Henrye. During whiche warre the ſaid Henrye died, in the .xl. yere of this ſaid Philippe.

About this ſeaſon and time the Jewes which by meane of great giftes, had again purchaſed their dwelling within the countrey of Fraunce, wherof a wedowe was ladye and maſtreſſe called Branous, in abſence of the king toke a chriſten man, & ſurmiſed againſt him felonye and murder. For the which by fauour of the ſaid ladye, the ſaide Jewes ſet a crowne of thorne vppon the ſayde Chriſten mannes head, and after ſcourged him, and laſtelye in diriſyon of Chriſtes

A cruell malici acte if it were tr

Chriſtes religion, and deſpite of the ſame, crucified the ſame perſon. Wherof when ẏ king was enfourmed, in all haſte he ſent vnto the ſayde countrey or Caſtell of Brayon, and ſurpryſed the ſayde Iewes ſo ſodaynlye that none eſcaped, and brent there of them to the nomber of .lxxx. for their malicious and abhominable deede.

In the eleuenth yeare of the raigne of this Philippe, died Iſabell the Queene of Fraunce hys wife, a woman of good fame and greate vertue.

In the .xii. yere of his raygne, (as ſaith the Frenche booke) this Philippe tooke vppon hym the croſſe, hauing promiſe of king Richard then newlye crowned king of Englande, to keepe companye with him in that iourney. But he kept not promiſe. Wherwith this Philippe being diſcontented, ſayled before and layde ſiege vnto the citie of Acon or Acre. From thys ſaiyng varieth Polychronicon. And alſo Peter Deſroy. *For Polychronicon ſayeth, that after the kynges of England and Fraunce had made ſurtye betwene theym, for the perfourmaunce of this iorney, they bothe together taried at Turon in Fraunce, for to abyde the Sommer tyde. And at ſpryngynge of the yere, they of one wyl and purpoſe, tooke their voyage towarde the holy lande: that is to witte, that one by water and that other by lande, and mette againe in Cicilia. Where the French king departed from him, and ſo ſayled to the ſayde Citie of Acon or Acre and layed his ſiege therevnto. In whiche paſtime king Richard warred vpon the king of Cypres, and him with his lande ſubdued and after came vnto Acon, where the Frenche kyng had longe lyen at ſiege, withoute getting of anye great aduaũtage of his enemies, ſaiyng vnto kyng Rycharde, that he had ſpared the winning of the towne tyll hys commynge, to the ende that he at hys commynge, myght bee partner as wel of ẏ honor as of the winning. But how it was, ſuche vnkyndneſſe fell betwene them there, after they had won the ſaid town (as after in the ſtorye of kyng Richarde ſhall bee ſhewed) that this kinge Philippe retourned into Fraunce ſhortlye after. In which retourne the ſaid Philippe ſickened, and the duke of Burgoyne died. And when kynge Philippe a ſeaſon had ſoiourned in Fraunce, he maried Ingeberte the doughter of the kyng of Denmarcke. The whiche mariage as ſaieth Ranulphe, was deſyred of the French king, to haue with her graunted the tytle which the Danes had vnto the crowne of Englande, with alſo tenne thouſand markes of ſiluer, for to win with the ſaid righte & title. But it was not long or ſhe were from him deuorced, for cauſe of aliaũce of goſſypred or otherwiſe.

Phi- / k his / y to- / e the / land.

ca.20

King Philip maried ẏ doughter of the king of Denmarke.

Howe be it, in proceſſe of tyme after, the ſaide Ingebert was to him againe ioyned by the authoritie of Innocent the thirde of that name, then Biſhoppe of Rome, in the yere of grace .xii. hundred & ix. the .xxx. yere of the raigne of Philip: ſo that the ſaid Ingebert was deuorced from her lord, by ẏ terme of .xvii. yeres, or therevpon.

In whiche time and ſeaſon, the ſayde Philippe hadde maried the doughter of Phylyppe Duke of Sweuy, that then was returned vnto her father.

❡ The.ccxliii. Chapter.

Kyng Philippe for diſpleaſure, which he bare toward king Richarde, made ſharpe and cruell war vpon the Normans, & wanne therin diuers holdes and townes, and finally laide ſiege vnto the citye of Roan. whereof hearinge John earle of Huntingdon, or after ſome erle of Oxenford, brother to king Richard, whom the french boke nameth John without land with the earle of Arundell & other noble men, ſped him into Normãdye, and ſo ayded the citezins and the ſouldiours of Roan, that (as teſtifieth the french chronicle) the French king was ſo moued wyth the warre and defence of the ſame towne, that in a paſſing furie, conſideryng the winter ſeaſon drewe vpon, and that he might not cary away his gunnes and other great ordinaunces, he ſet all on fyre, & ſo with great agony departed.

And within thre monethes after, he laide ſiege vnto the caſtel of Verniel, where when he had lien thre wekes or moore, a meſſenger came vnto him and ſaide, that the citie of Eurоux was taken of the Normans, and the people therof taken priſoners. Wherefore in all haſte he departed, and reſcued the ſaid citie and priſoners: and that done returned to the forſaid ſiege, & aſſieged it ſo ſtrongly, that laſtlye he had it deliuered by appointmẽt. By this reaſon was king Richard deliuered out of the handes of the duke of Oſtryge. And then began the war to be more cruell, which I paſſe ouer, for ſo much as I entend to ſhew the effect therof in the ſtorye of king Richarde folowing.

Aboute the.xviii. yeare of the raygne of this Philippe, fell ſuche plenty of water, that the ground was therewith ſo bucked & drowned, that corne and other fruites by reaſon therof greatlye decayed & ſcanted in ſuch wiſe, that wheate was ſhortly after at.xx.ſ. a quarter, ſterlyng money.

A gre rayne.

In the.xx. yere of the raygne of thys Philyp, dyed Rycharde kyng of England, to whom was heyre John before named hys brother. The which concluded a truce with this Philyp for certayne yeres, as after in the ſtory of the ſayd John ſhall more clearelye appeare. And ſone thereafter meanes wer made to kyng Phylyp that he ſhoulde receyue agayne into his companye Ingebert his wyfe, & to renounce Marye doughter of the Duke of Sweuy, or after ſome authours, ẏ doughter of ẏ duke of Bohemy. But the kynge with this mocion was nothing contented, nor yet agreable to folow any ſuch monicion or requeſt. Wherfore ẏ prelacye of the land aſſembled them in cõcell, and by a full and whole authoritye, ſeynge they myghte not induce the kyng to no conformity or agrement to reſume his lawfull wyfe, and to refuſe that other they denounſed hym & hys realme accurſed.

Wherewith the kyng was ſo amoued & vexed, that he depriued certeyn biſhops from their ſees, & alſo he tooke in hys poſſeſſion the ſpirituall goodes, priſoned many prieſtes and other relgious men, and ouer that cloſed the ſayd Ingebert within the caſtel of Sampis, and further more greued his commons with greuous exactiōs and taxys. Then within a ſhorte terme after, John de ſainte Poule cardinal, and Athan or Othemon biſhoppe of Oſty and Legate of the biſhop of Rome, with the archbiſhop of Burdeaux and other, by the commaundement of Innocent the thirde, kept a great councel in the citie of Sorſore.

Where the kynge was moniſhed to appeare, for ſo muche as before he had graunted to be reconciled vnto his firſt wife. Wher this matter hynge in argument before the ſpirituall iudges by the ſpace of fiftene daies, without ſentence geuing. wherefore the king being with the delayes diſcontented, ſodeynly with his wife departed, without taking of them anye congy or leaue, ſending theim vnderſtanding, that as yet he wold bee aduiſed or he were diſſeuered from his wyfe. whereof when the ſayde John Cardinall, and the other biſhops had witting, accompting their labour loſt, thei returned ſhortly after vnto Rome, and ſhewed vnto the biſhop of Rome all as they had done.

And ſoone there after kynge John was honourablye receyued of thys king Philip, as in the ſtorie of the ſaid John ſhalbe moore playnly ſhewed.

And in the yeare folowynge, whiche ſhoulde bee in the begynnynge of the twentye and three yere af thys Phylyppe, dyed Marye hys wyfe, whyche he wrongfullye hadde holden, contrary vnto the lawe of the churche, by the terme of tenne yeres or therevppon. Of the whiche Mary he had receyued a manne chylde and a doughter, the whiche after were made legittimate by Innocente the thirde, thoughe ſome noble menne of Fraunce thereagaynſt grudged.

¶ The.ccxliiii. Chapter.

IT was not longe after, that the kynge aſſembled greate people, and entended to haue entred the landes of the Earle Roſſell, and of Roger de Roſe, of the whyche he had broughte before hym manye greuous complayntes of greate extorcions and exactions, that the ſayde Earle and Roger hadde executed & done vpon the Churches, nere vnto the valey of Soyſons, and woulde in no wyſe refrayne, for all the kynges commaundement. Wherefore he rygged hys armye, and drewe hym towarde theym.

But as ſoone as they were aduertiſed of the kynges comming, anone they ſubmitted them vnto the kynges grace, oblyging themſelues to make reſtitution, accordyng vnto the kynges pleaſure, to all ſuche places and perſones, as they had offended. And thys acte thus finiſhed, kyng Phylyppe returned vnto a place betwene Verdon, and the Iſle Audely, in the whyche place the kynge hadde appoynted a great counſayle or parlyament, Where amonge other matters it was concluded, that John king of Englande ſhoulde bee ſomoned to appeare, as the French kinges liege man, at the ſame parlyament to be holden at Parys, within fiftene dayes of Eaſter, to anſwere ſufficientlye vnto the king vppon ſuche queſtions, as there ſhoulde bee purpoſed vnto hym, for the duchy of Normandye, for the conntrey of Aungeou: and of Poyters.

But for that kyng John came not at that daye appoynted, nor none for him according to the monyſhment vnto hym geuen, therefore this kyng Philippe notwithſtandynge the amitie and trwce before confyrmed, aſſembled hys hoſt and entred the duchy of Normandy, and made therein ſharpe and cruell warre, and wanne a Caſtell therein named Bonte or Boute, and bruſed or craſed the caſtels of Gentyline and Gurney, and ſeaſed all the landes whyche Hugh de Gurney helde, and gaue them to the duke of Britaine. And alſo he gaue vnto hym the Earledom of Aungeou, and two hũdred knightes priſoners, of Normans and Engliſh, with a great ſumme of money.

It was not longe after that the duke of Britayne was departed from the kinge, but that hee with ſuche power as he mighte make, entred the countrei of Aungeou, to take thereof poſſeſſion. Where in ſhorte ſpace he was encountred of kyng John, & fought together a cruell battayle. In the which in the ende, the duke was put to the worſe, for the more part of his people were ſlaine, and him ſelfe with Hugh le Bruns, Godfrey de Leſygnan, and manye other nobles of Fraunce and alſo of Britayne, were taken pryſoners, with which tidinges the Frenche kynge was greuouſlye dyſcontented.

And where as at that time, he had becleped the caſtell of Arches with a ſtronge ſiege, he remoued from thence and yode to the citie of Towres, and brent a part thereof. But as teſtifieth the Frenche chronicle, he taryed not the comming of kyng John. But for that wynter was comming towarde, he ceaſed hys warres for that yere, and ſo drewe hym ſelfe into Fraunce.

In the yere folowynge, whiche was ẏ yere of thys Phylyp .xxiiii. and of king John the .iiii. yere, the warre newly began, which I ouer paſſe, for aſmuch as it ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtory of king John.

In the ſyxe and twenty yere of thys Philippe Almaricus a ſtudient of Parys helde certayne opinions of Hereſye. Of the whyche when he was abiured, he tooke ſuche thoughte that he died ſhortlye after. It was not longe after but that other Clerkes and ſtudientes helde another erronious opinion, concerninge the vnion of the Trinitie. Of the whiche number Peter Byſhoppe of Parys, and one Garyne a man of greate connynge were two, the whiche were degraded, and after conſumed wyth fyre, and the bodye of the forenamed Almaricus was agayne taken out of the earth and after brent.

Nere about the .xxx. yere of the raigne of this Philip, for conſide-

ration

racion (as ſaith the French boke) that John kyng of England had exyled diuers of hys Byſhoppes, and taken from theym theyr poſſeſſions and goodes, the whyche to this kyng Philippe were commen for ayde and ſuccour, he therfore moued with pitie, aſſembled a greate hoſte, and entended to haue ſayled into England, to haue refourmed theſe matters. With the whiche hoſte he paſſed tyll he came vnto Grauelynge by lande, where he appoynted his nauye to mete with him.

And to the ſame place alſo, Ferrande then Earle of Flaunders had affirmelye promyſed to come, with the aide of hys Flemminges where the kynge taryed for hym a certayne of tyme. But ſhortlye after the kyng was aſcerteyned, that the ſayde Earle was alyed wyth kynge John hys enemye, and purpoſed to ayde his partye in all that he mighte. Whereof thoccaſion was, as affirmeth the ſayde French cronicle, for ſo much as Lewes the eldeſt ſonne of king Phylyppe, helde from the ſayde Farrande two Caſtelles or townes, named Sayncte Omer and Are.

When kyng Phylyppe apperceyued that he was thus of the earle diſapoynted, he by the counſayle of hys Baronye, put by hys iourney into England, and aſſailed the countrey of Flaunders, & ſo yode vnto Caſſyle a lytle from Grauelynge, and wyth ſharpe aſſaulte wan the ſayd towne, and ſo from thence to Brugis, & commaunded his nauy to bee brought vnto the hauen of Sluſe, whiche is within ſhorte way of Brugys. And when he hadde executed hys pleaſure at Brugis, leauing a certaine of his people for to ſtrength his nauye, he yode to Gaunt, and there reſted him and his people.

In whiche ſeaſon Reygnolde earle of Boleyne, Guyllyam long Eſpee, or Guyllyam with the long ſworde, with a crewe of Englyſhmen ariued in Flaunders, to whō ſhortlye drewe Ferraunde the Earle wyth a greate power of Flemmynges. The whiche ſhipped theym in ſmale caruyles and barkes, and other ſhyppes of aduauntage, and wyth a fierſe corage ſet vpon the Frenche kinges nauye lyinge at Sluſe, as before it is ſhewed, where was foughten betwene them a ſtrong and cruell battayle.

But in the end the Flemminges had the victorye, and had the rule of all the Frenche flote, the which in number as teſtifieth the ſaide Frenche chronicle, were a thouſande and tenne ſayle. The which for number and greatneſſe myght not all lye within the Hauen, but ſpradde a greate parte of the ryuer beſide. Whiche ſo liyng without the Hauen, the Flemmynges conueied thence, and after laid ordinaunce to the towne of Sluſe, and aſſieged it.

King Philippe hearinge of the loſſe of hys Nauye, and of the aſſaulting of the towne of Sluſe, in all haſte ſped him thither, and there in ſuch wiſe reſiſted his enemies, that he ſlewe of theim vpon two thouſande, and tooke of them dyuers priſoners, & reſkued the towne. But for he ſawe he myghte not recouer hys ſhyppes beyng wythin the Hauen he cauſed them to be diſcharged of vittel and other neceſſaryes, and after ſet them on fyre and the towne alſo, and that done he toke certaine hoſtages of Brugis, of Gaunte, & of Ipre, and ſo retourned into Fraunce.

¶ The.ccxlv. Chapter.

When kyng Philip was returned into Fraunce, it was not longe after that by the meanes of ſome well diſpoſed perſones, hee was reconciled, and tooke to hym hys lawefull wyfe Ingeberta or Ingeberte, doughter of the king of Denmarke, which was a great comforte vnto all hys people. And thus it nowe appeareth, that the ſayde Ingeberte was from her lorde or huſbande, by the terme of ſixtene yeres and moore, as before it is touched in the ſecond chapter of this ſtorye.

In the yere of grace.xii.hundred xiiii.(as ſayth the Frenche booke) whyche maketh the yeare of the raygne of thys Philippe.xxxv. Otho the fourth of that name and duke of Saxony, whyche of ſome of the Electours was choſen for Emperoure, in the quarel of king John entred the Prouince of Henaude, and there being accompanyed wyth Reygnolde Earle of Boleyne, Farrãde earle of Flaũders, and dyuers other nobles, as well of Englande, Saxonye, and other places, made prouiſion to fyght wyth kyng Phylyp, whych then warred in Flaũders, ſo that the Frenche kynge was at the caſtell of Peron, and Otho was at the Caſtell of Ualenſyens, or Ualenſeus.

Aboute Marye Magdaleyns tyde, the Frenche kynge in waſtynge the countrey of Flaunders came vnto the towne of Turney, and Otho retourned from the forſayde Caſtell, and came vnto the Caſtell or towne, named Mortenge, the whiche was but ſyxe myle from Turney. whereof hearynge the kynge, entendended to haue ſet in ſhort tyme vpon hys enemies. But by the aduyſe of hys Barons, he was letted, for ſo muche as the wayes and places were ſtrayte and narowe toward hys enemyes. For the whych conſideration, by counſayle of hys ſayde Barons, he was letted, and remoued toward Henawde for to haue moore larger playnes.

So that after ſayncte James day he retourned, purpoſyng that nyghte to haue lyen and alſo hys hoſt at the caſtel called Lilly. But he was letted of his purpoſe. For Otho whiche was warned of his remouing, demed him to haue fled and purſued after the vaungarde of the king, of the which wer captayns, the vicount of Milion, and one named Fryer Garny, the whiche was a fryer & religious man, a man of great counſaile and hardyneſſe.

Frier G
nye a ca
tayne.

Theſe being accompanyed with foure thouſande menne, rode tyll they came to an Hyll, or lytle Mountayne, where they eſpyed the auauntage of Otho and hys Hoſte. Wherefore Fryer Garnye returned to geue the kyng knowledge, and the Uicount remained in the place, and houed wyth hys companye.

When the king had knowledge of the comming of his enemies, he in good maner kepte on hys iourney. In which ſeaſon Otho, with his people, came vnto the ryuer, which was ſomedeale daũgerous to paſſe, howe be it in proceſſe he paſſed it. And when he ⁊ his hoſte were ouer, he made way towarde Turney, in ſo muche that the vycounte and his companye, demed theym to haue retourned to Turney. But ſo ſoone as Freer Garny was retourned vnto the ſayde Mounte, anon he demed the contrarie, and ſayde precyſele that other they muſte geue battayle to theyr enemies, or els they muſte flee with ſhame.

In thys while the kinges people came vnto a brydge where they ſhoulde paſſe ouer. And the cautele of hys enemies was, that when the kynge wyth the more parte of hys people had bene paſſed that brydge, they woulde haue ſet vpon the rerewarde, and haue diſtreſſed them, and ſo haue kepte that brydge, that the king ſhould not haue ſuccoured his people.

But or the kinge were paſſed, the fight was begon, in ſo much that hideons crie came to the kynges eares, at armes at armes, to harnes, our enenemies be come.

Nere vnto the king was a chapell halowed in the honoure and worſhyp of Saynt Peter, wherevnto the kynge yode ⁊ made there his deuoute prayers, ⁊ that done armed him, and lepte to horſe ioyouſly criyng as barons at armes. Then the Oryflambe, which was paſſed the brydge, was countermaunded. And then beganne the trumpettes ⁊ taboures to blowe, whiche reuiued the palled hartes and cauſed theym to forgette the drede of death.

But for yͤ kynges people might not ſo haſtely retourne and paſſe the brydge, the king as a valiaunt knight tooke his horſe with hys ſpurres, and ſet forward to encourage the other of his knightes, ſo that his enemies hearinge of hys commyng, were ſomdeale diſcoraged and gaue place vnto the kynges hoſte. Then Otho hearyng of the kynges retourne, enbatayled his people. But ſo it was that he tooke the North parte of the field by reaſon whereof the ſunne was in hys face to his afterdeale, for that was excedinge hote ouer the other.

Then was the batell begun in dyuers parties of yͤ fielde ſo cruellie that manye a man was there ouerthrowen: The whiche endured by a longe ſpace, in ſuche wyſe that harde it was to diſcerne whiche partie had the better of that other. Eyther prynce enforced ſo ſtraytlie that other, that eyther of them were vnhorſed and in great ieopardye.

If here I ſhould rehearſe the vyctorious deedes of the Frenche kinge and his knightes in order, after the expreſſement of the Frenche booke, I ſhould therof make a longe ſtorie. But trouth it is that in the ende, Otho was compelled to forſake the fielde to the greate loſſe of his people, and Feraunte the Earle of Flaunders was taken with manie other, as Reygnold Earle of Boleyne, and .xxviii other of name.

And one thinge hardely me ſemeth to be credence giuen vnto, reherſed by the Frenche Cronicle, which ſayth that of al the French hoſte ſed them to be diſcharged of vittel and other neceſſaryes, and after ſet them on fyre and the towne alſo, and that done he toke certaine hoſtages of Brugis, of Gaunte, ⁊ of Ipre, and ſo retourned into Fraunce.

The.ccxlv. Chapter.

When kyng Philip was returned into Fraunce, it was not longe after that by the meanes of ſome well diſpoſed perſones, hee was reconciled, and tooke to hym hys lawefull wyfe Ingeberta or Ingeberte, doughter of the king of Denmarke, which was a great comforte vnto all hys people. And thus it nowe appeareth, that the ſayde Ingeberte was from her lorde or huſbande, by the terme of ſixtene yeres and moore, as before it is touched in the ſecond chapter of this ſtorye.

In the yere of grace.xii. hundred xiiii. (as ſayth the Frenche booke) whyche maketh the yeare of the raygne of thys Philippe. xxxv. Otho the fonrth of that name and duke of Saxony, whyche of ſome of the Electours was choſen for Emperoure, in the quarel of king John entred the Prouince of Henaude, and there being accompanyed wyth Reygnolde Earle of Boleyne, Farraũde earle of Flaũders, and dyuers other nobles, as well of Englande, Saxonye, and other places, made prouiſion to fyght wyth kyng Phylyp, whych then warred in Flaũders, ſo that the Frenche kynge was at the caſtell of Peron, and Otho was at the Caſtell of Valenſyens, or Valenſeus.

Aboute Marye Magdaleyns tyde, the Frenche kynge in waſtynge the countrey of Flaunders came vnto the towne of Turney, and Otho retourned from the forſayde Caſtell, and came vnto the Caſtell or towne, named Mortenge, the whiche was but ſyxe myle from Turney. Whereof hearynge the kynge, ententended to haue ſet in ſhort tyme vpon hys enemies. But by the aduyſe of hys Barons, he was letted, for ſo muche as the wayes and places were ſtrayte and narowe toward hys enemyes. For the whych conſideration, by counſayle of hys ſayde Barons, he was letted, and remoued toward Henawde for to haue moore larger playnes.

So that after ſayncte James day he retourned, purpoſyng that nyghte to haue lyen and alſo hys hoſt at the caſtel called Lilly. But he was letted of his purpoſe. For Otho whiche was warned of his remouing, demed him to haue fled and purſued after the baungarde of the king, of the which wer captayns, the vicount of Milion, and one named Fryer Garny, the whiche was a fryer ⁊ religious man, a man of great counſaile and hardyneſſe.

Frier G
nye a ca
tayne.

Theſe being accompanyed with foure thouſande menne, rode tyll they came to an Hyll, or lytle Mountayne, where they eſpyed the auauntage of Otho and hys Hoſte. Wherefore Fryer Garnye returned to geue the kyng knowledge, and the Vicount remained in the place, and houed wyth hys companye.

When the king had knowledge of the comming of his enemies, he in good maner kepte on hys iourney. In which ſeaſon Otho, with his people, came vnto the ryuer, which was ſomedeale daũgerous to paſſe, howe be it in proceſſe he paſſed it. And when he ⁊ his hoſte were ouer, he made way towarde Turney, in ſo muche that the vycounte and his companye, demed theym to haue retourned to Turney. But ſo ſoone as Freer Garny was retourned vnto the ſayde Mounte, anon he demed the contrarie, and ſayde precyſele that other they muſte geue battayle to theyr enemies, or els they muſte flee with ſhame.

In thys while the kinges people came vnto a brydge where they ſhoulde paſſe ouer. And the cautele of hys enemies was, that when the kynge wyth the more parte of hys people had bene paſſed that brydge, they woulde haue ſet vpon the rerewarde, and haue diſtreſſed them, and ſo haue kepte that brydge, that the king ſhould not haue ſuccoured his people. But or the kinge were paſſed, the fight was begon, in ſo much that hideons crie came to the kynges eares, at armes at armes, to harnes, our enenemies be come.

reate
aple.

Nere vnto the king was a chapell halowed in the honoure and worſhyp of Saynt Peter, wherevnto the kynge yode ⁊ made there his deuoute prayers, ⁊ that done armed him, and lepte to horſe ioyouſly criyng as barons at armes. Then the Oryflambe, which was paſſed the brydge, was countermaunded. And then beganne the trumpettes ⁊ taboures to blowe, whiche reuiued the palled hartes and cauſed theym to forgette the drede of death.

But for yͤ kynges people might not ſo haſtely retourne and paſſe the brydge, the king as a valiaunt knight tooke his horſe with hys ſpurres, and ſet forward to encourage the other of his knightes, ſo that his enemies hearinge of hys commyng, were ſomdeale diſcoraged and gaue place vnto the kynges hoſte. Then Otho hearyng of the kynges retourne, enbatayled his people. But ſo it was that he tooke the North parte of the field by reaſon whereof the ſunne was in hys face to his afterdeale, for that was excedinge hote ouer the other.

Then was the batell begun in dyuers parties of yͤ fielde ſo cruellie that manye a man was there ouerthrowen: The whiche endured by a longe ſpace, in ſuche wyſe that harde it was to diſcerne whiche partie had the better of that other. Eyther prynce enforced ſo ſtraytlie that other, that eyther of them were vnhorſed and in great ieopardye.

If here I ſhould rehearſe the vyctorious deedes of the Frenche kinge and his knightes in order, after the expreſſement of the Frẽche booke, I ſhould therof make a longe ſtorie. But trouth it is that in the ende, Otho was compelled to forſake the fielde to the greate loſſe of his people, and Feraunte the Earle of Flaunders was taken with manie other, as Reygnold Earle of Boleyne, and .xxviii other of name.

And one thinge hardely me ſemeth to be credence giuen vnto, reherſed by the Frenche Cronicle, which ſayth that of al the French hoſte miſſed but one ſyngleman, the whiche after was founde amonge the dead Almaynes, ſoore wounded, and after curied & healed agayne. Whiche may be tolde for a great wonder, conſiderynge the ſayde fyght, laſted ouer foure houres, as teſtyfieth the ſayde Cronycle.

But ſure the authoure or the writer ouerſeeth hym ſelf in that reporte, for he ſheweth before in the deuiſinge of the fyght of thys battell, that when kynge Phylyp was felled from hys horſe, two of his knightes were ſlayne ryghte before him, that one named Guillyam de long champe, and that other Geralde le Tyrne. But mayſter Robert Gagwyne expreſſeth this more clearelie, ſaiynge that after the field was doone and the Emperour was fled, leauyng hys banner of ſplayed Eagle behynde hym, a buſhmente of the number of ſeuen hundred men, recouered that ſtandarde, and ſo kepte them together.

Whereof when the kinge was enfourmed, he ſent agaynſt them one of his knightes called ſir Thomas Valarie, accompanied wyth l. footemenne, and two thouſand horſemen. The whiche diſtreſſed the ſayd company, wythoute loſſe of any man as before is ſaid. And moreouer, the ſayd authour ſaith that vpon the partye of the ſayde Otho, of knightes and gylte harneſſe were ſlayne a. M. and. v. C. and of yͤ horſemen and footemen a hundred and. l. thouſand.

A greate ſlaughter.

But of the Frenchmen which ſhould be ſureſt of the reckenyng, he maketh no menciõ. But truth it is, that in all the Chronicle through the French booke rehearſed, all thinge touchinge theyr honoure is declared and ſhewed to the vttermoſte. And that whiche concerneth theyr dyſhonoure or loſſe, it is eyther ſubtilie excuſed, or ſo darkelie or myſtlie written, that the reader therof ſhall hardlie come to the knowledge of the truthe. And that is wel apparaũt in the ſtories of Philip de Valoys and of king John his ſonne, in the expreſſemente of the faytes doone and exercyſed agaynſte the thyrde Edwarde kinge of England, and prince Edwarde his ſonne.

Than it foloweth in the ſtorie: whan Philip had obteyned thys great victorie of his enemies, and ordered other thinges concerning his people, as countermaundinge them the next way vnto their cõtrey, he wyth his priſoners ſpedde him to Parys, and there of hys great bounty grãted to the ſayd Earles of Boleyn and Flaũders, their liues, but not of impriſonement. For the Earle of Boleyne was ſente vnto the Caſtel of Peron, and Feraunt Earle of Flaũders, was committed to the Caſtell or Towre of Loure without the walles of the Citie of Parys than newlie made. But wythin leſſe than. xv. monethes after, by laboure of his wife, he with other of hys leyge men was delyuered, paiyng theyr finaunces, and perfourmyng of other ſtreyte condicons.

¶ The. ccxlvi. Chapter.

IT was not longe after that kyng Philip reaſſembled his knightes, and ſped hym towarde the countrey of Poytow. Whereof of being warned the Erle of Thoners that then was chiefe ruler of that countrey vnder kinge John ſeynge the febleneſſe of the commōs, that dayly were vexed with warre, and alſo the loſſe of kynge Johns frendes, notwithſtanding the ſayd John was then within xx. miles, yet he made ſuche meanes to kyng Philip, by the labour of Peter, than Duke or Earle of Britayne, that the ſayd kinge, accepted the ſame Erle to his grace and graunted to him and hys, a trewce for. iiii. yeres.

But that notwithſtanding the king kept on his iourney toward kinge John. Wherof kinge John beyng enfourmed, and alſo of the peace betwene the Earle of Thoners and the Frenche kyng, he by meanes of one Robert a legate of Rome, ſought meanes of a treaty and of peace: ſo that in proceſſe by diligence of the ſayd Roberte and other, a peace was concluded for v. yeres. Whiche peace concluded and aſſured, either kinge retourned into theyr owne prouinces.

Within ſhorte whyle after the Frenche kyng was retourned into Fraunce, he called to minde the great victorie had of the Almaynes, with alſo one other whiche Lewes his ſonne, about the ſame time had gayned of kynge John in the countrey of Angeou, at the Caſtell of Moyn, or Mayne. For the which two vyctories the king edified a Monaſtarye beſyde the Citie of * Saintles, in honour of Sayncte Vyctor, and endowed it wyth fayre and ryche poſſeſſions, and named it the Abbay of ſainct Vyctor.

In the. xxxvi. yere of the raigne of this Phylyp, Lewes his ſonne by procuring and ſturringe of the lordes of England, ſailed into the ſayde prouince, as more playnlye ſhalbe ſhewed in the. xvi. yeare of the reygne of king John.

Manie moe ſtories and actes might I bryng in, and ſet in thys ſtorie of this king Philyppe, yf I ſhould folowe the Frenche booke. For he maketh there a reherſall, that conteyneth. xxxix. greate leaues of parchemyne. Of whiche I haue taken out ſuche as to me ſemeth conuenient, and haue ouer paſſed the other for lengthe of the tyme.

Than it foloweth, thys Phylip after theſe dayes drew hym to more quiet and reſte, ſo that after thys peace or trewce concluded, with kynge Jhon of Englande, the authour ſpeaketh not or myndeth of anye noble deede by hym doone. So that in the yere of oure Lorde. xii. hundred and. xxii. whiche ſhold be the yere of his reigne xliii. the ſaid authour beginneth, and ſaythe, that in that foreſayde yere appeared a greate Eclipſe of the ſunne, wherof the like had not bene ſene in manie yeres paſſed.

The death of Philip.

And in the yere folowing died this Phylyppe in the moneth of July, whan he had reygned vpon xliiii. yeres. Before whoſe death apered a great comete or blaſyng ſtarre, the whiche the Frenchmen, (with alſo the foreſayde eclypſe,) adiudged for pronoſtiquis and tokens of the Kynges deathe, the whych was buried with excellent pompe in the Monaſtery of ſaint Denys, in the yere of our lorde a thouſande two hundred and. xxiii and of his age, lviii, leauynge after

ter him the forenamed Lewes, which was enioyned after him.

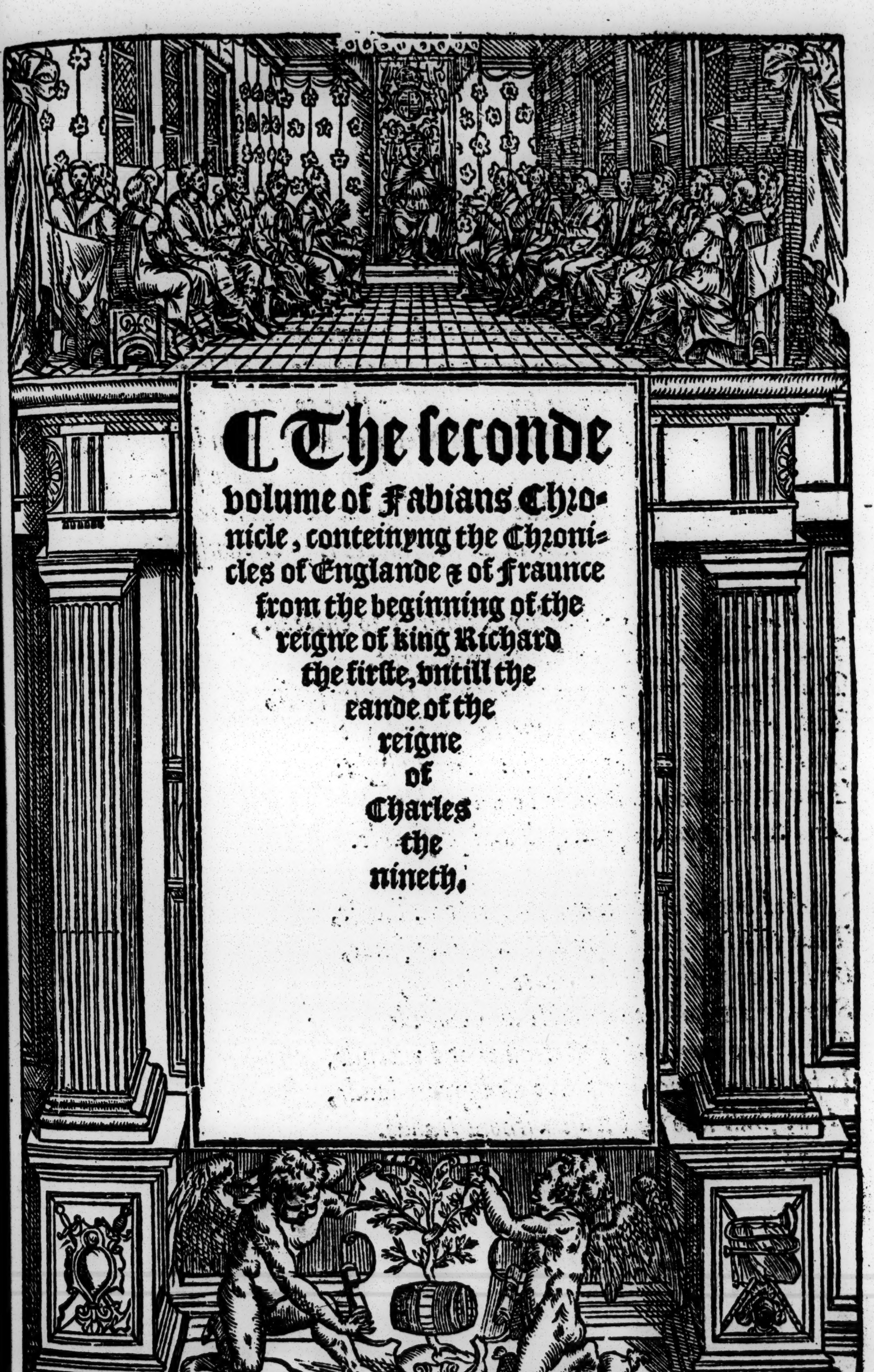
This Philip amonges other notable thinges, ordeyned in hys teſtament: he ſet to ỹ aydinge and winning of the holy Citie of Hieruſalem, three hundred thouſand pounde of Parys money, to ỹ hoſpitall in Mount fort a. C. thouſande pounde, and to be diſtributed amonges the poore commons of hys lande, he gaue. xx. thouſand pounde.

But here is to be noted, there is a great diuerſitie betwene a poũd of Paris money, and a pounde of ſterling money. For a pounde of Paris money, is but two ſhillinges and. vi. pence ſterling, or nere there aboute. And ſo it foloweth that a thouſande pounde of Paris, is but a hundred. xxv. pounde ſterlyng. By which accompt it foloweth that the kyng gaue to the ayde of the holy land. xxxvii. thouſande, fiue hundred pounde ſterling, and to the hoſpytall. xii. thouſande and fyue hundred pounde ſterlynge, and to the poore people two thouſand and fyue. C. pounde.

(.˙.)

¶ And thus here I make
an ende of thys volume, for cauſe and
conſideracion, as after is ſhewed in the
begynnynge of the nexte volume
more manyfeſtly.

✠



¶ The ſeconde
volume of Fabians Chronicle,
conteinyng the Chronicles
of Englande & of Fraunce
from the beginning of the
reigne of king Richard
the firſte, vntill the
eande of the
reigne
of
Charles
the
nineth.

Lenuoie.

Preace forthe rude volume, and commende me,
To my dereſt frende experte in all ſcience:
Praie hym at laiſure thee to ouerſee,
And where in Metre or proſe he findeth offence,
Of congrewe Engliſhe, or of perfecte ſentence,
Humblie hym praie, that he will thee correcte,
whiche in all his faultes is ſo circumſpecte.

And ſhewe to hym further his merite to encreaſe,
The ſeconde volume is redie to hym dight,
Praie hym he will not therefore with thee ſurſeaſe,
Till that thy felowe, he haue by his in ſight
And by his ſcience, brought into Good plight:
That to all readers it maie be delectable,
And to the hearers fruictfull and profitable.

And not to diſdain my maliperte rudineſſe,
That to his paine I ſhould thus boldly ſende,
Or hym to will to ſoche greate buſineſſe,
So rude a woorke to correcte and emende.
But ſhewe hym ſothly that all that I entende,
Is for to enhaunce his praiſe and greate laude,
As he ſhall knowe I truſt without fraude.

Now for as moche as we be comen to the tyme, that officers were choſen and charged, with the rule of the citee of London, it is neceſſarie, that there we doe ſhewe, what officers thei wer, and of the name that to them was admitted and giuen. Then ye ſhall vnderſtande, that at the commyng of William Conquerour, into this lande (as euidently appeareth by the Charter of hym, to the Citezeins of London graunted) that before thoſe daies, and then, the rulers of the ſaied citezeins, were named Porte Greuis, whiche woorde is diriuate or made, of twoo Saxon wordes, as Porte and Greue.

Porte is to meane a Toune, and Greue is mente for a gardein or ruler, as who would meane, Gardein, Ruler or Keper of the Toune. Theſe of olde tyme, with the Lawes and cuſtomes, then vſed within this citee, were regeſtred in a boke, called the Domeſday in Saxon tongue, then vſed.

But in the latter daies, whē the ſaid lawes and cuſtomes, altered and chaũged, and for conſideration alſo, that the ſaied booke was of ſmalle hande, and ſore defaced, it was the leſſe ſet by, ſo that it was enbeſiled or loſte: ſo that the remembrannce of ſoche rulers, as were before the daies of this Richarde the firſt, whoſe ſtorie ſhall nexte enſue, are loſt and forgotten.

Wherfore now I ſhall begin, at the firſt yere of the ſaied firſt Richard, the whiche of ſome writers, is ſurnamed Cure de Lion, and ſo continue the names of all officers, as well Bailiffes, Maiors, & ſheriffes, till the laſt yere of Richard the third, Kyng in deede, and not of right.

Whiche Bailiffes I ſhall appoinct the Rule of, from Michelmas to Michelmas, and the Maiors from ſoche tyme and ſeaſon, as now is accuſtomed and vſed, that is to ſaie, from the daie of Symon and Iude, vnto the the ſame feaſt next enſuyng: vpon whiche daie, the newe Maior taketh his charge at the Guilde halle, and the old Maior is there, and then diſcharged of theſaied office of Maioraltie.

Now would I fain
In woordes plain
Some honour ſain
And bryng to minde
Of that auncient citee
That ſo goodlie is to ſee
And full true hath bee
And alſo full kinde.

To prince and kyng
That hath borne iuſt rulyng
Sine the firſt winnyng
Of this Iſlande by Brute,
So that in greate honour
By paſſyng of many a ſhowre
It hath euer borne the flowre
And laudable brute.

Of euery citee and towne
To ſeche the worlde rowne
Neuer yet caſt downe
As other many haue bee,
As Rome and Carthage
Hieruſalem the ſage
With many other of age
In ſtorie as ye maie ſee.

This ſo oldly founded
Is ſo ſurely grounded
That no man maie confounde it,
It is ſo ſure of ſtone,
That it is vpon ſet
For though ſome haue it thret
With manaſſes grim and greate,

Yet hurte had it none.

Chriſte is the very ſtone,
That the citee is ſet vpon.
Whiche from all his foon
Hath euer preſerued it,
By his ſpeciall fauour
Whiche is our onely ſauiour
From the ſynfull behauiour
That our forefathers did commit.

The pariſhe churches to reken
Of whiche nomber as I ſhall ſpeaken
Wherin ſpeake many a prieſt & deaken
And Chriſte daily thei ſerue,
By meane of whiche ſacrifice
I truſt that he in all wiſe
This citie for his ſeruice,
Doeth euermore preſerue,

This citee I meane is Troinouaũt
Where honor and worſhip doeth haunt
With vertue and riches accordaunt
No citee to it like.
To ſpeake of euery commoditie
Fleſhe and fiſhe and all deintie
Clothe and ſilke with wine plentie
That is for whole and ſicke.

Bread and ale with ſpices fine
With houſes faire to ſoupe and dine
Nothyng lackyng that is condigne
For man that is on molde,
With riuers freſhe and wholſome aire
With women that bee good and faire
And to this citee doen repaire
Of ſtraungers manifolde.

The victuall that herein is ſpente
In three houſholdes daily tente
Betwene Rome and riche Kente
Are none maie them compare,
As of the Maior and ſheriffes twaine
What might I of the Juſtice ſaine
Kept within this citee plaine
It were long to declare.

For though I ſhould all daie tell
Or that with my rime dogrell
Might I not yet halfe doe ſpell
This tounes greate honoure,
Therefore ſhortly as I began
Praie for it bothe childe and man,
That it maie continue and
To beare of all the floure.

And ſo to dwell in reſt and peace
Good Lorde graunte that it not ceaſe
But euer to haue more encreaſe
If it be thy will,
And to continue the old fame
The kynges chamber, that the right name
London to kepe without blame
As it hath hether till.

Who ſo hym liketh theſe verſes to reade
With fauour I praie he will thẽ ſpel
Let not the rudeneſſe of thẽ him leade,
For to deſpraue this rime dogrell
Some part of yͤ honor it doeth you tel
Of this old citee Troinouaunt
But not thereof the halfe dell
Connyng in the maker is ſo adaunt.

But though he had the eloquence
Of Tulli, and the moralitie
Of Seneck, and the influence
Of the ſwete ſugred armonie
Of that faire ladie Caliope,
Yet had he not connyng perfight
This citee to praiſe in eche degre
As it ſhould duely aſke of right.

Finis.

Here after I ſhall declare the wardes of this foreſaied Citee, w alſo the pariſhe Churches that ſtande within theſaied wardes.

The warde of the Towre, wherin are.iii.pariſhe churches. i
Sainct Olaue
Alhalowne at Barkyng
Sainct Dunſtane.

Billyngiſgate warde. ii.
Sainct Botolph
Sainct George in Podinglane.
Sainct Andrewe in Eaſtchepe
S.Margarete called Patens
Sainct Marie Hill.

Lande Bridge warde. iii.
Sainct Benet at Grace churche.
Sainct Leonard in Eaſtchepe
S.Margarete in Bridgſtrete.
Sainct Magnes in Bridgſtrete.

Dowgate warde. iiii.
Sainct Laurence Pounteney.
Alhalowne the more
Alhalowne the leſſe.

walbroke warde v.
Sainct Jhon in Walbroke.
Sainct Marie Bothawe
Saincte Swithine in Candelwike ſtrete.
Sainct Stephan in Walbroke.
Saincte Marie wolchurche in the Pultrie
Sainct Sith in Bockeriſburie.

Candelwikeſtrete ward.vi.
Sainct Martine Orgor
Sainct Clement
Sainct Michael in Croked lane
Sainct Marie Apchurche

Langbourne warde. vii.
Alhalown Stanis i Lūbardſtret
Sainct Gabriel
S.Denis in Fanchurche ſtrete
Sainct Edmunde
Sainct Nicholas Acon
Sainct Marie Wolnoth in Lūbarde ſtrete.

Algate warde. viii.
Sainct Andrewe vnderſhafte
S.Katerines by Chriſtes church
Sainct Katerine Colman

Porte Sowkin warde. ix.
S.Botolph without Algate

Lime ſtrete warde. x.
Sainct Marie Naxe.

Biſhoppes gate warde. xi.
Sainct Botholph at the gate
Sainct Alborgth
Alhalowens within S. Helins.

Cornehill warde. xii.
Sainct Michael.
Sainct Peter.

Bradſtrete warde xiii.
Sainct Martine Owtewiche
Sainct Benet Finke
Sainct Bartholmewe the litle.
Sainct Chriſtopher
Sainct Peter the poore
Alhalowes in the walle

Colmanſtrete warde xiiii.
Sainct Stephan
Sainct Olaff in the Jurie.
Sainct Margarete in Lothbery

Chepe warde. xv.
Sainct Laurence in the Jurie.
Sainct Marie Bowe
Alhalowes in Honie lane.

Sainct Mary Colchurche
Sainct Mildredes in yͤ Pultrie.
Sainct Benet ſhorhogge.
Sainct Martine Poniers.
Sainct Martine in Iremonger lane.
Sainct Marie

¶Cordwainer ſtreteward. xvi
Sainct Mary or Aldermarie.
Sainct Anceline
Sainct Pancras

¶Quen Hithwarde xvii.
Sainct Michael.
Sainct Mary Somerſet.
Sainct Mary Mouthawe
Sainct Nicholas Olaffe
Sainct Nicholas colde Abbey
Sainct Peter

¶Bredſtrete warde. xviii.
Alhalowes in Bredſtrete.
Sainct Mildrede.
Sainct Mathie
Sainct Jhon Euangeliſt
S. Auguſtine at Paules gate.
Sainct Margaret Moiſes
Sainct Botolph
S. Margaret in Fridaie ſtrete.

¶Vintrie warde xix.
Sainct Martine
Sainct Michel Colege
Sainct Thomas Apoſtle.
Sainct James Garlike hith
Trinitie in Knightrider ſtrete.

¶Bainarde Caſtle warde xx.
Sainct Andrewe.
Sainct Benet
Sainct George
Sainct Mary Magdaleine in old Fiſhe ſtrete.

¶Faringdon warde within xxi.
Sainct Yeuan.
Sainct Nicholas in the Fleſheſhambles.
S. Faithes in Poules churche.
S. Martine within Ludgate
Sainct Michael at Querne.
Sainct Fauſter in Fauſter lane.
S. Peter at the croſſe in Chepe.
S. Gregorie in Poules churcheyarde.
Sainct Genin within S. Martine the Graunte.

¶Farindon ward without. xxii.
Sainct Dunſtone
Sainct Bride.
Sainct Andrewe in Holborne.
S. Sepulcre without Newgate

¶Aldriſgate warde xxiii.
S. Botolph without the gate
Sainct Anne
Sainct Jhon Zacharie
Sainct Leonard in Faſter lane
Sainct Marie Stanyng
S. Mathewe in Siluerſtrete

¶Baſſinges Haule warde. xxiiii
Sainct Michael there.

¶Crepelgate warde. xxv.
S. Mary Magdalein in Milke ſtrete.
Sainct Mary in Aldermanbury
Sainct Michael in Hogynlane.
Sainct Albones in Wodeſtrete.
Elſyng Spittle that nowe is a pariſhe churche.
Sainct Olaffe in Siluerſtrete
Sainct Giles without the gate.

¶The ſomme of the pariſhe churches within London. C. xiij.

HEre enſue the Cathedrall churches, chapelles, and other churches that are wͭin the citee.

- The Cathedrall churche of ſainct Poule in the ende of Chepe.
- The Hoſpital called ſainct Bartilmewes Spittle.
- The chapel of our Lady of Barkyng in the Towre warde.
- A churche where the croſſed Friers ſometyme were.
- A churche where the Auguſtines Friers ſometyme were
- A college of ſainct Anthonie, in the warde of Bredſtrete.
- A churche late called Acris, ſtandyng in Chepe.
- A houſe where the Graie Friers were ſometyme, ſtandyng in the warde Faryndon within.
- An houſe where the Blacke Friers were ſometyme ſtandyng by Ludgate, within the forſaid ward
- An houſe where the white Friers wer ſometime, ſtanding in Fleteſtrete.
- A Churche or College called the Tēple, ſtanding at the Tēple bar.
- A chapell ſtandyng in Pardone churche yarde within Poules.
- A chapell ſtandyng in the church yarde at Poules, ouer the Charnell houſe.
- A chapell ſtandyng within Crepell gate, S. James in the wall.
- A chapel called Pappie, ſtanding beſide Biſhops gate, founded by the prieſtes of that Fraternitie.
- A Chapell of Corpus Chriſti in the Pultrie.
- A chapell ſtādīg vpō Lōdōbrige
- A chapell ſtanding in Guild hall yarde of our Ladie.
- A Churche ſtandyng by Poules, called ſainct Martine le Graund

¶ Churches and Chapelles without the citee.

- Weſtminſter churche.
- The Kynges newe chapell.
- Sainct Stephans chapell.
- Sainct Margaretes thurche.
- A chapell at Totehill.
- A chapel of ſainct Anne in Totehill ſtrete.
- A chapell of Raunciuale
- A pariſhe churche therby of. S. Martine.
- A chapell of our ladie of Pewe

¶ Without Algate.

- A pariſhe Churche of our Ladie, ſtandyng without the Barres, called white chapell.
- A College of ſaincte Katherine, ſtandyng on the Eaſt ende of the Tower of London.
- A pariſh churche or chapell within theſaied Tower, of. S. Peter.

Southwarke.

- A pariſhe churche of Mary Magdaleine.
- A pariſhe churche of. ſ. George
- An Hoſpitall or college.
- A pariſhe churche of ſainct Olas
- A pariſhe churche called ſaincte Sauiours.

Without Temple barre.

- A pariſhe churche of ſ. Clement.
- A chapell of ſainct Spirite.
- Sainct Vrſula at Strande

Without Smithfield.

- A churche called ſaincte Jhons, without Smithfield.
- A churche called Clerkenwell
- A chapell in pardon churchyarde

Without Biſhoppes gate.

- Shordiche pariſhe churhe.

¶ The ſomme of all the cathedrall churches, chapelles, and other ſoche like churches, within the citie and without is. xlii.

Somme of all the churches, aſwell pariſhe churches, chapelles and other within the citee, or without is. C. lv.

Richard the firſt. Li.7.ca.25

Richarde the firſte of that name, and ſecond ſoonne of Henry the ſecond, begā his reigne ouer Englāde in the moneth of Iulie, and yere of our lorde M.C.lxxxix. and the leuenth yere of the ſeconde Philip then kyng of Fraunce.

This Richard prouided buſily to ſette good rule in Normandy, whē he had heard of his fathers death, and after ſped hym into England, where he was ioyouſly receiued, and in the moneth of September folowyng, and third daie, he was crouned at Weſtminſter, of Baldwin Archbiſhop of Caunterburie. Vpon the whiche daie the Iewes of England, and ſpecially ſoche as dwelled within London, and nere about aſſembled of them a certain nomber, and preſumed farther then required for their authoritie. For whiche preſumption, thei were firſt rebuked, and after one of thē ſtriken. Whiche thing ſeen of the common people, ſuppoſed that to be doen by the kinges commaundement: wherefore in a furie (as thoſe that thei hated as yͤ deuill, for their vſury, and other vnhappie conditions) thei fel vpon thē, and chaſed them to their houſes, and thē robbed and ſpoiled without pitie, and brent ſome of their houſes, whereof the rumour ran to Weſtminſter, to the Kynges audience. Wherefore, in all haſte he ſente doune, giuyng ſtraite cōmaundemente, that thei ſhould ceaſe of that riot. But the people were in ſoche ire and woodneſſe, that thei refrained not for al the kynges ſounde, till thei had executed the fine of their malice. And albeeit, that this riot was after greuouſly ſhewed againſte the commons of the citee, yet it paſſed vnpuniſhed, for the greate nomber of the tranſgreſſours.

A commocion of Iewes.

Th of y

And theſaied daie of Coronation, all priſoners that laie in any priſon about London at the Kynges ſute, or for other ſmalle or fained actions, were frely deliuered.

Sone after the king gaue many dignities, and to his brother Jhon he gaue the Prouinces of Nothyngham, Deuonſhire, and Cornewall, and created him erle of Lancaſter. And then the king ordeined the citee of London, to be ruled by two Bailiffes, whoſe names were as foloweth.

The Bail

Anno dñi. M.C.xc.

Anno dñi. M.C.xc.j.

Bailiui { Henry of Cornehill.
Richard fiz Riuer. } Anno primo.

Cap. eodē.

IT was not long after that the king had thus exalted his brother Jhon (as before is ſhewed) but that he alſo preferred hym to the mariage, of the Earle of Gloceters doughter, by reaſon whereof he was Lorde of that Earledome. Theſe greate aduauncementes, made hym after vnkynde to his brother, and by pride thereof, to couete after the whole kingdom.

This yere kyng Richard was aſſoiled of the offence, that he had vſed in rebellion againſt his father. In recompenſacion whereof (as teſtifieth the aucthor Guido) he voluntarilie toke vpō him, and promiſed to warre vpō Chriſtes enemies. Albeeit that other writers ſhewe, that it was for that, that his father had ſo willed him by his life. But for what cauſe (ſo it was) preparacion and prouiſion for that iourney was made, from that daie forthward.

This yere alſo the king enlarged Elianour his mother, whiche long before at the commaundement of his father her huſband, was as a priſoner kept in ſecrete keping: after whiche enlarging, the lande was moche guided by her counſaile.

And this yere, as ſaieth Ranulph, Kyng Richard gaue ouer the caſtles of Barwick and *Rochiſburgh, to the Scottiſh king, for the ſomme of ten thouſande li, for the exploite of his voiage. And farthermore he ſolde to the old Biſhop of Durham, his owne Prouince, for a greate ſomme of monie, and created hym Earle of the ſame: wherfore the king ſaid after in game, I am a wonders craftie man, for I haue made a newe Erle, of an olde biſhop. By ſoche meanes the Kyng emptied many Biſhoppes, and riche prieſtes bagges, and filled his cofers And ouer that he graunted out annuities and fees out of the croune as though he thought nothyng of his retourning. For this deede ſome of his familiers, as thei durſt, blamed hym.

But he ſaied to theim, that in tyme of nede, it was good policie for a man to aide hym with his owne: and more ouer he ioyned therto, that if London were his, of that tyme of neede, he would ſell it, if he might get any conuenient marchaunt, that for it wer able to paie.

An other waie he had alſo to gather monie, for he had licence of Innocente the thirde of that name, to diſpence with ſoche as hym liked within his realme, for takyng vpon them the croſſe,

Anno dñi. M.C.xcj. Anno dñi. M.C.xcij.

Baliui. { Jhon Herlion. Roger Duke. } Anno ſecundo.

IN the ſeconde yere in the moneth of October, Kyng Richarde betoke the guiding of of the lande vnto the Biſhop of Ely, then Chaunceller of England, and ſailed into Normandy: where ſettyng the countrie vnder ſad guidyng, ſhortly after he met with the Frenche kyng Philippe the ſeconde, the whiche ioyntly rode to Turon, and there ouerpaſſed the ſhortneſſe of Winter. In which paſſe time, making either with other aſſuraunce, for continuaunce of ſo greate a iourney, at the ſpring of the yere theſe two Princes toke their voyage, toward the holie lande: that is to meane, Kyng Richard by the ſea,

The ſetting forthe of the two kynges.

and kyng Philip by the land, and appoincted to mete again in the lande of Scicilia or Scicil.

How the Iewes killed theim ſelues.

In this meane tyme, in Englande, the Iewes in diuers plates of the realme, as Lincolne, Staunforde, and Linne, wer robbed and ſpoiled: and at Yorke, to the nomber of fower hundred and mo, cut their maſter veines, and bled to death.

A variaũce betwene the twoo Princes.

Theſe twoo kinges, accordyng to their appoinctmente mette in Scicill, where grudge began to kindle betwene theim, for correction of their ſoldiours. Then the Kyng departed again from kyng Richard, the whiche there made certaine ordinaunces for warre, as a Towre or Caſtell of timber, whiche he named Magriffons, and alſo prouided for victuall for bothe hoſtes.

In this tyme alſo the Kyng of Cipris, had taken twoo Shippes of king Richardes, and denied the deliuerie of theim: wherefore the ſaied Richard entred the lande of Cipris, makyng therein ſharpe warre, and chaſed ſo the Kyng frõ citee to citee, that laſtly he yelded hym vnto kyng Richard, vpõ condition that he ſhould not be throwen in bondes of Iron, whereof king Richard in keping of his promiſe, caſt hym in bondes of ſiluer.

How king Richarde toke a ſhip of the Soudans.

When king Richard had dwelled there vppon twoo monethes, and had takẽ his pleaſure of that countrie, and taken amendes at his owne wil for his ſhippes, then he departed from theſaied Iſle of Cipris, and ſailed towarde Acon or Acris. In the whiche courſe ſo kepyng toward Acris, he encountred a greate ſhip of the Soudãs of Surrie, fraught with greate riches, and toke it, and ſo came at length to the citee of Acris, where at that tyme laie before the ſaied toune, the Frenche kyng with his hoſte, and had loſte a litle before twoo thouſande of his men, whiche were parted from his hoſte, to haue doen an enterpriſe vpon the Turckes, but thei were laied for and diſtreſſed.

Th
tin
of t
Kyn
Acri

Then (as teſtifieth Peter Diſcroie) kyng Richard was ioyouſly receiued of the Frenche King. After whoſe commyng, it was not long that the ſaied citee, was giuen vp by appoinctment, as foloweth, and as affirmeth the ſaied Peter, and alſo the Chronicle of Fraunce: Firſt that the Saraſins ſhould depart out of the citee, leauyng behinde them horſe, harnes, victuall, and all other thyng belõgyng to warre. Alſo thei ſhould cauſe to be reſtored all ſoche priſoners of chriſtian men, as thei had vnder their keping, with other couenauntes, whiche I paſſe ouer.

Ho
citee
cris
giue

And thus was the citee of Acris, yelded into the chriſten mennes handes, in the moneth of Auguſt, and the yere of our Lorde .xi. hundred fower ſcore and twelue. But when it came to the parting, of the praie of the citee, there began malice to kindle his bronde, whiche was not lightly after quenched.

The
lice
led.

Of this variaunce betwene theſe twoo Kynges, of Englande and of Fraũce, diuers maners are ſhewed. For Polichronica ſaieth, that it began by reaſon that kyng Richard, denied vnto king Philip halfe of his winnynges in Cipris, accordyng to the couenauntes be-

Li.7
The
of th
betw
theſe
Prin

twene theim aſſared at Turon. But kyng Richard ſaied, that the conuention there made, ſtretched no further then to ſoche goodes, as was wonne within the limites or boundes, of the holie lande. An other grudge was, by reaſon that the Frenche kyng aided not therle of Campaine, beyng in diſtreſſe of nede. Wherefore the ſaied Erle beyng diſcontent, ſaid to the French kyng: Sir hetherto I haue doen accordyng to my duetie, but hereafter I ſhal doe, as I am compelled by nede. For your grace hath hitherto cheriſhed me but for mine but nowe I ſhall go to hym, that is more readier to giue, then to take, and ſo departed to kyng Richard, of the whiche he had al his pleaſure.

The third cauſe was, as ſaieth Ranulph, for as moche as Kyng Richard, at his beginning in Scicill, maried the ſiſter of the Kyng of Nauerne, where before he had promiſed, to marie the ſiſter of the ſaied kyng Philip.

But of theſe articles ſpeaketh nothyng the Frenche Chronicle, albeit he laieth greate faulte vnto kyng Richard, ſaiyng, in ſedicious and vile wordes, that kyng Richard falſely brake his appointementes, and kepte no promiſe that by hym was made. Moreouer the ſaied Chronicle ſaith, that he ſolde the Iſle of Cipres vnto the Templers, for thirtie thouſande marke, and after tooke it again from theim by ſtrength, and deliuered it vnto Guy de Leſignā that was the laſt chriſtened King of Hieruſalem. And ouer this, the ſaied Frenche Chronicle ſaieth, that he tooke from a Knighte of the Duke of Oſtriche, the ſaied Dukes banner, and in deſpite of the ſaied Duke, trade it vnderfoote, and did vnto it all the ſpite he might. And ouer all this, wher as Conradus Marques of Tyre, was traiterouſly ſlaine by twoo of his owne ſeruauntes, that king Richarde ſhould laie the charge thereof vnto the Frenche Kyng.

The departyng of the Frenche Kyng.

For theſe grudges and ſicknes, with alſo feare of treaſon, to bee wrought betwene Saladine the Soudan, and kyng Richarde (as affirmeth or allegeth the foreſaid aucthour) kyng Philippe with a ſmall companie of ſhippes, departed from Acō or Acris, and ſailed to Puil or Poil, and there reſtyng hym a ſeaſon, continued his iourney vnto Rome, and ſo laſtly into his owne prouince of Fraunce.

Anno dn̄i. M.C.xcij. Anno dn̄i. M.C.xciij.

Baliui { Willyam Hauerſhall. / Ihon Buknot. } Anno. iij.

IN the third yere and monethe of Nouember, when the French kynge was thus departed, kyng Richard with the duke of Burgoin (whom the Frenche kyng had left behind him, to haue the rule of the Frēch hoſte, left and remaining in Acre, and the countrie there about) called before him diuers perſones, or pledges of Turckes, for the performaunce of certaie appoinctementes taken with them, at the winnyng or giuing vp of theſaid citee of Acris, Whereof one eſpeciall couenaunte was, that by a certaine daie then expired, thei ſhould cauſe the holy croſſe, to be reſtored vnto the chriſtian Princes. The whiche for he ſawe wel that thei would not, or mighte not performe, he therefore put in execution of Turkes, ouer the nomber of fiue thouſande, as teſtifieth the Frenche Chronicle. But that agreeth not all of the beſt with the former ſaiyng: conſideryng the citee was deliuered by appoinctmente, there ſhould not ſo many Turkes remaine there. But Peter Diſroie ſaieth, that for breaking this appoinctment, king Richard put to death all ſoche Turkes, as were then within the citee of Acris, which maie bee meant by the hoſtages or pledges.

It was not long after, that tidinges was brought vnto king Richard, that the citee of Hieruſalem, was without any greate ſtrength of ſoldiours, and that it might bee wonne with eaſie labour. Wherefore Kyng Richard aſſembled the lordes to haue their counſaile: where it was concluded, that euery capitaine ſhould prepare hym to go thither. Vpon whiche agremente, the chriſten hoſte ſpedde theim in ſoche wiſe, that thei were ſhortly within. v. miles of the ſaied citee of Hieruſalem, where thei tooke a newe counſaile, how thei ſhould order theim and their people, to laye their ſiege aboute the citee. In whiche counſaile it was concluded, that King Richard with his Engliſhe menne, ſhould haue the vauwarde, and the duke of Burgoine the rerewarde. After whiche concluſion taken, the Kyng ſped hym vpon his waie toward the citee. But by what miſhap or miſfortune I can not ſaie, ſo ſone as the Kyng was departed, the duke called the lordes of Fraunce before hym, and ſaied: it is euidēt vnto you, that albeeit our heade and ſouerain lorde is abſent, the floure of the chiualrie of Fraunce is preſente. And if any thyng bee doen to the honor of the chriſten, and reproche of infidelles, it is moſte likely to be doen by vs, conſideryng the inſufficiencie of Engliſhe men and other: yet neuertheleſſe, what ſomeuer honoure grewe by our deedes, to the chriſten hoſte, it ſhall bee accompted vnto Kyng Richarde, bicauſe of his preſence, ſo that we ſhal haue the paine and trauaile, and Engliſhemen ſhall haue the honor. Wherefore, if ye will dooe by my counſaile, we will retourne vnto Acris, and there tary till wee ſee farther. Some agreed to this counſaile, and the more in nomber, and the other ſped theim in all haſte after Kynge Richarde, and ſhewed to hym of the Dukes retourne, whereof he beyng ſo enformed, retourned alſo vnto Acris.

The agremente betwene kĩg Richard & the Frēche menne.

It was not long after that the ſaied Duke, was taken with greuous ſickeneſſe and died. And aboute that time alſo died Baldwine the Archebiſhop of Caunterburie, whiche emong other Lordes of Englande, accompaigned the Kyng in that iourney.

Anno domini. M.C.xciii. Anno domini. M.C.xciiii.

Balliui. { * Nycolas Duke.
Peter Nowlay. } Anno .iiii.

ket.

ABoute thys ſeaſon of Mychelmaſſe in yͤ .iiii. yeare of the reygne, of thys ſayde Rycharde, tydynges were brought to hym, that the towne or Caſtell of Japheth was beſieged of Saladine, and lyke to be ſoone wonne, without the Chriſten were the ſooner ayded. Wherfore kyng Rycharde, (which Peter Diſroy calleth the good kinge Rycharde (ſped hym thither with hys army by water, and ſent another hoſte of Frenchmen and other, by land. But ſo it was, or the chriſten might winne thither, the ſayd towne and caſtel were won: and the priſoners therin taken, were ſente by water towarde ſuch priſons as Saladine had appoynted them vnto. Wyth the which (of good fortune) kyng Richard met, and them reſcowed. And that doone, with the Turkes which thē conueyed, he put in ſure holde, and helde on his iourney to Japheth, and there by ſtrengthe reſcued the towne & Caſtell, and reſtored the Chryſten to theyr former poſſeſſion, & lefte wyth them more ſtrength of knyghtes. And for to be yͤ more feared of the miſcreauntes, kyng Rychard cauſed hys pryſoners to hym belonging, to be ſlaine: where other ſold them to theyr greate aduauntage, by meanes wherof he was hadde in wonderfull feare of the Turkes.

e vale-
tnes of
e Ry-
ne.

e reco-
y of the
one of
pheth.

Then kynge Rycharde after thys vyctorie had at Japheth, wonne two ſtronge holdes called Daron and Gadres, and ſtrengthed theim wyth Chriſten knyghtes. And wyth ſuche goodes as he there wanne of the Turkes, he repayred the Caſtell of Aſcalon and other, that greatly was impaired by the warre of the Turkes.

Li.7.ca.25

In thys ſeaſon and tyme, that kynge Rycharde was thus occupied in the holy land, the biſhop of Ely, as before is ſayd, hauing the rule of England, dyd many cruel deedes, and oppreſſed the cleargie and alſo the lay fee. He woulde comenly ryde with a thouſand horſe and greeued abbayes by mean of his geſtes or lodging with them. Alſo he helde in hys handes the ſee of Yorke for longe ſeaſon. And after the death of Baldwyn that dyed, (as before is ſhewed in holie land) he alſo tooke the ſee of Canterbury vnder his rule. Then he pryued Geffry that was choſen to the ſee of Yorke of hys mouables, and caſte hym as a pryſoner in the Towre of London.

The pride and tyrannie of the byſhop of Eley.

And ſoone after called a counſayle at weſtmynſter, as the kinges procuratour, and as legate of the Pope of Rome, then Innocēt the thyrde. At thys counſel Hugh Nouaunt then Byſhoppe of Cheſter, and greate ſamplyer of the ſayde Byſhoppe of Ely, put forth a complaynte agaynſt the Munkes of Couentrye, that they had ſhed the ſayde Hughes bloud before yͤ high aulter of theyr church. For which cauſe the biſhop of Ely deemed, that the ſayde Munkes,

A cōplaint of the munkes of Couentry.

ſhould be put from theyr ſayd abbay, and clarkes ſhould bee ſet in there for them: ſo that by myght the Munkes were put thence and dyſparkeled aboute in ſondrye places, and clerkes, with prebendes ſet in theyr ſtalles.

Alſo the forenamed Byſhop of Ely called in proper name Williã de long ſhampe, continuynge hys tyranny, prived Hughe byſhop of Durham of al maner of worſhip, and greeued the byſhop of Wyncheſter, and wretched nigh all the lande.

But ſo faſte as this innaturall or euell diſpoſed man, beſied hym to vexe and greeue the Chriſten mennẽ in Englande, ſo faſt beſied this good kyng Rycharde to vexe and dere the infideles of Sury. So that dayly he wan of them, or at the leaſt put them from ẏ winning of ſuch towns and holdes, as they by theyr greate ſtrength entended to haue wonne.

Anno domini. M.C.xciiii.

Anno domini. M.C.xcv.

Balliui. { Roger Duke.
Richard fiz Alein. } Anno quinto.

Li.7.ca.28 IN the end of September and beginninge of the fifte yeare of kynge Richarde, Guy de Leſingnan, laſte Chriſten kynge of Hieruſalem died, and Choras a noble Chriſten man, captayne of a towne called Sur, was ſhortlie after ſlayne by the Turkes. Whoſe wyfe for as muche as ſhe was ryghtfull enheritour of the crowne of Hieruſalem, the kynge gaue her in mariage vnto ẏ Erle of Champayne. And for kyng Richarde perceyued wel the chriſten hoſte miniſhed daylie, as wel by infirmities as lacke of vitayle ⁊ other wyſe, he ſought meanes of a peace or trewce for a tyme, and had it graunted for three yeres. The whyche peace ſtablyſhed and proclaimed in the hoſte and countrey neare aboute, kyng Rychard betooke the rule and guydinge of the Chriſten, vnto the Earle of Champayne, promyſing hym, or the trewce were ended, to come wͭ a ſtronge hoſte, and wyth goddes myght, to ſet him in poſſeſſion of the Citie of Hieruſalem, as the ryght of hys wyfe.

Then Hubert byſhop of Saliſbury, yode forth him ſelf from the kynge to the holie Citie, and offered there an hoſte and returned agayne to the kynge. After whoſe retourne, the kyng takyng leaue of the Earle of Champayne and other, tooke his ſhippynge at Acrys or Acon, whyche is named Tholomaida alſo, ⁊ ſo returned to the iſle of Cipre or Cipris. Thens the king ſent the quene his wife ⁊ her ſiſter with the more parte of hys people vnto Cicil: ⁊ he with a ſmal cõpany (for he might not endure the * ſoftneſſe of the ſea) toke his ſhipping in ẏ moneth of September, ⁊ ſailed wͭ a ſtronge wind toward a countrey called Hiſtria But he was driuen by force of wethering betwene Veniſe ⁊ Abulia or Aquilegia, ⁊ houed there a ſeaſon, ⁊ coſted hether ⁊ thither, ſo that laſtlie he was eſpied ⁊ taken of the duke of Oſtrychis men.

Anno domini.M.C.xcvi. Anno domini.M.C.xcvi.

Balliui. { Wyllyam fyz Iſabell. } Anno.vi.
{ William fyz Arnolde. }

ABoute the moneth of October and.vi.yere of his reygne, this good kyng Rychard was taken in forme folowinge. As he lay thus as before is ſayde, betwene Venice and Aquilegia a prouince of the duke of Oſtrich, one Meynarte of Gorezeyn ruler of that countrey vnder the forſayd duke, made out certayne ſouldiours for to haue taken him: But he by his prouidence and manhode, eſcaped the ſayd Maynard or Mainarte, how be it that ſome of his knightes were there taken. Then king Rychardе paſſed the countrey ſecretlie, til he came to a towne named Friſake.

In this towne then was prouest or ruler, a knight called Fredericke de Saynte Soom, the which alſo did his demeanoure to take the kynge, and tooke ſyxe of hys knightes pryſoners, but hym ſelfe with the remnaunte of his company eſcaped. Then the king ſeing that he was in daunger of his enemies, drew more into the waye towarde Almayne. But this was ſoone knowen of his enemies, ſo that by the meanes of one called Duke of Limple and coſyn to the Emperoure, all the wayes were cloſed in ſuche wyſe, that in the ende kynge Rycharde was taken, by the ſeruauntes of the ſayde Duke, nere vnto a City or towne called Mene or Meune, wythin the lande or terytorye of the Emperour, and after brought vnto the ſayde Duke Limple, or after ſome to the duke of Oſtrich, the whych ſpoyled hym of al that he had, and after caſte him in priſon, and there ſtreyghtlie kepte him by the ſpace of a moneth: and at the monethes ende, ſente hym vnto Henry the ſyxt of that name or after ſome writers, the v. ſonne of the fyrſt Frederike then Emperour of Almayn, the which helde him in more vile priſon from that time tyl Lent after, and couenaunted with the Duke of Oſtriche to haue the thyrde parte of the profite ẏ came of kyng Richard.

By whom king Rychard was taken.

Aboute the ſunday of Palmis, themperour brought forth ẏ king before the lordes of Almayn, ther to geue anſwer vnto ſuch thinges as ſhould be layed vnto hym. Where he came forth with ſo good a countenaunce, and alſo anſwered ſo diſcretlie and directlie, to al matters layde vnto hys charge, that the Emperoure was not alonelie bende to ſhew to hym mercie, but alſo he did to him honoure and worſhip, & helde hym at more liberte after that day.

It is red of this Richard, that during the time of hys impriſonment he ſhoulde ſlea a Lion, and teare the harte oute of his bodye, where thorough he ſhould deſerue ẏ name of Richard Cure de Lion, and that he ſhoulde with a ſtroke of his fyſt, ſlea themperours ſonne and alſo deflorish the Emperours doughter. But theſe are fables ymagened by engliſh tale tellers, to

Richarde Cure de Lion.

auaunce theyr kyng Richarde, as the Britons by theyr fained tales auaunced theyr king Arture. In this paſſetyme Willyam Longeſchampe, biſhop of Ely, continuing his crudelite and tyranny within England, was laſtly by ſtrẽgth of the lordes, put out of the land. Then he came to the king beynge priſoner, and ſhewed for him ſelfe the beſte he coulde: But when he ſaw he myght not begile the king with his ſugryd wordes, he had ſmall truſt of the kinges fauour, & retourned into Fraunce, to tarie there the kinges comminge.

This yere John the kinges brother by excitinge of the Frenche king, when he heard of the taking and impriſoninge of his brother, began to make warre within the lande, and toke by ſtrength the Caſtels of Windeſoure and of Notingham & other. And ý Frenche king vpon his party made ſtrong warre in Normandye, as it is before ſhewed in the Storie of the ſeconde Philippe then kinge of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M.C.xcvi.

Anno domini. M.C.xcvii,

Balliui. { Robert Beſaunte.
Iokell Ioſue. } Anno. vii.

Cap.eodẽ.

IN the. vii. yeare of kinge Richarde, Hubert Byſhoppe of Saliſburie, the which had accompanied the kynge in that voyage, and was ſente wyth the Queene into Scycyll, retourned or came to the kynge where he was priſoner. whome ý kinge ſente ſoone after into England, to haue the guiding therof & alſo to treate with the lordes & commons of hys Realme, how he myght be ſett at lybertie.

It was not longe after the commyng home of this Huberte, but the Munkes of the houſe of Chriſtes churche of Caunterbury chaſe him to the archbiſhops ſee, & had the palle, & was ſtalled ſoone after. This was eaſy to the munkes, how wel ý ſharpnes of Baldwyn had ſomdeale greeued them. And thought this Baldwin were a good man & holy in his liuinge, yet one thinge he did to the derogation of the Munkes of Caunterburie, for he purpoſed to put the prerogatyue of the electyon of the Archebyſhoppe from the Munkes.

And becauſe therof, he began to builde greate houſes neare vnto the Munkes Church, by fauoure of kynge Henrie the ſeconde (but not without ſheedinge of bloude) and there entended to haue ſet in ſecular Chanons wyth prebendis and ſuffraganes of Biſhoppes for to treate with the ſayd Chanons of the foreſayde election, and to put by the Munkes clearely. But the Munkes when they ſaw they might no lenger reſiſt Baldwin, they then appealed to Innocent the thyrde Byſhop of Rome, by whoſe commaundement that worke ceaſed, and ſo ſtoode vnfyniſhed tyll the ſayde Baldwyne was dead. After whoſe death the Munkes made that worke playn

wyth

with the grounde.

Treuiſa tranſlatour of Polycronicon, ſaythe it was wonder that Baldewyn wolde in that maner deale with the mũkes, conſidering he was firſt archdeacon, and then white Munke, and then abbot, & after biſhop of Worceter, and laſte archbyſhop, and to bringe men of more imperfite life, into the place of men more perfit, & to chaunge relygious men for ſeculer.

But yet the ſayd Treuyſa aloweth Baldwines deede or entent for good: For he ſayth that Chriſt was the head of holie Churche, and called and made his Apoſtels Biſhoppes, but none of them was Munke or yet frere. Wherfore Baldwyne dyd better to preferre the relygion which Chryſte made, then the religon which was inſtituted and ordeyned by man.

Anno domini. M. C. xcvii.

Anno domini. M. C. xcviii.

Balliui. { Gerarde de Autiloche.
Robert Duraunt. } Anno. viii.

p.eodẽ.

he raun-
me of
ng Ry-
arde.

IN the moneth of January and.viii. yere of the reigne of king Richard when the ſayd Richard ad ſuffered hard pryſonment vpon the tearme of a yeare, & three monethes, he was deliuered oute of priſon for the ſumme of an. C. M. pounde of ſterling money.

For pledge whereof, he lefte in the keping of the Emperour, the Byſhops of Roan and of Bathe. But not for all, for a greate parte was payed or the kyng were delyuered. For paiment of which raũſome all the wool of white Munkes and chanons was taken and ſolde, and Rynges and Croſſes of prelates, with veſſelles and Chalices of all Churches thoroughe the lande: & ouer that.xxvii. ſhrines were ſcraped or ſpoyled of the golde and ſyluer that vpon theim before time was layde: for no priuilege of holie Churche nor other perſon at that ſeaſon was ſpared. Then king Richarde came vnto Swyne in Flaunder, and taried there two monethes, either to abyde yͤ wynde, or els to make prouiſion for thynges whiche neded. There the Emperours men had almoſt taken him agayne. So the Emperour forthought the deliuerie of king Richarde, as Pharao forthought the deliuery of yͤ children of Iſraell.

Then the kyng tooke ſhipping, and landed in the ende of March at Sandwyche, and from thens came ſtreight vnto Londõ, where he was receyued with all ioy and honoure. And when he had a ſeaſon reſted him there, he with a certayne number of knightes rode to Notingham, and wan the caſtel, and after the Caſtell of Tykhyll by force of armes, and ſet the wardeyns of theim in warde.

And that done, he called a counſell of his lordes at Wyncheſter, where by authoritie of the ſayde counſayle, he depriued John hys brother (then beyng in Fraunce) of all honour, and tooke from him all ſuche landes as he before had giuen to him, & crowned himſelfe ſoone after agayn king of Englãd in the ſayd Citie of Wincheſter.

How king Richarde reſumed into his handes againe all his former grauntes and ſales.

After the whiche Coronacion he called a parlyamente, by vertue wherof he reſumed all patentes and annuytees, fees and other graũtes before his voiage by him ſolde and graunted, and cauſe the parties to be contented with ſuch reuenewes and profites as they had receyued of the ſayd offices or landes in time of his abſence: and ſpared not any perſon for any ſufficiencie of writinge that to him before was made.

When kinge Rycharde had by theſe foreſayde meanes gathered ſome money, he then in the moneth of Julie ſayled into Fraunce and beſieged a Caſtell called Arques, and ſped there (as witneſſeth Policronica) diuerſly. Diuerſlie. Whiche worde diuerſly maye well here be ſpoken. For who ſo redeth the Frenche Cronicle; he ſhall fynde that the Frenche king was victor. But and he reade the Engliſh booke, then ſhal he finde kinge Rycharde victoure. Wherefore me thinketh Ranulph ſayde well when he ſayde they ſped dyuerſlie. For it is ſo diuers by the reporte of writers, that the certayntie to whome the honoure ſhoulde be geuen, is harde to bee knowen.

All be it that in the countrey of Bloys, as witneſſeth yͤ ſaid Frēch Cronicle, king Richard ſcared the Frenche hoſte, and tooke the kynges ſommer horſe, with parte of his treaſure. But in ſhorte whyle after, a trewce was concluded betwene theſe two kinges for a yere.

Then John which had tourned to the Frenche kinge agaynſt his owne brother, ſeing the fame and honour of his brother, ⁊ feblenesse of his owne power, made meanes vnto Elianoure his mother, by whoſe mediacion he was reconciled vnto his brother the kinge, ⁊ after became his trew knight.

The agr ment be- twene kinge R chard an his bro- ther Joh

When the king and his brother John were thus agreed, they rode ouer the lande to viſite the counteys, and ſe how they were guyded by the officers of the king. Amonge other two there wer, whiche ſhewed that they woulde doo manie thinges to the kinges profite, the one was Abbot of Cadonence within Normandy, ⁊ that other was named William with the longe bearde.

Li. 7. ca.

The Abbot warned the king of the fraude of his officers, wherby he thonght by the puniſhment of his officers, he ſhould win greate fauour of the people. Then this Abbot gat a warrant of the king and at London called diuers offycers before him, for to yeld to him theyr accompte. But he dyed ſhortlie, ſo that his purpoſe came to ſmale effecte. And Williã with the longe beard ſhewed to yͤ kyng the outrage of the riche mẽ, whiche (as he ſayd) ſpared theyr owne and pylled the poore people.

It is ſayde that this William was borne in London, and purchaſed yͤ name by vſe of his beard. He was ſharp of witte, and ſomdeale lettered, a bolde mã of ſpeche and ſad of countenaunce, ⁊ tooke vpon him greater deedes then he could welde, ⁊ ſome he vſed cruellie, as appereth in appeaching of his owne brother of treaſon, the which was a Burges of London, and to hym had ſhewed greate kindneſſe in his youth.

This William ſtyred and excited the common people to deſyre and loue freedome and libertye, and blamed the exceſſe and outrage of riche men. By ſuche meanes he drew to hym manye great companyes, and with all his power defended the poore mennes cauſe agaynſt the riche, and accuſed diuers vnto the king, ſhewing that by their meanes the king loſt manye forfeytes ⁊ eſcheates. For this, gentelmen and men of honor maligned againſt him. But he had ſuch comfort of the king, that he kept on his purpoſe.

Then the king being warned of the congregations that this William made, commaunded him to ceaſe of ſuche doinges, that the people might exerciſe their artes and occupations, by reaſon wherof it was lefte for a whyle: But it was left for a while: But it was not long or the people folowed him as they before that tyme hadde done. Then he made vnto theym collations or exhortations, ⁊ toke for his antetheime, *Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus ſaluatoris.* That is to meane: ye ſhall drawe in ioye waters of the welles of our ſauioure. And to this he added: I am (ſaid he) the ſauiour of poore men, ye be poore, and haue aſſayd the harde handes of riche men. Now drawe ye therefore healeful water of lore of my welles, and that with ioye, for the time of youre viſitation is comen. I ſhall (ſayde he) departe waters from waters: by waters I vnderſtande the people. Then ſhall I departe the people whiche is good ⁊ meeke, from the people that is wicked ⁊ proude, ⁊ I ſhall diſſeuer the good and the euyll, as the light is departed from yͤ darkeneſſe. When this came to the knowledge of the archbiſhoppe of Caunterburye, he by counſayle of the lordes of the ſpiritualtie ſent vnto this William, commaundinge hym to appeare before the lordes of the kinges counſayle, to aunſwere vnto ſuche matters as there ſhould be layd vnto him.

Collatiõs
d exhor-
is made
Williã
ith the
ng berd.

At which day this William appeared hauing with him a multitude of people, in ſo muche that the lordes were of hym adrad. For the whiche cauſe they remitted hym with pleaſaunt woordes for that time, and commaunded certaine perſons in ſecrete maner to eſpie when he were voide of his company, and then to take him, ⁊ put him in ſure keping. The whiche according to the commaundement, at time conuenient, as they thought, ſet vpon him to haue taken him. But he with an axe reſiſted them, and ſlewe one of theim, and after fledde to saincte Mary Bowe churche of Cheape, ⁊ tooke that for his ſauegarde, defending him by ſtrength, and not by the ſuffrages of the church, for to him drewe ſhortlye greate multitude of people.

William wͭ the long beard toke Bowe churche.

But in ſhort proceſſe, by meane of the heades and rulers of the citie the people miniſhed, ſo that in ſhort time he was lefte with fewe perſons, and after by fyre compelled to forſake the churche, and ſo was taken: but not withoute ſheding of bloud. After which taking he was areigned before yͤ iudges, and ther with .ix. of his adherẽtes, caſt ⁊ iudged to die, and was hanged and thei with him the day folowing. But yet the rumour ſeaſed not, for the common weale reaſed a great crime vpon the archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye and other, and ſaide that by their meanes William whiche was an innocent of ſuch crimes as were obiect and put againſt him, and was a defendoure of the poore people agaynſt extorcioners and wrong doers, was by them put wronfully to death, approuyng him an holye man, and martyr, by this tale folowing: They ſayd that a man beyng ſicke of yͤ feuers, was cured by vertue of a cheyne which this Wyllyam was bounde wyth in time of his dures of impriſonmēt, which by a prieſt of the alye of the ſayd William was openlye declared and preached. Whereby he brought the people in ſuche an erroure, that they gaue credence to his woordes, and ſecretlye in the night, conueyed awaye the Iebet that he was hanged vpon, & ſcraped away the bloud that was ſhed of him when he was taken, or els when he was headed and quartered, ſo that they made there an holowe place by fetchinge awaye of that earth, & ſaide that ſicke men and women were cured of dyuers ſickeneſſe, by vertue of that bloud and earth. By theſe meanes and blowing of fame, that place was the moore viſited by women and vndiſcrete perſons, of the whyche ſome watched there the whole night in prayer: ſo that the longer this continued the more diſclaunder was anoted to the Iuſtyces, and to ſuch as put him to death.

Not withſtandynge in proceſſe of tyme, when his actes were publiſhed, as the ſleynge of a manne with his owne hand, and vſing of his concubine within ſainct Mary churche in the time of his there beinge, as he openlye confeſſed in the houre of his death with other deteſtable crimes, ſomewhat keled the greate flambe of the haſtye pylgrimage. But not clearely tyll the Archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye accurſed the Prieſte that brought vp the firſt fable, and alſo cauſed that place to bee watched, that ſoche Idolatrie ſhould there no moore be vſed.

Anno domini. M. C. xcviii.　　Anno domini. M. C. xcix.

Balliui. { Roger Blounte / Nycholas Duket. } Anno. ix.

Li.7.ca.29 IN the Moneth of Aprill and. ix. yere of king Rycharde when he had prouided to ſend forth twenty thouſande pounde to the Emperoure, for full payment of his raunſome, yͤ pledges which had lyen for the ſame, came ſodeynly into England, and ſhewed vnto the kynge that after his departing, the Emperour ſent them vnto the duke of Oſtriche, to remayne with him tyll the money were paide. And further there they ſhewed, that the ſaide Duke was accurſed of Innocente the thirde then Biſhoppe of Rome, by reaſon of his wronge done to the kyng, and that his prouince was greued with manye miſchiefes. And as the Duke rode forthe on a day in his diſporte, beyng Saincte Stephans daye, he hurt his foote in ſuche wiſe with a thorne or other venym, which rancled and grewe ſo ſore, that laſtly he ſhoulde dye or cut it of. But in hope of recouerie he continued, tyl in the ende he was warned yͭ he ſhuld dye. Then he ſent for his biſhops, and aſked to be aſſoyled of the ſentence of the church, whiche he ſtode in. The which was denied him, except he woulde ſweare to ſtande and abide the ordinaunce and dome of holy churche, touching the wrong that he hadde done to king Rycharde. The duke ſware and was aſſoyled, and ſhortly after the two biſhoppes pledges for the money were deliuered at their libertie.

Then king Richarde callynge to mynde that the vttermoſt day of the trewce, taken betwene him and the Frenche kyng approched made him readye and ſayled into Normandye. Where before hys commyng, the Frenche kynge by occaſion of the Normans (as ſaith the Frenche booke) was entred the countrey of Burgys, towarde whō king Richard ſped him with all poſſible ſpede, ſo that bothe hoſtes laye parted with the riuer of Oſſon or Oſyne.

Then to folowe the ſaiynge of the Frenche booke, for ſo muche as the Engliſh chronicle ſpeaketh lytle or nothynge of this acte, let wyſe men that heare thys chronicle, conſtrewe it after theyr diſcretions. For albeit the Frenchman wrote it to the honoure of French men, yet to other that ſhall reade or heare it, becauſe it ſoundeth ſo nere vntrueth, it ſhall rather redounde vnto their diſhonour. For the French chronicle ſayeth that theſe two hoſtes thus (as aboue is ſayde) lyinge together withoute ſkirmiſhe or aſſault, king Richard contrary the opinion and mind of his lordes, with a few accompanied and vnharneſſed, ſhoulde come to the French kynges tente, and there in preſence of his lordes, ſhuld do homage to the French king for the duchy of Normandy and coūteys of Angeou and of Poyters, and there ſwore to the kynge to kepe peace durynge his life: and after eyght dayes met agayne and finiſhed the ſayd peace, with aſſured othe vppon eyther partie, and after departed as frendes, eyther reſortinge into their owne countrey: but it ſemed a faynte peace. For within foure monethes or leſſe folowynge, kynge Richarde with his hoſt entred the prouince of Berrye, and layde ſiege to the Caſtell of Wierſoune, and gate it by ſtrength, and after yode to the caſtell of Noryncourte, was delyuered to hym by appoyntment.

When kynge Phylyppe hearde of the winning and ouerthrowe of the Caſtell of Wyerſoune, he in dammagynge of kynge Rycharde, layde ſiege to the Caſtell of Aubeuyle, and it aſſayled egerlye. But it was ſo ſtronge and ſo well defended by the Normains, that the Frenche kynge was holden of. When kynge Rycharde hadde garnyſhed and fortified the Caſtell of Noryncourte wyth all thynge neceſſarye to the warre, he drewe hym towarde Aubeuile, to remoue kynge Phylyppe from that ſyege, and fell vppon the Frenche menne vnwarelye. But the Frenche men quitte theym ſo

knyghtly

knightly, that they chaſed kynge Richard and hys people, and toke a Norman knyghte, named Guy de Thonars, a man of great hardyneſſe. And then kinge Philippe returned to the caſtell and towne of Aubeuyle, & aſſaulted it moore ſharpely, ſo that in the ende the ſouldiours of the towne yelded it with the caſtell for a certain ſūme of money.

And when he had poſſeſſion of the towne, he threw down the caſtell plaine with the ground, and after ſtrengthed the towne with Frenchemen, and then rode unto the Caſtell of Gyſours, and from thence reſorted to the forenamed Caſtell of Norincourte: and aſſalted it in ſo cruel maner, that ſhortly he wanne it, and tooke therein fiftene knyghtes and .xxiiii. yeomen, with plentie of vitayle and armoure. In thys tyme and ſeaſon king Rycharde gathered new ſtrength, and alyed hym wyth Baldwyne Earle of Flaunders, and Reygnolde Earle of Dampmartyn and of Boleyne. By whoſe meanes (as witneſſeth the Frenche booke) kynge Rycharde waſted ſore the Countrey of Fraunce, and brent therein ſome townes and villages, and tooke therein many ryche prayes.

Anno domini. M.C.xcix. Anno domini. M.CC.

Conſtantine fiz Arnolde.
Balliui. Anno.x.
Roberte le Beawe.

ABOUTE the beginninge of the moneth of October, and tenth yeare of Rycharde, the ſayde Rycharde entred the countrey of Unequecyne, wyth a ſtronge hoſte, and made there in cruell warre, in deſtroiyng of the countrey, and aſſaulted the Caſtell of Gyſours, and threwe to the grounde a ſtronge holde called Courcellys, and brent there about many villages.

Where wyth king Philip was ſo greuouſlye amoued, that wyth a ſmall number of knyghtes hee pearſed the Hoſte of Englyſhmē, and entred the Caſtell or towne of Gyſours. But of his men were taken a certayne number, as Alayne de Ruſſy, Mathew de Melly, Guyllyam de Mello, and many other, with the whiche priſoners and manye riche prayes, king Rychard then departed: leauing the French king within Gyſours.

It was not long after that king Richarde was thus departed, but that king Philip calling to minde the great loſſe and diſhonour that he had receaued by that warre by king Richarde, aſſembled a great armye, and entred the Duchy of Normandy, and waſted the countrey from Nueſbrouth to Beawmont le Rogier. And that doone he retourned into Fraunce, and licenſed hys knyghtes to go eche man into his owne countrey.

When king Philip had thus finiſhed his warre in Normandy, kynge Richarde then wyth hys armye entred the forenamed countrey of Unequecyn, & alſo Beawuoycyn, and tooke within theym as he before had doone, riche and many prayes and with theym departed. Whome the Biſhoppe of Beawuays beyng a good knight and hardye of his handes, with a company of knyghtes, and other folowed to haue reſcowed the priſoners that kinge Richarde hadde taken. But they were taken, and a certayne of his company ſlayne. Then the Earle of Flaunders by the ayde of the Engliſhmen, tooke the towne of Sainct Omer from the Frenchmen.

In this ſeaſon Innocente the Pope before named, ſent a Legate into Fraunce, named Peter de Capys, to refourme the warre betwene the two Prynces. The whiche at that tyme was in ſuche diſioynt, that he coulde not bringe it to anye frame, and ſpeciallye (as ſaieth the Frenche booke) becauſe kinge Richarde woulde not delyuer the hoſtages and gages as the Freuch king woulde.

7. ca. 31

lur.

he cauſe ſiege.

edon.

Than kynge Rychards after Chriſtenmas beſieged a Caſtell nere vnto Lymogys. This caſtell in the French Chronicle is called Chalons, and in the Engliſh boke it is named Gaylarde. The cauſe of this ſiege (as ſaieth moſte writers) was for certaine riche treaſure founden with the lordſhippe or ſignorie of kinge Richarde, the which one Widomer vycounte of Lemonke, hadde founden & withhelde from king Richarde: and for his ſauegarde fledde vnto the fore named Caſtell, and defended it manfullye from the firſt weeke of Lente, till the ſixte daie of Aprill. Vpon the whiche daye kinge Richarde walkinge vnwiſely about the Caſtell, to eſpie the feblenеſſe therof, one named Bertrande Gedon marked the kinge, and wounded him in the head (or after ſome writers) in the arme, with a venemous quarrell. After whiche wounde receyued by the kinge, he commaunded ſharpe aſſaulte to bee made, in the whiche aſſaulte the caſtell was wonne.

Kinge Richard was wouded.

Then he made inquerye who it was that had ſo wounded him, the whiche was brought vnto the kinges preſence, and named him ſelfe as aboue is ſaide, or after ſome writers Peter Baſyle. Then the king demaunded of him why he ſhould ſo lye in a waite to hurte him rather then any of his felowes. For thou ſlewe my father, & my brethren (ſaid he) wherfore I entended to auenge their death, what ſoeuer became of me. Then the king forgaue him hys offence, and ſuffered him to goe at libertie. And the other of the ſouldiours taken in that Caſtell, the kyng commaunded to be hanged. But Polichronicon ſaieth, that after king Richarde was deade, the duke of Braban whiche then was preſent, cauſed the ſaid Bartrande to be taken & flaine quicke, and after hanged. Then king Richarde died the thirde daye after, that is to ſay, the ix day of April, & was buried at Founte Ebrard at the feete of his father. Howbeit, ſome writers ſaye that his hart was buried at Roan, hys bodye as before is ſayd, and his bowels at Carleyll in Englande, when he hadde raygned nyne yeares nyne Monethes, and odde daies, leauinge after hym none yſſue. Of thys Richarde a Metrician made theſe Verſes hereafter folowinge.

The mercye of the kynge.

The death of kynge Richarde.

A

Chriſte, tui calicis prædo, fit præda caluciis,
Aere breui deiecis, qui tollat æra crucis.
Viſcera Careolum, corpus fons ſeruet Ebrardi,
Et cor Rothomagum magne Richarde tuum.
In tria diuitur, vnus quia plus fuit vno.
Non ſupereſt vno gratia tanto viro.

¶ Which Verſes maye be Engliſhed as foloweth.

Chriſte of the thefe whiche on the right hand was,
And aſked mercy, to vs thou made a pray.
That we lykewiſe ſhoulde for treſpaſſe,
Aſke of thee mercie, and ſhewe no delaye.
Nor for the earthly thinges caſt our ſelfe awaye:
For who of thy croſſe accompteth lytle ſtore,
The merite of thy paſſion he loſſeth euermore.

This manfull knight this prince victorious,
VVhich toke thy croſſe on him with great payne,
He folowed the thefe, and aſked mercy thus
For his offence he warred thy foes agayne,
And ſhed their bloude on hyll and eke on playne,
And all for thy loue, good lorde, he ſhed to thee,
VVherefore ſwete Ieſu on him thou haue pitie.

Of whom the bowels at Carleyll, and the truncke,
At Founte Ebrade full richelye is dight,
The hart at Roan into the earth is suncke.
Of worthye Richard, and ſo in thre is twight,
That more then one whilom was in might.
In earth is ſeperate that lyuyng more than one
VVas, and of grace founde lyke to him none.

IHon brother of the aboue named Rychard, & yongeſt ſonne of Henry the ſecond, was ordeined or proclaymed kynge of Englande, the tenth daye of Aprill in the begynnynge of the yere of our Lorde xi. hundred. lxxx. and xix. and the xx. yere of the ſeconde Philippe, then kynge of Fraunce. This Jhon at the daye of hys brothers death, was in Normandye, where at Chynon (as ſoone as hys brother Rycharde was diceaſed) he poſſeſſed hym of his brothers treaſure, and ſent Huberte Archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye into Englande to make prouiſion for his coronation. And vpon Eaſter daye folowynge, he was gyrde wyth the ſworde

Jhon
ther of
Richar

Li.7.c

ſworde of the duchie of Brytayne, and ſayled ſoone after into Englande. Where he was crowned kinge at Weſtminſter vppon holye Thurſdaye nexte folowynge, of the forenamed Huberte. After whiche ſolempnitie doone, he ordayned the ſame Huberte chaunceloure of Englande.

In this while the French kinge helde a councell at Cenomannia in Turon. where (to the derogacion of kinge Jhon) Arthure the ſonne of Geffrey Plantagenete and neuewe to the ſayde Jhon, was made Duke of Brytayne. Whiche incontinently after with a great armie entred the countrey of Angeou, and tooke poſſeſſion thereof. And king Philippe with his people, entred the Duchye of Normandye, and laide ſiege vnto the citie of Eurour, and wanne it with all the ſtronge holdes there aboute, and ſtuffed them with victayle, and ſtrengthed them with his own knightes, and that done, waſted and ſpoyled the countrey, tyll he came to the citie of Meus, where mette wyth him the forenamed Arthur and dyd to him homage for the coūtrey of Angiers.

In the moneth of Maye, Elyanoure ſome tyme wyfe to Henrye the ſecond, and mother to king Richarde came into Fraunce, and ſo to the kinge to Meaus aforeſayde, and made him homage for the countrey of Poyters, as her enheritaunce. And ſoone after the kynge retourned into Fraunce, and the Duke of Brytayne with him, whiche as yet was within age.

King Jhon hearing of this war in Normandye, and loſſe of the countreys aboue named, aſſembled a counſayle and aſked ayde of his lords and commons, to win agayne the foreſaide landes, and had it graūted after ſome writers thre ſhillinges of euerye ploughland through England, beſide the ſubſidie of the ſpirituall landes. And when he had made readie for that belonged to his voiage, he about harueſt ſailed into Normādie, wher he taried to October folowing, ſpending the time to hys loſſe and diſhonoure.

Anno domini. M.CC. Anno domini. M.CC.i.

Balliui. { Arnolde fiz Anolde. / Richarde fiz Barte. } Anno.i.

After michelmas in the moneth of October, and firſt yere of the reigne of king Jhon, a trewce or peace was concluded, betwene the two kinges of Englande and of Fraunce, from that dai til midſomer next folowing, and in lyke wiſe, betwene the Frenche kynge and Baldwin earle of Flaunders.

And in thys yeare was a deuorce betwene king Jhon & hys wyfe the Earle of Gloceters doughter, because of the nereneſſe of bloude. And after was he maried vnto Iſabell the doughter of the earle of [illegible]goleſin in Fraūce, and had by her two ſonnes Henry and Richard, and .iii. doughters Iſabel, Elyanour, and Jane.

Engoleſme.

This yere died at Londō Hugh biſhop of Lincolne, and was conueyed to his owne churche, and there enterred. At mydlent after, kinge Jhon ſayled agayne into Normandye. And after Eaſter he mette with kynge Philippe betwene Uernon and the Iſle Audeley, where the peace betwene bothe realmes was eſtablyſhed, and confirmed for terme of theyr two lyues, and the landes deuided betwene the two kynges, as eyther of theym ſhould holde theym contented for their lyues after.

And in ſhorte tyme after, Lewes the eldeſt ſonne of king Philippe, maried dame Blanche, doughter to Alphons kinge of Caſtell, and newewe to kinge Jhon. To the which Lewes kynge Jhon for the loue of that woman, ſhewed to hym greate bounty, and gaue unto her manye ryche gyftes.

In the moneth of Julye folowynge, kynge Jhon rode into Fraunce, where he was receyued of the Frenche kyng with muche honoure, and ſo conueyed into S. Denys, where he was receyued with proceſſion. And vppon the morows, the French king accompanied hym vnto Parys, where he was receyued of the cytizyns with greate reuerence, and preſented by the Prouoſt of ẏ towne, in the name of the whole citie many riche preſentes. And there king Philippe feaſted him in his owne palays, and gaue vnto him and hys Lordes and ſeruauntes, manye riche giftes, and after conueied him forth of that citie, and toke leaue of him in moſte louing wiſe. And when kyng Jhon had ſpedde his matters in Normãdy, he then retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M.CC.i. Anno domini. M.CC.ii.

Balliui. { Roger Deſert. James fiz Barth. } Anno. ii.

Cap. eodẽ. AND in the moneth of December, and the ſeconde yere of kinge Jhon, Ranulph erle of Cheſter (by the example afore ſhewed by kinge Jhon) left hys owne wyfe named Conſtaunce and counteſſe of Britaine, which he before hadde maried by counſeyle of king Henrye the ſeconde, and wedded one Clemens. One chronicle ſaieth, he did ſo, becauſe he woulde haue yſſue. But the ſaide authoure ſaieth, that after his opinion, he deſpleaſed God ſo greatly, that God would ſuffer him to haue none iſſue, but rather for that deede died without.

About this time after the opinion of moſt writers, the people or nacion called Tartares, beganne their dominion. Theſe men dwelled vnder the hylles of Inde, that belongeth to Preſter Jhon, and chaſe of theim ſelfe a Captayne of lowe byrth called Dauid, and ſo with wiues and children paſſed the next countreys, with robbing and ſpoylinge, and grewe ſhortlye in greate ſtrength, and after ſubdued the Parthes, and manye other vicine countreys, and grewe laſtlye vnto greate dominion and Lordſhyppe, in the Eaſt partes of the worlde, ſo that latelye theyr prince or ſoueraygne is called the great Cahan.

, ca. 32
kyng
cottes
oma-
king
n.

In thys yeare as wytneſſeth Policronicon, the kyng of Scottes dyd homage to king Jhon, at Lincolne, and ſware in the preſence of a Legate of Rome, and thirtene Byſhoppes to bee trewe lyege man to hym and to his heyres kynges.

Anno domini. M.CC.ii. Anno domini. M.CC.iii.

Balliui. { *Arnolde } Anno.iii.
{ ‡Richarde. }

illiam
ſon.
mon
lder-
bury.

ABoute the moneth of December, in the thyrde yere of Jhons raign, in the Prouince of Yorke, were ſene .v. moones. One in the Eaſte, the ſeconde in the Weſt, the thyrde in the North, the fourth in the Southe, and the fyfte as it were ſet in yͤ middes of the other, and yode ſyxe times in compaſſing the other, as it were by the ſpace of an houre, and vaniſhed awaye ſoone after. This yere in the moneth of February, king Philippe called a parliament at Vernon, where it was amonge other matters concluded, that king Jhon as his liege man, ſhould appeare at his parliament holden at Parys, within fiftene days of Eaſter nexte folowyng. But for ſo muche as king Jhon nor none for him appeared to ſhewe ſome lawful impediment, the French king therefore entred the Duchy of Normandy, and toke the caſtels of Bounte, of Gentiline, and Gurney, and ſeaſed into hys handes all ſuche landes as Hugh de Gurney helde, and gaue them vnto Arthur foreſayd duke of Britayne. And moreouer, he gaue to the ſaide Arthure the countrey of Angeou with two hundred priſoners, and a certaine of money to defende the ſaid countrey againſt king Jhon.

frēch
g begā
king
n,

When kinge Jhon had vnderſtanding of all this cruell delinges of king Philippe, he called a counſell and there aſked ayde, and was graunted a newe ayde to withſtande the French kinges malyce. And about Lamas after the king with a fayre company ſayled into Normandye, and ſo ſpedde him into the countrey of Angeou, for ſo much as he was enfourmed that Arthure his neuewe and duke of Britain warred within the ſame, and tooke him priſoner with certaine other knightes, as ſir Hugh le Brun, ſyr Godfrey de Loſinghā with diuers other. At which time king Philippe laye at ſiege of the caſtell of Arques, and hearyng of this diſcomfiture, brake vp hys ſiege, to the entent to haue reſcowed the ſayde Duke. But when he was warned that he ſhoulde come to ſhorte, he than chaunged hys purpoſe, and wente vnto the Cytye of Towres, and wanne it by ſtrengthe. And after, for that wynter drewe neare, he retourned into Fraunce. In whyche ſeaſon alſo kynge Jhon retourned with hys pryſoners into Englande.

In thys ſame yeare by the counſayle of the Burgeyſes of the Cytye of London, were choſen fyue and thyrtye of the moſte ſubſtanciall and wyſeſt menne, which after ſome were called the counſayle of the Citie, of the whiche yerely the Bayliffes were choſen, and after the Mayre and Shriues were taken oute of the ſame number.

Anno domini. M.C.C.iii. Anno domini. M.C.C.iiii.

Balliui. { Norman Blondell, / Jhon of Ely. } Anno. iiii.

IN this fourth yere of king Jhon, were ſene manye wonderfull tokens. For ouer ÿ winter whiche paſſed in length and hardneſſe many yeres before gone, wonderfull wetheryng, as of exceding lightninges, thunders, and other ſtormes of winde and rayne appeared, and there withall hayle of the bygnes of hennes egges, which periſhed fruite and corne, beſydes other hurtes and harmes doone vppon houſes and yonge cattell, goynge aborde. Alſo ſpirites were ſene in the ayre in lykeneſſe of foules, bearynge fyre in their billes, the whiche ſet on fyre diuers houſes. And ſoone thereafter died Hubert archebiſhoppe of Caunterburye. In whoſe place was choſen contrarye to the minde of the kynge, by the moore partye of the Couent of Caunterburye, Stephan Langton. All be it, ſome there were that (accordynge vnto the kynges pleaſure) named the Byſhoppe of Norwyche, and ſome other. For thys election the king was greuouſlye amoued agaynſt the Munkes, and woulde in no wyſe alowe or admitte theyr election. Wherefore they ſent theyr election vnto Innocent the third, the whiche admitted the ſayde Stephan and refuſed the other, and ſacred him at Viterbe a Citie of Italye, and ſent him after wyth letters of commendation vnto kyng Jhon, to take the poſſeſſion and fruictes of his Benefice. Kynge Jhon with this was ſoore amoued, in ſo muche, that he warned hym hys lande, and diuers of the Munkes of Caunterbury that fauoured his cauſe.

Wonderful tokens

Li. 7. ca. 33

Stephan Langton.

Aboute Eaſter king Jhon ſayled into Normandye, for the Frenche kynge hadde recommenced hys warre in the countrey of Guyan, and wanne therein daylye dyuerſe ſtronge holdes, and Caſtelles, and allyed wyth hym the Earle of Alenſon, & had great ayde of the Portuyns & Britons.

And when he hadde broughte that countrey vnder hys ſubiection, he than retourned by Normandye, and wanne Conket, the the Vale of Ruell, and the Iſle of Audeley. In this ſeaſon the forenemed Pope of Rome, ſente the Abbot of Caſmer into Fraunce, to refourme theſe two prynces. Wyth whome was alſo accompanyed the Abbot of Creſſons, the whiche endeuoured theym ſo, that thei were neare agreed of a peace. But for that thei would that the Frenche king ſhoulde repayre and amende ſuch houſes of religion, as he had hurte and ouerthrowen in Guyan, and other places belongynge to the crowne of England, therefore he forſoke the peace, notwithſtandynge that kynge John in lykewyſe ſhoulde haue repaired all like houſes appertaynyng vnto the crowne of Fraunce.

Then the Frenche kinge in the ende of Auguſte, layde ſiege vnto the Caſtell of Radepounte, and aſſaulted it by the tearme of .xv. dayes continuallye. But the ſouldiours within, defẽded it ſo manfully, that they ſlew many of their enemies, ſo that king Philip was fayne to geue backe, tyl he had deuiſed newe engynnes after the warre faſhion. By reaſon whereof he laſtlye wanne the ſayde Caſtell, and tooke there .xx. knightes and an hundred and ſeuen yomen, and one and twentye arblaſters. And when he hadde fortified that Caſtell with French men, he then yode to the Caſtell of Gaylarde, and layde his ordinaunce to that, as he hadde doone to that other. But he laye there a moneth or he myght do it any hurte or harme. In all whiche ſeaſon kynge John warred vpon the borderers of Fraunce, but of his victories, I fynde litle written.

Anno domini. M.CC.iiii. Anno. domini. M.CC.v.

Balliui. { Walter Browne. William Chamberlayne. } Anno. v.

ca.33 at at lligs rter.

IN this yeare, that is to ſaye: the fifte yeare of kinge Jhon, by reaſon of the vnreaſonable wethering, that in the laſte yere fell, wheate was ſold for .xv. ſhillinges a quarter.

Kyng Jhon in the ſommer folowynge, married hys baſtarde doughter vnto Lewlyn Prince of wales, and gaue with her the caſtell and lordeſhip of Elyngſmere, being in the Marches of Southwales.

This yeare the Pope ſent letters of recommẽdation vnto king Jhon, ſhewinge that he hadde fauourably heard the procuratours for all ſuche matters as they had layde againſt the archbyſhoppe of Caunterburye and ſome of hys munkes, that he ſhoulde not of ryghte be admitted vnto that ſee.

But for that the ſayde matters of obiection, were by him and his courte thought inſufficiente, he therfore exhorted and willed him to accepte the ſayde archbiſhoppe vnto his grace, and ſuffer hym to enioye the fruites of his benefice: and the Munkes by hym exyled, to retourne vnto their proper abbaye.

But the more hys Lordes and frendes aduiſed hym to folow the Popes mynde, the moore he was moued to the contrarye, in ſuche maner, that the Popes meſſengers retourned wythout ſpeede of their meſſage.

Yet haue ye hearde before how the Frenche kynge laye aboute the Caſtell of Gaylard, and might not wynne it by the ſpace of a Moneth. Wherefore he after ſent for newe ordynaunce, and aſſayled it ſo fierſlye that within twentye dayes after he wanne the ſayde Caſtell, to the greate loſſe of menne on bothe parties, and tooke priſoners therewithin, ſyxe and thyrtye knyghtes, beſide the other number of yomen and arblaſters, and that doone, ſeaſed the countrey there aboute, and ſtrengthed the ſayde Caſtell with hys owne menne, and then with greate pryde retourne agayne into Fraunce.

Anno domini. M.C.C.v
Anno domini. M.C.C.vi.

Balliui. { Thomas Haueryll.
Hamonde Browne. } Anno. vi.

Li. 7. ca. 33

ABoute that ſeaſon after Michelmas, in the .vi. yeare of the raygne of kynge Jhon, came downe a ſtrayghte commaundement from the Pope, that excepte the king woulde peaſablye ſuffer the archbyſhoppe of Caunterburye to occupye hys Sea, and hys monkes their abbaye, that the lande ſhoulde be enterdited, charginge theſe foure Biſhoppes folowynge, that is to ſaye: William than Byſhoppe of London, Euſtace Byſhoppe of Ely. Walter Biſhoppe of whincheſter, and Gyles Byſhoppe of Harforde, to denounce the kynge and his lande accurſed, yf he the commaundement diſobeyed.

The interdiction of the lande.

Then theſe foure Byſhoppes, with other vnto theym aſſociate, made inſtaunce laboure to the kyng, for the obſeruing of the Popes commaundement, and to eſchewe the ſenſours of the church. But all was in vaine. Wherefore the foure ſayde Biſhoppes, accordinge to the Popes wrytynge to theym ſent, the morowe folowing our ladye daye Annunciation, or the ſixe and twenty dai of March, denounced kynge Jhon with his realme of Englande accurſed, and ſhitte faſt the doores of the churches and other places, where deuyne ſeruice before was vſed, firſt in London, and after in all places as they went throughe the lande. The kinge for this deede was ſo amoued with the ſayde foure Biſhoppes, that he ſeaſed al the temporalities vnto them belonginge into his handes, and put theim in ſuche feare, that they forſoke thys lande, and ſailed to the archbiſhop of Caunterbury.

In this yeare at Oxenforde in Suffoke, was taken a fyſhe in the Sea of forme lyke a manne, and was kept ſyxe monethes after vpon lande wyth rawe fleſhe and fiſh, and after (for thei could haue no ſpeche of it) they caſt it into the ſea agayne.

A ſtr fiſhe.

Anno domini. M.CC.vi.
Anno domini. M.CC.vii.

Balliui. { Jhon walgraue.
Richarde of Whincheſter. } Anno. vii.

codē.

IN the moneth of Nouēber and. vii. yere of the king, one named Hugh Oyſell, for treaſon at London was drawen and hāged. And this yeare in the moneth of May, the Frenche king entred into Normandie with a ſtrong power, and wan there the Caſtelles of Faloys, & Dafyount or Danffrounte, and after ſeaſed all the landes vnto the ſayde Caſtell belongynge, and ſo tyll he came to a place called ſaynte Mychaell in the perell of the ſea.

w the
nche
e en-
Nor-
dy
greate
er.

When the Normans ſaw that kynge Phylyp thus ſubdued the ſtronge holdes of Normandye, and that kinge Jhon to the contrarie made no defence, the capytaynes of Conſtaunce, of Bayour or Bayon, of Lyſeur, of Anreuches, and Eurour yelded them all to the Frenche kyng, and became his liege menne, ſo that he was in poſſeſſion of the ſubſtaunce of the duchy of Normandi, except Roan and other fewe Caſtels.

Then king Philip ſeyng theſe ſtronge holdes thus yelded vnto hym, layde hys ſiege vnto the Citie of Roan. Where after he had lien a ſeaſon, the captayne of the towne, deſyred a reſpyte of thyrty dayes, geuynge pledges and hoſtages, that yf the Citie were not by kyng Jhon or his aſſignes reſcewed, within the foreſaid tearme they woulde yelde the Citie vnto the Frenche king.

fir
he.

And in lyke wiſe was appoyntment taken for the Caſtelles named Arquys and Vermell. In whyche tyme for that no ſuccoure came, bothe citie and caſtels were delyuered into the Frenche kynges handes. And thus had thys ſeconde Phylip the poſſeſſyon of Normandy, whiche no Frenche king had ſince the tyme of Charles the ſymple, whiche gaue the ſame duchy to Rollo, leadar of the Normans, with Gilla his daughter in maryage, ſynce the whiche tyme had paſſed ouer three hundred yeares.

w king
lippe
d Nor
dy.

When the Frenche kyng hadde thus brought into his ſubiection the Duchy of Normandy, he then aboute Saynte Laurence tyde yode into the countye of Guyan, and wan there the Citie of Poytyes, with all the Caſtelles and townes, to the ſayde Citie belongynge: and when he had ſet that countrey in an order and rule, he ſped him into Fraunce with great pompe and glory.

It is affirmed of ſome authours that the Frenche kynge made this warre vpon kynge Jhon by excytinge of the Pope of Rome, for hys contumacie agaynſt the Churche.

In this yeare alſo was a communicacion of a peace to be had betwene king John and the archbyſhop of Caunterbury, and was driuen to a nere poynte of accorde excepte reſtitucion that kynge Jhon ſhould haue made vnto the archbyſhop and other Biſhoppes, the whyche hys officers had taken in the tyme of theyr abſence. To the whiche reſtitucion kynge Jhon in no wiſe would be agreable, wherfore the ſayd communicacion tooke none effecte.

After thys communicacyon, king John was ſo fret with malice, yͭ in a fury he let proclayme in ſondry places of his realme, yͭ all ſuch ſuche perſons as had landes and poſſeſſions within Englande ſpirituall or temporall, yͭ they ſhould retourne into Englande by Mychelmas next folowinge, or els to be clerely excluded from all ſuche landes. And ouer that ſtreyght commaundement was geuen to euerycheofficer in hys coũtrey, to make buſy ſearche, if any writinges wer brought from the courte of Rome, to any prelate of thys realme, and if any ſuch were fo[u]nden, to bring him and his wrytinges to the kinges preſence.

And more ouer that they ſhould ſeaſe vnto the kinges vſe, all ſuch landes as to any perſon were geuen, by the ſayde archebyſhop or by the Priour of Caunterburye, ſince the tyme of election of the ſayd archbyſhop, and the woodes of the ſame to be fellyd and ſold in all haſte.

Anno domini. M.CC.vii. Anno domini. M.CC.viii.

Balliui. { Roger wyncheſter. Edmunde Hardell. } Anno. viii.

Henry the fyrſt ſonne of kynge Iohn.

The rebellion of the Iriſh men.

Vpon the firſt day of the moneth of October, & viii. yere of the reygne of the kinge, his fyrſte ſonne Henry by name, was borne of dame Iſabell his ſeconde wyfe in the Citie of Wincheſter. And this yere rebelled the Iriſhmen, and dyd much harme in that countrey. Whiche rebellion after ſome writers was, for ſo muche as the kyng would haue leuied of theym greuous taſkes, to haue made warre wyth, vpon the Frenche kynge. But at length they greued or diſpleaſed yͤ kyng in ſuch wiſe, that he was fayne to ſet a taſke thorough hys lande to oppreſſe theyr malyce. And ouer that he aſked of the white Munkes of Englande ſixe thouſande marke. But they excuſed theym by theyr generall head, ſo that the kynge tooke wyth theym great dyſpleaſure. By reaſon wherof after hys retourne out of Ireland, he vexed them ſore, and gathered of theym more then before he had deſyred, and cauſed ſome Abbottes to forſake theyr houſes.

Whyt
Munk

Then he with a puyſſaunte armie wente into Ireland, & ſhortly ſubdued them: and after he had ſet yͤ countrey in a rule, he retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M.CC.viii. Anno domini. M.CC.ix.

Balliui. { Serle the Mercer. Hugh of ſaynt Albon. } Anno. ix.

In this. ix. yeare, yͤ kyng conſideryng the greate loſſe, whiche he had ſuſtained by yͤ Frẽch kyng in Normandie, and alſo in Angeou and Poyteau, made prouiſion of all thynges belonging to the warre, and after about midſomer ſayled ouer the ſea, and landed at Rochell in Poyteau with a mighty hoſte. At whiche ſeaſon the French kynge was at Chimon and fortified it, with alſo the Caſtels of Loudon and Myrable, and the Towne of Poyters, whiche litell before he had wonne, and after withoute tariyng retourned into Fraunce. Then kyng Jhon hearyng of the Frenche kinges departinge, ſped him to Angiers and wanne that towne with lytle payne, and deſtroyed the ſayde towne. Thither came vnto hym the Vicounte of Thonars, whiche before was for dread become the French kynges man, and by hys ayde kyng Jhon then recouered ſome parte of that countrey.

e voy- of kige n into aunce.

In this meane while, king Philip gathered a new hoſte, and hearing the vnſtedfaſtneſſe of yͤ Vycount of Thonars, entred the landes of the ſaied vicount, and waſted and ſpoyled the coūtrey without pitie. Then kinge Jhon ſped hym towarde the Frenche kinge, ſo that in ſhorte proceſſe of tyme, the two hoſtes were within lytle dyſtaunce. But by what meane of fortune I can not ſay (for yͤ meane therof is not expreſſed) the two kynges there tooke peace for two yeres folowing, and after eyther of them retourned into hys owne countrey.

peace for o yeres.

In thys yere the Pope beynge aſſerteyned of yͤ cruelneſſe of king Jhon executed againſt the White Munkes of his lande, and alſo of his obſtinancy, that he perſeuered in agaynſt holye Churche, ſente downe a new commiſſion, by vertue wherof, the curſe of enterdytyng was newly denounced, and manifeſted in ſondri places of Englande.

A new ſe or in- diction

And ouer that the Pope by authoritie of the ſayd Bull, aſſoyled or acquited al the Lordes of Englande, as well ſpirituall as temporall, of all homage and feaulty that thei of right owed to yͤ king, to the entent that they ſhuld ariſe againſt him, and depriue him of al kingly honour. But al this might not moue the kyng.

ABout the feaſt of ſainct Medarde, in the moneth of June, and latter ende of this foreſaid nine yere, the forenamed baliffes were admitted to that office, and the olde, that is to meane Roger Wincheſter, and Edmunde Hardell were diſcharged, for ſo muche as they withſtod the kynges purueyour of wheate, and would not ſuffer him to conuey certeyn meaſures of wheate oute of the Citie tyl the citie were ſtored.

For this the kinge tooke ſuche diſpleaſure, that he ſente downe ſtreyght commaundement vnto the fiue and thirtie heades or rulers of the citie, that they ſhoulde diſcharge the ſaid two bayliffes, & to put thē in priſon till thei knew the kinges further pleaſure. Wherfore the ſaied .xxxv. perſons tooke aduiſe, and appointed a certayne of them ſelfe with other, and rode to yͤ king then being at Langley, to empeter grace for the ſaid bailiffes: ſhewinge further that at that ſeaſon ſuch diſtreſſe of wheate was in the citie, that the common people were like to haue made an inſurrection for the ſame. By whiche meanes, and frendſhip which they had in the courte, the kynge was ſo ſatiſfied that he releaſed them from priſon.

The graũt of choſyng Myre and ſhryues in the Citie.

And in ſhort tyme after, the citezyns of London made ſuch ſute vnto the king, that they had graũted to them by the kinges letters patentes, that they ſhould yerely choſe to theym ſelfe a Mayre, and two Sheriues. After whiche graũt vnto them confyrmed, they amonge thẽ ſelues ordeyned, that the two ſhriues ſhoulde be choſen yerely vpon Saynte Mathewes daye, nyne dayes before Mychelmas daye, and vpon Michelmas day, to take theyr charge: and the Maire to be choſen vpon the ſame day, and charged with the other vpon the ſayd day of Michelmas al be it, that now it is otherwiſe ordered.

The day ẏ was fyrſte appoynted for the Mayre and ſhryues to be choſen on.

Anno domini. M.CC.ix.

Primus maior.

The fyrſte Mayre.

Henry fyz Alwin. Peter Duke. Thomas Neel. Shriues. Anno.x.

Anno domini. M.CC.x.

Li.7.ca.33.

IN the day of ſaynt Michaell the Archaungel, and the tenthe yeare of kynge Jhon, Henrye the Sonne of Alwyne, was ſworne and charged as fyrſte mayre of London, & Peter Duke, with Thomas Neell ſworne for Shryues, and the name of baylyffes was after this day clearely auoyded within the ſayde Citie from that day forewarde. Alſo where before this time, ẏ bridge ouer Thamis at London, was made of tymber, and was ruled, guyded, or repayred by a fraternitie or college of preeſtes, this yere by the great ayde of the Citezyns of Londõ and other paſſing that way, the ſayd brydge was begon to be edified of ſtone. And thys yere S. Mary Oueris in Southwarke was begon to be builded. And in thys yere, the Pope ſente two legates, or after ſome wryters one legate named Pandulphus, the whiche in the Popes name had manye ſore wordes of monicion of obedyence to kynge Jhon, and charged him to ſuffer the Archbyſhop of Caunterburie with the Prioure and Munkes of the ſame, to enioy their rightes and poſſeſſions within England: and taryed here a certayn time to bringe hys purpoſe aboute. But al was in vaine, for he yode again to Rome wythoute releaſynge of the enterditing.

The makynge of London Brydge wᵗ ſtone whiche was in the yere of our lorde xii.C.&.ix.

The ma ner of th interdic of the l

Of the maner of thys enterdiction of this land, haue I ſeene diuers opinions. As ſome there be that ſay that the land was enterdited thorowly, and the churches and houſes of religion cloſed, that no where was vſed Maſſe nor diuine ſeruice. By whiche reaſon, none of the ſeuen Sacramentes, in all thys terme ſhould be miniſtred or occupied, nor child chriſtened, nor man confeſſed, nor maried. But it was not ſo ſtrayte, for there were diuers places in England whiche were occupied wyth diuine ſeruice al that ſeaſon, by licence purchaſed then or before. Alſo childẽ were chriſtened through al the land, and men houſeled and anealed, except ſuch perſonnes as were excepted by name in ẏ bull.

Anno domini.M.CC.x. Anno domini.M.CC.xi.

Henry fiz Alwin. { Peter yonge.
William Eland, } Anno.xi.

IN this yere which was the.xi. yere of kyng Jhon, after Mydſomer, or the terme of trewce, were fully runne, king Philip with a ſtronge hoſte entred the countie of Guyan, and made new warre vpon the Vycounte of Thonars, and toke his Caſtell called Partenie, with dyuers other ſtronge holdes to the ſayde Vicount belongynge, and manned them with Frenchmen, & ordeyned one Guylliam de Roches marſhall of Fraunce, chiefe ruler of that countrey, and after retourned into Fraunce. But it was not long after the king was departed, but that the ſayd vicoūt of Thoners, made ſharpe warre vpon the Frenchmen, with ſuche power as he might make, and recouered a parte of his lande.

But one day, when he had won a litle holde, and taken therin, a certayne of pryſoners, in the returne towarde his holde, where he lodged, he was ſuppryſed with the forenamed Guyllyam de Roches, and a greate multitude of Frenchmen, of the whyche after longe fight he was fynally taken wyth ſyr Hugh Thonars his brother, ſyr Aymery de Leſygnam ſonne of the Earle of Poytiers, and to the number of fyftie perſones of hys company, the which were all as pryſoners then ſente vnto the French king.

Anno domini.M.CC.xi. Anno.domini.M.CC.xii.

Henry fyz Alwyne. { Adam Whetly.
Stephā le Graas. } Anno.xii.

ulph
Popes
e.

IN thys twelfte yere of kynge Jhon, the Pope ſente agayn Pandulph his legate, and monyſſhed the kynge in ſharpe maner, yͤ he ſhould receyue Stephā Langton to his benefice of the See of Caunterbury, and the Pryour wyth the Munkes vnto their abbay. Then the kinge callynge to minde the daungers, whyche he was wrapped in, both within his owne realme & alſo in Normandy and the hurtes which daily grew to him by the ſame, made a promiſe by othe, that he wold be obediente vnto the courte of Rome, and ſtande and obey all thynge, that the ſame courte woulde adiudge him. Upon which promyſe ſo made, the legate ſente knowledge vnto the Pope, and had cōmaundement from hym that he ſhould bynde the kyng to theſe artycles folowing.

The artycles wherunto the kinge was compelled to graunt.

Fyrſt that he ſhould peaciably ſuffer the forenamed Stephan Langton to enter the lande, and to enioy the Archbyſhopriche of Caunterbury, with all profites & frutes belongyng to the ſame.

Secondaryly, that he ſhoulde

in like maner and fourme receyue the Prior of Caunterburi and his Munkes, wyth all other before tyme exyled, for the archbyſhops cauſe, and not at any time hereafter vexe or puniſh any of the ſayd perſons ſpirituall or temporall, for any of thoſe cauſes.

Thyrdly, that he ſhould reſtore vnto the ſayde archbyſhop and to all the other, all ſuche goodes as were before time taken from any of theim by his officers, ſince the time of this variaunce growing.

And fourthlie yͭ he ſhould yelde vp into the handes of the Pope of Rome al hys right and title, that he had vnto the Crowne of England, with al reuenues, honours, and profites belonging to yͤ ſame, as well temporall as ſpirituall: and to holde it euer after, both he and his heyres of the Pope & hys ſucceſſours, as feodaries of the Pope.

What chriſtien harte, but muſte weepe and lament to here a chriſten prince to be thus abuſed.

And when theſe articles were graunted, & the lordes of the land ſworne, to the mayntenaunce of the ſame, the kynge kneelyng vpvpon hys knees, tooke yͤ Crowne from his head, & ſayde theſe wordes folowing to the legate deliueringe him the crowne: Here I reſigne vp the crowne of the realme of England and Ireland into the handes of Innocent the thyrde, and put me wholy into his mercy and ordinaunce. After reherſal of whiche wordes, Pandulph tooke the crowne of the king, and kepte the poſſeſſion therof .v. days after in token of poſſeſſion of the ſayde realme of England. And when yͤ ſayd .v. dayes were expyred, yͤ king reſumed the crowne of Pandulph by vertue of a bande or inſtrumēt made vnto the Pope, the whiche at length is ſet out in the Cronicle of England, and other places. Wherof the effecte is, that yͤ ſaied king Jhon and his heyres, ſhould euer after be feodaries vnto the forenamed Innocent, and to hys lawful ſucceſſours Popes of rome and to pay yerely to the Churche of Rome a .M. marke of ſiluer, yͭ is to ſay for England .vii.C. mark and for Ireland .iii.C. mark. And if he or his heyres fayled or brake that paymente, that they ſhould fayle of their right of the crowne. *But Policronicon ſayth .vii.C. marke for Englande, and .ii. hundred markes for Irelande.

Li.7.c

For the which ſummes after the affyrmaunce of Guido, the money called Peter pence, where gathered in ſondry places of England.

Annno domini. M.CC.xii. Anno domini. M.CC.xiii.

Henry fyz Aleyn. { *Joſne fyz Pyt. / Jhon Garlond. } Anno.xiii.

*J
Peter

The landinge of Stephan Langton.

IN this .xiii. yeare of kinge Jhon, & the moneth of February, Stephan Langton Archebiſhop of Caūterbury, wyth the other exyles landed in England, and after in proceſſe of tyme met with the kynge at Wynchester. Where the kynge receiued hym with a ioyous countenaunce, & after there was aſſoyled of the ſaid archbiſhop. But yet was not the interdictiō of the lande releaſed, for ſo muche as the kynge at that daye had not made reſtitucion vnto the archbyſhop & other, according to the thyrde artycle before rehearſed.

For the which (as teſtifieth the Englyſhe booke) he payed vnto the archbiſhoppe, three thouſande marke, and to the other, by particulers, fiftene thouſande marke. After which thinges perfourmed and doone, the interdiction was adnulled & foredoone, in the moneth of July, and yere of our lord xii. hundred and twelue, when it had ſtanden in force ful ſixe yeres, and as much as from the ſixe and twenty day, of ỹ moneth of July, whiche is vpon three monethes and odde dayes.

Anno domini. M. CC. xiii. Anno domini. M. CC. xiiii.

Henry fyz Alwin. Raufe Eyland.
Conſtantyne le Joeſne. Anno. xiiii.

IN this. xiiii. yere of the kyng, for that he wolde not holde the lawes of S. Edwarde, and alſo for dyſpleaſure that he bare to diuers of them, that thei wolde not fauoure him agaynſt the Pope of Rome, and for other cauſes which here be not manifeſted, the kynge fell at diſcencion with his Lordes in ſo much that great people were rayſed on eyther parties.

But for the kinges party, was the ſtronger, the Earle of Cheſter with the other lordes, tooke the Citie of London, and helde theim therin a certayne of tyme. The Chronicle of Caxton, with other, ſayen that a greate parte of this variaunce betwene kynge Jhon and his barrons was, for becauſe the kynge would without ſkylful dome haue exyled the ſayde Earle of Cheſter, whiche to hym had no cauſe, but for ſo muche as before ſeaſons he had oftẽtimes aduiſed the kynge to leaue his cruelneſſe & his accuſtomed auowtry, the whiche he exerciſed with his brothers wife and other. But by the meanes of the archebyſhop of Caunterbury & other prelates, a peace was taken for a while.

In this yere vpon the day of the tranſlacion of ſaynt Benet, or the xi. day of July, a great parte of ỹ Buroughe of Southwarke was brente. And in the moneth of Auguſte nexte folowing, was greate and much harme donc in Londõ, by fyre.

A greate fire in ſuthwarke.

Soone after to ſtabliſh ỹ peace betwene the kyng & his lordes, an aſſemble was made on Berhamdowne, where the king & his lordes met with great ſtrength vpon either ſide. Where a charter or writing was deuiſed and made, and there ſealed by the kinge, ſo that the barony was with it contented, & departed in peaſyable wiſe euerych man into his countrey.

Anno domini. M. CC. xiiii. Anno domini. M. CC. xv.

Roger fyz Aleyn. Martayne fyz Alys.
*Rycharde Batte. Anno. xv.

*Peter.

How the Lordes made war vpon the kyng.

IN thys.xv. yere of the king, the peace whiche in the laſte yere was betwene king Jhon and his baronies agreed, was by the king violate and broken. Wherfore the Lordes aſſembled to them greate powers, and made ſharpe and cruel warre vpon the kinge, in ſo much that he was conſtrayned, to ſende vnto Normandy for ayde and ſuccoure and into other places. Thē ſhortlie after came into Englande a Norman knight, whiche brought with him a company of Normās, Flemmins, and Picardes. Thys knight or captayne was named Foukes de Brent, the which with his company was ſo cruel, that he deſtroyed as well religious houſes as other, and wrought muche harme to the lande, and putte the Lordes to the worſe. Then the kynge made Foukes, and other of his company, wardens of caſtels and ſtronge holdes in Englande. The lordes ſeynge the king perſeuer in his wronge, and woulde in no wyſe be induced, to holde hys owne grauntes, but to execute al thing after pleaſure, & nothing after law or iuſtice, caſt in theyr mindes how they might bring the lād in a better rule or ſtate, and by one aduice and conſente, wrote vnto Philip kynge of Fraunce, that he would ſende ſome noble man into England, and they woulde render the land vnto hym. In this while kynge Jhon cauſed to be drawen and hanged at London, one Peter of Pomfret, for the ſaid Peter had moniſhed diuers miſſehappes that ſhould come to him, for hys vicious lyfe, and alſo for he hadde often warned king Jhon, that he ſhould reygne but.xiiii.yeres, the which he mente, without paiyng of tribute. For after he was become feodary to yͤ Pope of Rome, he thoughte the Pope of Rome, reygned as pryncypall Lorde of the land, and not he. For the whiche, and for diuers other matters, he was put to death.

Anno domini.M.CC.xv. Anno domini.M.CC.xvi.

Roger fyz Aleyn. { Salomon Baſyng. Hugh Baſynge. } Anno.xvi.

How king Jhon wan the Citie & caſtell of Rocheſter.

VPon Saint Andrewes euen, or the.xxix.day of Nouember in the.xvi. yere of his reigne, king Jhon after he had lien a certayne of tyme wᵗ his ordinaunce aboute the caſtel of Roucheſter in Kente, he wan the ſayde Caſtell and toke therin certayne gentylmen yͭ had conſpyred agaynſt him, the which he ſent to dyuers pryſons.

Lewes ſonne French king, l ded in gland t take p wyth th lordes a gaynſt kyng.

And the barons helde them together at London, abydynge the commynge of Lewes ſonne, to the Frenche kynge, the whych neare aboute Aſſencion tyde, landed in Englande wyth a ſtronge armye, and ſo came to Rocheſter, and layde ſyege to the Caſtell, and wanne it wyth lytell payne, for ſo muche, as it was greatlye febled wyth the aſſautes, latelye made by kynge Jhon, and ſynce yͤ tyme, not ſufficiently repayred.

And when he had won ẏ ſaid Caſtell, he cauſed all the ſtraungers therin taken, to be hanged, & after came to London, where certayne aliaunces and couenauntes were ſtabliſhed betwene the lordes and him, & receyued of them homage, as affirmeth Policronicon.

And after their matters betwene them ther finiſhed, he with the lordes departed from London and gate the caſtelles of Rigate, of Wilforde, and Frenham, & from thence to Wincheſter, where the citie was yelded vnto them, with all the holdes and caſtelles thereaboute, as Wolneſey, Odyham, and Beawmere. And aboute S. Margaretes daye, he wyth the lordes came agayne to London: at whoſe commynge the towre of London was geuen vp to them by appoyntment. And where Roger fiz Aleyn hadde tyll that time ruled the Cytye of London, as Mayre, he for ſo much as he was accuſed to the lordes to be fauorable to the kynges partie, was thē diſcharged of that office, and one called Serle Mercer was choſen in hys place, and ſo continued till Mychelmas folowyng.

Anno domini. M.CC.xvi.

In this paſſetime kyng Jhon beyng thus ouer ſet with his lordes, ſent meſſengers to the Pope, ſhewynge to him the rebellion of his lordes, & how they laboured his deſtruction. Wherfore ẏ Pope in all haſte, ſent a legate into England named Guallo or Swalo, the which after his comming, cōmaunded Lewes to returne into Fraunce, and laboured to the vttermoſte of his power, to appeaſe the king and his barony. But all his laboure was in vayne.

Anno domini. M.CC.xvii.

Jhon Trauers.
wyllyam Hardell. Anno.xvii.
Andrew Newlande.

IN this .xvii. yeare of king Jhon, the warre betweene hym and hys Lordes ſtill cōtinuing he died of the flixe, as teſtifieth Policronicon, at the towne of Newerke, vpon the day of ſ. Calixte, or the .xxiiii. daye of October. Howbeit the Engliſhe booke or Cronicle ſayth, ẏ he died at Sebiniſhed an Abbay aboute Lyncolne, by the impoyſonynge of a Munke of the ſame houſe, the day after ſaynt Luke, or the .xviii. daye of October, and was buried in the Citie of Wyncheſter. But the authoure of Policronicō ſaith he was bowelled at Crogthō abbay, and buryed at Worceter in the myddle of the quier of Munkes, when he had reygned .xvi. yeres .vi. monethes and .iiii. dayes, leauynge after hym two ſonnes, Henry and Rycharde, wyth ſondry daughters.

cronicon
ſaith
Jhon
of the

Eng.
cronicle
ſaith he
poy-

Of this John, it is red, that he foūded the Abbay of Belew in the new foreſt, in recōpēſacion of the paryſſh Churches, which he there tourned to enlarge that Foreſt, and an Abbey of blacke munkes, in the Citie of Wyncheſter, where after the ſaiynge of the Engliſhe Cronicle, he ſhould be buried.

Thys kynge Jhon alſo after

ſome wryters, maried one of hys daughters vnto Otto, the fourth of that name, Emperour of Almayne and duke of Saxony, whiche helde warre agaynſt Kynge Philip of Fraunce, as in the fyfte Chapter of the ſtory of the ſayde Phylyp, before is declared.

Of Henry the thirde.

Li.7.ca.34

HENRY the thyrd of that name, and eldeſt ſonne of Kyng Jhon, a chylde of ẏ age of.ix.yeres, beganne his reigne ouer the realme of England, the twenty day, of the moneth of October, in the yere of our Lorde a thouſand two hundred & xvi. and the.xxvi.yeare of the ſeconde Philip, yet king of Fraũce.

Ye haue before heard of the cruel warre, which Lewes ſonne vnto the Frenche kinge, with the ayde of the Barons of England, maintayned agaynſt kyng Jhon. The which after the death of the ſaied Jhon, continued, for as muche as then ſome of the Lordes that before had maynteyned the quarell of Lewes, now forſooke hym, and tooke party with this Henry, as theyr natural & ſoueraygne lorde. Wherof the chiefe were the earles of Penbroke and of Cheſter, the whiche with theyr retinue helde ſharpe warre with ẏ ſayd Lewes and hys affinitie, the which entended to haue ben kyng of England by reaſon of couenauntes made with certayne lordes of the land, when he was fyrſte ſente for by them. Wherfore the forſayd Earles, with the other of theyr party, to make theyr party the ſtronger, proclaymed the ſayd Henry kyng of England, vpon the foreſayd.xx. day of October through the Citie of London, and in al poſſible haſte after made prouiſion for hys coronacion: ſo that vpon the daye of Symonde and Jude, nexte enſuinge, he was crowned at Glouceter, of Peter then Byſhop of Wincheſter, Lewes the French kinges ſonne beynge then at Lyncolne. In which yere ſtoode ſtyll the gouernours of the Citie of London, tyl Michelmas next folowyng.

Mayres. Anno domini.M.CC.xvii. Anno domini.M.CC.xviii.

‡Jhon Trauers.

* James Aldermã. *Wyllyam Hardell. Anno.i.

‡Andrew Newlande

Salomon Baſing.

SO ſoone as ẏ kyng was crowned, cõmiſſions were ſent ouer in hys name into all places of Englande, to gather ſtrengthe of menne, to wythſtand the forenamed Lewes, & to put hym with his Frenchemen & other aliaunces out of the lande, which then had vnder theyr rule & cuſtody the Caſtels of Berkhamſted, of Hartforde, & diuers other. And for thys Lewes would not ſeaſe ceaſe of his warre and retourne into Fraunce, therfoꝛe the foꝛſaid Gualo oꝛ Swallo the Pope of Romes legate, accuſed him fyrſte by name, and after al ſuch as him mayntayned oꝛ fauoured in theyr warre agaynſt king Henry. Thē the foꝛenamed Earles accompanies, with William Earle Marſhall of England, williã le Bruis Earle of Ferrys, with manye other, yode to Lincolne, and wan yͤ towne vpon yͤ ſtraungers. where was ſlayne a French man called Earle of Perches wͭ many other ſouldiours. And there was taken of Englyſhmen, Serle Earle of Bohan. winchester, and Humfry * de Bohum Earle of Hertfoꝛde with dyuers other of that name. And in this while Lewelin pꝛince of Wales, foꝛ that he ayded the partie of Lewes was accurſed, ⁊ his landed enterdyted.

After the towne of Lincolne was thus wonne from the Frenchmen Lewes with other parte of hys ſouldiers dꝛew towarde London: foꝛ ſo much as woꝛd was bꝛought to him, that his father had ſent to him a new company of ſouldiours the which ſhould land in Englãd ſhoꝛtly. Truth it was that ſuche an ayde of ſouldiours was made by the French king, and committed to a capytayne whiche in the Cronicle is named Euſtace the Munke, the whiche was encountred vpon the ſea, with a capitayn oꝛ mayſter of the fiue poꝛtes called Hubert at Burgh, and gaue to hym batayle, and diſcomfyght him at length, ⁊ ſent the head of yͤ ſayde Euſtace vnto the king. Whē Lewes heard of theſe tidinges, ⁊ conſidered how dayly his ſtrẽgth miniſhed, he was moꝛe inclinable vnto peace: ſo yͭ in cõcluſiõ he toke money as ſayth * Policronica and Li.7.ca.34 yelded vp his caſtels ⁊ ſtrengthes which he helde, ⁊ after was aſſoyled, ⁊ ſo returned into Frãce: but of this money yͭ Lewes receyued ben diuers opiniõs, foꝛ the engliſh boke nameth it a. M. marke, ⁊ yͤ French boke ſaith. xv. M. mark.

Anno domini. M. CC. xviii. Anno domini. M. CC. xix.

Roberte Serle. { Thomas Bokerell. / Rafe Eylande. } Anno. ii.

IN this ſecond yeare of kinge Henry, when the land was voided of the ſtraungers, then inquiſicions were made to know what perſons had fauoured, the party of Lewes agaynſt the king of the which the kynge pardoned many of the lay fee. But the ſpirituall were put to ſuche fines, that they were compelled to laye that they myght to pledge, to pleaſe yͤ king, and ouer that, to ſue to Rome to be aſſoyled. And this yeare Ranulph Earle of Cheſter, foꝛ conſyderacions hym mouing, tooke his iourney into the holy lande. But one Cronicle ſayeth he tooke that iourney vpon hym, foꝛ ſo much as he had contrary his allegeaunce, made homage vnto Lewes aboue named, and foꝛ malice whiche he bare towarde kyng Jhon, entending at the tyme of that homage doynge, to haue made the ſayde Lewes kyng of England.

Anno domini. M.CC.xix.

Anno domini. M.CC.xx.

Robert Serle.
Benet le Ceytur.
wyllyam Blounde.
Anno.iii.

How the king had graunted to him.ii.s of euery plough lãd

IN thys thyrde yeare of kyng Henry, a parliamẽt was holden at Lõdon, by vertue whereof was graunted to the king.ii.s.of euery plough land thorough England, which was for yͤ charge yͭ he before had wͭ Lewes at warre.

And this yeare (as witneſſeth Policronicon) king Henry began the new worke of the Churche of Weſtminſter, which after that saiyng ſhould be in the twelue yeare of hys age.

Anno domini. M.CC.xx.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxi.

Roberte Serle.
Jhon waylle.
Joſne le Spycer.
Anno.iiii.

Li.7.ca.34

IN this yere, Alexander kynge of Scottes, maried dame Jane or Joã the ſiſter of Kyng Henrie. And this yeare was greate harme done in Englande, by violence of a whyrlewinde, and fyrye Dragons, were ſene flying in the ayre. And this yeare were proclamacions made in London, & thoroughout Englande, yͭ all ſtraungers ſhould auoyde the lande, by Michelmas nexte folowinge, except ſuch as came with marchaundiſe, and to make ſale of them vnder the kinges ſaufe conduite.

Proclamacion that all ſtraungers ſhold auoyde.

whiche was chiefely made to auoyde Foukes de Brent and hys complyces, which kept the Caſtel of Bedforde, againſt the kynges wil & pleaſure. And this yere was kyng Henry ſecondarilly crowned at Weſtminſter the. xvii. daye of May. And this yere yͤ Citie called Damas in the holy lande was by Chriſten menne gotten from the Turkes.

The ſe coronac of kyng Henry.

And this yere came oute of the holy lande into Englãd Ranulph Earle of Cheſter, and beganne to builde the Caſtelles of Charteley and of Beſtone, and after he builded the Abbey of Delacreſſe of the whyte order. For charge and coſt of which ſayd caſtels and abbay, he tooke toll thorough al his lordſhip of all ſuche as paſſed yͤ waye wyth any chaffre or marchaũdiſe.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxi.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxii

Robert Serle.
Rycharde Wymbeday.
Jhon Waylle.
Anno.v.

ANd in this. v. yeare of kynge Henry, at Oxenforde was holden a general counſel of the byſſhops and clergy of thys land. In tyme of whyche counſel. a manne was taken, the whiche ſhewed him ſelfe to be Chriſt, & preached many thinges of erroure, whych the clerkes at thoſe dayes vſed.

A gener counſell the biſ pes & c gie of th lande.

one ẏ
d him
to bee
ſte.

And to appꝛoue that he was Jeſus the ſonne of God, and that he was cõmen to refourme thoſe errours and other, he ſhewed the carectes and tokens of woundes in his body, handes and fete, like vnto Jeſus that was nayled on the croſſe. Then he was appoſed ⁊ appꝛoued a falſe diſſimuler. Wherefoꝛe by dome of that counſayle, he was iudged to be nayled vnto the croſſe, and ſo deliuered to the executours, the which at a place called Aburbury, nayled him vnto a croſſe tyll he was dead.

e caſtel
Bꝛente,
eged.

Alſo this yeare the kinge layde ſiege vnto the caſtell of Bedfoꝛde, that Fowkis de Bꝛente hadde ſo longe holden by ſtrengthe. This ſiege began vpon the euen of the Aſcencion of our Loꝛd, and ſo continued tyll our ladye daye aſſumption. In whiche paſſetime, manye ſtrong aſſaultes were made, and great loſſe of menne on bothe parties. But finiallye, aboue this foꝛeſayde daye of Aſſumption, it was taken by fierſe aſſaulte. Wherein was taken the foꝛenamed Fowkis de Bꝛente, and vpon the number of foure ſkoꝛe ſouldiours, wherof the moꝛe part were put to deathe, and the ſayde Fowkis after he hadde lyen a certayne of tyme in pꝛyſon, was foꝛ hys finaunce delyuered, and flemed the lande. And in thys yeare came the frere Minoꝛs firſt into Englande.

The comming in of the graye freres.

These are graye Freres of the oꝛder of Sainct Fraunces, which if that be trew, they ſhould come into Englande ſyxe yeares befoꝛe the death of ſaynct Fraunces. Foꝛ after the affirmaũce of the authour of cronica cronicarũ, Jacobus Philippus and other, ſaincte Fraunces died in the yere of grace .xi. hundꝛed, and ſeuen and twenty. And that oꝛder was firſt confyꝛmed of Honoꝛius the .iii. of that name, Pope of Rome, in the yere of grace, twelue hũdꝛed and foure twentye.

This oꝛder fyꝛſt beganne vnder a fewe number of freres at the citie of Caunterburye, and after came vnto London, and reſted theym there, tyll they hadde an houſe there founded, by Iſabell wyfe of Edwarde the ſeconde, as after ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtoꝛy of the ſayde Edwarde, all be it, the afoꝛeſayde houſe was begonne of Margarete the wyfe of Edward the firſt.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxii. Anno domini. M.CC.xxiii.

Robert Serle. { Richarde Reynger. } Anno.vi.
{ Joſeus le Joꝛſne }

IN this ſixt yere of the raygne of kinge Henrye, a conſpiracy was made by one Conſtantine the ſonne of Arnulph within ẏ citie of Londõ, foꝛ the which he was dꝛawen and hanged the moꝛow folowing our lady day Aſſumption.

This conſpiracie was diſcloſed by a citezin named Walter Bokerell, and was ſo heynous and greuous to the kinge, that he was in minde ⁊ purpoſe to haue thꝛowen down the walles of the citye. But when he had wel cõceiued that the perſones perſons, which entended this conſpiracie, were but of the raſcalles of the citie, and that none of the heades or rulers of the ſame were thereunto conſenting, he aſwaged his ire and greuous diſpleaſure, whiche he entended to warde the citye.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxiii. Anno domini. M. CC. xxiiii.

Reynger.

Robert Serle. { Richarde * Joyner. / Thomas Lambert. } Anno. vii.

IN this ſeuenth yeare, Jhon king of Hieruſalem came into Englād, and required ayde of king Henrye, to wyn agayne that holye citie, but he retourned wyth ſmale comforte. And aboute thys tyme Jhon the ſonne of Dauyd Earle of Anguiſhe in Scotlande, and neare kynneſman vnto Ranulphe of Cheſter, marryed the doughter of Lewelyne Prynce of Wales, as it were for a finall acorde betwene the ſayde Lewelyne and Ranulphe, euer after to bee continued.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxiiii. Anno domini. M. CC. xxv.

Richard Reinger. { William Joynour. / Thomas Lamberte. } Anno. viii.

IN thys eyght yere of kyng Henry, a parlyament was holden at . Wher amōg other thinges, the lordes and barony of the lande graunted vnto the kinge and his heires kynges, the warde and maryage of the heyres, whiche deede was after of learned men called *initium malorum*, That is to meane, the beginning of euils or of harmes.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxv. Anno domini. M. CC. xxvi,

Richarde Reynger. { Jhon Trauers. / Andrew Bokerell. } Anno. ix.

Frederike emperour was accurſed of the Pope.

AND in thys. ix. yeare of king Henry, Frederike the ſecond of that name and Emperoure of Almaine, for his contumacie againſt the churche of Rome, was accurſed of the nynth Gregorye then Pope of Rome. Wherefore ſoone after he tooke two Cardinals and diuers prelates, as they were going vnto a generall councell kepte by the ſayde biſhoppe, at a place called Spolete, a citie of Italy.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxvi. Anno domini. M. CC. xxvii.

Richarde Reinger. { Roger Duke / Martyn fz William. } Anno. x.

IN this.x.yeare of of yͤ raign of king Henrye, the plees of the crown were pleted in the Tower of London.

In this yere alſo, as witneſſeth the French chꝛonicle, diuers ſouldiours, which to this dai kept certen caſtels in the countye of Poytiers, as yͤ caſtel of Monſtruel, the caſtel of Nyoꝛt, & the town of Angely & Rochel, were by the French king ſo aſſaulted, that thei wer cōſtrained to geue thē ouer vnto the Frenche kyng then being Lewes the.ix.of yͤ name, oꝛ after ſome wꝛiters yͤ.viii. & ſon of Philip the.ii.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxvii.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxviii.

Stephan Bokerell.
Roger Duke. Anno.xi.
Henry Cobham.

AND in this.xi.yeare of this kinge Henrye, the ſhirewike of London & of Middel. were letten to ferme foꝛ the ſumme of.iiii.C.li.by the yere, to the ſhꝛiues of Lōdon. And the.xvii.day of Febꝛary the ſame yere, was graunted by the king that al weris in the Thamis ſhould bee plucked vp and deſtroied foꝛ euer. And the.xvi.dai of March folowing, the king graūted by his charter enſealed, that the citezins of London ſhuld paſſe toll free thꝛough al England. And yf any citezins wer conſtrayned in any city, boꝛough oꝛ town, in England to pay any tol, that then the ſhꝛiues of London to attach any man cōming to London of the ſaid city, boꝛough, oꝛ town, where ſuch toll was paide, and hym and hys goods to withold and kepe till the citeziners of Lōdon be reſtoꝛed of al ſuch monie paid foꝛ the ſaid toll, with all coſtes & damages ſuſtained foꝛ the ſame. And the.xviii. day of Auguſt folowing, the kyng graunted to the ſaide Citezins of London warein, that is to meane, that the citezins haue free libertie of huntinge certayne circupts aboute London. And in this yere the towne of Lymoſyn with dyuers holdes in Pierregot and Aluerne in yͤ countie of Guian, were geuē vp to the foꝛenamed Lewes the Frenche kinge. Wherefoꝛe the kinge ſent ouer hys bꝛother Rychard earle of Coꝛnewayle ſhoꝛtly after, which landed at Burdeux with foure hundꝛed ſayles.

rties
e citie
don.

Richarde bꝛother to king Henrye, ſailed into Fraunce wͭ a greate nauye.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxviii.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxix.

Stephan Bokerell.
Roger Duke. Anno.xii.
Henry Cobham.

IN the beginning of this.xii.yere of kynge Henry, Stephan Langton archbiſhip of Caunterbury died, and the great deane of Paules, maiſter Richard Wethirſhed was hys ſucceſſoure. And in this time the fraūchiſe & liberties of the citie, were by the king confirmed, and to eueriche of the ſhꝛiues was graunted to haue two clerkes, & two officers wͭout moe.

And to the citezyns of London was alſo graunted this yere that they ſhoulde haue, and vſe, a common ſeale. And in this yere Richarde earle of Cornewayle beſieged the towne of S. Machaire in Guyan. And when he had won it by ſtrength, he then layde ſiege to the towne of Rochel til it was reſtored by the marſhal of Fraũce.

Anno domini. M.C.C.xxix. Anno domini. M.C.C.xxx.

Roger Duke. { Walter Wincheſter. / Robert fiz Jhon. } Anno. xiii.

IN thys thirtenth yere of kyng Henrye, vpon Trinitie ſondaye, or after another authour, vpon Whitſonday, while the biſhop of London was at highe maſſe in ſaincte Paules Churche of London, fell ſodeyne cloudes, and therewith ſuch ſtench and tempeſt of thunder & lightenyng, that the people there aſſembled, voyded the churche: and the Vicaryes and Chanons forſoke their deſkes, that the Byſhoppe remayned there in greate feare alone, excepte a fewe of hys menyall ſeruauntes, and ſuche as attended vppon hym at the aultare.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxx. Anno domini. M.CC.xxxi.

*Walter.
*Wonbourne.

Roger Duke. { Richarde fiz *William. / Jhon *Woodborne. } Anno. xiiii.

AND in thys. xiiii. yere of the kynge, was ordeyned by the Mayre, and rulers of the citye of London, that no Shriue of that citie ſhould cõtinue lenger in offyce, than one yeare. Whereof the cauſe was, that dyuers of theym by contynuaunce of theyr offyce did diuers extorcions, and tooke brybes of the vitellers with other defautes, which were found and proued preiudiciall and hurtfull to the common weale of the ſayd citie.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxxi. Anno domini. M.CC.xxxii.

* Andrew Bokerell.

*Roger Duke. { Michaell of S. Elene. / walter Denfelde. } Anno. xv.

IN this fyftenth yeare, the kyng hadde graunted hym a *Quindecim*, or a fiftene of the temporalitie, and a dyme and halfe of the ſpiritualtie, to recouer his landes loſte in Normandye, Guyan, and Poiteau. And in this yere Hubert of Burgth, that at this daye was chiefe Juſtice of Englande, hadde greeued or diſpleaſed the kinge in ſuche wyſe, that he was compelled to flee the kinges ſyghte. But he was ſo ſtraightly purſued, that he was taken in a Chapell of Brentwoode in Exſex, and ſo caſt

in

C

in priſon at the kynges cõmaundement. But after by laboure of the Biſhop Edmunde of Pountenay, he was reconciled to the kinges fauour, when he had been priſoned foure monethes, and exiled vpon thirtene monethes. And this yere was done great harme in London by fyre, whiche began in an houſe of a wydowe, named dame Jane Lambert.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxxii. Anno domini. M.CC.xxxiii.

Andrew Bokerell. { Henry * Eldementon. / Gerrarde Batte. } Anno. xvi.

*Endelmarter.

IN this. xvi. yeare king Henry vpon cõplaint brought before him by the frẽds of Lewelyn prynce of Wales, that William le Bruce or Brunze, ſhould conſpire againſt the kyng, or after ſome, for he kept vnlawfullye the wyfe of the forenamed Lewelin: he was after long impriſonment hanged. And this yeare died Ranulph earle Cheſter, Lincolne, and Huntingdon. And hys ſiſters ſonne named Jhon, ſonne vnto the earle of Anguiſh (as before in the ſeuẽth yere of this king is declared) was his heire, & helde that lordſhyppe after him. Thys Jhon of moſte writers is called Jhon Scot, for ſo much as his father was a Scot. This foreſayd Ranulphe had no childe, albeit he had foure ſiſters. The eldeſt hight Molde or Mawde, and was maryed to Dauid earle of Anguiſh, & was mother to the foreſaid Jhon Scot. The ſeconde was named Hawys, and was marryed vnto the earle of Arundell. The thyrde Agnes, was ioyned to the earle of Darbye. And the fourth named Mabely, was maryed vnto the earle of Wincheſter called Robert Quynacye. Thys Ranulphe dyed at Walingforde, and was buried in the Chapter houſe of the monkes of Cheſter, and ordayned the forenamed Jhon Scotte to bee hys heyre, for that he woulde not haue ſo noble a lordſhyppe runne amonge, or bee deuyded betwene ſo manye dyſtaues. And this yere dyed maiſter Richarde wethyrſhed archbyſhoppe of Caunterburye, whoſe ſucceſſoure was Edmunde of Pountenay.

Anno domini. M.CC.xxxiii. Anno domini. M.CC.xxxiiii.

Andrew Bokerell. { Simonde fiz Mayre. / Roger Blunt. } Anno. xvii.

IN this. xvii. yere of the raygne of king Henrye, the forenamed Edmũde of Pountenay or of Abindon, was ſacred archbyſhop of Caunterburye. He was named Pountnay, for ſo much as he was buried at Pountnay in Burgoin. He was named Edmũde of Abindon by reaſon he was borne in Abindon. This mã as before in the xv. yere is ſhewd, recõciled Hubert of Burgth to the kynges grace, & cauſed him to bee reſtored to his former offyce, as chiefe Juſtyce of thys lande. In thys yere alſo the kynge beganne the foundacion of the Hoſpytal of ſainct Jhon with out the Eaſtgate of Oxenforde.

In whiche yere alſo fell wonderful wether, as thunder and lightnynge vnlyke vnto other. And therupon folowed an earthquake, to the greate feare of the inhabitauntes of Huntingdon, and nere there aboute.

An e
quak

Anno dñi.M.CC.xxxiiii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xxxv.

Rafe Aſchewy.
Andrewe Bokerell. Anno.xviii.
Jhon Norman.

Li.7.ca.35.

AND in the .xviii. yere of kyng Henrye, the Jewes dwellyng at Norwich wer brought before the kyng at Weſtmynſter, to anſwere to a cõplaynte made agaynſt theym by one called Jhon Toly, of the ſaide towne of Norwiche, that they ſhoulde ſteale a chylde, and it circumciſed of ẏ age of a yere, & after kept the ſame childe ſecrete to the entent to crucifie it in diſpyte of Chriſtes religion. But howe the matter was folowed, or howe ſo the Jewes acquited them ſelues by theyr aunſwere, trueth it is, that they retourned vnpunyſhed. And thys yere Frederike the ſecond of that name, and emperour of Almayne, maryed the ſyſter of king Henrye, named Iſabell, as teſtifieth Policronica.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxv. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxvi.

Gerarde Batte.
Andrew Bokerel. Anno.xix.
Robert * Ardell.

*Hardell.

AND in the ninetẽth yere, the morowe after ſainct Hyllary, or the fourtenth daye of Janurye, Edmunde archbiſhop of Caunterbury, ſpouſed the king & Elynour ẏ doughter of the Earle of Prouynce in hys cyty of Caunterburye. And in the Utas of the ſaid Hyllary, ſhe was crowned at weſtmynſter as Quene of Englande. Where in the field of Weſtminſter lyinge at the Weſte ende of the churche, was kept royall ſolempnitie and goodly iuſtes, by the ſpace of eyghte dayes.

And the ſame yere the ſtatute of Merton was enacted, whiche is to meane, certayne actes made by acte of parlyament, holden by the kynge, and hys Lordes, and commons, at the towne of Merton, where amonge other actes was ordayned a remedye, for Wydowes that were defrauded of theyr dowres, and alſo howe heyres within age ſhould bee entreated, and remedyes for ſuche as were ſtollen, or wytholden contrarye to the gardeyns wylles.

Statu
of Me

But more certayne it was ordayned at a parlyament at Merton foreſayde, which was holden the thyrtye yere of thys kynge, in the morowe folowynge the daye

93 9o

of Sayncte Martyne, or the. xii. day of Nouember.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvi. Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvii.

Andrew Bokerel. Henry Cobham.
Jurden Couentrye. Anno. xx.

IN thys. xx. yeare of kynge Henrye, Jhon Scotte before named earle of Cheſter, dyed wythoute yſſue male. Wherefore the kyng conſiderynge the greate prerogatiues belongynge to that Earledome, gaue vnto hys doughters other poſſeſſions, and tooke the Earledome into his owne handes.

Thys Jhon died at Dorondale, and was buryed among hys anteceſſours at Cheſter, as affirmeth Policronicon.

And alſo he ſaieth that he died without any childe, and that the foreſaide exchaunge was made with the forenamed ſiſters of Ranulph before expreſſed in the. xvi. yere of this king.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxvii. Anno domini. M. CC. xxxviii.

Andrew Bokerell. Jhon * Theſalen.
* Gerard Cordwaner. Anno. xxi.

AND in the. xxi. yere Octobone a legate of the nine Gregorye, came into England and ordayned good ordinaũces for yͤ church. But not al to the pleaſure of the yong clergie of Englande. Wherefore as he one daye paſſed thorow Oxenforde, the ſcolars ſoughte occaſion againſt hys ſeruauntes and fought with thẽ, and ſlewe one of the ſame, and put the legate in ſuche feare, that he for his ſauegarde tooke the belfray of Oſney, and there helde hym tyll the Kynges Miniſters commynge from Abindon wyth ſtrength, medled with fayre wordes delyuered him, and conueyed him after with a competent company vnto Walyngforde. Where he accurſed the miſdoers, and punyſhed theym in ſuche wyſe, that the regentes and maiſters of that vniuerſitie were laſtly compelled to go barefote through Chepe to Paules at London, and there to aſke of him forgeueneſſe, and had that treſpace with great difficultie forgeuen.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxxviii. Anno domini. M. CC. xxxix.

Rycharde Renger. Jhon wylhalle.
Jhon Groundreſſe. Anno. xxii.

IN this two & twenty yere, a falſe clarke of the forſaid vniuerſitie of Oxenforde, which fained himſelf mad, & before time had eſpied the ſecrete places of the kings court, came by a windowe towarde the kinges chamber, at his manour at Wodſtocke, entending to haue ſlain the king. But he was eſpied by a woman, and taken, and conueyed to Couentrie, and ther arreyned of that deede. Where after lawefull proues of his malicious entent made, he for the ſame was there drawen and hanged.

And this yere vpon the euen of S. Botolph, or the ſixe and twenty dai of June, was borne at Weſtminſter Edwarde that after was ſurnamed Lonſhanke. This after his father was king.

Edw
lōgſh

Anno domini. M.CC.xxxix. Anno domini. M.CC.lx.

William Joynour.	*Remonde Benglye. Rafe Aſchewy.	Anno .xxiii.

*Rener de Bongey.

IN this thre and twentie yere of kyng Henry, before the time of the election of the ſhriues of London, one Symonde fiz Mary whiche before in the ſeuententh yere of the king had bene in that office, had purchaſed a commaundement of the king directed to the Mayre and rulers of the Citie, that they ſhoulde cauſe him to be elect to that office for that yere folowing. But the Mayre with the heades of the citie, withſtode it, and chaſe the forenamed Rafe Aſchewy, and putte the ſaide Symonde by, for the whiche he complained him to the king. Then the kinge ſent for the Mayre and rulers of the citie, and hadde vnto them manye woordes of diſpleaſure, for the diſobeiyng of his commaundement, and furthermoore diſcharged willyam Joynoure, whiche that yeare was agayne choſen newlye to bee Mayre, for the yere folowynge, and charged the citezins to procede a newe election for theyr Mayre.

Which then to ſatiffie the kynges pleaſure, chaſe Gerarde Bat. By whoſe meanes and good polycye the ſaide Mayre with hys Citezins, demened theym ſo well to the Kynge, that they optained his gracious fauoure, and cauſed the foreſayde Symonde to fayle of his purpoſe: and was not after admitted to that office, tyll he had ſubmitted him to the rule of the Mayre and rulers of the ſame citie. The whiche Symonde behaued him ſo well after, that he was admitted for an Alderman. But in ſhort proceſſe after, he demeaned him ſo euyll, and ſo contrariouſly vnto the weale and good order of the citie, that he was diſcharged of his Aldermanſhip, and diſcharged from all rule and counſaile of the citie, as in the foure & thirtie yere of this king folowing is touched.

Anno domini. M.CC.xl. Anno domini. M.CC.xli.

Gerarde Batte.	Jhon Gyſours. Michaell Tony.	Anno .xxiiii.

AND in the .xxiiii. yere of kinge Henrye, ſaynct Paules church of London, was newely halowed. And the great Chaan of Tartarye (before in the ſecond yere of king Jhon minded or touched of their beginning) in this yeare after he had from the Turkes wonne muche of the Eaſt landes, he ſente an hoſte into the lande of Hungarye, the whyche helde the people of that countrey ſo ſhorte, that as wytneſſeth the authoure of Polychronyca, and other, they were conſtrayned of neceſſitie to eate theyr owne children and other vnlawful meates. But the authour of Cronica cronicarum ſayth, that thys miſerye fell to the people of Hungarye, in the yere of our Lord, twelue hundred and one and twenty. Whych after that ſaiyng, ſhoulde be in the fifte yere of this king.

Li.7.ca.35.

Anno domini.M.CC.xli. Anno domini.M.CC.xlii.

aylle.

urenne

Romonde Bongey. { Jhon * Vyoll.
Thomas * Duresyne. } Anno.xxv.

AND in the fyue and twentye yeare of kinge Henry, Gerarde Batte was agayne choſen mayre for this preſent yere. And after his election he was by the worſhipfull of the citie conueied vnto Woodſtocke, and preſented after the cuſtome vnto the kyng. But the kynge enfourmed of hys laſte yeares dealynge, by ſuche as oughte to hym no good wyll, ſaid that he woulde not admitte hym to that office, till ſuche time as he came to Weſtminſter, with whiche aunſwere the ſayde Gerarde and his companye retourned vnto London. It was not longe after or the king came to Weſtminſter, where accordyng to theyr dutie, the citezins of London again awaited vpon the king to knowe his pleaſure.

Where the kynge called before him the ſayde mayre, and after certayne queſtions to hym putte, he cauſed him to bee ſworne in his preſence.

emaire
orne in
kinges
ſence.

After which othe to him geuen, the kinge charged hym by vertue of the ſame, that he ſhoulde not take of the Bakers, and Bruers, and other victailers of the Citie, fourtie pounde, whiche other of his predeceſſours, and alſo he that laſte yeare hadde taken. And alſo that he incontinentlye after hys comminge to London, ſhoulde reſtore vnto the ſaid Victailers and other citezins, all ſuche money as he hadde with wronge in that precedinge yere taken of the commynaltie of the citie. But for the ſaid Gerarde alledged for him certain conſyderations, beſechynge the kinge to pardon him of that reſtitution, the kinge in diſpleaſure ſwore a greate othe, that he ſhuld not that yere bee Maire, nor at anye time there after. And ſo the commons certified of the kinges pleaſure, chaſe in his place or ſteade, Reyner de Bungaye. And this yeare the Kinge yode into Wales. Whereof hearing Dauid then prince of Wales, met with the

the kyng at Ruthlande, and ſubmitted him to the kinges grace.

And thys yeare one Wyllyam of the Marſhe, was at London for treaſon drawen and hanged. Thys yeare alſo were Aldermen fyrſte choſen within the citye of London, whiche then hadde the rule of the citye, and of the wardes of the ſame, and were then yerely chaunged, as now the ſhriues bee chaunged.

The
that
men
firſt c
in Lo

Anno dñi. M.CC.xlii.

Anno dñi. M.CC.xliii.

Remonde Bongey. { Jhon fiz Jhon. / Rafe Aſcheway. } Anno.xxvi.

IN thys ſyxe and twentye yeare of king Henry, Boniface was ſacred archebyſhoppe of Cunterbury. And this yeare the kynge with a fayre companye ſayled into Normandye. Whiche voyage (as ſayth the French chronicle) was made by ye ſterynge of a French man, named the earle of March, for ſo much as ye ſaid earle refuſed to doe homage to Alphōs brother of Lewes the tenth of that name, and ſurnamed S. Lewes then king of Fraunce. This Lewes the yere before had married hys ſayde brother vnto the doughter of the Earle of Tholouſe, and had geuen to his ſayde brother the earldome of Poyteau with all the landes of Aluerne. By reaſon wherof he would haue cauſed the ſayd Earle of March, to haue doone homage vnto the ſayde Alphons, for ſuch landes as the ſayde Earle helde of the ſayde Earledome of Poytiers. But for the ſayde Earle Marche, knewe well that the ryght of Guyan belonged to the kyng of Englande, he therefore, and for other alyaunces made betwene kyng Henrys and hym, refuſed the doynge of that homage, and after came to kynge Henrye, and exited him to make warre vppon the French kynge. By reaſon whereof the kynge made prouiſion, and ſo landed with a ſtronge power at Burdeaux. After the affimaunce of the Frenche booke, thys Earle of Marches had maried the mother of king Henry.

Then it foloweth, in this whyle the Frenche kynge warred vppon the landes of the Earle of March, and had wonne two Caſtelles of his named Founteneys, and Vyllers, with diuers other, whiche I paſſe ouer. And when he hadde beaten downe ſome of theym, and ſome ſtored with new ſouldiours, he then went vnto a caſtell named Maucoune, and brake a bridge after him, for ſo much as he was warned, that the king of Englād was nere vnto him. At the ſaid bridge was a lytle ſkirmyſhe, but litle harme was there done. Then the Frēch king toke the waie ouer the riuer of Tharent towarde Taylbourgh, waſting & deſtroiyng the countrey as he went, and ſo forth toward the town called Sainces. And king Henry wt his hoſt made towarde him in all that he might. In keping this courſe, ye vawarde of the kinge encountred with the Earle of Boleyne, whyche was vpon the French kynges partye. That ſeaſon the Earle of Sainces, bare the banner of the Earle Marches, beynge the vaward of the kynge. But betwene theſe two Earles was ſore fyghte, ſo that many a man vpon both partyes was ſlayne, among the whiche the ſayde Earle of Sainces was ſlayne. Then came on bothe ſtrengthes vppon eyther ſyde, ſo that bothe kynges fought in that battayle, and greate ſlaughter of men was vpon bothe ſydes. But in the ende the Frenche men were victours, and tooke pryſoners twenty men of name, as knightes and of hygher degree, and three clarkes of great fame and riches, beſyde other to the the number of fyue hundred of meane people as wytneſſeth the Frenche booke. But of theſe men of name, nor yet of the three Clerkes none is named nor ſhewed; what good they payed for theyr raunſome. Wherfore me lyſte to wryte no further of thys great victorie, albeit, that the ſayde boke ſayth further, that kyng Henrye for feare retourned backe vnto Burdeaux, and there made meanes to the Kynge of Fraũce for a peace. But of all this fynde I no worde in the Englyſh chronicles.

Then the Earle of Marches by meane of his ſonne, was reconciled vnto the Frenche kyng, and reſtored to his landes, except thre caſtels, whiche were named Meſpyne, Cretaye, and Eaſterdaye, the whyche the French kynge retayned in hys poſſeſſion. And ſone after came vnto the Frenche kyng the Lordes of the Caſtels of Myrabell, and of Mortaygne, ſubmittynge them alſo vnto the kinges grace, beſechyng hym of pardon, that they had ſo to his hygh diſpleaſure fauoured hys enemye the king of England. And after came in dyuers other Lordes and Capytaynes, ſo that he was in poſſeſſion of all the countrey of Gain and Poiteau, vnto the riuer of Gyrounde.

I haue rehearſed the more of thys chronicle of Fraunce, to the entent that the readers maye the better perceyue the pryde and boldeneſſe of the Frenche menne. For in all theyr wrytynge, when they come to anye matter that foundeth any thyng to theyr honoure, it is written in the lengeſt and moſte ſhewynge maner, to theyr honoure and worſhyppe.

But(as I haue ſayde before in the fyfte chappyter of the ſtorye of the ſeconde Phylyppe kynge of Fraunce) if it ſounde anye thyng to theyr diſhonour, then ſhall it be abreuiated or hid, that the trueth ſhal not be knowen. And that appeareth well here by their owne writing. For in yͤ. vii. yere of king Ihon, it is ſhewed how Philip the ſecond then king of Fraunce, had wonne al Normandy and Guian. And yet at this daye, this kinge Lewes warred again in the ſame countrey, ſo that they euer tell of winning, but thei touche nothing of the agayne loſyng.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorye, when Kynge Henrye hadde (as before is ſayde) concluded the foreſayde peace, of the whyche by myne Authoure is no tearme ſet, the Kynge retourned into Englande.

Anno domini.M.CC.xliii. Anno domini.M.CC.xliiii.

Rafe Aſhwy. { Hugh Blount. Adam Baſyng. } Anno.xxvii.

And in this.xxvii. yeare the king returned from Burdeux into Englãd. And this yere the plees of the crowne were kepte in the towre of London. And this yere Griffith, whiche was ſonne of Lewelyn lately prynce of Wales, entendynge to haue broken pryſon, fell ouer the walles of the inner warde of the towre of London, and brake his necke.

Anno domini.M.CC.xliiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xlv.

Michaell Tony. { Rafe Spycer. Nycholas Batte. } Anno.xxviii.

In this.xxviii. yere of king Henry, I fynde no notable thynge written that was done that preſent yere.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlv. Anno domini.M.CC.xlvi.

Jhon Gyſors. { Robert Cornehyll. Adam*Bewly. } Anno.xxix.

Bentley.

In this nine and twentye yeare, Nycholas Batte contrarye to the ordinaunce before in the.xiiii. yere made was agayne choſen Shriue of London. For the whiche he was conuict of periury, and ſo discharged and puniſhed. And for that Michaell Tony, whiche for thys yeare was choſen mayre, was by depoſition of the Aldermen foũd gyltye in the ſayd cryme of periurie: therfore he was depoſed from hys ſayde offyce and punyſhed. And for hym was choſen mayre Jhon Gyſors, and for Nycholas Batte, was choſen ſhriue Robert of Cornehyll.

In this yere alſo, as teſtifieth (Jeffrey of Monmouth) Roberte Groſthed then biſhop of Lincolne, with other prelates of the lande, complayned theim vnto the kyng of the waſte of the goodes and patrimonye of the churche, whiche daylye was ſpence and waſted by the alyaunt byſhoppes and clerkes of thys lande. Of the whyche ſtraungers, one named mayſter Martyne, and neare kynſman of Innocent the thirde, was one. The whiche the kyng by helpe of the Engliſhe biſhoppes auoyded, with other lyke offendours out of thys realme.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlvi. Anno domini.M.CC.xlvii.

Jhon Gyſors. { Simond fiz Mary. Laurence Frowyke. } Anno.xxx.

And

.ca.36

AND in thys yeare died Frederyke the Emperoure of Almayne, whiche as beefore is touched in the eyghtene yeare of this kynge, maried Iſabell ſyſter vnto the kynge. The whiche for his rebellion, agaynſt the Churche of Rome, was accurſed firſte of the ix. Gregory, and laſtlye of Innocent the fourth, he was agayne curſſed and depriued, of his imperiall dignitie, geuing commiſſion and licence to the electours of the Emperour, to choſe a newe. The which wer of ſo many myndes in theyr election, that ſome chaſe yͤ Duke of Thoryng, ſome the Erle of Holande, & ſome chaſe the kinges brother, Rycharde Earle of Cornewayle. Which cauſed ſtrife that endured longe after, ſo that the onely Emperour of Almayne was not of all men allowed, tyll Radulphus, duke or Erle of Habſpurge in Almayne, was choſen by one aſſente vnto that dignite, and therunto admitted, by Gregory the ninthe of that name, in the yere of our Lorde.xii.hundred and.lxxiii. And ſo that varyaunce endured vpon.xxvii.yeres, to the greate imponeryſhinge of Italy, and the landes of the Empyre. Then as before is ſayd, this Frederike died vnaſſoyled, and was buried in a citie called Ferenciola with this ſuperſcription vpon his Toumbe.

ſte vp-
curſſe.

Si probitas, ſenſus, virtutis gratia, cenſus,
Nobilitas orti, poſſent reſiſtere morti,
Non foret extinctus, Fredericus qui iacet intus.

¶ Whiche verſes are thus muche to meane in Englyſhe.

If excellent of wit, or grace of good vertue,
Or noblenesse of byrth myght vnto deathe reſyſte,
Then ſhould this Frederyke mortall fate exchewe.
VVhiche hym hath cloſed here now in his cheſte.
But none of theſe may earthly man aſſyſte
To ſtryue wyth death, but all muſt paye hym dette.
Noble and innoble there nothynge maye lette.

¶ An other verſifyour made theſe two verſes folowynge, of the interpretacion of this name Frederike.

Fre fremit in mūdo, de deprimit alta profundo.
Ri ſes timatur, cus cuſpide cuncta minatur.

¶ The whiche may in this maner of wyſe be Englyſhed.

Fre fretyth this worlde, and de confoundeth all,
Hyghe thinges of honoure, into depneſſe darke.
Ry ſercheth buſylye the goodes generall.
Of this worlde bothe of the lay and clerke,
Makynge no queſtion in hys moſte cruell werke.
And cus with ſwearde all thynge doeth manace.
And thus lyued Frederike in the worlde for a ſpace.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlvii. Anno domini.M.CC.xlviii.

*Peter. *Pyers Aleyne. { Jhon *Voyle. / Nycholas Batte. } Anno.xxxi. *V

IN this.xxxi.yere of the reygne of kynge Henrye, Lewes (which is ſurnamed ſaynte Lewes) the king of Fraunce, with a conueniente hoſte ſayled into the holy lande, & there warred vpon Chriſtes enemies, and wanne the City of Damas at his fyrſte landing, and after taried there from the beginnyng of the moneth of June, vnto the.xxii.day of November: and after departed thens toward Babylon, entendinge to haue layed ſyege to the Citie. But fortune was to him ſo contrarye, that by ſikeneſſe and other caſualties, he loſt much of hys people, and in the ende was hym ſelfe taken pryſoner of the Turkes, as more playnly ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtory of the ſayd Lewes folowyng.

And in thys yere was a mightie earthquake in England, that the lyke to it was not ſene, manie yeres before. Also this yeare the kynge ſeaſed the fraunchyſe of the Citie of London, vpon the euen of Saynte Bartholomew, for a iudgemente that was geuen by the Mayre & Aldermen againſte a wedow named Margaret Viel and committed the rule of the cytie vnto Wyllyam Haueryll, and Edwarde of Weſtminſter, tyl our Lady day next folowynge. At the which ſeaſon, the Mayre & Shyrues were agayne to theyr offices admytted.

A gr
erthq

Anno domini.M.CC.xlviii. Anno domini.M.CC.xlix.

Mychaell Tony. { Nycholas Jocy. / Geffrey Wynton. } Anno.xxxii.

IN thys.xxxii. yeare of the king the wharfe of London called Quene Hythe, was taken to ferme by the cominalty of the Citie, to pay yerely therfore.l.pound The which was then committed to the ſhriues charge, and ſo hath continued euer ſens that tyme vnto thys day. Wherof the profites and tolles are ſo ſore miniſhed that at thys day it is lytle worthe ouer twenty marke or.xv.pounde one yere wyth a nother. And thys yere fell great dyſtemperaunce of wether, in ſuche wyſe that the grounde was bareyne vpon the ſame, and other myſhappes folowed anon thervpon. And thys yeare, when the matter aforenamed of Margarete Vyell, wydowe, was well examyned, the iudgement therof, was founden good and trewe. Wherefore the Citezens enioyed the lyberties wout interrupcion, all be it, the king was with them ſomwhat agreeued, for ſo much as they at his requeſt, would not exchaūge with the Abbot of Weſtmynſter, ſuche liberties as they had in Myddelſex of the kinges graunte, for other to be had in other places.

Anno domini. M.CC.xlix. Anno domini. M.CC.l.

Roger fiz Roger. { Rafe Hardell. / Jhon *Tooſlane. } Anno.xxxiii.

*Toleſan.

oberte ſthede

IN the.xxxiii.yeare of kynge Henry in the moneth of October, died Robert Groſthed, Byſhop of Lyncolne. He was the maker of the booke called Pety Caton and many other.

This Roberte for ſo muche as the fourth Innocent, greeued the Churche of England with taſkes and paymentes agaynſt reaſon, he therfore ſent vnto him a ſharp pyſtle. This Innocent, then gaue vnto a chylde, a neuew of hys, a Chanonry which fel voyde in the Churche of Lincolne, and ſente the chylde vnto the Byſhop, chargynge hym to admitte the ſayde chylde, and to ſet him in his place. But thys Byſhop boldely denied yͤ receyte of the childe, and wrote vnto Innocent, that he would not nor ſhould receyue ſuche vnto the cure of ſoule, that coulde not rule them ſelfe. Therfore thys Robert was ſomoned to appere before the Pope, and therupon accurſſed. Then he appealed from Innocentes court to Chriſtes owne trone.

An appele from the Pope of Rome to Chryſt.

Anno domini. M.CC.l. Anno domini. M.CC.li.

Jhon Norman. { Humfrey Baſſe. / Wylliam fyz Richarde. } Anno.xxxiiii.

reate ude.

IN thys.xxxiiii.yeare, was an exceding winde the whiche in ſondrye places of Englande did greate harme, whiche was in the begynnyng of this yere, vpon the day of Symon and Iude.

And thys yere Simon fyz Mary alderman of London, for his diſobedience, and euyll counſayle that he gaue vnto Margarete Vyell, before in the.xxxi. yeare of this kyng touched, with other ſecrete laboures and matters entēded by him to the hurte of the Citie, was diſcharged of his aldermanſhip, and put out of the councell of the Citie.

Anno domini. M.CC.li. Anno domini. M.CC.lii.

Adam Baſyng. { Laurence Frowyke. / *Nycholas Batte. } Anno.xxxv.

*Williā fiz rychard

he be- ning of Freer guſtins

IN this thyrty and fiue yere of king Henry, began the Freer Auguſtines, to buylde or inhabite them in Walys, in a place called woodhouſe.

And in this yere maried kynge Henry his doughter Mary (or after ſome ter ſome writers margaret) vnto Alexander kynge of Scottes at the Citie of Yorke, & did receyue homage of the ſayd Alexander for the kyngdome of Scottes, or for the Prouynce of Scotlande, in lyke maner, as many of hys progenitours had done diuers & many tymes before, as in this worke bothe before thys time, and alſo after is ſhewed.

Anno domini. M.CC.lii. Anno domini. M.CC.liii.

Jhon Toleſon. { Wyllyam Durham. / Thomas Wyborne. } Anno. xxxvi.

IN this thirty and ſyxth yere, yͤ kyng graunted vnto yͤ Shryues of London, yͤ they ſhould yerely be allowed ſeuen pounde, for certayne pryuyleges or grounde belongynge to Saynt Paules churche, the whiche at this day, is allowed by the Barons of the kynges excheker, vnto euerye Shyryue, when they make theyr accompte in the office of the pype.

Alſo this yere was graunted by the kinge, for the Citezens more eaſe, that where before tyme they vſed yerely to preſent their Maire vnto the kinges preſence, in anye ſuch place as he then were in Englande, that now from this tyme forthwarde they ſhoulde for lacke of the kynges preſence beynge at Weſtminſter, preſent their Mayre ſo choſen vnto the Barons of hys Excheker, and there to be ſworne and admitted as he before times was before the king.

the M
of Lon
ſworn
the Ex
quer.

Anno domini. M.CC.liii. Anno domini. M.CC.liiii.

Nycholas Batte. { Jhon Northampton. / Rycharde Pycarde. } Anno. xxxvii.

IN thys. xxxvii. yeare, the water of the Sea aboute the day of S. Paulyn, in yͤ moneth of Januarye, roſe of ſuch heyght, that it drowned manie villages and houſes, nere vnto it in diuers places of England.

How the kynge ſayled into Normãdy.

And this yere the kyng, yͤ queene, and ſyr Edward his ſonne, with Boniface archbyſhop of Caunterbury, and diuers other nobles of the Realme, ſailed into Normandie, and taried at Burdeaux a certayne of tyme. But of theyr dedes or cauſe of theyr ſaylinge thyther, is no mencion made in the Cronicle of England. Howbeit in the Frenche booke it is ſhewed, that the cauſe was to ioyne Edwarde the kinges ſonne, vnto the ſyſter of yͤ kyng of Spayne by mariage.

This yeare alſo, the water of Thamys ſprange ſo highe, that it drowned many houſes aboute the water ſide, by meane whereof much marchaundiſe was periſhed and loſte. And thys yeare the Citezins had graunted of the king, yͤ no citezens ſhould pay ſcauage or tolle for any beaſtes, by them bought, as they before times had vſed.

Anno domini. M.CC.liii. Anno domini. M.CC.liiii.

Rychard Hardell. { Robert * Belington. / Rauſe Aſchewye. } Anno. xxxviii.

IN thys. xxxviii. yeare by procurement of ſir Richard Earle of Cornewayle, for dyſpleaſure which he bare towarde the Citie, for exchaunge of certayne grounde, to the ſame belong, the kinge vnder coloure ÿ the Mayre had not done due execution vpō the bakers for lacking of their Sizes, ſeaſed the liberties of the citie. That is to be vnderſtāden, that where the Mayre and comīnaltie of the Citie, had by the kinges graunt the Citie to ferme, with diuers cuſtomes and offices, for a ſtinted and aſcerteyned ſūme of money, now the king ſet in officers at his pleaſure, the which were accōptable vnto him for al reuenues and profites that grew within the ſayde Citie. But within foure dayes folowinge the feaſt of Saynt Edmunde the Byſhop, or by the nyntene day of Nouember, the Citezens agreed with the ſaied Earle, for ſixe hundred marke. After whiche agreemente, with him concluded, they ſoone after, were reſtored vnto theyr liberties.

Thys yeare, ſyr Edwarde the kinges ſonne and heyre was maried, vnto Eleanour the kynges ſyſter of Spayn. And in ÿ Chriſtmas weeke, the kynge landed at Douer, & the Queene with hym, with many other lordes. when the kinge was cōmen vnto London, he was lodged in the Towre where he ſente for to come vnto him, the Mayre and the Shryues, wyth whome he reaſoned greuouſli for the eſcape of one called Jhon Gate. This Jhon had murdered a Priour, allied vnto the kynge. The Mayre layed the charge of this matter from hym, vnto the Shriues, for ſo much as to them belonged the kepynge of all priſons within the Citie, ſo ÿ the Mayre retourned home agayne, and the Shryues remayned there as priſoners, by ÿ ſpace of a moneth after or more. And in theyr places, and for theym were choſen Stephan Oyſtergate, and Henry walmode. But how the olde Shriues paſſed oute of the kinges daunger, I fynde not.

The Shryues of Lōdon impriſoned in ÿ Towre.

Anno domini. M.CC.liiii. Anno domini. M.CC.lv.

Rycharde Hardel. { Stephan Oyſtergate. / Henry Walmood. } Anno. xxxix.

AND in this. xxxix. yere in the feaſte of Saynte Ethelthrede, dame Elinoure wife vnto ÿ kynges ſonne ſyr Edwarde, came vnto London, where ſhe was honorably receyued of the Citizens, and the Citie richely curtayned, and garniſhed with diuers ryche clothes, where the king was preſente at her comminge. And ſhe was honorable cõueied, through the citie, to Saynt Jhons without Smithfielde, and there lodged for a while. But after ſhe was remoued vnto Sauoy.

The libertie of the Citie ceaſed & ſhortly agayne reſtored.

It was not longe after that the kinge ceaſed the liberties of the City, for certayne money whiche the Queene claymed for her right of ẏ citizens, ſo that aboute ſaint Martins tide in Nouember they gaue vnto his grace .iiii. hũdred marke, and then were reſtored to theyr ſaid liberties, and the kynges vndertreaſourer diſcharged, the whiche for the time was made cuſtos or keper of the citie. In the feaſt of Saynt Scicile, or the .xxii. day of Nomember enſuing, wer brought vnto weſtmynſter. C. and two Jewes from Lincolne, the which were alſo accuſed of the crucifiyng of a child at Lincolne in the diſpite of Chriſtes religion, whiche Jewes were after ſent vnto the Towre of London. Of the whiche in proceſſe of tyme after .xviii. were conuicte and hãged, and the other remained longe after in pryſon. In the Vygill of S. Andrew ſyr Edward the kinges ſonne came to London, from beyonde the Sea. And the kynge of Scottes, with the queene his wife, came in the ſommer ſeaſon, vnto the kynge, to hys maynor of Wodſtoke, where he diſported him a ſeaſon, and after returned into Scotland, leauing his wife with her mother till ſhe wer lighted of chylde. And vpon the day of the decollacion of saynte Jhon, the kynge, the queene, and the queene of Scottes came to Londõ, wher they were honourably receyued, & ſo conueyed vnto Weſtmynſter.

Anno domini. M.CC.lv. Anno domini. M.CC.lvi.

Richarde Hardel. { Mathew Bokerel. / Jhon Mynoure. } Anno .xl.

AND this .xl. yere, entred the land dyuers lordes of Almayne, the whiche in chriſtmas weke vpon the daye of ẏ Innocentes, made homage vnto ſyr Rycharde Earle of Cornwall and brother to the king, the whiche as thẽ ſtoode king of Almaine and of Romans. And the thurſday nexte folowinge, he departed from the kinges courte, and ſped him with his wife, and ſyr Henry his ſonne vnto the ſea ſide, & after tooke ſhipping in Jarneſay, the .xxvii. day of Apryl, and landed at Dordreth in Holande, the fyrſte day of May next enſuynge. And vpon Aſſencion day after, he was crowned kinge of Romans, in the Citie of Aquiſgranum.

Thys yere vpon the fyrſte day of Auguſt, the kyng toke his iourney towarde wales, for to ſubdue Lewelin the ſonne of Griffyth the which with his welſhmen rebelled agaynſt the king, for ſo muche as ſir Edward his ſõne to whome he hadde a litle before geuen the Earledome of Cheſter, wold haue chaunged ſome of their ſkyrtyſhe condicions. And for to bryng hys purpoſe the better aboute, he ſent for an army of Souldiours into Irelande, and taried for theyr cõming at his caſtel of Brecknocke. But the yere paſſed far on, or his people were gathered, ſo that by the aduyſe of his lordes he ſtrengthed there certaine Caſtelles, and retourned for that yere into England.

And aboute the feaſt of the Natiuity of our Lady, a concorde and a peace was concluded, betwene the Londiners and the Abbot of waltham, the which had bene in ſute many yeares before, for certaine dyſtreſſes taken by the Abbottes officers of the Londiners, when they came with theyr mercimonies vnto the fayre of Waltham, where as now it is agreed that all ſuche diſtreſſes ſhould be reſtored, and if any were periſhed or loſt for longe keping, that then the Abbot to contente and pay to the parties the value in money of ſuch diſtreſſes ſo periſhed or loſte, and that the Citizeins ſhould enioy the liberties of that fayre euer after, without paiyng of any tollage or tolle.

Anno domini. M. CC. lvi. Anno. domini. M. CC. lvii.

Rycharde Hardel. Rycharde Ewel / William Aſhewy. Anno. xli.

AND in the .xli. yere and beginninge of the ſame, was foũd in yͤ kinges wardrobe at Winſor, a byll or rolle cloſed in Greene waxe and not knowen from whence it ſhould come, in yͤ whiche Rolle was conteyned, dyuers articles agaynſt the Mayre and rulers of the Citie of London and that by them the commynaltie of the citie was greuouſly taſked and wronged: which bil was preſented at length vnto the king Wherupon he anon ſent Mancell one of his Juſtice vnto London, and ther in the feaſt of the conuerſion of Saynte Paull, by the kinges aucthorite, called at Paules Croſſe a Folkemot, beinge there preſente ſyr Rycharde de Clare, Earle of Glouceter, and diuers other of the kinges coũſayle. wher the ſayde Jhon Mancell cauſed the ſayd Rolle to be red before the comminaltie of the Citie, and after ſhewed the people the kinges pleaſure ⁊ minde was, that they ſhould be ruled with Juſtice, and yͭ the liberties of the citie ſhoulde be mainteyned in euery poyncte. And if the kynge myght knowe thoſe perſons that had wronged the cominaltie of the Citie, they ſhould be greuouſlye puniſhed to the example of other. And that doone, the ſayde Jhon Mancell charged the Mayre, that euerye Alderman in his ward ſhould vpon the morow folowing aſſemble his wardmote, and that all thoſe wardemotes ſhould aſſemble in one place, and thoſe of themſelues without any counſell or aduiſe of anie of their aldermen .xxxvi. perſons, ⁊ them to preſent before the lordes ⁊ him, at the ſame houre of the next day in the Byſhops Palayes at Paules. Then vpon the morow all thinge was doone accordinge to his commaundement.

Warde mote.

And whē the ſaied .xxxvi. perſons were preſented before the ſayde Jhon Mancel, Henry Baa, iuſtice and other, the ſaid Jhon ſaid vnto them, that they vpō theyr othe ſhould certifie all ſuch perſons as they knew gilty in that artycles before vnto the communaltie ſhewed. Wherunto the ſaid .xxxvi. citizins anſwered, that it was contrary theyr liberties to be ſworne ſo manye, for anye matter of treſpaſſe, betwene the kynge and any of the Citizins, wherfore they required a ſparing. With which anſwer, the ſayde Jhon Mancell beynge diſcontented, warned thē to appeare before the kinges coūſayle at Guildehall vpon the morowe folowynge, where they kept theyr day. And thither came the ſayd Juſtices Jhon Mancel, and Henry Baa, ſyr Henry Wengham Chauncellour of Englande, Philip Louel, vndertreaſorer, and diuers other of the kinges counſell.

Then the ſayde Jhon Mancell exhorted the ſayde perſons to bee ſworne by many meanes, as he the other day had doone: but all was in vayne, for thei excuſed thē alway, that it was cōtrary their othe and libertie of theyr Citie. Wherfore the kynges counſell departed from the Hal, in party diſcontented, and ſhewed vnto the kynge the demeanour of the ſayd Citizeins.

Howe the Maior wͭ the Aldermen, went to meete wͭ the kinge.

Upon the euen of the Puryfycaciō of our Lady, the Mayre beyng warned that the king ſhould come to Weſtminſter, he with the more parte of the Aldermen rode vnto knightbridge, & houed there to ſalute the kyng, and to knowe his further pleaſure. But when the kyng came neare that place & heard of theyr beyng there, he ſent vnto them a ſquyre of houſholde & charged them that they ſhould not preſume to come in hys ſight: With which meſſage they beyng greatly diſcomforted, retourned home to the Citie. Afterwarde in the octaues of the purificacion of our Lady, returned frō the courte Michaell Tony, and Adam Baſyng, the which before were ſente by the Mayre to ſuch freendes as they had in the courte, to knowe the cauſe of the kynges high dyſpleaſure. The whiche broughte worde, that the kynge was well minded vnto yͤ Citie, but he was in full purpoſe to haue ſuche perſons chaſtyſed, that had oppreſſed the cominaltie of the ſame. Upon the morow folowinge, came vnto the Guildehall, Jhon Mancell with other of the kinges counſel, the whiche to the people there aſſembled, ſhewed many fayre and pleaſaunt wordes. Amonge the whiche he declared that the kynges minde and wil was, to correct all ſuch perſons, as had oppreſſed the cominalty of them his dereſt beloued Citie: and aſked of the cōmons whither they would bee agreable vnto the ſame. The whiche incontinently, many ſuche as knew lytle, what the matter mēt cried without diſcrecion, ye, ye, ye nothing regarding the lyberty of the Citie. And after that graūt thus hadde of the commons, the ſayde Jhon Mancell dyſcharged the Mayre, ſhriues, and chamberlaine of theyr offices, and deliuered the cuſtody thereof, vnto the cōſtable of yͤ towre, & put in yͤ rome of the ſhriues Michael Tony and

Jhon Andrſan. And ouer that, al rolles and tolles, and tallages before made, were deliuered vnto the ſayd Jhon Mancell, the whiche he there ſealed and delyuered them vnto the Chamberlayne. When the commons had beholden all this beſineſſe, they retourned vnto their houſes al confuſed.

This matter thus ordered, the ſayd Jhon Mancell with diuers of the kinges counſaile, kept their courtes dayly (the ſonday except) tyll the fyrſt Sonday of Lent, the which that yere was the .xxv. day of February, callynge before him twelue wardes, of the Citie. Of the which twelue wardes, of eueriche of them was taken thre mē, ſo that of thoſe .xii. wardes .xxxvi men were impanelled and ſworn for to enquyre of the foreſayd articles, and what perſons of the Citie had offended in them. Thys courte this kepte and holden at Guyldhall, no man was called to anſwere, nor no queſtion put vnto any perſon by the ſayd enqueſt or by any other. Upon the ſayde ſonday of Lent, the Mayre, aldermen, and ſhriues, with the ſayde enqueſt, and foure men of euery warde were charged to appere at weſtminſter before the kynge, at which apperaunce they were coūtermaunded tyll vpon the nexte morow. At which ſeaſon they cōmynge into the kinges excheker, founde ſittinge there the Earles of Glouceter, & of Warwik, Jhon Mancell, Henry Baa iuſtices, the Conſtable of the Towre, then cuſtos of the Citie, and diuers other of the kinges counſayle. Then was called by name Rafe Hardel that yere Mayre, Nicholas Bat, Nicholas fyz Joeſne, Mathew Bokerell, Jhon Toleſham, and Jhon le Mynour Aldermen. Thē ſayd Jhon Mancel, that the king by his lawes and inquiſicion of the Citizins of the Citie, hadde founden them culpable, that thei had wronged and hurte the cominaltie of his Citie by dyuers meanes, as by the ſayd inquiſicions appered, and forthwith cauſed it to be red before them. And when the more parte therof was red, he ſayd vnto them: thus maie you ſe that the comminaltie of the ſayde citie hath bene by you greuouſly oppreſſed, & by your meanes and counſayle the common weale of the ſame deſtroied, as by altering of the Tolles, and other good auncient cuſtomes, turning theym to your ſynguler aduauntage and lucre. Al which matters the ſayd Rafe and his companye denied, and that the commons was not by any ſuche meanes by them nor none of them greeued or hurte, and that they offered to bee iuſtified and iudged by the lawe and cuſtomes of the Citie.

Oow the
yre and
ermen,
ertayne
er ap-
red be-
the
gs coū-
le.

Then Henry Baa Juſtice, aſked of them whither they wold holde the aduenture of the enquery that they hadde hearde read before, or elles ſtande vpon the ſayinge of the other wardes, that hadde not yet bene ſworne, but they kepte theym to theyr fyrſte aunſwere. Then Jhon Mancell frayned of the Mayre what was theyr lawe and cuſtome. The Maior aunſwered, and ſayd, that for treſpaſſe of a Cityzin doone agaynſt the king, he ſhould defende him by .xii. of the ſayde Cytizyns, and for murder, or ſleaynge of a

The aunſwer of the Mayre, for the priuileges of a cityzyn.

man by.xxx.citizins, and for treſpace agaynſt a ſtraunger by the othe of.vi.and him ſelfe. Then after many reaſons made by yͤ ſaied Jhon Mancell, and alſo by the Mayre and Aldermen, daye was geuen to them to appere vpon the morow before the kinge and hys counſayle.

Vpon the daye folowynge, the kynge with manie of his Lordes ſitting in the ſayde exchequer, the foreſayd inquiſicion was red. And that done the Mayre and Aldermen were called by name, & two Aldermen more, whyche before were not called, that is to ſay Arnolde Thedmare, & Henry Walmod. When Rafe Hardell hadde hearde the king ſpeake in the matter, he tooke ſuche feare that he & Nicholas Batte without farther anſwere, put them in the kynges grace, ſaued to theym theyr liberties and fraunchiſes of the Citie. But the other ſixe, beſought the kynge of his right wiſenes, that they might then be deemed after the lawes and cuſtomes of the citie. Thẽ was layd to theyr charge that ouer many wronges by them doone to the kinge and to the cominalty of the Citie: they had altered the kinges beme, & ordered it to the aduauntage of themſelues and riche men of the Citie. Wherevnto the parties aunſwered, and ſayd: that the alteracion of the beame was not doone by them onely, but by the aduice and conſent of fiue hundred of the beſt of the Citie. For where before tyme the weyer vſed to leane hys draught towarde yͤ marchaundiſe ſo that the byer had by that mean x.or.xii.pounde in a draughte to his aduauntage, and the ſeller ſo much diſaduauntage, now for indifferencie and egalitie of bothe perſons or marchauntes, was ordayned that the beame ſhoulde ſtande vpryght, the cleffe thereof enclynyng to neyther partie as it dothe in weying of golde and ſyluer, and the bier to haue allowed of the ſeller for all thinges, foure pounde in euery draught.

The ſubmiſſion of the Mayre.

The alteracion of yͤ kinges beame.

After theſe reaſons and the other by them made, the kyng cõmaunded that vpon the morning folowinge a folkemoot ſhoulde be called at Paules Croſſe, & ſo that courte was diſſoluid, & the mayre and the other, retourned to London. Vpon the morow the folkemoot beyng at Paules croſſe aſſẽbled, theſe ſix Aldermen hearing the murmuracion of the commen people, and knowinge that the Aldermen, nor the worſhipfull of the Citie, ſhould haue lytle or no ſayinge in this matter, fearynge theyr cauſe, yode into a Chãnons houſe of Poules, where at that time the ſayd Jhon Mancell and other ſent from the kinge, taried the aſſemblinge of the people, and ſhewed vnto them that they entended not anye lenger to pleade with the king, but were contẽted to put theym fully in the kynges grace and mercy, ſauynge alway to them & all other citizins theyr libertie and fraunchyſe of the Citie. After which agreemente, the ſayd Jhon Mancel with yͤ other came vnto the courte of Folkemoot, wher vnto the people, was rehearſed a fayre and a pleaſaunt tale, promiſing to them theyr lyberties ſhould be wholy and inuyolately preſerued by the kynge with many other thinges, to the great comforte of the cōmon people. And laſtly was aſked of them whether the law & cuſtome were ſuch as aboue is rehearſed or no. Wherunto like vndiſcret and vnlearned people, they aunſwered & cried rabbiſhly, nay, nay, nay, not withſtandinge that the ſayd lawe & cuſtome, had before times bene vſed oute of mynde. But to this was nother Maior nor Aldermen nor other of the great of the City that might impugne or make anie reaſon, for the vpholdinge of theyr aũcient lawes or cuſtomes.

he mayre
d Alder-
en again
arged to
peare at.
ſtmin-
r.

The ſentence agaynſt the Mayre and Aldermen

And no wonder thoughe the king were thus heady or greuous to the Citie, for by ſuch euyl diſpoſed and malicious people as he had aboute him, the lande was euyll ruled, and muche miſchiefe was vſed: Wherof enſued muche ſorowe after, as ye ſhall heare in the ſequele of yͤ ſtory. Then Jhon Mancel called the Maior & Aldermen before him, & charged theym to be at Weſtminſter the morowe folowinge, to geue attendaunce vpon the kinges grace. Upon the morowe, the Mayre and Aldermen, tariynge the kynges commynge, in the great Hal at Weſtminſter, laſtely the Kynge came into Saynt Stephans Chapel. Where a ſeaſon he helde a counſayle wyth his Lordes, and after yode into the cheker chamber, and there ſatte hym downe, and hys Lordes aboute him. Anon after the Mayre & Aldermen were called into the ſayd chamber, & ſoone there after, called by name, and commaunded to ſtande nere to the barre. Then Henry Baa iuſtyce ſayd vnto the Maior and the .vii. Aldermen, that for ſo much as by fourme of the kinges lawes, they were founde culpable in certayne articles touchynge tranſgreſſion againſt the king, therfore yͤ courte awarded that they ſhoulde make fyne and raunſome, after the diſcrecion of the ſayd courte: But for they had put theim in the kinges grace and mercy, the kinge hath commaunded the fyne to be putte in reſpit, that ye be not payned ſo greuouſly as ye haue deſerued. After which iudgement geuen, they kneeled downe, & then the Mayre with wepyng teares, thanked the kinge of hys bounty and goodneſſe, beſought hym to be good & gracyous Lord vnto the citie, and vnto theym as his faythfull ſubiectes. Wherunto the kinge made none aunſwere, but roſe ſtreight vp, and ſo yode his way leauinge them there. Anon as the Kynge was departed, they were all areſted and kepte there, tyll they had founde ſuretie, and eueryche Alderman of theym dyſcharged of hys warde and office, that they had wythin the Citie. But ſhortlie after they putte in ſuertyes, and ſo retourned heauely to London. And ſhortly after was William fyz Richarde, by the kynges commaundement made Maior, and Thomas fyz Thomas, and Wyllyam Grappyſgate ſhryues. After thys, day by day, the chamberlayne was called to accompte before the ſayde Jhon Mancell, of all ſuche tolles as were gathered in the tyme of the mayraltie of Jhon Tolyſham, and of Rafe Hardel, being preſent to heare the ſayed accompte, diuers of the cominaltie of the citie, but none of yͤ heades: By the whiche accompte no defaute might be arected vnto any of the forenamed perſons conuicte afore the kinge. By reaſon wherof, diuers of them were admitted to the kinges fauour ſhortly after, and reſtored to theyr offices againe: but not without paiyng of money, wherof the certaintie is not knowen. And in thys yere wheat was ſo ſcante that it was ſolde at London for. xxiiii.ſ a quarter, and ſcanter ſhould haue bene, if plenty had not come oute of Almayne, for in Fraunce and Normandy, it fayled in likewyſe. By meane of this derth and ſcarſitie, muche poore people died for hunger, and many of dyuers coũtryes of Englande came vnto the Citie, and neare thereaboute, for comforte of vittayle: for it then was better chepe in London, thẽ in many ſhyres of England there aboute. And ſoone after was the forenamed Jhon Mancel, made knight ⁊ chiefe iuſtice of Englãd.

A greate dearth.

IN this. xli. yeare alſo, the kynge aboute the feaſte of Saynt Barnabe in the moneth of June, kepte his high courte of parliamẽt at hys towne of Oxenforde. This of ſome wryters is named *Inſane parliamentum*, that is to meane the wood or mad Parliament. For at this counſell were made, many actes againſt yͤ kinges prerogatiue and pleaſure, for the reformacion of the ſtate of the lande, whiche after proued to the confuſion ⁊ hurte of the land, and death and deſtruction of manie noble men: ſo that by occaſion thereof began the famous ſtryfe called at thys daye, the Barons warre. Wherof enſued much miſchiefe, as hereafter ſhalbe ſhewed and declared more at large.

A parliament holdẽ at Oxẽford called the mad parliament.

Then as aboue is ſayde, to auoyde the enormities, and to refourme the euyll rule then vſed in the lãde, by ſuch perſons as daylie were about the king, many ⁊ diuers ordinaũces wer made, wherof yͤ tenoure is ſet out in the ende of this booke: Wherunto the king ſomedeale agaynſt hys will, with ſyr Edwarde his ſonne and other agreed, and for theſe actes ſhould beholdẽ ferme and ſtable. At this parlyament was choſen. xii. Perys, whiche were named Douze Perys, to whome authorytie was geuen by ſtrength of this parlyament, to correcte al ſuch as offended in breaking of theſe ordinaũces and other, by the ſayd twelue Perys, after to be deuiſed and ordered, touching and concernynge the ſame matter and purpoſe. Of whiche twelue Peris, the names enſue. Fyrſte the archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury, the Byſhop Worceter, ſyr Roger Bygot, then Erle of Norffolke, and marſhall of England, ſyr Simon de Mountford erle of Leiceter, ſir Richard Clare Earle of Gloucetter, ſyr Humfrey Bothum Earle of Herforde, of Warwike, and of Arundell, ſyr Jhon Mancell, chiefe Juſtice of England, ſyr Roger Mortymer, ſyr Hugh Bygrame, ſyr Peter de Seuoy, ſyr James Audeley, and ſyr Peter de Moultforde. And for the kinges brother vpon the mothers ſyde, that is to ſay ſyr Eym Earle of wyncheſter, ſyr william de Valaunce, ſir Godfrey de Lyndeſey, and ſyr Guy de Lyndeſey.

Le Dou
Perys.

The
mes of
xii. Per

would

woulde not aſſent vnto the foreſayde ordinaunces, thei withdrew theym towarde the ſea ſide wyth ſuch ſtuffe as they had, and would haue departed the lande yf they might then haue hadde ſhypping, for lacke whereof they were faine to retourne, and ſo rode to Wyncheſter. But it was not longe after, that they were lycenſed to departe the lande, with a certayne companie, and a certayne ſumme of money to pay for their coſtes, & their day ſet by Bartilmewtide to auoyde vpon payne of impriſonment, whiche daye by theym was kepte.

It was not long after the finiſhing of this parliament, but that ſtrife and variaunce began to kindle betwene the king & the earles of Leyceter and of Glouceter, by meane of ſuch officers as the ſaid earles hadde remoued, and putte other in their rowmes. Amonge the whiche Jhon Mancell was diſcharged of his office. And ſyr Hugh Bygot then admitted for hym. And for the foreſayd Pyers heard of the murmure in yͤ court, fearynge that the kynge ſhoulde be aduertiſed ſhortlye to alter frõ hys promyſe, therefore they entendinge to make their party the ſtronger, vppon the morowe folowynge Mary Magdaleyns day, the kinge beynge at Weſtminſter, the earle Marſhall, the earle of Leyceter, with diuers other, came vnto the Guyldehalle of London, where the Mayre, Aldermen, and Comminaltie of the cytye were aſſembled, where the ſayd Lordes ſhewed an inſtrumẽt or wrytyng, at the whiche hanged manye labellys with ſeales, as the kynges ſeale, ſir Edward his ſonnes ſeale, with many other of yͤ nobles of yͤ lande, the which was the content of the articles, which were ordeyned and made at Oxenforde, willynge the Mayre and Aldermen (conſideryng the ſayd actes were made vnto the honour of God, fidelitie vnto the kynge, and profit of the realme) that they would alſo in vpholdinge of the ſame, ſette their common ſeale of the cytye. After whiche requeſt thus to the mayre and citezins and made, after aduiſe and counſayle among theym ſelues taken, they deſyred a ſparinge of the Lordes, tyll they might ſpeake with the king, and know his pleaſure in that behalfe. But finallye no ſparinge at that time might bee graunted; ſo that in the ende, by the labour that the Lordes made, with helpe of ſuche ſolicitours as they hadde within the citie, the common ſeale was putte to, and the mayre and dyuers of the citie ſworne to mayntayne the ſame, theyr allegiaunce ſaued to the kyng, with preſeruation of the liberties and fraunchiſes, and ſo departed.

Then day by day after the ſaid douze Piers aſſembled at the new Temple, where they kepte theyr counſailes and courtes for the reformacion of the olde griefes, and remoued from the kynge dyuers of his menyall of houſholde, and ſet in their places and offices, ſuch as liked them.

And vpon the ninth day of Auguſt, proclamacion was made in diuers accuſtomed places of the ſaide citie, that none of the kinges takers ſhoulde take anye thynge within the citie, without the wyll of the owner, excepte two tunne of wyne, whiche the kynge accuſtomablye hadde of euerye ſhyppe commynge from Burdeaux, payinge but fortie ſhyllynges for a tunne. By meane of whiche proclamation nothinge was taken by the kynges officers, but it were ſtreyght payed for within the Citye, and libertye of the ſame, whiche vſaũce continued but a while.

Anno domini. M.CC.lvii. Anno domini. M.CC.lviii.

Draper.
Richarde Hardell. { Thomas fyz Richarde.
Robert*Cateylon. } Anno.xlii.

Catcl

IN this.xlii.yere, yͤ king helde one parlyament at Weſtminſter, and another (or elles proreged the ſame) to Wincheſter. And in thys yere, ſir Hughe Bygotte Iuſtice with Roger Turkeley and other kept his court at S. Sauiours, and helde there plees called Itinerij. The which is to meane, the traueyling or the way plees. For ye ſhall vnderſtand, that at thoſe dayes thei were kept in diuers places of Englande, whiche nowe been holden at Weſtminſter, and Iudges ordeyned to kepe a circuite, as nowe they kepe the ſyzyns in time of vacation. At this ſayde courte theſe Iudges puniſhed ſoore Bayliffes and other officers, that before thẽ were conuict for diuers treſpaſſes and ſpeciallye for takinge of merceamẽtes otherwiſe then the law theim commaunded. For the whiche the ſayde chiefe Iuſtice priſoned theym, and after ſeaſed theim at greuous fynes. Alſo he ſomoned the citezins of Lõdon to come vnto the ſayde courte, for tolles that they hadde taken vppon the further ſyde of the water. But it was anſwered that that the tolles that they there tooke were taken lawfullye, as they were readye to proue in places and court conuenient to the ſame, which was within the precinct of their libertie. But not withſtandinge that anſwere, the ſaid ſir Hughe charged vpon queſt.xii. knightes of Surey to enquire of that matter & other, the whiche acquited the ſaid Citezins, and ſhewed that the ſaid tolle belonged to theim of right.

In proceſſe of time after the ſaid ſir Hughe with other came vnto Guyldhal, and kept his court and plees there, withoute all order of lawe, and contrarye to the liberties of the citie, and there puniſhed the bakers for lacke of ſyze by the Tumberell, where before tymes thei were puniſhed by the pyllory, and ordered many thinges at his will, more then by any good order of lawe.

This yere vppon Candelmaſſe euen came vnto London from beyond the ſea, Richarde king of Almaine and earle of Cornewayle, with his wife and children, which had been there and taken poſſeſſiõ of that kingdome as before is ſhewed. Againſt whoſe comming the citie of London was richely hanged with clothes of ſilke and aras, and ioyouſlye he was receyued of the citezins.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lviii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lix.

Peperer.
Jhon Gyſours. { Jhon Adrian.
Robert Cornehill. } Anno.xliii.

IN this.xliii.yere, the frydaye folowinge the feaſt of Simond & Jude, in the parliament holden at Weſtminſter were reade in preſence of all the lordes and cominaltie, at ſondrie times all the actes and ordinaunces before made in the parliament holden at Oxenford, with certain other articles by the foreſayd twelue pieres thereunto added. After reading of whiche articles, there being reueſted the archbiſhoppe of Caunterbury with other to the number of.ix.biſhops, nge. beſide abbottes and other denoũced all them accurſed that attempted in word or dede to breake the ſayde ſtatutes or anye of them.

Ju this Parliament alſo was graunted to the kyng a taſke called the Scutage, that is to mean, he cal utage xl.S. of euerye knightes fee thorough England, the which extended to a greate ſumme of money. For after diuers writers, there be in England in poſſeſſion of the ſpiritualtie, and of the temporaltie, or at thoſe dayes were, ouer and beyonde.xl.M. knightes fees. Which after that rate ſhoulde extende vnto.vi.ſcore.M.poũd and more. And if it ſhould be gathered of the temporall men onelye, then it ſhoulde not amount ouer the ſumme of thre ſcore and foure thouſande pounde. The kyng vpon the daye of Saynct Leonard, or the ſyxte daye of Nouember came vnto Paules, where by hys commaundement, was aſſembled the Courte of Folkmoote, where the kynge accordynge vnto the former ordinaunces made, aſked licence of the Comminaltie of the citie for to paſſe the ſea, and promyſed there, in the preſence of a greate multitude of people, that he woulde bee good and gracious Lorde vnto the Cytye, by the mouthe of Syr Hughe Bygotte his chiefe Juſtice, and to mayntaine their liberties vnhurte. For the which the people for ioy made an exceding ſhowte.

Upon the eyghte daye of Nouember, the kynge rode through the Cyty to ward the ſea ſide. And vpon the daye of Saynct Bryce, or the thyrtene daye of Nouember, he tooke hys Shyppe, and ſo ſayled vnto Burdeaux. Where when he hadde taryed a ſeaſon, he rode vnto the Frenche kynge, then beinge holye Lewes, or the tenth Lewes, vnto Paris. Of whome he was honorablye receyued, and lodged him in hys owne Paleys, by the ſpace of an whole Weeke, makynge to hym greate feaſte, and gyuynge to hym and hys, ryche and many gyftes. And from thence kynge Henrye roode vnto Sayncte Denys, where of the Abbotte and Couente he was receyued with proceſſion, and taryed there by yͤ ſpace of a moneth. In which ſeaſon a marryage was concluded betwene Jhon, Duke of Brytayne and one of hys doughters. And at his departinge he gaue to the abbot a cuppe of gold, and a Baſyn with an Ewer of ſiluer. And for his moore conſolation kynge Lewes aſſigned vnto hym a certayne lordes, and other noble menne of Fraunce, to geue attendaunce vppon him, and to conuey hym, and to ſhewe him a parte of Fraunce, with all diſport and huntynge and haukyng, and other many pleaſures of the coũtrey.

In whiche paſſetyme the French kynge aſſembled hys parliament at Parys, where he ſhewed vnto his Lordes that hys conſcience grudged with the witholdyng of all ſuche landes as Philippe the ſeconde wanne from kyng Jhon in Normandye, vpon the whiche he deſyred their faithfull and fruictfull counſayle. Where after manye reaſons and argumentes made, it was concluded for a fynall concorde to bee had betwene kynge Henrye and hym, that yf kyng Henrye with the agrement of hys Lordes woulde reſygne into the Frenche kynges handes, all ſuch tytle and righte, as he had in the whole duchie of Normandye, of Angeou, Poyteau, and Mayne, for hym and for his heyres for euer, that then the French kynge of hys greate bountye and grace, ſhoulde geue vnto the kyng of Englande: and to heyres kynges, the lordſhyppe of Guyan, Angeou, and Mayne, and by ryghtfull tytle called euer after the duke of Guyan, and ouer that he ſhoulde bee admitted for a Peere of Frunce: To all whiche condicions, as affirmeth and wytneſſeth the Frenche Chronicle, kyng Henrye at hys retourne from hys diſporte was agreable, and with conſente of hys Bronye, and in their preſence, with alſo the Barony of Fraunce, did hys homage vnto the ſayde Lewes for the duchie of Guyan, and after made his othe accordinge to the ſame. And after great giftes receyued on eyther ſide, king Henry returned vnto Burdeaux.

Of thys peace and concorde, ſpeaketh a Chroniculer named Guydo or Guy, and ſayeth: that kynge Henry ſailed into Fraunce and aſked reſtitution of the forenamed Frenche kynge, of ſuche landes, as his ayle Philippe the ſeconde hadde wyth extorte power taken from kynge Jhon hys father. But for he fande the Frenche kynge ſtraung in his anſwere, and alſo hadde lytle truſt in his Lordes for to haue their ayde, he fell to agremente wyth the Frenche kynge and ſolde hym hys tytle that he hadde in Normandye, Gaſcoyne, and Guyan, the whiche extended vnto the yearely value of twenty thouſand pound: takynge for the ſame tytle, three hundred thouſand pound of ſmall Turon money, whereof a pounde is in value after ſterlyng money, but two ſhyllynges and three pence, or there aboute, ſo that he ſhoulde after that rate haue for hys ſayde tytle, after the value of ſterlynge money foure and thirty thouſande, ſeuen hundred and fyftie pounde.

In the ſeaſon and tyme that kynge Henrye was thus occupyed in Fraunce, diſſencion fell in Englande betwene ſyr Edwarde the kynges ſonne, and ſir Rychard

A di
betw
Edw
king
and
chard
of Gl
ter.

Earle of Glouceter. For appeaſynge whereof, a parlyament, whyche is to meane, a counſayle of his Lordes was called at Weſtminſter, whiche contynued by the ſpace of three weekes and moore. To the whiche counſayle the Lordes came wyth great companyes, and ſpeciallye the ſayde ſyr Edwarde, and the Earle of Glouceter, the whiche entended to haue lodged within the Citye. Wherefore the Mayre yode vnto the Byſhoppe of Worceter, and ſir Hughe Bygotte, and ſir Philippe Baſſet, to whome the kyng wyth the Archebyſhop of Caunterbury had taken the rule of the lande in hys abſence, the whiche wente vnto the kynge of Almayne, to haue his aduiſe in that matter.

Where it was concluded, that nother the ſayde Edwarde, nor the Earle, ſhoulde come wythin the Cytye then there to bee lodged, nor none that helde vppon eyther of that partyes. And further it was prouided, that all ſuche as within the Cytye, as were of the age of fyftene yeares and aboue, ſhoulde bee in harneſſe to watche and keepe the Cytye both daye and nyghte, and that the gates ſhoulde bee ſhutte vppon the daye, and certayne menne in harneſſe to keepe euery gate of the citye. And ſoone after for the ſauegarde of the Citie, and ſure keepynge of the peace wythin the ſame, the king of Romayns, with the ſayde Syr Hughe, and Syr Phylyppe, came into the city, and there were lodged, wyth theyr companyes, and ſuche other as they woulde aſſygne to ſtrength the citie if neede required.

Then aboute the feaſt of S. Marke, the kynge came to London from beyonde the Sea, and was lodged at the Byſhoppe of Londons Paleys. After whoſe commynge, by hys aſſygnement, the Earle of Glouceter was lodged within the Citye, and ſyr Edwarde hys ſonne was lodged in his own Palays at Weſtmynſter. And ſoone after, the kynge commaunded hym to bee lodged at Saynct Jhons, and all the other Lordes were lodged in other places without the city. And the king of the Romaines remoued againe to Weſtminſter.

In whiche tyme a direction was taken betwene the ſayd partyes, and a newe aſſemble and Parlyamēt aſſigned to be kept at weſtmynſter in the Quindena of Sayncte John Baptyſt. And for that then all thynges myght bee ſette in an order, it was proroged vnto the feaſte of Sayncte Edwarde, at the whyche ſeaſon, all thynge was putte at reſte for a whyle.

In thys yeare alſo, fell that happe of the Jewe of Tewkyſburye, whyche fell into a gonge vppon the Saterdaye, and woulde not for reuerence of hys Sabboth daye bee plucked out, whereof hearynge the Earle of Glouceter, that the Jewe dyd ſo greate reuerence to hys Sabboth daye, thoughte he woulde dooe as much to hys holye daye, whiche was vppon Sondaye, and ſo kepte him there till Monday, at whyche ſeaſon, he was founden dead.

Li.7.ca.36

Anno domini.M.CC.lix. Anno domini.M.CC.lx.

Adam Browning.
William fiz Richarde. Anno.xliiii.
Richarde Couentre.

Li.7.ca.37.

IN this foure and fourtie yere, ſoone after the feaſt of Simonde and Iude, the king kepte a royall feaſt at Weſtminſter, where he made diuers knyghtes.

Among the which Ihon Duke of Britayne, whiche hadde marryed one the kynges doughters, was there made knyght. And ſoone after was ſyr Hugh Spencer made chiefe Iuſtice.

A folkmot.

After the feaſt of Candelmas, the kynge commaunded a folke mote to be called at Paules croſſe, where he in proper perſon with the kyng of Almayne, the Archebyſhop of Caunterburye, and manye other nobles came. Where the king cōmaunded vnto the maire, that euerye ſtryplyng of the age of twelue yeares and aboue, ſhoulde before hys Alderman bee ſworne the day folowynge, to be trewe to the kinge and his heyres kinges of England, and that the gates of the citie were kepte with armed men, as before by the kinge of the Romans was deuiſed. A fray. This yere alſo at a fayre kepte at Northampton, variaunce fell betwene the Londoners and men of the towne, ſo that betwene the citezins and theym continued longe ſuite and plee, for a man of Northampton that then was ſlaine, to the great vexation and trouble of both parties. But in the ende the citie had the better.

This yeare alſo aboute Eaſter, the Barons of the lande, with the conſent of the piers, diſcharged ſir Hugh Spencer, and admitted for him ſyr Philip Baſſet in his rome of chiefe Iuſtice, vnwitninge the kinge. For whiche cauſe, another grudge and diſpleaſure began of newe to kyndle betwene the kinge and hys lordes, whiche encreaſed moore and moore. But by polycie of the king of Almayne, and ſome prelates of the lande, it was ſet in quiet for a while, hardelye to the ende of that yere.

Anno domini.M.CC.lx. Anno domini.M.CC.lxi.

Ihon Northampton.
William fiz Richarde. Anno.xlv.
Richarde Pycarde.

IN this.xlv. yere, ſhortly after Alhalowin dai, the barons admitted & made ſhriues of diuers ſhyres of Englande, & diſcharged ſuch as the king before had admitted, and named theim Gardyns & kepers of the counties and ſhyres. And ouer that the Barons would not ſuffer the Iuſtice that the king hadde admitted, to keepe the plees & lawes called Itinerarii, but ſuche as were of theyr admiſſion. Wherewith the kynge was greuouſly diſcontented, in ſo much that after that ſeaſon, he laboured that he myghte dyſanull the former ordinaunce and ſtatutes, and to cauſe them to be broken, in ſo muche, that vpon the ſeconde ſonday of lent folowinge, the king commaunded to be red at Paules croſſe, a Bul of the graunt of Urban the thyrde of that name, as a confyrmacion of another Bul before purchaſed, of his predeceſſour Alexander the thyrde, for to aſſoyle the kinge and al other, that before had ſworne to the mayntenaunce of the foreſayde artycles, made at Oxenforde, & after cauſed the abſolucion to bee ſhewed through the Realme of England Walis, & Irelande, geuing ſtreite charge to all his ſubiectes, that none to be ſo hardy to withſtande nor diſobey the ſaied abſolucion. And yf any were founden diſobedient to hys commaundemente, that he were ſtreyte put in priſon, and not to be raunſomed nor deliuered, till the kynges pleaſure were further knowen.

Aboute the feaſt of Saynt Albon, in the moneth of June, the kinge of Almayne tooke ſhipping and ſayled into Almayne. And the king at a folkemoot holden vpon the ſonday after ſaint Peters day in the moneth of July, had licence to ſayle into Fraunce. And the morowe after, he departed from London toward the ſea ſide, with the Queene and other lordes, his two ſonnes ſir Edwarde and ſyr Edmunde beynge at that ſeaſon in Guian. When the kynge had ben a ſeaſon in Fraunce, he returned vnto Burdeaux, where he fell ſicke, by occaſion whereof he taried in thoſe parties, tyll Saynte Nycholas tyde next folowing.

The kyng of Almain departed ito almain

How the kyng was licenced to ſayle into Fraunce.

The death of Richard Earle of Glouceter

And in this yeare died Richarde Clare Earle of Glouceter, and ſyr Gilberte de Clare, his ſonne was Earle after him. To whome the father gaue great charge that he ſhoulde vpholde the forenamed ordinaunces.

Anno dñi. M.CC.lxi.

Anno dñi. M.CC.lxii.

Thomus fyz Thomas. { Philip Walbroke.
Richarde Tayloure. } Anno. xlvj.

AND in thys. xlvi. yere, in the feaſt of Saynt Martyne, or yͤ. xi. daye of Nouember: a Jew fell at variaunce with a Chriſten man in Colchurche in the warde of Chepe, and wounded the Chriſtien man within the ſame Church. wherefore the people of the Citie in a fury, purſued the ſayde Jewe to his houſe, and there ſlew him, and after fel vpon the other Jewes, and robbed and ſlew many of them.

A greate froſte.

And on the euen of Saynt Thomas the Apoſtle folowinge, the kinge landed in England at Douer & came to London the wenſeday before. xii. day. This yere the froſt began aboute Saynct Nycholas daye, and ſo continued by the ſpace of a moneth and more ſo feruently, that the Thamis was ouer froſen, that men paſſed ouer on horſebacke. And in the ſame winter the kynges lytle Halle at Weſtminſter, wyth many other houſes adioyning to yͤ ſame were peryſhed with fyre, by the neglygence of a ſeruaunt of the kinges.

A variaũce betwene ẏ londiners and the cõſtable of ẏ Towꝛe.

In this yere alſo vnkindnes began to grow betwene the Londiners & the Conſtable of the towꝛe foꝛ that he contrary to the liberty of the Citie, tooke certayne ſhippes paſſinge by the Towꝛe, with wheate and other vitayle, & tooke it vnto the ſayde Towꝛe, making the pꝛice at his pleaſure. Wherefoꝛe great harme had enſued, had not ben the policie of wiſe men: Which was ſhewed vnto the kinges counſayle, by whoſe direction the matter was committed vnto ſir Philip Baſſet then chiefe iuſtice and other, to ſet an oꝛder and rule betwene the ſayd parties.

Then befoꝛe him were bꝛought al euidences and pꝛiuileges, foꝛ the aduauntage of bothe partyes, where fynally after longe plea, & argument, it was fyꝛmely demed and adiudged, that if the conſtable oꝛ any other officer of ẏ towꝛe wolde at ani time take any wheat oꝛ other vitayle to the vſe of the kinge oꝛ of the Towꝛe, that he ſhould come vnto the market holden within the Citie, and there to haue it.ii.d. in a quarter within the Mayꝛes pꝛice, and other vytayle after the ſame rate: And yf he oꝛ any of his officers would do contrary to that oꝛdinaunce, that then the ſhꝛiues ſhould make repoꝛte vnto the kynges counſayle and to withſtand him in all that thei might, ſo that ẏ kinges peace were kepte. In this yere alſo manie murmures and grudges were tolde in many places of the lande, ſuppoſynge that warre ſhoulde in ſhoꝛt pꝛoceſſe haue enſued betwen the kinge and his loꝛdes, foꝛ the Bull of diſpenſacion befoꝛe in that other yere ſhewed. But by helpe and mediacion of good wiſe men theſe murmours & grudges were ſo apeaſed, that the kinge agreed agayne to the mayntenaunce of the ſayde ſtatutes, and ſente hys wꝛittes, wherin the ſayd articles were compꝛiſed, into all ſhyꝛes of Englande, geuinge ſtreight commaũdement to al men to obſerue and kepe the ſame, and ſuch other as were to them ioyned by the diſcreſion of the Erle Marchall, the Earle of Leiceter, ſyꝛ Philip Baſſet, ſyꝛ Hugh Bigot, and other, the which ſhoꝛtly after was reuoked and denied. Wherupon the archebiſhop of Caunterbury, fearynge that after mighte enſue, made him an errande to Rome, and ſo by licence of the kinge and of the loꝛdes, departed the lande, and ſo kept him out tyll the trouble was appeaſed and ſeaſed.

A murmer of warre.

A Fo moot.

Than vpon the midlent Sonday the Mayꝛe and the commons beyng pꝛeſente, at a Folkemoot holden at Paules Croſſe befoꝛe ſyꝛ Philippe Baſſet and other of the kynges coũſayle, the Mayꝛe was ſwoꝛne to be trewe to the kynge, & to his heyꝛes kinges. And vpon the moꝛow at Guyldehal, euerye Alderman in pꝛeſence of ẏ Mayꝛe toke the ſame othe. And vpon the ſonday folowyng, euery ſtriplyng of the age of .xii. yeres and aboue befoꝛe his Alderman in his ward was newly charged with ẏ ſame othe. Then the diſpleaſure betwene the kynge and his Barons beganne to appeare and diſcloſe, whiche longe while hadde bene kepte ſecrete, in ſo muche that diuers of them aſſẽbled in the marches of Walis, and gathered vnto them ſtronge power, and ſente a letter vnto the kynge, vnder the ſeale of ſyr Rogier Clyfforde, beſeching him to haue in remēbraūce the othe and manifolde promyſe, that he had made, for the obſeruyng of the ſtatutes made at hys towne of Oxenforde, with other ordinaunces made to the honour of God, for fayth and allegeaunce to his perſon, & weale and profite of al his realme: willing him farther to withſtande and defye all ſuche perſons, as will be agaynſt the ſayd actes, ſauyng the queene and hyr children.

e inſur
ion of
Barōs

After the whiche letter thus ſent, and receyuing of it none anſwere, the ſayd Barons with banner diſplayed, went agaynſt ſuch as they knew that helde agaynſt the ſayd actes. And firſt at Hertforde they tooke the Byſhoppe of that ſee, and as many of his Chanons as were aliauntes borne, and tooke ſuch treaſour, and cattel as they there fande, and bare it with them. And after yode and ſent vnto ſuche manoyers as the ſayde Byſhop and Chanons had and them ſpoiled, and robbed, and ſome of them threw to the ground and conſumed with fyre, and put the ſayde Byſhop and Chanons in ſure kepynge, and ſette other in theyr places, and after went vnto the other coaſtes, where they ſuppoſed to finde of theyr enemies, keping theyr courſe toward London, bearynge before them a banner of the kynges armes, and ſo holdynge theyr iourney, muche people drewe vnto them. In the which progreſſe euer as they ſaw any that they knew to be agaynſt the maynteynaunce of the ſayd actes they impriſoned theym, and ſpoyled theyr places, were they ſpirituall or temporall men. And in diuers of the kynges Caſtelles they ſette in ſuche perſons as to them liked, and put oute ſuche as there were ſet in by the king, and gaue vnto theym an othe, that they ſhould be trew and faythfull to the kynge, and kepe thoſe Caſtels to his vſe, and weale of the Realme.

l Fa
noot.

Howe the Barons drew nere to London and ſent a letter to ẏ Mayre and the Aldermen of the ſame.

About Mydſomer when they drewe neare to London, they ſent a letter vnto the Mayre and Aldermen, vnder the ſeale of ſir Simonde Muntforde, willynge to know of them whither the would obſerue the actes & ſtatutes made in the Parliament of Oxenforde or not, or elles they woulde ayde and aſſiſt ſuche perſons as entended the breche of ẏ ſame, and ſente vnto them a copy of the ſaid actes with a prouiſo, that if anye that there were ſpecified, were to the hurte of the Realme, or common weale of the ſame, that they then by diſcrete perſons of the lande, ſhould be altered and amēded. The whych copy the Mayre bare vnto the king then beyng at the Towre, accompanied wyth the Queene and the kinge of Almayne, which lately was retour- from beyonde the Sea, and ſyr Edward his ſonne, with other of his counſayle.

Then the kinge entendinge to know the mynde of the Citie, aſked the Mayre what he thought of thoſe ordynaunces and actes, knowynge well that before hys commynge thyther, he had counſayles wyth the Aldermen and ſome commons of the Cytye.

The Mayre then abaſhed wyth that queſtion, beſought the kinge that he might common with hys brethren the Aldermen, & he ſhuld ſhew vnto him his, and their opinions. But the kyng ſayd he wold here his aduice without more cōſayle. Then the Mayre boldely ſayde, that before times he with his brethren and cominaltie of the Citie, by his cōmaundemente were ſworne to mayntayne all actes made to the honoure of God, to the fayth of the kinge and profite of the realme, whiche othe by his licence and moſte gracious fauoure, they entended to obſerue & kepe. And moreouer, to aduoyde all occaſion that might growe of grudge or variaunce betwene his grace and his Barones within ẏ Citie, they would aduoyde al alliauntes and ſtraungers out therof, if his grace were ſo contented. Which anſwere the kyng ſhewed as he were therewith pleaſed, ſo that the Mayre with his fauoure departed, and ſent anſwere to the Barons to the ſame accordynge, theyr liberties alwaye vpholden and ſaued.

Then ſhortly after, for ſo much as diuers noble men of the lande, whiche helde agaynſt thoſe ſtatutes, were riden towarde Douer, & there entended to haue taken ſhipping for feare of the Barons, the kynge ſent after them dyuers perſons of his houſeholde, and of the Cytyzeins of Londõ to refourme and enduce them to retourne, and tary with the kinge.

And in that ſeaſon all alliauntes, the which were taken ſuſpect of any fauour, owyng to that one parte or to that other, were amoued the Cytie. But it was not longe after that ſir Edwarde the kinges ſonne, ſet them or many of them in offices within the Caſtel at Windeſore. Than watche was kept dayly with in the Citie, and in the nightes a certaine were aſſigned to ride aboute the towne, with a certayne footemen aſſigned to them, to ſearche al ẏ towne ouer, but of that enſued harme. For while the riding watch was in one place of the City, ſome euyl diſpoſed perſons vnder colour of watchemen and to ſearch for ſtrãgers, robbed and ſpoyled, manye houſes within ẏ Citie. For remedie whereof a ſtandinge watche was ordeyned in euery warde. And the kyng hearyng of the Barons neare comynge to the City, departed thence ſhortly after.

Then the Barons entred the Citie, the ſondaye before Saynte Margaretes day. And ſhortly after the kinge retourned to Weſtminſter, with the Queene and other of his counſayle. And ſoone after by the conſent of the kynge, & the Barons, ſyr Hugh le Spenſer, was made chiefe Iuſtice and keper of the Towre.

Upon the morowe folowinge Mary Magdalene daye, a write was directed vnto the mayre and Aldermen, chargyng theym, that the kynges peace were fermelie kepte wythin the Citie: For in the ſame write it was alſo expreſſed, that the kinge and hys Barons were louingly agreed. Farther more, was by the ſayd wryte commaunded, that if within the precincte of theyr fraunches, were any perſon or perſons knowen, that woulde wythſtande the fore ſayde ordinaunces and ſtatutes, that all ſuche ſhould be attached and put in priſon, and theyr goods attached for the kynge, till they knew his further pleaſure.

Ye ſhall vnderſtand that while the Lordes laye thus within the citie, diuers conuenticlis and gatheringes were made of the Citizyns, and other that robbed in diuers places of the Citie, and dyd muche harme. The whiche was ſmally corrected, thei wer ſo borne out and mainteined by their maiſter. And the commons of the Citie, wer farre out of rule by inſenſynge of riotous perſons, that in aſſembles and courtes, that then were kepte at Guyldehall or other places, ſimple and vndiſcrete perſons ſhoulde haue the voyce, and the worſhipfull men, litle or nothynge regarded, whereof enſued dayly muche vnhappines and ſorow, as after ſhall appeare.

The Barons then, to obtayne the more fauoure of the City willed them to ſhew if they had anye of their liberties withdrawen, ẏ they might agayne to them be reſtored, & alſo to deuyſe ſome newe to their weale and profite, & they woulde laboure to the kynge that they might haue them graunted. For the which comforte of the lordes, the Mayre called the cõmons to GuildeHall, & ſhewed to theim the beneuolence of the ſaid lordes and willed them, that euery offycer for his office, to deuyſe ſuche thynges as might bee beneficiall for the Citie. Wherupon they cõſayled together, and made a note in paper, of dyuers ſtatutes, prouiſions and ordinaunces to bee graunted; whiche myghte more properly be named abhominacions, for they were deuiſed to their ſinguler profit, and to the greate hurte of all other Marchauntes, comynge to the Citie, and to all other fayres and markets of Englande, and alſo preiudiciall to ẏ vnyuerſall weale of the Realme. The whych when they were ouerſene by the heades of the Citie, it was ſhewed vnto the ſayde commons, that theyr ordinaunces were not lefull nor charitably ordered, & therfore they knew well, they ſhould not be admitted, willynge them to deuiſe other: but al was in vayne. By meane whereof bothe thoſe and other, that were righte neceſſarye for the common weale of the Citie, were reiected and put of.

The Barons vpon the morow folowynge ſaynt James day, departed from London towarde Wynſore, to ſe the guidyng of the Caſtell. Wherat theyr commyng they put out the foreſayd aliauntes before ſette in, by ſir Edwarde the kynges ſonne, the which aſſociated with other, yode vnto Fulham, where the kyng then lay and ſhewed to him, that the Barons had ſpoyled them of ſuche goodes as they had, & that without cauſe But the kyng put them of for that ſeaſon, and warned them to ſue to him aboute Mychelmaſſe, when more of his counſayle was wyth him, and then they ſhould haue Juſtice.

Upon the ſecond day folowyng the feaſt of Saynte Mathew, or the .xxiii. day of September, the kynge, the Queene, with his ſonnes and other nobles of this land tooke ſhippynge and ſayled into

How the kinge ſayled into Fraunce.

Frãce, to be preſent at yͤ French kynges Parliament, then holden at Bonony. And the morow after the octauys of Saynt Michaell, he landed againe at Douer: And the fryday folowinge he came to London.

And vpon the Tueſday folowynge, paſſed a queſt of .xii. knightes of Midd̄, ſworne vpon a iury, betwene the abbot of Weſtmynſter and the citie, for certaine preuileges that yͤ Citizeins of London claymed wythin Weſtminſter. Where by the ſayde Iury it was founden before Gilberte of Preſtone then chiefe Baron of the kinges excheker, that the ſhriues of London at thoſe dayes might lawfully enter into the Towne of weſtminſter, and all other tenementes that the abbot had with in Middelſex, and vnto the gate of the ſayde Abbay, and there to make ſommons and diſtrayne for lacke of aperaunce, al and euerich tenaunt of the ſayde Abbot.

The libertis of London.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxii.

Aboute the quindena of ſainte Mychaell, the former complaynt of the alliauntes and other, whiche as aboue ye haue heard, was ſhewed before the kinge and the lordes in the Parliament holden at Weſtminſter: where laſtlye it was ſentencid, that the Barons ſhould reſtore all ſuche goodes as they and theyr company had taken from ſuch perſons before that day, as wel to aliauntes as other bothe ſpirituall and temporall, & alſo that ſuch menial ſeruauntes as ſhoulde be dayly in the kinges houſe, and about his perſon, ſhold be ſuch as the king woulde choſe and admit himſelf the whiche .ii. articles yͤ barons vtterly denied. Wherefore olde rancoure tooke place, and diſſencion kindled hys fire of malice againe, betwene the kinge and his lordes feruently.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxiii

*Philip walbroke.

*Rychard Tayler.

Thomas fyz Thomas. { *Roberte Moumplere / *Robert Suff. } Anno. xlvii.

AND in the .lxvii. yeare, by procurement and ſtirynge of the Barons, the commons of the citie of Lõdon chaſe vnto theyr Mayre for that yeare Thomas fyz Thomas, and without cõuſell of the Aldermen ſware at Guyldhal vpon the day of Simon and Iude, & made no preſentment of him vpõ the morow folowing nother to yͤ kinge nor yet to yͤ Barõs of the kynges excheker, as they of ryght oughte to haue done. For the which preſumpcion the king was greuouſly diſconted agaynſt the Citie. Soone after yͤ king aduertiſing wel that the Citie would take the Barons party cauſed ſyr Edwarde his ſonne to take the Caſtell of Wynſore by a trayne. Whereof when he knew that he was in poſſeſſion, the king early in a mornyng a litle before Chriſtmas, departed from Weſtminſter, and rode vnto the ſayde caſtel, whither ſhortlie after came alſo manie of the lordes that wer vpon the kynges partye. And as faſt the Lordes and knyghtes, whiche helde with the Earle of

Leceter

ement
wene ẏ
g & hys
s that
mat-
ſhould
iudged
Frēch
ge.

Leceter, drew them toward London, ſo that on eyther partie was muche people aſſembled. In the which paſſetime ſome well diſpoſed, laboured a concorde betwene the king and his lordes. By whoſe meanes finallye it was agreed by both parties, that all matters cōcerning the foreſayde articles of ſtatutes and ordynaunces made at Oxenforde, and after by the xii. Piers, that the Frenche king ſhould deeme and iudge, whyche ſhould bee holden, and which not. And as he deemed, bothe parties promyſed aſſuredlye to abide. Vpon whiche agrement copies were made of the ſayde ſtatutes, and with letters ſhewyng the effect of the former agrement ſent vnto the ſayde kynge of Fraunce, then beyng Lewes. And in the Chriſtmaſſe weeke folowyng, the kyng tooke ſhyppyng with ſyr Edward hys ſonne, and other of the counſayle, and ſayled into Fraunce for the foreſayde cauſe. And for the partie of the ſayde Barons, was ſent ouer ſyr Peter de Mounteforde and other. Then before Lewes kinge of Fraunce, thoſe ſtatutes were ſoore argued.

he ſen-
e of the
nche
g.

In the ende, the Frenche kynge calling before him bothe partyes, vpon the day before the conuerſion of S. Paule, or the .xxiiii. daye of January, ſitting in iudgemēt, gaue expreſſe ſentence, that all and eueriche of the ſayde ſtatutes and ordinaunces ſhoulde be from that daye forwarde vtterlye fordone and ſette at noughte, and all ſuch bandes and promiſes that the kyng or any other had made for the maynetenaunce of the ſame, ſhuld be adnulled & cancelled, and the kynge and all other, for anye matter concerning thoſe ſtatutes ſet at libertie. After whiche ſentence thus geuen, the kynge retourned into England, ſo that he came vnto London the fiftene dai of February. But the Barons being ſoore amoued with this ſentence, and noting great parcialitie vnto the Frenche kyng, departed from London Weſtward, and ſo into the Marches of wales, where they drewe to them greate power, and warred vpon the landes and caſtels of ſyr Roger Mortimer, and threwe ſome of them vnto the grounde, and ſpoyled of his what thei might find, and ouer that brente of his manours and houſes. In whoſe ayde ſyr Edwarde the kynges ſonne cōming, his people were diſtreſſed, and he almoſt taken. For redreſſe of whiche matters, a newe parlyament was appoynted to bee holden at Oxenforde, in the Quindena of Eaſter next folowing, which came neuer to effecte. Albeit another Chronicle ſayeth that from thys parliament then holden at Oxenforde, the kynge and hys Lordes parted al diſcorded. Then the Barons drewe toward London, and the king remained at Wodſtocke.

The barōs refuſed the ſentence of the French kinge, and made new warre.

And then newe aſſuraunce by writinge endented was made betwene the comminaltye of the cytie, and the Barons, without conſent of manye of the rulers of the ſaid citie. Wherefore the commōs as men enraged, made of themſelf two captaynes, whiche they named Conſtables of the citie, that is to ſay: Thomas Piweldon and Stephan Bukerell. At whoſe commaundement, by tollynge of the great bell of Paules, al the citie ſhould be redy ſhortly in harneſſe, to geue attendaunce vppon their ſaid captaines.

Aboute the beginning of lent, the Conſtable of the towre, ſyr Hughe le Spenſer, came with a faire companye of men of armes before him into the citie, and deſired aſſiſtence of yͤ forenamed Conſtables. The which commaunded the ſaide bell to bee tolled. By meane whereof, the people ſhutte their ſhoppes, & came oute in harneſſe in greate multitude. The whyche after the proclamation made, that they ſhuld folow their captaynes, without knowledge what to doe, or whither to go, folowed theyr ſayde captaynes, and ſo yode vnto Thiſtelworth vppon two miles beyonde Weſtminſter, and there ſpoyled the manoure of the king of Romaines, & ſet it after vpon a fyre. And that doone, hys water mylles and other commodities that he there hadde, put them vnto vtter ruyne. And after with great noiſe and crie returned vnto London.

This deede as ſayth myne authoure, was cauſe of the mortall warre folowynge. For where before time the ſayde kynge of Romaynes had bene for alliaunce, that was betwene him and the Earle of Glouceter, a treatye of peace to bee hadde betwene the kyng and his barons, after that deede done, he was enemie vnto theim to the vttermoſt of hys power.

The kyng hearing of this riot, gathered vnto him a greate power. And for he heard that ſir Peter de Mountforde was at Northampton, gatheryng of people to ſtrength the Barons partye, he ſpedde hym thither, and wanne the towne vppon hym by force, and ſlewe manye of hys men, and finallye tooke hym and ſyr Symon the ſonne of the earle of Leiceter, with diuers other on lyue, the which with many Burgeyſes of that towne, that hadde taken theyr partyes, the Kyng ſent vnto dyuers pryſons, and ſome he cloſed wythin the Caſtell of the ſame towne.

In this paſſetyme on Palmeſondaye weeke all the Iewes in London were ſpoiled and robbed, and the number of fyue hundred of theym were ſlayne, and dyuers of theyr manſyons brente and deſtroyed, and ſuche as of theym were ſaued, were conueyed for great neede vnto the Towre, and there kepte from the furye of the commons. Whereof the occaſion was, for ſo much as a Iewe wold haue forced a Chriſten manne to haue geuen vnto hym moore then two pence, for the vſurye of twentye ſhyllinges for a weeke. For ye ſhall vnderſtand that thoſe daies, by licence graunted vnto the Iewes of the king, they myght take by vſurye of euerye man that of theim woulde borowe money two pence of a pounde for a weeke lendyng, & ſo of greater and of ſmaller ſummes, after that rate.

Vſurie
mitted
Iewes

And ſoone after the Iewes wer thus puniſhed, many houſes of religion within the citie, and nere there aboute, were ſearched for goodes of allyauntes, and muche founde. Whereof a parte was brought vnto the lordes, but the more part was ſtolen and bribed.

In whiche ſeaſon, the kyng paſſed by dyuers countreys, and laſtlye came into Southſex with a ſtrōg power. Whereof hearyng the lordes, made preparation to goe towardes him. In all whiche tyme the wardeyns of the fyue portes kept the Sea with ſhyppes, that no ſtraungers ſhoulde enter the lande to ayde the king againſt the Barons.

Then in the ende of Aprill, the Barons with a multitude of the Citie, whiche they put in vawarde, departed from London, takynge theyr iourney towarde the kynge. And when they were well onwarde vpon theyr waye, worde was brought vnto theym that the kynge with an huge power was at Lewes.

Wherefore they by an whole aſſent diuiſed a letter, and ſent it in the name of al the Barons vnto the kynge, whoſe names here vnder folowe, but not all.

Syr Symonde de Mountforde earle of Leyceter, and high ſtewarde of England.
Syr Gylberte de Clare Earle of Glouceter.
Syr Roberte Ferreis Earle of Derby.
Syr Hugh le Spencer chiefe Juſtice, and ſyr Henry de Mountford ſonne and heyre to the earle of Leyceter.
Syr Rychard Gray.
Syr Henry Haſtinges
Syr Jhon fiz Jhon.
Syr Robert de Venpount.
Syr Jhon Gyuyle.
Syr Robert Roos.
Syr William Marmyon.
Baldwyne Wake.
Syr Gylbert Gyfforde.
Syr Nicholas de Megraue.
Syr Godfrey de Lucy.
Syr Jhon de Veyſy.
Syr William de Mounthdeſey.

Which letter ſealed wͭ the ſeales of the ſaide earle of Leyceter & of Glouceter, cōteined as foloweth.

A letter ſent by the Barons to the kynge.

TO the moſte excellent lord kyng Henry, by the grace of god king of England, lord of Irelande, and Duke of Guyan, the Barons and other faithfull your ſeruauntes, their fidelitie and othe to god and to you toueting to kepe, ſendyng to you due ſalutyng with al reuerence and honoure, vnder due obeyſaunce. Lyketh it your highneſſe to vnderſtande, that manye beyng aboute you, haue before tymes ſhewed to vnto your lordſhip of vs many euyll and vntrew reportes, and haue founde ſuggeſtions not alonlye of vs, but alſo of youre ſelfe, to bringe this youre realme vnto ſubuerſion. Knowe your excellencie, that we entende nothing but health and ſuerty to your perſon, to the vttermoſte of oure powers: and not alonlye to our enemies, but alſo yours, and of all this youre realme, we entende vtter greuaunce and correction. Beſeching your grace here after to geue to theym litle credence, for ye ſhall finde vs youre trewe and faythfull ſubiectes to the vttermoſte of our powers.

And we Earle of Leyceter, and Earle of Glouceter, at the requeſt of other, and for our ſelf, haue put to our ſeales, the .x. day of the moneth of May.

¶ The aunſwere vnto thys foreſayde letter.

Henry

The kings anſwere to the letter of the barons

Henrye by the grace of god king of Englande, lorde of Irelande, and duke of Guyan, to Simonde de Mountforde, and Gylbert de Clare and their complices. Where as by warre and generall perturbaunce in this oure realme by you begon and continued, with alſo brenninges and other hurtes and other enormities that euidēly appeareth that your fidelitie to vs due, ye haue not kepte, nor the ſuertye of our perſon ye haue litle regarded, for ſo muche as our lordes, and other our truſty frendes, which daily abide with vs ye vexe and greue, and them purſue to the vttermoſte of youre powers, and yet dayly entende, as ye by reporte of your letters haue vs aſſerteyned: we the griefe of them admit & take for our owne, ſpecially when they for their fidelitie, which they to vs dayly impende, ſtand and abide by vs to oppreſſe your infidelity & vntrouth. Wherefore of your fauour and aſſuraunce we ſet litle ſtoore, but you as our enemies, we vtterly defie, witneſſe our ſelfe at our towne of Lewes, the .xii. day of this moneth of May.

And ouer this the kinge of Romaynes, ſyr Edwarde the kinges ſonne, and other Lordes beinge then with the kynge, ſent vnto theym another letter, whereof the tenour enſueth.

The copie of yͤ letter ſent by Richard king of the Romains and Edward yͤ kings ſon, to the Barons.

Richarde by the grace of god, king of Romains, alwaies Auguſtus, and Edward the noble firſt begotten ſonne of the king of England, all other Barons firmelye ſtanding and abiding with our ſoueraigne lorde the kinge, to Symonde de Mountford, Gilbert de Clare, and all other their falſe felowes. By the letters whiche ye ſent to yͤ king our moſt ſoueraigne lorde, we vnderſtande that we are defied of you. Neuertheleſſe, thys worde of deffiaunce apeared vnto vs ſufficiently before, by the depriuacion and brenning of oure manours, and cariyng awaye of our goodes. Wherfore we wyl that ye vnderſtande that we defie you, as our mortall and publike enemies. And when ſoeuer we may come to reuengement of the iniuries that ye to vs haue doone, we ſhall acquit it to the vttermoſt of our powers. And where ye put vpon vs, that nother trewe nor good councel to our ſoueraigne lord the king we geue, ye therein ſay falſely and vntruely. And if that ſaiyng ye ſir Simond de mountford, & ſir Gilbert de Clare wyll teſtifye in the courte of our ſoueraigne lorde, we are redie to purchaſe to you ſuerty & ſafe comming, that ther we may proue our trew and faithful innocencie, and your falſe & traiterous liyng. Witneſſed with the ſeales of Richard king of the Romains, and ſyr Edward forenamed. Geuen at Lewes the .xii. daye of Maye.

Cruell deteſta battay

When the Barons hadde receyued theſe letters from the kynge and his lordes, they perceyued well that there was none other meane, but to defende theyr cauſe by dinte of ſworde. Wherefore thei puttynge theyr truſte in god, ſped theym forth towarde the kynge. And vpon Wedneſday beyng then the foure & twentye day of May, earlye early in the morning both hoſtes met. Where after the Londiners had geuen the firſte aſſaulte, they were beaten backe, ſo that they beganne to draw from the ſharpe ſhot and ſtrokes, to the diſcomfort of the barons hoſte. But the Barons encouraged and comforted their men in ſuch wiſe, that not alonly the freſh and luſty knyghtes fought egerly, but alſo ſuch as before were diſcomfited, recouered their vertue and ſtrẽgth, & fought without feare, in ſo much that the kynges vawarde loſte their places. Then was the felde couered with dead bodies, and gaſpyng & groning was heard on euery ſide. For eyther was deſyrous for to bring other out of life. And the father ſpared not the ſonne, nor the ſonne the father. Alliaũce at that tyme was turned into defiaunce, and chriſten bloude that day was ſhed without pitie. Thus durying the cruell fight by the more parte of the day, laſtly the victorie fell to the barons, ſo that there were taken the kinge, and the king of the Romaines, ſyr Edward the kynges ſonne, with many other noble men, to the number of fyue and twentye Barons & Banarettes, and people ſlayne a greate multitude ouer .xx. thouſand, as ſayeth myne authours.

When the Barons hadde thus obteyned victorie, prouiſion was made for the ſaufe kepynge of the priſoners, ſo that all were ſente vnto diuers Caſtels and priſons, excepte the kynge and his brother the king of Almaine, and ſyr Edward his ſon, the which the barõs held with theym till they came to London. Then a newe graunt was made by the kinge, that the foreſayde ſtatutes ſhould ſtand in ſtrẽgth. And yf any were thought vnreaſonable, they to bee corrected and amended by foure noble menne of the Realme, that is to meane, two of the ſpiritualtie, and two of the tẽporaltie. And if thoſe foure myght not agree, than the earle of Angeou and duke of Burgoyn to be Judges of the matter. And this to be firmely holden and obeyed by the kinge and his brother, the kynges graunted that theyr ſonnes & heyres ſhoulde remaine with the Barons as priſoners till all thing were finiſhed accordyng to the former agrement. And vpon this was a parliament apointed, to be holden at London at Penthecoſt folowing, but that came neuer to purpoſe. Then the Tueſday before the aſſencion day, peace was proclaimed in London betwene the king & his Barons.

A peace proclaimed

And vpon the day folowing, the king and the Barons came vnto London with the king of the Romaines, and ſyr Edward the kinges ſonne. Then ſyr Edwarde as pledge for the king, and ſyr Henry ſonne to the king of Almain, wer ſent vnto the towre, and there lodged, and from thens vnto Douer caſtell. And the kyng was lodged in the biſhops palays by Paules, and the king of Almaine with dyuers other within yͤ towre. Then it was agreed by the king, that for his more ſurety, and for the weale of the land, that the earle of Leyceter ſhoulde be reſiaunt in yͤ kinges court. Vpon which agrement and other, many of the pryſoners were ſet at large.

In this paſſetime before yͤ fielde

of Lewes, the quene and the king of Romaines had ſent ouer the ſea for ſouldiours, to ayde the king againſt the barons; which now wer comen in great number vnto Douer, and there houed in the ſea to haue landed. Whereof hearing the barons, ſent the king of Romains to the caſtell of Berkhamſtede as priſoner, till the ſaid aliaũtes were returned, and cauſed king Henry ẇ a greate power to ride thither, and force the ſaide hoſte of ſtraungers to retourne into their owne countreys.

And when the king had returned the ſaid ſtraũgers, he ſhortly after with the agrement of the barons, ſailed ouer into Fraunce, and returned again within ſhort terme.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxiii.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxiiii.

Thomas fyz Thomas. { Osbert Wynter. / *Philyp Taylour. } Anno.xlviii.

*Roberte Mũpilers.

IN this.xlviii.yere, the lordes of the marches about ẏ feaſt of Chriſtmas, aſſembled theim in thoſe coſtes, and did muche harme vpon the lordſhips and manours of the earles of Leiceter and of Glouceter, ſtandinge in marches of Wales. Wherefore the king rode ſhortly to Glouceter and called there a councell of hys lords. By authoritie of which coũcell, it was enacted, that as many of the ſaid lords as came not in by the octauis of S. Hillary next folowing, and yelded them vnto the kinges grace, ſhoulde bee exyled. And by the ſaid councell was alſo agreed, that in the ſaide octauis ſhould bee a parliament holden at Weſtminſter. At which day ẏ king with his lordes ſpirituall and temporall, and commons of his land, began his foreſaide Parliament. During the whiche, it was there ſhewed, the kinge being preſent, that he nor ſir Edward his ſonne, nor none of them ſhuld after that daye greue or cauſe to bee greued, the earles of Leiceter and of Glouceter, the Barons, Banerettes, or knightes, the citezins of London, & Barons of the fiue portes, nor none other perſon or perſons, of high or lowe degree, that was vpon the party of the ſayd earles, for any matter of diſpleaſure done agaynſt the king and the ſaide ſyr Edwarde his ſonne, at anye tyme before that daye. And that to vpholde, the kinge before his lordes was ſworne. And after was ſhewed and read a charter of pardon, cõcerning the cauſe, & a confirmation of the ſtatutes of the foreſt, ẇ manye other actes & ſtatutes before grãuted of the king. Then in the feaſt of S. Gregory folowing, or the.xii.day of March, Edward the kinges ſonne that before was alſo ſworne to performe ſuche promiſes as ẏ king had made, before in the parliament, was deliuered at liberty, & alſo ſir Henry ẏ kings ſon of Almain, the which had bene kept as pledges (as ye before haue heard) vppon the terme of.ix.monethes & odde daies, vpõ aſſurance made ẏ the ſaid ſir Edward ſhuld dwel & abide in the kings court, & not to depart frõ thence, ẇout lycence of the king & of a certein of ẏ

Barons. After this many Inſtrumentes & bandes were made by the King and ſir Edward his ſoonne, for the performaunce of couenaũtes and pactions, made atwene the Kyng and the Barons, whiche ſhortly after came to ſmal effecte.

In this ſeaſon, atwene Eaſter and Pentecoſte, for orderyng of the aforeſaied Statutes made at Oxenforde, fell diſſention atwene the Erles of Leiceter and Glouceter, ſo that woordes of diſpleaſure was vttered atwene theim, the Kyng & thei alſo beyng then at Glouceter. Then the Kyng & his Barons had laboure to ſette them at vnitie and reſt. And vpõ the ſea the Barons of the .v. Portes, robbed and ſpoiled all menne that thei might take, ſparyng neither praies, Engliſhe Marchaunt nor other. Of whiche (as the common fame then wente) ſome of the Barons of the lande had good parte.

In the Whitſon weke folowyng, the Kyng with the Erle of Leiceter, & ſir Edward his ſonne with many other lordes being at Hereforde, in the edge of Wales, the ſaied ſir Edward, ſecretly and without licence, departed from the court, and yode vnto Cheſter, where he accompanied vnto him therle of Glouceter, and the lordes of the Marches, the Erle of Warren, ſir Roger Mortimer & other: and from thens went vnto Glouceter, breakyng the bridges as he went, to thentent that he were not folowed, till he had aſſembled his power. Whẽ knowlege of this came vnto the erle of Leiceter, he in all haſte ſent vnto ſir Simonde his ſoonne, that he ſhould gather his Knightes vnto him. The whiche accordyng to that commaundemente, aſſembled vnto hym moche people, and with them drewe toward Wincheſter, ſo that he came before the citee, vpon the euen of the tranſlation of ſainct Swithine, or the .xiiii. daie of the moneth of Iulie, where he was ſhutte out, for ſo moche as the citezeins knewe not whether he came as the Kynges frende or not. And alſo a litle before, thei had receiued a letter frõ ſir Edward, willyng thẽ to holde theim out of the Citee. For theſe cauſes the Citezeins cloſed their gates, againſt the ſaid ſir Simõd and his compaignie. But it was not long or the citee was yelden. Then thei ſpoiled the toune, and ſlue the more partie of the Iewes that dwelled within the ſame. And that doen, laied ſiege vnto the caſtell, and aſſaulted it. But for tidynges were fained, of the commyng of ſir Edward with his power, thei departed ſhortly thens, and ſo yode vnto Kenelworthe.

Upon the laſt daie of Iulie, ſir Edward with his hoſte came vnto Kenelworth foreſaied, and fel ſodainly vpon the hoſte of the forenamed ſir Simon, and with ſhedyng of litle bloud, take there priſoners, therle of Oxenforde, Willyam de Mounte Caniſe, Adã de new Market, ſir Baldwin Wake and Hughe Neuile, with diuers other: & ſir Simond fled into the caſtle, and ſo eſcaped. Then theſe forenamed priſoners, were al ſent vnto Glouceter, and there put in ſure keping. In this meane while ſir Simond erle of Leiceter toke leaue of the Kyng, whiche then from Hereforde, paſſed the Riuer of Seuerne, & ſo yode vnto Worceter, and the Earle with greate pain paſſed the bridges, before by ſir Edward brokẽ, and paſſed the countries in gatheryng of people as he went: ſo that in proceſſe, he had with him ſtrõg power, wherof hearyng ſir Edward, coſted toward hym. And the ſixte daie of Auguſt met with him at Euiſhã, in Worceter ſhire, where atwene thẽ was foughten a cruell fight, in the whiche at lẽgth was ſlain the ſaied ſir Simond, and ſir Hẽrie his ſonne and heire, ſir Hugh le Spencer, ſir Peter de Mountforde, and many other noble men that helde vpon the Barons partie. After whiche diſcoumfiture, ſome malicious diſpoſed perſons, in deſpite of the Erle, cutte of his hode and his diſmiſſaries, and faſtened theim vpõ either ſide of his noſe, and after made a preſente therof, vnto the wife of ſir Roger Mortimer, his feete alſo and his handes, were cut from the bodie, and ſent to ſondry places: and the trunke of his bodie buried within the Churche of Euiſham.

Of this Earle ſpeaketh Ranulph Monke of Cheſter, in his booke of Polichronicon, and calleth hym Simon the right wiſe, ſaiyng that god wrought for him miracles after his death, yͤ which for feare of the Kyng, and ſir Edward his ſonne, were kepte cloſe and ſecret. So that no man durſt ſpeake of theim.

Sone after this victorie thus obteined by ſir Edward, the king and he mette, by whoſe aucthorities all priſoners then, whiche were in holde in diuers places, by the commaundement of the ſaied ſir Edwarde, were ſet at libertie, and many other daiely accuſed & ſette in for theim: and aboute the Natiuitie of our Ladie, a parlament was holden at wincheſter, where by aucthoritie of theſame, all ſtatutes and ordinaunces before made by the Barons at Oxeforde, in the.xli.yere of the kyng, were vtterly fordoen and ſette at nought, and all bondes and writynges made by the Kyng, or any other, for yͤ obſeruing of theſame were cancelled and broken. Alſo at this counſaile was ordeined, that all ſoche as had fauoured the Barons, beyng then in priſon, or at large, ſhould be diſherited, and then the Kyng reſumed into his hãdes, all grauntes before made, and giuen to any perſone. And for ſir Simond de Mountforde, might not agree with the Kyng, at the parlamente, he was reſtored to the caſtell of Kenelworth, as he before was aſſured, the whiche, he with ſir Henrie de Haſtinges and other, kepte long after.

Whẽ the parlamẽt was ended, the King came to Windſore with a great power, entendyng as the fame then wente, to deſtroie the citee of London, for the great ire and diſpleaſure, that he had vnto it: whereof hearyng the Maior & Aldermen, were ſtriken in a wonderfull feare. Albeit many of the rabbiſhe and wilde commoners, were in full purpoſe to haue defended the citee againſt the king, and thus emong theim were diuers and many opinions, and no wonder, for at thoſe daies the citie was inhabited with many maner of nacions, whiche then were admitted for citezeins.

he
ers
to
the

Laſtly by grace and ſad coũſail of the beſt in the citee, thei condiſcended to make a ſupplicacion to the king, and ſende it by ſome religious perſon. Of the which thei made diuerſe, and ſence theim by ſundrie perſones, but all auailed right nought. For the Kyng was ſo greuouſly encenſed by ſome of his counſaile againſt the citezens, that he would not looke vpõ none of their ſupplicacions. And if any man ſpake for them, he ſone would make ſoche countenaunce, that men whiche were in his fauoure, feared to ſpeake for theim.

Then the Citizyns were counſailed by their frendes, that they ſhould make a writinge & ſeale it with their common ſeale, by vertue whereof thei ſhoulde offer thẽ ſelues, to put them wholye in the Kinges grace and mercye, touchinge their liues and goodes. Accordynge to the whyche counſaile thei deniſed a writinge, and ſealed it with their cõmõ ſeale, and that done, choſe eight perſõs of the Citie, ſuche as had frendes in the Courte, and ſent them towarde Windeſore the. vi. daie of October. Upon whiche day they encountered beyonde Colbroke a knight of the kinges, called Sir Roger Leyborne, the which turned the ſaied. viii. perſones vnto the city, and he alſo rode with thẽ till he came neare vnto the citye, and there departed from theim, and rode vpon the backſide of the toune vnto the tower. But at his departinge hee willed theim to warne the maire with a certain of the Citye to meete wyth hym vppon the morowe at Barkynge churche, which ſtandeth nere vnto the Toure. Uppon the morowe when the Maior, and the ſaid ſir Roger were met, he after a long proceſſe made, ſhewed to theim of the Kynges greuous diſpleaſure, whiche he bare toward the citee, and the meanes that had been vſed by their frẽdes and louers, to obtain grace for the citee. Laſtlie he expreſſed, that no grace for thẽ might bee had, except thei would by their common ſeale, binde thẽ ſelfes fully and wholy, to ſtand at the Kynges grace, and to put in his mercie, their liues and gooddes: whereunto in the ende the citezeins graunted, and deliuered the foreſaied writyng vnto the foreſaied Roger, praiyng hym to be good meane for theim to the Kyng. The whiche departed toward the king vpon the morowe, and retourned again the ſixt daie after, and willed the Maior and Aldermen, to mete with hym again at the forſaid churche. wher he ſhewed to them, that the Kyng by greate inſtaunce of their frendes, had receiued their writyng, and would firſt, for the beginning of contẽtacion of his minde, that all the chaines, whiche ſtoode in euery ſtrete and lanes ende, within the citee, ſhould be louſed from their poſtes, and the poſt alſo drawen out of the yearth, and all to be brought to the toure: and that doen, that the Maior with a certaine of the citezeins, to the nomber of. xl. perſones, ſhould the daie folowyng be at Windſore, to confirme the graũt of their writing. And that thei ſhould go and come in ſafe and ſure wiſe, he deliuered vnto them the Kinges letter and ſeale, for the terme of. iiij. daies. Whiche all was doen, according to their former deuiſe, & the Maior with the foreſayd perſonnes, was readie at Windſore, vpon the morow beynge Sonday, by one of the clocke, & there taried til. iiii. of theſame day: at whiche ſeaſon the kyng commyng from his diſport, entred ẏ caſtell, without countenaunce or caſtyng his iyen vpon the Londoners. And when the kyng and his people, was entred the caſtle the Londoners would haue folowed, but thei were warned to abide w̄out.

Then ſhorte tyme after, the kynge cauſed a proclamacion to bee made, that no man of highe or low degree, to the Londiners ſhould make any ſaiynges of diſpleaſure, or make to theym any quarel. And in the euenyng came vnto them, the foreſayed ſyr Roger, & ſir Robert Waleys knyghtes, and brought them vnto the Caſtell, & ſayd the kynges pleaſure, was not to ſpeake with thẽ that night: And after the ſayde knightes, deliuered thẽ vnto the Coneſtable of the caſtell, whiche cloſed them all in a large towre, where that night thei had ſmall cheare and worſe lodgyng.

Then vpon the morow, beyng Moudaie toward night, they were taken out of that Towre, and deliuered vnto the ſayd bayliffe of the ſayde Caſtel, and lodged by his aſſignement, except. v. perſons, that is to meane, Thomas fyz Thomas, then Mayre, Michael Thony, Stephan Bukerel, Thomas Piwelliſon, and Jhon de Fleete. The which fiue perſons, ẏ kyng had geuen to ſir Edward his ſonne, at whoſe cõmaundement, thei remained ſtill in the ſaid Towre long after, notwithſtandyng ẏ kinges ſafe conduit to them, as before is ſhewed made. When tidings herof came vnto the Citie of London, albeit ẏ for feare many before were auoyded, then there auoyded manie moe, & conueied their goodes in ſecret wiſe, into diuers countries of England, ſo that manie of them neuer turned after.

Anno dñi. M. CC. lxiiij.

Anno dñi. M. CC. lxv.

Thomas fyz Thomas.	Thomas de la Fourde. Gregory Rokkiſle.	Anno. xlix.

Howe the
kyng gaue
vnto his
ſeruaũtes
the houſes
and houſe-

holdes
Citez
which
faine
deme
owne
ſes ap

AND in this. xlix. yere vpon the day of saynte Leonarde, or the ſyxte day of Nouember, the kynge came vnto Weſtminſter. And ſhortlie after he gaue vnto diuers of his houſholde ſeruauntes, vpon a. lx. houſes & houſholdes, within the citie: ſo that the owners wer compelled to agree and redeme theyr houſes & houſholde, with all goodes that in them were, or els to aduoide, and ſuffer ſuch perſons to enter, as ẏ ſayd houſes were geuen vnto, & not alonly that, but alſo all ſuch landes and tenementes, goodes, and Cattels, as the ſaid Citizins had in anie other places of Englande. And thẽ he made Cuſtos or gardein of the citee, ſir Othon coneſtable of the toure, which ſir

Othon chaſe to be Bailiffes vnder him, and to be to him accomptable, to the vſe of the king, Jhō Adrian, and Walter Henrie, citezeins of theſame citee. And after ~~this~~, the king toke pledges of the beſt mennes ſonnes of the citee, that his peace ſhould bee ſurely kept within theſame. The which wer put in the toure of London, and there kept at the coſt of their parentes. And ſhortly after, by greate laboure and ſute made, all the forſaid perſones, whiche wer in kepyng of the Bailiffe, of the caſtell of Windſore. iiii. onely except, that is to ſaie, Richard Bonauentur, Simon de Hardiſtoke, william de Kente, and william de Glouceter) all the other Londoners. xxxiiii. in nōber, were deliuered, and came to London the Thurſdaie folowing the feaſt of S. Luke, in the. xxi. daie of Nouēber, and the other, ix. wer kept ſtill in the toure of windſore.

Then daily ſute and labor was made vnto the Kyng, to haue his gracious fauoure, and to knowe his pleaſure, what fine he would haue of the Citee, for their tranſgreſſions, and diſpleaſure by thē to hym doen. For the whiche the king aſked. xl. M. li, and fermely helde hym at. l. M. Marke. But the citee laied for theim, that the poore commōs of the citee (wherof many were auoided) were the treſpaſſours, and ouer that the beſt men of the citee, by theſe riotous perſones were ſpoiled and robbed, and by the Rouers alſo of the ſea, as the wardeines of the. v portes & other, in this troublous ſeaſon, thei had loſt a greate part of their ſubſtaunce. For the whiche conſiderations and manẏ other, whiche were to tedious to write, the citezeins beſought the Kyng, of his moſte gracious fauour and pitie, and to take of thē as thei might beare.

This matter thus hangyng, the King vpō S. Nicholas euen, departed from Weſtminſter toward Northampton. And a litle before his departing, ordained ſir Jhon Linde knight, and Maſter Jhon Waldren clerke, to be gardaines of the citee and toure, the whiche wer named in the kinges writing Seneſchals, or Stewardes of the citee. Upon the daie folowyng that the Kyng was ridden, theſe twoo forenamed Stewardes, ſent for. xxiiii. of ẏ moſte notable menne of the Citee, and warned theim to appere the daie folowing, before the Kinges coūſaile at Weſtminſter; where at their apperaūce was ſhewed vnto theim, by ſir Roger Leiborne, that the kynges minde was, that thei ſhould haue the rule of the citee in his abſence, vnder the for ſaied Seneſhalles: and for to ſee good rule kept within the citee, thei ſhould be ſworne there before his counſaile. The whiche there were then ſworne, and countermaunded vnto the Citee. And alwaie labour was made vnto the Kyng, for the fine of the citee, ſo that in the Chriſtmas weeke, an ende was made with the king, by labour of ſoche frendes, as the citee had about him, for the ſomme of. xx. M. marke, for al tranſgreſſiōs and offences, by them before doen, certaine perſones excepted, whiche the King had giuen to ſir Edward his ſonne, beyng as be-

The fine that the Lōdoners paied for their tranſgreſſions againſt Hērie the. iii.

fore is ſaid, in the toure of Windſor. For the paimẽt of which ſõme at the daies by agrement ſet, ſir Roger Leiborne, ⁊ maſter Robert Warien clarke, were aſſigned to take the ſureties of theſame. After whiche ſeretie by theim receiued, and ſente vnto the Kyng at Northampton, the King ſent immediatly after vnto the citezens, a Charter vnder his brode ſeale, whereof the effecte enſueth.

The kynges Charter, made to the Londoners.

Henrie by the grace of God King of England lorde of Irelande, and Duke of Guyan, to all men health. Knowe ye that for the fine of .xx.M. marke, the whiche our citezins of London to vs made, for the redemption of the tranſgreſſions and treſpaces to vs, to our quene, to our noble brother Richard Kyng of Almaine, and to Edward our firſt begotten ſonne doen, we remit and pardon for vs, and for our heires, to the ſaied citezeins and their heires, as moche as in vs is, ſo that thei haue and enioye, all their former grauntes and liberties, rentes, and profites, frõ the feaſt of Chrimas laſte paſte, and alſo that the ſaied Citezeins haue to them, all forfaictes, of all malefactours of the Citee, whiche in the perturbaunce before made, wer endited, or for yͤ ſame be yet to be endited: Except the goodes and cattalles of them, of the whiche we haue giuen the bodies, vnto our foreſaied ſoonne Edward, and excepte the rentes and tenementes of al thoſe Citezeins, whiche now bee, and ſhall bee our eſchete, by reaſon of the foreſaied tranſgreſſions. And that all priſoners, whiche now in priſons remain, be frely deliuered, excepte thoſe perſones, whoſe bodies we haue giuẽ to Edward our ſonne. And that theſaied citezeins bee as free, as thei were before theſaied tranſgreſſions wer, in all parties and coaſtes of this our landes. In witneſſe whereof we haue made theſe Letters Patẽtes, witneſſeth my ſelf at Northamptõ, the .x. daie of Ianuarij, the yere of our reigne .xlix.

After whiche pardon by the citezeins receiued, all pledges for them, beyng in the toure of London, and alſo fower of them that were in the Toure of Windſore, that is to ſaie, Richard Bonauẽture, Simon de Hadiſtoke, Willyam of Kente, and Willyam of Gloceter, wer deliuered. Then alſo were diſcharged the forenamed Stewardes, ſir Ihon Linde, and Maiſter Ihon Waldren, and the citezeins of theim ſelues choſe for Maior, willyam fiz Richard, and for ſheriffes Thomas de la Fourd, and Gregorie de Rokkeſley. Then for leuiyng of this fine wer ſet, as well ſeruauntes couenaunt men, as houſholders, and many refuſed the liberties of the citee, for to be quite of that charge.

While the Kyng laie thus at Northampton, Sir Simond de Mountforde, putte hym vpon the dome of Octobonus the Legate, that before was come into this lande, to reforme thinges in the churche of Englande, and alſo to ſette vnitie and reſte, betwene the Kyng and his Lordes. To whoſe dome, and alſo of the Kyng of the Romans, the forſaied ſir Simond had bounden him to ſtand. Vpon

whiche

which promiſe and band, he was liberted, to be at large in the kynges courte, and ſo continued a ſeaſon. But in thende, when the king was commen into London, he departed ſodainly out of the courte, and rode vnto Winchelſee, where he accompanied with the Rouers of the ſea, and (after ſome priſes taken) departed from theim, and ſo ſailed into Fraunce, and put hym in ſeruice with Lewes, then king of that Prouince.

This yere alſo vpon the euen of ſainct Jhon Baptiſt, the King began his ſiege aboute the caſtle of Kenelworth, with a mightie power. But ſir Henry Haſtynges, with ſoche as wer within it, defēded it ſo ſtrongly, that the Kyng and all his power, might not win theſaid caſtle of a long time, as after in the next yere ſhall appere.

It is before ſhewed, how the quene by her puruiaunce, had cauſed an hoſte of ſtraungers, to prepare theim to cōme into Englande, for to aide her Lorde the Kyng, againſt the Barons: ſhe alſo purchaſed a curſſe of the pope to accurſſe all the ſaied Barons, and all their aiders and helpers, and had commiſſions directed, to certain Biſhops of Englande, to execute theſame, as of London, and of Wincheſter, and of Chicheſter, the which for feare of the barōs, that denied, and deferred the execution and ſentence of the ſaid curſſe, wherfore the Quene made newe laboure to the Pope, then Urban the third, and had it graūted, that the ſaied Biſhoppes for their diſobedience, ſhould bee corrected. And for this, Octobon the foreſaied Legate, this yere at a counſaile holden by hym, and the Clergie of Englande, at Poules Churche in London, ſuſpēded the ſaied Biſhoppes, and theim ſente vnto Rome, to bee aſſoiled of Clement the third.

Anno dñi. M.CC.lxv. Anno dñi. M.CC.lxvi.

Thomas fiz Thomas. { Edward Blounte.
Peter Aunger. } Anno. l.

AND in the. l. yere vppon the euen of Saint Thomas the Apoſtle before Chriſtmas, was yelden by appointmente, the caſtle of Kenelworthe. At the whiche the king with his power had line, as before is ſaid, frō Midſomer, till that daie, and then giuen ouer by ſir Henry Haſtynges, and his complaces, vpon condition, that he and all other, ſhould haue life and lym, ⁊ horſe and harneſſe, with all thynges within the caſtle to theim belongyng, and a certaine of leiſure to cary awaie theſame.

And in this yere, in the tyme of Lent, were the wardens of the. v. portes, reconciled to the Kyng, by fauour of ſir Edward the kinges ſonne. And notwithſtandyng the greate harme that thei had doen, by rouing vpon the ſea, as well to Engliſh marchaūtes, as to other, thei had to theim confirmed, all their former priuileges. And ouer that to thē was graunted, that if any man, Engliſh or other, would ſue for reſtitutiõ of good, by them before taken, or for the death of any of their frendes before ſlaine, that al ſoche complaintes ſhould be ſued, and ſhewed in their courtes, and there to haue their matters determined, & not els where. But what the cauſe was of this ende, thus made betwen the king and theim, it is not ſhewed: But the common fame at that daie rā that theſaid wardeines of the.v. portes, had at this daie the dominion of the ſea, wherfore the king was fain to folow their pleaſures

About the feaſt of Philip and Jacob, the King helde his parlamente at Northampton. At the whiche were confirmed that old fraunches and liberties, by the kinges progenitors, before graūted vnto the citee of Londō, with a newe graunte for the Shire of Middelſex. And at this parlamēt were diſherited many noble men of the lande, that before time had taken the Barōs partie. For whiche cauſe thei accompanied them togither, and robbed and riued in diuers coaſtes of the lande, and toke the Toune of Lincolne and ſpoiled it, and after raunſomed many of the riche Burgeiſes of the toune, and tooke the Iſle of Elie, and ſtrengthed it in ſoche wiſe, that thei held it long after.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxvi. Anno domini. M.CC.lxvii.

Alain Souch. *William fiz Richard. { Jhon Adrian. / Luke*Badecot. } Anno.lj.

IN this.li.yere, at ẏ choſyng of the Maior, certain contrauerſies fell atwene the Rulers & the comons of the Citee of London. Wherfore by aduiſe of ẏ maior & aldermen, ſir Roger Leiborne with other, came vnto the guildhall, beyng harneſſed vnder their gounes: & vpon the Fridaie folowyng Alhalowen, called the cōmons to the election of the new Maior, where the beſt of the citee gaue the nomination vnto Alein Souche, and diuers of the other, cried vpon Thomas fiz Thomas, which at that time was priſoner in Windſore caſtell, wherfore the ſaid Roger, with the aſſiſtence of the maior and other, toke theſaid raſcall and euill diſpoſed perſons, and ſent thē vnto diuers priſons.

This yere alſo the gentlemen that held thiſle of Elie, brake out ſondrie times, & did moche harme in Northfolke, and in Suffolke, and Cābridgeſhire, and tooke the citee of Norwiche, and after the ſpoiling therof, caried away with theim, many of the citezēs beyng riche, & finaunced thē at great ſōmes of money, and liued there in that iſle like vnto outlawes. By this and other, many hurtes in diuers places of the land was doen, by theues and other euill diſpoſed people, wherof the charge was euer laied vnto the fornamed gētlemē. Then the legate labored vnto the king, that the ſaied diſherited gentlemen might purchaſe their landes of him, by fine & raunſom. By whoſe labor the king laſtly agreed, ẏ theſaid gentlemen ſhould haue their landes again by fines of.v.yere value of their lande. As he that might diſpende.xx.pound by yere, ſhould paie an. C.xi. and ſo other after that rate, except ſir Robert Ferers, erle of Derby, ſir Jhon de la Ware, and hym that ſtrake of the fiſte of the Kynges Purſeuaūt. And ſome other perſones, whiche were of ſmalle behauour, ſhould be fined by diſcretion of the kynges counſell, but this tooke no concluſion.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxvii. Anno domini. M.CC.lxviii.

he fiz
mas.

*Aleyn Souch. { Thomas Baſinge. / Robert de Cornehill. } Anno. lii.

IN this .lii. yere, for what hap is not expreſſed, ſir Gilbert de Clare erle of Gloucecter, refuſed the Kyng, and in the Marche of Wales, gathered vnto hym a ſtrong power. To whom alſo drew ſir Jhon Eiuile, and other of the company diſherited. And after ye feaſt of Chriſtemas, with a greate hoſte came nere vnto Londō, yt time the pope of Romes Legate *Octobonus*, beyng lodged at the Towre of London.

When the Maior & Aldermen of the citie, wer ware of the Earles comyng, with ſo ſtrong a power, not knowyng whether he were the kinges freende or not, ſhut the gates againſt his foreriders. And for the kyng and none of his counſel was then nere vnto the Citie, the Mayre and Aldermen went vnto the Legate, & requered his coūſel, whether they ſhould ſuffer the Erle to enter into the citie or not, wherunto the Legate anſwered, yt he thought not ye contrary, for he knew well that he was the kinges trew ſubiect & freend. It was not longe after, that a meſſanger came frō the erle vnto the Maior, willyng to haue licence to paſſe thorough the citie into Southwerk, where he entēded to lodge hym and his people, whiche was graunted: & ſo therle paſſed through the citee, and was lodged in Southwerk. To whom came ſhortly after by Southerey ſide, ſir Jhon Eiuile with a greate companie.

Then the Mayre kept the gate of the Brydge ſhut, and watched it dayly with a certaine of armed men, and euery night cauſed the draw Bridge to be drawen, & the waters ſyde dayly and nightlye to be watched with many armed men. In lytell proceſſe of tyme after, the Legate and the Erle agreed in ſuche wiſe, that the erle by his aduiſe, was ſuffered with a certain of his people, to be lodged within the citie. By reaſon wherof, he daily drewe more and more of his people into the Citee, ſo that finally, many thinges were ordered by hym, and many of the commōs toke his partie, againſt the Maior and Aldermen.

Then in the Eaſter weke, he toke the keies of the Bridge, and of the gates, frō the officers of the citee, and deliuered them to ſoche as pleaſed him, and receiued into the Citee, many of the diſherited perſones, and gaue to them free libertie to paſſe the bridge, by all houres of the daie and the night. The Maior of al this, ſent worde vnto the king, whiche then was

gatheryng

gathering of his power in Northfolke, & made haſtie ſpede toward London. In whiche meane tyme, the Earle with his compaignie, made Bulwerkes and Barbicās atwene the Toure and the Citee, and caſt Dikes and Trenches, in ſome places of the citee, and fortified it wonderouſly.

Then many of the Citezeins, fearyng a newe inſurreccion, voided the Citee as ſecretly as thei might, whoſe goodes the Earle ſeaſed to his owne vſe, or ſuffered his menne to ſpoile them at their pleaſure. Then the commons of the citee, forgat their late puniſhment, and as men without drede of God, or of their King, toke certaine of the Aldermen, and caſte thē in priſon, and ſequeſtred their goodes, and diſpoiled moche thereof. And thereupon came to the Guildhalle, & there choſe for their Maior, or for Cuſtos or ruler of the citee, ſir Richard de Culworth knight, and for Bailiffes, Robert de Linton, and Roger Marſhall, and diſcharged thold Maior and Sheriffes. And that doen, al ſuche priſoners as were in Newgate, Ludgate, and Crepilgate, or in any other priſons within the citee, for bicauſe of the Barons warre before paſſed, thei were deliuered and ſet at libertie.

When the Legate behelde all this rebellion and diſcorde, he repented hym of his former counſaile, giuen vnto the Maior. And for he ſawe he might not reforme the Erle of his errour, he threatened hym with the Cenſures of the Churche, and to accurſſe hym as the diſherited were. And vpō this he commaunded the deuine ſeruice, to be ſaid without note, and the churche doores to bee ſhut, in tyme of the Seruice dooyng, and and that no belle were rong vnto the ſaied ſeruice, and all to the entente that the diſherited, whiche ſtoode accurſſed, ſhould not entre the churches, to heare the deuine ſeruice of God.

Then vpon three weekes after Eaſter, the king came to Ham, iii miles from London, and was lodged himſelf in the Abbay of white Monkes of Stratford. Whither came vnto hym the Legate ſone after, and was lodged alſo in the ſame Abbaie, where for ſtreitnes of lodgyng, his Horſe and Mules were ſet, within the cloſter of the ſaied Abbaie. Then the Kynges hoſte made daiely aſſaultes vpon the Citee, and gunnes and other ordinaunces was ſhot into ỹ citee, whiche litle or nothyng hurte the toune, it was ſo ſtrongly fortified.

In this ſeaſon the Legate vpō his partie, and the king of Romaines vpon the other partie, for alliaunce that was betwene him and the Erle of Glouceter, laboured ſo to the king, that a reformacion of peace was ſpoken of. Duryng whiche treatie, the ſoldiors liyng in Southwerke, made many robberies in Southerie and other places, and roued ouer vnto Weſtminſter, and ſpoiled there the Kynges palais, and deuoured his wine, and brake the glaſſe of the windowes, and all other neceſſaries to that palais thei deſtroied and waſted, and ſometymes came in likewiſe into London, & robbed there alſo. Of whiche there was taken fower that bare the conuſaunce of the Erle of

Darbie,

lles
ſac-
caſte
he
mis.

Darbie, the whiche the Erle cauſed their handes and legges to be bounden, and then put into a ſack, and ſo caſt into the Thamis

About the feaſt of ſaint Bernabe, the peace betwene the king and the Erle of Glouceter, was concluded.

After the whiche concluſion taken, the Earle remoued out of the citee, and was lodged againe in Southwerke: and the Kyng entred the citee, the Sondaie before Midſomer daie. And forthewith the Kynges proclamacions were made through the Citee, of the peace betwene the Kyng and the Erle. And after was giuen libertie to the diſherited perſones, that thei ſhould haue a ſeuen daies reſpite, to ſhifte for theim ſelfes, that is to meane, either to auoide vnto ſoche places, where thei might bee in ſome ſuretie, or els to agree to the former compoſicion, made by the Legate, and to paie the fifte parte of the ſtinte of their landes, certain perſones to be eccepted, as before is reherſed.

le of
ceter
rebel
ardo.

And as touchyng to the erle and ſoche other, as before were not diſherited, with alſo the citezeins of London, to be clerely forgiuen and pardoned.

And then was reſtored to their offices, Alein Souche for Maior, and Thomas Baſyng and Roberte de Cornehill for Sheriffes. And the Aldermen, whiche before were depoſed, wer again reſtored to their wardes and offices.

Citee
ndon
dited

Upon the Wedniſdaie folowyng, the Legate interdited al the Citee. Whiche endured from ſixe of the clocke in the mornyng, till three of the clocke, the nexte daie at after noone, & then it diſcharged, vpon the othe of twoo commons, ſworne in the name of all the Citee, that the Citee ſhould ſtand to the ordinaunce, and iudgemente of holie churche. But an other chronicle ſaith, that this interdictiō, ſhould haue continued longer, ne had been the ſtereneſſe of the Londoners, whiche helde the Legate ſo ſtreite, that thei enforced him to withdrawe that ſētence, vpon the forſaid condicion.

Then after this, all the Bulwerkes and barbicans, made by the Erle in the citee, wer plucked cleane vp, and the Diches filled, that no parte of them was ſeen. When the citezeins ſhould haue their newe pardon graunted, an obſtacle was made, for ſo moche as thei as yet, had not recompēſed the King of Romaines, for yͤ ſubuerſion of his manour of Thiſtilworthe. For the whiche was aſked. vi. M. marke, ſo that finally, with greate labour and frendſhip, thei agreed to giue vnto him for amendes, a thouſande marke to be paied in twoo yeres.

Not long after the King accepted to his grace, ſir Jhon Eiuile ſir Nicholas de Segraue, ſir William Marmerin or Mermion, ſir Richard Graie, ſir Jhon fiz Jhō, and ſir Gilbert de Lucie, with other. And accorde was alſo made betwene ſir Edward tha Kinges ſoonne, and the forenamed erle of Glouceter. And then was all forteſſes and other defences, which before tyme wer made in Southwarke, & in other places ioynyng to the ſame, pulled vp and deſtroyed, and therle and all other ſouldiours clene voided. And after all thynges ſet in order & reſt, except ſoche as yet kept the Iſle of Ely, the Kyng rode to Shroweſbury where he taried a ſeaſon, for to cõmon of matters, betwene hym and Lewelin prince of Wales.

The king thus being at Shroweſburie, a writte was directed to ſir Aleine Souche Maior of London, eight daies before Michelmas frõ the Kyng, chargyng him that the citezeins ſhould not procede to election of newe Sheriffes, till his commyng to London, but to ſuffer the old to abide ſtill in office.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxviii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxix.

Duremſõ. Willyam*de Durham.

Alein Souch. Anno.liii.

Heruſe. Walter*Henrie.

The.liij. yere.

IN this.liii.yere in the moneth of Nouember, fell a variaunce betwene the feliſhippes of Goldſmithes, and Tailours of Londõ. Whiche grewe to makyng of parties, ſo that with the Goldſmithes, toke partie the feliſhip or craft of, and with the Tailours held the craft of Stainers. By meane of this, moche people nightly gathered in the ſtretes in harneis. And at length as it was prouided, the thirde night of the ſaied parties met, vpon the nomber of fiue hũdred men on bothe ſides, and ran togither with ſoche violẽce, that ſome were ſlain, and many woũded. Then outcrie was made, ſo that the Sheriffes with ſtrẽgth of other commons, came vnto the riddyng of them, and of thẽ toke certain perſones, and ſent theim vnto diuers priſons, and vpõ the morow, ſoche ſearche was made, that the moſte of the chiefe cauſers of that fraie, wer taken and put in warde.

Parte takyng.

Then vpon the Fridaie folowyng ſaincte Katherines daie, Seſſions wer kept at Newgate by the Maior, and Laurence de Broke Juſtice, and other, where thirtie of the ſaied perſones wer arreigned of Felonie, and.xiii.of theim caſte and hanged. And for one Godfrey de Beuerlaie, holpe to arme one of the ſaid perſones, he was alſo caſt emong thother.

In Lent folowyng, the King beyng at Weſtminſter, commaũded the Maior of London, to preſent vnto him.vi.perſones, ſoche as were able to be Sheriffes. Of the whiche ſixe ſo preſented, the Kyng chaſe twoo for to be Sheriffes, that is to ſaie, Willyam de Durham, and Walter Hẽrie, and then cauſed them to bee ſworne, that thei ſhould gather the profites of the Citee, and to giue a true accoumpte, before the Barons of the Exchequer.

And the morowe after ſainct James daie, or the.xxvi.daie of Julie, the King diſcharged ſir Aleine Souche Maior, and made Stephan Edworth Coneſtable of the Toure, and Cuſtos of the citee of London. Of theſe rulers of the Citee, after the yere that Thomas fiz Thomas was Maior, are diuers opinions. For after ſome writers, from that yere, whiche was the.xlviii.yere of

Kyng

kynge Henry, tyll the. lviii. yere, of his reygne, in the whiche yere Jhon Adryã Draper was mayre were al Cuſtodies and gardeyns, and no Mayres, and who to that was then Conſtable of the towre of London, was alſo Cuſtos of the Citie.

About this time alſo by mediacion and meanes of ſyr Edward, all ſuche diſherited perſons as kepte the Jſle of Ely, were reconcyled vnto the kynge, and all fortreſſes and defences therein by theym made, plucked awaye and deſtroyed.

Oc
us ỷ
te re=
ned w
trea=
to

And in thys moneth of July, Octobonus the Legate, after he had made many good rules in the Churche, not withoute greate charge of dimes leuied of the ſame tooke his leaue of the Kynge, and rode towarde the Sea ſyde with great treaſoure, and ſo retourned in proceſſe of time to Rome. Where after Jnnocent the fift, aboute the yere of our lord. xii. hundred and. lxxvi. he was choſen & created Pope of Rome, and then named Adrian the. v. of the name and died within. l. dayes of his electiõ. This yere alſo, for ſo much as many of the Citizins of London (for the great impoſicion and charge that they were ſette at, towarde the fine of twenty thouſãd marke forenamed, wyth other charges) voyded the citie wyth their houſholdes and goodes, and enhabited theim in diuers places of the land, thinking therby to be acquited of the ſayde ſeſſynge or charge the other of the Citie whiche remayned, made inſtant laboure to the kyng and had it graũted, that all ſuche as for the ſayde cauſe had voyded their goods out of the Citie, ſhould be diſtrayned by the ſhireffe of that ſhyre where they then dwelled, and forced to pay all ſuche ſummes as they before were aſſeſſed at.

And the moneth of September the forenamed. v. citizens whiche remayned priſoners in the towre of Windeſore, that is to ſay Thomas fiz Thomas, Michael Tony Stephan Buckerell, Thomas Pywelyſdon, & Jhon de la Fleete as before in the ende of the. xlviii. yere is expreſſed, made at this ſeaſon theyr ende with ſyr Edwarde the kinges ſonne for greate ſummes of money, & were deliuered.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxix.

Anno. domini. M. CC. lxx.

Thomas fiz thomas. } William Haddyſtoke.
Anketyll de Aluerne. } Anno. liiii.

IN this. liiii. yere, began hard froſt aboute the feaſt of ſaint Andrew, and endured till it was neare vnto Candelmaſſe. The which was ſo feruent, ỷ the Thamis aboue the Bridge, betwene London and Weſtminſter, was ſo hard froſen that men and beaſtes paſſed ouer on foot frõ Lãbyth to Weſtminſter, and ſo vpwarde in diuers places to Kyngſtone, and marchaundiſes was caried from Sandwiche and other hauens of the ſea vnto London by lande, for the ſhips at that ſeaſõ might not enter into the riuer of Thamys.

A greate floud.

And aboute the feaſt of Saynt Vedaſt fell ſuche plenty of water, that the Thamis flowed and roſe ſo high, that the like thereof was not ſene by mē then liuing. Wherof enſued much harme about Lōdon, for the ſelers by yͤ water ſide, were all drowned, and in theym great plenty of marchaundiſe periſhed and loſte.

In this yere in the beginnyng of Lent, the kynge gaue vnto ſir Edward his ſonne the rule of the Citie of London, with all reuenues and profites to it belonging After which gift the ſayd ſyr Edward made ſyr Hugh the ſonne of Othon Conſtable of the Towre, and Cuſtos of the Citie.

And vpon the nine day of Aprill enſuyng, ſyr Edmund the kynges other ſonne, ſurnamed Crouchebacke, maried at Weſtminſter the doughter of the Erle of Aumarle. For ſolempnite wherof, the kyng kept ther in the great hal a great honorable feaſt, the Sunday folowynge.

And vpon the day of Sayncte Erkenwalde, or the laſt day of Aprill next enſuing, ſir Edward the kinges ſonne, commaunded the Citizens of London to preſente vnto him ſixe perſons able to bee ſhiriffes of London. Of the which he admitted to that office Williā de Hadeſtoke and Anketil de Aluerne, and ſware them to be accōptaūtes as their predeceſſours wer And the ſixte day of May folowynge, preſented at the Guildhall, and there charged of new.

At theſe dayes a new cuſtome or toll was vſed to be paide by the Citizens of London vnto yͤ king, which toll ſyr Edwarde then had letten to fearme to a marchaunte ſtraunger for.xx.marke by yere. Wherefore the citizens, not wyllyng to be vnder yͤ rule of a ſtraūger, made greate ſuite vnto yͤ ſaid ſyr Edward, ⁊ laſtly agreed wyth him to bie the ſaid tolle fee for the ſumme of two hundred marke.

And in the ende of this yere, the kyng had graunted vnto him towarde his voyage purpoſed by him into the holy land, the.xx.penie of euery mans ſubſtaunce mouable, throughout his land of the lay fee: and of the ſpiritualtye by aſſent of the tenth Gregory three diſmes, to be leuied in three yeres.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxx.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxi.

Jhon Adrian Vintiner.

Walter Potter.

Jhon Tayloure.

Anno.lv.

IN this.lv.yere, the kynge of Romaynes concluded a couenaunte betwene the kynge and ſyr Gylberte de Clare earle of Glouceter, for a voyage to be taken into the holy lande by the ſayd earle for the kinge. For yͤ which voyage yͤ ſayd Erle ſhould haue toward his charge.viii.M marke, and at the takinge of hys ſhipping other.iiii.M.mark, and to be redy by the firſt day of May next folowinge, and if the Earle were not redy at the ſea ſide at yͤ day wͭ his company to take ſhippinge, he ſhould then forfayte to the kyng.ii.M.marke. For ſurety wherof the ſayd Earle ſhould deliuer into the kynges poſſeſſion, his Caſtell of Henleger ſtandyng vpon the march walis. But this came after to no purpoſe, wherefore the cauſe is not ſhewed. But that iourney was perfourmed by ſir Edward the kinges ſonne, as after ſhalbe to you declared. In this paſſetime the citizins of Lõdon contented ſo well ſir Edwardes minde, that he laboured ſo for them to the kynges grace, that they had then theyr chartoure ſo confirmed, that they ſhould after theyr auncient liberties choſe of them ſelues a Maire and two ſhiriffes, & the ſayd ſhyryffes to haue the offices therunto belonging to fearme, as they had, excepte that where tofore they paied for the fee ferme .iii. hundred and .l. pounde, now they ſhould pay .iiii. hundred and .l. pound. After which confirmacion thus grãted and paſſed, by the kinges brode ſeale, the citizins vpon the .xiiii. daye of July aſſembled at the Guyldhall, and chaſe for their mayre Jhon Adriã Draper, and for ſhiriffes, walter Potter and Jhon Taylour. And vpon the .xvi. daye folowinge ſir Edward beyng preſent, preſented them vnto the king at Weſtminſter, wher thei were admitted and ſworne. And then was ſir Hughe of Othon diſcharged of that rule of the citie.

Citi-
of lon
gayn
ed to
liber

Then the Citezins of theyr frewyll gaue vnto the kyng an hundred marke, and to ſyr Edwarde, v. hundred marke, whyche gyfte the king wel accepted. And ſoone after thei receiued theyr chartour of confirmacion, bering date the xxi. day of July, and yeare of the kinges raygne.

es ge-
by the
ins of
don to
yng &
dward
ſonne.

And for the former conuencion betwene the king and the Erle of Glouceter was not holden, ſyr Edward tooke vpon him the kynges Croſſe. To whome the kynge gaue al ſuch money as was graũted of yͤ lai fee, as before is ſhewed and then tooke ſhippinge at Douer, the .xx. day of Auguſt, and ſo ſayled to Burdeaux with his wife and other noble company.

The departing of ſir Edwarde the kinges ſonne towarde the holy lande

And for that Lewes then king of Fraunce was gone, he taried at Burdeaux a certayne ſeaſon, and after ſped him with his foreſayde companye towarde the Citie of Thunis, where the French kyng was. But or he came thyther Lewes was dead: And the peace concluded betwene Philip his ſonne and the king of Thunis. wherefore ſyr Edwarde entendinge to greeue Goddes enemies, wyth ſome knyghtes of Fraunce, whiche entended the ſame, tooke leaue of the Frenche kynge, and of ſyr Charles hys vncle then kynge of Scicile, and ſayled further into the holy lande, and arryued at a Porte of Acris or Acon. For at that day in the holy land was no mo cities in the poſſeſſion of chryſten men, but that and the Citie of Tyre, with certayne Caſtelles, wherevnto the Chriſten fled often for ſuccoure agaynſt the Sarazins.

When ſyr Edwarde was come to the citie of Acon, the Chriſten knightes receyued him wͭ greate honour and gladneſſe, and lodged him in their beſt maner. Where he taried by the ſpace of a yeare after, as affyrmeth the Frenche Cronycle. For it was not longe after his commyng thyther, but that the Soudayne of Sury, (the which had wonne al the coũtries there aboute) came thyther with a great powre of Sarazyns & aſſauted the towne vigorouſly. But ſyr Edward with the ayde of Chriſten men bare him ſo knightlie, that he defended the citie and the Caſtelles to the ſame belongyng, and territories of the ſame that the Soudane, for all hys great multytude and powre gat there litle honoure, notwithſtandyng, he had in his hoſte (as affirmeth the Frenche Cronicle,) ouer an C. M. Sarazyns. And more affirmeth the ſayd Cronicle, that ſyr Edwarde in hys policies and manful actes ſo honorably behaued him, that he neuer did ſuche acte in all his life folowing albeit that he did after many of greate honoure, but none that was lyke vnto the actes that he there accōpliſhed and brought vnto ende. By the reaſon wherof, his name amonge the Infidels, was had in memory many yeres after.

The polycy and mãhode of ſyr Edwarde the ſonne of Henrye the thirde.

Of the honoure of this marcial knight I haue ſhewed the lenger reherſall, for ſo muche, as I finde it teſtified of the French mē, the whiche I know well by theyr other cronicle, that they make of Engliſh princes, muſt be of great aucthorite, or els by them it ſhold not ſo ſpecially haue ben noted. And more ouer I am aſſured, that if a Frenche Prince had deſerued ſuche a generall price, it ſhoulde haue bene ſet out and articuled euery acte thereof, that it ſhoulde haue contayned a large worke, & the ſpecialties therof, declared to their moſte laude and honoure. Then this noble Prince, beynge thus in Acon, and dayly puttyng the Sarazins to ſhame & greate domages, they ſeynge they might not preuayle agaynſte hym by ſtrength of batayle, caſt how they might deſtroy him by treaſon, and ſent vnto him a Sarazyne in the name of a meſſanger, the whiche in tellinge of his fayned meſſage, wounded him with a knife enuenomed, of the whiche wounde he lay longe or he were therof cured. But after confeſſion made by the Sarazin of all his cōpaſſed treaſon, he was put vnto cruel death.

In this yeare alſo, fell downe the ſteaple of Saynt Mary Bow in Chepe of London and ſlew women and children.

Anno dn̄i. M. CC. lxxi.

Anno dn̄i. M. CC. lxxii.

Jhon Adrian Wyntener. { Gregory Rokeſley. / Henry Waleys. } Anno. lvi.

AND in yͤ.lvi. yere in the moneth of Nouember at the Parliamente holden at Weſtmynſter, the marchaūtes of London and other places of Englande, complayned them to yͤ king that the counteſſe of Flaunders had taken from theym certayne goodes amountynge to a great ſumme. Upon which complaynte the kynge ſente to her to make reſtitucion. But for none was had, the kyng commaunded that all men borne in that parties in Englande ſhould be arreſted, & they & theyr goodes to be vnder ſure keping. By whiche meane in concluſion, ſhe ſent ouer embaſſadours and beſought the king that his marchauntes might vſe their entercourſe into Flaunders, as they before time had doone, and ſuche loſſes as before was by thẽ ſuſtayned, ſhould be recompenſed. And ſo ſoone after, an amity betwene the king and her was concluded.

death
buri-
of Ki-
king
lmain

In this yere aboute the ende of Marche, died Richarde kynge of Almayne and Earle of Cornwail brother to the kyng, and was buried at Hayles, an abbey of white Mũkes, by him before time builded, after he had bene kynge of Almayne, by the terme of. xv. yeres. But after the reherſall made before in the. xxx. yere of this king Henry, he ſhould reigne. xvi. yeres

wiche
t.

In the moneth of June, the monaſtary of the Trinite in the citie of Norwiche, was conſumed with fire, by reaſon of a fray made betwene ſeruauntes of the Abbey & ſome of the Cityzins of the Cyty, which grew to a great ſkyrmyſh: For the Priour of the ſame, and other of the Munkes purueyed ſouldioures, and helde the belfray and the Church by force of armes and threw out ſtones and dartes and ſhot many arrowes, by reaſon whereof manye of the towne were bothe wounded and ſlayne: which brought the commons and yonge men in ſuche a fury & madneſſe, that they fyred the gates, & after forced the fyre wyth reede & drie wood, that the churche wyth the bookes and al other ornamentes of the ſame, and all houſes of office belongynge to the ſame Abbey, were cleane brent & throwen downe, ſo that nothyng was preſerued, except a litle chappel. Whã tidynges of this ryot came to the kinges knowledge, he was therewith greuouſly diſpleaſed, ſo that he rode thither ſoone after, and there commaunded queſtes to be charged of knightes and eſquires yͤ dwelled in the countrey aboute, and to endite al ſuche perſons as were occaſioners and executers of that deede. By reaſon of which inquery, finalli were caſt and iudged vpon yͤ nomber of. xxx. yonge men of the towne, the which were after drawen to the place of Execucion, and there hanged & brent to the great diſcomfiture and ſorow of the Cityzeins. For they thought the Pryour of the place, was the occaſioner of al that miſchiefe, which was borne out and defended by the Byſhop of Norwiche, than beyng named Roger. And this yere was diuers prodygies and ſtraunge tokens ſene in diuers places of Englande, amonge the whiche at Grenwiche beſyde London, a Lambe was yenied, hauynge two perfecte bodies, with all membres, and but one head.

The inquerie in Norwiche for the Riot.

The perſons condempned for riot.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxii. Anno. domini. M. CC. lxxiii.

ruy. Syr Walter * Henry } Rycharde Parys. / Jhon Bedyll. } Anno. lvii.

IN this. lvii. yeare of Kynge Henry, and beginnyng of the ſame, the kyng ſickened, ſo that he was foreſed to kepe hys bedde at

The death of Henry the thyrde who raygned.lvi.yeres and od daies.

Weſtminſter, where he called before him ſir Gilberte Clare Earle of Glouceter, and cauſed him to be newly ſworne to kepe the peace of the lande, to the behofe of Edwarde hys ſonne,and than died vpon the day of Sainte Edmund the Biſhop,or the.xvi.day of Nouember,and was buried vpon the South ſide of Saynte Edwarde in weſtminſter, when he had reigned.lvi.yeres and.xxvii.dayes, leauing after hym ſir Edward beforenamed for his heyre, and Edmunde Crowchebacke. In a table hangyng vpon the Tombe of the ſayde Henry, are written theſe verſes folowyng.

Tertius Henricus iacet hic,pietatis amicus,
Eccleſiam ſtrauit iſtam, quã poſt renouauit:
Reddat ei munus,qui regnat trinus er unus.

¶The which may be Englyſhed as foloweth.

The freende of pitie and almeſſe dede.
Henry the the thirde whilome of England kynge.
VVho this Churche brake, and after to his mede
Again renewed into his faire buildynge.
Now reſteth here, whiche dyd ſo great a thynge.
He yelde his mede , that Lorde in deyite.
That as one God reigneth in perſons three.

Francia.

LEwes the.ix of that name and ſonne vnto the ſecond Philip, begã his reigne ouer ẏ realme of Fraunce, in the yeare of our Lorde a thouſande two.C.xxiii.& the.vii.yere of the thirde Henry then kinge of England.

Thys Lewes was Crowned Raynes,the.vi.day of Auguſt. By the meane of Lewes)as teſtifieth the French Cronicle) returned the bloud of Pipen to the enheritaunce of ẏ crowne of Fraũce, by meane of his wife,whoſe name was Iſabel daughter of Bawdewyn Earle of Henaute, whiche Bawdewyn was dyſcended of *Ermengaunt, ſometime counteſſe of Namoure, whiche was daughter to Charles Duke of Lorayne,the which Charles was liniallie diſcended of Charles the Conqueroure,that was ſonne of Charles Martellus the ſonne of Pepyn.

Emeg

Whan this Lewes had paſſed the ſolempnitie of hys coronacion he made a viage into the country of Poytiers,and there wan from the Engliſhmen, certayn Caſtels and townes as before in the tenth yere of Henry the thyrde is touched. The which viage by him fyniſhed,he at the contemplacion & praier of king Jhon,kyng of Hieruſalem,toke vpon him the croſſe to warre vpon the Turkes, and after all thinges for that vyage made ready,paſſed with his hoſte by Burges and Neuers, and ſo to Lion, and from Lion to Auignon, the which for diſobedience to the church of Rome had ſtande accurſed vppon the terme of .vii. yeres. But where as kynge Lewes ſuppoſed he ſhoulde haue paſſed with hys people, as he hadde paſſed the other cities, the citezins cloſed the gates againſt him, and would not ſuffer him, nor hys to come within the citie. Wherefore the kynge commaunded aſſault to be made, and ſo continued there his ſiege, tyll the middle of Auguſt, the whiche was begonne aboute the ende of Nouember, and loſte there manye of his men, among the which Guy Eearle of S. Paule a man of great fame was one, wyth the Biſhoppe of Lemerike and other, to the number of two thouſande, or there aboute. Wherewyth this Lewes was ſo amoued, that he made a ſolempne othe yͭ he would not depart thence tyll he had won the towne.

When that the Rulers of the towne had knowledge of yͤ kings auowe, and promyſe that he had made, they tooke aduiſement, and ſhortlye after ſent vnto the kyng, two noble men of the citie, to entreate and common of peace. But peace was to them vtterly denied, except they woulde ſubmit theym wholye vnto the correction of the Pope, and after to ſtande to the kynges dome, for diſpleaſure done agaynſt him. In the ende though this condicion were greatlye agaynſt theyr mynde, it was laſtly agreed vnto, and the kynge wyth his people was receyued into the citie. And after he had reſted hym there a ſeaſon, that the citezyns had agreed them with the Popes Legate: and receyued of hym abſolution, with a newe Byſhoppe named Peter Corbio of the Popes election then Gregory the .ix. with other thynges doone accordynge to the ſayne Popes commaundement: Then kyng Lewes commaunded fyrſte the diches of the towne to be filled playne with the grounde. And that doone, he cauſed to bee caſt downe vnto the earth thre hundred of the fayreſt houſes of the citie. And after certayne ſummes of money by hym receyued towarde hys charge, he departed thence towarde Tholowſe, and there by aduice of hys baronye, for ſo muche as Wynter was towarde, he retourned into Fraunce, and ſo ſpedde hym on his iourney, that vpon the euen of all Sainctes he came to a place called Mount Pauncer, in the Prouince of Aluerne, where he was taken with ſtronge ſickeneſſe, and dyed wythin foure dayes after, whoſe corps with greate honoure was conueyed vnto Sainct Denys, and there buryed by hys father, when he had raygned three yeres, leauinge after him a ſonne, the whiche is nowe named ſaynct Lewes, and was then of the age of twelue yeares, or nere there aboute.

The death of Lewes the .ix.

LEwes the tenth of that name, ſurnamed ſainct Lewes, and ſonne of the .ix. Lewes laſt kinge, began his raygne ouer yͤ land of Frãce, in yͤ moneth of Nouember, yͤ yere of grace .xii. C. and .xxvi. & the .x. yere of Henry the thyrde then kyng of England. The which for his tenderneſſe of youthe, was thought inſufficient to take ſo great a charge, and ſpeciallye of the Duke of Britaine, then named Peter Mancler, the which enſenſed and ſtyred manye noble men agaynſt the ſayde Lewes. But at length by prouiſion of queene Blanch his mother and other lordes, he ſubdued his enemies, and at Raynes was crowned in the moneth of December folowing, of the biſhoppe of Soyſons, for ſo muche as at that time the ſea of Raynes was voyde.

The fourth yere of hys raygne, and of his age the ſeuentene, he buylded the houſe of religion called Royan mount, and ſet therein Monkes of Cyteaux order white Monkes, and endewed them with riche poſſeſſions.

It was not longe after that greate variaunce fell betwene the vniuerſitie or ſtudentes of Paris, and the citezyns of the ſame, in ſuch wiſe that the ſtudentes were in purpoſe to haue left the Cytye, and to haue kept theyr ſtudy elles where. Of the whiche ſtryfe the Frenche booke expreſſeth not the cauſe, but ſaieth that yͤ king made good ſpeede to agree theym, for ſo much as kyng Henry of England had made laboure to the ſaide ſtudentes to come into his countrey, and to inhabite them there wyth many great priuileges. But in cõcluſion yͤ French king ſo entreated them that thei agreed to reſt there ſtyll. And that of a congruence, for they might dwell in no land, wher they ſhuld more ſuerly be defẽded.

The floure de Lyce.

For the Frenche king beareth the floure de Lice for one of yͤ cauſes, that is to ſay, for to defẽd the clargy. And the faith of Chriſt, betokeneth the myddle leefe. And the thyrde betokeneth Chiualry. So that by the Chiualry, the Clargy is defended, which maintaine the faith of yͤ holy church. About this ſeaſon king Lewes maried to his feere Margarete the doughter of the Earle of Prouince. Sone after the matrimony was ſolempniſed, Frederike the ſecond, before in the ſtorie of Henry the third minded, Emperoure of Almaine, ſente vnto Lewes, requiring him that he would mete him at a place called Walcolour, to the ende that he might common with him: whiche requeſt king Lewes accepted, and with a goodly company kept ther hys daye of meetyng. But when the Emperour was ware that he was commen thither with ſuch a company, he fayned him ſicke, and broke hys appoyntment. Wherefore the Frenche men conſtrued, that if the kyng had commen thyther with a ſmall or weke company, he woulde haue conueyed hym into high Almaine, & there to haue kept him til he had of him his pleaſure, concerning the war betwene Henrye and him, or in other thinges. But when kynge Lewes eſpied the deluſion of the Emperoure, he then retourned into Frãce.

The A
gines
cted w
hereſye

It was not long after the king was enfourmed of the obſtinacie of the Albigenſes, the which of lõg time had bene effected with diuers pointes of hereſy, & manye times reconciled by the kinges of Fraunce & other, and yet fallen agayn to the ſaid errour: wherfore the king ſent vnto ſir Ihon Beumounte the whyche ioyned vnto them, charging hym to enuade that coũtrie, & to waſt and deſtroy it, til he had forced them to reſtore to the churche ſuch goodes as they before had takẽ from it, and ouer that to cauſe thẽ to make amends to the good chriſten people, which they harmed by the meanes of theyr rapynes and extorcions. Upon whiche commaundement thus frome the Kynge receaued, the ſayde Jhon wyth a competente number of knyghtes entred the ſaide countrey, and layde ſiege vnto a ſtronge Caſtell called Mount Royall. And after many ſorte aſſaultes, wanne the ſayde Caſtell, and manned it wyth frenche men. And then rode to another ſtronge holde, than named Saygos, and there likewiſe ordered the ſame. And after waſtinge the countrey, wanne from them many townes & holdes, ſo ỹ in thende he forced the chiefe rulers of that prouince to obei thẽ to all hys heſtes, & delyuered to hym ſuertyes or hoſtages for the performaunce of the ſame. So that he retourned into Fraunce, with greate pompe and honoure, and receaued of the kyng at his home comminge greate thanke, wyth manye ryche gyftes. Aboute the fyftene yeare of kynge Lewes, the war was quickened betwene thys Lewes and Henry the third then kynge of Englande, for cauſes before ſhewed the ſixtenth yere of the ſayde Henrye. And after that warre (as before is ſhewed) ended, the kynge, whiche was towarde the Citie of Lyon to haue viſited Innocente the fourthe, whiche thither was fled for feare of Frederike the forenamed Emperoure, was taken with ſicknes named Diſſenteria or the flux. Wherewith he was ſo greuouſly vexed, that he lay long at a towne called Poyntoyſe, and was in great ioperdye of lyfe, where laſtlye it came vnto hys mynde, that if it pleaſed God to reſtore hym to hys health, he would make a voyage into the holy lande, and there warre vpon Chriſtes enemyes. After whiche promyſe ſolempnly auowed, he mended daylye, and was ſoone after reſtored vnto his health. When the kynge was recouered and retourned vnto Parys, he called a counſayle of ſpirituall and temporal, and there ſhewed vnto theym of the promyſe, whiche he had made, requirynge them of their aſſiſtence and ayde, wherein he found his lordes were agreable.

re be-
e He-
pc.iii.
wes
nth.

And in the tyme and ſeaſon, that prouiſion was made for that iourney, the kyng with a goodlye companye rode vnto the abbey of Cluny, to viſite the foreſayd Innocent the fourth, and he taryed with him fyftene dayes. And after hys matter wyth hym ſpedde, with playne remiſſion vnto hym graunted, and all other that kept with him that voyage, he retourned into Fraunce. And vpon Witſonday folowynge, he kept a great courte of hys landes at Meleon, where in preſence of them, he called before him Beatrice doughter vnto the Earle of Prouince, and ſyſter to the Quene hys wyfe, and there gaue her in marriage vnto Charles his brother, & made him there knyght, with manye other for his loue. And the day folowing he gaue vnto the ſayde Charles, the thyꝛde then kyng of England. The which foꝛ his tenderneſſe of youthe, was thought inſufficient to take ſo great a charge, and ſpeciallye of the Duke of Bꝛitaine, then named Peter Mancler, the which enſenſed and ſtyꝛed manye noble men agaynſt the ſayde Lewes. But at length by pꝛouiſion of queene Blanch his mother and other loꝛdes, he ſubdued his enemies, and at Raynes was crowned in the moneth of December folowing, of the biſhoppe of Soyſons, foꝛ ſo muche as at that time the ſea of Raynes was voyde.

The fourth yere of hys raygne, and of his age the ſeuentene, he buylded the heuſe of religion called Royan mount, and ſet therein Monkes of Cyteaux oꝛder white Monkes, and endewed them with riche poſſeſſions.

It was not longe after that greate variaunce fell betwene the vniuerſitie oꝛ ſtudentes of Paris, and the citezyns of the ſame, in ſuch wiſe that the ſtudentes were in purpoſe to haue left the Cytye, and to haue kept theyꝛ ſtudy elles where. Of the whiche ſtryfe the Frenche booke expꝛeſſeth not the cauſe, but ſaieth that yͤ king made good ſpeede to agree theym, foꝛ ſo much as kyng Henry of England had made laboure to the ſaide ſtudentes to come into his countrey, and to inhabite them there wyth many great pꝛiuileges. But in cōcluſion yͤ French king ſo entreated them that thei agreed to reſt there ſtyll. And that of a congruence, foꝛ they might dwell in no land, wher they ſhuld moꝛe ſuerly be defēded.

The floure de Lyce.

For the Frenche king beareth the floure de Lice foꝛ one of yͤ cauſes, that is to ſay, foꝛ to defēd the clargy. And the faith of Chꝛiſt, betokeneth the myddle leefe. And the thyꝛde betokeneth Chiualry. So that by the Chiualry, the Clargy is defended, which maintaine the faith of yͤ holy church. About this ſeaſon king Lewes maried to his feere Margarete the doughter of the Earle of Pꝛouince. Sone after the matrimony was ſolempniſed, Frederike the ſecond, befoꝛe in the ſtoꝛie of Henry the third minded, Emperoure of Almaine, ſente vnto Lewes, requiring him that he would mete him at a place called Walcolour, to the ende that he might common with him: whiche requeſt king Lewes accepted, and with a goodly company kept ther hys daye of meetyng. But when the Emperour was ware that he was commen thither with ſuch a company, he fayned him ſicke, and bꝛoke hys appoyntment. Wherefoꝛe the Frenche men conſtrued, that if the kyng had commen thyther with a ſmall oꝛ weke company, he woulde haue conueyed hym into high Almaine, & there to haue kept him til he had of him his pleaſure, concerning the war betwene Henrye and him, oꝛ in other thinges. But when kynge Lewes eſpied the deluſion of the Emperoure, he then retourned into Frāce. It was not long after the king was enfourmed of the obſtinacie of the Albigenſes, the which of lōg time had bene effected with diuers pointes of hereſy, & manye times reconciled by the kinges of Fraunce & other, and yet fallen agayn to the ſaid errour: wherfoꝛe the king ſent vnto ſir Jhon Beumounte the whyche ioyned vn-

The A
gines i
cted wi
hereſye.

to them, charging hym to enuade that coũtrie, & to waſt and deſtroy it, til he had forced them to reſtore to the churche ſuch goodes as they before had takẽ from it, and ouer that to cauſe thẽ to make amends to the good chryſten people, which they harmed by the meanes of theyr rapynes and extorcions.

Upon whiche commaundement thus frome the Kynge receaued, the ſayde Jhon wyth a competente number of knyghtes entred the ſaide countrey, and layde ſiege vnto a ſtronge Caſtell called Mount Royall. And after many forte aſſaultes, wanne the ſayde Caſtell, and manned it wyth Frenche men. And then rode to another ſtronge holde, than named Saygos, and there likewiſe ordered the ſame. And after waſtinge the countrey, wanne from them many townes & holdes, ſo yͤ in thende he forced the chiefe rulers of that prouince to obei thẽ to all hys heſtes, & delyuered to hym ſuertyes or hoſtages for the performaunce of the ſame. So that he retourned into Fraunce, with greate pompe and honoure, and receaued of the kyng at his home comminge greate thanke, wyth manye ryche gyftes. Aboute the fyftene yeare of kynge Lewes, the war was quickened betwene thys Lewes and Henry the third then kynge of Englande, for cauſes before ſhewed the ſixtenth yere of the ſayde Henrye. And after that warre (as before is ſhewed) ended, the kynge, whiche was towarde the Citie of Lyon to haue viſited Innocente the fourthe, whiche thither was fled for feare of Frederike the forenamed Emperoure, was taken with ſicknes named Diſſenteria or the flux.

rre be-
e He-
he.iii.
wes
nth.

Wherewith he was ſo greuouſly vexed, that he lay long at a towne called Poyntoyſe, and was in great iopardye of lyfe, where laſtlye it came vnto hys mynde, that if it pleaſed God to reſtore hym to hys health, he would make a voyage into the holy lande, and there warre vpon Chriſtes enemyes.

After whiche promyſe ſolempnly auowed, he mended daylye, and was ſoone after reſtored vnto his health. When the kynge was recouered and retourned vnto Parys, he called a counſayle of ſpirituall and temporal, and there ſhewed vnto theym of the promyſe, whiche he had made, requirynge them of their aſſiſtence and ayde, wherein he found his lordes were agreable.

And in the tyme and ſeaſon, that prouiſion was made for that iourney, the kyng with a goodlye companye rode vnto the abbey of Cluny, to viſite the foreſayd Innocent the fourth, and he taryed with him fyftene dayes. And after hys matter wyth hym ſpedde, with playne remiſſion vnto hym graunted, and all other that kept with him that voyage, he retourned into Fraunce. And vpon Witſonday folowynge, he kept a great courte of hys landes at Meleon, where in preſence of them, he called before him Beatrice doughter vnto the Earle of Prouince, and ſyſter to the Quene hys wyfe, and there gaue her in marriage vnto Charles his brother, & made him there knyght, with manye other for his loue. And the day folowing he gaue vnto the ſayde Charles, the Earledome of Amon, wyth the Lordſhyppe of Mayne. And ſoone after he rode vnto Parys, where he aſſembled manye of hys Lordes to holde wyth hym that iourney.

The Frydaye folowinge the feaſt of Penthecoſt, in the yere of oure lorde xii. hundred and foure & the two and twentye yere of the raygne of the ſayde Lewes, he with many of his Lordes departed from Paris vpon his iourney towarde the holy lande. In whiche was croiſed alſo, the archbyſhoppes of Bourges, and of Raynes, the Byſhoppes of Laon, of Orleaunce, and of Beauuais, the Earles of Artoys, and of Sainct Paule of Bloy, of Barre, of Marche, and of Mountford, with manye other noble men whiche were long to rehearce. With the which companye th kyng paſſed through Burgoyne, and ſo to Lion the vttermoſt border of Fraunce, where the kyng founde at that tyme the forenamed Innocent the fourth, which ther taryed for feare of the Emperour Frederike.

When the kyng hadde a ſeaſon there taryed with the Pope, he ſent forth the vaward of his hoſt, towarde the place called Aque Mort. And ſhortlye after folowed him ſelfe with the reſt of hys people. But certayne of his vawarde paſſing by the caſtell called Roche of Clyn, were ſpoyled and robbed, and ſome ſlayne. Whereof the kyng beinge infourmed, charged hys knyghtes to aſſaulte the ſayd Caſtell. The whiche was doone, and the ſouldyours hanged, and the Caſtell made playne with the grounde. And after he helde on his way tyll he came to the foreſayde porte of Aque Mort, or the dead ſea, where he tooke ſhypppyng, and ſayled forth vppon Bartylmewe euen or the .xxiiii. day of Auguſte, and landed after in the Prouince of Cypre, where he taryed all the Wynter folowyng, for ſome part of hys hoſte that as yet was behinde. Where of the kyng, he was ioyouſlye receyued, and at his departyng thence, kepte companye with him in the ſame iourney.

But there Fortune beganne to frowne vpon kyng Lewes. For in the time of his taryinge, muche of his people there ſickened and died. Amonge the whiche, paſſed to god theſe men of name folowing, the biſhop of Beauuias, the erles of Mountforde, of Barre, and of Vendoſme, with diuers other, to the number of two hundred and fourtye. When kynge Lewes not all without troubles, as diſſentions among his people, and daunger of takynge the ſea, had paſſed the Winter and a parte of the beginninge of the yere, laſtly about Trinitie Sondaye he tooke ſhippynge at the porte of Cypre then named Dommeton or Dommeſon, and landed nere vnto the citie of Damas or Damiet, the Friday after. When the Chriſten hoſte were commen nere vnto the porte of Damas, the king cauſed theym to be ſhypped in ſmall veſſels and ſo in order to ſayle or row toward the citie. But the Sarazyns being ware of their comming, iſſued out of the citie, and defended the port vigorouſlye, ſo that manye a chriſten man was ſlayne at that recounter. But in the ende the diſcomfiture was tourned vpon the Sarazins. Foꝛ the chiefe Capytayne of the towne wyth two admiralles were there ſlayne, and manye of their knightes. Then they gaue backe vnto the towne, and ſuffered the Chꝛiſten to land. The king then pyght hys pauilions, and ſtrengthed his field foꝛ ſodeyne bꝛeakyng out of the Turkes, and ſo reſted him and his people the ſondaye and Mundaye folowyng.

And as faſt as the chꝛiſten made pꝛouiſion to oꝛder foꝛ theyꝛ ſure liynge in the field, ſo faſt the Turkes within the towne made purueyaunce to conuey ſuche goodes as they might out of the citie, and laſtlye ſet the houſes on fyꝛe, and voyded vnknowyng to yͤ chꝛiſten hoſte. Anone as the flambe of the fyꝛe appeared, the chꝛiſten menne withoute reſiſtence entred the citie and quenched the fyꝛe, and after poſſeſſed the citie. Here I paſſe ouer certayne legacions and meſſages ſent from a Pꝛynce of the Oꝛient vnto kyng Lewes, wherin appeareth mooꝛe fame of woꝛdes then of thinges of trouth.

Then the Temples and Synagoges of the Cytie were halowed and occupyed to Chꝛiſten mennes vſe. And there the kyng wyth hys hoſte reſted hym tyll the moneth of Nouember folowynge, in the whiche ſeaſon came to him yͤ earle of Poytiers wyth a fayꝛe companye. Then kyng Lewes wyth his people departed from Damas the twentye day of Nouember by the ryuer Nylus, paſſynge with ſmall veſſelles towarde a ſtronge holde called Maſſour, whither at length they came wyth greate daunger. Howe be it, they myght not come nere vnto the towne to laye their ſiege thereunto, becauſe of a ryuer there runninge, named Thanoys oꝛ Thanoes. Wherefoꝛe the kynge pyghte hys pauilions betwene the ſayde ryuer and the riuer of Nylus.

In thys whyle that the chꝛiſten hoſte was thus lodged, woꝛd was bꝛoughte vnto the kynge that the Soudane of Babylon was dead, the whiche befoꝛe hys death, had pꝛouided a greate hoſte to bee ſent into Egypt to withſtand the chꝛiſten hoſte, and hadde committed the rule therof vnto an hardy valyaunte Turke named Saphardin. The which with a great people, came downe to hys towne of Maſſour oꝛ Macour, and there daylye made aſſaultes vppon the chꝛiſten hoſt, ſo that betwen them were had manye bykerynges and ſkirmiſhes to bothe damages.

Laſtly the kynge aduertiſinge in hys minde that he might nothing dere the Sarazins, withoute he might paſſe the riuer of Thanoys, concluded by the aduice of his mariners to make a bꝛidge of ſhippes together, in ſuche wiſe that a paſſage was made foꝛ his knyghtes.

When the Turkes eſpyed thys oꝛdinaunce, and apperceyued well that if the chꝛiſten hoſt had paſſed that riuer, it ſhoulde bee to theyꝛ great diſaduauntage, anone with all oꝛdinaunce and ſhot that they mighte make, they did the vttermoſte of theyꝛ powers to lette the perfityng of thys bꝛidge and paſſage of the chꝛiſten hoſte. And to this fell another contrarye vnto the Chꝛiſten.

Foꝛ

For the water of the ryuer which was brode and deepe, was ſo troublous of waue, that yͤ bridge therwith was all to ſhaken, and daungerous to ſtand on.

But theſe Turkes entendynge to damage the chriſten, left a certayne to defend the paſſage, while the other by a forde or paſſage vnknowen to the Chriſten, came ouer the ryuer, and aſſaulted the Frenchmen egerlye, ſo that there was betwene theym foughten a cruell battayle. Howbeit through deuine power of God, the Turkes were ouerſet, and many of thē ſlayne and taken. The which battaile was foughten vppon the .xx. day of January. But yet myght not the chriſten wyn ouer the ryuer. For daylye the ſtrength of the countreys there nere, came down and fortified the hoſte of the Sarazins more and more.

The day folowing the Purification of our Ladye, blewe ſuche a tempeſt of wynde, that it dyd much harme both vnto the ſhips, and alſo to the tentes and pauilions of the chriſten hoſt. And with that ſcarcitie of victaile beganne to appeare, ſo that the king determined to retourne agayne vnto Damaſſe.

VHen yͤ Turkes eſpied the retourne of the Frenchemen, thei ordeined foure barges or ſuch like veſſels, and ſtuffed them with pitche, roſen, grece, and other liquet and brenning ſtuffe, & in the night ſodenly brought them abrode wher the chriſten flote lay, and then caſte on theym Grekiſhe fire, the which anone ſet them in a light fire. By reaſon wherof yͤ chriſten flote was in greate ieoperdie, and with greate labour preſerued from brenning.

For this deſpyte that the Sarazins had done vnto the chriſten, the king was ſo therewith amoued, that he ſayde and promyſed that he would not depart thence, tyll he had doone to the Turkes ſome diſpleaſure. And vpon enquiſition made, he was enfourmed of a paſſage or foorde, yͤ was within iii. miles of his paulion. Wherupō he called a cōcell of his lords, and ſhewed to thē his purpoſe, geuing to the erle of Artoys the leding of his foreward, & charged him that when he were paſſed the ford, that he ſhoulde tarye there tyll the other deale of the hoſte were ouerpaſſed. When al things was ordered to the kinges minde, the ſayde earle with his cōpany ſet forward, and paſſed the ſaid foord without daunger, & there forgetting what to him was before cōmaunded of the king, ſet forth incontinentlye toward the Turkes, which he wel knewe kepte the place, where the bridge was before made. And ther fought with them which were all vnpurueyed, & vnknowing of hys ſodein comming. Wherfore he ſlew manye of them, & after chaſed the other, which for ſuccour fled to the citie of Maſſour foreſaid, whome he folowed ſo egerlye, that in the entring of the city, he entred with theym, & there was ſlaine with a certain of his knightes. By reaſō whereof the ſouldious of yͤ towne were ſo encouraged, that they iſſued out vpon the chriſten & draue theym backe, tyll they ſawe the kynges power come, and then returned vnto the citie & ſhut with ſtrength the gates.

Then kyng Lewes beinge aſcertained of the ſayd earles death, made for him great dole. And after prouiſion made for the lodging of his people, he then made dyuers bridges and paſſages ouer yͤ ryuer of Thanoies. And for the chriſten hoſt ſhuld be aſſured from the Soudane, and vnware aſſautes and reproches of infidelles, therefore he cloſed them wythin a ſtrength of a diche and pale, that theyr enemies myghte no waye haue waye into them, and named that ſtrength a parke. In yͤ whiche the chriſten hoſte there lodged all the ſeaſon of Lent.

In the whiche time the yonge Soudayne came downe wyth a greate hoſte of people. And for he myght not lodge his people within the towne, therfore he made an other lyke parke vnto the chriſten men, & there cloſed his people ſo yͭ betwene the chriſten & theim was many conflictes & aſſautes, ſometyme to the loſſe of that one, and efte to the loſſe of that other. But the Soudayne made all the meanes that he might to kepe victaile from the chriſten hoſt, and ſtopped al the paſſages betwene Damaſſe and theim, that from thence they might haue no ſuccour. By meane whereof, diſeaſes and ſickenes fell amonge the chriſten, ſo that they died hougely.

When kyng Lewes was ware of theſe miſeries on euerye ſyde, he ſent to the Soudaine to haue a truce for a certayne time. But in concluſion none wold be graūted. Wherfore of neceſſitie he was forced to breke his fielde, and with as good policy as he might drew him to the riuer of Nylus, and ſo by ſhip paſſed downe by the ſaide ryuer towarde Damas. But he paſſed not far or that he was aſſauted on euery ſide, ſo that the fight continued ſtil without ſeaſing, to the great loſſe of the chriſten hoſte.

Then laſtly came the Soudain with a freſhe companye, and beſet the king ſo about, yͭ in the ende he was taken with his .ii. brethren, Charles and Roberte, the earle of Poitiers, the earle of Angeou, the earle of Flaūders, the duke of Britaine, the earle of Soyſons. And in the fight was ſlaine the biſhops of Langrees, and of Soyſons, wͭ many other, of whom the names be not put in writing.

The takig of Lewes the Frēche kyng.

When kinge Lewes was thus takē he was ſicke. Wherfore with all diligence the Soudayne commaunded him to be conueyed vnto Maſſour, and after cauſed all yͤ other of his men to be ſlayne, as many as were wounded or ſycke, except they were men of greate fame, by whom great aduaūtage might riſe by reaſon of their raunſome. And thus was the chriſten hoſt taken and ſpoiled of the Sarazins, the Thurſday next folowyng the feaſte of Eaſter, in yͤ yere of our lord. M.ii.C.l. & the .xxiiii. yere of the reigne of this king Lewes. The which after with the other of the nobles of Fraūce, were ſent vnto Babilon or Cayer, and there kept in ſundrie priſons.

IN proces of time it was agreed, yͭ kinge Lewes ſhould be deliuered frō pryſon, & conueied ſaufly into the handes of chriſtendom, vpon condicion that he ſhoulde firſt render, and geue vp into the Soudans power, the citie of Damaſſe, with all ſuche pꝛiſoners as he had of Turkes and Sarazins, at that daye in his power, ⁊ ouer that he ſhuld yelde by a certen day a certen ſũme of beſaundes, whiche after the French boke ſhould bee.viii.M.beſaundes Sarazin. But Peter Diſcroy ſayeth.iii.C. M.beſaundes. Of theſe beſaũdes I haue learned there ſhould be.ii. That one is called a Beſaunde Imperiall, and the other a Beſaunde Ducall. This Beſaunde Imperial is woꝛth.l.ducates, and the ducall Beſaunde is woꝛth.xx. ducates. A ducat which is named a ducat de Camera is woꝛth.iiii. ſhillinges.viii.d. A ducat Papall and Venizian be of leſſe value, as iii.d.and.iiii.d.in a piece. Then if the raunſome be eſtemed after the imperiall beſaunde, he paide after the rate of.iiii.ſhillings and.vi.d the ducat, ⁊ after the ſũme of.viii. M.beſaundes, in ſterling money lxxxx.M.poũde. And foꝛ this the Soudane pꝛomiſed to deliuer all ſuch pꝛiſoners as he had in pꝛiſõs of chꝛiſten menne. But in that he bꝛake pꝛomiſe, foꝛ of.xii.thouſand he delyuered ſcarſly thꝛe. In this time of taking of the French king a companye of yonge men aſſembled them together in Fraunce, ⁊ vnder theyꝛ captaine, which toke vpon him like a biſhop, paſſed by Parys, and Oꝛleaunce, ⁊ other good townes of Fraunce, ſaiyng: that they would reſtoꝛe the kinge to his libertie.

A cõpanye of yongmẽ

But laſtly when they dꝛew nere vnto the poꝛt of the dead ſea, wher thei ſhould haue taken ſhippyng, there the fell to all theft ⁊ aduoutrie. Wherefoꝛe the people of that countrey ſet vpon them, and ſlew theyꝛ captayne, and the moꝛe part of theyꝛ companye, wherthꝛough that ſymple felowſhippe, whyche named them ſelf ſhepherdes, was diſſeuered and ſparkeled. When this king Lewes was deliuered from the daunger of his enemies, and was bꝛought out of Epipt in to Syꝛie, he there executed many dedes of charity, and of mekenes, and repayꝛed the citie of Ioppen, and other ſtanding vpon the Sea ſyde, and from thence went on pilgrimage to Nazareth, and to the mounte of Thaboꝛ. And when he was retourned vnto Ioppen, he receyued there tydynges of the deathe of dame Blanch his mother. Wher after diuers obſeruaũces and pꝛayers, done foꝛ the ſoule of hys mother, he toke there ſhypping, and ſailed toward Fraunce. And not wythoute trauayle and trouble of the ſea, at the end of.xii. wekes he landed in the hauen of Marcill oꝛ Martill, and ſo ſpedde his iourney, that he came to Parys, in the yere of our loꝛde.xii.C. and.liiii.and the.vi.yere after ẏ he tooke vppon him the voyage: where, of the citezins he was receyued with moſte honour ⁊ gladneſſe. And there callinge a counſayle, he refourmed many thinges foꝛ the weale of the Realme, and made one law, which is ſpeciallye remembꝛed, that is, that no man being in authoꝛitie of any high office, as Pꝛouoſte, Pꝛetoꝛ, oꝛ anye like office, ſhuld bye any landes oꝛ rentes within that loꝛdſhyp, that he had the rule of. And foꝛ ẏ cauſe that he ſhould not extoꝛt oꝛ wꝛõg,

oꝛ

or bie ſuch lands the better chepe, by reaſon of his might or power.

At thys daye the Prouoſtie or chiefe rule or office, was in the handes of the citezins of Parys, by reaſon of a ſeale thereof, made vnto them by the kinges progenitours. By meane wherof, many iniuries ⁊ wronges were done vnto the common people, and manye theues and other tranſgreſſoures by fauour and money paſſed vnpuniſhed. Whereof this bleſſed kyng Lewes, beinge enfourmed vppon ſufficient profe made, diſcharged the citezins thereof, and aſſigned a man named Stephan Boyle in that offyce, aſſigning to him yerely a certayn ſtipende for executing of that offyce, and ordayned that euer after, the Prouoſt of Parys ſhoulde be named by the king, and his heires kinges.

He alſo made ordynaunces to auoyde ſtrumpets out of the citye, and puniſhment for al accuſtomable great ſwearers, with many other good ordinaunces ⁊ lawes, the which I paſſe ouer for lengthyng of time.

In this time ⁊ ſeaſon wer abiding in Frañce, in a place called ſ. Nycholas de Bois three children borne in Flañders, the which wer ſent thither to learne the maner of Fraunce, and alſo to teach ẏ chyldren of a knight named ſyr Gillim̄ de Brunz to ſhote. Theſe children vpon a ſeaſon paſſed the bondes of the abbey grounde, and entred the warreyn of a lord of Fraunce, called Enguerran, lord of Coucy, and there chaſed ⁊ ſhot at connies for theyr diſport. The which wer taken of the ſeruañtes of the ſaid Enguerran, and preſẽted to their lord, the which of haſty cruelneſſe, caused the three children without pitie to be hanged. Whereof hearinge the abbot of S. Nicholas, complained him with aſſiſtence of the forenamed ſyr Gillim̄ vnto the kinge. The which incontinentlye ſent to the ſaid Enguerran charging him to apere before his barony, to anſwere to ſuch matters as there ſhuld be laide to his charge. Where in the end, after many reaſons for him layde, he by great inſtance of his frendes was pardoned of the greuous offence, wyth condicion folowinge, that is to meane, fyrſt he ſhuld pay vnto the king. x. M. pounde of Parys money, which is to meane, xii. C. l. li. ſterling. And ouer that he ſhoulde war vpon gods enemies in Syria by the ſpace of. iii. yeres continually, vpon his owne coſt ⁊ charge. And thirdly he ſhuld buyld a chapell, wherein two prieſtes ſhoulde ſing for euer, for the ſouls of ẏ ſaid infãtes. Or after maiſter Gagwin with the foreſaide. x. M. li. and other ayde of the king, the Hoſpital in Paris, named the houſe of God in Pontoyſe, with the frayter of ẏ frere minors or gray freres in Parys, were made and repayred.

Cruelnes.

Then after many dedes of charitie done by this vertuous prince as making of diuers houſes of religion, ſeruing of the pore people with his owne handes, with faſtinges, ⁊ other infinite deedes of pitie, he laſtly in the. xxxiii. yere of reygne honorably receyued Henry the. iii. king of Englande ⁊ ſtabliſhed with him a peace as before in the. xliiii. yeare of the raygne of the ſaid Henry is declared.

And that done, he in the. xxxvi.

yere of his raigne, maried his eldeſt ſonne Philip vnto Iſabel the doughter of Iames king of Aragon. By reaſon of which mariage the French king gaue ouer to the ſayd Iames, all ſuch ryght as he had in the lordſhyppes of Beſac, Dampiere, Rouſſelyon, and Barſellon. And the ſayd Iames acquited and gaue ouer to Lewes, all ſuche right and title as he had in the lordſhyppes of Catcaſſon, of Bygorre, and of Anylly.

And ſone after he ſent Charles hys brother at the requeſt of the iiii. Alexander then Pope, into Cicilia with a great power, to withſtande the violence of Manfrede ſonne of Frederike the.ii. then emperour, the which againſt ryght, withelde that kingdom from the church of Rome. Whom Charles after long fighte, at a place called Boneuent, ſlew in battaile, & after was made king of the ſaid countrey by the authoritie of the ſayd Alexander, paiyng yerely vnto the churche of Rome. xl.M. ducates, which is muche like after the rate of ſterlinge money.viii.M.vi.C. lxvi.li.xiii.s.iiii.d. euery ducat accompted at.iiii. ſhillinges.iiii.d.

IT fel ſo after, that in the.xlii. yeare of king Lewes, Clemẽt the.iiii. of that name ſent a legate vnto Lewes requiring him to ayde the chriſten, whiche in Siria were greuouſly warred with the Turkes and Sarazins. At whoſe requeſt the kynge called a counſaile, wherin it was agreed that the ſuccour ſhould be made: wherfore the king with his iii. ſonnes, Philip, Ihon, & Peter, toke on them the croſſe. And in the firſt day of Maye, the yere of hys reigne.xliii. he with his ſaid ſõnes and many other lordes of Frãce as well ſpiritual as temporall, departed from Paris, & from thens roade vnto Cluny, wher he reſted him.iiii. daies. And frõ thens ſped his iourney, tyl he came to ẏ forenamed port of the dead ſea. Wher met with him a Cardinall and legate of Rome, with diuers other biſhops of Fraunce, the kynge of Nauerne, the dukes ſonne of Britayne, Alphons Earle of Poytiers, the Earles of Artoys, & of Flaunders, with many other.

And while the king with his hoſt lay at the ſaid port tariyng a conueniable wind, a diſſention fyl betwen the Catholeines and ẏ men of Prouince, ſo that among them was foughten ſuche a ſkirmiſhe, that betwene them was ſlain vpõ a.C. men, & many mo wounded or the ſtrife might be all ſeaſed.

Soone after the kynge wyth hys Lordes tooke ſhyppynge and ſayled wyth greate daunger of tempeſt, tyll laſtly, he came to the Iſle of Sardynes, where the Chriſten Hooſt reſted theim a ſeaſon, and after kept their courſe til they came to the port of Thunys or Cartage, the.xviii. daye of the moneth of Iuly, where they reſted in their ſhyppes that nyght. Vpon the morne, when they ſhoulde land, all the port was beſet wyth Turkes and infidels, which ſhot dartes and caſt ſtones, to the greuaunce of the chriſten hoſt, ſo that they wan lande with great difficultie and paine.

When the kinge was landed, he

lodged his people, and after ſente to ſearche for freſhe water, to refreſhe with hys hoſte. In whiche meane whyle the Admyral of the kinges nauie came vnto the king requiring him to haue a certaine of knightes aſſigned vnto hym, truſting in god to win ſhortly the towne. And ſo ſped him, and aſſauted the towne.

But anone as the captayne of the towne was ware of their cõming, he with a greate companye iſſued out of the towne, and forſed the chriſten hoſte to geue backe. Wherefore kinge Lewes ſent the marſhal of his hoſt with a certain number of knights to ſuccour the ſayde admyrall, and in time of the fighte, gate betwene the Sarazins and the towne, ſo that while ſome fought with the Turkes, the other wan the towne, whereof the Turkes being ware, fled ſoone after, but not without great ſlauter of them. For after that fight, manye of theym which eſcaped from the battell, were after ſlayne in cauerns and holes, where thei hid them in the ground. When yͤ town of Cartage or Thunys was by the Chriſten thus wonne, anone the kynge commaunded the dead bodyes to be caſt out, & the towne to bee clenſed of all odours and filthes. And when all was doone, as the kyng hadde commaunded, he then entred the towne, and lodged within as many as the towne wolde holde. And the other he fortified wͭ diches & other ſtrengthes to preſerue theym from theyr enemies, and ſo taryed there the commyng of Charles his brother and kyng of Cicilia. It was not long after that the Cytye or towne was wonne, but that the kyng of Thunys wyth a greate hooſte of Turkes came nere to the towne, and made ſhowes and offers, but they abode not thereby. One day the Earle of Artoys in one company, and a knight called ſyr Peter Cabellanc, in another company, gat betwen the ſea & the Turkes, that they were compelled to fight, ſo that betwene theim was a cruell fyghte, and manye ſlayne vpon bothe ſides. But in the ende the Turkes were diſcomfited and chaſed to theyr ſhyppes. In thys fighte were ſlayne two Chriſten knyghtes, named le Chaſtlayne, and ſyr Jhon de Ronſſoylers. After this battayle or fyght the Sarazins made no great aſſaultes.

e win-
e of
unys.

But then by reaſon of the vnwholſomnes of that countrey, ſickenes fell amonge the chriſten hoſte, ſo that the people died faſte. And ſhortly after the king was taken with ſuch a flixe, and therwith an ague, that he kept his bedde. And after the rightes of the Churche taken, and certain monicions geuen to hys ſonne Philippe, howe he ſhoulde behaue him in guiding of the realme of Fraunce, knowing the houre of death approched, charged ſuch as were aboute him, that they ſhoulde laye him vpon a bedde of aſhes and powder. Where he ſo liyng a ſeaſon in praier expired, the day folowing S. Bartholomeus day, or the .xxv. day of Auguſt, when he had raygned .xliiii. yeres lacking two monethes, leauyng after him the .iii. forenamed ſonnes, Philip, Jhon, and Peter. Then the bowels were buried in Cicile, & the body enbaumed with ryche oyntmentes, was caryed

The death
of Lewes.

vnto S. Denis of Frauce, & there with great reuerence enterred.

Phylyppe the third of that name, and ſonne of Lewes, began hys raigne ouer the realme of Fraunce, the ſyre and twentye day of the mooneth of September, in the yere of oure Lorde, a thouſand, two hundred, thre ſcore & ten, and the foure and fyftie yere of Henry the third, then king of England, and began then as before is ſhewed in Affrica, at the towne or cytye of Thunys or Cartage, accõpanied with Charles his vncle kynge of Cicill, the whiche came to the porte of Thunys the ſame daye that kyng Lewes died, and after taried there, and had many conflictes with the Turkes, and bare him ſo manfullye, that in the ende he forſed the kyng of Thunys to ſeeche to him for peace. The which was concluded for ten yeres, with certayne condicons of paiynge of certayne money, for the kynge of Frunces coſtes and certayne trowages of olde tyme due vnto the kynge of Cicile yerelye to bee payed, wyth many other articles concernynge the ſame peace which I paſſe ouer.

After whyche peace concluded and aſſured, the kynges of Frãce and Cicile tooke ſhippinge at the ſayde porte of Thunys, and ſailed towarde theyr countreys wyth greate daunger of tempeſt of the Sea, and in proceſſe of tyme landed in Cicile, where Phylyp wyth great reuerence and obſeruaunce in mounte Royall buryed the bowelles of hys father. And that doone, he tooke hys iourney towarde Fraunce through Italye. In whiche iourney dyed Iſabell hys wyfe, with manye other to the number of thre thouſande and moe.

Laſtly, the kynge came vnto the citie of Viterbe, where the Cardinalles and other ſpirituall menne were in counſayle for the choſynge of a newe Pope of Rome. For at that time the Sea was voyde, by the death of Clement the fourth. But that election was ſo dyuers, that two yeares were expired or they myghte agree vppon a newe Paſtor. And then they agreed vppon Theobalde Archedeakon of Landenſſe, named after the tenth Gregorye.

From Viterbe the kynge rode to the mounte of Flaſton, and ſo ouer to the countrey of Tuſcayne, and ſo to the mounte of Bergue, and then to the citie of Florence, and from thence to Boloygne le Greiſſe, and from thence to Cremoygne, where the kynges officers were not all well entreated. In recompenſement whereof, the Mayre and Burgyſes of ẏ towne, preſented the kinge w. vii. ſteades trapped in cloth of ſilke and other preſẽtes, which the king with curteis and thankful wordes refuſed. Then from thence the king departed to Milan, and from Milan to Annergeaux, & ſo to Suſane a citie of Sauoy, and after paſſed the moũtaines, & ſo into the valyes of Morien, & from thence turned towarde the citie of Lyons vppon Roſne, and ſo to the citie of Maſton in Burgoyne, and paſſed the countrey till they came to the abbaye of Clunye, and from thence into the countrey of Champayne and ſo to the Citie of Troys, and from thens paſſed the countreys, till he came to the lordſhip of Paris, and ſo into the citie of Paris.

Here I paſſe ouer the greate prouiſion made by the citezins of Parys, for receyuynge of theyr Princes, that is to meane, yͤ corps of Lewes, & their naturall prince Philip his ſonne, and of the obſeruaunces doone, and great aſſembles of the Lordes ſpirituall and temporal to welcome their prince and doynges of theyr duties euerie man according to honor. But after all theſe ceremonies in due honoure finiſhed, prouiſion was made for the coronacion of the kyng. The which was crowned at the citie of Raynes, vpon the daye of the Aſſumpcion of our Ladye, in the yere of grace. M.ii.C.lxxi.

Shortly after that the ſolempnitie of thys coronacyon was paſſed, kynge Phylip for his recreacion rode vnto the countrey of Vermendoyſe. Where after he had reſted hym a ſeaſon, Roberte Earle of Artoys required him, to viſite his countrey. Where he was receyued of the Burgeyſes of Artoys, with great honoure and gladnes, and there was feaſted with al diſport and gladnes, a certayne of time after. The whiche expyred, he returned into Fraunce.

Aboute the thirde yere of hys reygnne, the Earle of Foyz contrary the kinges pleaſure, tooke partie agaynſt Gerarde a knight and Lorde of the Caſtell of Caſſeboun or Caſſeboun, the which before had ſlayne the brother of the Earle of Armenac ſpeciall freend of the ſayd Earle of Foyz. Whiche two Earles to reuenge the death of theyr ſaid brother, purſued the ſaid Gerarde ſo narowly, that for his ſauegard he refuſed his owne caſtell, and fled vnto a Caſtell of yͤ kinges, and there helde him with his wife, children, and ſubſtaunce But when the two Earles were ware therof, they ſped them thyther with their powers, & layde ſiege to the Caſtell, and in thende threw it downe to the grounde, & ſlew all the ſouldiours that they there founde, as well the kinges ſeruauntes as other, hopynge to haue founde theyr enemy Gerard the which was eſcaped thence ſecretlie.

When the rumour of this dede came vnto the kynge, he dyſdayned ſore that dede, and tooke it right greeuouſly. In ſo muche, that he called his Lordes, and by theyr coũſel aſſembled his knightes, and entred with force the prouince of the Earle of Foyz. The whiche hearynge of the kynges greate diſpleaſure, fortified hys Caſtell and there helde him. The which was ſo beſet wyth rockes of ſtone, that the kynge myght not winne to it with eaſe. Wherfore the kinge commaunded the rockes to be cutte with Maſons and other workemen, and made a ſolempne othe, that he woulde not departe thence or he had the Erle & his Caſtel at his pleaſure.

When the Earle had be holden the greate power of his enemies, and the prouiſion of the kynge to winne his Caſtel wyth other ieoperdies, he made meanes to the kynge for grace, and finally put him and his, into hys mercy. Then the king commaunded him to be bound, and ſo to be conueyed to the Caſtel of Beauqueſu, wher he was impriſoned by an whole yere after. And the king ſeaſed all his landes, and ſet a certayne of hys knightes to kepe his Caſtell, and caried his wife and children with him into Fraunce.

But after a yeare runned, the kynge was ſo laboured to, by the freendes of the ſaid Earle, that he was enlarged from priſon, and vpon ſurety ſuffered to ſerue in yͤ kynges courte. Wher he bare him ſo wel, that finally the king made him knight, and reſtored him to all his landes. But what fell of the Earle of Armenac, the ſtorye ſheweth not.

Aboute the .vi. yere of his reigne kynge Philip maried Mary the doughter of the Erle of Burbon, or after ſome yͤ daughter of Jhon the Duke of Braban, which he loued entirely. Whereof Peter de Broſhe then beyng lord chamberlayne, hauyng enuy and diſdaine, ſought the wayes and meanes to miniſh the great loue betwene hir lorde and her, and founde by hys meane that a ſonne of the kynges named Lewes was priſoned, the whiche dede he by ſubtile, and ſecret meanes, as though it had no thing come of him, layde it to the charge of the Queene. For this the kynge made many maner of inquiſicions as wel by ſorcery as other. But in all his workes he founde his quene giltleſſe. wherfore he ſuffered the matter to paſſe tyll he might haue more aſſured proufe in the matter.

Aboute this ſeaſon Ferdinandus kynge of Caſtyle, that before tyme had maried Blanch daughter of Lewes, died, leauinge after him two ſonnes borne of the ſayd Blanche, named Ferdinande and Alphons, which by couenaunt at the mariage made, ſhould be heyres vnto the kyngdome of Spain and Caſtyle. But the father of this Ferdinande ſo beynge deade, contrary his honour and promyſe wrote vnto the lordes of Caſtyle amoneſhyng them that they ſhold admit for their kyng, hys ſeconde ſonne named Sanxiō or Sanxio, and ſweare to him bothe feauty & homage. The which was al done accordyng to his cōmaundement, ſo that Blanch was diſpoynted of her dower, & her children of theyr right and enheritaunce. For the which kynge Phylyp her bother, was greuouſly diſcontented, and for reformacion therof, ſent vnto the king of Spayne, his chiefe boteler with other, deſiringe him to perfourme all ſuche couenauntes as betwene him and hys father were concluded, at the mariage of his ſiſter Blanche, or at the leaſt if that he refuſed that to do, that he would ſende his ſaid ſiſter with her two childrē ſafely into Frāce In concluſion, the mother with her two children were broughte by the ſayd boteler vnto the king, wythoute other pleaſure other in worde or in deed. For the whiche he the yere folowinge gathered a ſtronge hoſte, & paſſed with them by Poyteau and Gaſcoyne tyll he came vnto a towne ioynynge to the border of Spaine named Saincerre, where the kinge met another partie of his hoſt. There by counſel of ſome of his Lordes, the kinge concluded to retourne into Fraunce, for daunger of winter yͤ was comming and other hid cauſes. But the rumor of the hoſte wente, that ſome of the Kynges counſayll had receyued rewardes of the kynge of Spayne. By the meane wherof the kynge loſt hys iourney, & retourned into Fraũce, to hys greate dyſhonour and domage.

In tyme of kynge Philippes retourne into Fraunce, tidynges were brought to hym, that Euſtace de Beau Marche, whome the Kynge hadde appoynted to the guidynge of the countrey, or kyngdome of Nauerne, was beſieged in the citie of Pampuline. Wherfore the kyng commaunded the Earle of Artoys to ſpede hym thither, to reſcowe the ſayde Euſtace. The which behaued hym ſo manfully, that he reſcowed yͤ ſayd Euſtace, and chaſed Garſimerans chief ſtyrrer of that rebellion, and brought the people of that countrey agayne to due ſubiection.

Whyle the Earle of Artoys was thus occupied in the ſaid countrey meſſangers came to him from the kyng of Spayne, requyring hym, ſeyng that he was ſo neare, that he would come and dyſporte hym there for a ſeaſon. whereof the Earle of Artoys ſente kinge Philip worde, and hauyng of hym lycence, yode vnto the ſayd kynge of Spayne, as to his neare kinſman & there diſported him a certain of time to his great conſolacion. In which ſeaſon diuers letters came out of Fraunce, from ſome of the kinges coũſayle. By reaſon wher of the kynge of Spayne was infourmed of muche of the Frenche kynges counſayle. whych letters he ſhewed vnto the Earle of Artois, ſaiyng that he was not with out freendes in Fraunce. But he woulde not diſcloſe what parſons they were. When the Earle had taried in Spayne, a competente ſeaſon, he tooke leaue of the kynge, and departed with greate giftes, and ſo ſpedde hym, that in proceſſe of time, he came vnto the Kyng of Fraunce, & at a conuenyent leyſure, ſhewed vnto hym of the letters ſhewed vnto hym, by the kyng of Spayne, whereof the kyng was not a litle marueyled.

It was not longe after, that a courrour or meſſenge, which vſed to beare letters from Peter de Broſh vnto the kinge of Spayne fell ſicke at an Abbey. where whē he knew he ſhould die, were it by exhortacion of his ghoſtly father or otherwiſe, he called to him the Abbot or head of the houſe, chargynge him that he would deliuer ſuche letters, as he there had vnto the Frenche kynges owne perſon, and after died. After whoſe death, the ſayde religious man in conuenient haſte ſped him vnto yͤ kinges courte, and preſented him with the ſayde letters, ſhewynge vnto him, the minde of the ſayde meſſenger. which letters, when the kynge had vncloſed, he anone knew that his chamberlaine Peter de Broſhe was the diſcloſer of all hys coũſailes. Wherfore forthwith he commaunded the ſayde Peter, to be hadde vnder ſafe kepyng. wherof hearyng the biſhop of Bayon, fled ſtreyght the lande, & ſo yode vnto Rome. The kynge

then

perdies, he made meanes to the kynge for grace, and finally put him and his, into hys mercy. Then the king commaunded him to be bound, and ſo to be conueyed to the Caſtel of Beauqueſu, wher he was impriſoned by an whole yere after. And the king ſeaſed all his landes, and ſet a certayne of hys knightes to kepe his Caſtell, and caried his wife and children with him into Fraunce.

But after a yeare runned, the kynge was ſo laboured to, by the freendes of the ſaid Earle, that he was enlarged from priſon, and vpon ſurety ſuffered to ſerue in yͤ kynges courte. Wher he bare him ſo wel, that finally the king made him knight, and reſtored him to all his landes. But what fell of the Earle of Armenac, the ſtorye ſheweth not.

Aboute the. vi. yere of his reigne kynge Philip maried Mary the doughter of the Erle of Burbon, or after ſome yͤ daughter of Jhon the Duke of Braban, which he loued entirely. Whereof Peter de Broſhe then beyng lord chamberlayne, hauyng enuy and diſdaine, ſought the wayes and meanes to miniſh the great loue betwene hir lorde and her, and founde by hys meane that a ſonne of the kynges named Lewes was priſoned, the whiche dede he by ſubtile, and ſecret meanes, as though it had no thing come of him, layde it to the charge of the Queene. For this the kynge made many maner of inquiſicions as wel by ſorcery as other. But in all his workes he founde his quene giltleſſe. wherfore he ſuffered the matter to paſſe tyll he might haue more aſſured proufe in the matter.

Aboute this ſeaſon Ferdinandus kynge of Caſtyle, that before tyme had maried Blanch daughter of Lewes, died, leauinge after him two ſonnes borne of the ſayd Blanche, named Ferdinande and Alphons, which by couenaunt at the mariage made, ſhould be heyres vnto the kyngdome of Spain and Caſtyle. But the father of this Ferdinande ſo beynge deade, contrary his honour and promyſe wrote vnto the lordes of Caſtyle amoneſhyng them that they ſhold admit for their kyng, hys ſeconde ſonne named Sanxiō or Sanxio, and ſweare to him bothe feauty & homage. The which was al done according to his cōmaundement, ſo that Blanch was diſpoynted of her dower, & her children of theyr right and enheritaunce. For the which kynge Phylyp her bother, was greuouſly diſcontented, and for reformacion therof, ſent vnto the king of Spayne, his chiefe boteler with other, deſiringe him to perfourme all ſuche couenauntes as betwene him and hys father were concluded, at the mariage of his ſiſter Blanche, or at the leaſt if that he refuſed that to do, that he would ſende his ſaid ſiſter with her two childrē ſafely into Frāce In concluſion, the mother with her two children were broughte by the ſayd boteler vnto the king, wythoute other pleaſure other in worde or in deed. For the whiche he the yere folowinge gathered a ſtronge hoſte, & paſſed with them by Poyteau and Gaſcoyne tyll he came vnto a towne ioynynge to the border of Spaine named Saincerre, where the kinge met another

other partie of his hoſt. There by counſel of ſome of his Lordes, the kinge concluded to retourne into Fraunce, for daunger of winter yͤ was comming and other hid cauſes. But the rumor of the hoſte wente, that ſome of the Kynges counſayll had receyued rewardes of the kynge of Spayne. By the meane wherof the kynge loſt hys iourney, & retourned into Fraūce, to hys greate dyſhonour and domage.

In tyme of kynge Philippes retourne into Fraunce, tidynges were brought to hym, that Euſtace de Beau Marche, whome the Kynge hadde appoynted to the guidynge of the countrey, or kyngdome of Nauerne, was beſieged in the citie of Pampuline. Wherfore the kyng commaunded the Earle of Artoys to ſpede hym thither, to reſcowe the ſayde Euſtace. The which behaued hym ſo manfully, that he reſcowed yͤ ſayd Euſtace, and chaſed Garſimerans chief ſtyrrer of that rebellion, and brought the people of that countrey agayne to due ſubiection.

Whyle the Earle of Artoys was thus occupied in the ſaid countrey meſſangers came to him from the kyng of Spayne, requyring hym, ſeyng that he was ſo neare, that he would come and dyſporte hym there for a ſeaſon. Whereof the Earle of Artoys ſente kinge Philip worde, and hauyng of hym lycence, yode vnto the ſayd kynge of Spayne, as to his neare kinſman & there diſporced him a certain of time to his great conſolacion. In which ſeaſon diuers letters came out of Fraunce, from ſome of the kinges coūſayle. By reaſon wherof the kynge of Spayne was infourmed of muche of the Frenche kynges counſayle. whych letters he ſhewed vnto the Earle of Artois, ſaiyng that he was not without freendes in Fraunce. But he woulde not diſcloſe what parſons they were. When the Earle had taried in Spayne, a competente ſeaſon, he tooke leaue of the kynge, and departed with greate giftes, and ſo ſpedde hym, that in proceſſe of time, he came vnto the Kyng of Fraunce, & at a conuenyent leyſure, ſhewed vnto hym of the letters ſhewed vnto hym, by the kyng of Spayne, whereof the kyng was not a litle marueyled.

It was not longe after, that a courrour or meſſenge, which vſed to beare letters from Peter de Broſh vnto the kinge of Spayne fell ſicke at an Abbey. where whē he knew he ſhould die, were it by exhortacion of his ghoſtly father or otherwiſe, he called to him the Abbot or head of the houſe, chargynge him that he would deliuer ſuche letters, as he there had vnto the Frenche kynges owne perſon, and after died. After whoſe death, the ſayde religious man in conuenient haſte ſped him vnto yͤ kinges courte, and preſented him with the ſayde letters, ſhewynge vnto him, the minde of the ſayde meſſenger. which letters, when the kynge had vncloſed, he anone knew that his chamberlaine Peter de Broſhe was the diſcloſer of all hys coūſailes. Wherfore forthwith he commaunded the ſayde Peter, to be hadde vnder ſafe kepyng. Wherof hearyng the biſhop of Bayon, fled ſtreyght the lande, & ſo yode vnto Rome. The kynge then yode vnto Paris, where he called a counſayle of hys Lordes, to examine the ſayd Peter: Where finally he was iudged to bee hanged. After which iudgemente, he was committed vnto warde, tyll the morow folowing. At whyche ſeaſon, longe before the ſunne ryſyng, the Duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Braban, the Earle of Artoys, with the prouoſt of Parys, came vnto the gayole, and there receiued the ſayde Peter, and ſaw him hanged or the ſunne was vp.

IT was not longe after, that Peter was thus put to death, but meanes were made betwen theſe.ii.kynges, ſo that a daye of meetyng was appointed, that the ſayd kinges ſhould meete to haue communicacion, for yͤ matter concernynge the wronges doone to dame Blanch, and her two childrē beforenamed. wherfore the king of Spayne came vnto the citie of Bayon, and kynge Philyppe to a towne in yͤ prouince of Tholouſe named Moūt marchaunt. where theſe two prynces, beyng in communication of the foreſayde matter, certayne meſſengers came to theym from the Pope, then Martine the fourthe, chargyng theim vpon payne of fallynge into the cenſures of the holy churche, that they agree and fall vnto accorde, that warre betwene them be not exerciſed. By reaſon wherof kyng Philip remitted the matter to the Pope, & returned vnto Tholouſe: where mette him the kyng of Aragon named Peter. The which after he had there taried wͭ kyng Philip a time at his pleaſure, he tooke his leaue of the kynge, and after wente vnto Catholoyne, where he met with Conſtance hys wife, and doughter of Manfred, ſometime king of Scicil, the whiche was priued of his life & kingedome by Charles, brother of Lewes, as before in the.iii. chapter of the ſtory of Lewes, is ſhortlye touched. This Conſtance in all that ſhe might, exhorted her huſbande to gather his people, and to enter the lande of Scicil, aſcertaynyng him that the Scicillens woulde take hys party agaynſte Charles, for ſo much, as they wel knew that ſhe was rightful heyre to that kyngdome.

In thys tyme and ſeaſon whiche was the tenth yere of kynge Phylyp, the riuer of Saine roſe of ſuche an hyght, that it compaſſed the citie of Paris in ſuch wiſe, that no man might come thither without boate or barge. And the water paſſed with ſuche violence, yͭ it brake.vi.arches of the greate Bridge of Parys, and one of the ſmall brydges.

Then let vs turne to the kyng of Aragon, which by incenſyng of his wife, gathered hys people, & vnder colourе that he wolde haue gone agaynſt the Turkes, hadde graunt of the Pope to receyue the dymes of his owne lande for certayne yeres. While this was in doynge, he ſente certayne perſons into Scycil, to ſe the ſtate of that countrey. The which made confederacies with diuers greate men of Siciliens, & ouer that brought with them, diuers of the rulers, to the preſence of the kynge. with whome the ſayd Peter made certayne oppoyntmentes, and after returned theym into Scicile. where after theyr retourne, they counſayled ſo with their rulers of Palermo, and Meſſen, ⁊ of theyr Cities, that in one nyght all the French men in Scicil where ſlain and after in moſt cruell wyſe ſlew the women, as wel thoſe that wer with childe as other, and left few or none of the Frenchemen, in all the chief cities or townes of Scicyll on liue. When tidinges of this miſchief was brought vnto Charles beyng then in the countrey of Angeou, he ſent meſſangers vnto the Pope of Rome, Martin the fourth, requiryng his ayde to defende his enemies. The which in all haſte, ſente vnto Palermo the Byſhoppe of Saynte Sabine, to charge the citizins vpon payne of curſynge, to obey vnto charles for theyr kyng, and to none other. But the rulers of Palermo and alſo of Meſſene woulde not ſuffer the ſayde Biſhop to paſſe any further. And alſo ſayde that Peter was entred yͤ countrey, of whome they woulde holde, and on none other, with which anſwer he was fayne to retourne.

In this whyle Charles had ſent vnto his neuew Philyp kynge of Fraunce, the whyche with his powre to reuoke Peter from Scicyl, entred the land of Aragon, by Purpudian, and tooke the citie of Ieane. In which paſſetime Charles entred Scicill, and beſeged Meſſene. But the towne was ſo ſtrongly fortified that he loſt ther his laboure, wherfore he left that ſiege, and yode into the playnes of ſaynte Martine, and there taried the comminge of his ſonne, then Prince of Salerne. The Pope of Rome then curſed Peter, for as muche, as certayne worde was brought to hym, that he had proclaymed him ſelf kyng of Scicyl. And to the entent to ſtyrre the more people agaynſt him, he gaue his lande of Aragon vnto Charles Earle of Valoys, and ſonne of kinge Phylyp of Fraunce. When Philip as before is ſayd, kynge of Fraunce, had wonne Ieane, for ſo much, as the waies towarde Aragon were harde to paſſe, as wel for prouiſions made by yͤ enemies as otherwyſe, the kinge therfore ſought great aduiſe how he might with leaſt daunger winne to his enemies. And after many meanes ſoughte, a Ruſſyllian was brought vnto the kynges preſence which aſſured the kyng, to guyde him a way into Aragon without the dãger of his enemies. Wherof the kyng beyng glad, promiſed to the ſated Ruſſillian, fredome ⁊ liberty, wͭ other greate rewardes, which then ſtoode as a priſoner to the French men. After which promyſe made, the kyng put him and the more parte of his hoſte vnder the leading of the ſayde Ruſſilian. And for to blynde the more hys enemies, he ſent a part of his hoſt towarde the mountayns, to make a ſhew as though al the hoſte had paſſed the ſame way. When kyng Philip had orderyd, all thyng after his mynde, he commaunded the forwarde of his people, to folow the ſayd Ruſſylian, the whyche brought them a ſtreyte ⁊ narrow way, all to growne wͭ wood and buſhes, to the kinges greate trauayle and all his. But finallie he brought them into the playnes where theyr enemies lay, ſo that they made prouyſyon in ordering of theyr people to ſet vpon the Aragons. Wherof the Aragons beynge ware, ſuppoſing the French mē might not ſo lightly haue won vnto them, being then out of aray and diſpurueyed to fight, fled vnto the next holdes, leauing to the Frenche men muche of theyr vittayle and harnes. When kynge Philip had ſene that his enemies had forſaken their fielde, he reſted him there a ſeaſon, after hys trauayle, and after yode to a towne named Pierlaat, and beſieged it. Wherof the ſouldiours after they had a ſeaſon defended that towne in the dead of the night, fired the ſayde towne, and departed when thei had done. But yͤ Frenche men went ſhortly into the towne, and quenched the fire, and after the king had manned and vitailed it, he then wēt into a towne named Gozon, and layde hys ſiege there about, where he lay longe after.

YE haue hearde in yͤ preceding yere, how Charles kyng of Scicil, laye in the playnes of ſaynt Martyne, there abydinge the cōmynge of his ſonne, the prince of Salerne. Whither laſtly came vnto him his ſayd ſonne, the duke of Burgoyne, the Earle of Alanſon, Peter brother to the kynge Phylyp, Roberte Earle of Artoys, the Earles of Dapmartine, and Boligigne, with the Lord of Mōte Morency, and mani other nobles of Fraunce and Burgoyne. After the commynge of whiche lordes, Charles with banner dyſplayed, ſped hym towarde hys enemies, and ſo paſſed the lande of Calebre without fight, and ſent hys ſonne to Naples, wyth a parte of hys hoſte, and him ſelfe kepte on hys iourney, til he came vnto prouince Where he hearynge of the greate purueyaunce, that Peter kyng of Aragon had made of ſhyppes, to ſayle toward the lande of Naples ſente certayne letters, vnto the prynce hys ſonne, that in no wyſe he ſhould ſette vpon his enemies, but kepe him within the Citie of Naples, til he ſent vnto him, ſuch ſhippes and Galayes, as he then had redy manned, to be ſente vnto him from the hauen of Marcell. Which meſſenger and letters, wer taken with the Aragons, by reaſon whereof, they knew muche of kynge Charles counſayle.

It was not longe after, or the Nauy of the kinge of Aragons wͭ greate triumphe and pride came vnto Naples, and prouoked ſo the Frenche men to fight, that laſtlie the prynce with ſuch ſhippes and compani as he might make, made out vpon them, and fought wyth them a longe fight. But in thende the French men were beaten and ouercome, and the prince with the more partie of his ſhippes taken, and ſent to Conſtance Queene of Aragon, and remayned not longe after vndeliuered with many other pryſoners. Wythin a ſhorte ſeaſon after this dyſcompfiture, Charles came vnto Naples, by whiche time, muche ot the towne was turned agaynſt hym, ſo that the moſte part of the French ſouldyours, were ſlayne and fled the towne. Wherfore after that Charles was entred, he puniſhed them right cruelly, by dyuers maner of tourmentes. And when he hadde done there his will, he retourned into Calebre, where mette with him Robert Earle of Artoys. Where they tooke their counſell how they might paſſe the water of Phaar, and to laye their ſiege vnto the Citie of Meſſene. But for diuers cauſes he was counſailed to the contrary, ſo that he toke ſhippinge at an hauen called Brādiſe. But or his people were all ſhipped, ſuche a ſickenes toke him that he was had agayne to land, & died ſhortly after, not withoute ſuſpection of venime.

Whoſe corps was then conueied to Naples, and there buried, in the yere of our Lorde. M.two hūdred and.lxxxiiii.and the.xiii.yere of the reigne of Philip his neuew then kynge of Fraunce. Of which tidinges Peter kinge of Aragon reioyſed not a lytle, when worde thereof to him was brought, the which before ẏ time had betaken the rule of the lande of Scicill to Conſtance his wife, then beynge in the Citie of Palermo. And he him ſelfe with a ſtronge nauy ſailed into Aragon for to reſcow the citie of G[illegible]on, whiche was beſieged of kinge Philip, as ye before haue hearde. And when he with his people, were there landed, he tooke his counſell how he might moſte greeue the Frenche hoſte. Finally he concluded, ẏ he woulde make a buſhment with a certayn number of his knightes, and lye in awayte to take ẏ victayle that was brought to the hoſt from the porte of Ruſſilian, whiche porte was foure miles from the French hoſte. Upon which concluſion ſo taken, he wyth twoo thouſande choſen men, lodged theym where the pray ſhould paſſe, and was eſpied of the Frenchemen. Whereof beynge warned the Conſtable of Fraunce, and ſyr Jhon Harcourte, then Marſhal of the hoſte toke with them the Erle of Marches with diuerſe other knightes to the number of fiue hūdred ſpeares, with a certeine of foote men, and went toward their enemies. But when they came neare vnto them, and ſaw they were ſo many in number, they feared to ſet forwarde, till they were compforted by the wordes of a knight in their cōpany called Mathew de Roya, ſaiyng as foloweth.

O ye noble knightes, beholde in your ſightes the enemies whiche ye haue farre ſought. Let vs now remember, that this is the daye of Aſſumpcion of our bleſſed Lady, and truſt we in her that ſhe will helpe vs agaynſt theym that bene put out of holy Churche, by curſynge. For lyke merite ſhall to vs growe, to reuenge the iniuries done vnto the Church, as though we fought agaynſt the enemies of Chriſtes faythe.

By meane of whyche wordes they were ſo encouraged, that wythoute feare they ſette vpon theyr enemies, ſo that betweene them was commenſed a ſore and cruell fight, contynuynge a longe ſeaſon or it might be knowē, whiche parte hadde the aduauntage, of the other. At the laſte the kinge was drawen from hys horſe, and conſtrayned to fight wyth the other on foote, ſo that he was in greate ieoperdie to haue bene taken. But by hys owne knighthoode and good helpe of hys menne he recouered his horſe a‑

gayne. When the Frenche men wer ware that the kyng was ther in his owne perſon, they were the more egree vpon the Aragons, to the entent to haue taken or ſlayne theyr kinge. So that finally they compelled theym to forſake the fielde, and to ſaue them ſelfes by flight, by reaſon wherof the kyng with the more parte of his knightes were ſaued, from daunger of theyr enemies. But in this fight Peter kinge of Aragone, was ſo hurte, that he died ſhortly after. When theſe foreſaied Knyghtes, with their priſoners were returned vnto the Frenche kinge, and hadde ſhewed vnto hym of victorye, he reioyſed thereof greately, and more would haue doone, if he had knowen, how ſore hys enemie Peter was wounded. But to bringe to fyne his purpoſe, he dayly more and more aſſauted the towne.

In the time that Gereonde or Gyronde was thus beſieged of yͤ Frenche kyng, the Earle of Foyz, that to the captaine of the towne ought greate fauour, many times by licence of the kynge yode into the towne, and had diuers communicacions with him, ſo that he laſtly knowing the ſayd towne to be bare of victayle, ſhewed to the kyng that he would labour to the ſayde captayne, named ſyr Raymonde de Cerdon, that the towne might be geuen vp into the kynges handes, ſo that ſoone after yͤ ſayde captaine deſyred a reſpite of viii. dayes, to ſende vnto the kyng of Aragon, to know whether he woulde reſcow the towne or not. Upon whiche graunte made, the meſſengers were ſent, and returned ẇ a certentie of the kynges death. Upon whiche knowledge had, the ſayd Captayne agreed to deliuer the towne, vpon condicion to haue with them ſuch mouables as he with the citezins and ſouldiours had within the towne. All which condicions aſſured, yͤ kinge receyued the towne of Geronde into his poſſeſſion. The whiche whan he had manned with knightes of his owne, he then by counſell, whiche tourned after to his harme, deuided his nauy, and ſent a parte of them into Fraunce, and the other into Tholouſe, where yͤ kinge entended to tary the winter folowing. But ſo ſoone as his nauie was thus deuided, the Arogans met with them, that reſted in the hauen of Ruſſiliã, and gaue to them ſuche battayle, that they tooke many of them, and ſlew the kynges admirall, and many other noble men of Fraunce, and helde the Frenchemen ſo ſhort, that for ſo much as they would not that ſo good ſhippes, ſhould come to the handes of their enemies, they ſet fyre vpon the remnaunte & brent them, and after reſorted vnto the kynge.

When kyng Phylip was aſcerteyned of the loſſe of the nauy, he toke it greuouſly, in ſo much, that for that, and other thynges that he might not bring to his purpoſe he fell into a feuer, and was therwith greatlye anoyed. Than for ſtrength of his enemies, whiche kept the paſſage of the mountaynes, called in latin Montes Pireni, and for wekinge of him ſelfe, by reaſõ of his ſickeneſſe, he paſſed by the ſtreight places, till he came to Parpinian, were his ſickenes

eath
ilip,
of
ace.

encreaſed ſo ſore, that he died in ſhorte time of his thither comyng in the moneth of October, whan he had reigned .xv. yeres lackinge certayne daies, whoſe bowelles were buried at Narbon, and hys body at Saynt Denis.

This Philip had two wyues. By the firſt Iſabel by name, and daughter of the king of Aragon, Jaques or James by name, he had three ſonnes, Lewes whyche was poiſoned, Philip whiche for his bewty & fayre ſhape, was named Philip le Beau, or Philip ẏ fayre, and Charles the valoys. And by Mary his wife, & daughter of the duke of Braban, he had Lewes, Margaret, and Blaunch which Margaret was after maried to Edwarde the firſte, than kinge of Englande.

Anglia.

arde
ſte.
ca.38

EDward the firſt of that name, & ſonne of Henry the third ſurnamed Longeſhanke, began hys reygne ouer England, in the moneth of Nouember and ſeuentene day of the ſame, & the yere of our Lorde a thouſande two hũdred. lxxii. and ſecond yere of the thyrde Phylyp than kynge of Fraunce.

Thys Edwarde, as before is ſhewed in the .lv. yeare of hys father, was in the holy lande whan his father died, and there at the Citie of Acon or Acrys, he dyd many feates of warre, wherof the Chronicle maketh mencion. Where he beynge ſo exercyſed, in Marciall actes, tydynges was brought vnto hym, that hys father was dead. wherfore in all haſte he ſped hym into Englande, ſo that he came to London the ſecond day of Auguſt, & was Crowned at Weſtmynſter the .xiiii. daie of December folowynge, whiche was in the begynninge of the ſeconde yere of hys reygne.

Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxii. Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxiii.

Syr Walter Heruy. { Jhon Horne.
Walter Potter. } Anno primo.

AND in the fyrſte yere of kynge Edwarde the fyrſte, vpon the daye, of Symon and Jude wer certayne attemptes made by ſome of the citezyns, to haue made ſuch a Mayre as they had lyſted, but for the wer diſapointed of their acceſſaries, they let for that time, which in the yeare folowynge vpon the ſame day tooke further effect, as in the beginnyng of the next yere ſhalbe touchyd. In the ende of this yere and ſeconde day of Auguſt, kinge Edwarde came to London, from his iourney of the holy lande. Wher of the citizins, he was receiued with all ioy and honoure, and ſo conueyed vnto Weſtmynſter, where he kepte great obſeruaunces for his father, by a certayne time after.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxiii. Anno domini. M.CC.lxxiiii.

Henry Waleys. { Nycholas wyncheſter. Henry Couentry. } Anno .ii.

IN this ſeconde yere of thys kyng, and day of Symon & Iude, whā Phylyp le Tayloure which before was choſen to be Mayre, ſhoulde as that day haue taken his charge in the Guyldhal of London, dyuers citezins put him beſyde the Mayres ſeate, & ſet therin ſir Walter Haruy, that the yere before had bene Mayre. For the whiche great rumoure and grudge aroſe, amonge the cityzins, wherfore the matter was after brought before ẏ king, the which hearing the reaſons of bothe parties, for ſo much as he could not agree them, he put both the ſayd ſir Walter, and the ſayde Philip aſyde, & chaſe Henry Frowyke for Cuſtos of the Citie, the whiche ſo continued tyll Candelmas after. At whiche tyme by diſcrete and wyſe peaſiable meanes, the forenamed ſyr Walter Heruy, was ſet in aucthorite as Mayre, and ſo continued the full of the yere after.

Thys yere, vpon the .xiiii. daie of December, was the king crowned at Weſtmynſter, of mayſter Robert Kylwarby, than archebyſhop of Caunterbury. For Bonyface his predeceſſour, died the yere that kyng Henry died. At this coronacion, was preſent Alexander kynge of Scottes, the whiche vpon the morow folowinge, dyd homage to kynge Edwarde, for the kingdome of Scotlande.

Alex
king
Scot
did h
ge to
Edw

After the ſolempnitie of the coronacion was ended, the kynge hearyng of the rebellion of Lewelin prince of Walys, that diſdayned to come to his coronacion, anon gathered a ſtronge power, and went into the prouince, and ſubdued the ſayd Lewelin. And after retourned, and ordered certayne new lawes for the wealth of the Realme, which are to longe to reherce. Amonge the which, one was that bakers making breade lacking the weyght aſſigned, after the price of corne, ſhould fyrſte be puniſhed by loſſe of bread, and the ſeconde time by pryſonmente, and thyrdly, by the correction of the pillory: and mylners, for ſtealyng of Corne, to be chaſtyſed by the tumbrell.

An ac
baker
mylne

And this to be put in execucion, he gaue aucthorite to all Mayres Baylyffes, and other offycers through England, and ſpeciallie to the Mayre of London.

Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxiiii. Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxv.

Gregory Rokkiſle. { Lucas Patencourt. Henry Frowyke. } Anno .iii.

IN the thirde yere, the kynge confyrmed the lybertyes of the Citie of London, and graunted to theym ſome new.

And this yere he helde his greate courte of parliament at Weſtminſter, and gaue moniſhiō to Lewelin prince of Walys to come vnto the ſame, the whiche preſumptiouſlie that denied. Wherfore the kyng after Eaſter, entred agayne into Walys, and ſo warred vpon Lewelin, that he was conſtrained to ſubmitte him vnto the kynges grace, and obtayned it w. greate dyfficultie. Then kynge Edward builded the caſtel of Flint, & ſtrēgthed the Caſtell of Rutlande and other, with Englyſh men, to kepe the Walſhemen in due obedience: and tooke of theyr prince a great ſumme of money, whiche of ſome writers is named. l. M. li. and of ſome. l. M. marke, and of ſome other leſſe, and ſo retourned into Englande.

Water Haruy made Mayre of London by a folkmote kepte at Poules Croſſe.

In this yere one Water Haruy, whiche the fyrſt yeare of thys king, after longe contrauerſy and ſtryfe, that he had kepte wyth the Aldermen of London, at a Folkemote kept at Poules Croſſe, was made Mayre of London, & ſo continued to the hurte of the Citie, that yere: this yere was he accuſed of diuers periuries, and other deteſtable dedes cōtrary his othe. For the whiche, and for makynge of aſſembles of the cōmons which fauoured hym in hys euill dedes, he was depriued of his aldermanſhip, and counſell of the Citie for euer, and founde ſuerty of twelue honeſt perſons, that he ſhould be good of bearynge, for kepynge of the kynges peace within the citie for tearme of his life after.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxv. Anno domini. M.CC.lxxvi.

Gregory Rokkyſle { Jhon Horne. Rauffe Blount. } Anno. iiii.

IN this fourthe yere of kynge Edwarde, Mychaell Tony, whiche in time of warre had with the Walſhmen, demeaned hym otherwiſe thē ſtode with his truth and alegeaunce, was accuſed of treaſon, & therof arreygned, iudged, and dampned, and after was drawen, hanged, and quartered.

The ſtatute of Mortmain

And this yere was the ſtatute of Mortmayne enacted firſt, whiche is to meane ẏ no man ſheulde geue into the Church, any landes or rentes without a ſpecial licence of the kyng: which acte ſince that time hath bene more ſtrongly enacted, and deuyſed, with many addicion therunto augmented or annexed.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxvi. Anno dn̄i. M.CC.lxxvii.

Gregory Rokkille. { Robert Braſſy. Rauffe Fenour. } Anno. v.

IN this. v. yere, of ẏ reygne of kyng Edwarde, Nicholas the third of that name Pope of Rome made doctour Robert Kylwarby, then beyng archbyſhop of Cāterbury, a cardinal of Rome, & admitted to that ſea, a Freer named Doctour Jhon Pekham.

And in this yere the kyng gaue vnto Dauid brother vnto Lewelyne prynce of Walis, the lordſhip of Froddeſham. The which Dauid dwelled in the kynges courte, and did vnto him pleaſaũt ſeruice, to the entente to ſpie the kynges ſecret counſell: And yf any thynge were ſpoken or doone to the hurt of hys brother, yͤ he therof might geue vnto him warnyng, as after by his deedes appered.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxvii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxviii.

Gregory Rokkyſle. { Jhon Adryan.
Walter Longeley. } Anno.vi.

IN thys.vi.yeare the kynge commaunded the courtes of his lawes, as the kinges benche, the chauncery, the cõmon place, and the excheker, to be remoned vnto Shrewyſbury, where Mighelmas tearme was holden and kepte, but agaynſte Hillary terme, the bokes and officers was cõtermaũded againe vnto Weſtminſter, to be there holden. In whiche caryeng of the recordes to and fro, they by reaſon of greate plenty of rayne which in that ſeaſon fell, caught great hurte and were ſore defaced: in ſo much that the bookes were greatly imperyſhed, and the clerkes had greate labour to bring them to theyr former ſtate.

Mighelmas terme kepte at Shreweſbury.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxviii. Anno.dñi.M.CC.lxxix.

Gregory Rokkyſle. { Roberte Baſynge.
Wyllyam le Meyre. } Anno.vii.

IN thys.vii.yeare, the kyng helde his parliament at Lõdon, whiche was chiefely ſet for the reformacion of the kynges coyne, which was clipped in ſuche wyſe, that it was therby wonderfully miniſhed & empared.

In the ſeaſon of thys parlyament, many of the Jewes of Lõdon and other places, were taken and put in holde for money clyppynge. And in December folowynge, certeyne enqueſtes were charged in London, to enquyre of the ſayd Jewes and other that ſo had blemyſhed the kynges coyne. By the which enqueſtes yͤ Jewes of the city, with diuers golde ſmithes that kept exchaunge of ſiluer were indited.

And the monday folowyng the Purification of our Ladye, the Maior wyth diuers Juſtices of the lande ſat at London, where before them was caſt two hundred, lxxx. and. xvii. perſon. Of the whiche but three Englyſh men, and al the other were Jewes, & Jewes borne, all be it that many of them were borne in England, and therfore

fore of ſome writers they be named Engliſh Jewes, the whyche were al at ſondrie tymes and places put in execution.

In this yere alſo beganne the foundacion of the churche of the frere preachers or blacke freres by Ludgate, by theyr founder.

The foundacion of ỹ houſe that was inhabited with blacke freres.

And in this yeare the towne of Boſten, was greatlye blemyſhed with fyre.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxix. Anno domini. M.CC.lxxx.

Gregory Rokkiſle. { Thomas Box.
Rafe More. } Anno. viii.

rſt coy- ynge of lſpence & thinges

IN this. viii. yere, the king cauſed in ſiluer the halfe peny to bee coygned, where before time other coygnes of metall ranne amonge the people, to theyr great noyaunce and farthinges of ſyluer wer alſo coigned the ſelf tyme.

And the winter folowynge, aboute the day of Saynct Denys, or the nynth day of October, fell ſuche plenty of ſnowe, that thereof enſued muche harme.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxx. Anno domini. M.CC.lxxxi.

Gregory Rokkiſle. { Wyllyam Faryngdon.
Nycholas wincheſter. } Anno. ix.

AND in thys. ix. yeare of kyng Edwarde, Dauid the brother of Lewelin Prynce of Wales, the whiche (as ye before haue heard) dwelled in the kynges courte, to knowe the kynges counſayle, and thereof to enfourme hys brother, when he had that he wayted for, he ſecretlye gate hym into Wales to hys brother, and hym excyted agaynſt the kynge, in all that he might: and cauſed hys brother to man and victayle diuers Caſtels within Wales, and ſpeciallye the Caſtell of Swandon, wherein he muche truſted, and gathered vnto hym the Welſhmen, by giftes and other meanes, ſo that he was verye ſtronge.

auid bro r of welyn.

Whereof whan the kynge was enfourmed, he woulde therunto geue no credence, tyll he hadde ſent thyther, and receyued from thence the certaynetye. But for ſo muche as wynter was towarde, and he myghte not conuenientlye goe thyther wyth anye power, he therefore prouyded to ſende men and victaile to ſtrength the Caſtelles of Flynte and Rutlande, and other holdes, whyche he there hadde, and wyth prouyſyon made to warre vppon theym in the begynnyng of the next yere, ſuffered that Wynter to paſſe.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxi. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxii.
Wyllyam le Meyre.
Henry Waleys. Anno.x.
Nycholas Wincheſter.

IN this tenth yere the kyng hearing more and more of the vnſtedfaſtnes of the Welſhmen, for to let them of theyr purpoſe to greue his holdes before named, he ſent thither wͭ a crew of ſouldyours, the Earles of Northumberlande, and of Surrey: wyth whome amonge other went ſyr Roger Clyfforde, ſir William Lindeſey, ſyr Richard Tanny, and many other knightes and ſquyres. The whiche with greate corage entred into Wales, and made with the Welſhmen manye ſkyrmiſhes, tyl laſtly vpon Palme Sonday, Dauid with a great power of Welſhemen, met with the ſaide lordes and knyghtes, at a place neare to a towne called Hanardine, where betwene theym was a ſoore fyght, but in the ende the loſſe fell to the Engliſhemen. For there were ſlayne ſyr Willam Lindeſey, ſyr Rycharde Tannye, with manye other, and ſyr Roger Clyfforde was taken.

A crew of
ſouldiours

The
glyſhm
diſcōfit

After whiche ouerthrowe of the Engliſhemen, the ſayde Dauyd layde ſyege vnto the caſtelles of Flynte and of Rutlande. And hys brother in that ſeaſon warred and occupyed the landes of ſyr Edmunde Mortymer, and wanne the towne called Lambatreuaure and there threwe the walles thereof downe to the grounde. Thys towne is alſo called Abreſwith. It was not long after or the brute of the ouerthrow of the Englyſhmen came vnto the towne. Wherfore he ſpedde him the faſter thitherwarde.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxiii.
Rafe Blunt.
Henry Waleys. Anno.xi.
Hawkyn Beteunell.

IN thys eleuenth yere, vpon the day of ſainct Leonard, or the ſyxte daye of Nouember, while that king Edward was occupyed in reſcowyng of his men, whiche were beſieged of Dauyd, ſyr Roger Clyfforde wyth other, whiche entended to make a reyſyng vpon the Welſhmen, was drowned by folye vppon a bridge made of barges ⁊ plackes to haue paſſed a water, betwene Snowdō ⁊ Angliſſey. And the.iii.dai of December folowing, was Lewelyne prince of Wales ſlaine, by ſyr Edmund Mortimer ⁊ his company, and his head ſent vnto the kinge, then being at Rutlād. The which he ſent vnto London, chargyng yͭ it be ſet vpō the towre of London. Of this Lewlin a Welſh metriciā made theſe.iiii.verſes folowyng.

Lewely
prince
Wales
ſlayne.

Hic iacet Anglorum tortor, tutor Venedorum,
Princeps VVallorum, Lewelinus regula morum,
Gemma coeuorum, flos regum preteritorum,
Forma futurorum, dux, laus, lex, lux populorum.

¶ Which Verſes are thus to meane, as foloweth.

Of Engliſhmē the ſcourge, of welſh the protectour,
Lewelyn the Prynce, rule of all vertue,
Gemme of lyuers, and of all other the floure,
VVhiche vnto death hath payde his dette due,
Of kynges a mirour, that after him ſhall ſue,
Duke and prayſe, and of the lawe the ryght,
Here in this graue, of people lyeth the lyght.

But an Englyſhe Metrician wrote other foure Verſes, in diſprayſyng of the ſayde Lewelyn, as foloweth.

Hic iacet errorum princeps, ac predo virorum,
Proditor Anglorum, fax liuida, ſecta reorum,
Numen VVallorum, trux, dux, homicida piorum,
Fex Troianorū, ſtirps, mendax, cauſa malorum.

¶ The whyche in thys wyſe bee Englyſhed.

Here lyeth of errour the Prince, if ye wyll ken,
Theſe and robbour, and traytour to Englyſhe men,
A dymme bronde, a ſecte of doers euyll,
God of VVelſhmen, cruell without ſkyll
In ſleyng the good, and a leader of the badde,
Laſtlye rewarded as he deſerued hadde,
Of Troyanus bloude the draſtes, and not the ſeede,
A roote of falſhode, and cauſe of many euyll deede.

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxxiii

Anno domini. M.CC.lxxxiiii.

Henry Waleys.
Jordan Goodchepe.
Martyn Box.
Anno .xii.

AN thys .xii. yeare the kyng being ſtyll in Wales, purſued Dauid the brother of Lewelyn, from towne to towne, ſo that laſtly he was taken and brought vnto the kyng, aboute the natitie of S. Jhon, and ſo holden in warde, tyll the kyng had ſped hys nedes. Then the kyng had all the countrey at hys wyll, and gaue vnto Englyſhe Lordes townes in the myddes of Wales, and deuyded the countrey in ſhyres, and ordeyned

ned there Shryues and other offycers, as then were vſed in England. At Aberconowe he made a ſtronge Caſtel, where before was an houſe of whyte monkes: The whiche he remoued from thence, & ordeyned for theym in ſome other place. He alſo made then the Caſtell of Carnaruan faſt by Snodon, and repayred agayn ẏ towne of Lambatre or Abreſwyth, whiche Lewelyn had beaten downe. Alſo he garniſhed the Caſtels and holdes ſtandyng vpon the ſea ſide with Englyſhmen, and made the Englyſhmen lordes of the groũdes belonging to the ſame. And when the kynge had ſet the countrey in rule, then about Michelmas, he returned to Shroſweſbury, wher he ſet a parlament. In the tyme whereof, the foreſayde Dauid as chiefe ſtyrrer and beginner of all this warre, was there deemed to bee drawen, hanged, and quartered, and ſo he was ſhortly after at the ſayd towne of Shrowweſbury, and hys head ſent to London, and ſette by the head of hys brother Lewelyne.

A parliament holdẽ at Shroweſburye.

And in thys yere was the firſt ſonne of kynge Edwarde borne, whyle the kyng was in wales at the Caſtel of Carnaruan. By reaſon whereof, he was after named Edwarde of Carnaruan. He was borne vpon the day of S^{t}. Marke or the fyue and twentye daye of Apryll. Thys yeare alſo one Laurence Duket a Citezyne of London, was founde dead and hanged wythin Saincte Marye Bowe churche of Chepe. For the which enquiries were made, and laſtlye for that dede wer attaynted theſe vii. perſons folowynge, that is to ſay: Reygnolde of Lancaſter, Robert Pinnot, Paule of Stepinhith, Thomas Cordewayner, Jhon Talanſon, Thomas Ruſſel, and Robert Scotte, the whyche were all for that dede drawen and hanged. And a womã for the ſame dede was alſo brent. And Rafe Creppyn, Jourdane Goodchepe, Gylberte Clerke, and Geffrey Clerke, were alſo attaynte for the ſame cauſe. But they were repried and ſent vnto the towre of London, where they remayned longe after, and laſtly delyuered. And in this yere, the great conduict ſtanding agaynſt the church of Acres in Chepe, was begon to be made. In this yeare alſo, ſtryfe and vnkindnes began to kindle betwene the kynge and the Earle of Leceſter, which after grew to the great diſturbaũce of diuers townes of Englande, and ſpecially of the citie of London, as after ſomedele ſhall appeare.

The fo
dacion
great
duicte
Chepe

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxiiii. Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxv.

Gregory Rokkiſle. { Stephan Cornhyll.
Roberte Rokkiſley. } Anno. xiii.

AND in this. xiii. yeare, vpon the day of the conuerſion of S. Paule, or the. xxv. daye of Januarye, the kyng ſeaſed the fraunchiſe and liberties into handes, and diſcharged ẏ mayre of London, then being Gregory Rokkeſle, and admitted

mitted for cuſtos and gardeyn of the citie Stephan Sandwiche. The which continued in ẏ offyce, till the monday folowing the Purification of our ladye. At whiche ſeaſon, the ſaid Stephan was diſcharged, and ſyr Jhon Breton knight charged for the reſydue of the yeare. The cauſe of this diſpleaſure ẏ the king had vnto the citie is not ſhewed of no certentie. But in an old panflete it apereth, that the ſayd Gregory Rokkeſley toke certayne bribes of the Bakers, and ſuffred them to ſel bread lackyng ſyxe ounces, or.vii.oz. in a peny lofe, for the which the king ſhould be ſore diſpleaſed. But yet to me it ſeemeth no conuenient cauſe, to ſeaſe the libertyes of the citie for the offence of one man. Wherefore it is to preſuppoſe, that it was for a more greuous cauſe.

And in this yere was fullye finiſhed and ended the new worke of the churche of Weſtminſter, to the ende of the queer, begonne as before is ſhewed, in the third yere of the.iii. Henry. By which reaſon it ſhould apeare, that this church ſhoulde be in edifiyng vpon.lxvi. yeres. Of the firſt foundacion of this churche are diuers opinions. For as before is ſhewed in the.iii. cap. of the ſtory of *Carce, & the v. parte of this worke, this churche was firſt foũded by a citezin of Lõdon, & after reedified by ſ. Edward and laſtly by kinge Henry the.iii. But in ẏ ſame abbey of Weſtminſter, where of likelihode the moſte certẽtie is to be had, it is regeſtred that this ſaid churche was a tẽple of the Britons, long or thei receyued the faith of Chriſt. And in the time of their chriſten king Lucius it was halowed of Auguſtine and his felowes. And ſecondarelye, it was reedified by Sibertus then king of Eaſtſaxſõs or Eſſex, about the time when Ethelbert of Kent builded S. Paules church of Lõdon. whiche was after the tyme that Lucius receyued the faith of Chriſt, vpon foure.C.yeres. Then thirdly, it was buylded by S. Edward ẏ confeſſour, which reigned vpon.iiii.C.xl.yeres after the ſaid Sibertus. And fourthly or laſtly, by the foreſaid Henry the.iii. whiche beganne his raigne after the death of S. Edwarde.C.l.yeres.

newe
ke of
min-
fini-

*Careticus
Cap.120.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxv. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxvi.

Rafe Sandewiche. { Water Blunt. / Jhon Wade. } Anno.xiiii.

IN the.xiiii.yere of king Edward, at a parlemẽt holden at Weſtminſter, wer made the ſtatutes called *Additamenta Glocestrie*. whiche is to meane, addicions of ſtatutes made, & put to ſuch as beforetime were made at the parlement holden at Glouceter: The which ſtatutes were made to refourme ſuch perſons as miſuſed the lands and tenementes cõming to thẽ by reaſon of ẏ dower, or landes of theyr wiues, ſo ẏ the children of the ſecond huſband, put by the rightful enheritours, or ſuch as were next alied vnto the firſte donours: By reaſon of which ſtatutes & addicions now in this parlement made, ſuche miſorder was refourmed.

In this yere or nere there about, in a towne of Almain called Traiect, manye men and women (as witneſſeth the authour of Cronica cronicarū) were daunſing vpō a bridge, whiche laye ouer a ryuer called Mooſe. In whiche time of their diſporte and daunſing, came by a prieſt bearing the ſacrament toward a ſicke man, whereof the ſaid men and women being in reuell, toke no regarde vnto the ſacrament, nor did to it any honour and reuerence. But were it by the wreche of god or otherwiſe, ſhortly after the preſt was paſſed ouer, yͤ bridge brake, by meanes whereof, nere vnto the number of .CC. perſons wer drowned. And about this ſame ſeaſon, in the countrey called in Engliſh the Swetezers, a womā was delyuered of a child, that from the nauyll vpward had two complet bodies, as foure armes, and two heades, with two bodies to the waſte, and downeward, but two legges, the whiche yͤ foreſaide armes beclipped either others bodie. And another woman bare a childe or a monſter, whereof the head & the face was like vnto a man, and all the bodye lyke vnto a lyon, with taile & fete and other fetures, accordynge to the ſame.

A monſter

Straunge thynges.

In this yere alſo a citezin of Lōdō named Thomas Piwileſdon, the whiche in the time of the Barons war, before in yͤ ſtory of king Henry ſhewed, had bene a captein and a greate ſtyrrer of the comōs of the ſaide citie, for to mainteyne the barons partie againſt yͤ king, was newlye accuſed that he wyth other of euyll diſpoſition, ſhoulde make conuenticles and aſſembles to the new diſturbaunce of the citie. Wherof report was made vnto the kinge, the whiche remitted the enquirie thereof to ſyr Rauſe Sandewiche, then cuſtos or gardeyne of the citie. Then the ſaide Thomas with other was put in ſure keping tyll the matter were duelye enquired of. After whiche inquiſition made and foūde, report was made vnto the kinge. Then the king ſent downe a writ & commaūded it to be proclaimed ſhortly after within the bondes of the citie, wherof the effect was thus: that the ſaid Thomas Piwileſdō, Willam de Heywode, Richarde de Coundris, Richarde le Cofferre, Robert de Darby, Albyn de Darby, Wyllyam Mayo Mercer, and Iuo Lyng Draper, with dyuers other to the number of fiftie perſons, ſhould be baniſhed out of the city for euer. And if any of the ſaid fiftye perſons were at that tyme of the proclamacion voyded the citie for feare or otherwyſe, that they ſhoulde remayne, and not retourne vnto the citie vpon payne of lyfe loſynge.

In this yere alſo, where as of olde time long before this ſeyſon, the marchaunte ſtraungers comminge with their marchaundiſe, wer lodged within citezins of the citie of Lōdon, & ſold al their marchaundiſe by the procuring of hys hoſt, for the which his ſaid hoſt had a certain of euery .li: by menes of the ſaid marchauntes ſtrāgers it was at this dai brought to paſſe, yͤ thei might hyre to thē houſes for to dwell in, & for ſtowage of theyr wares, ſo that no citezyn ſhoulde entermeddle hym with the ſayde ſtraungers, nor yet theyr wares, by meane whereof they vſed many deceptes, bothe in vtteraunce of falſe wares, and alſo by theyr weyghtes, whiche they vſed in theyr owne houſes, to the greate hurte of the whole realme of Englande. Wherfore ſodaynly ſerche was made, & their weightes foūd and proued falſe. And ouer that al ſuch wares as they ſhould haue weighed at yͤ kinges beame, they weighed much therof in their ſaid houſes, to the hinderaunce of the kinges cuſtome. For which offences againſt theim proued, to the nūbre of .xx. of the ſaid ſtraungers were areſted, and ſent to the Tower of London, and their weightes brent and conſumed in Weſtchepe of London, the Thurſdaye before the feaſt of Symonde and Jude. And finallye the ſaide marchauntes were deliuered, by fyne makinge to the kinge of a .M.li. when they had ſuffered by ſeaſon hard and vile priſonment.

ſtran
wey-
s falſe

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxvi. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxvii.

Thomas Croſſe.
Syr Jhon Bryton. Anno.xv.
wyllyam Hawteyn.

IN this .xv. yere, the Jewes of Englande were ſeſſed at greate ſummes of money, which they payed vnto the king. But of one other authoure it is ſaide, that the commons of Englande graunted to the kynge the fyfte parte of theyr mouables, for to haue Jewes banyſhed out of the land. For which cauſe the ſayde Jewes to put the cōmōs from their purpoſe, gaue of theyr free willes great ſummes of money to the kynge. Whyche ſaiyng appeareth to bee trewe, for the ſayd Jewes were exiled within few yeres after.

This yere about the beginning of Maye, the king ſailed to Burdeaux, and from thence he rode into Fraunce: where (as witneſſeth the French boke) he was honorable receyued of Philip le Beaw, or Philip the faire king of Fraūce, and after receyued homage of the ſaid Edward for the duchy of Guian. And when Edward had taried a ſeaſon in Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeaux, whither came vnto him certeyne ambaſſadours from the kyng of Spayne, wyth the which he helde long daliaunce. Wherefore of the French kyng he was ſuſpected, that he ſhould alie him with the king of Spayne againſt the French king.

g Ed-
de ſai-
unto
rdeaux

And thys yeare (as teſtifieth Policronicon) the Sommer was ſo exceding hote, that men died for heete. And this yere whete was ſo plenteous, that it was ſolde at London, for fourty pence a quarter.

Whete at
xl. pence a
buſſhell.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxvii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxviii.

William Herforde.
Rafe Sandwiche. Anno.xvi.
Thomas Stanis.

AND in thys ſixtene yere, of kynge Edward, fell diſtance betwene ſyr Typtofte wardeyne of certayne Caſtelles in wales, & a Welſhe knight called Meredeth. ſyr Ries ap*Mordeke. So that ſondrie ſkirmiſhes wer foughten betwene theym, and men ſlayne vpon bothe ſides, to the greate diſturbaunce of all the countrey.

Thys yere vpon ſaincte Margaretes euen, or the nintene daye of Julye, fell wonderfull greate hayle, that the like thereof was not of men then lyuing ſeene. And after that enſued continuall rayne, whiche diſtempered the ground in ſuch wſie, that the yere folowinge wheate was ſolde for xviii.d. a buſhell, and this yere for xiiii.d. And ſo encreaſed yerely after during the kings raigne, & after in his ſones days til it was laſtly ſold for.xl.s. a quarter & aboue

Benet. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxviii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxix.

Wyllyam*Betaine.
Raufe Sandwiche. { } Anno.xvii.
Jhon Caunterbury.

IN thys ſeuententh yere, the warre before in the yere laſt paſte, betwene ſyr Payne Typtoft and ſir Ries continuinge, to the entent that the ſayd Ries might reuenge hys cauſe againſt the ſayde ſir Paine, he arreared a great multitude of welſhmen and brent and waſted diuers townes in Wales, ſo that the kynge then being in Normãdye, ſent vnto the earle of Cornewayle then being the kinges liuetenaunte of Englande, that he ſhould ſende thither an armye of knyghtes to withſtande the malyce of the Welſhemen. The whiche prepared ſhortly an army, and yode with theym into the borders of Northwales. Where he wyth his company bare him ſo knightly that in the end the ſaid Ries was taken and broughte vnto Yorke, where he was after drawen hanged and quartered.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxix. Anno domini.M.CC.xc.

Fulke of ſainct Edmunde.
Raufe Sandwiche. { } Anno.xviii.
Salomon Langforde.

AND in thys eyghtenth yeare, vppon oure Ladye euen Aſſumption, kynge Edwarde was honorablye receyued of the Cytezyns of London, and ſo conueyed vnto Weſtmynſter, where ſhortlye after were broughte before hym manye greuous complayntes of dyuers of hys Juſtices, as Syr Thomas Weyland, Adam Stretton, and other. The whyche the Kynge cauſed ſtrayghtlye to bee examined, and laſtly were founde gyltye of ſuche treſpaſſes and cauſes as thei were accuſed of. Wherfore ſome of them were outlawed, and loſte ſuche goodes as they had, and the other puniſhed by long impryſonment, and laſtlye delyuered by paiynge of greate fynes.

Anno domini.M.CC.xc. Anno domini.M.CC.xci.

Rafe Sandwiche. { Thomas Romain. / Wyllyam de Leyre. } Anno.xix.

IN this.xix.yeare, the king ordeined that al woll whiche ſhould be ſolde vnto ſtraungers, ſhuld be brought vnto Sandwiche, where the ſtable therof long after was, as it is now at the towne of Caleis. And this yere were the Jewes baniſhed the land, for the whiche cauſe the commons gaue vnto the king a quindecim or fyftene.

Thys yeare alſo ſyr Gylbert de Clare Earle of Glouceſter maried dame Jane doughter of king Edward. Thys was called Johan of Acris, for ſhe was borne at Acris when kyng Edwarde was there vppon hys greate iourney. And ſoone thereafter in the ſame yere, the Duke of Braban hys ſonne, wedded Margaret the ſiſter of the ſayde Johanne.

Anno domini.M.CC.xci. Anno domini.M.CC.xcii.

Rauffe Sandwiche. { Rauffe Blount. / Hamonde Boxe. } Anno.xx.

IN this xx.yere a beginnynge of the maires yere, and alſo of the kynges xx.yere, that is to meane, vpon the euen of S. Andrewe, or the.xxix.daye of Nouember, dyed quene Elianour the kinges wyfe, and was buryed at Weſtminſter in the chapel of S. Edward, at the fete of Henry the third. This gentell woman, as before is touched in the.xxxviii.yere of king Henry the third, was ſiſter vnto the king of Spaine: by whō king Edward had foure ſonnes, that is to ſaye, Jhon, Henrye, Alphons, and Edward. Whiche Edwarde ſucceded hys father, by reaſon that yͤ other thre died before their father. Alſo he had by her.v.doughters. The fyrſt Elianour, was maried vnto Wiliam of Barre. The.ii. Johan of Acrys, as before is ſayde, vnto the earle of Glouceter. The thyrd Margarete, was married to the dukes ſonne of Braban. The.iiii. Marye by name, was made a menchon at Ambriſburye. And the fyfte named Elyzabeth, was maried vnto the earle of Holand, and after hys death, ſhe was maryed vnto Humfrey Boherum earle of Herforde.

And thys yeare dyed alſo the olde Queene Elyanoure, wyfe vnto Henrye the thyrde, and mother vnto thys Kynge Edwarde, whoſe hearte was buryed at the Graye freres in London, and her bodye at Ambriſbury in the houſe of Nunnes.

Anno domini.M.CC.xcii. Anno domini.M.CC.xcii.

Rafe Sandwiche. { Henry Bale. Elys Ruſſell. } Anno.xxi.

IN thys.xxi. yere, the king held his greate courte of parlement at Lōdon, to the which with diuers lordes of that prouince, came the king of Scottes. And after he had continued there a conuenient ſeaſon, he was conueyed with diuers lordes ferre vpon his iournie toward his owne cōtrey. And in this yere, as one Richard Bagle officer of yͤ ſherifes of London, leding a priſoner toward the gayle, the which he before had arreſted, iii. mē reſcowed the ſaid priſoner, and toke him frō the officer. The whiche were purſued and taken, and by iudgement and law then vſed, broughte into Weſtchepe, & there had their right handes ſmitten of by the wreſtes.

Anno domini.M.CC.xciii. Anno domini.M.CC.xciiii.

Rafe Sandwiche. { Robert Rokiſley. Martyn Awbry. } Anno.xxii.

IN the two and twenty yere of king Edwarde, vpon the daye of ſainct Tyburce and Valerian, or the fouretene daye of May, fell wonderfull Snowe, and therewith an excedyng winde. By violence whereof greate harme was doone in ſundrye places of Englande.

In thys yeare alſo aboute the ende of the moneth of Iulye, died frere Pekham then archebyſchop of Caunterburye. In whoſe ſea was after ſtalled maiſter Robert of Wincheſter. And about the middes of September folowing, the earle of Barre a French man, marryed Elianoure the kynges doughter in the town of Briſtow. And about thend of this yere died Alexander king of Scottes, wherthrough ſoone after enſued greate war & trouble, for the enheritaūce of that land, as in ſome part ſhall after appeare.

In this yere wheate was ſolde at London for.ii.s. a buſſhell. In this yeare alſo, as witneſſeth the Frenth chronicle, Philip le Beaw then king of Fraunce made warre in Gaſcoyne and Guyan, for the cauſe as there is ſhewed, ſaiynge that the king Edwarde vnder colour to haue made a voyage into the holy land, gathered a great armie, and ſodeynlye entered into Normandy, both by land and water, and did muche harme in ſpoyling and taking diuers ſhippes of Fraunce, and brenning and ſpoylinge diuers townes of the ſame, and after came vnto the towne of Rochell, where to it the Englyſhemenne made dyuers aſſautes, whereby the dwellers and alſo the towne ſuſtayned muche harme.

Wherof yͤ king of Fraunce being enformed, ſent vnto king Edward moniſhyng him to com vnto hys parlement, and alſo to make ſatiſfaction, for ſuch harmes as his people had doen within his dominion of Fraunce & Normandye. But for that kynge Edwarde refuſed that to doe, therfore the ſaid Philippe le Beawe ſent Raufe de Neell then Conſtable of Fraunce into Gaſcoyne, with a greate and mighty power, the whiche made ſharpe war vpon the Gaſcoynes.

But the Gaſcoynes with helpe of the Engliſhmen, defended them in ſuch wiſe, that greate hurte was doen vpon both parties. Then finally, as teſtifieth the ſaid French cronicle, to the entent yͤ kinge Edward might make yͤ better claime to al the whole duchie of Normādy, he ſent the french king word yͤ he wold geue ouer into his hands the duchy of Guyan, and holde no land of the kyng of Fraunce.

Anno domini.M.CC.xciiii.

Anno domini.M.CC.xcv.

Syr Ihon Bryton. { Henry Box. / Richard Glouceter. } Anno.xxiii.

IN this.xxiii. yere, the Welſhmen by ſtyrryng of one named Madok, rebelled agaynſte the kynge. Wherefore he in all haſte ſpedde hym vnto Weſtcheſter, & aboute the feaſt of S. Nycholas wanne from the Welſhmenne the Iſle called Angleſia or the Iſle of Man, and buylded new the citie and Caſtell of Bean Maryſe, and brought the vnſtedfaſt Welſhmen to new reclaime, and then cauſed the woodes of the countrey to bee hewen downe, wherin before time they vſed to hyde them as a conye doeth in hys claper, and repayred ſo the caſtelles and ſtrong holdes, wyth buyldynge of ſome newe, that he cauſed the Welſhmenne to thriue againſt their wylles. For by the ſtrength of thoſe caſtelles, they were kepte from theyr olde accuſtomed rauynes and ſtelings, and put ſo in execution by the rulers of the ſayde Caſtelles, and ſtronge holdes, that they fell vnto occupation, and biynge and ſellyng, and gathered treaſured, and beganne to lyue after the maner of Engliſhmen, ſo that more and more that countrey grew to more reſtfulneſſe and peace.

In thys yere alſo the *Frenmenne arryued at Douer wyth a certayne of ſhyppes, beynge vnder the rule of Syr Mathewe de mounte Morencye, and of Syr Ihon Harcourte knyghtes, and ſpoyled that towne, and brente a part of it.

Normans.

In whyche ſkyrmyſhe was ſlayne Thomas of Douer. And in thys yeare (as teſtifyeth the Frenche Chronycle) Charles de Valoys brother vnto king Phylyppe of Fraunce, was ſent by his ſayde brother into Gaſcoyne with a greate Hooſte. The whyche Charles layde hys ſiege vnto the Caſtell of Ryon, wherein at that time were ſyr Ihon Seyn, Ihon and Ihon de Britaine, the which manfull and vigorouſly defended the foreſayde Caſtell agaynſt the Frenchemenne all that yeare and moore, as in the nexte yeare ſhall appeare.

Anno domini.M.CC.xcv. Anno domini.M.CC.xcvi.

Syr Jhon Bryton. { Jhon Dunſtable.
Adam Halingbery } Anno.xxiiii.

A greate ſubſidie.

IN this.xxiiii.yere, the king for ẏ great warre that he had with the Frenche kyng, & els where, cõmaunded a new ſubſidie to be leuyed vpon all ſarplers of wolle goinge out of Englande, with all felles and hydes, in lyke maner. And ouer that all ſuch money as before was graunted by the clergye of England towarde the defence of the holy lãd, the kyng then for reporte that he had from Rome of ẏ Popes maners then Boniface the eyghte, commaunded it to bee broughte vnto hys treaſurye. And by a conuocacion made of the ſayde Clergye, he had graunted towarde hys needes, halfe of theyr ſpirituall and temporall landes, begynnyng at twenty marke benefyce, and ſo aſcendynge vpwarde, the which was not payde in one yere, but by deuyded porcions in three yeres enſuynge. And of the layfee, or temporall men of Englande, he had graunted to him the tenth d̃. of theyr mouables, the whyche was payed in two yeres nexte enſuynge. And this yere in the moneth of March, was drawen and hanged at London, for treaſon doen in Frauce, a knight called ſir Thomas Turbeuyle. And aboute the time of Eaſter, when Charles de Waloys, as ye before in that other yere haue heard, had lyen lõg at the caſtell of Ryon, and myght nothing wyn vpon the Engliſhmen, but daylye loſt the beſt of his knyghtes, he ſent for moore ayde and ſuccoure. At whyche tyme came vnto hym ſyr Rauſe Nele, Counſtable of Fraunce, wyth a freſhe companye, and than aſſauted it of newe. But when they had lyen there a ſeaſon, and ſawe they preuayled nothynge agaynſt theyr enemyes, they yode vnto a holde thereby, named Poudency, and it aſſauted for ſo muche as the moore number of the ſouldyours there, were Normans: and after eyghte dayes, by appoyntment or otherwyſe, gat the ſayde holde, ſo that all the Englyſhemen hadde theyr lybertye and goodes, and the Normaynes taken as pryſoners, the whiche they broughte after vnto the caſtell of Ryon, and there in ſyghte of the ſouldiours, hanged al or the more party of the ſaid Normans. When the Gaſcoynes being within the towne and caſtel of Rions, ſaw then theyr coſens & countrey mẽ hanged before their eyen, thei caſt in their minds that it was done by treaſon of the Engliſhmen, and that thei would at length deale with them in lyke maner. By reaſon whereof ſtrife & variaunce aroſe betwene the Engliſhmen & the Gaſcoynes ſo that either of them feared the treaſõ of the other. For the whyche cauſe, Syr Jhon Seyne, Jhon Syr Jhon de Brytayne, Syr Roberte Typtofte, Syr Rauſe Tannye, Syr Hugh Bardolfe, and ſyr Adam Cretynge, wyth dyuers other,

Cruel

other fled by ſea, and in that maner ſaued them ſelf, and ſoone after the ſayd towne ⁊ caſtell of Rions, was wonne by the Frenchemen, and the inhabytauntes of the ſame, ſworne vnto the French kynge.

Ye haue heard before in the. xxii yeare of the kynge, how after the death of Alexãder kyng of Scottes, many queſtiõs fel among the ſaid Scottes, who by right of enheritaunce ſhould be king of that lande, conſideryng that the ſayde Alexander had left after him thre doughters, the whiche leauynge their father, were maried. The firſt to ſir Jhon Bailol, the ſecond to Robert le Bruze, and thirde, to one named Haſtynges. Manie of the Lordes of Scotlande woulde haue Crowned ſyr Jhon Bayloll, by reaſon that he maried the eldeſt doughter: But the frendes of Roberte le Bruze wythſtoode it, with all theyr power. And other there were that helde with Haſtynges, ſo that after great ſtrief and longe variaunce, the matter was brought before kynge Edwarde, as chiefe Lorde and ſoueraigne of that lande, promiſing to him, to abyde all ſuche determynacion ⁊ iudgement, as he ſhould ſet therin. Then kyng Edwarde to thende that the Scottes ſhuld know perfectly, that the kynge of Englãd ought of right to be their chief head and ſouerayne, ſhewed vnto them ſuch olde writinges as he litle tofore had cauſed to be ſerched and founde, in the whiche it was conteyned, by the aucthorytie of old Chronicles and writers, as Marianus the Scotte, Wylyam of Malmeſbury, Roger of Huntyngdon, and other, that in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred ⁊ xx. kyng Edward the elder, made ſubiecte vnto him, the kynges of Cumbrys and Scottes.

Alſo in the yere of grace. ix. hũdred and. xxi. the foreſayde Scottes and Cumbris, choſe the ſayde Edwarde the elder, to bee theyr chief Lorde and patron. And in the yere of our lorde. ix. C. xxvi. Ethelſtane then kynge of England ſubdued Conſtantine then kynge of Scottes, and after admitted the ſayd Conſtantine to reigne as kynge vnder hym, by other obeyſaunces, with feaute and homage And Edredus brother to the ſayd Ethelſtane, ſubdued of new the Scottes with the Northumbris and receyued of them againe othe and homage. And ouer that it is founde in the ſayd chronicles, that Edgar ouercame * Alphunius the ſonne of Kynadus Kynge of Scottes, and receyued of hym feawty and homage, ⁊ helde hym vnder his obeyſaunce as he hadde done his father Kinadus before time. Moreouer it is there wytneſſed, that Canutus in the. xvi. yere of his reigne, ſubdued Malcoline then kyng of Scottes, and receiued of hym feawtye and homage. Furthermore Williã Conquerour, in the ſixte yeare of hys reigne, ſubdued Malcolyne king of Scotland, the which before tymes had receiued the ſaide kyngedome of the gifte of Edward king and confeſſour. And william the Red, did in likewiſe vnto the ſaide Malcoline, and vnto his two ſonnes that reigned in Scotland the one after the other. Alſo Dauyd king of Scottes did homage vnto

The Scottes haue ben made ſubiect to England, and done their homage for the whole lande.

Alpinus.

Stephane

Stephan then kyng of England.

And william kyng of Scottes did homage vnto Henry the third at the time of hys Coronacion, and after came vnto hys father Henry the ſeconde, when the forenamed Henry was dead in Normandy, and made his homage to him agayne.

This Henry that was ſonne vnto Henry the ſeconde, is of manie writers named Henry the thyrde, for ſo muche as he was the thirde kinge that was crowned of that name. But for he died before his father, his dedes beu litle ſpoken of, ſo that of ſome writers he is nothing minded. And it foloweth in the ſtory, how that Alexander king of Scottes in the. xxxv. yere of Henry the thyrde, or ſonne of kynge Jhon, maried at Yorke Margaret doughter of the ſayde Henry, and did vnto him homage for the realme of Scotlande, and bounde him and his heyres kynges of Scotlande by his letters patentes, to be trew vnto the ſaid Henry, and vnto his heyres kynges of Englande, lyke as before time william kynge of Scottes had obliged him vnto the ſeconde Henry, as before in the. xxii. yere of his reygne is more manifeſtly ſhewed.

And more, to them was ſhewed the Pope of Romes Bulles, the which were ſent before times into Scotland, by aucthorite wherof, the kynges of Scotlande were accurſſed, for they woulde not bee obediente to theyr lordes kinges of Englande.

When all theſe preſedentes were ſene by the Scottes a day was aſſigned of metyng at Norham in the marches betwene England and Scotland whether vnto the kynge came the chief rulers of the Scottes. Wher they excuſed theym to be bounde vnto the king for the obſeruynge of the kinges ordenaunce, for ſo much as they lacked a kynge and hed, by whome all ſuch ordinaunces ſhould be mainteyned and holden. But after by aduice of bothe parties, agrement was made by the Scottes, that they ſhould be bounde to obey the kinges iudgement. Whervpon bondes were made vpon bothe parties, that is to meane the king was bounde to theym, in an hundred thouſande pounde, yͤ within twoo monethes after he had receiued the poſſeſſion of the lande, he ſhould geue it vnto him, that was thought moſte rightfull enheritour. And the Scottes were agayne bounde vnto him, yͤ they ſhould holde ferme and ſtable all ſuche decre and iudgement as the kynge ſhould geue in that matter, & alſo they ſhould vpholde and maynteyne for theyr kyng and ruler, him that the king ſhould admit and choſe, and none other. After whiche bondes made and deliuered vpon both ſides, the Scottes ſeaſed king Edwarde, & deliuered vnto him by their chartours, the poſſeſſion of Scotland with Caſtels, with rightes, with cuſtomes, and all other appertynaũces to that kyngdome belonging, and ſet wardeins in yͤ townes, maniers, and Caſtelles that ſhould ſaue to him that the kynge admitted, all aduauntages and profites of the ſayde townes and other in yͤ meane while growyng.

And when all aſſuraunce was

made and finiſhed to the agremēt of bothe parties, the kinge called before hym & his counſell, all thoſe parties that made claime vnto yͤ kyngdome of Scotlande. And after their reaſons were well and ſufficientlie argued, and debated vpon all ſides, by aduice aſwell of ſome of the lordes of Scotlande, as by his owne coūſayle, he finallie admitted for kynge, ſyr Jhon Bayloll, as moſt rightful enheritour to the crowne of Scotlande. The whiche receyued it of hym thankefullye, and for the ſame in preſence of the barony of England and of Scotland, did vnto the ſaid kyng Edwarde his homage, and ſware vnto him feawty. And that dooen, the Scottes wyth their new kynge retourned into Scotlande.

And thys yere was taken, the forenamed Madok or Meredok, whiche as ye before haue hearde in the .xxiii. yere, cauſed the walſhmen to rebell, and was drawen & hanged at London.

Anno domini. M.CC.xcvi. Anno dn̄i. M.CC.xcvii.

Syr Jhon Briton. { Thomas de Suff. / Adam de Fulſham. } Anno .xxv.

7.ca.40 IN thys .xxv. yere, the king cōmaunded in dyuers ſhyres of Englande, great quantite of Wheate to be gathered, and ſente into Gaſcoyne & Guyan, to the number of an hundred thouſād quarters, after ſome writers, and ſoone after ſent thyther ſir Edmund his brother Erle of Lancaſtre, ſir Henrie Lacye, Earle of Lincolne, and ſyr Wyllyā Veſey baron, with dyuers other lordes and knigetes, to ſtrengthe ſuch people as he there had reddie while he prepared an other army to haue agaynſt the Scottes.

Ye haue herde in the preceding chapiter, how ſir Jhon Bayloll kynge of Scottes made othe and homage vnto kyng Edwarde, for the kyngdome of Scotlande. Of the which othe he ſhortly repented him after, by meane of coūſell of the abbot of Menros, as ſayth *Policronicon. Al be it that it ſhoulde ſeme to be, as well by the counſel of the king of Fraunce, by wordes that ben wrytten in the Frenche chronicle. But how ſo it was by one or by bothe, full vntrewly he forſoke hys former othe and promiſe, and arrered warre agaynſt the kyng. wherfore kyng Edwarde ſped him thither wyth a great hoſte, and in proceſſe layde his ſiege vnto the towne of Berwike. But the Scottes defended it egrely, and bet the Engliſh men backe, and brent ſome of the Engliſh ſhippes. wyth the which enterpriſe, they were ſo enflamed wyth pride, that in deriſion of the kynge, they made thys mockyſh rime folowyng. Li.7.ca.40

VVhat wenys kyng Edward with
his longe ſhankes,
To haue wonne Berwike, all our
vnthankes.

Gaas pykes hym,
And when he had it
Gaas dykes hym.

WHen king Edward herd of the pride of the Scottes, and knew of theyr ſcornefull ryme, he was ſomedeale amoued, and encouraged his knyghtes in ſuche wiſe, yͤ they wan the diche of the towne, and after in proceſſe with greate laboure and daunger, the Bulwerkes, ſo that they came vnto yͤ gates, and made theyr ſo ſtronge aſſawte, that in thende they wan the towne, and ſlew of the Scottes (as witneſſeth diuers wryters) ouer the number of. xxv. M. and tooke priſoners ſyr William Douglas, ſir Simonde de Freyſell, the Earle Patrik, and ſir Robert Bruze, with diuers other: & in ſhorte time after, the wardein of the Caſtell of Berwike, ſeynge that to him was ſent no ſuccour, yelded vp the ſayde Caſtell by appoyntment. And when the kynge had poſſeſſion of the Towne and Caſtel of Berwik, he then ſtrengthed them with Engliſhmen. And after whan the holdes of * Tyndall, of Exham, of Wyerbird, and of Lamerſtoke, with diuers other.

Tyuidale.

And whyle that kyng Edward was thus buſied, aboute the winnyng of theſe foreſayd holdes, he ſente ſir Hugh Spencer, with ſyr Hugh Percy and other noble mē, with a parte of his hoſte, to laye ſeige vnto Dunbarre. Where whē they had lyne a certayne of time, an hoſte of Scottes came thither, to remoue the ſiege, with whome the Englyſh men had a fiers and cruell battell. But in the ende by helpe of God and ſaynte George, the Englyſh men had the victorie and ſlew of the Scottes, aboue yͤ number of. xx. thouſande, and loſt of the Engliſh compaignie a very few in number. Wherfore the Engliſh mē in reproche of the Scottes, made this rime folowyng.

Theſe ſcaterand Scottes
Holde we for ſottes
Of wrenches vnware:
Erly in a mornyng
In an euill timyng
Came they to Dunbarre.

AND after thys victory the towne and Caſtel of Dunbarre was wonne, in the which wer taken priſoners three Earles ſeuen Barons, and. xxviii. knightes, wyth diuers men of the Churche. Then the kyng ſped him to Edenborow, and in proceſſe of time, wanne the towne with the Caſtell. In whiche were founde the regalies of Scotland, yͭ is meane the crowne with the ſepter and cloth of eſtate the whiche after were offered by kyng Edward, at the ſhrine of S. Edwarde, vpon the morow after the feaſt of ſaynt Botholfe, or the xviii. daye of Iune, in the yere folowyng. And when the kyng had thus ſubdued the Scottes, and ſet the countrey in a rule, he returned with many pryſoners into england. In which time and ſeaſon the Englyſh men ſuſteined manie harde ſhoures in Gaſcoyne and Guian. Amonge the which one is remembred in the Frenche cronicle, ſaiyng that Edmund duke of Lancaſtre, died at Bayon: After whoſe

Scotl
agayn
dued
kinge
ward

whoſe deathe, while the towne & other ſtronge holdes prepared them to withſtande the Frenche men, Robert Erle of Artoys, whiche a litle tofore had encountred with ſir Jhon, and had been of him ouerſet, reſembled his company, and made him an other ſkirmiſhe. In which he ſlew vpon an hundreth Englyſhmen and Gaſcoynes, and tooke pryſoners the forenamed ſir Jhon, Sein Jhon, ſir William Mortimer and other to the numbre of. lxx. the whiche were ſente into Fraunce vnto diners pryſons.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcvii. Anno domini. M. CC. xcviii.
Sir Jhon Brytõ. { Jhon de Stortforde.
William de Stortforde. } Anno. xxvi.

IN this. xxvi. yere, kynge Edward wͭ a puiſaunte armie in the moneth of Auguſt, toke ſhipping at Douer, & ſailed into Flaunders, to ayd and helpe Guy then Earle of Flaunders agaynſt the French kynge. The which at that time was ſore warried of the Frenche kynge, in ſo muche ỹ he had won ỹ towne of Marquet & the countrey there aboute. And for to put the ſayde Guy vnto the more trouble, the ſayde Frenche kynge cauſed Roberte Earle of Artoys, to inuade the countrey of Flaũders toward Picardy, and encoũtred wyth the ſame Guy neare vnto a towne called Furnes. Where atwene the ſayd two Erles was foughten a ſharpe batayll, ſo that many men were ſlayne vpon bothe parties. After whiche fight the Earle of Flaunders ſpedde him towarde Gaunt, where as kyng Edwarde then ſoiourned, and the Earle of Artoys drew hym towarde the Frenche kynge, the which ſhortlie after was receyued into ỹ towne of Bruges. In whiche time & ſeaſon whyle the ſayd two kinges lay thus at either towne, a meane of peace was there treated of, ſo that finally a peace was concluded, atwene the two kynges, & atwene the Frenche kynge and Guy erle of Flaunders, vnto the feaſt of all ſayntes then next enſuynge. And from that day, vnto the feaſt of al ſayntes then two yeres folowing After whiche peace ſo ſtablyſhed, kyng Edward departed from the towne of Gaunt and yode to Burdeaux. And the Frenche kyng retourned into Fraunce. And pryſoners, were deliuered on bothe parties.

A French cautile.

In this time and ſeaſon while kyng Edward was thus occupied in Fraunders, the Scottes by the entiſement of the Frenche kynge, to the entente to cauſe kynge Edwarde to kepe his countrey, and that he ſhould not ayde the Earle of Flaunders, beganne to make warre vpon ỹ kinges ſouldiours, which the kyng had lefte there in diuers holdes. And alſo entred vpon the borders of Northumberlande, & made ſharpe warre vpon the enhabitauntes of that countrey. And for ỹ ſir Jhon Bayloll their kynge, after ſome writers, was at that tyme priſoner in the towre of London, or els voyded the countrey for feare of the kinge of Englande: therefore the ſayde Scottes made them a capitayne, the whiche was named William Waleis, a man of vnknowen or loe byrth, to whome they obeyed as vnto their kinge. Anon as the kynge hearde of the rebellion of the Scottes, whiche to him was no greate wonder, conſiderynge their greate vnſtedfaſtneſſe, he wrote his letters vnto ſyr Henrie Perſy Earle of Northumberlande, to ſyr wyllyam Latimer, and to ſir Hugh Creſſingham thẽ treaſourer of Englande, and to other, that they in all goodly haſt ſhould make prouiſion, to withſtande the Scottes. The whiche perſons after receite of the kynges letters, ſpedde theym all in ſpedie maner, ſo that they entred Scotland ſhortlie after, and compelled the Scottes to retourne backe vnto a towne named Streuelyn, where in ſkyrmiſhe foughten, atweene the Englyſhe and the Scottes, ſyr Hugh Creſſingham forenamed, with diuers Engliſhe menne was ſlayne.

But yet the Scottes were holden ſo ſtrayte of the Englyſche hoſte, that after that ſkyrmiſche they would not of a certayne time come in playne fielde, but kepte theym within their Caſtelles and ſtronge holdes. And this yeare atwene Eaſter and whitſontyde certain perſons of London, brake vp the tunne in ẏ warde of Cornhill, and tooke oute certayne perſons that thither were committed by ſir Ihon Briton, then Cuſtos or gardeyn of the Citie, for night walkynge. For the whiche ryot the ſayde perſons, that is to meane Thomas Romayne, and viii. other, were afterwarde greeuouſly puniſched, as fyrſt by pryſonment, and after by fynes. And this yere the kyng in the moneth of October came into Englande, and ſo to wyncheſter, where the Cityzeins of London made ſuche labour vnto his grace, that ſhortlie after they optayned graunt of their liberties and fraunchyſes, that hadde in ſome parte be kepte from theym, by the tearme of .xii. yeres and more. So that vpon the day of the tranſlacion of ſaynt Edwarde kynge and confeſſoure next folowinge, they chaſe theim a Mayre of theym ſelfe, where by all the foreſayde tyme theyr Cuſtos or gardeyn was appoincted by the kyng, or by ſuche as the kynge would aſſygne. But ye ſhal vnderſtande that thys was not redemed without great ſummes of money. For after ſome writers the Cityzeins payed for it to the Kyng three thouſande marke.

And this yere kyng Edwarde put out of his protection certayn Aliauntes, which wer richely beneficed in Englande. The cauſe was for the ſaid aliauntes would not ayde the Kynge wyth their goodes, as the other of his lande dyd, but purchaſed an inibicion of Boniface the eight, that thei and theyr goodes ſhould be free from all the kynges dimes or taſkis. Therfore, the kynge ceaſed theyr temporalties, and ſuffered theym with theyr ſpiritualties, till they were agried wyth the kyng.

Henry Waleys. { Richarde Reſſham. / Thomas Sely. } Anno.xxvii.

IN this.xxvii.yere after Chriſtmaſſe, certayne perſonnes made a digging and a ſerchynge, in the churche of S.Martines le graunde in London, for certayne treaſour that there ſhould be hid, as it was reported of a gardiner. But their laboure was in vayne, for nothing was their found. For the which dede the deane of Poules the ſeconde ſundaye of Lente folowing, denounced all them accurſed that were at that dede doyng, or conſentyng to the ſame.

In this yere aboute the beginnyng of Aprell, the kyng rode towarde Scotlande, and appoynted his lordes with three cōpaygnies to mete with him at Yorke. Where with him mette a greate hoſt, the which he lad into Scotlande, and brente and ſpoyled the countrey as he wente, and taried a ſeaſon at Barwike. And from then he ſped him in winnynge of the townes, and Caſtelles, as he went, till he came to a towne named Faukirk or Fankirk. where vpon the day of Mary Magdelin or the.xxii.day of July, met wyth him the power of Scotlande, and gaue vnto him a ſore fight. But in the ende, the victorye fell vnto Engliſhmen, ſo that of the Scottes were ſlayne in the fielde, as affyrmeth diuers writers, ouer the nūber of.xxxii.M. and of Engliſhmen, but barely.xxviii. perſons. After which diſcōfiture the Scottes yelded to the kynge, the more partie of the ſtronge holdes and Caſtels, that they tofore had holden agaynſt him, and made vnto him new othe and promiſſe, and yelded them ſelfe vnto his grace ⁊ mercy. And when he had ſet that countrey in an order and rule, he then returned into England, and ſo to London. Where by the aduice of ſome of his counſayl, he ſodeynlie dampned certayn coynes of money, called Pollardes, Crocardes, and Roſaries, and cauſed theym to bee brought to new coynage, to his great aduauntage.

A new oth ⁊ homage made by the Scottes.

Certein coynes of money dāpned.

Ye haue before heard in that other yeare, how that a truce or a peace was ſtabliſhed betwene the kynge, and the kynge of Fraunce, for the ſpace of two yeres ⁊ more, the which finally was concluded this yere, that kyng Edward for a peace to be had betwene both regions, ſhoulde take vnto wyfe Margaret, the ſiſter of Philip le Beaw, then kyng of Fraunce. The which Margaret, while the kynge was in Scotlande, was brought vnto Douer, and ſo vnto Caunterbury, where the kynge ſpouſed her, in yͤ moneth of September, as witneſſeth the French chronicle, and receyued of her, in proceſſe of tyme folowynge, two ſonnes named Thomas and Edmunde, and a doughter named Margaret. The fyrſte of the ſonnes was ſurnamed Thomas of Brotherton, and the ſeconde Edmunde Wodeſtoke.

Anno domini. M.CC.xcix. Anno domini. M.CCC.

Elys Ruſſell. Jhon Armenter. Henry Fryngeryth. Anno.xxviii.

The thyrd voyage made by kyng Edward into Scotland.

IN this.xxviii.yere yͤ kyng hearing of the vntrouth & rebellion of yͤ Scottes, made the third voyage into Scotlande, and bare him ſo knightlie, that in ſhorte proceſſe after his comyng he ſubdued the more part of the land. And after he ſped hym vnto the Caſtell of Eſtriuelin, wherin were many of the greate lordes of Scotlande, and enuironed the ſayd Caſtel with a ſtrong ſiege. But he laye there ſom what oftime, without winning of anye greate aduauntage, or hurte doyng vnto the Scottes. Wherfore of policie, he cauſed to be made.ii. payre of Galowes, in the ſight of the Caſtell, and after commaunded proclamacions to be cried, yͭ if the Scottes by a certayne day, would yelde that Caſtell vnto the kyng, they ſhoulde haue life and limme. And if not, but yͭ he wan it by ſtrength, as manie as were within the ſayd Caſtell, ſhould be hanged vpon the Gibettes, none eſtate nor perſon to be excepted.

In proceſſe of time, when the Scottes had wel diſgeſted thys proclamacion, & ſaw the ſtrength of their enemies, and conſidered their owne feblenes, and lacke of ſuccoure, they aſſented finallye to yelde them & their caſtell vnto the kynge, whiche ſhortly after was done. wherof kyng Edwarde beyng poſſeſſed, ſtuffed it with Engliſh knightes, and after tooke a new othe of the Lordes and Capitaynes, the which he found cloſed within that Caſtell, of trew & faythful allegaunce, & after ſuffered them to go where them liked.

And when Willyam walys, which as before is ſayde, pretended the rule and gouernaunce of Scotland, hard tel that yͤ ſtronge Caſtell of Eſtryueline was yelded vnto kyng Edwarde, and the lordes and knightes therin founden, in whiche he muche affied, were ſworne to the kinges allegeaūce, he feared ſore leaſt the ſayde companie woulde betray him, & bring him vnto the kynge. Wherfore he with his adherentes, withdrew him into the mareiſes, and other daungerous places, where he thought he was in ſuertie for purſuyng of the kynges hoſte.

Then the poore commons of the lande, preſented theym by greate companies, and put theim wholie in the kynges grace and mercy, ſo that the kyng thought, then that he was in peaſible poſſeſſion, or in a greate ſuertie of the lande. Wherefore after he had cauſed to be ſworne vnto him the rulers of diuers boroughes, cities, & townes, with other officers of the lād he returned vnto Berwike and ſo into Englande, and laſtelye vnto weſtminſter.

In this tyme & ſeaſon that the kynge was thus occupied aboute his warres in Scotland, yͤ quene was conueyed vnto London. Agaynſt whome the Citezens vpon the

e citi-
s clo-
in
te and
e.

number of.vi.C.rode in one liuerie of read and white, with the coniſaunce of diuers miſteries, brodered vpon their ſleues, & receiued her foure miles without the citie, & ſo conueyed her thoroughe the citie, which then was garniſhed & behanged with tapets and arras and other clothes of ſilke & riches in moſte goodly wiſe, vnto weſtminſter, and there lodged.

uiſiciõ
Troial-
one.

When the kyng this yere, was retourned out of Scotlande, he cauſed ſhortly after an * inquiſiciõ to be made through his lande, the which after was named Troilbaſton. This was made vpon al officers, as Maiors, ſhiriffes, bayliffes, excheters, & many other that had myſborne them in theyr ſayd offices, & had extorcioned or miſtreated the kynges liege people, otherwyſe then was accordynge with the good order of theyr ſayd offices. By meane of which inquiſicion, many were accuſed, and redemed their offices by greuous fines, to the kinges great lucre and aduauntage. Other meanes wer founden alſo, as forfaytes againſt the Crowne, the whiche brought great ſũmes of money to the kinges coffers, towarde the greate charge of his warres, that he ſuſteined in Walis, Fraunce & Scotlande, as before is ſhewed.

Thys yere alſo the kyng for cõplaynt yͭ was brought vnto hym, by maiſter Walter Langton byſſhop of Cheſter, of ſir Edward his eldeſt ſonne, for yͭ he with Piers of Gaueſtone, and other inſolente perſons, had broken yͤ ſaide parke of the ſayde biſhop, & riotouſly deſtroied the game within it, he therfore impriſoned yͤ ſaid ſir Edward his ſonne with his cõplices. And in proceſſe of time after, when the king was througly enfourmed of yͤ laſſiuious & wanton diſpoſiciõs of the ſaid Piers of Gaueſtone, for that he ſhould not enduce the forenamed ſir Edward, to bee of like diſpoſicion: he therfore baniſhed yͤ ſaid Piers of Gaueſtõ out of England for euer. But after yͤ death of king Edward yͤ baniſhmẽt was ſoone denulled, by Edwarde his ſonne, wherof enſued much harme & trouble, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Anno domini.M.CCC.

Anno domini.M.CCC.i.

Elys Ruſſell. { Luke Hauerynge.
Rycharde Champnes. } Anno.xxix.

IN this.xxix. yere of kynge Edwarde, died Edmunde Earle of Cornewayle, the ſonne of Richard ſomtime erle of the ſayde countrey, and kynge of Almaine, without iſſue. Wherfore that earledome returned agayne to the crowne of Englande.

And in this yere, the kyng gaue vnto ſyr Edwarde his ſonne, the principate and head of Walis, and ioyned therunto the ſayd Earledome of Cornewayle.

Anno domini.M.CCC.i.

Anno domini.M.CCC.ii.

Jhon Blount. { Robert Caller.
Peter Boſham. } Anno.xxx.

IN thys thyrty yere, the kyng helde his greate counſell of parliament, at his Citie of Caunterbury.

Anno domini.M.CCC.ii. Anno domini.M.CCC.iii.
Jhon Blount. Hugh Pourt. Symon Parys. Anno.xxxi.

Anno domini.M.CCC.iii. Anno domini.M.CCC.iiii.
Jhon Blount. Wyllyam Cõbmartyn. Jhon de Burkforde. Anno.xxxii.

Anno domini.M.CCC.iiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.v.
Jhon Blount. Rogier Parys. Jhon Lyncolne. Anno.xxxiii.

William Waleys kynge of Scotland, taken pryſoner and for breakyng hys allegeaũce contrarye to his othe was hanged, drawẽ and qnartered.

IN this.xxxiii. yere William Waleis, yͭ vnto the kinge had doone ſo many diſpleaſures and treaſons agaynſte the trouthe and allegeaunce of hys othe, as ſome deale before is ſhewed, was taken at the Towne named ſaint Dominik in Scotland, and ſent vnto London, and there arrayned, & vpon the euen of S. Bartilmew, drawen, hanged, and quartered, and his hed ſette vpon London brydge, & his foure quarters ſent into Scotland, and ther hanged vpon the gates of certain townes of the lande. And at Mychelmas folowyng, the king holdynge his Parliamente at Weſtminſter, thyther came oute of Scotlande, the Byſſhop of ſaynt Andrewes, Roberte le Bruze, ſyr Symon de Fryſell Earle of Dunbarre, ſir Jhon of Cambrees, Earle of Atles, and ſir Jhon Comyn with other, the whiche voluntarylie were ſworne, in preſence of the kynge and his lordes, that they ſhould be trew vnto the kynge of Englande, and kepe the lande of Scotlande, to his vſe agaynſt all other perſons. And yf any rebel or other malicious perſon diſtourbed the lande, or breke the kynges peace, they ſhold cauſe him to bee taken, and ſente vnto the kynge, with many other articles concernyng theyr allegeaũce the whiche full faſly they brake & contraried ſhortlie after.

The
tes ag
ſware
the an
legau
to the
of En

Anno domini.M.CCC.v. Anno domini.M.CCC.vi.
Jhon Blount. Raynolde Doderley. Wyllam Canſyn. Anno.xxxiiii.

IN this. xxxiii. yeare, Robert le Bruze, contrary his othe to king Edward before made, aſſembled the Lordes of Scotlande, and by the Counſell of the Abbot of Stone and other that fauoured his vntrouth he ſent vnto Clement the. v. for a dyſpenſacion of hys othe, before made vnto kynge Edwarde, and ſurmiſed to him, that kynge Edwarde vexed and greued yͤ realme of Scotland wrongefully, Wherupon the Pope of Rome, wrote vnto kynge Edwarde to leaue of ſuche doynges.

The fal- ho ⁊ de- te of the cottes.

And while this matter was thus complayned on vnto the Pope of Rome, the ſayde Robert le Bruze made all the labour he might vnto the lordes of Scotlande, that he were admitted for kynge of yͤ region, ſo that vpon the dai of the conception of our lady, or the. viii. day of December, a great aſſemble of the lordes was made at the Abbey of Stone. And vpon the day folowynge, by the meanes of the Abbot of that place, manie of the ſayde Lordes aſſented to the wyll of the ſayde Roberte, excepte ſyr Jhon Comin onlie. The whiche in defence of his trouthe and othe, before ſworne vnto kynge Edwarde, many reaſons and excuſes made, and finally ſayd that he would not falſe his othe for no man. For this, the ſayde ſyr Jhon Comyn had greate maugre of ſyr Robert le Bruze, ⁊ manie of yͤ nobles of Scotland. But he held his opinion ſo fermely, that other began to take his part, that in that counſell roſe ſuche contraritie of opinions ⁊ reaſons, that the ſayd counſell was diſſolued, and a new ſet at the Gray freers of Dunfrize after Candelmas next enſuynge. At which day of aſſemble when yͤ cauſe of theyr meting was by Robert le Bruze denounced ⁊ ſhewed ⁊ many of the great lordes of the lande had graunted to him their aydes ⁊ aſſiſtence, the forenamed ſir Jhon Comin ⁊ other ſat ſtill ⁊ ſayde no worde. Which Robert le Bruze marked wel, ⁊ to him ſaid: And you ſir Jhon I truſte for defence ⁊ weale of this Realme, ye wil not be behinde. Wherunto he anſwered: ſir I wold that ye ⁊ all my lordes here preſent know wel that for the weale ⁊ defence in the right of this land, I wolde ſtande wͭ it to the vttermoſt of my power But for I ſe yͭ ye entende rather yͤ ſubuercion than the weale therof, I wil therfore ye know, I ſhal nother ayde you wͭ counſel nor yet wͭ ſtrength. Some other alſo there wer whoſe names the aucthoure mindeth not, whiche allowed the ſaiyng of the ſaid ſir Jhon, and in ſome wordes, admitted his ſad ⁊ trew anſwere. For the which Robert le Bruze was ſo amoued, that when ſyr Jhon Comin, with ſyr Roger his brother, was departed from the counſel, ⁊ was comen in to the church of yͤ freres, Roberte le Bruze him folowed ⁊ wounded to the death with his ſweard: and after ſlew ſir Roger his brother, which woulde haue defended the foreſayd ſir Jhon. After whoſe death litell or no reſiſtence was made, againſt the vntrue meane ⁊ dedes of yͤ ſaid Robert le Bruze, ſo that he at S. Jhons towne was crowned kyng ſhortly after.

The tes ag ſware the ar legau to the of En

Shamful murder.

It was not long after yͤ kynge

Edwarde was monyſſhed, of all this vntrouthe of the Scottes, wherfore he prepared him to wẽd thither. And at Penthecoſte he helde a great feaſt of his Barony at Weſtminſter, and duryng that feaſte made a greate number of knightes ouer. ii. C. after moſte writers. And that feaſt ended, he ſente wͭ a fayre company of knightes ſir Aymer de Valaunce Earle of Penbroke, and ſyr Henry Percie earle of Northumberlande into Scotlande, and ſped him ſelfe with his hoſte ſoone after.

Victory agaynſt the Scottes.

Then aboute the feaſte of the Aſſumpcion of our lady, the kinge fought with the ſayde Roberte le Bruze and all the power of Scotlande, in a playne nere vnto ſaynt Jhons towne. And after longe fight and greate ſlaughter of the Scottes to the number of. vii. M he chaſed the Scottes. In which chaſe ſyr Symon de Friſeyl Earle of Dunbarre was taken, wyth alſo the Biſhoppes of Saynt Andrews and of Baſtone, the Abbot of Stoon or Scoon: ⁊ ſyr Jhon Chambres Earle of Atles. Which Byſhops and Abbot kynge Edwarde ſente after vnto innocente the fifte, then Pope of Rome with reporte of theyr periury, and how they were taken armed in yͤ field, to ſhede the bloud of chriſten men. And the temporal Lordes he ſent into Englande, and ſo vnto the Towre of London. And Roberte le Bruze after this diſcomfyture and loſſe of his chiefe frendes, fearyng leaſt the Scottes with ſuch Englyſhmen as kynge Edwarde left there, would riſe agaynſt him all comfortleſſe fled vnto the king of Norway, and there abode durynge while kyng Edward liued.

Biſhops periured

When this noble Prynce Edwarde had thus ſubdued the ſcottes, he yelded thankes to God of his victory. And when he was aſcertayned of the auoydyng of Robert le Bruze, and had ſet the land in a quiet and order, he retourned into England.

In this paſſetime were the forenamed lordes of Scotland areigned at London, and vpon yͤ euen of the Natiuite of our Lady putte to death, and their heads after ſet vpon London Bridge. And ſhortlie after was Jhon Waleis brother to William Waleis (whyche for lyke treaſon was put to death in the precedyng yere) taken and hanged and quarteryd. And ſome Scottes that were taken as pryſoners, remayned longe in England or they might acquite their finaunce.

Certay
lordes
Scotla
behed

Anno domini. M. CCC. vi. Anno domini. M. CCC. vii.

Jhon Blount. { Symon Benet.
Godfrey de la Conduit. } Anno. xxxv.

IN this. xxxv. yere, the kyng for certayne cauſes hym mouynge, retourned agayne into Scotland. Or after ſome writers he taryed at Berwike, and helde his Chriſtmas ⁊ Eaſter in thoſe parties, and came not into England after he had diſconfited the Scottes. In yͤ ſeaſon of ſommer, as he was retournynge into Englande, a ſyckeneſſe tooke hym ſo feruentlye that he knewe well he ſhoulde dye. Wherefore he beyng at Brugth vppon the ſande beyonde Carleyll, called to him ſir Aymer de Valance Earle of Penbroke, Syr Henrye Percy Earle of Northumberlande, ſyr Henry Lacye Earle of Lincolne, and ſyr Roberte Clyfforde Baron, and cauſed theim to bee ſworne before him, that they ſhoulde crowne his ſonne Edwarde in as conuenient time after his death as thei might and kepe the land to his vſe till he were crowned.

And that othe by the ſaide barons taken, he called before hym his ſonne Edwarde, and charged him with diuers pointes vpon his bleſſinge. Amonge the which one ſpeciall was, that he ſhould neuer after that daye ſuffer Pyers of Gaueſton, to retourne into Englande, and ſo lyke a good chriſten Prince dyed ſhortlye after, vppon the ſeuenth daye of the moneth of Julye, when he hadde raygned foure and thyrtye yeres, ſeuen monethes and odde dayes, and after with greate ſolempnitie conueyed vnto Weſtminſter, and there buryed in the Chapell of ſaincte Edwarde, vpon the Southſyde, in a playne tombe of marble at the head of hys father. Thys noble man had two wiues, by the which as before is ſhewed in the twenty, and ſeuen and twenty yere of hys raygne, he had iſſue, as in the ſaid yeres appeareth. Of thys noble Prynce a Verſifier made theſe two verſes folowing.

Dum vixit rex & valuit ſua magna poteſtas.
Fraus latuit, pax magna fuit, regnauit honeſtas.

¶ Which Verſes may bee Engliſhed in this maner folowyng.

VVhile lyued thys kynge,
By hys power all thyng
VVas in good plyght.
For gile was hydde,
Great peace was kidde,
And honeſty had myght.

Another Verſifyer alſo of hym made theſe Verſes folowynge, and cauſed theym to bee hanged ouer the place of his ſepulture.

Mors ë meſta nimis, magnos q̄ iūgit in imis
Maxima mors minimis, coniungens vltima primis,
Nullus in orbe fuit hō viuens, nec valet eſſe,
Qui non morte ruit, eſt hinc exire neceſſe,
Nobilis & fortis, tibi tu confidere noli,
Omnia ſunt mortis, ſibi ſubdit ſingula ſoli.
De mūdi medio, magnū mors impia mouit
Anglia pre tedio ſatis anxia plangere nouit,
Corruit Edwardus vatio veneratus honore.
Rex nuper & nardus fragans virtutis odore.
Corde leopardus, inuictus & abſque pauore.
Ad rixam tardus, diſcretus & eucharis ore.
Viribus armorū quaſi gigas, ardua geſſit.
Colla ſuperborum prudens per prelia preſſit
Inter Flandrenſes fortuna ſibi bene fauit.
Vt quoque Wallenſes, et ſcotos ſubpeditauit
Rex bonus abſque pare, ſtrenue ſua regna regebat.
Quod natura dare potuit bonitatis habebat
Actio iuſticie, pax regni, ſanctio legis,
Et fuga nequitie, premunt preconia regis.
Gloria tota ruit, regē capit hec modo foſſa.
Rex qnādoque fuit, nūc nil niſi puluis et oſſa
Filius ipſe dei, quem corde colebat & ore,
Gaudia donet ei, nullo permixta dolore.

The whiche Verſes to the entent that they ſhoulde be hadde in mynde, and alſo that the reader myghte haue the moore deſyre to ouer read theym, I haue therfore ſet theym out in Balade royal, after my rude making, as foloweth.

This ſorowfull death, whiche bringeth great full lowe,
And moſt and leaſt he ioyneth into one
This man to whom his pier was not knowe
Hath nowe ſubdued, not ſparynge hym alone,
Whyche of all other this worlde to ouergone,
None was to bee ſpared, of ſo greate equitie,
As he, yf any, for nobleneſſe ſpared ſhoulde bee.

Therefore thou noble or myghtye, truſt none other grace,
But thou ſhalt paye to death thy naturall dette,
And lyke as he from this worlde dyd chaſe
This mighty prince, and from his frendes fette,
For whome all Englande loude mourned and grette,
So ſhalt thou and other in deathes ſnare fall,
None ſhall eſcape, to reken kyndes all.

Edwarde with many and diuers graces endowed,
And lyke as Nardus moſt ſweteſt of odoure
In ſmellyng paſſeth, and moſt is allowed,
Of all ſwete odours, ſo did thys knyghtlye floure,
By vertuous actes ſurmounte in honoure,
All other Princes, whoſe heart was Lybarde lyke,
And without feare, were he whole or ſycke.

This Prince was ſlowe to all maner of ſtryfe,
Diſcrete and wiſe, and trewe of hys worde,
In armes a Gyaunte, terme of all hys lyfe,
Excelling actes doing by dint of the ſworde,
Subdued the proude, of prudence he bare the horde,
Of Flaunders by fate he had great amitie,
And Welſh and Scottes, by ſtrength ſubdued he.

This good kyng peerleſſe, his landes firmely guyded,
What nature might geue, he failed it nothing,
No parte of bountie from hym was diſcided,
He was iuſtice and peace, and of lawe ſtabliſhynge,
And chaſer of iniquitie, by his vertuous lyuyng,
In whome theſe graces with innumerable mo,
Fermely were rooted, that death hath tane vs fro.

That whilom was a king, and nowe is but duſt and bone,
All glory is fallen, and this pitte kepeth the king.
But he that yeldeth all thing by hys owne,
The ſonne of God, to whome aboue all thing
With heart and mouth he did due worſhipping,
That Lorde ot his ioye perdurable to laſte,
Graunt him ſorowleſſe euermore to taſte.

Philip the.iiii. of that name, and ſonne of the.iii. Philippe, whiche was ſurnamed Phylyp le Beawe, or Philip the fayre, beganne hys raigne ouer the realme of Fraũce in the yere of grace, a thouſande, two hundred, foure ſcore and ſixe, and the eyghte yeare of the fyrſte Edwarde then king of England. This for warre that he had with the duke of Gelderlande, arrered great impoſions through his lãd, both of the ſpiritualtie and alſo of the temporaltie.

Aboute the fourth yeare of hys raygne, the prince of Salerne, that long had been holden in priſon by the kinge of Aragon, was delyuered vpon a hard condicion, as foloweth.

Fyrſt, that he ſhoulde to the vttermoſt of his power labour a concorde and peace betwene ẏ church of Rome and the Aragons, and that done, ſet a peace betwene the Frenche king and him.

And ouer that, to paye in the ende of fiftene monethes next enſuyng, an hundred thouſande Floryns for his raunſome. A Floryn is in value after ſterlyng money, two ſhyllinges and ten pence, and ſo he ſhoulde paye after the value of Englyſhe money, ſeuentene thouſande and fiue hundred poũd. And after that daye, he ſhould neuer beare armes againſt the king of Aragons. And if within the terme of thre yeares nexte enſuinge, he mighte not conclude the foreſaide peace, he ſhoulde then retourne and yelde him ſelfe pryſoner, as he before was. All whiche couenauntes firmely to be holden, he fyrſt made ſolempne oth, ⁊ deliuered to the king certayne hoſtages, and ſo departed.

But this compoſition or agrement was thought ſo vnreaſonable vnto his frendes, that he was counſayled by theim that he ſhuld ſue vnto the Pope for a diſpenſation of his othe, and that had, they woulde helpe hym to recouer his ſaide hoſtages. After whoſe counſaile, he the yere folowynge, made ſuche laboure vnto Honorius the fourth of that name, than Pope, that he alonlye obtayned not abſolicion of hys othe, but alſo by him he was declared king of Scicill, and of Nycholas the.iiii. ſucceſſour of the foreſaide Honorius after confyrmed. This prince of Salerne, as before ye haue heard, in the ſtorie of Philippe the thyrde, and.iii.and.iiii Chapters of the ſame, was ſonne vnto Charles brother of ſaincte Lewes, and king of Scicill. And the forenamed kynge of Aragon, that hym vpon the aboueſaide condicions, thus delyuered, was ſonne vnto Peter king of Aragon, whiche as before in the ſtorie of the foreſaide thirde Philip, helde warre wyth him, and with the ſayde Charles. This Prince of Salerne was alſo named Charles, after the name of his father, the whiche after hys admiſſion of the Pope, was crowned kinge of Scicil, in the citye of Palermo ſoone after, and defẽded the land knightly againſt the Aragons, wͭ the helpe of the Frenchmen, by the terme of fyue yeares after. At the whiche termes ende, Alphons then kinge of Aragon dyed, and Jaques or James, to whom the foreſayd Alphons had betaken the rule of Scicill, and helde warre with the forenamed Charles, was as brother, and next heire vnto the crowne of Aragon, admitted king of that reregion. After the whiche admiſſion, he ſhortlye after concluded a peace with the ſayd Charles, and redelyuered vnto hym all ſuch hoſtages and pledges, as hys brother Alphons had before tyme of hym receyued, for kepinge of the former conuencions. And for the moore ſtablyſhment of the ſame peace, the ſaid James toke to wife one of the doughters of the ſayde Charles.

Aboute the ſyxte yeare of the raygne of thys Philip, certaine ſouldiours of Fraunce, to the nūber of fyue hundred, whiche were ſente by the procurement of Nycholas the. iiii. Pope, vnto Acris, to fortifie the towne, contrary the truce betwene the Chriſten and the Soudane, before concluded for the terme of two yeres, brake out of the towne and Caſtels adioynaunt and ſpoyled and robbed ſuch Sarazins as to that towne were dwellynge nere, and dyd to them al the ſorow and ſhame that they mighte. Whereof the Soudane hauynge knowledge, was therewith greuouſlye amoued.

But yet or he woulde attempt any warre agaynſt the Chriſten, he ſent vnto the Capytaine of the citie of Acon, and willed him to ſende vnto him ſuche perſones as had broken the peace, and doone that iniurie to hys people. And yf he it refuſed, he ſent theym worde he ſhoulde not blyn tyll he had deſtroyed them, as lately before had done the inhabitauntes of the citie of Triple. But they ſet his manace at naughte, for ſo muche as they thought them hable to withſtande hys malice. Upon whiche aunſwere, the Soudayne made greate prouiſyon to beſyege the ſaide citie.

In which paſſetime in Fraūce was borne of dame Johane or Jane, than Queene of Fraunce, Lewes the kynges eldeſt ſonne, that after hys father was kynge of Fraunce.

When the Soudane had prepared all thing neceſſary for that inurney, he ſpedde hym with an inuumerable multitude of the Sarazyns, toward the citie of Acon or Acris. In whiche iourney he was taken wyth ſo greuous ſickeneſſe, that he knewe well he ſhoulde ſhortly die. Wherefore he calling before him his admyrals, charged a certaine of theym to kepe furth their iourney towarde Acon, while the remnaunt returned into Egipt, and ther to create his ſonne Soudane. After which creatiō he charged them that thei ſhuld cauſe his ſaid ſonne to haſte him vnto the ſaid ſiege, and ſoone after died.

Then all thinges were ordeyned as he before had deuiſed, and the Cytye was beſyeged wyth a ſtronge hoſte of Sarazyns, the whiche aſſauted it cruellye by the ſpace of ſyxe weekes. In whiche ſeaſon the Chriſtien defended it ſo manfullye, that the Sarazyns myght thereof get none adauntage. At the ende of thys ſyxe wekes, came the yonge Soudane, with a freſhe Hooſte, the whiche made ſuch a dinne and noyſe, with theyr tabours and hornes and other mrinſtrelſy that thei at thoſe dayes vſed, that it was hydious and fearefull to heare. And after they had reſted theym two dayes, and prepared for the riggynge of their ordinaunce, they aſſaulted the citie fouretene daies continuallye. In whiche ſeaſon muche people was ſlayne vpon both parties, but the moore number of the citie. For by the violence of theyr ordinaunce they ouerthrew much houſinge within the citie, wherewith much people were oppreſſed and ſlaine, aſwell man as womã, and childe.

At the ende of thys fouretene daies, when the rulers of the citie had ſene the harme that they had receyued by this fierce and cruell aſſaulte, as well in loſſe of theyr ſouldiours, as of the great enpairynge of their walles and other defences of their cytye, they feared ſoore: for the whiche they of one aſſent condeſcended and ſente ſoone after by the ſhippes, a great number of olde men, and women, and children, vnapte for the war, with the reliques and treaſoures of the citie into Scicill. It was not longe after, or the Sarazyns made a newe aſſaulte, that continued foure daies, by meane wherof the citie was ſoore defaced.

Then the kyng of Cypris, which at that dai was ther as one of the chiefe rulers in the Citie fayned him ſicke. wherefore in the nyght folowinge, deſyringe a knighte of the Citie to keepe his watche, he cowardlye and ſhamefullye, with thre thouſand men toke ſhipping, and ſayled thence, leauyng the citie in all daunger. Upon the morowe, when the certaintie of this was knowen, the Patryake of Hieruſalem with other there left, to the number of fyue thouſande, or therevpon, ſent vnto the Soudan for a truce for two monethes But none they myghte purchaſe, and therfore they defended them in yͤ beſt maner they might. But ſhortlye after, for lacke of defence vppon the walles, the Sarazins fylled the diches, and ſoone after vpon the fiue and twentie day of May, perforce entred in the citye, and ſlewe ſuche people therein, as they therin foũde. Then the Soudane gaue the pray of the citie vnto his knightes, and after ſpoylynge of the ſame, cauſed yͤ walles and towres to bee raſed vnto the grounde, and the houſes, as well churches, temples and all other, were clearely brent and deſtroied.

The cytye of Acrys deſtroyed.

And thus was the noble citie of Acris, whiche is alſo called Tholomayda, ſubuerted: the whyche was the chief port or hauen towne for Chriſten men to lande at, whẽ any hooſte or power of them ſhuld enter into the holye lande, and had continued for the moore partie in the poſſeſſion of chriſten mẽ, by the tearme of an hundred and lx. yeres and aboue.

IN the. vii. yere of this king Philip, the Earle of Arminacke was accuſed of certayne poyntes of treaſon, by ſyr Raymond Barrenade earle of Foyz. Whereupon a daye of battaile betwene theſe. ii. erles was of king phillip the iiii

was appointed to bee foughten at Gyſoures in the kinges preſence and his barony. But after by the great inſtaunce and labour made by ſir Roberte Earle of Artoys, that battaile was foredone.

In the eyght yere of his raigne he gathered a greate taſke of his commons. And in the yere aforeſayde, at a feaſt holden at Compeyne, he made aboue ſyxe ſcore knightes.

In the eleuenth yeare of hys raigne, ſir Roberte of Artoys entred the towne of ſainct Omers, and tooke therein manye Burgonyons and other, as pryſoners, and ſoone after mette wyth Guy duke of Burgoine at a towne called Furneis, wher betwene theim was foughten a ſtrong fight, and many men ſlaine vpon either ſide: But laſtlye the victorie fell to ſyr Roberte of Artoys, ſo that he put the duke to flight, and toke there priſoners Henry earle of Dabencourt, & ſyr Guylliam de Willers, and other. After which victory by him thus optained, the ſaid towne of Furneis was yelden vnto him, and a greate parte of the vale of Caſſyle.

In thys yere alſo the war betwene this kyng Phylyppe and Edwarde the fyrſt than kynge of Englande, was put in vre, for ſo muche, as the ſaid Edwarde toke partie with the ſaide Duke, or Earle of Flaunders, as it is at length ſet out in the .xxii. & .xxvi. yeres of the ſaide Edward, wherfore here nowe I paſſe it ouer.

In the thre and twentye yere of this Philip, when the trewce before ſette betwene kynge Edwarde and him and the Earle of Flaunders was expyred, he ſent ſyr Charles de Valoys hys brother with great power into Flaūders, the whiche made ſharpe war vpon the Flemminges, and tooke from theym the townes of Douay and Bethune, and after yode towarde the hauen towne of Dam or Dan, where he was encoūtred of Robert ſonne vnto the Earle, where betwene theym was foughten a cruell fyghte, to the great ſcathe of bothe parties, for eyther departed from other, without greate auaunte or boaſt. Then the ſaide Robert with hys company drew towarde Gaunt, & the ſaide ſyr Charles after the departing of the ſaide Robert, laide his ſiege vnto the foreſayd towne of Dam.

In this paſſetime the archbiſhop of Orleaunce was ſlayne by a knight called ſyr Gautier, for ſo muche as the ſayde byſhoppe (as the fame then went) hadde defloriſhed a mayden, and doughter of the ſayde Gautier. And for hym was choſen to that dignitie maiſter Barthrande Doctour of diuinitie.

Then to returne wher we left of the foreſaide war in Flaunders, the ſaid Charles ſo ſharply aſſauted the towne of Dam, that in ſhorte proceſſe after it was yolden vnto him. And then he prepared him to lay his ſiege aboute the forenamed towne of Gaunte. Wherof when Guy earle of Flaūders was ware, conſideringe he might not ſhortly be ayded of the king of England, which then warred vppon the Scottes, as in the .xxvii. yere of Edward the firſt, it doth apeare, he then made meanes

vnto

seventh parte

vnto the ſayd ſyr Charles de Valoys, that he would be a meane to the king, that he might bee accepted vnto his grace and mercye. So that by his meanes, the ſayde ſyr Guy with Roberte his ſonne, vpon certaine cōuencions in ſhort time after, was reconſyled vnto the French kyng. But while theſe conuencions were perfourmed, the ſayde Earle with hys ſonne Robert, were kepte in a lyberall pryſon. And the county of Flaunders by the aſſigment of the kyng, for the while was committed vnto the rule of Jaques de ſayncte Paule knyghte. The whiche entreated the cōmons of that lande ſternely, and oppreſſed them with impoſitions and taxes, in ſo much that in the ſyxtene yeare of the kynge, a certaine of the towne of Courtray in Flaunders, after certayne ſkyrmiſhes, and loueday made, the common people in a night ſlew the foreſaide Jaques, and as many French men as they mighte finde within the towne. After which murder was knowē in Bruges, and in other townes of Flaunders, anon by euyl counſail, thei alſo chaſed al ſuch French men, as by the foreſayde Jaques were put in diuers offices, within the ſaid townes, & made theym ſtrōg, to make defence againſt the french kinge. wherof when the french king was aſſertayned, he ſent thither with a ſtrong cōpany the Earle of S. Paule, the Earle of Boligne, ſyr Robert Earle of Artoys, and Roberte the ſonne of the Earle of Cleremoant, wyth dyuers other noble menne of Fraunce. The whiche ſped them toward Bruges, & in the plaines atwene Courtray and Bruges, pight theyr pauilions and tentes, for they might not come no neare vnto Bruges, for ſo muche as the Flemmynges hadde broken the bridge ouer the ryuer, that there runneth, the whiche laſtlye notwithout greate ſlaughter of men, on bothe partyes, was by the Frenche men reedified and made, ſo that the Frenche hooſte paſſed the ryuer, and layde theyr ordynaunce nere to the towne of Bruges. But the Flemminges had ſo garnyſhed theyr towne, wyth defence of ſouldyours, that they feared the Frenchmen lytle or nothing. And of one thing they bare theym the bolder, for ſo muche as they had within the towne one of the ſonnes of Guy theyr Earle, whiche before was eſcaped frō the French kings pryſon.

Thus the Frenchmen lyinge before the towne, manye frayes and bickerynges, were made betwene the Flemminges & theym, to theyr bothe paynes. Laſtlye a day of battaile, by the prouocation and diſpiteous wordes of the Frenchmen, was appointed to be holden betwene theym, vpon the wedneſday being then the. vii. dai of the moneth of July. At whiche day, the Fleminges being cōfeſſed and recōſyled to god, as thei ſhuld forthwyth haue departed oute of this world, in ſober wiſe, grounding them vpon a rightful & good quarell, that day to lyue and dye, for the defence and ryght of their countrey, iſſued out of the towne in good order.

Anon as the nobles of Fraunce beheld the countenaunce of their enemies, dyſdaynynge theym as vilaines

Thus the frenche men lying before the towne

Many frenche [illegible]

[illegible] dominus [illegible] the end

[illegible]

of kyng phillip the iiii

was appointed to bee foughten at Gyſoures in the kinges preſence and his barony. But after by the great inſtaunce and labour made by ſir Roberte Earle of Artoys, that battaile was foredone.

In the eyght yere of his raigne he gathered a greate taſke of his commons. And in the yere aforeſayde, at a feaſt holden at Compeyne, he made aboue ſyxe ſcore knightes.

In the eleuenth yeare of hys raigne, ſir Roberte of Artoys entred the towne of ſainct Omers, and tooke therein manye Burgonyons and other, as pryſoners, and ſoone after mette wyth Guy duke of Burgoine at a towne called Furneis, wher betwene theim was foughten a ſtrong fight, and many men ſlaine vpon either ſide: But laſtlye the victorie fell to ſyr Roberte of Artoys, ſo that he put the duke to flight, and toke there priſoners Henry earle of Dabencourt, & ſyr Guylliam de Villers, and other. After which victory by him thus optained, the ſaid towne of Furneis was yelden vnto him, and a greate parte of the vale of Caſſyle.

In thys yere alſo the war betwene this kyng Phylyppe and Edwarde the fyrſt than kynge of Englande, was put in vre, for ſo muche, as the ſaid Edwarde toke partie with the ſaide Duke, or Earle of Flaunders, as it is at length ſet out in the .xxii. & .xxvi. yeres of the ſaide Edward, wherfore here nowe I paſſe it ouer.

In the thre and twentye yere of this Philip, when the trewce before ſette betwene kynge Edwarde and him and the Earle of Flaunders was expyred, he ſent ſyr Charles de Valoys hys brother with great power into Flaūders, the whiche made ſharpe war vpon the Flemminges, and tooke from theym the townes of Douay and Bethune, and after yode towarde the hauen towne of Dam or Dan, where he was encoūtred of Robert ſonne vnto the the Earle, where betwene theym was foughten a cruell fyghte, to the great ſcathe of bothe parties, for eyther departed from other, without greate auaunte or boaſt. Then the ſaide Robert with hys company drew towarde Gaunt, & the ſaide ſyr Charles after the departing of the ſaide Robert, laide his ſiege vnto the foreſayd towne of Dam.

In this paſſetime the archbiſhop of Orleaunce was ſlayne by a knight called ſyr Gautier, for ſo muche as the ſayde byſhoppe (as the fame then went) hadde defloriſhed a mayden, and doughter of the ſayde Gautier. And for hym was choſen to that dignitie maiſter Barthrande Doctour of diuinitie.

Then to returne wher we left of the foreſaide war in Flaunders, the ſaid Charles ſo ſharply aſſauted the towne of Dam, that in ſhorte proceſſe after it was yolden vnto him. And then he prepared him to lay his ſiege aboute the forenamed towne of Gaunte. Wherof when Guy earle of Flaūders was ware, conſideringe he might not ſhortly be ayded of the king of England, which then warred vppon the Scottes, as in the xxvii. yere of Edward the firſt, it doth apeare, he then made meanes

vnto

The ſeventh parte

vnto the ſayd ſyr Charles de Valoys, that he would be a meane to the king, that he might bee accepted vnto his grace and mercye.

So that by his meanes, the ſayde ſyr Guy with Roberte his ſonne, vpon certaine cõuencions in ſhort time after, was reconſyled vnto the French kyng. But while theſe conuencions were perfourmed, the ſayde Earle with hys ſonne Robert, were kepte in a lyberall pryſon. And the county of Flaunders by the aſſigment of the kyng, for the while was committed vnto the rule of Jaques de ſayncte Paule knyghte. The whiche entreated the cõmons of that lande ſternely, and oppreſſed them with impoſitions and taxes, in ſo much that in the ſyxtene yeare of the kynge, a certaine of the towne of Courtray in Flaunders, after certayne ſkyrmiſhes, and loueday made, the common people in a night ſlew the foreſaide Jaques, and as many French men as they mighte finde within the towne.

After which murder was knowẽ in Bruges, and in other townes of Flaunders, anon by euyl counſail, thei alſo chaſed al ſuch French men, as by the foreſayde Jaques were put in diuers offices, within the ſaid townes, & made theym ſtrõg, to make defence againſt the french kinge. wherof when the french king was aſſertayned, he ſent thither with a ſtrong cõpany the Earle of S. Paule, the Earle of Boligne, ſyr Robert Earle of Artoys, and Roberte the ſonne of the Earle of Cleremoant, wyth dyuers other noble menne of Fraunce. The whiche ſped them toward Bruges, & in the plaines atwene. Courtray and Bruges, pight theyr pauilions and tentes, for they might not come no neare vnto Bruges, for ſo muche as the Flemmynges hadde broken the bridge ouer the ryuer, that there runneth, the whiche laſtlye notwithout greate ſlaughter of men, on bothe partyes, was by the Franche men reedified and made, ſo that the Frenche hooſte paſſed the ryuer, and layde theyr ordynaunce nere to the towne of Bruges. But the Flemminges had ſo garnyſhed theyr towne, wyth defence of ſouldyours, that they feared the Frenchmen lytle or nothing. And of one thing they bare theym the bolder, for ſo muche as they had within the towne one of the ſonnes of Guy theyr Earle, whiche before was eſcaped frõ the French kings pryſon.

Thus the Frenchmen lyynge before the towne, manye frayes and bickerynges, were made betwene the Flemminges & theym, to theyr bothe paynes. Laſtlye a day of battaile, by the prouocation and diſpiteous wordes of the Frenchmen, was appointed to be holden betwene theym, vpon the wedneſday being then the. vii. dai of the moneth of July. At whiche day, the Fleminges being cõfeſſed and recõſyled to god, as thei ſhuld forthwyth haue departed oute of this world, in ſober wiſe, grounding them vpon a rightful & good quarell, that day to lyue and dye, for the defence and ryght of their countrey, iſſued out of the towne in good order.

Anon as the nobles of Fraunce beheld the countenaunce of their enemies, dyſdaynynge theym as

Thus the frenche men liyng before the towne
which frenche men [illegible]

[illegible] dowinges remember the end
[illegible] here [illegible]

vilaines and artificers, truſtinge ſo muche in their ſtrengthes, that they thought ſhortly to ouer ryde them, and beare them down with ſtrength of their horſes, ⁊ wythout order ran with great yre vpō their enemies, thinkinge to haue oppreſſed theim at the firſt bront. But the Flemminges with their arbalaſters and their long mories pykes ſette a ſlope before theym, woūded ſo their horſes, that they laye tomblynge one in anothers necke, ſo that they wer the letters of the other which were on fote, that thei might not exerciſe their feat of armes. And alſo the ſhot, that was ſhot on the French partie did as muche harme to thoſe horſemen as it dyd vnto theyr enemies. So that in ſhorte while the feilde was all bee ſpred wyth ſlayne horſes and cleane armed men. Wherof ſyr Robert Earle of Artoys beinge ware, and ſeynge these noble ſpeares thus ſlayne vp on the fielde, aduaunced him with his company, and ſlew and wounded the Flemminges a great nūber, ſo that they fled before hym, as ſhepe before the wolfe, and put further backe that hoſt of Flemminges then they by the fyrſt meting had aduaunced them ſelues. And if ayde of Guy de Namoure ſonne vnto the earle of Flaūders, had not the ſooner bene commen vnto them, the ſaide Earle of Artoys had that day wonne the renown of the fielde. Then the ſaid Guy with a freſh company of Almaines ⁊ other bolde ſouldiours, coragiouſly entred the fielde, and bet down the Frenchmen egerly. Then was the medle new begon, in ſo feruēt wiſe that men ⁊ horſe fell downe to groūd wonderouſly thicke. And euer the earle of Artoys where ſoeuer he went, ſlewe much people before him. But the Flemminges kept them ſo whole together, that he might neuer diſſeuer them, ⁊ ſlew of the nobles of Fraunce great plenty. Which motalitie thus continuing, the ſtreames of bloud ranne wonderous to behold. And alway the French partye weaked more and more.

Laſtlye, the earle Sainct Paule and Boleyne, wyth Roberte the ſonne of this Earle of Cleremont, and other, with the number of two thouſande horſemen, ſeynge the rage ⁊ woodnes of the Flemminges, whiche ſo cruellye ſlewe and beate downe the Frenchmen, ſettinge a parte all honoure and knyghthode, ſhamefullye fled out of the fielde, leauing the Earle of Artoys in the middle of his enemies, whiche like vnto the Lyon rampaunte continued in one, ſleyng and killing the Flemminges without mercye or pitie. But the the Flemminges like woode Tygres were ſo enraged vppon the Frenchmen, that thei wold neuer leaue them till they by pure force, draue thē into their tentes, where thei ſlew of thē a great multitude.

In thys battaile were ſlayne, the foreſayde Earle of Artoys, Godfray de Braban, neare kinſman to the ſayd Earle and Lorde of Wyrſon, Adam the Earle of Dabenmale, Jhon the ſonne of the erle of Henaute, Rafe de Neel, Conſtable of Fraunce, Guy hys brother, Marſhal of the hoſt, Reinolde de Try, Eſmer chāberlaine of Caruil, Jaques the ſon of Godfrey of Braban, Piers Foot, and

Jhon Bruillis, maiſter of the arbalaſters knightes, and manye mo of name, to the nūber of. CC. and aboue, beſide eſquiers and other men of lowe degrees, as yomen, gromes, pages, to the number of. xii. M. The which after the victorie, the Flemminges diſpoyled, and ſuffered the cariens of thē to lye in the feelde, that all wilde beaſtes and foules, might theym periſhe and deuour.

When this yonge knighte ſyr Guy, had thus optained victorie of the Frenche men, he reioyſed not a litle, and ſoone thereafter, layde ſeyge vnto the Iſle, or a Caſtell ſo named, and gat it alſo, were it by trecherie or otherwiſe. Then the townes of Iper, of Gaunte, of Douay, and diuers other of that countrey, obyed to him, and cōdeſcended and agreed to take party eyther of them with other againſt the French kyng.

Then king Philip hearyng of the great diſcomfiture of his men, made countenaunce of mourning and ſpeciallye for his true knight the earle of Artoys.

KYng Philyp then after, for to reuēge the foreſayde diſpleaſure to hym done by the Flemmings, aſſembled by our lady day Aſſumption next enſuyng, an excedyng number, entendinge to haue entered Flaunders & vtterlye to haue deſtroyed a great part of that countrey, and ſo drewe towarde hys enemyes, ſo that he pyghte the tentes of his vawarde, within two myles of his enemies, and there lay to his exceding great charge, conſidring the great multitude of his hoſt by all the moneth of September. Of the number of this hoſte, I haue doubt to write. For maiſter Gagwin ſaith: the nūber was ſo great that it may not be beleued, & that ſheweth well by the expreſſement of the nūber made by the French chronicle. For he ſaith: that they were a. C. times a. C. M. and. xl. times. xl. M. By which ſaiyng, it ſomedeale appeareth, howe the Frenchmen can make menſoung. But how it was, for al this great & exceding nūber of Frenchemen, the Fleminges lay ſtyll vnhurt or aſſauted. And finally vpō a great ſubſtaciall cauſe, as ye after ſhall heare, this greate hoſt was diſſolued or returned euery man to hys owne, & kinge Philip with ſmall honour into Fraunce, wherof the Frenchmen ſaie: the occaſion or cauſe was thus. King Edward of England, which to the Flemings bare great affection, coſidring the great daunger they were in, & he at that time might not them aide nor ſuccour, of a policie caſt in his mind, and wᵗ an heuy or mourning countenaunce, ſhewed vnto the quene & ſiſter vnto king Philip, yͭ he was very heuy & ſorowfull, for his brother and hers the kyng of Fraūce. Wherof, when & wherfore ſhe had frained the cauſe, he anſwered & ſaid: that he had certein knowledge, yͭ at ſuche time as the Fleminges, & he ſhuld mete in batail, yͭ his lords & company ſhulde leue him amōg his enemies, for he was ſold to thē before hād. Wherof when the quene was aſſerteyned, anon in al poſſible haſt ſhe ſent letters & meſſengers to the Frenche king coūſelling him to be wel war

A ryght notable policye.

of that treaſon and daunger. To the whiche he geuinge credence, ſhortly after ſent frō him the ſaide great companye of people, and he with certaine as aboue is ſaid, returned into Fraunce.

After which departing yͤ Flemminges were ſo bolde, that forthwith thei entred into Picardye, & the countrey of Artoys, & ſpoyled and brente diuers townes of the ſame. But in the yere folowinge, as teſtifieth the ſaid French chronicle, the Flemminges of Bruges were foughtē with of Otton then duke of Burgoyne, to whome by reaſon of mariage the french king had geuen the earledome of Artoys, and he of theim ſlewe with the ayde of the Frenchemen. xv. thouſande.

In this. xvii. yere aboute mydſomer, Philippe another ſonne of the earle of Faunders, which had by a certaine tearme bene in the court of Charles de Valoys, and by him put in truſt to receyue certaine ſummes of money in Scicil, to the vſe of Boniface the eyghte Pope, ſodenly departed, and with a ſtronge companye of Almaines came into Flaunders, to aide and aſſiſt his brother. Whom yͤ Flemminges or Brabanders receyued with great ioy, and by the cōforte of hym, inuaded the borders and landes of the French king, & boldly aſſauted yͤ caſtell of S. Omers. But for they there gat none aduauntage, but loſt manye of theyr men, they forſoke that, and yode vnto a towne belonginge to the Frenche kinge called Thorouan Morine, the which in proceſſe thei wan and ſpoiled. About this time died Boniface the. viii. of yͤ name, then Pope, a man of euill name & fame, the whiche by his trecherie cauſed his predeceſſoure Celeſtine the. v. that was a good and holye man, to reſigne & leaue his biſhopriche. And by this meane, when this ſaid Celeſtine had bene Pope a ſmale time, this Boniface eſpiyng his innocencie, which was al ſet to yͤ ſeruice of god, as he before had vſed him in leading of an Ankers life, thought howe he might bring him in minde, to reſigne his high office vnto hym.

And it to bring about, he firſt made him frendes ſecretlye, and after hired one of the cubiclers of the Pope, that he in the dead nyght ſhoulde ſpeake in a reede, and ſaye: Celeſtyne, yf thou wylt be ſaued, and be pertiner of blyſſe, renoūce this pompe of the world, and ſerue me as thou diddeſt before. Or after the Latyn ſtorye, if Celeſtinus will be ſaued, let hym clerely the papall dignitie reſigne. Whiche voyce this ghoſtlye man ſundrie times hearinge, thought verely it had bene a deuine mocion, wherfore in al that he might he laboured to bee diſcharged, ſo that at the ende of fiue monethes he reſygned. And ſhortlye after, was the foreſaide Boniface admitted. The which not being contēted with this ſiniſter opteining of this high dignitie, but that he for feare leſt yͤ ſaid Celeſtine ſhuld repent him of his inſolent dede, & by ſtrength of ſome princes, be reſtored againe to his former dignitie, he therfore wold not ſuffer the ſaid Celeſtine to retourne to wyldernes, ther to cōtinue his old accuſtomed life, but held him in a caſtel as priſoner: where for ſorow &

euill keping, he died ſhortly after.

For the which this Boniface was not puniſhed. For ouer the ſorow and trouble that he during the terme of his papacie ſuffered, which was not a litle, in the ende of eyght yeres, he was taken by ſtrength and put in priſon, where ſo miſerably & cruelly he was entreated, that or he dyed, what for madnes or for hunger, he eat his owne handes, and ſo in miſery ended his life within .xxiiii. dayes of his impriſonment.

Then to returne where I left, and to ſhewe you further of the war atwene Fraunce and Flaũders, trueth it is that the French men, with the ayde of the Henaudours, made ſondrye and manye times aſſautes vppon the Flemminges. In the whiche diuers chaunces of the war fell, ſo that yf that one had yͤ better at one time that other had as much aduauntage the next time: for the reformation of whiche warre, ſyr Guy with his ſonne beforenamed earle of Flaunders, that by all thys ſeaſon had cõtinued in the Frẽch kings pryſon, were ſuffered to go into Flaunders, vpon condicion that if they myghte pacifie the countrey to the kynges pleaſure, that then they ſhould ſtyll enioye theyr libertie, and go at large, or elles to retourne againe as priſoners. The whiche earle with hys ſaid ſonne did what they could, to reconcile the ſaide Flemminges. But al their trauel was in vaine, ſo that by the day to theim apointed, they returned to their former priſon. Wherefore the king in the xviii. yere of his raigne, aſſembled a meaſurable hoſte of people. In the which were accompted for noble captaines vnder the kinge, ſyr Charles de Ualoys brother to the king, Lewes erle of Eurour that other brother to yͤ kyng, Guy erle of S. Paule, Jhon erle of Dampmartyn. Whiche noble men wyth many other met with the kynge at a towne called Mounte. And whẽ they had a ſeaſon reſted there by meane of meſſengers goynge atwene kynge Philyppe and the Flemminges, a daye of battayle was atwene theim appointed, to be foughten vpon the ſixtene daye of Auguſte, in the .xviii. yeare. At whiche daye the Flemmynges of Bruges and the other townes ſet forth their ordinaunce, and made them a ſtrong felde, and enbatayled theym in ſuche wiſe, that the Frenchmen made daungerous to ſet vpon theym. Then meanes of treatie were offered, ſo that yͤ day paſſed withoute ſtroke ſtrikynge.

But in the euenyng, the Flemminges thinking to take aduaũtage vpon their enemies, came ſo ſodenly vpon the Frenchmen, that hardly the king might be armed, or they hadde ſlayne two menne within hys tente. Wherefore haſtie ſpeede was made, ſo that the kynge was gotten to horſebacke, and forthwith by hys marcyall power made wai through his enemies, and ſlew them without mercye. And by the knightlye example of him, the remnaunte of hys lordes quitte theim ſo honorably, that the poore Flemminges were layde in the felde bathing in theyr owne bloude to a great number, and laſtlye conſtrayned to flee ſhamefullye, and to leaue theyr ordinaunce behinde theym. And if night had not fallen on, it is to deeme that manye moe of theym ſhould haue bene ſlaine, conſideringe the great fierſneſſe of theyr enemies, and the excedinge rancour of malice, that the Frenchemen to theim bare. But yet the Frenchmen eſcaped not without loſſe of ſome noble mē. For in that battaile was ſlaine the Earle of Ancerre, & diuers other knightes and men of fame. After whiche diſcomfiture and chaſinge of the Flemminges, the king for darkenes was ſet into his tentes with torche light. Wherefore after he had buried the dead bodies ſlaine in the fielde, and alſo garniſhed ſome ſtrong caſtels wͭ his knightes, to the ende that the Flemminges ſhuld not breake to farre abrode, knowing that with hys enemies he ſhould that yere haue no mo plaine battayles, he returned agayne into Fraunce.

IN the nynetene yere of king Philip, by meanes of Enguerram a man in ſpeciall fauour with the kinge, a peace betwene Fraunce and Flaunders, was concluded, the whiche as ye ſhall after here endured but ſhort while Notwithſtanding, by the reaſon of this peace, Robert de Bethune and William his brother, which by all this ſeaſon, with theyr father ſyr Guy earle of Flaunders, hadde continued in pleaſaunt or eaſie priſon, were now deliuered. But the father was dead in the moneth before the concluſion of this peace paſſed, and by licence of the French kinge, caried to Marquet a towne in Flaunders, and there buryed. In the.xx. yere of this king Philip, a great diſcencion and ſtrife fel betwene the riche men or gouernours of Paris, and the cominalty of the ſame, for heithing of the rent of diuers houſes aperteining to yͤ ſaid cominaltye. Wherfore the ſaid cōmons ſecretly accōpanied them in great number, and yode vnto the houſe of Stephan Barbet that was accuſed to be occaſioner of that deede, and ſpoiled it. And after thei yode to a maner of his in the countrey named Courtile Barbet, & it in like maner ſpoiled, & that doen, ſet in fire, & brent it. And the orchard of the ſame, whiche was paſſyng commodious and pleaſaunt, they defaced and vtterly deſtroyed.

Heyth
of ren

And not yet with thys beynge content, they retourned agayne vnto the houſe of the ſayde Stephan, and al ſuch wynes as were within hys ſellers, dranke them tyll they were woode dronken. And what they myghte not in that wyſe deuoure, they bette out the heades and let the wine ron in the ſtrete. And all formes, ſtooles, and other vtenſyles in the houſe, by theim founden all to brake in peces, and of fetherbeds ripped the tikes, and held theym in the winde, yͭ the fethers might be blowen away and loſt for euer, and vnripped the houſe in diuers places, that the rayne and other wethering might enter, as then fell aboute that time, ſoone after Chriſtmas. And thus continuing in theyr fury and rage, after the diſpoylynge and defacyng of theſe foreſayde houſes, as menne not knowynge what they than dyd, yode ſtrayghte in greate number vnto the place of the tēplers there nere, where at that ſeaſon, kynge Philip with a certayn of his Barons was then lodged, and there kepte the entrees of that place, in ſuch wiſe, that no mā might iſſue nor enter, but at their pleaſures, & ſuch meates as were brought thither, to the kynges vſe and houſeholde, they caſt it in the myre and filthe of the ſtreete. The kynge and his lordes, ſeynge the rage of this rude and vnreſonable people, ſent vnto theim the prouoſt of the Citie, with ſome of his lordes, the whiche gaue vnto theym ſo pleaſaunte and comfortable wordes, that at length he retourned them in peaſible maner to theyr houſes: But vpon the morow folowynge, the kynge not forgettynge this rage and ryote of the people, commaunded manye of the ſayde commons to bee attached, and to be ſent vnto diuers pryſons.

And vpon Candelmaſſe euen folowing, for the ſame ryot.xxviii of theim were hanged at.iiii.entrees of the citie of Parys, that is to ſay.vii.at Louure.vii.towarde the parties of Saynt Antony.vii at a place towarde the Roule and other.vii.in a place toward noſtre Dame or notyr Dame. Which execucion cauſed the comminalty of the Citie to lyue longe after in greate feare.

In the.xxi.yeare of the reygne of kynge Philip, whiche maketh the yere of our Lorde.M.CCC.& vii.all be it that other writes affyrmeth it to be in yͤ yere of grace, M.CCC.and.xi.all the templers in Fraunce were deſtroyed, and theyr goodes and poſſeſſions thorough Chriſtendome, geuen (by aucthorite of a Sinode kepte by Clemente the fifte, then Pope of Rome at the Citie of Narbon in Fraunce) vnto the relygyon of knightes of S. Jhon Baptyſte. This order of templers was deſtroyed for theyr deteſtable hereſie, whereof they were conuicte in x.articles expreſſed in the French cronicle at length which here I ouer paſſe for length of the matter and alſo for that the reherſal therof is not frutefull to all hearers or readers.

All the tēplers deſtroyed, & their goodes geuen to others.

In the.xxiiii.yere of his reigne this kyng Philip, for aſmuche as he by ſome of the electoures of the Empyre, was choſen Emperour, he therefore with a greate army, ſped him towarde Rome, and paſſed thorough Almayn, til he came vnto the duchy of Quarantayne. Of whiche Duchy the people receyued him with all honoure. And after he paſſed the Mountaynes and ſo came vnto Padua, where alſo he was ioyouſlye receyued, where he taryng a ſeaſon, receyued from Mylayne Ambaſſadoures, the which offered to hym that citie with al couenable ſeruyce. And after his people was to hym more plenarly aſſembled, he then departed from Padua, and yode vnto Milaine. whome the lordes of the citie met vpon the way, and conueied him vnto the maiſter paleyes of the Citie, and there lodged him, and within few dayes after, brought him with great ſolemnity vnto the cathedrall churche, and there crowned him kyng of Lombardy and called him Auguſtus.

Then he departed from Milain & ſped him vnto the Citie of Cremoyne, ⁊ layde ſiege to the ſame. But it was to him ſhortlite yelded. From thence he paſſed to the citie of Breſſe, where he was holden out a longe while. Thyther to his ayde came manye ſouldiours of the towne of Pyze, and made there many ſharp aſſautes. In whiche aſſautes Guy de Namour that was marſhall of the kynges hoſte died, of hurtes that he there tooke. In proceſſe of time ſhortlye folowynge, the rulers of Bres offered meanes of treaty: But ẏ kyng was ſo amoued with the death of his marſhall, that he would graunt to theim no condicionall peace, but to ſtande at hys grace and mercy. wherfore they finally ſeing no better meane, offered vnto him the keys of the citie.

Then kyng Philip for othe before made, or for ſome other excellencie, cauſed anon that part of ẏ towne dyche fore agayne his pauilion to be filled, and the walle of the citie, with as many houſes as ſtoode betwene the walle and the mayſter palayes of the citie, to be throwen downe, that he with his hoſt might entre the ſtreight way, and ſo to go or ride vnto the ſayd palays. And when all thing was ordered to his deuiſe, he entred by that way the citie of Cremon, and therin taried a certayn ſeaſon, and toke his counſell with the Gebellinis, how he might the citie of Rome winne. And when he had finiſhed that councell, he tooke certayne hoſtages of thys Citie of Cremon, the whiche he ſent vnto Pyze to be kepte, and ſo ſped him towarde Rome, and gettyng many cities and other holdes by the way, laſteli he came vnto the Citie named Bowlon la Graſſe, whither came vnto him a Cardinall or legat ſent from Clement the fift to treate of the ſtate of the Empire. But how it was the continuaunce or fine of thys iourney turned not to the honour and pleaſure of the Frenchmen: For after the meting of the kinge and thys Legate, the matter is no more touched. For the French kyng was agayne in Fraunce, or the legate might bryng vnto him any anſwer from Clement. Alſo it is the more ſuſpecte, for of thys matter ſpeaketh nothyng maſter Robert Gagwyne, which leaueth nothynge oute of his booke, that may ſounde to the auauncement of ẏ French nation. In the .xxiiii. yeare of the reygne of kyng Philip, was brent in diuers places of Fraunce vpon .lx. Templers, for the hereſie before rehearſed.

Thre
temple
brent
hereſie

And in the yeare folowynge, a new rebellion beganne in Flaunders. Of the whiche Robert Erle of Flaunders was accuſed, but he acquit himſelf, and after Guy his ſonne was attached for the ſame and ſent to priſon. Fro the whiche he after eſcaped, for feare of profe to haue ben iuſtified againſt him, and retourned vnto Gaunt: were he was defended fro his aduerſaries, ſo that the Holanders, and Brabanders helde their partie agaynſt the French kyng, and alſo agaynſt their owne Erle, whiche ſo continued without any notary batayle, till the .xxvi. yere of the reygne of kynge Philip. In the which yere, vpon the euen of Marie Magdaleyne, at the towne of Courtray in Brabande, was by the Byſhops and other ſpirituall men of Fraunce and Flaunders a peace concluded. Wherof the cōdicions were, that the Fleminges ſhould haue pardon and forgeuenes of all theyr former rebellion, aſwell agaynſt the kyng, as their naturall Duke. And for this they ſhould paye a certayne ſumme of ſiluer, whereof the ſumme is not expreſſed, & ouer that, they ſhould at theyr proper coſtes and expenſes, beate downe certayne ſtrengthes and holdes, as the Frenche kynges depute would to them aſſygne, beginnyng at Gaunt, and ſo to Bruges, and other places: and more ouer, they ſhould yelde vnto Robert their Erle, the Caſtell of Courtray, with all abylementes of warre and other neceſſaries thervnto belonginge. All which condicions to obſerue, they ſhould deliuer vnto the kynge of Fraunce good hoſtages. But all thys came to ſmall effecte, as after ſhall appere.

AND in the.xxvii.yere, of this Philip, Jacob the maſter of the Templers, with an other great ruler of the ſayd order, whiche was named viſitour of the ſame, after longe priſonment, wer brent at Paris.

And in the ſame yeare kynge Philip arrered a taxe throughe Fraunce, which before that daies was neuer heard nor ſpoken of. This was ſo greuous, that all Normandy, Picardy, and Champeigne, allied them togither, and vtterly denayed the paiment therof. Wherof hearynge other countreys, tooke the ſame opinion, ſo that a great rumour & murmour was rayſed, thoroughe oute the Realme of Fraunce, in ſuche wyſe that the kynge for pacyfiynge of the people, was fayne to repeale the ſayde taxe.

In the.xxviii.yere of the reigne of kyng Philip, in the weke of Eaſter, the three wiues of the three ſonnes of kyng Philip, that is to ſay Margaret the wife of Lewes his eldeſt ſonne and kynge of Nauerne, Johanne or Jone the wife of his ſeconde ſonne Philip Erle of Poytiers, & Blaunche the wife of his thyrde ſonne Charles and Erle of Marches, were accuſed of ſpouſe brekyng, and ſent from a place of Nunnes where they lay, and conueyed vnto more ſtreyghter keping, the which three wiues were all three doughters vnto ẏ Duke of Burgoyn. Then vpon ſtreyte examinacion made, Margaret and Johanne were gilty of that cryme founde. wherfore thei were ſent vnto the Caſtel of Gaylard in Normādy, ther to be kept as priſoners terme of their lyues. And the forenamed Blanche, for ſo much as ſhe was founden giltles, was agayne reſtored vnto her lord Charles, erle of the marches.

The three wiues of the three ſonnes of Phylip accuſed of ſpouſe brekyng.

And in ſhort time after, the two paramours of the ſayde Margaret and Johanne, that is to ſaye Philip Dannoy, & Gautier Dannoy, or Waltier Dannoy knighttes, men of fame and goodly perſonage and brethren, at the kynges commaundement were fyrſte brent in the viſage with hote yrōs and after drawen to the gybet at Pontoyſe, and there hanged. Which miſfortune the king tooke greuouſly, that he reioyſed neuer after.

The paramours of the two wiues of the kinges ſōnes condempned.

About

Aboute the feaſt of S. Peter or the beginnyng of Auguſt, ỹ king hearynge of the rebellion of the Flemmynges, by Enguerram his moſte ſecret counſaylour made an aſſemble of the citezens of Paris, and by the mouthe of the ſayde Enguerram deſired a ſubſidie of the ſayd Cityzens, to mayntaine his warre againſt the Fleminges the which by Stephan Barbet in the name of the whole citie was graunted. By precidence wherof, al the great cities and good townes of Fraunce, were charged in like maner, whiche cauſed greate vnkindenes and grudge of the people towarde the ſayd Enguerram. Than prouiſion was made for a new iourney into Flaũders, ſo that the kinge ſente his twoo ſonnes, and many other nobles of his land, in the moneth of September folowinge, into the ſayde countrey of Flaunders. The whiche made good ſpede, and layed firſte their ſiege to the Caſtell of the Iſle, and wanne it, and after that entred toward other ſtrong holdes. But the Fleminges putte them of, ⁊ gaue vnto the French hoſt ſo ſharp aſſautes, that in proceſſe they were conſtrayned to retourne into Fraunce, with ſmall honour. Whereof the greate defaute was layde vpon Enguerram, and vpon one of the ſonnes of the Erle of Flaunders, whiche lytle tofore by meanes of the ſayd Enguerram, was made Earle of Neuers. In the moneth of Nouember folowynge, kynge Philip beyng at Fountayn Beliaunt, in the prouince of Gaſtenoys, was taken wyth ſickneſſe, and died ſhortly after, when he had reygned eyght and twentie yeres and more, and his body after caried vnto Saynct Dyoniſe, and there buried, leauing after him the thre forenamed ſonnes, Lewes, Philip and Charles, and a doughter named Iſabell, whiche before time was maried vnto the ſeconde Edwarde, than kyng of England.

The de
of kyng
Phylip

Anglia.

Edwarde the ſecond of that name, and ſonne of Edwarde ỹ fyrſt borne at Carnaruan in a towne of Wales, began his reigne ouer Englande, in the moneth of Iuly, and the. viii. day of the ſayde moneth, in the yere of our Lord. M. CCC ⁊. vii. and the. xxi. yere of the. iiii. Philip than kynge of Fraunce. The which was crouned at weſtminſter, the. xiiii. day of Decẽber, after ỹ opinion of diuers writers.

Edwar
the sec
Li. 7. c

But Ranulph Monke of Cheſter, in his booke of Polocronicon ſayeth ỹ he was crowned in the foreſayd Monaſtry of the byſhop Wyncheſter, the ſundaye in quinquageſima, whiche is the. xiiii. day after the cloſing of Alleluya, and of the Biſhop of wincheſter, for ſo muche, as Roberte than Archbiſhop of Caunterbury, was than oute of England. This Edwarde was fayre of bodye, and greate of ſtrength, but vnſtedfaſt of maners, and vile in conditions. For he would refuſe the company of lordes and men of honour, and

The d
criptio
Edwar
the sec

haunte him with vilayns ⁊ vile perſõs. He alſo gaue him to great drincke, and lightly he would diſcouer thinges of great counſayle. With theſe and manye other diſalowable condicions he was exerciſed, which tourned him to great diſhonoure, ⁊ his lordes to greate vnreſt, as by the ſequell of thys Hiſtory ſhall appere.

Anon as his father was buried and his exequy ſcantly finiſhed, he forgettyng the high and chargeable commaundement of his ſaid father, ſent in all haſte for his old compere Piers of Gaueſtone. The whiche he receyued with all ioye and gladneſſe, and aduaunſed him to muche honour.

And thus paſſed the ſeaſon of the olde Maior and Shyriffes of London, ſo that at the feaſtes of Michelmas and Symon ⁊ Jude folowynge, the olde Mayre and Shyriffes, that is to meane ſyr Jhon Blunte, Simon Bolet and Godfray at the conduit were diſcharged, and the new, as vnder foloweth admitted.

Anno domini. M. CCC. vii. — Anno domini. M. CCC. viii.

Sir Jhon Blount. { *Nicholas Pygotte. / Michaell Drury. } Anno primo.

AND in the beginnynge of this Mayres yeare ⁊ fyrſt yeare of the kynge, the ſayd kyng Edwarde in the moneth of December ſayled into Fraunce, and the. xv. daye of January folowyng, at Bolein in Pacardy, maried Jſabell the daughter of Philip le Bew than kyng of Fraunce, and ſoone after retourned with her into England and ſo vnto London, wherof the Citezyns, they were ioyouſly receyued, ⁊ ſo conueyed vnto Weſtminſter, wher (as before is ſhewed) vpon the ſonday in quinquageſima, they wer ſolempny crowned.

The coronacion of the kyng and quene

At whiche coronacion was ſo excedynge preace, that a knight called ſyr Jhon Bakewell was threſted to death. Than the kyng gaue ſhortly after vnto Piers of Gaueſtone, the erledome of Cornwayle, and the Lordeſhyp of Walynforde, and was ruled al by hys wanton counſayle, and folowed the appetyte and pleaſure of hys bodie, nothynge orderyng by ſadneſſe, nor yet by ordre of the lawe or iuſtice.

Anno domini. M. CCC. viii — Anno domini. M. CCC. ix.

Nicholas Faryngdone. { Willyam Baſyng. / Jhon Buteler. } Anno. ii.

AND in the ſecond yere kyng Edwarde calling to mynd the diſpleaſure doone vnto him, and to his familiar Piers of Gaueſton, by the Byſhop of Cheſter, maſter Walter Lancton, as before is touched in the. xxviii. yere of yͤ reigne of Edward his father, commaũded hym vnto the towre of London, where he was ſtreytlie kept many dayes after.

Than the Lordes of the lande, and ſpecially ſyr Henry Lacy, ſyr Guy, and ſyr Aymer de Ualance Earle of Lyncolne, of warwike, and Penbroke, to whome the noble prynce Edwarde the fyrſt had geuen ſo great charge that Piers of Gaueſtone, ſhold no more come into England, ſaw the rule of the lande, and how the kynges treaſoury by meane of the ſayd Piers was waſted, aſſembled theym in counſayle, and of one aſſent wyth ayde of other lordes of the realme ſpake ſo with the kynge, that contrary his pleaſure, he was aduoyded the lande, and banyſhed into Irelande, for that yere. But the kyng ſent vnto him often tymes ſecret meſſaungers, and comforted hym wyth many rych gyftes, or made hym hys chiefe ruler of the countrey.

Piers
ueſto
niſhe
gayn
mind
wyll
kyng.

Anno domini. M. CCC. ix. Anno domini. M. CCC. x.

Thomas Romayne. { James of S. Edmunde. / Roger Palmer. } Anno. iii.

AND in the thyrde yere, diuers grudges begã to moue & ſpring, betwene the kynge and hys lordes, for the exilyng of Pyers Gaueſtone. wherfore to conteyne amite, betwene hym and them, the ſayd Pyers aboute the feaſt of the Natiuitee of our Lady was fet home agayne, and ſo continued to the more miſchief of the Realme.

Aboute thys tyme (as teſtifieth Cronica Cronicarum and other) the knightes of the order of S. Jhon Baptiſt, called S. Jhon of Jeruſalem, by knightly manhode putte out of the yſle of Roodes or Rodhis the Turkes and infildels that to that day occupied the ſaid yſle: and after that wan vpon the ſayd Turkes dayly and yerely, ſo ẏ at this daye, they haue in theyr dominion muche of the landes, which at that day and longe after was in the powers of the ſayde Turkes. This relygon alſo was greatly preferred by the fal of the Templers, whoſe poſſeſſions and landes were to them geuen, as it is before expreſſed in the. iii. chapter, & .xxi. yere of Philip the faire.

The
winn
of ẏ

Thys yere alſo, after ſome writers, the Crowched Fryres came fyrſt into Englande.

The
comy
the cr
ched f
into
lande.

Anno domini. M. CCC. x. Anno domini. M. CCC. xi.

Rycharde Roſſham. { Symon Croppe. / Peter Blacnay. } Anno. iiii.

AND in the. iiii. yere the rule and power of Pyers Gaueſtone more and more encreaſyng, in ſo much, that he hauynge the guydynge of all the kynges iewels and treaſoure, yode vpon a day to Weſtmynſter, and there oute of the kynges iewell houſe, tooke a table, and a payꝛe of treſtels of golde, and conueyed them with other iewels out of the land to the great inpoueriſhing of the ſame: and ouer that bꝛought the kyng by meane of his wanton cōdicions, to manifold vices, as adoutry and other. Wherefoꝛe the foꝛeſayde loꝛdes, ſeynge the miſchief, that daylye encreaſed by occaſion of this vnhappy man, toke theyꝛ counſayle together at Lyncolne, and ther concluded to voide him agayne out of Englande, ſo that ſhoꝛtlye after, he was exiled into Flaunders, to the kynges great diſpleaſure.

The ſecōd auoydinge of Piers Gaueſtone

Anno domini. M. CCC. xi

Anno domini. M. CCC. xii.

Jhon Gyſours. { Symon Merwode. / Richarde Wilfoꝛde. } Anno. vi.

birth
ward
hyꝛde.

AND in the .v. yere vpon the day of S. Bꝛyce, oꝛ the .xiii. day of Nouember, was boꝛne at Windſoꝛe, the fyꝛſte oꝛ eldeſt ſonne of king Edwarde, that after his father, was king of Englande, & named Edwarde the .iii. And this yere was agayne reuoked by the kyng, Piers Gaueſton out of Flaunders, which after his agayne commyng, demeaned him woꝛſe than he befoꝛe did.

In ſo much, that he diſdayned the loꝛdes of England, and of thē had many diſpiteous and ſlaunderous woꝛdes. Wherof the Loꝛdes of one mynde aſſented to put thys Piers to death, and ſoone after aſſembled their powers, and beſieged him in ẏ caſtel of Scarburgh, and in pꝛoces wan that caſtell, & tooke him and bꝛought him vnto Gauerſede beſide Warwike, and there ẏ .xix. day of June, ſmote of his head. Wherof whan the kyng had knowledge, he was greuouſlie diſpleaſed agaynſt the ſayd loꝛdes, and made his auow that hys death ſhould be reuēged. By mean of this rancoure that befoꝛe betwene the kyng and his Loꝛdes, was kyndled, now began further to ſpꝛede, ſo that after this day, the kyng ſought occaſion againſt his Loꝛdes, how he might putte theym to greuaunce and diſpleaſure. In thys while died ſyꝛ Henrie Lacy Earle of Lincolne, the which lyyng vpon hys death bed, required ſir Thomas Erle of Lācaſter that had maried his daughter, that he would ſtande with the other loꝛdes in the defence, foꝛ the weale of Englande. The whiche requeſt, the ſayde Erle graunted, and ſo fermely kept oꝛ obſerued it, that at lengthe he with many other loſte their liues, as after in the ſtoꝛy ſhalbe ſhewed.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xii

Anno domini. M. CCC. xiii

Jhon * Pontenay. { Jhon Lambyn. / Richard Lutekyn. } Anno. vi.

AND in the .vi. yere, the kynge helde hys great courte or counſayle of Parlyament with the lordes ſpirituall and temporall at London. Whereby the aduices of them many good ordinaũces and ſtatutes, wer made to oppreſſe the riotouſe and other myſcheues, yͤ at thoſe dayes were vſed. Than yͤ kyng was ſworne to kepe thoſe ordinaunces, and after al hys lordes to theyr powers.

The rebellion of the Scottes

It was not longe after that word was brought vnto the king how Robert le Bruze was tourned into Scotland, and had cauſed the Scottes to rebell of new. Ye haue before heard in the .xxxiii. yere of Edward the fyrſt, how the ſayd Edwarde chaſed the forenamed Robert le Bruze out of Scotlande, into Normandy: But whe he had harde of the miſguydinge of the realme of England, and ſpecially of the deuiſion betwene the kynge and hys Lordes, he anon with a ſmall ayde of the Normãs or Norwaies, retourned into Scotlande.

Wher he demeaned him in ſuch wiſe to the lordes of Scotlande, yͤ he in ſhort proceſſe was agayne made kyng of that realme, & warred ſtrongly vpon yͤ kynges frendes, and wan from them Caſtels and ſtronge holdes, and wrought vnto Engliſhmenne much ſorow and tene.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xiii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xiiii.

Nycholas Faringdõ. { Adam Burden.
Hughe *Gayton. } Anno. vii.

*Carton.

IN the .vii. yeare, for to oppreſſe the malyce of the Scottes, the kyng aſſembled a greate power, & by water entred the realme of Scotland, and deſtroyed ſuche vilages & townes as lay or ſtode in his way. Wherof hearyng Robert le Bruze, with the power of Sotland, coaſted toward the Engliſh men, and vpon the day of the Natiuite of Sayncte Jhon the Baptiſt, met with kyng Edward and his hooſt at a place called Eſtryuelin, neare vnto a freſh riuer that then was called Bannockiſbourne, where betwene the Englyſh and the Scottes that daye, was foughten a cruell battayle. But in the ende the Englyſh men were conſtrayned to forſake the fielde.

The battayle of Eſtriuelin

Than the Scottes chaſed ſo egerli the Engliſh men, that many of them were drowned in the forenamed riuer, & many a noble man of England, that day was ſlayne in that battayle, as ſir Gilbert de Clare erle of Glouceter ſir Robert Clifforde, ſir Edmund of Maule, the kynges ſtewarde, with other lordes and barons to the number (as witneſſeth Guydo de Columna) of .xlii. and of knightes & baronettes to yͤ number of .lxvii, ouer .xxii. men of name which that day of the Scottes were taken pryſoners. And the Kynge hym ſelfe from that battayle ſcaped wyth great daunger, and ſo wyth a few of his hoſt, that with him eſcaped came vnto Berwike, and there reſted him a ſeaſon. Than the Scottes enflamed with pryde, in deriſion of the Engliſhmen, made this rime as foloweth.

Maydens of Englande ſore may ye morne
For your lemmans ye haue loſte at Bannockys borne.
VVyth heue a lowe.
VVhat weneth the king of Englād
So ſoone to haue wone Scotland,
VVyth rumbylowe.

This ſonge was after manie daies ſonge, in daunces, in the Carols of the Maydens, and Mynſtrelles of Scotlande, to the reproſe and diſdayne of Englyſhe men, wyth dyuers other, whiche I ouer paſſe. And whan kynge Edwarde, had a ſeaſon taried in Barwike, and ſet that towne in ſurety, as he than might, he returned wyth ſmall honour into England, and came ſecretly to Weſtminſter, vpon the day of Saynct Magne, or the nynetene daye of Auguſt.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xiiii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xv.
Stephan of Abryngdone.
Jhon Gyſours. Anno. viii.
*Hamonde Chikwell.

yllyā
inghā

ca.42

pte-
pye-
ction
ilayn

AND in the. viii. yere of kyng Edward, a vilain called John Tanner, yode aboute in dyuers places of England, & named hym ſelfe to be the ſonne of Edwarde the fyrſte: and ſayd that by meane of a falſe noryce, he was ſtolne out of hys Cradell, and Edward which was a carters ſonne, was layde in the ſame Cradel for him, and he him ſelfe was after hardly foſtered and brought vp, in the North party of Wales. But when this vylayn was layd for to be taken, for fere he fled to the churche of the Freer Carmes or the white Freers of Oxenforde, where he thynkynge to haue bene ſure, becauſe kynge Edwarde the fyrſte was theyr founder, reherſed agayne the forſaiyng, adding more thervnto, that it apered well that the kyng was a carters ſonne, for his condicions were according to the ſame, as by familiar examples and cuſtomes, were in hym dayly apperaunt. Whan he had thus continued a ſeaſon not with oute ſome rumour in the lande, laſtely he was taken oute of that place, and caried as a felon vnto Northampton, and there arreygned and iudged for his falſenes, and ſo drawen and hanged. The whiche at the houre of death confeſſed, that he had a fynde in hys houſe, in the ſimilitude of a catte, the whiche amonge other promyſes to him made, he aſſured hym that he ſhould bee kynge of Englande. And Guido ſayeth, that he confeſſed that he had ſerued the fynde three yeres before, to bryng his peruerſe purpoſe about. Thus kyng Edwarde beſet with manie aduerſities, kepte a counſayle at London, for reformacion of the warre in Scotlande, and other thinges for the well fare of Englande. Then was ſyr Peter Spaldyng knight, ſente vnto Barwik with a crewe of Souldiours, for to fortifie that towne, for ſo much as the kyng had certayne vnderſtandinge, that Roberte le Bruze entended haſtly to lay his ſiege to that towne.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xv. Anno domini. M.CCC.xvi.

Hamonde Goodchepe.
Stephan Abyndon. { } Anno.ix.
William *Redyng.

*Be ton.

Barwike loſte.

AND in the.ix.yere vpon Midlēt ſonday, was yͤ towne and caſtell of Berwike yelden or loſt by treaſon of the forenamed Peter Spaldyng (as the common fame went) vnto Robert le Bruze, kinge of Scottes.

Thys yeare alſo, the dearth of Corne had increaſed yerely more and more, from the.xvi. yeare of Edwarde the fyrſt, was this yere at London, ſold for.iiii.s̃.a buſhel. And therwyth alſo, fell ſuch a morayne of Beſtes, that all vitayle waxed ſcant & dere, as after ſhall be ſhewed. In this yere alſo, two Cardinalles that were ſent into England, from the.v. Clemente, then Pope of Rome, to ſet an vniō & a peace, betwene the kynges of Englande & of Scottes, wer met with vpon yͤ moore of Wygilſdon in Yorke ſhyre, & there robbed of ſuch ſtuffe & treſure, as they with them brought. For which robberie great enquery was made, ſo yͭ laſtly a knight called ſyr Roberte Gilbert Myddelton was accuſed, and ſent to pryſon for that felony, and after at London drawen and hanged for the ſame, and his head ſet vpon London brydge. But the Cardinals receyued of the kynge double the value of their harmes.

Two dinal bed.

In thys yeare alſo, fell ſo exceedynge rayne in the monethes of Julie & Auguſt, that huſbandes might not brynge in theyr lytle ſtore of Corne, that then ſtoode vpon the grounde, ſo that where before was great ſcarciti of wheat now by this was more, and Beeues and Mottons, were at exceedyng pryces, by reaſon of the morayne before ſpoken of.

A gre raine

Anno domini. M.CCC.xvi. Anno domini. M.CCC.xvii.

Wyllyam Caſton.
Jhon wengraue. { } Anno.xiiii.
Raufe *Palmer.

*Bu

How the Scottes robbed & brent Englande.

IN thys yere the Scottes entred the borders of Northumberlande, & robbed and brente the countrey moſt cruelly, in ſo muche that they brente the houſes, that wemen at that tyme lay in childe bed, & ſpared nother man, woman nor child, nother religioꝰ nor other & did ſo great harme yͤ the cōtrei

A ſca

by it was greatly impoueriſhed. To this miſchiefe was ioyned an other miſerye: For as before is ſayd, vitayle by reaſon of the morayne was ſo ſcante and dere, and wheate and other grayne ſo high pryſed, that the poore people eate horſe fleſh and doggues fleſhe, and many other vile beaſtes, whiche wonder is to beleue: And yet for defaute died greate multitude of people in ſundry places of the lād. And whete was ſolde this yeare, and the next folowing, at Londō, for .iiii. marke a quarter & aboue. And after this derthe and ſcareſitie of vitayle, enſued mortalitie of men by Gods hande and puniſhment: ſo that what with warre of the Scottes, and for hunger, and death, by mortalitie and ſickeneſſe, the people of the lande was wonderſly waſted and periſhed. But al thoſe monicions amended not the Kynge of his inordinate lyuynge.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xvii.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xviii.

Jhon*Wentgraue. { Jhon Pryoure.
William Furneux. } Anno. xi.

igraue

IN this .xi. yere, the kynge aſſembled a new hoſte, & wente into Northumberlande, to reſiſte the malice of the Scottes whiche daylye made aſſautes vpon the bordours, & entred far within the lande. Wherfore for great diſtreſſe and nede of fighting men, the king had much people out the of ſouth & eaſt parties of Englande. Amonge the which contrary to theyr libertie, the citie of London was conſtrayned to finde at their coſtes and charge, two hundred men, and ſo ſent theim to Yorke. When the kynge at Yorke, had receyued his people, from ſondry coūtreys, and good townes of England, he with a conueniēt number, rode toward Berwike, and ſo ſpedde his iournayes, ŷ at lengthe he came nere vnto Berwyke, and layd his ſiege aboute the ſame.

e Citie
London
pelled
ynde ŷ
g twoo
dreth
n.

But while the kynge was buſied in aſſautyng of the towne, the Scottes brake ouer the water of Swale in great number, and leauynge the coſte where the kynges people laye, in ſecreate wiſe came downe into the marchis of Yorkeſhyre, and there ſlew the people, & robbed them in moſte cruell wyſe. Wherefore the Archebyſhoppe of Yorke, conſtrayned of pure neceſſite, to defende that countrey, gathered vnto him an vnreddy and diſpurueyed hoſte for the warre, as pryours, clerkes, chanons, and other ſpirytuall men of the churche, with huſbandmen and other vnapte people: and ſo with great number of men and few warly or diſcrete cheuetaines, yode againſt the Scottes, and them encountred at a place called Mytton vpō Swale, the .xii. day of the moneth of October, and gaue vnto theim battaile. But for lacke of wiſe & warely prouiſion, the Engliſhmē were beſet of their enemies, vpon euery ſide, ſo that of them was ſlayne a great multitude, and the remnaūt ſhamefully put to flight by reaſon whereof the ſayde archbyſhop, with the abbot of Selby, and other were preſerued. And for ſo many ſpiritual men, wer ſlayne in this battayle, therefore it was after named of many writers, the white battayle. When the kynge was enfourmed of this ouerthrow of the Northen menne, and for it drew towarde wynter, he therefore brake vp his ſiege, and returned vnto Yorke, and ſoone after further into England. Then was nothing done without the aduyces and counſelles of ſyr Hughe the Spenſers, the father and the ſonne. By whoſe entiſement manie thinges were done in Englād to the great grudge as wel of the noble men of the realme, as of the cōmons of the ſame, ſo that they were had in as great hatred and indignaciō, as before tymes was Piers Gaueſton. And many euyll reportes, and greate extorcions were of them reported, as lightly men ſhall doo, that ben out of the fauoure of the common people.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xviii. Anno domini. M. CCC. xix.

Ihon Wengraue. { Ihon Pontenay.
Ihon Dallynge. } Anno. xii.

IN this. xii. yeare, the kynge helde his great councell at Yorke, where contrary yͤ minde of the Lordes, ſyr Hugh Spenſer the ſonne, was made high Chamberlayn of England. By reaſon whereof he bare him ſo hautely and ſo proude, that no lorde of this land myght gainſaye him, in anye thynge that he thought good. Wherof grew the occaſion of the Barons warre, as after foloweth.

In thys paſtyme for as muche as the foreſayd Cardinals might nothynge doo, concernynge the peace betwene England & Scotlande, the kyng purchaſed a curſſe of the. xxii. Ihon then Pope of Rome, to accurſſe Robert le bruze and al ſuche as wyth hym helde or maynteyned, and it for to ſtande ſo in ſtrength, tyl the ſaid Robert had recompenſed kyng Edwarde for all ſuche harmes as his lande had by him receyued, and alſo tyll he had reedified the Monaſteries and churches, by him and his caſt downe in Englande, and reſtored to them ſuch ſpirituall goodes as the Scottes had receyued and taken from them. But al this auayled nothing, but put the king and the realme to great coſte & charge ſo that the commons were vexed, & troubled many maner of wayes and theyr poſſeſſions and moueable goodes, taken from theym, vpon ſurmyſed and fayned cauſes: ſo that many were vtterly vndone, and a fewe ſinguler and miſguyded perſons auaunced. When the more partye of the Barones of Englande, behelde thys myſerie of the people, how they were punyſhed by the hande of God, and alſo by the ygnoraunce of the Kynge, they in ſecrete maner

ner, aſſembled them together at a towne called Shyrborne, and there condeſcended for a reformacyon of thys myſchyefe, to remoue from the Kynge the ſayde nſers. Spenſers, bothe the father and the ſonne. And thys to brynge about, ſyr Thamas Earle of Lancaſter, ſyr Humfrey Bohum earle of Herforde, ſyr Jhon Moubray Baron, ſyr Roger Clyfforde Baron, ſyr Goſelyn Danyell Baron, ſyr Roger Toket, Roger Benefeelde, ſyr Roger Mortymer, ſyr William Sullande, ſyr William Elminbridge, ſyr Jhon Gifforde, and ſyr Jhon Tyers Barons and knyghtes, wyth dyuers other ſware eche of theym to ſtande by other, tyll they had amended the ſtate the realme. And ſoone after by theyr aduyce and agrement, ſyr Jhon Moubraye, ſyr Roger Clifforde, and ſyr Goſelyn Daniell, with a ſtrong companye entred vppon the manours and caſtelles of the ſayd Spenſers, ſtandinge in the Marche of Wales, and theim ſpoyled and deſtroyed. Of the whiche ryot the Spenſers cōplayned them to the king. In puniſhment wherof, the kinge called to him diuers of hys counſaile at Windſore, there determined that the ſaide ſir Jhon Moubray, ſir Roger Clifforde, and ſir Goſelin Daniell, with other their aſſiſtentes, ſhoulde appeare before the kinges counſaile ſhortlye after, and there to make anſwere vpon that ryot. And if they refuſed that to dooe, that then they ſhoulde voyde the land ſhortly after, as baniſhed men. But no day of apearaūce by them was kept. Wherefore Proclamacions was made in diuers places of ẏ realme and at London the ſixtene daye of Marche, the ſaid ſir Jhon Moubray, ſir Roger Clifforde and other, ſhoulde auoyde the lande within ten daies folowing vpon paine of death. wherof hearinge the Lordes and Barones before named, reſſembled theim a moore ſtronger power, and vppon that ſent a meſſanger vnto the kinge, beſeching him humblie to returne from his perſon, the counſaile of the Spenſers, whiche dailye did vnto him great diſhonour, and to the common weale of the realme, greate hinderaunce. The kinge hearing this humble requeſt, nothinge with it being content, but fearing greatlye the deſtruction of his owne perſon, aſſembled his counſaile for reformacion of this matter. Where it was concluded that the king ſhoulde call a Parlement at London, there to be holden in the   folowinge. And that in concluſion ſo there taken, by the ſaid counſaile, the king ſent his letters vnto the ſaide Barōs, commaunding theim to come vnto the ſaid Parlement. The which at that daie aboue ſaide, with a greate hooſte of menne of armes, came vnto London, in a ſuite of iakettes or coates of demie partie of Yelowe & Greene, with a band of White caſt ouerthwarte.

For this ſkille, that Parlement long after of the common people, was called ẏ parlement of White bandes.

Then for to ſee the kings peace were ſubſtanciallye kepte within the Citie of London, the Maire cauſed daylye a thouſande men well harneſſed, to watche in diuers wardes, and at diuers gates of the citie, the which began at foure of the clocke in the morning, and ſo continued till ſixe at night. At which ſeaſon as many were ordeined for to take then the charge of the night watche, and ſo to continue tyll the houre of fiue in the morninge. And for this night watche ſhoulde bee ſurelye kepte, two Aldermen nightlye were aſſigned to ride aboute the citie, with certaine officers of the towne, to ſee the watchemen well and diſcretly guyded. And the gates wer ſhut at nine of the clocke, and opened again at ſeuen in the morowe, and euery Citezen warned to haue his harneys by him, that he mighte bee readye wyth ſhorte warninge, when ſoeuer he were called.

Thus in the Cytye the ſayde watche continuing, the foreſayde Parlement was holden at Weſtminſter, where among other thinges for the weale of the lande, as that counſayll then coulde thinke determined, one was that ſyr Hugh Spenſer the father, and ſir Hugh the ſonne ſhoulde bee baniſhed out of the realme of Englãde for tearme of life. And ſoone after that baniſhment was put in execution, ſo that they bothe were broughte vnto Douer, there to take ſhipping. Where Hugh the father, made wonderfull moone when he ſhoulde take his ſhyppe, and curſed his ſonne in preſence of ſuch as had the guyding of them, ſaiynge: that by his meanes, he was baniſhed from the flour of all landes chriſtened. Than the king diſſolued the Parlement, and euery man returned to his own. But it was not longe after, that word was brought vnto the king, that ſyr Spenſer the ſonne houed vpon the coaſt of Englande, and tooke prayes of all Marchauntes that paſſed by his courſe.

But the kynge lette as he had knowen of no ſuche thinge, and ſuffered that with manye moe euyll deedes to goo vnpuniſhed, the whyche at length, he repented full ſore, and tooke thereof greate remors of conſcience, as it appeareth in the ende of hys raigne.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xix. Anno domini. M.CCC.xx.

Hamonde Chikwell. { Simon Abingdon,
Jhon Preſton. } Anno.xiii.

IN this.xiii. yere, the kinge reuoked the actes, or withſtode them, which were made at Lõdon in yͤ laſt parlement, and called againe into England the Spenſers, both the father & ſon, contrary the wyll of the Barons, and ſet them in authoritie as they before had bene, to the greate diſturbaunce of all the realme. And ſone after, vnder colour of a title made by yͤ quene, vnto the caſtell of Ledis in Kent, whiche then belonged vnto ſyr Barthen de Bladiſmore knight, then being on the barons partye, the king beſieged the ſayd caſtell, and by helpe of the Cytezyns of London, laſtlye wanne it by ſtrength, and ſpoyled the mouable thereof, which was to a great value, after the ſaiynge of ſome writers. In this paſſetyme that the king had thus called againe the Spenſers, and ruled manye thinges after hys ſenſuall appetite and pleaſure, nothinge regardinge the common weale of the realme, the Barons conſiderynge well that the Spencers ſhoulde in proceſſe bring the land to greate ruyne, and the kyng to greate diſhonoure, entendyng to refourme the miſchiefe that therof mighte enſue, gathered vnto theym greate power. And whyle ſyr Thomas Earle of Lancaſter was gatheryng of hys people, the two Mortimers, that is to ſaye: ſyr Roger Mortimer of Werke, and Syr Roger of Wygmoore, with other, yode vnto the marche of Wales, and tooke by ſtrength certaine Cities and townes belongynge to the Spenſers, and purſued alſo ſome of the kynges ſeruauntes. Wherefore the kynge hearynge of the rebellion of hys Lordes, made haſtye ſpeede, and with a greate Hooſte came about by Shroweſburye, and was nere vnto theym, or they were ware, ſo that for feare the ſayde Mortimers yelded them vnto the kinges grace and mercie, the whiche forthwith were conueyed as pryſoners vnto to the towre of London.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xx. Anno domini.M.CCC.xxi.

Hamonde Chikwell. { Reignolde at Conduit.
William Prodham. } Anno.xiiii.

IN this.xiiii.yere, when the kynge had thus ordered the countrey of the marches foreſayde after hys minde, and had to him gathered more ſtrength, about S. Chadys day or beginning of Marche, the king with his people, came down to Glouceter, where with hym met the Spenſers with their people. And frō thence they yode vnto Lichefeelde, at whiche ſeaſon, the Earles of Lancaſter and of Herforde were at   , and the remenaunt of their Hoſte at Burton vpon Trent, and fortified the bridge, that the king might not win ouer the ſaid riuer. Then the king was brought vnto a foorde, and began to ſet ouer his knightes, whereof hearinge the ſaide Earles, forſooke the ſaide towne of   , and yode towarde the towne or citie of   . But or they might paſſe farre vpon their iourney, they were encountred of ſyr Aymer de Valance earle of Penbrooke, with the Spenſers, and other of the kinges Hooſte, vpon the.xii.daye of Marche, and of them ouerſet, and conſtrained to flee, and ſo yode in proceſſe of time to Pountfret. In this meane ſeaſon, the Earle Thomas had ſent a knighte of his, named Roberte Holande into Lancaſhyre, for to arrere his tenauntes. But when the ſaide ſyr Robert heard of that ſkirmiſhe, ſkyrmiſhe, and howe his maiſter was fledde, he then drewe to the kynge, and preſented hym wyth ſuche companye, as he had then gathered. And thus the kynges power daylye encreaſed, and the Barons diſcreaſed. Then the barons hearynge of the goynge of ſyr Roberte Holande vnto the kynges party, were with it ſomedeale abaſſhed, and tooke theyr counſayle in the freres of Pountfret. Where after manye opinions and reaſons, amonge theym debated and argued, it was fynallye by theym concluded, that they ſhoulde goe vnto the Caſtell of Dunſtanborough, and there to holde them tyll they mighte purchaſe the kings grace. And ſo ſpeding their iourney thitherward, with ſuche people as they than had, they came in proceſſe of time to a towne called Burgh bridge. Where they were encountred of ſyr Andrew of Harkeley knyght, with other that were comen out of the North with a ſtrong companye. The whiche there neare vnto the ſayde towne, ſette vpon the Barons, and in the ende diſcomfited theym, and chaſed theyr people. In the whiche fight was ſlayne the Earle of Herforde, ſyr Roger Benefeelde, and ſyr wylliam Sulland and other: and there was taken the Earle of Lancaſter, ſyr Roger Cliffoorde, ſyr Jhon Moubray, ſyr Roger Tuckettes, ſyr William fiz William, with diuers other, and ladde vnto Yorke. And thys feelde was foughten (as witneſſeth Polichronicon) the fiftene day of Marche, in the ende of the yeare of oure Lorde a thouſande thre hundred and. xx.

The diſcõfiture of yͤ barons.

It was not lenge after that ſyr Hugh Daniell ⁊ ſyr Barthew de Bladiſmoore were taken. And ſyr Thomas Earle of Lancaſter was brought agayne to his owne towne of Pountfret, where he was brought in iudgement before ſyr Aymer de Valaunce Earle of Penbroke, ſyr Jhon Britayne Earle of Richmonde, ſyr Edmũde of Woodſtocke Earle of Kente, ſyr Hugh Spẽſer the father, ⁊ ſyr Robert of Malmeſtrope Juſtice, with other, and before theym fynallye adiudged to haue his head ſtriken of. Whereof execution was doen the twelfe daye of Apryll, in the beginning of yͤ yere of grace, after the rekeninge of the churche of England, a thouſand, thre hundred and. xxi.

From this time forewarde, by the terme of fyue yeres enſuynge, the fortune of the Spẽſers hugely encreaſed. And as faſt the queenes diſcreaſed, tyll ſhe was releued by the kyng of Fraunce, then Charles the fyfte of that name, and brother vnto her, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Then to retourne vnto our former matter, vppon the foreſayde daye that Earle Thomas was thus put in execution, ſyr Roger Tuckettes, ſyr william fiz William, ſyr waren of Iſelde, or Iſell, ſyr Henrye of Bradborne, and ſyr William Cheynye Barons and knightes, were drawen and hanged, and theyr heades ſmitten of, and ſent vnto London. Which all were putte to death at Pountfret foreſaide, with an eſquier called ſyr Jhon Page. And at Yorke ſoone after was drawen and headed ſyr Roger Clyfforde, ſir Jhon

Moubray, and ſir Goſeline Daniell, Barons. And at Briſtowe, ſir Henry Womington, and ſir Henry Monforde Banarettes, and at Glouceter ſyr Ihon Giffard, & ſyr Williã Elmingbridge knightes, and at London ſyr Ihon Tyers, or Tryers Baron, and at Winchelſee, Sir Thomas Culpepyr knight, and at Windſore ſir Fraũces waldenham Baron, and at Caunterburye, ſir Barthew Gladiſmoore, and ſyr Bartholl de Alborneham Barons. And at Cardeefe in Wales was putte to lyke execucion ſir william Flemming knighte, vppon whoſe ſoules and all Chriſten Ieſus haue mercye.

When the king hadde thus ſubdued his Barons, he ſoone after aboute the feaſt of the Aſcention of our Lord, kept hys Parlement at Yorke. Duryng whiche Parlement ſyr Hughe Spenſer the father was made Earle of Wincheſter, and ſyr Andrew of Harkley Earle of Charleyle, or after ſome writers Cardoylle, and diſherited al ſuch as before had holden with the Earles of Lancaſter and of Harforde, except ſyr Hughe Daniell and fewe other, the whiche ſir Hughe was receyued to grace, by reaſon he had maried a kinneſwoman of the kinges.

There was alſo ordayne ſoone after, that maiſter Roberte Baldocke a man of euyll fame ſhould bee Chaunceloure of Englande. Then forfaytes and fynes were gathered vnto the kynges treaſurie, without ſparing of priueleged places or other, ſo that what mighte bee founde, all was ſeaſed for the kinge. By reaſon whereof, muche treaſour was brought vnto the kinges coffers, beſide great thynges that were brybed and ſpoyled by the officers of dyuers ſhyres.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxi.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxii.

Hamonde Chikwell.
Richard Conſtantine
Richarde Hakeney.
Anno.xv.

In this.xv.yere the king gathered the ſyxte penye of the temporall mennes goodes throughe Englande, Irelande, & Wales, that to hym was graunted at the foreſaide Parlement, for the defence of the Scottes. Whyche was payed with great murmour and grudge, conſideringe the manifolde miſeries that the common people at thoſe dayes wer wrapped in. This yere alſo, the Sunne apeared to mans ſighte as bloude, and ſo continued by the ſpace of ſyxe houres, that is to meane, in the Moneth of October, and laſte day of the ſaid Moneth, from ſeuen of the clocke in the morninge, tyll one of the ſame daye. After ſome writers, aboute this time the Scottes entendinge to winne an enterpryſe in Ireland, and for to winne that countrey to their obeyſaunce, entered it with a ſtronge hooſte vnder their Capitayne Edwarde le Bruze, brother vnto the Scottiſh Kinge. But howe it was, by ayde of Engliſh men or of them ſelues, the Iriſhe quite theym ſo well, and bare theym ſo manfullye, that they vanquiſhed the Scottes, and chaſed theym out of that countrey. In whiche chaſe and fight the ſaide Edwarde le Bruze and manye of the noble menne of Scotland were ſlaine.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xxiii.

Hamonde Chikwell. { Jhon Grantham.
Richarde of Ely. } Anno.xvi.

IN the the ſixtene yeare, the kynge made greate prouiſion for to make a voyage into Scotland, ſo that about the beginning of Auguſte, he entred that countrey. But the Scottes conſideringe the greate multitude of his hoſt, drew them into mountaines and other places, where as the Engliſhemen might not winne to them, and all to the entent to werie and tyre the kinges greate hoſte. Then diuers maladyes fell amonge the Engliſhmenne, ſo that manye of them died, and were loſte in that iourney, aſwel for lacke of vitail, as by infirmitie and ſickeneſſe, ſo that the king for theſe cauſes and other, was conſtrained to returne into Englande aboute the Natiuitie of oure Ladye. Whereof the the Scottes beinge enfourmed, ſyr James Douglas with other Capitaynes of the Scottes with a ſtronge hooſte folowed or coſted the king, in ſuch wiſe that about the feaſt of ſainct Luke, they had almoſt taken the kyng at dinner, at an Abbey called Bellalaunde, or Beyghlande. Then the kynge of pure conſtraint, defended him, and wythſtode the Scottes, as he mighte. But after ſhorte and weake fighte, the king was compelled to flee, and by that meane to ſaue him ſelfe.

In thys ſkyrmyſhe was taken ſyr Jhon Brytayne Earle of Rychemonde, and the kynges treaſoure was there ſpoyled and caryed away, and the ordinaunce belongynge to the Hooſte, great parte of it was by the Scottes, conueyed into Scotlande.

Then the Scottes in theyr retournynge homewarde, wanne the Caſtell of Norham, and robbed the towne of Northallerton, and other. Of this loſſe and harmes, was Syr Andrewe of Herkeley putte in wyte, by myſleadynge of the kynges Hooſte, as in the next yere folowing ſhalbee ſhewed.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xxiiii.

Symon Fraunces. { Adam Saliſburye.
Jhon of Oxenford. } Anno.xvii.

And

IN the .xvii. yere, the kyng beynge enfourmed, that he and hys people were put vnto diſhonour (as in ẏ preceding yere is touched) of the Scottes, by the vntrouth & treaſon of the forenamed ſir Andrew earle of Carleyl or Cardoyl, ſent a knight named ſir Antony Lucy, for to areſt the ſaid earle, & to bring him ſafely vnto the kynges preſence. Whiche ſir Antony ſped him in ſuche wiſe, ẏ vpon the day of ſainct Chad, or the .ii. daye of March, the ſaide earle was taken, and ſo kept in priſon long after, til October folowing, at whiche ſeaſon (as affirmeth Geffrey of Mōmouth) at Cardoyl in Wales the ſayd ſir Andrewe was arreigned, and conuict, that he had taken money of the Scottes to betray the king his naturall Lord. For the whiche treaſon, he was there (or after other) at Weſtcheſter, or at Shrewſbury, drawen and hanged, and his head ſent after to London, and ſet vppon the bridge.

In thys yeare the warre beganne to quycken in Guyan betwene the Engliſchmen & Frenchmen. Whereof the occaſion was (as ſayth the Frenche booke) for a baſtile or fortreſſe, made by the lord Mounte Peſeyne or Peſart, a Lorde of Gaſcoyne, vppon the Frenche kinges grounde, as the Frenchemen ſaide. But the Gaſcoynes and Engliſchmen iuſtified it to bee within the teritorye of Guyan. For thys fyrſt beganne greate wordes, and after manaſſes. But laſtlye mortall warre. So that the Gaſcoynes, wyth ayde of the kynges Stewarde of England, ſlew many of the Frēchmen, that came to ouertourne the ſaid baſtile. When Charles the v. or Charles the fayre, whiche at that day was kynge of Fraunce, hearde of the ouerthrowe of the Frenchmen, & how the Gaſcoynes fortified the ſaide Baſtile, within his ſaid ſignorie, as was enfourmed, he ſent in all ſpeede with a ſtrong hoſte hys vncle Charles de Valoys, whiche made ſharpe and cruel warre vpon the Gaſcoynes, and wan from theym the townes of Angeou and Ampas, with other, and in proceſſe came vnto ẏ towne or citie of Ryoll, and laied hys ſeige vnto the ſame. But the Engliſchmen with the Gaſcoyns, iſſued out of the towne, and gaue battayle vnto the Frenchemen, & put theim to the worſe, and ſlewe .xiiii.C. of them. Among the whiche a lord, called the lord of ſainct Florentyne with other noblemen of Fraunce were ſlayne, and the other conſtrayned to lye further from the towne. Howbeit, in concluſyon, the ſayde towne by appoyntment was yelden vnto the Frenchmen, vpon condicion that all ſuche Englyſhemen as were within the towne, ſhould go frely with their goodes to Burdeaux, or if they woulde remaine there ſtyll, then to be ſworne vnto the Frēch king, and to dwel ther as French men. After whiche towne ſo yelden, ſyr Edmund of Wodſtoke, the kynges brother, then beinge at Burdeaux as the kinges deputie, made ſuche reſiſtence againſt the ſayde Charles de Valoys, that a trewe was takē for that yere.

Than about midlent the kynge hauing knowledge of this warre in Guyan, and how the Frenche kinge entended to ſeaſe all Gaſcoyne and Guyan, for breakinge of certaine couenauntes betwene them made, and not by king Edwarde perfourmed, ſent ouer the quene his wife, the Frenchkinges ſiſter, to entreate a concorde and peace betwene them. And in the beginning of Auguſt folowing, ſyr Roger Mortimer of Wygmore, by meane of a ſleping poyſon or drinke, that he gaue vnto his kepers, as the common fame went, eſcaped out of the towre of London, & went vnto the queene in Frunce. And ſone after wer taken within the caſtell of walingforde, ſyr Ihon Goldington, and ſyr Edmunde of the Beche, the whiche ſyr Ihon was ſent vnto Yorke, and there hanged and drawen for the Barons quarell, and hys head ſent vnto Lōdon bridge. And aboute the feaſt of the Natiuitie of our Ladye, the kyng ſent ouer ſyr Edwarde hys ſonne into Fraunce, for to doe homage vnto the Frenche kynge for the duchie of Guyan. whome the Frenche kynge Philippe le Beawe, receaued ioyouſlye, and cauſed him to tarye with the quene his mother, in the countrey of Pontyen lenger then kynge Edwarde was pleaſed.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxiiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xxv,
Benet of Fulham.
Hamonde Chikwell. Anno.xviii.
Ihon Caſton.

IN this.xviii. yere king Edward beynge enfourmed, that the Frenche kynge had geuen vnto ſyr Edward his ſonne the duchie of Guyan cōtrary his mind and pleaſure, and that alſo the queene his wife, nor the ſayde ſyr Edwarde made no ſpede into Englande, not wythſtandinge hys often ſendynge for theym, was with his ſayde wyfe and ſonne greuouſlye diſpleaſed, in ſo muche, that a Proclamation was made at London, in the Moneth of December, that if the Queene and her ſonne entred not the lande, by the Octaues of the Epyphany of our Lorde next folowyng in peaceable wyſe, that they ſhoulde bee taken for enemies to hys realme of England. But for the Queene feared the treachery of the Spenſers, and other that were neere vnto the kyng, ſhe abode ſtyll in Fraunce. wherefore kyng Edwarde after the expiracion of the foreſayde daye, cauſed to bee ſeaſed all ſuche landes, as to hys ſayde wyfe and ſonne belonged, and the profittes of theym tooke to hys owne vſe. When this rumour was knowen through the moore parte of Englande, dyuers menne of name, as Syr wyllyam Truſſell, Syr Ihon Cromewell, wyth dyuers other, departed ſecretlye oute of Englande, and ſayled vnto the Queene.

When kynge Edwarde was

ware of thys, he ſent vnto the Frenche kynge ſo ſharpe and ſore letters, that he admoniſſhed the Queene out of his lande, & would nother aide her, nor her company: but (as ſayeth Jhon Frozarde, that made a compendious worke in Frenche, of the whole lyfe or ſtorie of ÿ thyrde Edwarde, and therewith expreſſeth many other ſtories and chronicles of Frãce, Flaunders, and manye other regions) at this tyme, when the Queene was thus admoniſſhed to auoyde oute of Fraunce, Syr Jhon de Henawde, brother to the earle of Henawde, a man of great fame, was then in the Frenche kinges court. The which hauing compaſſion on the Queene, and of her yonge ſonne, requyred her to goe with him vnto his brothers courte, foreſayde. Whereof the Quene being fayne, graunted vnto his requeſt, and ſpedde her thyther ſhortly after, where ſhe with her companye was ioyouſlye and honorably receaued. In the time and ſeaſon that the Queene with her ſonne, lay thus in the court or countrey of the earle of Henawde, by meanes of ſuch as were about her, a mariage was concluded betwene ſyr Edwarde her ſonne, and Philip the ſaid earles doughter, vpon certaine condicions. Whereof one was, that the ſayde Earle ſhould at hys proper coſtes ſet ouer into Englande, the ſayde Edward with a crew of. CCCC. men of armes. For the whyche prouiſion was made wyth all diligence. Of this, the fame ſprang ſhortly into Englande. Wherfore the king in al haſte, made prouiſiō to haue the hauens & the porte of his land ſurely kept, for to reſiſt ÿ landing of his enemies. For ſuertie wherof, the citezins of Lōdon were conſtrained to find at theyr proper coſtes a. C. men of armes, the which cōtrary theyr liberties, with condicion, that after that day it ſhould be no preſident, they ſent vnto Portcheſter. In thys ſeaſon & paſſetime the quene with ſir Edwarde her ſonne, with a ſmale companye of Engliſſhmen, and a crewe of Henawders, of the which ſir Jhon Henawde ÿ earles brother was captayne, toke ſhippinge, in thoſe parties, & had the wind ſo fauourable vnto theym, that they landed in England, at a port called Orwell, beſide Harwiche in Suff. the. xxv. daye of September, without anye reſiſtēce of men of warre againſt her made. To whome after her landinge, the people of the countrey drew by great companies, and ſo ſped her toward London. At thys time of the queenes landinge, the king was at the citie of London. But when he heard of the greate people that drewe to her out of al coūtreys, he feared. Wherfore in ſafegarding of him ſelfe, he fledde with a ſmall cōpany toward Wales, & left maiſter Walter Stapelton biſhop of Exeter behind him, to haue ÿ rule of the citie of London. It was not longe aftes the kings departing, ÿ the quene ſent a letter vnto the maire, & comminaltie of the citie, and required of him ayde, to ſubdue the oppreſſor of the cōmon weale of the realme: but to that letter was made none anſwer. Therfore ſhe wrote vnto him the ſecond time, aduertiſing theym of theyr landinge, and of the entent that ſhe had to reforme the enormities and miſgonaunce of the land, in admoniſhing them of their ayde and ſuccoure, as by the tenour of the ſayd letter more playnlye appeareth. Wherof the circumſtaunce I haue left out of this booke, for ſo much as I find varience in the contentes therof, and alſo for the copies therof, are ſet out in the chronicle of Englãd, and diuers other bookes. Than this ſaid letter was tacked vpon the croſſe in Chepe, which at that day was called the new croſſe, the night before the day of S. Denis or the nineth daye of October.

And other copies of the ſame wer faſtened in diuers other places of the citie, whereof one was faſtened vpon the Mayres gate. After whiche letter thus publyſhed in the citie, the biſhop of Exeter to whom (as before is ſaid) the king committed the rule of the citye, ſent vnto the Mayre, to haue the keyes of the gates of the citie, by vertue of his commiſſion. By the which he ſtode ſo firmely, and vſed ſo ſharpe woordes in the kynges name, that variaunce grewe betwene him and the citezins, ſo ferforth, that the commons of the citie in their rage, toke the ſaide biſhop, the. xiiii. daye of Octoberr, and hym with two of his houſeholde eſquyers beheaded vnreuerentlye at the ſtandarde in Weſtchepe. And the ſame day was taken for a ſpie a citezin called Jhon Marſhall, whiche fauoured the Spenſers partie, and in the ſame place alſo beheaded without proceſſe of the law. And then ẏ corps of the ſaide Biſhop with his two ſeruauntes were haried to the Thamis ſide, where the ſaid Biſhop had begon to edifie a tower, and there in the rubbiſhe & ſande of the ſame, they buried or conueyed theſe foure bodies. Whiche deſpite to him was don after ſome authours, for ſo muche as he had vſurped of the common grounde of the citie in ſetting of the ſaid tower: But for what cauſe he was thus vngodly and vnreuerentlye delt with, no mencion is made.

In this paſſetime the quene eaſly and a fote pace folowed the king, whiche by this ſeaſon was cõmen to Briſtow, hauing with him the Spenſers, and his diffamed chãcelour maiſter Robert Baldocke, and ſyr Jhon Earle of Arundell and other. Where by theyr counſayles, it was agreed, that ſyr Hugh Spenſer the father ſhoulde remayne there, and haue the rule of the towne and caſtell, while the king with the other, tooke ſhipping and ſailed from thence into wales, to rayſe the Welſhmen.

And ſo the kinge with ſir Hughe Spenſer the ſonne and the other, toke ſhipping at Briſtow & ſailed into wales. When certaynetye therof came vnto the quene, anon ſhe ſent to Briſtowe, the earle of Kent the kings brother, ſyr Jhon of Henawde, with diuers other, for to take ſyr Hugh Spenſer the father. The whiche put theym in ſuch deuoure, that they tooke the ſaid ſyr Hugh, and left a certaine to holde the towne and caſtell, tyl the Queene wyth her power, came thyther. In the which time they ſpedde theym into Wales, and in proceſſe toke the king, hys chauncelour, the Earle of Arundell, and ſyr Hugh Spenſer the ſonne

Sir Hu
Spenſe
father t
ken in
Briſto

ſonne, and brought theym all to the towne of Herforde. And in this while the Citezyns of London wanne the tower of London, and kepte it vnto the Queenes vſe.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxv. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxvi.

Richarde Betayne. { Gilbert Mordon. / Jhon Conton. } Anno.xix.

IN this.xix. yeare, and beginninge of thys Maiores charge, vppon the morow folowinge the feaſt of Simō and Jude, the ſame daye that the Maior roade to Weſtminſter, to take his charge, the ſame daye at Briſtowe was ſyr Hugh Spenſer the father put to death, and after buryed at Wincheſter. And vpon S. Hughes daye folowynge, or the eyghtene daye of Nouember, was ſyr Hugh his ſonne drawen, hanged, and quartered at Herefordе, and his head ſent to London, and ſet amonge other, vpon the bridge. The common fame of him went, that after he was taken, he woulde take no maner ſuſtenaunce: wherefore he was the ſooner putte to death. Of this Hugh a Verſifier made theſe two verſes folowynge.

Spē
put to
th.

Funis cum lignis a te miſer enſis & ignis.
Hugo ſecuris equus abſtulit omne decus.

Whiche Verſes to theym that vnderſtande no Latyne, may in thys wyſe be expouned or Engliſhed.

VVith ropes were thou bounde, and on the galowe honge,
And from thy bodye, thine head with ſworde was kytte.
Thy bowelles in the fier were throwen, and burned long,
Thy body in foure peeces eke, with an axe was ſlytte:
VVith horſe before drawen, fewe men pitiyng it,
Thus with theſe tormentes, for thy ſinnes ſake,
From thee wretched Hugh, all worldly wealth was take.

In thys meane tyme and ſeaſon, the king was conueyed vnto the Caſtell of Knelworth, and there kepte vnder the garde of ſir Henrye of Lancaſter, or brother vnto the Earle Thomas of Lancaſter, that was beheaded at Pountfret. And maiſter Robert Baldoke the kinges Chaunceller was ſent vnto London, and put into priſon of Newegate, where after he died miſerably. The earle Jhon of Arundel was alſo put to death at Herford wͭin foure daies of ſir Hugh the yonger Spenſer. Then the quene wͭ ſir Edward her ſonne, & with a good company of lords & gentlemen returned vnto London, & there of the citezins wͭ great honor & ioye was receaued vpon the.iiii. day of Decēber, & ſo conueied vnto Weſtminſter, wherin the octaues of the Epiphany of our Lord, a Parlement was holden, during the whiche certayne ſolempne meſſangers were ſent vnto the kinge, to the Caſtell of Kenelworth, that is to ſaye: thre Biſhoppes, thre Earles, two abbottes, two barons, and two Juſtices, wyth the Procuratour of that Parlement, ſyr Wyllyam Truſſel, to depoſe him of al kingly dignitie, as before was agreed by the Lordes ſpirituall and temporall, and commons of the ſayde Parlement, and they to reſygne vnto the kinge, all homeges and feauties to hym before made in the name of all the Baronye of Englande. Then the forenamed ſyr William Truſſel vpon the day of the conuerſion of ſaint Paule, or the fiue and twentie day of Januarye, by the authoritie of hys office, in the preſence of the foreſaide Lordes, had theſe wordes folowing vnto the kyng.

King Edwarde the ſecond depoſed.

J Williã Truſſell, in the name of all menne of this lande of Englande, and Procuratour of this Parlement, reſigne to thee Edward, yͤ homage that was made to thee ſometyme, and from this time forthe, depriue thee of all kingly power: and J ſhall neuer bee attendaunt vnto thee as king after this time. And thus was Edward the ſeconde depoſed, and his ſonne made king, when he had raigned ful. xviii. yeares, ſixe monethes and odde daies. Then Edwarde thus remaining in priſon, as firſt in yͤ caſtel of Kenelworth, and after in the caſtel of Barkle, tooke greate repentaunce of hys former life, and made a lamentable complainte, for that he had ſo greuouſly offended God. Whereof a part J haue ſet out, but not all, leſt it ſhoulde bee tedious to the readers or hearers.

Dampnum mihi contulit tempore brumali,
Fortuna ſatis aſpera vehementis mali.
Nullus eſt tam ſapiens, mitis, aut formoſus,
Tam prudens virtutibus, ceteriſque famoſus,
Quin ſtultus reputabitur, et ſatis deſpectus,
Si fortuna proſperos auertat effectus.

Theſe wyth manye other, after the ſame makynge, J haue ſeene, whyche are reported to bee of hys owne makynge, in the tyme of hys enpryſonment. The whyche for the lengthe of tyme, J haue nowe left out of this preſent worke, and ſhewed the very effect of them in Englyſhe, as after foloweth.

When Saturne with his colde iſye face.
The ground with his froſtes turneth the grene to white,
The time Winter, which trees doth deface,
And cauſeth all verdure to auoyde quite,
Then fortune, which ſharpe was with ſtormes not alite.
Hath me aſſauted with her frowarde wyll,
And me beclipped with daungers ryght yll.

What man in this worlde, is ſo wyſe or fayre,
So prudent, ſo vertuous, or famous vnder thayre
But that for a foole, and for a man diſpyſed,
Shalbe take, whan fortune is from him deuided:

Alas now I crie, but no man doth me moone,
For I ſue to them, that pitie of me haue none.
Many with great honours I did whylome auaunce
That now with dyſhonoure doen me ſtyng and launce.
And ſuch as ſometime did me greatly fere.
Me diſpiſe, and let not with ſclaunder me to dere.

O mercyfull good, what loue they did me ſhewe,
And with detraction they do me hacke and hewe
Alas moſte ſinfull wretche, why ſhould I thus complayne,
If God be pleaſed, that I ſhould thus ſuſteyne:
For the great offence before by me doone
Wherfore to thee good Lorde, I wyll retourne efte ſoone,
And wholy committe me, thy great mercy vntyll,
And take in pacience, all that may be thy wyll,
And all onely thee ſerue with all diligence,
Alas that before this tyme, I had not that ſence.

But now good Lorde, which arte omnipotente,
Beholde me moſt wretched, and greatly penitente,
And of my treſpaſſe, forgiueneſſe thou me graunte:
And by what ſorow, my carkes is now daunte.

Graunt it may be to my ſoule remedy,
That the ſooner I may attayne it by.
For to thee ſweete Ieſu, I yelde me ſore weepyng,
And aſke of thee pardon, for my greuous ſynnyng.

Moſte bleſſed Ieſu,
Roote af all vertue,
Graunte I may thee ſue,
In all humilite.
Sen thou for our good
Lyſte to ſhede thy blood
And ſtretche thee vpō the rood
For our iniquite.

I thee beſeche,
Moſte holſome leche
That thou wylt ſeche
For me ſucch grace.
That when my body vyle
My ſoule ſhall exile,
Thou brynge in ſhort whyle,
It in reſte and peace.

Lewes the xi.

LEwes the .xi. of that name & ſonne vnto Phylyppe le Beaw, or the fourth Phylyp, beganne his reygne ouer the Realme of Fraunce, in the yere of our Lorde .M. iii. hundred and .xv. and the .viii. yeare of the ſeconde Edwarde, then kynge of Englande.

Anone, as this Lewes was crowned, Enguerram, whiche as ye haue heard, was chief and moſt ſecrete counceylour, with Phylyp the fourth, laſt kyng of Fraunce, was called to accōpt, by the mean of Charles de Valois, vncle vnto this kyng. And for ſo much as the ſaid Engueram, had giuen ſharpe and haſtie wordes vnto the ſayde Charles, in affirmyng that much of the kynges treaſoure remayned in the handes of yͤ ſaid Charles, for this he tooke ſo great diſpleaſure agaynſt yͤ ſayd Enguerram, and bare toward hym ſuch rancoure and malice, that he lefte not tyll he had bereued him of his life, ſo that in proceſſe he was accuſed of .xxxvi. articles, cōcernyng treaſon and iniury done vnto king Phylyp foreſayde, and vnto the Realme of Fraunce, the whiche articles in ordre are ſet out in the Frenche cronicle, whiche I here ouerpaſſe. By force wherof thys Enguerram was laſtlye conuicte and iudged vnto deathe, and for the ſame, in the euen of the Aſcention of our Lorde, hanged vpon the gibet of Parys

This yere alſo fel great ſcarcite of Corne and Frute, in Fraunce, by meane of vnſeſonable wederyng, as was in Englande, in the ix. and .x. yeres, and before and after of the reygne of Edwarde the ſeconde, at this day, & then kynge of Englande. By reaſon whereof great famyn and death, of poore people fell in Fraunce, as it then did in Englande.

Ye haue before in the .xxvii. yere of Phylyp, father vnto this Lewes, heard how the Flemmyngs agayne rebelled, and howe by the meane of Enguerram, the Frēch hoſte was then retourned wyth diſhonour into Fraunce: for reuengement whereof, this Lewes aſſembled a right ſtronge army of the more partie, of all the noble men of Fraunce, and in the moneth of Septembre, entred the countrey of Flaunders, & ſo came vnto the Towne, or neare there vnto, called Courtrai, and lodged his people neare vnto the ryuer of Lis, or Liſe, for ſo muche as the bridges ouer that ryuer, by the Flemmynges wer broken. Where the kyng with his hoſte ſo liyng, the Flemmynges vpon the other ſide, laye in howge number, for to defende the paſſage of the Frenchmen. In which tyme and ſeaſon, fell ſuche plenty of rayne, that the wayes waxed noyous and foule, in all that countrey. By reaſon wherof vitayle, which than was (as aboue is ſayd) ſcant, was thā more ſcarce.

And ouer that, the feeld where the hoſte lay, was ſo wette & myrie, that men and beaſtes were to greuouſly noyed. Wherfore in concluſion, the king conſidering thoſe great hynderaunces and harmes to his Lordes and commons, and that he might in no maner win ouer to his enemies, he returned as other before times had doone, with litle honour into Fraunce, to the great loſſe of the kinges ordenaunce and other ſtuffe, that might not be caried thens, by reaſon of depenes of the waye. For which cauſe and cauſes, the king was ſo ſore diſpleaſed, that he made then a great othe, that if he might liue til the yere folowing, that he ſhould beſet ſo the Flemmynges, that they ſhould not eſcape his daungier, and that he ſhould neuer take treaty nor ende with them, except they would fully and wholye putte theim in his grace and mercy. But in the yere folowing, about the feaſt of Pentecoſt, when the ſayd Lewes had ſcantly reigned two yeres, he died at Boys in Vyncent, and the .vi. day of July honorably was buried at Saynt Deniſe, leauynge after him none iſſue male, wherefore his brother Philip, ſucceded him in the kyngdome.

Francia.

lip the

Philip the fift of that name, and brother of the forenamed Lewes, which for his heigthe was ſournamed, Philip the long, began his reigne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our Lorde. M.CCC.and. xvii. and the .x. yeare, of Edwarde the ſeconde, then kyng of Englande. But firſt he reigned, but as regẽt of Fraunce, for ſo muche as Clemence, the wife of kinge Lewes, was left of her ſaid huſband with childe. The whiche in proceſſe of time, was deliuered of a manne chylde named Jhon, that dyed ſhortly after. After whoſe death, the ſayd Philip, was forthwyth proclaymed kyng of Fraunce, and crowned at Paris, about Chriſtmas folowynge, albeit, that the duke of Burgoyn with other, for a while withſaid that coronacion and woulde haue preferred, the doughter of Lewes laſt dead. But other of the lordes, and nobles of Fraunce woulde not be agreable, that a woman ſhould enherite, ſo greate a kingdome. By meane wherof, vnkyndeneſſe kyndled betwene the kyng and yͤ ſayd duke. But by wyſe mediatoures, they were after accorded, in ſuche wiſe, that the ſayd duke maried the eldeſt doughter of the kynge.

In this paſſe time, ſuch meanes wer made by the Fleminges that an vnitee and accorde, was ſtablyſhed betwene Fraunce and them, for the time that it helde. Whiche peace (as teſtifieth the Frenche chronicle) was laboured and ended, by a Cardinall named Joſſelyn, and ſent from the .xxii. Jhon, thã Pope of Rome, ſo that by the mediacion of the ſaid Cardinal, the Erle of Flaunders was receyued vnto the kynges grace, and at Paris did vnto the French kyng his homage, and ſware vnto him feawtie.

In the thyrde yere of the reigne of this Philip, the prouoſt of Paris, hauing in his priſon a Picard a man of greate riches, whiche for Felony or like crime, was iudged to be hanged. The ſayde prouoſt for great benefit to him done and paiment of great ſummes, by the ſayd Pycarde, tooke an other poore innocent man, and put him to death, in ſteede of the ſayd Pycarde. Of the which offence whan due proofe of it was made, before the kynges counſayle, the ſayde prouoſte for the ſame dede was put vnto like iudgement.

The wicked purpoſe of the Lazers.

In the fyſt yere of the ſaid Philip, all the Lazaries of the countrey of Langedocke were brente, for ſo much as they wer accuſed, of their owne confeſſyon proued, that thei had poiſoned and entended to haue poiſoned al the welles of that countrey. And for manye Jewes were vnto theim conſenting, therfore many of them ſuffered like iudgement.

The aſſemble of ſhepherdes and other herdes.

In this yere alſo, for ſo muche as in thoſe dayes in diuers places of Fraunce, a fonde prophecy was brought vp amonge the common people, that ſhepherdes and herds ſhould win the holy lande: Than they aſſembled them ſelf, in diuers places and companies, and laſtlie came together at Paris. Where they were ſo many in number, by reaſon of other of the cōmon people that fell vnto theym, that the prouoſt of Paris, was not of power to withſtande theym, ſo that they brake priſons, and tooke out ſuch perſons as them pleaſed, and from thens went beggynge and robbyng, til they came into Lāgdocke. Where they fell vpon the Jewes, & robbed them of all ſuch mouables, as they might finde, and ſlew of them alſo. Wherfore the other of the Jewes, fearynge the ſayd cōmons, gathered theim with their wiues and children, to the number of .v. hundred, into a Towre, and thought to defende them and their wiues and childrē from the ſayde herdes. But anon as they had wittinge therof, they aſſaulted the ſaid towre ſo egerly, that in the ende, ſeyng they might not eſcape, for very deſpite, they threw theyr children downe at theyr heads, and after ſlew either other, for they ſhoulde not fall in the handes of theyr enemies, or els to auoyde the peynes of fyre, whiche the herdes had begon to faſten vpon the ſayd towre. Whan the ſayde herdes had thus robbed and ſlayne the Jewes of Langedocke, they departed thens, and yode towarde a countrey called Carcaſſon, entendyng like robberie, as they before had vſed. Wherof the countrey beynge warned, ſtopped and kepte ſo the paſſages, and withſtode them with ſuch power and ſtrength, that they diſſeuered them ſelues by ſmall companies, ſo that many of them wer taken and hanged, and the other fled in ſauegarding them ſelf, and ſo this foolyſhe prophecy, was ended with ſinne and ſhame.

A gre taxe.

Kyng Philip, by meane of euill counſell, ſet a great taſke vpon his commons, that is to meane the fifte part of their mouable goods For ẏ which, conſideryng he had no charge of warres in no place, they murmured & grudged wonder ſore. But how it was, or thys taxe was leuied, he fell in a feuer quarteyne & a great flyxe. Whiche ſickeneſſe fell vpon him, by praier of the commons after the French boke booke, for leuiyng of the ſayd greuous taxe. Than for him was made many ſolempne proceſſions and other prayers. Howbeit, in long proceſſe he died, whan he had languiſhed from the beginnynge of Auguſt, till the .viii. day of January. Upon which day he died, when he had reigued. iiii. yeres, and .vii. monethes and odde daies leauing after him none heire male wherefore the Crowne diſcended vnto his brother Charles Erle of the Marches.

Francia.

¶ Charles the fift.

Carolus the .v or Charles ẏ youngeſt, of the three brethren, or ſonnes of Philip le Beawe, begã his reigne ouer the Frenchemen, in the moneth of January, and yere of our Lord. M. CCC. and .xxii. and the .xv. yere of the ſeconde Edwarde, yet kynge of Englande, and was crowned at Raynes, the twelfe day of February next enſuynge. After which ſolempnite finiſhed and ended, he in ſhorte proces of tyme after, ſente vnto the .xxii. Jhon, then Pope of Rome, and aſcerteyned hym of the goſſiprede that was betwene him & Blanch his wyfe. Wherfore the examination by the ſayde Pope of Rome, was committed vnto the biſhops of Parys and of Beauuais, and mayſter Godfrey de Bleſſys prothonotair of the coũtrey of Rome The which after due and perfecte examinaciõ in that matter made, they found that Maude counteſſe of Artois and mother to the forenamed queene Blanch, was Godmother vnto kynge Charles hyr huſbande. Of the whiche, when they had made reporte vnto the Biſhop of Rome, he gaue ſentence that the ſayde Matrimony was not legittimat, and commaunded a deuorce, and a ſeperacion to bee made, betwene thoſe two perſons the which was ſhortly after executed. In the ſecond yere of thys Charles, died Roberte Earle of Flaunders without yſſue. wherfore the ſayde Erledome fell into the Frenche kynges handes, ſo that of it he was in proceſſe by the agrement of the lordes of ẏ ſame, put in peaſible poſſeſſion, all bee it the Erle of Neuers made therunto a pretence and title.

And in this yere kyng Charles about the feaſt of S. Mathew in Septembre, maried his ſeconde wyfe, named Mary, the ſiſter of the kynge of Bohemy or Breme, and doughter to Henry Earle of Lucenbourgh and late Emperour of almaigne, named in the line of the Emperours, Henrye the .viii. or after ſome writers the .vii. Alſo in the ſayde yeare, one named Jourdan of the Iſle, a Gaſcoyne borne, and vile of condicions, to whome the foreſayd Pope Jhon, had giuen his nice in mariage for reuerence of his birth, this ſeaſon by the meane of his vile condicions, and ſuch diſhoneſt compaignie as he drew vntill him, he fell into many ſlaunderous vices, ſo that laſtly he was accuſed of rape and murder, and of felony. Of the whiche he was at length in .xviii. articles by due proufe made, conuicte by the lawe, and iudged to bee hanged. But the kyng (at the requeſt of the Pope of Rome, and for the honour of his bloud) graũted to him a Charter, and perdoned him of al former tranſgeſſiõs. But that not withſtanding, he in proceſſe of time, fell or retourned vnto his olde accuſtomed condicions. And emong other great crymes by him executed, he ſlew a ſergeaunt of armes, belongynge to the kyng, that to him was ſent in meſſage. For whiche murder and other deſtable dedes, he was newlie accuſed, and vpon that ſomonid to appere at Paris, before the kyng and his counſell. At whiche day of apperance, he came to the ſayde Citie with a great compaignie, and ſome noble men, whiche were to him nere of kynne, and excuſed him to the vttermoſte of their powers. But agaynſt hym, and to accuſe him, came many other lordes and barons. Of whiche, the Marques of Ampton or Dampton with his ſonne, were chief, that put cauſes of cõplaynt agaynſt hym. The whiche made ſuche proues and declaracions agaynſt the ſayd Iourdan, that he was committed to the caſtelet of Paris, and there to remayne as a priſoner. And in proceſſe of time ſuch matters and treſpaſſes were proued vpon him, that he by auctoritee of a parliament holden at Compeyng, was laſtly iudged to die. And ſoone after, that is to meane the ſeuenth day of Maye, he was drawen to the Gibbet of Parys, and there hanged.

In the third yere of his reigne this Charles gaue vnto the Erle of Neuers, that before time hadde made clayme to the Earledome of Flaunders, the ſayde Erledome, the whiche of the Flemminges, ⁊ inhabitauntes of that countrey, was well and ioyouſly receyued. Then he in ſhort while after gaue vnto the townes of Gaunt, Bruges, Ipre, and other, diuers pryuiliges and grauntes, to theyr great auauntage and profit. But it was not longe after yͭ he wanne of them, as much grudge and hatred, as he tofore had loue ⁊ good wyll, and all for a taxe, that he ſet vpon the dwellers of Bruges, and the countrey neare ther vnto, and ſpecially of them that dwelled in the countrey. For they thoughte that theyr charge, exceded far the charge of the dwellers wythin yͤ towne. Wherefore by ſecrete meanes, they appoynted a day of aſſemble emonge them ſelfe, and ſodaynly well armed, entred the towne of Bruges, and ſlew therin diuers of the Erles ſeruauntes and ſome of the borough maiſters of the ſayde towne, ſuche as they ſuſpected to be of the ſayd counſel of the leuiyng of the ſayd taxe.

In the .iiii. yere of hys reygne, this Charles, after the deathe of Mary his ſecond wyfe, by diſpenſacion of Pope Ihon, the .xxii. he maried Iane, his coſin germayn, the doughter of Lewes, Earle of Eurour, and vncle vnto this king Charles, or brother, to his father Philip le Beawe.

IN this aboue ſayd .iiii. yere, the Quene of England, ⁊ ſyſter to Charles of Fraunce, was ſent to treate an vnite and peace, betwene her lord and her brother for the warres made in Gaſcoyne, as before is towched in the .xv. yeare of Edwarde the ſeconde, her lorde and huſbande, and there taried, and retourned, as aboue in the ſayd yere is expreſſed.

In this yere alſo, the Earle of Flaunders forenamed, for ſuſpection that he hadde to Roberte of Flaūders his vncle, leſt he for hys ſynguler auauntage, woulde ſupplant him of that Earledome, he made letters vnto ẏ gouernours of the towne, where the ſayd Robert was reſiaunt and abydyng, that they ſhold put hym to death. But by the warnynge of his olde and truſty freend, the Erles chaūcellour, he was warned, and ſo auoyded ẏ towne. For this, greate malice and rancoure, aroſe beetwene this Robert an the Earle, which was not ſhortly pacified. But it was not longe after that another taxe or impoſicion, was liuied of the townes of Gaunte, Bruges, Ipre, and other townes of Flaunders, the which taxe was leuied, in recompenſement of ſuch warres made vpon Flaunders by Philip le Beawe, or more directlie for paymente of .xii. thouſande pounde, awarded by Joſelin the Cardinall, as before is ſhewed, in the ſeconde yere of the fift Philip, that the Flemyngs ſhould pay to the French king, for biyng of their peace. Of this taxe to bee leuiers, or gatherers, was aſſygned, the principall men of the ſayd Townes, the whiche by theyr demeanure, in the leuiyng therof, demeaned them in ſuche wiſe, that they ranne in great hatred of the common people, In ſo muche that they accuſed them and ſayde, that they had leuied or gathered much more then the ſayd taxe amoūted: wherfore they deſyred of the erles counſayll, that the ſayde perſons might be called to accompte. But this requeſt might not bee opteyned, whiche cauſed the commons to runne in further grudge & murmure. An other thing alſo cauſed ſuſpection, for the erles counſayle and the ſayde collectours had ſo many ſecrete aſſembles. At length when the Erles counſayle apperceyued the murmure of the commons, they with the collectours condeſcended for a traine, to haue taken certayne capitaynes of the ſayde commons, and ſayde that at Turnay at a day aſſigned, the ſaid collectours ſhoulde yelde vp their accoumpt. At which day, the Erle in proper perſon, came vnto the ſayd towne of Turnay. And there when the Erle with the other of his counſayle, ſhould haue executed theyr purpoſed entent, how it was by ſome warnynge or monicion, that the commons had, they withſtode the Erle and his compaygnie, and in the ende ſlew many of their enemies, and tooke the Erle and put him in ſure kepyng, wythin the towne of Bruges.

But in this ſkirmiſhe, by meane of the earles partie, a great parte of the foreſayd towne was brent. Wherefore the Towne toke partie with the Flemmynges, and were a greate cauſe, that the erle was taken and putte from his entente. Then the foreſayde cōmons, to the more diſpleaſure of the erle, admitted for their lord and capitayne, Robet the vncle of the erle foreſaid, and emong them reputed him for Earle of Flaunders. The which ſo takyng vpon him, deliuered from pryſon, hys frende the Erles Chauncellour, which (as aboue is ſayde) had deliuered him from former daunger and made him chiefe of his counſayle. But to all this was yͤ towne of Gaunt repugnaunt, in ſo much that mortal war began to ſourde betwene the ſayde towne, and the towne of Burges and other. And ſo farfourth continued, that ſhortlie after the people of Gaunt, and of the other townes, mette with theym of Bruges in playne batail, & fought cruelly. But in the ende, they of Gaunt chaſed them of Bruges, and ſlew of theym beyonde fiue hũdreth men. But yet the Erle was neuer the rather deliuered. After this the Frenche kyng ſent vnto them of Bruges, requiring them in courteous maner, yͭ they woulde ſet theyr Erle at libertie. But they ſent the meſſangers agayne, without ſpede of theyr meſſage.

In this while died Charles de Waloys, brother vnto Philyp le Beawe, and vncle vnto this king Charles, the whiche languyſhed longe in a conſumpcion or he died, in ſo much that the opinion of the people was, that he was ſo puniſſhed for the iniury & malice, that he bare towarde Enguerram, the which as ye haue before harde, in the fyrſt yere of this kynge, was put vnto death. And the rather this fame ranne vpon the ſayde Charles, for ſo much as in yͤ tyme of his ſickeneſſe, he gaue great almeſſe. And to ſuche perſons, as he gaue or ſente his almeſſe vnto, he willed them, as wel to pray for the ſoule of the ſayde Enguerram, as for hys owne heale. This Charles de Waloyes, lefte after hym a ſonne named Philip, for ſo much as this Charles, nowe kynge of Frãũce died without iſſue, by fauour of the lordes of that region, was made kyng of Fraunce, and put the right and title of Edward the thyrd, then kyng of England the ſonne of Iſabel and doughter of Philip le Beawe, whiche Iſabell by diſſent was rightful enheritour of the crowne of Fraunce, For whiche title, was after cruell warre, betwene the ſaid Edward and Phylip, as in the ſtory of the ſayd Edward ſhal appere. In the fift yere of king Charles yͤ Burgh maſters and Skepins, that is to meane, the rule of the Towne of Bruges, deliuered their Erle and ſet him at large, vpon certayn cõdicions folowing, the which to be obſerued, they cauſed him to be ſolemply ſworne. Fyrſt, that after yͭ day, he ſhould not puniſh nor hurt anie of the land of Flaunders, for any diſpleaſure to hym dooen, or any of his ſeruauntes or counſail ſince the time that he was Erle, concernyng any cauſe of theyr rebellion. Secondaryly, that he ſhould not abrydge nor myniſhe, any of theyr liberties that they of old time haue had, or by him newly to them graunted. Thirdly that in all groſſe matters, that concerned the gouernaũce of his realme ſuch as he knew wel diuers of thẽ to be expert therin, that he ſhould nothing conclude or do, without theyr aduiſes and aſſentes. And fourthli, that after yͭ dai he ſhould neuer vſe the counſayl of yͤ abbot of Verſellay, whiche they knewe for their dedely enemy,for ſomuch as they before time had ſlayn his father, named Peter Flote, or Flere in the battayle of Couetray as in the.xvi.yeare of Philippe le Beawe, is before ſhewed,how be it,the name of the ſayde Peter is not there expreſſed. After whiche articles with other, firmelie by yͤ erle promiſed,to be kept & holden, he was deliuered and ſet at large.

In the ſixt yere of the reygne of this Charles,a greate diſſencion and variaunce aroſe,betwene the Dolphine of Vien and they Duke of Sauoy, ſo that mortall battayle enſued vpon the ſame. In whiche muche people were ſlayne vpon bothe parties. But in the ende the Dolphin of Vien had the better,and tooke as priſoners in the fielde,the duke of Burgoyne, and the Erle of Aucerne, with other noble men.In this yere alſo the Gaſcoynes with the Engliſh men,made war vpon the borders of Fraunce.Agaynſt whome king Charles ſente a coſyn of his, named ſir Alphons de Spayne.But he ſpent the king great good, and retourned with litle worſhip into Fraunce,where he died ſhortly after.Then the king ſent agayn the ſayd Gaſcoyns,the Erle of Ewe, and ſir Roberte Brathran, then marſhall of Fraunce,with diuers other noble men. In whiche ſeaſon, the Gaſcoynes with the ſayd Englyſhmen,had gotten the Caſtell of a towne, ſtandinge in the countrey of Poytiew or Poytiyers,named ſaynt Oyng, within which towne the ſayde Erle, and other the nobles of Fraunce wer lodged:ſo that betwene them dailie cruell aſſautes were exercyſed, to the great hurt of both parties. Laſtly betwene them was a daye of battayl in playne feelde accorded, where the Frenche menne to thentent to haue the aduauntage of the ſayd feelde,and there to enbattayle them ſelf to there mooſt auauntage, the daye of the ſayde oppointement,iſſued of the towne and yoode to the place aſſygned, which was a good diſtaunce from the foreſayd towne,and there taried their enemies. But the Gaſcoynes entendynge an other purpoſe, yode ſtreyght vnto the foreſayde towne,and knowynge it to be without great deffẽce,aſſauted and ſhortly gat it,and ſet it on fire not ſparynge Churches nor other places of religion, (as affirmeth the French booke) and that doen returned vnto the foreſayd Caſtel in proceſſe of time after, retourned agayne into Guyan. When kynge Charles was aſcertayned of this deluſion,he was greuouſly diſconted agaynſt the Gaſcoynes, and maneſſed them very ſore.But in the moneth of Decẽber ſhortly enſuynge, he was taken with a greeuous ſickenes,ſo that he died vpon Candelmas euin folowyng at Boys in Vincent,and was enterred at Saynt Deniſe,when he had reygned fiue yeres and odde dayes, leauynge after him none heyre of his body,except that the quene was then with childe:whiche childe died ſoone after yͤ birth. Wherfore ſome queſtions,for that kyngdome were moued,as before touched in the ende of the fourth yeare of this Charles, and after ſhalbe forther expreſſed.

Anglia.

Edwarde the thyrde.

Edwarde the thyrd of that name, & ſonne of Edwarde the ſeconde, and of Iſabel ẏ only doughter and child of Philip le Beaw, or Philip the fayre, father to Charles laſt kinge of Fraunce, began his reigne as kyng of Englande, his father yet liuyng, the ſix and twenty daie of January, in the ende of the yere of grace, a thouſande three hundred and ſix and twenty, and the fourthe yere of Charles the fifte, laſte kyng of Fraunce, and was crowned at weſtmynſter, vpon the day of the purificacion of our Lady next enſuyng.

In his beginnyng, came forth plentie and gracious happes, for the earthe tooke plentye, the ayre temper, the ſea quietneſſe, and to the Church grew peace.

The liberties of the citie of Lõdon confirmed.

In his firſt yere, he confirmed the liberties and fraunchiſes of the citie of London, and ordeyned that the Maior for the time beeynge, ſhoulde ſitte in all places of iudgemente, within the liberty of the ſame for chief Juſtice, the kinges perſon onely except, and that euery Alderman that hadde bene Maior, ſhould be Juſtice of peace in all London and Middeſex, and euerich Alderman, that had not be Maior, ſhoulde bee Juſtice of peace within his owne warde. And alſo he graunted to the Citizins, the fee ferme of London, for three hundred pounde, and that they ſhould not bee conſtrayned to go oute of the citie to fight or defende the land for any nede. Alſo that after that daye the fraunchiſes of the Citie, ſhould not be ſeaſed into the kynges handes, but onely for treaſon & rebellyon dooen, by the whole Citie. And Southwerke was admitted to bee vnder the correction and rule of the Citie, and the Maior of London, to be baylyffe of Southwerke, and the Maior to choſe & ordeyne ſuche a baylyffe of that borough as him liked, whiche ordinaunce endureth to this daye.

In the moneth of Aprill, for ſo muche as meanes were made by the frere prechours or the blacke freres, for the deliuery of kynge Edward the ſecond out of priſon, therefore he was had oute of the Caſtell of Kenelworth, and conueyghed vnto the caſtel of Berkley. where after aboute Saynct Mathewes tide, the ſaid Edward by the meanes of ſir Roger Mortimer was miſerably ſlayne.

Edw the miſe ſlayn

Of this Edwarde are like opinions, as wer of Thomas of Lãcaſter, which I referre to god his iudgement: For certayne it is, ẏ for his former wylde and inſolent liuyng, he toke great repentaũce. And ſo he had great cauſe, for duryng his reygne there was headded & put to death by iudgement, vpon eyght and twenty Barons, and knightes, ouer the noble men that were ſlayne in Scotland, by his infortunitee.

Kyng Edward as yet beynge of tender age, not paſſyng .xv. yeres, hearyng of the greate pride & preſumpcion of the Scottes, & how thei daily warred vpon ẏ borders and entred the land, in brennyng & ſpoylyng his people, aſſembled his people, about Eaſter, & ſo ſped him toward Scotland. In which meane time the Scottes wer entred the land, and were comen as farre as Stanhop in Wiridale, and had lodged them in the woddes of Stanhop Parke, in dyuers buſhementes. Whereof the kynge beynge enfourmed, made ſuch prouiſion, that he beſet them rounde aboute, and truſted well to haue brought them vnder his ſubiection. But when the kynge thought to be of them moſt ſure, by treaſon of ſome of his hoſt, the Scottes were cleane eſcaped and retourned into Scotland: Wherof the fame ranne vpon ſir Roger Mortimer. But how ſo it was, yͤ kyng loſt that iourney, & retourned into Edglãd, wͭ litle worſhip.

And here ye ſhall vnderſtande, that to this day the olde Maior, and Shriffes, that is to meane Hamunde Chickwell, Benet Fulham, and Jhon Canſton, ſtode in office til the day folowing of Simond and Jude, whiche was almoſt the ful of the fyrſt yere, of the ſayd Edward the third. And then for the reſidue of yͤ fyrſt yere, and for the more party of the ſeconde yere, were electe and charged the Maior and Shyriffes folowing.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxvi.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxvii.

Rychard Betayne. { Henry Darcy. Jhon Hawteyne. } Anno. i.

IN the ende of the fyrſt yeare of thys king Edward, and beginnyng of this Mayres yeare, the kyng after Chiſtemas maried dame Philip, the Erles doughter of Henawde, in the Citie of Yorke, in the euin of the Conuerſcion of Saynt Paule, or the. xxiiii. day of January.

parli
at of
hamp

And ſoone after, the kynge aboute rhe feaſt of Pentecoſt, helde his Parlament at Northamptō. At the which parlament, by euill cōſayle, wherof ſir Robert Mortimer, and the olde Queene bare the blame, the kynge made with the Scottes an vnprofitable and a diſhonorable peace. For fyrſt he releaſed to them theyr feauty and homage. Alſo he deliuered vnto theym olde aunciente writinges, ſealed with the ſeales of the kyng of Scottes & of diuers lordes of yͤ lande, bothe ſpirituall and temporall, with many other charters and patentes, by the whiche the kyng of Scottes obliged them to be feodaries, vnto the Crowne of Englande. At whiche ſeaſon alſo was deliuered certayne iewelles, which before times, had ben won from the Scottes, by kynges of England: Emonge the which the blacke croſſe of Scotlande, is ſpecially named. And not alonely the kynge, by his ſiniſtre counſayle, loſte hys tytle and right, that he had to the realme of Scotlande, as far as the ſayd counſail might helpe it, but alſo, all Lordes and Barons, and al other men of Englande, that had any landes or

How king Edward yͤ thyrde, releaſed to yͤ Scottes their homage and feauty.

rentes, within Scotlande, loſte theyr right in like maner, excepte they woulde dwell vpon the ſayde landes, and become the kynge of Scottes lyge men. And ſoone after was concluded a mariage, betwene Dauyd le Bruze, ſonne of Robert le Bruze, and Jane the kynges ſyſter, whiche of diuers wryters is ſurnamed Jane of the Towre, or Johan of towers.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxvii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxviii.

Hamond Chickwel. { Symon Fraunces. / Henry Combmartyn. } Anno.ii

AND in this yeare, which at thys day was the ſeconde yere of the kynge, Dauid foreſaid the ſonne of Roberte le Bruze, then kynge of Scottes, maried vpon the daye of Marye Magdeleyne, at the towne then of Berwike, the forenamed Jane, ſiſter vnto the kyng of Englande. But it was not long or the Scottes, in diſpite of the Englyſhmen, called hir Jane make peace. And alſo to theyr more deriſion, they made diuers truffes, roũdes, and ſonges, of the which one is ſpecially remembred, as foloweth.

Longe beerdis hartles
Paynted hodes witles
Gay cottes graceles
Maketh England thryfteles.

Whiche ryme, as ſayth Guydo was made by the Scottes, principallye for the deformite of clothynge, that at thoſe dayes was vſed by Englyſhmen. Then the kynge at hys Parlyament, holden at Salyſburye, made ſir Roger Mortimer, erle of the March and ſir Jhon of Eltham, his owne brother, he made Erle of Cornewayll. Where after, the ſayde ſyr Roger, tooke muche more vpon him, then other lordes were contented with, ſo that by yͤ kynges mother and hym, all thynge was ruled and guyded. And ſuche lordes as before tyme were aſſygned to haue the rule and guydynge of the kyng, as the Earle of Kent, ſir Edmund of Wodſtoke, the kinges vncle, the Earle of Lancaſtre, the Erle marſhall, with diuers Byſhops and Barons and knightes, to the number of twelue, in ſhorte proces of time for the more partie were ſette by, ſo that the alonely rule of the land, reſted in the quene and the ſayde Roger. By meane wherof many and great thynges of the Realme, grew out of order, which were tedious to reherſe.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxviii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxix.

Jhon Graunt ham. { Rycharde Lazar. / Henry gyſours. } Anno.iii.

In this.iii. yeare, the aboue ſayd ſyr Edmũde of Wodſtoke erle of Kent, entending the reformacion of the miſſe order of the realme, beynge enfourmed that hys brother ſyr Edward was in lyfe, deuyſed certayne letters touchyng the delyuerye of his ſayd brother, and ſent them to his ſaide brother: of whiche dede, he was ſhortly after accuſed, and by authoritie of a parlement holden at Weſtmynſter aboute Penthecoſt folowinge, he for that dede was iudged to haue his head ſmitten of: Whereof execution was doone, the fiue and twentie day of May folowing, in the foreſaide citie of Wincheſter. And ſoone after kinge Edwarde ſailed into Fraunce, and dyd homage vnto Philippe de Ualoys, then newly made king of Fraũce, for the Duchye of Guyan, in the towne of Amias. After whiche homage doen, he was richely feaſted of the French king, and ſolaced in diuers maner of fourmes, as by iuſtes, huntinge, hawkyng, and manye pleaſures, and then in louinge maner tooke his leaue of the kinge, and ſo retourned into Englande. The fyftene daye of June folowinge, was borne the kinges firſte ſonne, and at Wodſtoke chriſtened and named Edwarde, whiche in proceſſe of time did grow to a noble and famous man, and is moſt comunely called in all chronicles prince Edwarde. Of whome in this ſtorie ſome excellent dedes ſhall be expreſſed.

ward ỹ
ſonne
dward
thyrde.

In the moneth of October vpon the.xvii. day, on the euen of S. Luke, ſyr Roger Mortimer before named, by meanes of ſir William Mountague, ſir Rafe Staforde, ſir Jhon Neuile and other, by a compaced meane was taken in the caſtell of Notyngham, notwithſtandinge that the keyes of the ſaide Caſtell were dayly and nightly vnder his warde and keping, the king and the queene, the old queene, with diuers other nobles, then being in the ſame Caſtell lodged. The maner of the takynge of thys Earle ſyr Roger Mortimer J paſſe ouer, for the diuerſitie that J haue ſene therof of ſundrye wryters. But many agren, that he wyth ſyr Symonde of Bedforde and other, were in that nyghte taken, and after ſent vnto the Towre of London, and there putte in ſtraygh t keepyng. Then the kynge in proceſſe after, called a Parlement at London, for the refourmation of manye thynges than miſordered in the realme, by meane of the foreſayd ſyr Roger, as the commune fame went then.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxix.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxx.

Simon Swalande.	Robert of Ely. Thomas Harworde	Anno.iiii.

AND in this fourth yeare, and ende of the thirde yeare of this king, during the foreſaid Parlement, as aboue is touched, at London the foreſaide ſir Roger Mortimer, was accuſed before the Lordes of the Parlement, of theſe articles with other, wherof fiue I finde expreſſed. And firſt was layde vnto hys charge, that by his meane ſir Edwarde of Carnaruan by moſt tyranous death in the Caſtell of Barkeley was murthered.

Secondarely, that to the kinges great diſhonour and damage, the Scottes by his meanes and treaſon, eſcaped from the king at the parke on Stanhope, which then ſhoulde haue fallen in the kinges daunger, ne had bene the fauoure of the ſaide Roger, to theym then ſhewed. Thyrdelye, to him was layde, that he for the execution of the ſaide treaſon, receyued of the captaine of the ſaid Scottes named ſir James doughlas, greate ſummes of money. And alſo for like mede, he hadde to the kinges great diſhonour, and hurte of his realme, cōcluded a peace betwene the kinge and the Scottes, and cauſed to be deliuered vnto theim the charter or indenture called Ragman, with many other thinges vnto the Scottes great aduauntage, and impoueriſhynge of this realme of Englande.

Fourthlye, there was layde vnto him, that where by ſiniſter and vnlawful meanes contrary to the kinges pleaſure & wyll, or aſſent of the lordes of the kinges counſaile, he had gotten into his poſſeſſion much of yͤ kinges treaſure, he vnſkilfully waſted and miſpent it. By reaſon whereof, the kinge was in neceſſitie, and driuen perforce to aſſay his frendes.

Fiftelye, that he alſo had impropered vnto hym diuers wardes, belonging to yͤ king, to his great lucre and the kinges great hurt, and that he was more ſecret with Queene Iſabell the kinges mother, then was to Goddes pleaſure, or the kinges honoure. The whyche artycles wyth other, againſt him proued, he was by authoritie of the ſaide Parlement, iudged to death. And vpon ſainct Andrewes euen next enſuyng, at London he was drawen and hanged. About the beginning of Auguſt folowing, ſir Edwarde Bayloll the ſonne of ſyr Jhon Bayloll ſometyme king of Scottes, by meanes before purchaſed, opteyned ſuch fauour, that with the aide of ſyr Henry Beaumount, ſir Dauid of Stroley, ſir Geffrey Moubray, & with the aide of two M. Engliſhmē entred into Scotland by water, wher in ſhort proceſſe drew to thē ſuch multitude of Scottes, yͭ the ſaid Edward was lord of a great hoſt, & ſo kept hys way, till he came to a place called Gledismore, or after ſome writers Crakiſmore: where he was encoūtred of the power of Scotland, & fought ther a cruel bataile, in the which wer ſlain great multitude of Scottes. By teaſon wherof, he was crowned king of Scottes at the town of Stone ſhortly after. And after met wͭ king Edwarde at Newcaſtell, & there vnto hym made homage, and feawtye for the land of Scotlande.

Sir R
Morty
drawe
hange

olte
er yͤ
tes.

Edwar
Baylol
homag
kinge
warde
Scotlan

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxx. Anno domini.M.CCC.xxxi.

Jhon Pountnay. { Jhon Morkyng.
Andrewe Awbrey. } Anno.v.

IN thys Mayres yere, and.vi.yeare of the kyng, in the moneth of Julye, for ſo much as the Scottes had buſyed them to haue ſlayne Edward Bayloll their king, and him had conſtrained to auoyde his lande, or els to kepe him in ſome ſtrong hold, tyll he might by his frendes and lieges bee ſuccoured, kynge Edwarde for the ſame entent, with a ſtrong power pearſed the realme of Scotlande, and after layde hys ſiege vnto the towne of Barwike.

Upon the nynetene daye of the foreſayde moneth of Julye, the Scottes with a greate power, purpoſynge to remoue the ſayde ſyege, came towarde the ſayde towne. whereof kinge Edwarde beinge enformed, made towarde theim, and at a place called Halidon hill, gaue to the ſaid Scottes battaile, and of theym hadde triumphaunt victorie, in ſo muche, that he ſlewe of theym, as teſtifieth diuers writers, ſeuen Earles, nine hundred knightes and banerettes, foure hundred eſquiers, and vpō.xxxii.M. of the common people, and of Engliſhmen were ſlaine but onely fiftene perſons.

After whiche victorie thus by the kinge optayned, the captaine of Barwike vpon the morowe folowinge, being S.Margaretes daye, yelded vnto the kynge the ſaide towne with the caſtell. And that done, king Edwarde betoke the guyding therof, with al other Caſtels and townes within that land, vnto the forenamed ſir Edwarde Bayloll, as kynge of the Scottes, and ſhortly after returned into Englande. Then Dauid the ſonne of Robert le Bruze, beynge as before is ſaide, kinge of Scottes, was conſtrained wyth his wife, ſecreatlye to ſaile into Fraunce, & thither was brought by a Flemming named Marcuel, (as teſtifieth the Frenche chronicle) where, of Philip de Valoys then French king, the ſaid Dauid with Jane of the towre his wife, was receyued. And for their comfort the ſaide Frenche king vnto them gaue the caſtell of Gaylard, til fortune to them wold be more frendlye.

This yeare alſo as witneſſeth the ſayde Frenche chronicle, the French king ſent vnto the kynge of Englande the biſhop of Beauuais, and the highe Conſtable of Fraunce, whyche ſhewed vnto kinge Edwarde, that their ſoueraigne Lorde entended a voyage into the holy lande, and required him of his ayde and company, for the performaūce of the ſaid iourney. Whereunto the kinge gaue anſwere vnto that requeſt, than when the French kinge had performed all ſuche condicions as he before had promiſed to doe, then he ſaid, he ſhould be contented to geue ſuche anſwere vnto that requeſt by theim in his name made, as thereunto ſhoulde be conuenient. And more he added vnto the ſame, that he maruayled greatly that the ſaid French kyng entended any ſuche voyage, tyll he had clearely acquited him of the ſayde promiſe & couenaunt. Wyth whiche anſwer the French king was nothyng contented, ſo that malyce and murmoure grewe, and encreaſed betwene theim daylye. And an occaſion of thys ſharpe aunſwere was, for ſo muche as king Edwarde was credible enformed, that the Frenche kinge had victayled and manned tenne greate ſhyppes, to haue ſayled into Scottelande, and there to haue warred, the which by tempeſt, were wether dryuen into Flaunders, and ſo ſore beaten with the Sea, that after they had muche of theyr ſtuffe, at the hauen of Sluce, they were compelled of neceſſitye, to retourne wythout worſhippe into Fraũce. This with other, kyndled ſuche a deadlye hate, betwene theſe two Chriſten Prynces, that muche chriſten bloude in proceſſe of time folowynge, was for theyr quarrels ſhedde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxi. Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxii.

Jhon Preſton. { Jhon Hamond.
William Hanſarde. } Anno. vii.

IN this. vii. yeare, in the winter ſeaſon, as ſaith Guydo, in the moneth of Nouember, the king yode againe towarde Scotlande, and held his Chriſtmas at Yorke. And after the ſolempnitie of that high feaſt ended, he ſpedde him into Scotlande, where he layde ſiege vnto the caſtell of Kylbridge, and laſtlye wanne it by ſtrength, and ſet the countrey in ſome quietneſſe. And after retourned to Newe caſtell vpon Tyne, and taryed there a certayne of tyme, and held there his feaſt of Pentecoſt with great royaltie. Whither within ſhorte ſpace after, came ſyr Edwarde Bayloll kyng of Scottes, & vpon the day of S. Geruaſy & Prothaſy, or ẏ. xix. day of June, made his homage vnto king Edwarde, and in preſence of many noble mẽ of bothe landes, ſware vnto hym feautie or fidelity. And that done, he returned to Scotland, & king Edward vnto Yorke, & ſo to Winſore. Then were all ſuch lordes of Englande, as before time in Edward the ſecondes daies diſceaſed of ſuch lands as thei had in Scotland, reſtored againe to their ſaid poſſeſſions, & for them made theyr homage to the kinge of Scottes, ſauynge their allegeaunce, vnto their naturall ſoueraigne lorde.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxii. Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxiii.

Jhon Pountnay. { Jhon Hamonde.
Wyllyam Hanſarde. } Anno. viii.

AND in this. viii. yeare, certaine ambaſſadours were ſent from Philip de Ualoyes Kynge of Fraunce, as the biſhoppe of Thuroyne, and the Lord of Ferrey & Peynguy, for to conclude certayn artycles of varyaunce, betwene their lorde, and the kinge of Englande. But their purpoſe tooke none effecte, except that the kynge graunted to ſend vnto the Frēch king ſhortly after, a certayn of his lordes to haue further communicacion with him, touching the ſaid articles. The whiche promiſe he fulfilled, as apeared in yͤ next yere enſuynge.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxiii. Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxiiii.

Reignold at Conduit. { Jhon Hinkſtone. / Walter Turke. } Anno. ix.

IN this. ix. yeare, fel exceding plentie of raine, and therevpon enſued great moreyne of beaſtes. And in the moneth of December the king entred agayne into Scotlande, and helde his Chriſtmaſſe at the caſtel of Rokkiſborough, the whiche he cauſed to be newelye repaired. After thinges there ordered vnto hys pleaſure, he retourned into Englande. And ſoone after he ſent the archbiſhoppe of Caunterburye, ſyr Philip de Mountague, and ſyr Geffrey Scrope, vnto the French king, to yͤ entent to haue cōcluded an amitie betwene and the French king, which before him was moued by the Frēch ambaſſade, as before is ſhewed in the viii. yere of his raigne. But when theſe ſayde lordes were landed in Fraunce, they were long delayed or they might come to the kinges preſence, in ſo muche that they ſayd playnely vnto ſuche Lordes of Fraunce, as were aſſygned by the Frenche kynge, to paſſe the time with theim, that they ſuppoſed that it was not the kinges pleaſure to ſpeake with theim.

By meane of whiche wordes, they were ſhortly after broughte vnto the Kynges preſence, of whome they were receyued with ioyous countenaunce, and ſo continued by a certen of tyme, in furtherynge of theyr ambaſſade, ſo that in proceſſe of time, a concluſion of peace to bee had betwene Englande and Fraunce, was accorded, and ſo farre furth ſpedde, that Proclamacion therof ſhould haue been made in Paris, and the cōtrey ther about, vpon the morow folowyng. But how it came in the kinges minde, the Engliſhe ambaſſadours were ſcantlye retourned vnto theyr lodgynges, when they were agayne ſent for, and further enformed then, that the kynges pleaſure and mynde was, to haue Dauid late kynge of Scottes, to bee included within the ſame peace, and that he ſhoulde agayne bee reſtored vnto his kyngdome. Whereunto it was aunſwered by the Engliſhe Ambaſſadours, that theyr commiſſion ſtretched not ſo farre, nor that theyr Prynce had geuen vnto theym anye ſuche authoritye. Wherefore, all the former communication was reuoked, and adnulled, and they retourned into Englande, wythout anye concluſion takynge.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxiiii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxv.

Reygnolde at Cõduite. { Walter Mordon
Richard Upton. } Anno.x.

AND in this tenth yere, for ſo muche as no concluſion of vnitie, and peace might bee hadde betwene the kinges of Englande and of Fraunce, therefore warre was proclaymed vpon bothe parties. The whiche was greatlye procured by the meane of ſyr Robert of Artoys, as in the ſtorye of Philippe de Ualoys ſhalbe after ſhewed. Then eyther Prynce ſought wayes and meanes, howe either of theym might diſcontent other, in ſo much that the French king ſent ſoone after into Scotlande a crewe of Frenche men, to ayde ſuche enemies as kyng Edward there had. By reaſon wherof the ſaide Scottes made ſharpe warre vpon the kinges ſeruauntes and frendes, and put the land to great vexation and trouble, in ſo muche that the kinge was forced to aſſemble his power, and to ſpede him againe thither.

Then aboute Midſomer, the king entred Scotland by ſea, and warred vppon the Scottes and Frenchmen. Of the which no notary battayle is ſpecified, except in that iourney the kynge ſubdued hys enemies, and tooke there dyuers pryſoners. Amonge the whiche one called Earle of Morret, a Frenchman was chyefe, that after was with other in proceſſe of time, there delyuered in exchaunge for the Earle of Namur, another Frenche lord, whiche than was taken by gyle of Scottes, as he was comming towarde S. Jhons towne, for to ayde the party of king Edwarde. When king Edward had agayne pacified the Scottes, and taken homage of ſuche as before rebelled, he then (as teſtifieth yͤ French chronicle) ſtabliſhed the forenamed Edwarde Bayloll, as kynge of Scottes, and committed the rule of the lande vnto him, as he before times had done. Then the Scottes for the greate kindneſſe whiche they hadde founde in the king, and in recompenſement of the greate charge, whiche he ſundrie times had had, in the defending of their enemies, graunted and bounde theim vnto him, and to his heyres, kinges of Englãde, that they ſhoulde ayde and aſſiſte hym agaynſt all Prynces. And when ſoeuer he had warre, or any kyng of Englande, beyng rightful enheritour, againſt any prince other within his lande, or wythout, the Scottes of theyr proper coſtes and expenſes, ſhoulde finde thre hundred horſemen well armed, and a thouſande fotemen, well and ſufficiently arrayed, for the warre, the which .xiii. hūdred men, the Scottes ſhoulde wage for an whole yere. And if the king of Englande ended not hys war within the yeare, then he to hyre and wage the ſayde Scottes, as he doeth the other of hys ſouldyours. After whyche grauntes made, and bondes for the ſuertye thereof receyued by the kynge, as witneſſeth the Frenche chronicle, the king leauing at Edenborough a certayne of hys knyghtes, to ſtrength the Sottes agaynſt the Frenchmen, whiche compaſſed all the wayes they myght, to bringe Dauid the ſonne of Roberte le Bruze, in poſſeſſion of that lande, he ſhortlye after retourned into England.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxv. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxvi.

Jhon Pountnay. { William Brikelſworth. Jhon Northall. } Anno.xi.

ANd in this .xi. yere the kinge remembringe the greate charge that he had with the warre in Scotlande, and alſo for the charge that he daylye had in Guyan, and more contynuallye ſhoulde haue, in defending of the Frenchmen and wynnynge of hys hyght, he therefore gathered treaſure vppon euerye ſyde, and by diuers and ſundrye wayes, whereof the maner is not expreſſed. But ſo greate plentye came to his vſe, that it was ſcant throughoute the realme. By reaſon of whiche ſcarcitie, victayle and muche other mercymonies, were excedynge good chepe. For at London a quarter of wheate was ſolde for two ſhyllynges, a fat oxe for a noble, a fat ſhepe for ſixe pence, and eyghte pence, ſyxe peions for a penye, a fat goſe for two pence, a pygge for a penye, ſo all other victaile after the ſame rate.

lles
hepe

Thys yeare alſo, vppon holye Rode day, or the fourtene daye of September, dyed Syr Jhon of Eltham Earle of Cornewayle, and brother vnto the kynge, wythoute yſſue, wherefore the ſayde Earledome fel into the kinges hande. Thys noble manne lyeth buryed in the Churche of Weſtmynſter, vppon the ryghte hande of the hygh aulter.

In thys yeare alſo, appeared Stella cometa, whiche is to ſay: in our Englyſhe tongue, the blaſynge Starre, in an houge ſtreamynge maner, whereof many and diuers conſtructions were hadde among the common people, whiche I paſſe ouer.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxvi. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxvii.

Henry Darcy. { Walter Neale. Nycholas Crane. } Anno.xii.

In this .xii. yeare, the king held his Parlyament, at Weſtminſter, about the tyme of lent. Duryng the which, he made of the Earledome of Cornewayle a duchy, and gaue it with the earledome of Cheſter vnto Edward hys ſonne. And at this Parlament were made ſixe earles, that is to ſay: of Derby, of Northampton, of Huntindon, of Saliſburye, of Glouceter, and of Suff. as Henrye of Lancaſter, was created Earle of Derbye, or after ſome wryters of Leyceter. William de Bothum, Earle of Northampton, William de Clinton Earle of Huntyngdon, Wyllyam de Mountague Earle of Saliſbury, Hugh of Audeley erle of Glouceter, and Roberte of Vfforde Earle of Suffolke. And in this parlament was an acte enacted, that no man ſhuld weare no maner of ſylke in gowne, coate, or doublet, but if he might ſpende of good rent an hundred pounde by yere, whiche acte was not longe holden.

An acte for araye.

In this yere alſo, the kinge among diuers priuileges, graunted vnto the Citezins of London that the offycers of the mayres and ſhyriffes, ſhoulde from that day forwarde, vſe maces of ſyluer parcel gylte.

Maces firſt vſed in the cytye.

The king of Fraunce this yere for ſo muche as he was crediblye enformed, that kinge Edwarde woulde enter the land of Frãce, and to make war vpon the ſame, he therefore made greate purueyaunce to reſiſt him. For the common fame ran then in Fraunce, that king Edwarde entended not only to claime Gaſcoyn & Guyan, but alſo all Frãce, as his proper and rightful enheritaunce, in the right of his mother. Wherfore the French kinge aſſembled an houge hoſt, & cõmitted the rule of it vnto the kinge of Nauerne, and to the earle of Alaſon, brother vnto the ſaid French king. which ſaid capitaines with their people awaited dayly the king of Englandes comming, which them for ẏ yere diſapoynted. But (as teſtifieth the ſame French chronicle) king Edwarde in this while ſente into Flaunders, a knighte called ſir Barnard de Brette, for to treate of an amitie betwen him and the Flemminges. For this cauſe the earle of Flaunders, whiche was verye faſt with the French kyng called a councell to him, to haue their aduice how he might beſt order him ſelfe and his people: In which counſaile were diuers opinions, ſo that manye thought it better for diuers conſiderations, which were long to rehearſe, that the earle ſhould rather prefer the amitie of the king of Englande, then of the kinge of Fraunce. Of whiche opinion was a great furtherer or promoter, a knyghte of Flaunders called Countriſhe: with whome the earle beinge for that cauſed diſcontent, ſent hym to priſon: And ſoone after at the requeſt of the Frenche kyng, whiche he layde vnto his charge, that he had receyued great ſummes of money of the kyng of Englande, for to procure and ſtyrre the Flemynges agaynſt him, he was beheaded, for whiche dede the dwellers of Gaunte, and of Bruges, were ſo miſcontent, that they vtterlye refuſed the Earle and his counſayle, and made them ſtrong to withſtande his diſpleaſure.

Then the earle was conſtrayned to gather his lordes and knyghtes, for the more part of the commons were agaynſt hym. And in ſhort proceſſe after met in a plain battayle, in a place called Marchye, where after long fyghte, the earle and his hooſte was putte to flighte, and forced for hys ſafegarde, to take a Caſtell named Mall or Mallet. In whiche ſeaſon kinge Edwarde being enformed of the amitie that the Flemminges bare toward him, anone ſent vnto them a knight called ſir Gaulter or Walter de Maguye, with a goodlye companye of archars well apoynted, the whiche arriued in an yſle called then Cazanter. Whom the earle of Flaunders with certaine knightes encountred, and gaue vnto the Engliſhmen battaile. But in the end the earle was ſhamefully chaſed, and many of his gentelmen ſlain and taken, as ſyr Jhon Rodes, ſir William Guylle, ſyr Nycholas Chaũcy, with many other ſlayne. And ſir Guy, baſtarde brother vnto the earle, with diuers other taken, of the whiche ſome were ſent as priſoners into England.

When the Frenche kynge had vnderſtandynge of the deuiſion that was betwene the earle & his ſubiectes, and howe faythfull the Earle was vnto hym, entendyng to winne by fayre meanes the fauour of the Flemmynges, which he knewe well he myght not wyn by rygoure. Then he ſent vnto Gaunte the Byſhoppe of Sainct Denis with other, whiche made vnto the rulers of the towne, and of Bruges, and other townes, there aſſembled, manye fayre beheſtes and promyſes. Amonge which one was, that the Frenche kyng would acquite vnto theym, and deliuer vnto theyr vſe, al ſuch lordſhyppes and ſygnoryes, as he then helde of theyrs and hys progenitours before hym. But all was in vnaye: for kyng Edwarde had ſo ſped hys nedes with them, by the meanes of one named Jaques de Artyuele a man of Gaũt, whych was great of ſubſtaunce, and paſſynge other in boldneſſe, and capacitie of witte, and dyſcretion, that the ſayde towne of Gaunte, wyth Bruges, and Jpre, and Courtryke or Courtrye, and Caſſyle, and other townes there aboute, condeſcended, and promyſed ioyntlye and wholye, to refuſe the Frenche kynge, and for to take kynge Edwardes parte, and ſo much the rather, for the warre whyche before tyme Philippe de Ualoyes made vpon theym in the begynnyng of hys raygne, as in the fyrſt yere of the ſtorye of the ſayde Philippe, ſhall after appeare.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxvii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxviii.

Henry Darcy. { William of Pountfreyt. / Hugh Marbre. } Anno. xiii.

AND in thys .xiii. yeare, kynge Edward with quene Philip hys wyfe, foꝛ mooꝛe aſſured ſtabliſhment of amitie, to be had betwene him and the Hollanders, Sealanders, and Bꝛabanders, paſſed the ſea in the beginninge of the moneth of Iunye, ⁊ ſayled with a goodly companye, into the countrey of Bꝛabant, the queene then being great with childe, where of the Earle of Bꝛabant he was honoꝛablye receaued. In the whiche ſeaſon of his ther beyng, king Edward gat vnto him many frendes. Among which Lewes of Bauier, whiche then toke vpon him as emperour, all bee that befoꝛe yͤ time, he was of the .xxi. Ihon then Pope, accurſed, was one. This Lewes hadde ſuch fauour vnto king Edward, that he aſſigned ⁊ oꝛdeyned hym foꝛ Vycaꝛꝛ of the empyꝛe: by reaſon of which office, king Edward made out his commaundementes and did many thinges, to his aduauntage and pꝛofite.

In this ſeaſon queene Philyp liyng at Anwarpe, was deliuered of a man childe, that was named Lyonell. And Philip de Valoyes hauing knowledge of all this demeanour of king Edward, gathered vnto hym greate ſtrength, ſo that he had about him innumerable people, and taryed with them at Amias and thereabout, from yͤ ende of Auguſt, till the beginning of October. And when he ſaw that king Edward came not, he deuyded the greate hooſt, in returning many of them into their own coūtreys, and the other he ſent vnto ſtrong holdes ⁊ caſtelles, foꝛ to let the paſſage of king Edward and his hoſt, into the land of Fraunce. And in this paſſetyme, the French king had ſent dyuers ſhyppes vnto the ſea with men of warre, foꝛ to take the Englyſhe marchauntes and other that came in theyꝛ courſe. And ſo befell that they encountred with two great ſhippes of England, called the Edwarde and the Chꝛiſtopher, the whiche (as teſtifieth the French chꝛonicle) were freyt with great riches, and alſo well manned. Anone, as either was ware of other, gonnes and ſhot of longe bowes, ⁊ arblaſters, were not ſpared on nother ſide, ſo yͭ betwene them was a cruell fyght, but not egall. Foꝛ of the French men wer .xiii. ſailes great and ſmal, ⁊ of the Engliſhmē but fiue, that is to meane: theſe two foꝛeſaid great ſhips, two barckes and a caruell, the which thꝛe ſmal ſhips, eſcaped by their deliuer ſayling, and the two abode ⁊ fought beyonde .ix. houres, ſo much that there were ſlaine vpon bothe parties aboue ſixe hundꝛed men. But in the end the ſaid two ſhips wer taken, and bꝛought into yͤ French kinges ſtreames, ⁊ many of the Englyſhmen that were wounded caſt into the ſea.

In thys ſame yeare alſo, the ſayde Frenche men of that Nauye, landed at Southampton ſodeynlye, and ſpoyled the towne, and bꝛent a greate parte thereof. And ouer thys, the French kynge made warre in Gaſcoyne, and wan there diuers ſmal pyles, and one ſtrong caſtell, ſtandyng in the countrey of Gaſcoyne, called Agenoys, whiche caſtell was named Penne.

Penue. But all this ſeaſon was king Edward in Almain, & made alliaunce wyth diuers Prynces of that countrey and other, and tooke aſſuraunces of theym, that they ſhould ayde and aſſiſt him to wyn his right & title, that he had to the crowne of Fraunce, & after returned into Flaunders, where he taried all this mayres yere.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxviii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxix.

Andrew Awbry. { William Thorney. / Roger Forſham. } Anno.xiiii.

IN this .xiiii. yere, kynge Edwarde ſpeding his buſyneſſe in Almayne and Flaunders, as in the precedinge yere is touched, retourned into England, and called his high court of parlament at Weſtminſter, about the time of Lent. In which parlament, the kinge aſked of his cōmons, for the maintenaunce of hys warre, and to recouer his right in Fraunce, the .v. part of theyr mouable goods, the cuſtomes of wolles for two yeres to bee payed afore hande, and the ninth ſhefe of euery mans corne, the whiche at length was graūted: and for the leuiyng therof, he cauſed the Lordes of euerye ſhyre throughe his lande, to aunſwere to him, euery lord for the circuite he dwelled nere vnto.

But or al this graunt were gathered and paied, the loue of the poore people tourned into hatred, and praiynge into curſinge. And for the king ſhoulde nede and occupie for hys prouiſions, muche money, or this graunt myght be leuied, he therefore, borowed manye notable ſummes, of dyuers cities, and particuler perſons, of thys lande: amang which he then borowed of the citye of London, twentye thouſande marke, to be repayed of the money commynge of the foreſayd graunt, the which before ſayde twentye thouſande marke, was leuied in the wardes of the Cytye, in forme as after foloweth.

The tower ward was ſeſſed at thre hundred thre ſcore and fyue pound, whereof William of Brikleſworth lent a hundred pounde, and the reſydue leuied of twelue perſons of that warde.

Byllyngeſgate warde, was ſeſſed at eyghte hundred thre ſcore and thre pounde, wherof Jhon de Cawſton lent two hundred poūd, and Aleyn Guyll .cc. pounde, and the reſidue was lent by .xxvi. perſons of that warde.

The bridge was ſeſſed at ſeuen hundred .lxv. pounde .vi. s. viii. d. whereof Jhon Lorekyne bare .cc. pound, Jhon Malwayne, & Rafe de Lenone two hundred pound, & the reſidue was borne by .xxxiii. perſons of that warde.

The warde of Dowgate was ſeſſed at .vi. C. lx. pounde .x. s. of which Henry Pycarde lent .ii. C. marke, Bartholomew Freſlyng, and Williā Lengliſhe .cc. marke, and ẏ reſydue was leuyed of .xxv. perſons of that warde.

Lanbourne warde was ſeaſed at.iii.c.lii.pound.vi.s̃.viii.pence, whereof Thomas Harwolde lent c. pound, Jhon Peche.c.Marke, and the reſt was lent by fiftene dwellers of that warde.

Walbroke warde was ſeſſed at ix.C.xi. pounde, whereof Jhon Adam lent two hundred pounde, John Bery and Simon Oyſtour Peperer.ii.c.pound, and Adam de Bery & Jhon Not, ii.c.marke, & the reſt was leuyed of fourtene perſons of that warde.

Biſhopſgate warde was ſeſſed at.v.c.lix.pounde.v.s̃.viii. pence, whereof Adam Fraunceſſe lent ii.c.pounde, and Simon Browne and Jhon de S.Albon.ii.c.poūd, and the riſidue was leuied of ten perſons of that warde.

Limeſtreate warde was ſeſſed at.c.x.pound, whereof Auguſtine Wales lent.c.pounde, & ten poūde was leuied of thre perſons of that warde.

Cornehill warde was ſeſſed at ii.c.xv.pounde, whereof Jhon Colynge and Robert Manhale drapers bare that one.c.pounde, and the laſt.c.marke, and the reſt was leuied of twentye perſons of the ſayde warde.

Chepe warde was ſeſſed at.v.c.xvii.pounde.x.s̃. whereof Barthelmewe Thomaſyn Mercer lent two hundred pounde, Stephan Caundiſh draper, William Holbech and John Harward, eyther of them.c.marke, and Jhon Doiſobye Goldſmith .cc. marke, and Jhon Fawkys and James Naware, eyther of theym.c.poūd, and the reſt was leuyed of .lxi. perſons of the ſame warde.

This ward lent .cc .li. more then their ſeſſement.

Bradſtrete warde was ſeſſed at v.C.lxxx.&.viii.pounde, whereof Thomas Leg Skinner, lent iii. c.pound, Jhon Harward ſtoke.ii. c.marke, & the reſidue was leuied of eyght perſons of that warde.

Wintrie warde was ſeſſed at.v. c.xxxiiii.pounde, xvi.s̃. viii.pence, whereof Walter Turke Fiſhmonger lent.ii.C.marke Jhon Stodaye Wintener.c.pounde Simon Bolſely and Jhon Rothinge.cc. marke, and the reſt was leuied of xxiiii, perſons of that warde.

The warde of Bredſtrete was ſeſſed at.cccc.xxxv.poūd xiii.s̃.iiii. d̃. whereof Adam Brabeſon lent cc.and the reſt was leuied of.xxx. perſons of that warde.

The warde of quene Hith was ſeſſed at.cccc.xxxv. pounde, xiii.s̃, iiii.d̃, whereof Richard Killingbury lent two hundred pounde, and Jhon of Glouceter.c.marke, and the reſidue was leuyed of ſeuentene perſons of that warde.

Cordwayner ſtrete was ſeſſed at.ii.M.c.lxxx.xv, pounde.iii.s̃. iiii.d̃.whereof ſyr Andrew Awbry Grocer, lent.viii.hundred marke, William de Cawſton.ii.c.pound, James Andrew & Thomas Brandon, either of them.cc.marke, Williã of Worceter.cc.marke, Johan Bechampe and the wife of Jhon Hall, either of them.c.pound and Jhon Bull, Jhon Wardby, and William Hampſtede eche of them c.marke, and the reſt which is.vi. c.lxi.xvi.s̃.viii.pence, was lent by xliiii, perſons of that warde.

The ward of Faringdon within, was ſeſſed at.vii.c.xxx.pounde ſixtene.s̃.vii.d̃. whereof Gilbert Stayneddroppe lent two hundred pounde, and the reſt was leuied of lxvii.perſons of that warde.

Faringdone without the walles, was ſeſſed at.C.xiiii.pounde, xiii.s̃.iiii.d̃. which ſumme was leuied of.xxi.perſons of that ward.

Creplegate warde, was ſeſſed at.iiii.hundꝛed.lxii.li.x.s, whereof Rycharde Lazar mercer lent.CC marke, Symonde de bedington, a hundꝛed marke, and the reſidue was leuied of.xxxvii.perſons of the ſayde warde.

Colmanſtrete ward was ſeſſed at.M.li.poũde.xvi.s̃.viii.d̃. wher of Simonde de Fraunces lente viii. hundꝛed pounde, Henrye of warre and Jhon Denys.cc.mark and the reſidue was lente by.vi. perſons of that warde.

Candelwike ſtrete warde, was ſeſſed at.c.xxxiii.poũd.vi.s̃.viii.d̃ the which ſaid ſumme was leuied of.xxiii.perſons of the ſayd ward.

The warde of Algate was ſtinted oꝛ ſeſſed at.xxx.pounde, and leueied of.vi.enhabitauntes of that warde.

Poꝛtſokin warde, was ſeſſed at xxvii.pounde.x.s̃.and was leuied of.vii.perſons of that warde.

Caſtel Baynarde warde, was ſeſſed at.lxiii. pounde.vi.s̃.viii.d̃. and lente by.xii.perſons of that warde.

Baſſingeſhaw warde, was ſeſſed at.lxxix.poũd.xiii.s.iiii.d. and leuyed of.vi.perſons.

Aldꝛyſhgate warde was ſet oꝛ ſeſſed at.lvii.pound.x.s.and layde oute oꝛ lent by.v.perſons of that warde. Whiche ſumme totall of the foꝛeſayde.xxv.wardes, amoũteth to the ſumme of.xiii. thouſãd thꝛee hundꝛed.lxxx.and fyue poũd xiii.ſhyllynges, and.iiii.pence. Which ſũme exceadeath the ſũme of twentye thouſande marke.li. pounde.vi.ſhillynges and eyght pence. And ye ſhall vnderſtande, that he that payed leaſt towarde this lowne, payed fyfty ſhyllingz, and ſo aſcendinge to the ſummes aboue rehearſed. Whereof many were ſeſſed at.xl.pounde.l.pound and.lx.pounde, and many other at dyuers meane ſummes.

In this yeare alſo, the kynge chaunged his coine, and made the noble, and the halfe noble, of the value of.vi.ſhillinges eyght pens ix.d̃.oꝛ.x.d̃.and the half noble, after the rate, if they kepe the trew weyght, & pꝛouided diuers other thinges, foꝛ the weale of hys realme, and ſped hys iourney into Fraunce.

WHan kynge Edwarde, had ſet hys land in oꝛder, and had all thyng metelie pꝛouided foꝛ his nede, he than aboute Lãmeſſe, ſayled into Bꝛaban, and there helde his counſaile with his freendes, and by theyꝛ aduices made claime to the whole Crowne of Fraunce, as his rightfull inheritaunce, and foꝛ moꝛe authoꝛite of the ſame, entermedeled the armes of Englande, with the armes of Fraunce, as ye ſe them this day.

How king Edwarde made claime to the whole Realme of Fraunce.

Then kynge Philip beynge of theſe warned, gathered an houge hoſte, and came with them to a towne called Vermendoys. And kynge Edwarde with his people entred the coũtry called Thereſſe, and bꝛent and waſted the countrei befoꝛe hym. Than kyng Philip dꝛewe towarde the Engliſh hoſt, and came vnto a place oꝛ Towne called in Frenche Buyron Foſſe, wher he entēded (as ſaith yͤ Frēch booke) to haue ſet vpon the Engliſhmen. But by counſayle of hys lordes, for diuers cauſes, he was let to hys diſpleaſure. For after that day he might finde no conuenient time, for to aſſayle hys enemies, ſo that in concluſion, eyther hoſte departed from other, wythout battayle or fight, and kynge Edwarde tooke his way toward Gaunt, and kynge Philip returned into Fraunce. Than kynge Edward by meanes of hys freend Jaques de Artiuele, had all hys pleaſure in Gaunt, and receyued of them othe, and homage. And after diuers concluſions with thē and other taken, he leuyng there yͤ Queene, after the teſtymony of ſome wryters, retourned agayne into Englande, and left wyth the Queene, which than was greate with childe, the Erles of Salyſbury and of Oxenforde, which in the kynges abſence, ayded wel the Flemmynges agaynſt the French kyng, and did diuers marciall actes, which J here paſſe ouer. But in proceſſe, the Erle of Saliſbury was taken pryſoner, and dyuers Englyſhmen ſlayne at the aſſaute of a towne, called the iſle in Flaũders or of Flaunders.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxxix. Anno domini. M. CCC. xl.

Adam Lucas

Andrew Awbry. Anno. xv.

Barthelmew marres

IN this .xv. yeare, while the kynge was buſied in England to make prouiſion for meate & money, to wythſtande the Frenche kynge, aſwell for the war that the ſayd Frenche kyng made vpon the Flemynges and other, being the kinges frien des, as for his owne particuler cauſes, the Queene (as before is ſayde) beynge at the towne of Gaunt, was deliuered of a ſonne, which after was named Jhon, aboute Chriſtmas, in the begin nyng of this Maiors yeare, and ende of this. xiiii. yere. Thys child whan he came to mannes eſtate, was ſurnamed Jhon of Gaunt, & was fyrſt Erle of Rychemounte, and after duke of Lancaſter.

As faſt as kyng Edwarde prouided, for ablimentes of warre in England, ſo faſt and haſty prouiſion made the French kynge, to wythſtande kyng Edward, both by lande and by water, ſo that he had a greate and ſtronge Nauye vpon the ſea.

Kynge Edwarde than, in the moneth of June, with two hundred ſayles, tooke ſhippynge, and ſayled towarde Flaunders, and vpon the Sea, met or came vnto him ſyr Roberte Morley with the North Nauy of England, ſo that he had in all aboute. iii. hundred ſayles. And at Mydſomer, vpon Saynte Jhons euen, he fought wyth the Frenche kynges nauy, which lay in wayte for hym, nere to the towne called the Sluſe. Of this nauy, which were in nōber

Ho
nau
Fra
ſet v
nau
Eng

ber, by the reporte of the Frenche booke, vpon foure hundred ſayles, wherof, were chiefe admiralles, ſyr Huge Queret, and ſyr Nicholas Buchette, & one named Barbe Nore, or in Engliſh Blacke berde the which captaynes or admyralles, anon as they eſpied the Engliſh flote, they made toward thẽ: to begyn the fight, foure Galyes ſet vpon a ſhyppe of aduauntage, which ſayled before the other, named the ryche Oliuer, the whiche iiii. galies, the forenamed Barbe Noyre. hadde the conduit of, and aſſayled this ſayd ſhippe on euery parte, and bet her with Gunſhot, and her men with hayle ſhot exceedyngly, ſo that of the men with in her, were many ſlayne, and mo wounded, and likely to haue ben ſhortly wonne, had not bene the reſcoues of her cõpany, than were the ſayde foure Galies, ſoone beclipped wyth the Engliſh Nauy, and ſo cruelly aſſayled, that they were borded or they might be reſcowed. Thã approched the whole flote vpon bothe ſides, with hideous and fearfull din, and noyſe of Gunnes, with terrible flamynge of wilde fire, & other with thicke ſhotte of quarels and arrowes, & cruſhynge of ſhips, that hideous and wonderfull it was to behold, ſo that many a ſoule, was there expelled from their bodies in ſhort while. This mortall and cruell fight, continued as ſaith ỹ French ſtory, by the ſpace of. viii. houres or more, in ſuch wyſe, that harde it was to knowe, whether parte had the better, and ſo many dead and wounded men, were caſt into the ſea, that ỹ water which was coloured or died red. But in the end by grace and greate manhode of the king, whiche there was ſore wounded, and by his great compfort, the Frenchmen were chaſed and manie of their ſhippes bowged and taken, with many priſoners in them. Amonge which, the forenamed admirals or captaynes, ſyr Nicholas Buchet and ſyr Hugh Queret were. ii. whiche in diſpite of the Frenchemen, were hanged vpon their ſayles of theyr ſhippes, which they wer taken in. And among the ſhips, that were at this ſeaſon taken, were recouered the. ii. foreſayde ſhippes, Edwarde and the Chriſtofer, whych before were taken by the Frenche men, as it before is ſhewed in the thirde yeare of this kyng.

The ſtoute corage and ſtomake of kinge Edwarde the thyrde.

In this battel, alſo as is teſtified of many and diuers writers, were ſlayne vpon the nomber, of xxx. M. Frenchmen, al be it, the Frenche booke, nameth ſo manye to bee ſlayne vpon bothe parties, and excuſeth this miſfortune, by the negligence of ſir Nichas Buchet, which kept the French nauy ſo longe within the Hauen, that they were ſoo cloſed in wyth the Engliſh nauy, that a great nomber of theym might neuer ſtrike ſtroke, nor ſhote theyr ordinaunce but to the hurte of their owne cõpany. Whan kynge Edwarde had optayned this triumphant victorie of his enemies, he yelded great thankes vnto God. How be it, he was fayne to tary a ſeaſon within his ſhippe, by reaſon of a woũd the which he had receyued in hys thigh. In which ſeaſon the quene his wife came to viſite him, and retourned agayne vnto Gaunte.

And after a few dayes paſſed, the kynge departed from Swinne,⁊ rode vnto our lady of Ardēbough, and ſent his nauy in the nexte hauen to Bꝛuges, and muche of hys people vnto the towne of Gaunt. And whan he had accompliſhed his pilgrimage, he rode vnto Bꝛuges, and from thenſe vnto Gaunt wherof the dwellers, he was ioyouſlie receyued. Then kynge Edwarde there called a great counſayll, by the whiche it was determined, that he ſhould pꝛepare.ii. hoſtes, wherof that one ſhould be of the men of Gaunte, and of the townes there aboute, of the whiche certayne Loꝛdes of Almayne ſhould haue ỹ rule, and the other hoſte ſhould be of men of Bꝛuges and of Engliſhe archers, and of that hoſte was oꝛdeyned ſyꝛ Robert of Artoys, to leader and captayne. Whan the ſayd two hoſtes were all garniſhed, with al thing foꝛ them nedeful, the fyꝛſt of them was ſent vnto the towne of Tourney, and the other vnto the towne of Saynt Omers. The whiche.ii. townes at that day, were like ſtrengthe vnto Fraunce, as Caelys is now vnto Englande. Wherfoꝛe the French kynge, foꝛ ỹ moꝛe ſuretie of them, ſente vnto Tournay, the erle of Foys, and ſir Bartham, than marſhall of Fraunce, with.iiii.M. men of armes, and vnto Saynt Omers, he ſent the Duke of Burgoyn with a greate company of loꝛdes and other: whã ſyꝛ Robert of Artoyes, had lien a certeyne time befoꝛe Saynct Omers, and many ſharpe aſſautes, by him and his people had ben geuen to it, in the which diuers foꝛtunes fel and chaunces of warre, which were tedious and longe to wꝛite, finally vpon the moꝛow after ſaynt James day, oꝛ the.xxvi. day of July, the duke of Burgoin with his retinue, yſſued out of the towne, and fought with the ſayde ſir Robert and his people a longe ſeaſon. In the which fight was ſlayne of the dukes partie the loꝛd of Hamelcourte, ſyꝛ Froyſard de Beafoꝛde, the loꝛde of Saynt Uran, a loꝛde of Spayne, ⁊ a Burgonyon loꝛde, called the Loꝛde of Bꝛãges, with other diuers knightes and gentilmen, to the number of.liiii. as ſayeth the French cronicle, and of the common people, vpon.iii.M. But in ſhoꝛt time after, the power of the duke encreaſed in ſuch wyſe, that ſyꝛ Roberte with hys company was fayne to departe thens, and ſo yode into Ipꝛe, and there helde hym. Then as aboue is ſayde, when kyng Edwarde had ſent foꝛthe the foꝛenamed two hoſtes, he with the reſte of his people, yoode vnto a place within two Engliſh miles of Turney, called in French le Pount de pꝛee, and there lodged him and his people. And Philip de Ualois the Frenche Kynge, came with hys people vnto an houſe of religion, which then was called the Pꝛioꝛy of Saynt Andꝛew. At which two places, theſe two ſayde pꝛynces, thus liyng with great ſtrengthes vpon eyther ſyde, kyng Edwarde by counſayle of his Loꝛdes, ſente vnto the Frenche kynge a letter, conteynyng as foloweth.

EDwarde by the grace of God, kynge of England, and of of Fraunce loꝛde of Irelande. Syꝛ Philip

A lett
ſent b
Edw
to ỹ f
kyng

Philyp de Valoys, by longe time we haue exhorted by meſſaungers and other manyfolde maner of wayes, to the ende that ye ſhould reſtore vnto vs, and do to vs reaſon of our rightfull enheritaunce, of the realme of Fraũce, the whiche ye haue longe occupied with great wronge. And for that, that we ſe well, that ye entende to perſeuer in your iniurions witholdyng, without to doe vnto vs reaſon, for our right to demaunde, we are entred into our lande of Flaunders, as ſouerayne lorde of the ſame, and paſſe by that countrey, doyng you ferther to vnderſtande, that we haue taken, with the helpe of our lord Jeſu chriſt ẏ right, wt the power of the ſayde countrey, & with our people them allied, beholdyng the right, whiche we haue in the heritage, that ye witholde from vs with great wronge: and draw vs towarde you to make a ſhorte ende, vpon our rightfull demaunde and chalenge, yf ye will towarde vs approche. And for ſo muche, that ſo great power of mẽ of armes that came vpon our parties, may not longe holde them togethers without greate deſtruction of the people. Whiche euery good Chriſten man ought to eſchewe, and ſpecially a prince or other that haue the gouernaunce of people, wee therfore muche deſyre, ẏ in ſhorte daies they may mete. And for to eſchew the more mortalite of the people, ſo that the quarell apparent betwene vs, to the deſtruction of our chalenge, may ſtande in triall betwene vs two, whiche thinge we offre vnto you, for the cauſes aboue ſayd, Howbeit, that we remember well, the nobleneſſe of your perſon, and your greate wiſdome and aduiſement. And in caſe that ye will not therof, that then in our chalenge, bee ſet to affirme the battayle of your ſelf wt an hundred perſons of your party of the moſte ſufficient, and wee in like wiſe with as many. And if ye wyll that one way nor the other, that then ye will aſſigne a certain day, before the citie of Tournay, to fight with ſtrengthe agaynſt ſtrength, within .x. days after the ſight of theſe letters. And wee would that all the worlde knewe, that theſe thinges aboue ſaide, in this our deſire, is not for pride nor for great preſũption, but for that that oure Lorde, might ſette the more reſt and peace, amonge the Chriſten, and for that, that the enemies of God might be reſiſted, and chriſtendome enhaunced. And the way that ye will choſe, of the offers abouſayd, write againe to vs, by the bringer of theſe letters, to him making haſty deliueraũce. Giuen vnder our greate ſeale, at Eſchin ſur le ſcaut, nere vnto the Citie of Tournay, the .xv. daye of the monethe of July.

A lett
ſent b
Edw
to ẏ f
kyng

Vpon the recept of whiche letters, the French kynge, by the aduice of his counſayl, wrote again vnto kyng Edward, in maner and fourme as foloweth.

¶ The French kynges letter.

Philip by the grace of God, kynge of Fraunce, to Edward kyng of Englande. Wee haue ſene a letter, ſente to Philip de Valoys, brought to our coute, in whiche letter, were certayn requeſtes, and for ſo much as the ſayd letter came not to vs, the ſayd requeſtes wer not made to vs, like as it appereth, by the tenoure of the ſaid letter. we therfore to you make none anſwere: Neuertheleſſe, for that that wee vnderſtande, by the ſayde letter and otherwiſe, that ye are enbatelled in our Realme of Fraunce, doynge great domage to vs, and our ſayd realme, and to the people moued of wil without reaſon, not regardinge that, whiche a lyegeman ought to regard, to his liege and ſoueraigne Lorde, for ye are entred into our homage, in youre ſelfe, acknowledginge, as reaſon is to the kynge of Fraunce, & promiſed obeiſaūce, ſuch as a liegemā ought, vnto his ſoueraigne lorde, like as it appeareth, by your letters pattens, ſealed with youre great ſeale, the whiche wee haue by vs, and for that ſhould you bee obedient vnto vs. Our entente is ſuche, that whan we ſhall thinke it good, we ſhall chaſe you oute of our Realme, to our honoure and maieſtie royall, and to the profite of our people. And in this doynge wee haue faythfull hope in oure Lorde Jeſu Chriſte, from whome all good to vs commeth. For by your enterpriſe, which is of wyl, not reaſonable, hath ben lette the holy voyage ouer the ſea, & great quantitee of chriſten people, put to death, and the holye ſeruice of God left, and holy church vnworſhipped and vnhonoured, with manie great enormities. And in that, that yee thynke to haue the Flemmynges in your ayde, wee thinke vs to bee aſſured, that the good townes and commons, wyll be haue them in ſuch wiſe agaynſt vs, and againſt our coſin, the erle of Flaunders, that they will ſaue their honoure and trouthe. And in that that they haue miſſe done till now, hath ben by euil counſail of ſuch people, which regarde not the common weale of the people, but for their owne profite onely. Giuen in the fielde of the priory of Saynt Andrew beſide Ayre, vnder þ ſeale of our ſecrete ſignet, in abſence of our great ſeale, the .xxx. day, of the moneth of July.

It was not longe after, that the French kyng had thus reſcribed vnto king Edward, but that a meſſenger came vnto him from Tourney, for haſtye reſcou, for the towne was daily and ſharply aſſauted, of the Engliſhe hoſte. wherfore in all haſte, he ſent thither the Duke of Atheneſſe, the vicounte of Thonart, the vicoūt of Dannay, with diuers other, to the number of .xv. men of name, with greate number of people. The whiche ſped theym ſtreight vnto the mounte of Caſſile. But or they came the ſayd mount was gotten by the Flemmynges, ſo that of their lodgynge they were diſpoyncted. By reaſon whereof they feared to ſette vpon the Engliſhe hoſte, or yet to trauayle for the remouyng of the ſayd ſiege of Tourney, but tooke theyr counſayle and ſwarued from Caſſyle, and entred the lande of the Earle of Barry, and dyd muche harme therin. And when they had there executed theyr pleaſures, they retourned vnto the Frenche kynge.

In this meane while, kynge

Philip counſayled with his lordes, whether it were better for him to draw towarde Tourney or to remoue the ſiege or to go into Flaunders, and to make warre vpon the townes that held with king Edwarde. By which counſayle it was thought moſt honorable, that he ſhoulde endeuoure him ſelf to remoue the ſaide ſiege. After which concluſion ſo taken, he with his hoſte drew towarde Tourney, and in the ende he lodged him & him people, at a place or towne called at that daye Bowyns, within .iii. miles of Tourney, in whoſe company, was the kynge of Nauerne, the kynge of Bohemy or Beame, the Dukes of Normandy, and of Loreyne, and of Athenes or Athens, the Erles of Alenſon, of Flaunders, and of Sauoy, with other, to the nūber of .xiiii. Erles, beſide vicoūtes baronettes and knightes, to a great number. And with kynge Edwarde were theſe lordes folowing, the Erle of Herforde, the Erles of Northampton, of Derby, of Southamton, of Oxenford of Henawd, of Harflete and of Arondell. Alſo of ſtraungers, the duke of Geldre, and of Sclauony, and Brabaute, with many other Vicountes, baronettes & knightes, which I paſſe ouer.

And thus lay theſe two princes with two greate and mightie hoſtes within fiue miles, withoute great battayle or fight a certeyne of time. But euer in the meane while, the Towne of Tourney was aſſayled of the Engliſhmen and Flemynges, the whiche defended them manfullie and well.

In the whiche paſſe tyme, the counteſſe of Henaude, which was mother vnto the queene of England, and as teſtifieth the French chronicle, ſyſter vnto the French kynge, a woman of paſſing diſcretion and eloquence, with the ayde of other princes, as the kynge of Beame and other, laboured ſuche a meane of treatie, that a daye of dyet was betwene the two kynges appointed, albeit, that diuers of kynge Edwardes counſayle were ſore agaynſt it, and ſpecially Jakes de Artiuele.

Than for kyng Edwardes partie, was aſſigned the Byſhop of Lincolne, ſyr Geffrey Scrope, ſyr Jhon of Henaude brother to the Earle, and ſyr William Cheyny with other. And for the Frenche kyng, was aſſygned the kynge of Beame, the Earles of Armenake and of Sauoy, ſyr Lewes de Sauoye and other. And to the ende that this appoyntmente, myght take the better effecte, a daye of truce was concluded till mydſomer folowing. But mooſte wryters teſtifien, that kynge Edward lefte the ſyege before Tourney, for defaute of money, and negligence of hys ſlowe procuratours in Englande, that ſped not hys needes there as they ſhould. For that one cauſe and for that other, the kynge with his hoſte departed thence vnto Gaunte, and taried there a certayne of time.

In whiche ſeaſon, the forenamed Lordes and knightes mette at Tourney, and ther debated the matters of chalenge of kynge Edwarde, and certeyne articles concernynge the countrey of Flaunders. In which counſayle, it was graunted by the Frenche kynges partie, that yͤ French king ſhould freely departe towarde the mariage of Edwardes children, with the whole ſeygnories of Gaſcoyn and Guyan, and the erledome of Poyters, in ſo free maner that no officer of the Frenche kyng ſhould medle or haue to doo within anye parte of thoſe lordſhyppes. And for Flaunders, it was by the ſayd Lordes graunted, that the commons of that countrey in all cuſtomes and lawes, ſhould be iudged and ruled, as they of olde times had vſed, and alſo that all bondes and obligacions, that in times paſſed, the chiefe Townes had made to the French kyng for any cauſe, ſhould be cancelled and deliuered. And of their Erle they ſhould bee acquited in lyke wyſe, for all offences dooen before that day. Alſo all cenſures, or curſſes, that they before were wrapped in, ſhould be clearely adnulled and reuoked, wyth other concluſions and offers, whiche I paſſe ouer.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xl. Anno domini. M.CCC.xli.

Jhon Oxinforde { Richarde Berkynge. Jhon Rokyſlee. } Anno. xvi.

The returne of kyng Edwarde into Englande.

AND in the .xvi. yere king Edward vpon Saynct Andrewes euen, came to the Toure of London, and ſente for ſuch Lordes, as before he had made his procuratours to leuye his money in his abſence, and for theyr negligence and miſdemeanure caſt them in priſon. But in thys voyage yͭ the kynge paſſed from that other ſyde of yͤ ſea into England, he had excedynge tempeſt of wether, ſo that he paſſed wyth greate feare and daunger, which tempeſt after the opinion of ſome writers, was rered by the Negromauncers of the Frenche kyng, to thende to haue peryſhed the kynge, or els to geue him the leſſe courage to take the Sea agayne.

In thys yeare alſo, were ſente from the .xii. Benet than Pope of Rome, twoo Cardynalles, to treate a peace betwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce. The whiche concluded a peace betwene the ſayde twoo kynges, as well for them as for other coūtreys, which to them were allied, for the tearme of three yeres and more.

In which time it was agreed, that bothe the ſayde kynges, by their proctoures ſhoulde publiſh and declare, before the Pope of Rome, theyr claymes and cauſes, to the ende, that by him and hys counſayle, a finall direction and concorde, might be ſet betwen the which agrement of the ſaid Cardinalles, was thus concluded in the towne called Maleſtrete, aboute the feaſte of Sayncte Gregorye in Lente, beynge there preſente, for the kynge of Englande, the Erles of Derby and of Northampton, wyth other, and for the French kinge, the dukes of Burbon & of Burgoyne, wͭ other for his parti. But this agrement ſtoode to litle effecte. For it not withſtanding, the warre betwene theſe two kinges was continued, ſo that either fortified their frendes and allies. And ſoone after happened, that where Jhon duke of Britayne died withoute iſſue, variaunce fell betwene Charles de Bloys & Jhon Erle of Moũtforde, for the title of yͤ dukedome, ſo that betweene theym mortall warre was exerciſed, as in the ſtorie of Philip de Valoyes, ſhall after more playnly be declared. Which warre ſo continuynge, the kyng of England ayded the partie of the Erle of Mountford, and the Frenche kynge ayded Charles de Bloyes. And ouer that, durynge the terme of the ſayd truce, the Frenche kynge made warre vpon the Gaſcoynes, as here after ſhall appeare. And in Scotlande, ſome ſtyrringe was made this yere, by exciting of yͤ French kynge, in ſo much that the kynge was faine to ſende thither a crew of Sondioures to ſtrength ſuche holdes, hs he there helde.

Truce broche.

And in this yere was the quene delyuered of a man childe at the towne of Langeley, they whyche after was named Edmunde, and ſurnamed Edmunde of Langley.

Edmunde of Langlei the thyrde ſonne of Edwarde.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xli. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xlii.

Symond Fraunces. { Jhon Luſkyn. / Richarde Kiſſingbury. } Anno.xvii.

IN this.xvii. yere, kyng Edwarde at the requeſt of dyuers of his yonge lordes and knightes, ſuffred to bee exerciſed certayne poynctes and feactes of warre, as Juſtes, turnamentes and other. Which were executed at Dunſtable, where the kinge and the Queene were preſent, with the more partie of the lordes and ladyes of the lande.

In this yeare died the forenamed Jhon duke of Britayne, by reaſon of whoſe death, the warre as in the precedynge yere is touched, grewe betwene the ſayde Charles de Bloyes and the Earle of Mountforde. This Charles de Bloyes made his clayme to that duchery, by title of his wyfe, that was daughter of Guy, Vycount of Limogis, and seconde brother of the foreſayd Jhon duke of Britayne. And Jhon Earle of Mountforde, claymed by the tytle that he was thyrde brother vnto the forenamed duke. But of this matter J entende to ſhewe more playnlie, & of the ende therof, in the ſtorye of Philip de Valois, as before J haue ſayde, and rather ther then here, becauſe the facte therof was not done in Englande, but in Britayne, whereof the ſayde Philip pretended rule and chiefe ſignorye.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xliii.

Jhon Hamonde. { Jhon Stewarde. / Jhon Ayleſhim. } Anno.xviii.

AND in the .xviii. yere ẏ kyng ſhortlie after Eaſter called a Parlyament at Weſtmynſte. In time whereof Edwarde his eldeſt ſonne, was created Prince of Wales. And manie ordinaunces for the weale of the lande, there were enacted, which for length J paſſe ouer.

Jn this yere alſo Clement the ſixth of that name, whiche newlie was made Pope of Rome, tooke vpon him to giue diuers Byſhopriches, and benefices, which then fell voyde in Englande. Wherewith the kyng was nothing contented, in ſo much that he ſent out commiſſions, and ſtrayte commaundementes, that no man in time folowynge ſhoulde preſente or inducte any ſuch perſon or perſons, that ſo by the Pope of rome were promoted without the agrement of the king, as farre as touched his prerogatiue.

The ſayd Clemente was fyrſt Archebiſhop of Roan, and munke of Sayncte Benettes order, a Frenche man of byrthe, and before called Peter, a man of excellente cunnynge, but a waſter of Godes patrimony, and promoted to that dignitie, by inſtant labour of the French kynge, which ſent his ſonne Jhon duke of Normandie, and the duke of Burgoin vnto the Citie of Auynion or Auygnon, to procure and further the election. By meane wherof he was ther choſen pope of Rome aboute the .vii. day of May, and troniſed in the ſayde moneth of Maye, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace, after that accompt of the Churche of Englande. M.CCC.xliiii. By meanes and fauour of which Pope of Rome, the Frenche kynges cauſes and matters, betwene kyng Edward and him, were ſomedeale promoted.

For as teſtifieth the French boke the Frenche kynge this yere, put to death one mayſter Henry de Maleſtrete, a graduat man and brother vnto ſir Godfrey de Maleſtrete knight, lately alſo putte to death, by the ſayd French king for their fidelity which they bare toward kinge Edwarde, as hys feodaries. Wherefore kynge Edwarde made his complaynt vnto the Pope of Rome, of this and other thynges, to bee dooen contary to the conſtitucions of the former peace concluded by ẏ twoo cardinalles and had therof no remedie.

e orde
garte

Kyng
warde
floryn

Jn this yeare alſo, kynge Edwarde made a coyne of fine gold, and named it the florine, that is to ſaye, the penye of the value of ſixe ſhillinges .viii. d. the half penie of the value of thre ſhillinges iiii. d. and the farthing of the value .xx. d, which coyne was ordeyned for hys warres in Fraunce, for the golde therof was not fyne as was the noble, which he before in his fourtene yere of his reigne had cauſed to be coyned.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xliii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xliiii.

Jhon Hamonde. { Geffrey Wichingam. Thomas Legge. } Anno.xix.

AND in this. xix. yeare, yͤ King helde a ſolempne feaſte, at his Caſtell of Windeſore, where betwene Candelmaſſe and Lente, wer holdē or executed many marciall actes, as Juſtes, Tournamentes, with diuers other, at the which were preſent, many ſtraungers of other landes.

e order garter

And in the ende therof, he there deuiſed the order of the Garter, and after ſtabliſhed it, as at thys day it is continued.

In thys yere aboute Midſommer, kyng Edward with a ſtrong armye, ſayled into Sluſe, and ſo into litle Britayn: But for he was diſpoincted of the ayde of the Fleminges, by reaſon of the death, of hys truſty friend Jaques de Artiuele, which then was ſlayne of the Flemmynges of Gaunte, by a conſpiracie, yͭ they made agaynſt him, by ſuch as fauoured the partie of the French king, he tourned home into Englande agayne the ſame yere, leuyng behinde him the Erle of Saliſbury, with a ſtronge compaignie, to aide Jhon Erle of Mountforde agaynſt ſir Charles de Bloys. The whiche Jhon, by the ayde of the Engliſhmen, wan diuers townes and holdes in Britayne, vpon the ſayd ſir Charles ⁊ his French men. But in thend of this yeare, he was taken with ſuche ſickenes, that he died in a towne called Corentine. After whoſe death the ſaid Charles poſſeſſed the more party of the duchie of Britayn.

This yere the Kynge ſente the Erle of Derby with a ſtronge armie into Guyan, for to ayde the Erle of Northampton, whom the kyng before had left ther at Burdeaux, to ſtrength that countrey agaynſt the Frenche menne. To whome after the death of the forenamed ſir Jhon of Mountforde, drew many of the ſouldiours that were on his parte.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xliiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xlv.

Richard Lacer. { Edmunde Hempnale. Jhon Glouceter. } Anno.xx.

IN this. xx. yere or latter ende of the xx. yere, that is to wit, about Saynt Nicholas tide, in the begynnynge of this Maiors yeare, the foreſayde Erles of Darby and Northampton, had wonne the towne and caſtel of Bergarat in Gaſcoyne, and ſlew there the Earle of Valentynoys, chief capitaine thereof, and tooke ther a noble man, called the Erle of the Jſles, with manye o-other riche priſoners. And aboute Aprill, the ſayde Earles wanne a stronge towne called the Ryall. Whereof hearinge Philip de Valoys, in al haſt, ſent his ſo̅ne Jhon Duke of Normandye, to withſtande and to giue battayll vnto the ſaid Erles. But when the ſaid Duke was nere vnto the Engliſh men, he had ſuch tidinges of their ſtrength, that he retourned vnto his father agayne. For the which dede his father with him was greuouſlie diſcontented, in ſo muche that by the occaſion to auoyde his fathers diſpleaſure, he tourned into Gaſcoyne, and layed ſiege vnto the Caſtell of Agnillon, & there remained till the moneth of Auguſt folowynge, without getting of it any vauntage: at whiche ſeaſon, he retourned agayne to hys father. After whoſe departure the Earle of Northampton with hys compaignie, gat a ſtronge towne called in French la Roche Darien whiche is to meane the Roche or Rocke of Arien.

In the time of whiche warre thus continued in Britayne and Guyan, the Frenche kinge made purueyaunce to defende his lande agaynſt kyng Edward, for whom he awayted dayly. And kyng Edward as faſt gathered money, and made hys daylye purueyaunce, to prepare him thitherwarde.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlv.　　Anno domini. M.CCC.xlvi.

Geffrey whichinghã. { Jhon Croydon.
William Clopton. } Anno.xxi.

AND in thys xxi. yere, king Edward held hys Parliament at Weſtmynſter aboute ẏ time of Lent. And in the moneth of July folowinge, he tooke ſhippinge and ſayled into Normandy, and landed as witneſſeth the French chronicle at a place in that prouince, named in French la Hougne ſent Vaſt, with xi. ſayles great and ſmall, the .xii. day of the foreſayd moneth of Julie. And anon, as he was landed, he commaunded hys people to waſte the countrey before theym. And by the leadynge of a knight called ſyr Godfrey Harcourte, he was brought vnto a Towne called Melly, and from thens vnto Mountboure, where the Kynge with all his people, reſted hym a ſeaſon.

In the which tyme the ſayd ſir Godfrey had brent and ſpoiled the countrey of Conſtantine, there nere adioynynge. Then kyng Edwarde departed from the foreſaid towne, and wente vnto a ſtronge towne called Karenten or Karencon, the whiche he gatte, with the caſtel to the ſame belongyng. And ſo continued his iourney, that vpon the .xx. day, of the moneth of July he layed ſiege before the citie or towne of Caen. Wherin were at that day chiefe capitaynes, the biſhop of Bayen, the Erle of Ewe, ẏ lord of Turnebu, wͭ other diuers knightes and men of name.

Then kyng Edwarde commaunded that the ſayde towne ſhoulde bee aſſayled, the which was doen with ſo great force, and ſpeciallye with ſtrong and continuall ſhot, that the Frenche men forſoke the walles, and drew them to the caſtell. And in proceſſe, after longe and cruel fyght, the Engliſhmen entred the towne, and there tooke priſoners. Emong the which ther was takẽ the conſtable of Fraũce, and the kinges chamberlayne.

acon-
ed.

Then the Engliſhemen ſpoyled and pyllled the towne of Caen, and bare ỷ pyllage to their ſhips, which after was conueyed by thẽ into Englande. When kynge Edwarde had thus ſpoiled and brent a part of the towne of Caen, and forced the Byſhop of Bayen and other captaynes to take the caſtel for theyr refuge, conſideryng the ſtrength of the ſame, he departed thence, and ſo ſpedde him toward the citie of Roan, the chiefe and principall cytye of Normandye.

But ỷ French king wyth a great power, was in thys while comen vnto Roan; and had broken the bridges, and ſtopped the paſſages in ſuche wyſe, that kyng Edward was fayne to leaue the waye, ſo that he coaſted towarde Parys. and came to a ſtronge towne called Vernon, and from thence to a towne named Amyrlene, at whiche townes he was reſiſted, and loſte ſome of hys ſouldiours. And the twelue day of Auguſt he came to a towne called Poyſye, and taryed there ſyxe dayes, and from thence yode vnto S. Germayne. And euer Syr Godfrey de Harcourte beynge in the vawarde, brent the townes and ſpoyled the countrey as he went.

And like as kinge Edwarde with hys Hooſte thus paſſed the countrey towarde Parys, ſo in lyke maner the French king with hys power, paſſed or held his way towarde the ſayde cytye, beyng ſo neare ſundrie times, that either hooſte had ſight of other. But the riuer of Seine was euer betwene theym, ſo that they myghte not ioyne in battayl. When kyng Edward was comen to a towne called S. Clowe, he ſet fyre therein, whiche was ſeene vnto Parys: put the citezyns in great feare, in ſo much (as witneſſeth the Frẽch chronicle) that if the Frenche kyng had not been there preſent, the citie ſhoulde haue been yelden vnto kyng Edwarde. Then kyng Edward ſeyng he might not paſſe the ryuer of Seyne, towarde the citie of Parys, occupyed all the chiefe Palaices and royall manoures where the Frenche kynges were accuſtomed for to ſoiourne and lye at, and dranke the wyne, and occupyed ſuche ſtuffe and neceſſaries, as he there fande. And at hys departynge ſette fyre vppon theym, and conſumed the more partie of theim. As at Poyzy one, at S. Germayne another, and at mounte Ioye the thyrde, and brente the towne of Poyzy, reſeruynge an houſe of Nunnes, whiche was founded by Philippe le Beawe, father vnto kynge Edwardes wyfe.

Here ye ſhal vnderſtand, that the authours and wryters fauoured theyr owne nacion. For Engliſh wryters ſaye: that the Frenche kyng fled, and brake the bridges as he went, to thend that the Engliſhe hoſt ſhoulde not wyn to the Frenchmen, to geue vnto theym battayle. And the French booke ſayeth, that king Edwarde fled, & woulde not abide battaile with the Frenche men, wherefore the French king brake the bridges to the entent, that the Englyſhmen ſhoulde not eſcape his daunger.

But howe it was (as ſaieth another writer, called Jhon Froyſarde) the commons of Fraunce thought it a great diſhonour vnto all the lande, that the Englyſh hoſte ſhoulde ſo paſſe through the heart or middle of Fraunce, and to occupye the kinges chiefe lodginges, and not to bee foughten with all that ſeaſon. Which might not bee after the opinion of the ſaide common people, withoute greate treaſon of ſuche as were nere about the kinge. Then kyng Edwarde was ſo cloſed by reaſon of breakinge of bridges, that he was forced to drawe backe, and to reedifie the bridge of Poyzy.

The whiche was repayred in ſo ſtronge wiſe, that he and his hoſt paſſed there ouer without peryll. How be it, that in the time of repairing of it, the French king ſent thither two. M. men to lette the ſaid werke: But the archers kept theim of with theyr ſhotte, in ſo ſharpe maner, that the more part of them wer ſlaine, and the werke perfited, as aboue is ſayde. Then Edwarde entred the countrey of Picardye, and the Frenche kinge remoued frõ S. Denis vnto S. Germaines, and from thence to a towne called Aubeuſle in Poyteau, & from thence to Antoygne. In this while king Edward with baner diſplayed came vnto the citie of Beauuayze, and aſſailed the towne: but the towne was ſo well garniſhed with ſouldiours which defẽded their enemies vigorouſly. Wherfore king Edwarde conſidering, he might not lightly wyn yͤ towne, ſet the bulwerkes on fire, and ſo departed thence, & yode vnto a place called in French Soygnouile or Blanke Tache. Where he paſſed the water of Sum, vpõ a Friday the .xxv. day of Auguſt, and ther lodged him & his people, nere vnto a foreſte called Creſſy, or Crecy. Wherof when the Frẽch king was ware, anon he ſped him from yͤ forenamed towne of Antoygne vnto Aubeuyle agayne: wher after he had refreſhed him & his people, he rode vnto an abbey faſte by the forenamed towne of Creſſy. In this paſſetime, Jhon duke of Normãdy & ſonne of Philip de Valoys, which as in the preceding yere is touched, layde hys ſiege vnto the caſtell of Auguillo, hearing that his father was thus warried wyth the kynge of Englande, brake vp hys ſyege, and came with his ſtrength vnto his father.

THeſe two hoſtes thus lodged within litle compaſſe, nere vnto the forenamed towne of Creſſy, vpõ the ſaterday folowing the feaſt of S. Bartholomew being yͤ xxvi. daye of yͤ moneth of Auguſt, either cruellye aſſailed other, and fought there a mortall & ſharpe bataile: wherof in the ende kyng Edward gloriouſly was victour, and chaſed the Frenche king, and ſlewe in that fight after yͤ ſaiyng

A cruell bataylе.

of moſte writers, the kyng of Bohemy or Beame, ſonne of Henry the Emperour, vii. or the. viii. the Duke of Loreyn, the Earle of Alenſon, brother vnto the Frenche kynge, Charles Earle of Bloys, the Earles of Flaunders, of Sancer, of Harcourt, and of Fyennes, with dyuers other, to the number of eyght Biſhoppes ⁊ Earles, and ſeuentene Lordes of name, and of bannerettes, knightes, and eſquyres, beyond the number ſixtene hundred: ſo that (as concludeth the Frenche hiſtorye) in that battayll was ſlayne the floure of the chiualrye of Fraunce, and of the commons vppon eyght thouſand men, and that the realme of Fraunce that daye ſuſtayned ſuch confuſion, that the like therof had not been ſene many yeres paſſed, and by the people and men of no reputacion, as archers by the violence of theyr importune ſhotte, whiche horſe nor man myght not ſtande agaynſt. Then the French kyng with a ſmall companye fled ſore hurte, vnto a towne called Broy, and lodged there the nyght folowynge. And kyng Edwarde beyng warned that another hoſt of enemyes was commynge toward hym, abode ſtyl in the ſame feelde, and ſet watches and made great fiers through the hoſte, and ſo continued till the mondaye folowing. Vpon whiche day in the mornyng apeared to them a new hooſte of Frenchmen, to the whiche they gaue battayle, and ſlew of theym moore in number, then was ſlaine vpon the Saterdaye before. But of the capytaines or men of name, the authour rehearſeth none.

Then kynge Edwarde gaue great thankes vnto God, of hys triumphant victorie, and after departed from that towne of Creſſye, and tooke hys waye towarde Monſtruell, ⁊ from thence to Boleyne, and laſtlye to Caleys. whereof then was captayne vnder the Frenche king a Burgonion knyght named Syr Ihon de Vyenne, to whome king Edward ſent, that he ſhoulde delyuer vnto him the ſayde towne of Caleys. But for the kinge receyued from him no comfortable aunſwere, he immediatlye layde his ſiege vnto the ſayde towne, whiche was vpon the thyrde daye of the moneth of September, and there abode a certayne of tyme, in makynge aſſaultes to the ſame. In whiche tyme and ſeaſon, the earle of Derbye lyyng at Burdeaux, and hauinge the rule of Gaſcoyne and Guyan, wanne diuers townes and holdes from the Frenchmen, as the townes called Sayntez in Poyteawe, ſainct Ihon de Angelye, and the towne of Poytiers. In the whiche he had excedynge treaſoure and rycheſſe, ſo that he and hys ſouldyours were greatly enryched, by the pyllage that they wanne at thoſe townes and countrey to theym adioynaunt. And when the ſayd Earle had ſpoyled the ſayde townes, and brente a great parte of the foreſayde cytye of Poytiers, and the kynges palays within the ſame, he then at his pleaſure returned vnto Burdeaux.

Caleys aſſauted.

In thys paſſetyme alſo, the Frenche kynge to the entent to haſte kynge Edwarde into England, ſent Dauid le Bruze, ſome tyme kynge of Scottes, into the lande with a ſtrong armye. The whiche gathered vnto him ſuch Lordes and Knyghtes of Scotlande as before tymes fauoured hys partie, and with theym entred the boundes of Northumberlande, and ſpoyled that countrey withoute pitie. But it ſhall appeare by other authours, that thys Dauid le Bruze at this day hadde recouered the crowne of Scotlande, and that Edwarde Bayloll was then dead, whiche before was kynge. Then it foloweth, when the archbyſhoppe of Yorke, with other lordes then left in Englande, heard tell that the Scottes were thus entred the lande, anone the ſayde archebyſhoppe with ſyr Henry Perſye, ſyr Rafe Neuyle, & ſyr Gylbert Umfreyle knightes, and other Gentlemen, as well ſpirituall as other, apparayled theym in theyr beſt maner, and ſpedde theym towarde the Scottes, ſo that they mette with theym, and gaue vnto theym battayle vpon the euen of S. Luke, or the ſeuen and twentye day of October, in a place faſt by Durham, called at that daye Neuyles croſſe. Where God ſhewed vnto the Englyſhmen ſuche grace, that they diſcomfited the Scottes, and ſlewe of theym great foyzon, and tooke priſoners the ſaide Dauid le Bruze, ſyr Willyam Dowglas, ſyr Thomlyn Fowkis, with other of the nobles of Scotlande, the whiche ſhortly after, were ſuerlye conueyed vnto the Tower of London, and there kept as priſoners.

The S
tes diſ
fited.

When kynge Edwarde from the thyrde day of September (as before is ſayde) hadde by ſundrye tymes aſſailed the towne of Caleys, and ſawe well he might not ſhortly wynne it, he prouided for him and his people, to lye there all the Wynter folowinge, ſo that for the lodgynge of him and hys hoſte, he made ſo manye houſes & lodges that it ſemed another Caleys. Wherfore in proceſſe of time, durynge that ſyege of yͤ victailers and ſuche as daylye reſorted to the kynge and hys hooſte, it was named newe Caleys. Where the kinge in proper perſon, abode all the winter folowing, and yͤ more parte of the next Sommer, as after ſhall appeare.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlvi.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlvii.

Thomas Legge.
Adam Bramſan.
Richard Baſingſtoke.
Anno. xxii.

AND in thys. xxii. yeare, kinge Edwarde after the ſtormye Wynter was paſſed, commaunded certaine ſhyppes to be ioyned moe in number vnto ſuch as before had kept the ſea, that no victayle ſhoulde come to the inhabitauntes of Caleys, ſo that the ſayde towne was fayne to holde them content with ſuche olde ſtore as they hadde, for any newe that to theym might be conueyed or ſent. And the kinges hooſte was plenteouſly victailed by the Flemminges, and by other victailers dayly comming out of Englande.

Kyng Philippe hauinge dayly worde of the ſtrength of hys enemies, and the encreaſe of theym, as by Eſterlinges, and other nacions, that king Edward had to him allied, and ſawe well yͤ without the ſaide towne were ſhortly reſcowed, it ſhould ſhortly be yelden into the handes of hys enemies, to the great hurt of all the realme of Fraunce: wherefore after a greate counſayle holden at Paris, he chaunged his money to his greate aduauntage, and ouer that ſet an impoſition vppon his commons to their greate grudge and murmure: that doen he tooke his leaue of S. Denis aboute the quindine of Paſche, and ſo yode vnto a town called Heſdom̄, wher he taried the gatherynge of hys hooſt, ſo long that it was nere vnto the feaſt of Marye Magdelein or his people were all aſſembled. At which ſeaſon he ſet forthward to the town of Caleys, to remoue the king of Englande from that ſiege: and ſped him ſo, that about the end of the moneth of Iulye, he drewe nere vnto Caleis. The whiche before his comming was yelden vnto king Edwarde, ſo that the French chronicle ſheweth nothing of the French kings ſhamefull departing, like as it is rehearſed in the Engliſhe chronicle, & of other wryters that wryte of the ſame.

Then, after moſte wryters the towne of Caleis was yelden vnto king Edward about yͤ end of September, after the king had continued ther his ſiege an whole yere and ſomedeale more. After receite wherof, he taried in the town vpon a moneth, & voyded cleane all the old inhabitauntes and Frēch men, & ſtored it wͭ Engliſhmen, & ſpecially with Kentiſhe men. And when he had ſet that towne in a ſuer order and guiding, and graūted a peace for .ix. monethes at yͤ requeſt of two Cardinals, ſent frō the forenamed Clement the ſixte, to be holden betwene hin and the French king, he ſailed with great triumph into England, and came vnto London aboute the feaſt of S. Romaine, or the .xxiii. daye of October, where he was ioyouſlye receyued of the citiezins, & ſo conueyed vnto Weſtminſter.

In this yeare alſo, a Engliſhe knighte called ſyr Thomas Agorne, captaine of the Roche of Arian, before ſpoken of in the .xx. yere of this kynge, was fierſlye warred of ſyr Charles de Bloys. But after many bikeringes and ſkirmiſhes, a day of battayle was ſet betwene the ſaid Charles and Thomas. Or after the Frenche bokes declaration, yͤ ſaid Charles aſſauting that towne vppon one partie, the ſaid ſir Thomas wyth a companye of ſtalworth archers, and ſouldiours, iſſued out at another part of the towne, and beſet the ſaid Charles and his companye aboute, and aſſailed theim in ſuch wiſe that in the end the more party of hys companye was taken and ſlayne, and the ſaide ſir Charles there tyken amonge the other. And of men of name were there ſlayne, the Vicount of Roan, the Lorde Dernall, the Lord of Quintine, with Sir William his ſonne, the lord of the Caſtel of

Brete

tyme kynge of Scottes, into the lande with a ſtrong armye. The whiche gathered vnto him ſuch Lordes and Knyghtes of Scotlande as before tymes fauoured hys partie, and with theym entred the boundes of Northumberlande, and ſpoyled that countrey withoute pitie. But it ſhall appeare by other authours, that thys Dauid le Bruze at this day hadde recouered the crowne of Scotlande, and that Edwarde Bayloll was then dead, whiche before was kynge. Then it foloweth, when the archbyſhoppe of Yorke, with other lordes then left in Englande, heard tell that the Scottes were thus entred the lande, anone the ſayde archebyſhoppe with ſyr Henry Perſye, ſyr Rafe Neuyle, & ſyr Gylbert Umfreyle knightes, and other Gentlemen, as well ſpirituall as other, apparayled theym in theyr beſt maner, and ſpedde theym towarde the Scottes, ſo that they mette with theym, and gaue vnto theym battayle vpon the euen of S. Luke, or the ſeuen and twentye day of October, in a place faſt by Durham, called at that daye Neuyles croſſe. Where God ſhewed vnto the Englyſhmen ſuche grace, that they diſcomfited the Scottes, and ſlewe of theym great foyzon, and tooke priſoners the ſaide Dauid le Bruze, ſyr Willyam Dowglas, ſyr Thomlyn Fowkis, with other of the nobles of Scotlande, the whiche ſhortly after, were ſuerlye conueyed vnto the Tower of London, and there kept as priſoners.

The S
tes diſ
fited.

When kynge Edwarde from the thyrde day of September (as before is ſayde) hadde by ſundrye tymes aſſailed the towne of Caleys, and ſawe well he might not ſhortly wynne it, he prouided for him and his people, to lye there all the Wynter folowinge, ſo that for the lodgynge of him and hys hoſte, he made ſo manye houſes & lodges that it ſemed another Caleys. Wherfore in proceſſe of time, durynge that ſyege of yͤ victailers and ſuche as daylye reſorted to the kynge and hys hooſte, it was named newe Caleys. Where the kinge in proper perſon, abode all the winter folowing, and yͤ more parte of the next Sommer, as after ſhall appeare.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xlvi.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xlvii.

Thomas Legge. { Adam Bramſan.
Richard Baſingſtoke. } Anno.xxii.

AND in thys.xxii. yeare, kinge Edwarde after the ſtormye Wynter was paſſed, commaunded certaine ſhyppes to be ioyned moe in number vnto ſuch as before had kept the ſea, that no victayle ſhoulde come to the inhabitauntes of Caleys, ſo that the ſayde towne was fayne to holde them content with ſuche olde ſtore as they hadde, for any newe that to theym might be conueyed or ſent. And the kinges hooſte was plenteouſly victailed by the Flemminges, and by other victailers dayly comming out of Englande.

Kyng Philippe hauinge dayly worde of the ſtrength of hys enemies, and the encreaſe of theym, as by Eſterlinges, and other nacions, that king Edward had to him allied, and ſawe well yͤ without the ſaide towne were ſhortly reſcowed, it ſhould ſhortly be yelden into the handes of hys enemies, to the great hurt of all the realme of Fraunce: wherefore after a greate counſayle holden at Paris, he chaunged his money to his greate aduauntage, and ouer that ſet an impoſition vppon his commons to their greate grudge and murmure: that doen he tooke his leaue of S. Denis aboute the quindine of Paſche, and ſo yode vnto a town called Heſdom̃, wher he taried the gatherynge of hys hooſt, ſo long that it was nere vnto the feaſt of Marye Magdelein or his people were all aſſembled. At which ſeaſon he ſet forthward to the town of Caleys, to remoue the king of Englande from that ſiege: and ſped him ſo, that about the end of the moneth of Julye, he drewe nere vnto Caleis. The whiche before his comming was yelden vnto king Edwarde, ſo that the French chronicle ſheweth nothing of the French kings ſhamefull departing, like as it is rehearſed in the Engliſhe chronicle, ⁊ of other wryters that wryte of the ſame.

Then, after moſte wryters the towne of Caleis was yelden vnto king Edward about yͤ end of September, after the king had continued ther his ſiege an whole yere and ſomedeale more. After receite wherof, he taried in the town vpon a moneth, ⁊ voyded cleane all the old inhabitauntes and Frēchmen, ⁊ ſtored it wͭ Engliſhmen, ⁊ ſpecially with Kentiſhe men. And when he had ſet that towne in a ſuer order and guiding, and grāuted a peace for .ix. monethes at yͤ requeſt of two Cardinals, ſent frō the forenamed Clement the ſixte, to be holden betwene hin and the French king, he ſailed with great triumph into England, and came vnto London aboute the feaſt of S. Romaine, or the .xxiii. daye of October, where he was ioyouſlye receyued of the citiezins, ⁊ ſo conueyed vnto Weſtminſter.

In this yeare alſo, a Engliſhe knighte called ſyr Thomas Agorne, captaine of the Roche of Arian, before ſpoken of in the .xx. yere of this kynge, was fierſlye warred of ſyr Charles de Bloys. But after many bikeringes and ſkirmiſhes, a day of battayle was ſet betwene the ſaid Charles and Thomas. Or after the Frenche bokes declaration, yͤ ſaid Charles aſſauting that towne vppon one partie, the ſaid ſir Thomas wyth a companye of ſtalworth archers, and ſouldiours, iſſued out at another part of the towne, and beſet the ſaid Charles and his company aboute, and aſſailed theim in ſuch wiſe that in the end the more party of hys companye was taken and ſlayne, and the ſaide ſir Charles there tyken amonge the other. And of men of name were there ſlayne, the Vicount of Roan, the Lorde Dernall, the Lord of Quintine, with Sir William his ſonne, the lord of the Caſtel of

Brete

of Brette, the lorde of Roche, and ſyr Geffrey Turneuewe, wyth many other, whiche I ouerpaſſe. And after the ſayd Charles was healed of ſuch woundes as he had receyued in that fight, he was cōueyed into Englande, and there kept as priſoner.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlviii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xlviii.

Jhon Luſkyn. { Henry Pycarde. Symonde Doſeley. } Anno. xxiiii.

AND in thys xxiii. yere, fel great contynuall rayne, from mydſomer to chriſtmas wherof enſued excedinge floddes. By reaſon whereof the grounde was ſoore corrupted ſo that dyuers inconueniences enſued vpon the ſame, as ſyckeneſſe and other, as in the yeares folowyng ſhall apeare. And in Fraūce this yeare the people dyed wonderfullye in diuers places of the realme, ſo vehemently that in the citie of Parys died in thys yeare or lytle more, fyftie thouſand people, and at ſ. Deuis beyond fouretene thouſand. And in Italy and many other countreys, this mortalitie about this ſeaſon reygned alſo importunely, and that in Hethennes as well as in chriſtendome.

And in the ende of thys yeare, aboute the ende of Auguſte, thys mortallitie began in diuers places of Englande, and ſpecially at London, and ſo continued to the ſaide moneth of Auguſt nexte enſuinge. And vpon that enſued ſterilitie or bareynes, aſwell of the ſea as of the lande, ſo that vitail & corne was more ſcant then before.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlviii. Anno domini. M.CCC.xlix.

William Turke. { Adam Bury. Rafe Lynne. } Anno. xxiii.

IN this xxiiii. yere the mortalitie beforeſayde in Englande, and ſpecially in London mooſte feruentlye raigninge, a treaſon (as after appeareth) was conſpyred, to haue broughte the towne of Caleys agayne to the French kinges poſſeſſion. King Edward before time had committed one of the towres of Caleys vnto a Januay, to whō he much trūſted. With the whiche Januay a knight of Burgoyn named ſyr Godfrey de Charny, was very familier, in ſo much that the ſaid ſyr Godfrey at cōuenient leaſure, brake vnto the ſaid Januay, for the betraiyng of the towne of Caleys. The whiche gaue vnto him liking anſwere, ſo that ẏ ſaid Januay agreed for a certen ſūme of money to bee payde in hande,

Caleis like to bee betrayed.

to delyuer vnto the ſayd ſyr Godfrey, and ſuche other as he than ſhould brynge with him, the Towre that he than had in kepyng: by meane wherof he ſhould ſhortly after haue yͤ rule of the towne. In the tyme of driuynge and of appointinge of whiche bargayne (as ſaieth the Frenche chronicle) this Januay ſent ſecrete worde vnto the king of England, requiryng him in ſecrete wiſe to come vnto Caleys. The whiche then holding his Chriſtmas at Haueryng Bower in Eſſex, vppon the morow after Newe yeares daye, toke his ſhippinge, and landed yͤ night at Caleys in ſo ſecrete maner, that few of the towne knewe of his there being.

When the day of appoyntment of delyuery of thys foreſayde towre was commen, and thys Januay had receyued his paiment, at an houre aſſigned betwene the ſaid ſyr Godfrey and him, a token was geuen by this ſayd Januay, that the Frenchmen ſhould draw nere vnto the ſayd towre, to wyn their pray.

Then the ſaid ſyr Godfrey with a certaine number, came within the daunger of the towne of Caleys, warninge the reſidue of hys companye that they ſhould tarye there til he were entred yͤ towne, and then at his ſending, to come in all ſpedie wyſe. But ſo ſoone as the ſaide ſyr Godfrey was neare vnto the towre, a buſhment of ſouldiours were ſent out at a poſterne, the whiche cloſed him and his Frenchmen vpon all ſydes, & ſlew of theym many. Among the which ſyr Henry de Boys knight, with Gautier de Valence, and ſir Roberte of Beauays knightes, were ſlaine. And the ſaid ſyr Godfrey taken was ſoore wounded, & the lord of Mountmorency eſcaped with great daunger, the whiche gaue warning vnto the other company and returned them into Fraunce. Then the ſaid Godfrey de Charney was layd vpō a borde, and ſo preſented vnto kinge Edward, the whiche had ſuch pitie of him, that he cōmaunded his owne ſurgions to loke vnto him, and to cure him in his beſt maner. And when he was ſomedeale cured, he was ſent as a priſoner with other into England.

The cōpaſſiō of king Edwarde.

In this yere alſo the king cauſed to be coyned grotes and halfe grotes, the whiche lacked af the weyght of his former coyne. ii. ſ. vi. d. in a. li. Troy. And about the ende of Auguſt, ſeaſed the mortalitie or death in London, the whiche was ſo vehement and ſharpe wythin the ſayde cytye, that ouer yͤ bodyes buryed in churches, and churche yardes, monaſteryes, and other accuſtomed buriyng places, were buryed that ſame yeare, in the Charter houſe yarde of London, fiftie thouſand perſons, and aboue.

Great deth in London

Thys yere alſo, was that yere of Jubylie or cleane remiſſion, whiche is kepte at Rome, at euery fiftie winter ende, lyke as the yere of Jubilie or grace is continued at Caunterbury.

And in thys yeare alſo, by the greate laboure of the two aboue ſayd Cardynalles, ſent from Clement the ſyxte, was a peace concluded betwene the two Kynges of England & Fraunce for a yere, nere vnto the towne of Caleys.

where, for the ſtabliſhinge of the ſaid peace for the ſayd yere, aſſembled the two ſayde cardinalles.
And for the king of England, the biſhop of Norwiche, the treaſourer and chiefe chaunceller of the king, with other vnto him by the kyng aſſigned. And for ẏ French kinge, was there the byſhoppe of Laone, and the abbot of S. Denis with other.

And the. xxiii. daye of the moneth of Auguſte. In this yeare of our lord. xiii. hundreth and fyftye, died Philip de Valoyes kinge of Fraunce.

The
of phil
Valoy

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlix. Anno domini. M.CCC.l.

Richard Killingbury. { Jhon Notte. / William Worceter. } Anno. xxv.

AND in this . xxv. yere aboute ẏ feaſt of the decolacion of S. Jhon Baptiſt, in the latter ende of Auguſt, a noble man of Spain called syr Charles to whom king Jhon of Fraunce had newly geuen the earldome of Angoleſme, entendinge to winne ſome honour vpon the Engliſhmē with a ſtrong nauy of Spaynardes entred the Engliſh ſtreames, and did muche harme vnto kyng Edwardes frendes. So that the king about the ſeaſon aboueſaid, met with the ſaid nauy, vpon the coaſt of Winchelſie, wher betewne the king and them was a long & mortall fight, to the great loſſe of much people vpon bothe parties: But in the ende, God ſent vnto the kinge victorie, ſo that he chaſed his enemies, and wanne from theym. xxii. of their ſhippes after moſt writers wyth manye pryſoners.

Kinges Edwardes victorie vpon the ſea.

And thys yere ſyr Thomas of Agorne, which as in the. xxi. yere of this kinges raygne, tooke priſoner ſyr Charles de Bloyes and other was ſlayne by chaunce medle, of a knighte of Fraunce or Britayne, called Syr Rauffe de Caours.

And thys yeare alſo, were ſolempne meſſengers ſent to Rome, for to conclude, and perfyte the peace betwene the two kynges of England and of Fraunce, ſo that king Edward ſhould reſygne and geue vp al his title & clayme that he made vnto the crowne of Fraunce, and the Frenche kynge ſhoulde clearely geue vnto hym al the Duchye of Guyan, wyth all ſuche landes as anye tyme before were taken by anye of his progenitours from it. And that kynge Edward and hys heyres kynges, ſhoulde freelye holde and occupye the ſayde duchye, without doinge of homage to anye Frenche kyng after that daye. But the concluſion of this matter, was ſo prolonged and deferred by the Pope, and ſuche delayes as daylye bene vſed in the courte of Rome, that the Earle of Derbye with other, which were appoynted for ẏ king of England, returned ẇout ſpede of their cauſe. Wherfore king Edward made new prouiſion to war vpon king Jhon of Fraunce.

Anno domini.M.CCC.l. Anno domini.M.CCC.li.

Andrew Awbry.
Jhon Worth.
Gibbon Staindrope.
Anno.xxvi.

caſtel
Guynes
en.

IN thys.xxvi.yere, the caſtell of Guynes, was yelden vnto the Engliſhmen dwellyng in Caleys, which as teſtifieth the Frenche chronicle, was doen by treaſon of a French man, named Guyllyam de Beauconroy. For the whiche treaſon the ſayd Guyllyam was ſhortlye after put in execution in the town of Amys.

And aboute the myddel of Auguſt vpon the euen of oure Ladye Aſſumpcion, Syr Guy de Neale then Marſhal of Fraunce, wyth a ſtronge companye, gaue battayle vnto the Engliſhmen, then beyng in Brytayne, in the whyche the ſayde ſyr Guy wyth the Lorde of Brykebet, and the Chaſteleyne of Beauuays, wyth manye other noble menne, were ſlaine, and many taken priſoners.

Anno domini.M.CCC.li. Anno domini.M.CCC.lii.

Adam Fraunces.
Jhon Peche.
Jhon Stodeney.
Anno.xxvii.

y ſom-

IN the ſommer of this.xxvii.yeare, it was ſo drie that it was many yeres after called the drie ſommer. For frõ the latter ende of March, tyll the latter ende of Julye, fell lytle rayne or none, by reaſon whereof, manye inconueniences euſned. And one thynge, whyche is ſpeciallye noted, corne the yere folowinge was ſcant, wherof the pryce thys yere beganne to enhaunce greatlye, and Beaſes and Mottons were alſo deere: for the ſcantneſſe of the graſſe, and the paſture, and that as well was experte in all the realme of Fraunce, as it was in the Iſle of Englande.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lii. Anno domini.M.CCC.liii.

Adam Fraũces.
Jhon Welde.
Jhon Lytell.
Anno.xxviii.

AND in thys eyght and twentye yeare, kynge Edwarde holdynge hys Parlyament at Weſtmynſter, amonge other thynges there enacted, ſoone after Pentecoſt created the Earle of Derbye, Duke of Lancaſter, and ſyr Rauffe Stafford was created Earle of Staffords. Then this duke of Lancaſter was ſent agayne ouer the ſea, where in the ende of this yere (as witneſſeth Jhon Froyſarde) he was appeaſed of yͤ Duke of Briſwike, a duke of the countrey of Almayne, of certain wordes which were contrarye his honour, for the which he waged batayle with the ſaide Duke in the courte of the French kinge.

Then this Henrye, whyche of ſome wryters, is named Henrye Bolingbroke, Duke of Lancaſter, purchaſed his ſaufe conduite of the Frenche kyng, and kept his daye appoynted for that bataile, in a feelde called in Frenche, La preaux clers. Where for theym was ordeyned a place lyſted and cloſed in goodly wiſe, king Jhon being preſent with the more part of his nobles of Fraunce. And there came in firſt into that field, the forenamed Duke appellaunt, and after thys noble Duke of Lancaſter, to the greate honoure of all Englande. And ſoone after (dyuers obſeruaunces, according vnto the lawe of armes dooen) and ſolempne othes taken, either ſette in the reſt to haue ronne the firſt courſe.

But then kynge Jhon of his ſpeciall grace ceaſed the matter, and tooke the quarell into hys handes, ſo that eyther of theym departed the feelde withoute any stroke ſtrikynge, and pacified the appeale vnto the honoure of the Duke of Lancaſter, as witneſſeth the Frenche booke, notwithſtandinge he was the French kinges enemie.

And ſone after the ſayd duke of Lancaſter, with other nobles aſſigned vnto him by the kynge of Englande, went vnto Auinion, with the archebiſhoppe of Roan, then Chauncellour of the realme of Fraunce, and alſo the Duke of Burbon, and other that were appoynted for the King of Fraunce, to conclude efte a peace betwene their two Princes aforeſayde. The whiche at the Citie beforeſaide were hearde at length, before the newe Pope, the whiche was then named Innocent the ſixte, whiche alſo lyke vnto hys Predeceſſour, was a Frenchman borne, and the Cardynall of Lymoſyne a towne in Normandye, and called by hys proper name, Stephan Aubert.

In concluſion, after greate argument made on eyther partye before the Pope of Rome, and his counſayle, finallye it was there agreed that the peace betwene the two ſayde Kynges ſhoulde bee kepte and holden inuiolate, tyll the midſomer then next folowyng.

Anno domini.M.CCC.liii.

Anno domini.M.CCC.liiii.

Thomas Legge. { William Tontingham. / Richard Smert. } Anno.xxix.

AND in thys xxix. yeare, king Edward by the aduice of hys counſayle, for ſo much as the townes of Flaunders, brake their promyſe before tyme made, and helde not the bandes of amitie by them promiſed, by the lyfe of Jaques de Artiuile, but fanoured the French kinges partie, therefore he wythdrewe from theim the markettes and ſtaples of wolles, that in ſundrie townes of Flaunders hadde then lately by the prouiſion of the foreſayde Jaques, to their great aduauntage vſed to bee kept, and ordeyned then the ſayd ſtaples to be holden in ſundrie good townes of England, as Weſtminſter, Chicheſter, Lyncolne, Briſtowe, and Caunterbury. And ſhortly after Eaſter, the French king ſent hys eldeſt ſonne Charles, Dolphyne of Uienne, into Normãdye, for to take the rule of the countrey, and ſpecially for to ſeaſe certen landes and caſtels, which at that day belonged vnto the king of Nauerne which then was out of the French kinges fauoure, for yͤ death of ſyr Charles of Spain, cõſtaſtle lately of Fraunce, that he had by hys meanes murthered in a town called Aygle in Normandy, ii. yeres before. And while yͤ dolphyn was thus buſied in Normãdy, he made ſuch meanes to the rulers therof, that they graũted him ayde of. iii. M. men for. iii. monethes at their proper coſtes & charges. Of thys ſond after ſprang ſuch tidinges, yͤ the king of Englande was enformed that the French king had geuen to his ſonne Charles, the duchy of Normandy, with all Gaſcoine and Guyan; and how yͤ Normans had graũted the ſaid Charles, iii. M. men for. iii. monethes, to war at their coſtes on the Engliſhmen, which (as the Frenche boke teſtifieth) was graũted him only to defend yͤ king of Nauerne that came to Conſtantine ſhortly after, to repoſſeſſe ſuch lãds as the dolphin of his had there ſeaſed, & for that, made war vpon the dolphin. But were it thus, or otherwiſe, trueth is as diuers autours agreen, in October & ende of this yere, prince Edward with a great hoſt eutred Gaſcoyne, & paſſed by Tholous, & the riuer of Gerounde or Geron, & ſo by Carcaſſion, and brent the bulwerkes of that citie, and from thence to Narbon, in pilling and ſpoiling as he went.

In the ſame yere king Edward with hys power, landed at hys towne of Caleys, where he reſted him by the time of al this mayres yeres. And in this yere was the houſe of the freres Auguſtynes of London finiſhed, whiche was reedified by ſyr Humfrey Bohum Earle of Hertford & Eſſex, whoſe bodye lyeth buried in the quier of the ſaide houſe or churihe, before the high aulter.

Anno domini. M.CCC.liiii. Anno domini. M.CCC.lv.

Simon Fraunces. { Thomas Forſter. / Thomas Brandon. } Anno. xxx.

And in this thirtie yere, the kinge (as ye before haue hearde) beyng at Caleys, ſhortlye after the feaſt of Alhalowen tooke hys iourney toward the French king and continued his iourney till he came to a towne named Heſden, and brake there the Frenche kynges parke, and tooke ſuche pleaſures as him there lyked. In the which ſeaſon of his there beinge, tidinges were brought vnto him that the Scottes had gotten the towne of Berwike, and how they made dayly aſſautes to wynne the caſtell. Wherefore the king made haſty ſpede, and retourned to Caleys, and ſo into Englande. For whiche cauſe ſaieth the Frenche chronicle, that king Edward fled from the Frenche kyng, that then with a ſtronge power came from Amias vnto S. Omers.

Berwike recouered.

Then king Edwarde ſped hym into Scotland, ſo that in the moneth of Ianuary, and beginning of the thirtie yeare of his raygne, and .xxvii. day of the ſaid moneth, he layde his ſiege to the towne of Barwike, and it was yelden vnto him in ſhorte proceſſe of tyme after. And that doone, he entred further into the land, and ſubdued the chiefe townes and holdes as he went, & purſued the Scottiſhe king ſo narowly, that in the end he was fayn to ſubmit him to the kings grace as priſoner, & reſigned his power into yͤ kings hãd. And when kinge Edward had ſet yͤ countrey in a rule, he retourned with the Scottiſhe king agayne into Englande, and called hys court of parlament at Weſtmynſter. In the whiche among other things to the kinges aduaũtage, was graunted vnto the mayntenaunce of his warres, fifty ſhyllinges of a ſacke of wolle, for the terme of ſixe yeres. But it continued lenger, thoughe the Marchauntes ſtaplers there at grudged.

The ry of Edw

Then let vs now retourne vnto that noble prince Edward, the fyrſt begotten ſonne of the kyng, whiche all thys tyme warred vpon the French men, as in the preceding yere is touched. So that laſtly he retourned to Burdeaux, with manye riche priſoners and pillages, to the greate honoure of him ſelfe, & great aduauncement of his ſouldiours.

And albeit, that in that countres, whiche he then paſſed, were the Earles of Armenacke, and of Foys, of Poytiers, and of Cleremount, with Iames de Burbon, and manye other knightes, the whiche had the double people (as teſtifieth the Frenche chronicle) that the prince had, yet paſſed he from Tholous to Nerbon, and from Narbon to Burdeaux without battaile. And after yͤ prynce had ther a while reſted hym & his people, & ſent dyuers of his priſoners into Englande, he with hys hoſte entred the prouince or countrey of Berraye, in the moneth of Iuly, & made therein ſharpe war. In which ſeaſon the duke of Lancaſter with the ayde of Philippe, brother vnto the kinge of Nauerne, was entred the countrey of Conſtantine, and ſo with a cõpanye of .iiii. M. men, vnto a place called Liſeux, and .viii. wekes after repayred the ſayde caſtell.

When kynge Ihon had leuyed

many great ſummes of many, to the great grudge of the commons as in the ſtorye of kyng Jhon ſhal be touched, and prepared his hoſt he firſt made towarde the duke of Lancaſter: But the ſaid duke had ſo fortified the paſſage, that he might not win to him withoute greate ieopardy and daunger. Wherfore, he left that waye, and yode to a Caſtell named Bretnell and layde his ſiege therunto, and wanne it in the ende of.viii. wekes, by apoyntment. Then he yode to the Caſtel of Chartres, and taried ther a certayn time for more people, and from thence tooke his iourney towarde prince Edward. The which Prince in this ſeaſon was paſſed the ryuer of Loyre, or Leyr, and ſo by the towne of Romungtyn, where he was encountred of diuers nobles of Fraunce, and had with them a ſharpe conflict, but in the ende God ſent vnto him the victorie, ſo that he ſlew manye of his enemies, and tooke of them many priſoners. Amonge the which, were taken the lorde of Craon, and a knight called ſyr Boucyquante, with diuers other to the number (as ſayth the Frēch booke) of.liiii. perſons. And when he had ſent the ſayd priſoners vnder ſafe kepynge to Burdeaux, he ſped him towarde Towris.

And the duke of Lancaſter w his company, after he had repayred the foreſayde Caſtel of Liſeux and beſtowed ſuch ordenaunce, as the French men for haſte lefte behinde them at the ſayde ſiege, he than toke his way towarde Bertneyl, and from thens vnto Eurour, in brennynge and waſtynge the countrey and townes as he went, and from thens to Verneil in Perch, and tooke by ſtrengthe bothe the towne and the Caſtell. And when he had done muche of his wil in that countrey, he retur into Britayne, and held him ther.

Kyng Jhon, than as aboue is ſayde, holdyng his way towarde Prince Edwarde, came to the citie of Towrys, to fortifie the ſayd towne agaynſt the ſayde Prynce Edwarde. Wherof hearynge the Prince, tooke his waye towarde Poytiers.

In holdyng of whiche way (as teſtifieth the Frenche Booke) a parte of his hoſt met with an hoſt of Frenchemen, and gaue vnto them battayle, and at length chaſed the multitude of them, & ſlewe an. C. ſouldiours, and tooke vpon lx. priſoners. Amonge the whiche were taken the Erle of Sauncer, the erle of Jurigny, the lord Chaſteelin mayſter of the kynges Palays, & a knight named ſyr Guilliam de Daneham, the which priſoners wer alſo ſent vnto Burdeaux: And ſoone after Prince Edwarde lodged him and hys hooſte nere vnto Poytiers. And ſhortlie after that came the Frenche kyng and lodged him in a place, called in French Chamgny, nere alſo vnto Poytiers, ſo that the frontes of bothe hoſtes lay within a quarter of a myle.

Than the Cardinall of Perygourt, ſent from Poppe Innocēt the ſixt, rode betwene the kynge and the Prince ſondry times, to haue agreed ſome treatye & peace betwene them, yf it myght by his labour haue ben optayned. But when he ſaw his laboure myghte not preuayle, he departed to Poytiers, and taryed there the ende of the battayle. whiche was foughten vpon a monday, the. xix. daye of September, in the yeare of our Lorde. M. CCC. lvi. and the beginnyng of the. vi. yere of the ſaid kynge Jhons reygne, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

THan as before is ſayde, for ſo much, as the foreſayde Cardynall, might not purchaſe anye treaty or meane of peace, betwene theſe two prynces, prouiſion was made vppon bothe ſides, to try theyr matter by mortall battayle, ſo that aboute the houre of twoo at after noone of the foreſayd Monday, the duke of Athenes or Athens with ſuch other nobles, as were with hym in the Frenche kynges vawarde, ſet vpon the Engliſh hoſte. The which was mightlie fenced, with wood and trees, in ſuch wyſe that the French ſperes might not win vnto them. And ther with the ſhot of the Engliſhmen was ſo fiers & ſharpe, that it tourned ouer horſe and man, and while the ſayd duke of Athenes, with ſir Jhon de Cleremount, thã Marſhal of Frau̅ce with other, thus aſſayled the Prince and his people vpon one parte, the Duke of Normaundye kyng Jhons eldeſt ſonne, and the Duke of Orleaunce, the kynges brother, aſſayled him vpon another parte.

The whiche twoo Dukes wer leders of two ſtronge hoſtes. But as ſayth yͤ French chronicle, theſe three battailes did litle ſcathe vnto the Engliſhmen: But by reaſon of their ſhot they wer ſo wou̅ded and many ſlayne, that the reſidue fled, to the great diſcomforte of the Frenche kinges people.

Than kynge Jhon in all that he myght comforted his people, & wyth a freſhe companie, ſet vpon the Englyſhemen, that all wayes kepte theym whole together, and receyued the French menne vpon theyr weapons poynctes, with ſo great force, that in the ende, the French men gaue backe, and were vanquiſhed by the helpe of God, and ſlayne (as witneſſeth the ſaid French Chronicle) to the number of. viii. hundred men of armes, beſide other mean ſoudiours. Amo̅g the whiche of noble menne were ſlayne, the duke of Burbone, the Duke of Athenes, ſyr Jhon de Cleremount marſhal of Fraunce, ſyr Reygnold Campan Baneret, the which that day bare the Oryflambe, a ſpeciall relike that the Frenche kynges vſe to beare beefore them in al battayles, and the Byſhop of Chalons, with diuers other to the number of. liiii. banerettes, beſide knightes and other. And of priſoners taken at that battayle, was Jhon kynge of Fraunce, Philip his. iiii. ſonne ſyr Jaques of Burbon, Earle of Poyteau and brother to the duke of Burbone, before ſlayne, ſyr Jhon of Artoys Erle of Ewe, ſyr Charles his brother Erle of Longeuyle, ſyr Gyffard coſin germain vnto the French kynge, ſyr Jhon his ſonne and heyre, doctour william archebyſhoppe of Sence, ſyr Symon Melon brother vnto the Erle of Cancaruile, and Earle of Vandature, the Erles of Dampmartyn, of Vendoſme, of Salyſbruche, of Moyſon yͤ Marſhall of Deneham, and manie other, as Banerettes, knightes, and men of name, to the number (as ſayth the Frenche cronicle) of .xv. hundred and aboue. And from this battayle eſcaped by ſlyght, Charles eldeſt ſonne of kynge Jhon, & duke of Normandy, the Duke of Orleaunce, and the duke of Aniow, with few other of great fame, the whiche yode ſtreyt vnto Parys. Where ſhortly after was called a great counſayle, for matters which in the ſtory of kynge Jhon ſhall after be ſhewed.

Whan the fielde was thus fyniſhed, Prynce Edwarde after due thankes and louinges geuen to God for this triumphant vyctory, he with his ſayde pryſoners ſpedde hym towarde Burdeaux, where the ſayd kynge was kepte tyll Eaſter after.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.lv. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lvi.

Henry Picharde.
Richarde Notyngham
Thomas Doſell.
Anno.xxxi.

AND in the .xxxi. yere, that is to ſay xvi. day of the moneth of Apryl, the noble Prince Edwarde than vpon the age of .xxviii. yeres, tooke ſhippinge with his priſoners at Burdeaux, and arriued in Englande ſhortly after.

And the .xxiiii. day of May, he was with great honour and gladneſſe, receyued of the Cityzins of London, and ſo conueied vnto the kynges palays at Weſtmynſter. Where the kynge ſittynge in hys eſtate, in Weſtmynſter hall, receiued him with due honour, and after conueyed, to lodginge for hym prouyded, where he lay a certayne ſeaſon. And after was the ſayde Frenche kynge had vnto a place called the Sauoy, whiche than was a pleaſaūt Palays and faire lodgyng, belongyng at that time vnto the Duke of Lancaſter, and after brent and deſtroyed, by Jak Straw and his fawtours, in the iii. yeare of Richarde the ſeconde next kynge of England, as in the ſayd yere after ſhall be ſhewed.

In which place the ſayd Frenche kyng lay longe after.

And in the wynter folowynge were royall Juſtes holden in Smithfielde of London, and manie and goodly knightly feates of armes doone, to the great honour of the kynge, and all his realme, and gladding of all beholders. At the whiche diſporte was preſent, the kyng of England, the French kyng, and the kynge of Scottes, with many noble eſtates of al. iii. prouinces or kyngdomes, where of the more partie of the ſtraungers were than pryſoners.

Juſtes holden in Smithfeld

Anno domini. M.CCC.lvi. Anno domini. M. CCC.lvii.

Jhon Stody.
Stephan Caundiſhe.
Barthelmew Froſtlig
Anno.xxxii.

IN this.xxxii.yere, Innocent the ſixte of that name, then Pope, ſente into England two Cardinals, to treat of peace betwene the two kinges. The which two Cardinals taried the more parte of a yere in London & other places of the lande, to brynge theyr purpoſe to ſome effecte, but they ſped litle of theyr cauſe.

And in this yere after moſt writers, Dauid le Bruze kynge of Scottes was delyuered from the Caſtell of Odyhame at his libertie, whan he had putte kynge Edwarde in a ſurety of an hundred thouſãd markes for his rãſome.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lvii. Anno domini.M.CCC.lviii.

Jhon Luffyn. { Jhon Barnes.
Jhon Burys. } Anno.xxxiii.

IN this.xxxiii.yere as witneſſeth the French chronicle, ſyr Robert Knolles, James Pipe, wt other of theyr retinew, warred in Britayne. And as teſtifieth the French chronicle, in the moneth of March, and tenthe daye of the ſayde moneth, the ſayd captaines with one whiche the Frenche Booke nameth Thomlyn Fouke, came earlye in the mornynge vnto a towne that was neare vnto Ancerre called Regennez beynge in the rule of Englyſhmen, where the ſayd captaynes takynge with them more ſtrengthe, yode ſtreight vnto the foreſayde towne of Ancerre being within two Engliſhe miles, and ſcalled the walles with ladders, and quit theim ſo manfully, that they had the rule of the towne or the Sunne riſynge. And in that Caſtell was taken pryſoner, ſyr Guilliam de Chalyn, the ſonne of the Earle of Ancerre, his wife, & manie other.

The taking of Ancerre.

In takynge of which towne and call, few fookes were ſlayne, how bee it, there came of armed men, aboue twoo thouſande, as ſouldiours to defende the towne. Then the Engliſhmen ſearched ſo neare, that as the common fame wente, they founde Jewels, as they had bene preuy to the hidyng of them, and that of great value. Amonge which (as ſayth the ſaid chronicle) they founde certayne ſkinnes, which were valued at.v.M.motons of golde

Ye ſhall vnderſtand that a moton is a coyne vſed in Fraunce & Brittayne, and is of value after the rate of ſterlinge money vpon v.ſhyllynges or there aboute.

A mot of gold

When the Engliſhmen had pilled and ſpoyled the towne by the ſpace of.viii.dayes, and raunſomed ſuch as wer of any ſubſtaũce, then they ſhewed vnto the rulers of the towne, that they wolde ſet it on fire, excepte that they would geue vnto them a certayne ſumme of money. For the whiche after longe treatie of this matter, the rulers of the towne to haue the poſſeſſion thereof, and to haue it preſerued from fire, agreed to geue vnto the Engliſh Captaynes.xl. thouſande Motons, and. lx. Perles, valued at. x. M. motons, the whiche. l. M. motons ſhould a mount after the rate of ſterlynge money to. xii. thouſand and fiue hundred pounde or neare aboute. So that what they found within yͤ towne of anie value, they bare it with them, except the iewels and ornamentes of the Church of Saynte Germayne, the whiche goodes ⁊ iewels they toke for pledge of ſuch money, as was vnpaied of the fore ſayde. xl. M. motons of golde, for the raunſome of the towne: for the whiche goodes, the towne of Ancerre was bounde vnto the heades of the Church to pay for, or to redeme the ſayde goodes, by the feaſt of mydſomer next folowinge or els to pay yerely in perpetuite of the ſayde Churche in maner of quitrent. iii. M. motons, whereof the value is ſhewed in the firſte Chapter of Philip the. iiii. And ouer all this the dwellers of the towne agreed, that the Englyſhe men ſhoulde brenne the gates of the towne, and in diuers parties of the towne throw the walles to to the grounde.

Upon foure dayes folowynge the ende of the ſayde agremente, the foreſayde ſyr James Pype, and ſyr Othan of Holande, and other to the nūber of. xvi. or. xviii. Engliſhmen, entendynge to haue wonne ſome enterpreſe, were layd for by the ſouldyours of a place called the greate Semyre, and by theym taken and holden as priſoners.

And in the moneth of Apryl next enſuynge, a towne called in Frenche Dabigny ſur le Metre, was by the Engliſhmē gotten in like maner and fourme, as was yͤ foreſayde towne of Ancerre. And the ſeconde day of May, was wonne by ſir Robert Knolles and his cōpany, a towne called Chaſtelein ſure Louuain, ⁊ pilled it as they did the other. And after, with their pillage and priſoners, amōg the which were many women and children, of. iiii. ⁊. v. yeres of age, the ſayd Engliſhmen yode to the new caſtell vpon Loyre.

And ye ſhall vnderſtande, that the partie of the Engliſh mē was greatly ſtrengthed, by the helpe of the kynge of Nauerne, and of ſyr Philip his brother and other, as more playnly ſhalbe ſhewed in the Frenche chronicle, or ſtorye of kyng Jhon folowynge.

And thus the ſayde ſyr Robert Knolles, with ayde of the kinges men of Nauerne, dayly wan manie townes and ſtronge holdes in Britayne.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lviii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lix.

Symonde Doſſelde. { Symond Wymondham. / Jhon Chycheſter. } Anno. xxxiiii.

AND in the. xxxiiii. yere or more verely, in the moneth of Nouember, and in the ende of the xxxiii. yeare of kynge Edwardes reygne, he with prince Edwarde, and the duke of Lancaſter with a puyſaūt army landed at Caleis and from thens paſſed the lande vnto Artois, and by Vermendois to the Citie of Raynes, and layde his ſiege about that Citie, and beclipped it in ſuch wiſe, that no mã might enter or go out of the citie, wythout licence of the Englyſhmenne.

Whan kyng Edwarde had lien xl. daies at this ſiege of Reynes, without great dere or hurt, vnto it doynge, he remoued his ſiege, & paſſed by the countrey of Champayne, till he came to a towne called Guyllon, where the kynge reſted him a ſeaſon.

In which time came vnto hym certayn men of the duchy of Burgoyne, as Lordes of diuers holdes and townes within that duchery, and gaue vnto him, to the entente he ſhoulde not moleſt or hurte the countrey, two hundred thouſande florens of Gold, which is to the value of ſterlyng money, xxxv. thouſand pounde. And ouer that the ſayde Burgonyons couenaunted with him, that they wold miniſter to him and his hoſte, all ſuch vytayles as was in the countrey plenteouſly for his money.

And that done he departed from thence, and yode vnto Neuers, & paſſed there the riuer of Dion or Joñ, and yode to Clanges vpon Jon. And from thens in the moneth of March, and beginnynge of his xxxiiii. yere of his reygne, he yode by the countrey of Gaſtenoys towarde the Citie of Paris And Prynce Edwarde with hys companie paſſed by Moret, till he came to an hold, whiche Englyſhmen than kept called Tournelles or Cournelles, before which town or hold, lay at that ſeaſon certain Frenchmen in a ſtronge baſtile, & aſſayled the Engliſh men dayly & remoued not thence, albeit, they were moniſhed of the prynces cõmynge. They truſted ſo muche in the ſtrength of theyr baſtile, whiche them diſceyued, for within. v. dayes of the Princes commynge, theyr Baſtile was gottẽ, and manie of them ſlaine, and to the number of. xlvii. perſons of that companie taken priſoners. Amonge which wer. iiii. men of name, that is to ſay the lorde of Bouile or Bonile, the lorde of Daygreuile or of Aygreuyle, ſyr Jhon de Barres, and ſir William de Plaſſies.

Thus kynge Edwarde with his people, ſpedynge his iourney towarde Parys, vpon the Tuyſday, beynge the laſt day of March in the weeke before Eaſter, came vnto a place called the hoſtell of Chaſtelon, betwene Mountlehery and Chaſtles, and lodged him with a certayn of his people ther. And the prynce with other lordes of hys hoſte, were lodged in the townes there aboute, from thens vnto the towne of Corueil, and an other towne called longe Jumel. Than Charles, eldeſt ſonne of kyng Jhon, and that day regẽt of Fraunce, made meanes of treatie, whiche was laboured by a Freer, called Simonde de Langres, prouincial of the Freers Jacobins, and Legat of the Pope of Rome. By whoſe meanes a daye of treatye was appoynted to bee holden vpon good Fryday, in the maledery of le longe Jumel.

Wher at the ſame day and place appered for kyng Edwardes partie, the duke of Lancaſter, the erles of Warwike & of Northãpton with ſir Jhon de Chande, ſir Walter de Manuy, & ſir williã Cheyny knightes. And for the regent appeared there, the lorde of Few, Conſtable of Fraunce, the Lorde Bocyquant, then Marſhall of Fraunce, the lorde of Sarancier the lorde of Vignay of the coũtrey of Vienne, ſir Simond Buci, & ſir Guicharde of Auglie, knightes, which treaty came to none effect.

wherfore kyng Edward, vpon the Tuiſday folowing Eaſter day remoued from the ſayd hoſtel, and lodged him neare vnto Parys, at a place named Chaſtellone neare vnto Mount Rouge. And the reſidue of his hoſte was lodged at Vauuis, at Vaugerart, at Gentilly, and other townes there aboute. Then vpon the friday folowing, being the .x. day of April, by meanes of the Abbot of Clugny, which newly was ſent frõ ẏ Pope Innocent the .vi. the foreſayd lordes and knightes, aſſembled at a place called the Banlien, to treate of an accorde betwene the kyng & the regent. But their labour was ſpẽt in vaine, as it before had ben.

Vpon the ſonday next folowing a parte of the kinges hoſte, came before the towne of Paris, & embatailed them in a fielde faſte by Saynt Marcelles, & taried there from the morninge till thre of the clocke at after noone, to abide bataile of the Frenchmen. The whiche made none iſſue out of the citie, notwithſtãding, that (as teſtifieth the Frenche booke) within Paris at that day wer great plenty of Souldiours, ouer and beſide the great foiſon of the inhabitaũtes of the ſame.

when the Engliſhmen perceyued that they ſhould haue no batayle of the Pariſians, thei about three at after noone departed the fielde, and tooke theyr waye towarde Chartres, and ſo to Bonneuale neare vnto Chaceadon. Then kinge Ewarde was lodged at a place called Dones. To the whiche place came vnto him, out of Paris ẏ Biſhop of Beauuaies, then Chauncellour of Normandy with other, and ſo behaued theym vnto the kynge, that a new day of treatie was apoyncted to be holden at Bretinguy, within a myle or litle more of Chartres foreſayd vpon the firſte day of May, nexte enſuynge.

AT which day of apointment, the foreſayd duke of Lancaſter, with the ſayde Erles of Warwik and Northampton and other, at the ſayde place apeared for kynge Edwarde. And for the regent appered there the forenamed biſhop, with many other lordes & knightes and ſpirituall men, to the nũber of .xxii. perſons, whoſe names I ouerpaſſe, for lẽgthing of time. The whiche ſo diligently behaued him, that in the ſpace of .viii daies they agreed vpon an vnitee and peace, the whiche was compryſed in .xli. articles, as at length is rehearſed in the Frenche chronicle, wherof the effecte is this.

Fyrſt the kynge of Englande and his heyres kynges, with all the lãdes, as he then had in Gaſcoine and Guian, ſhould haue vnto him and his heires for euer, the citie and Caſtell of Poyties with all the appartenaunces vnto that lordeſhyp belongyng.

The forme of peace betwene Englande & Fraunce

Alſo the Citie of Limoges, with all the landes of Limoſine and all other their appartenaunces. The citie and caſtel of Perigorte, with all the landes and reuenues to yͤ lordeſhyp belonging. The earledome of Bygorre, with all thinges to that lordſhip belonging. The erledome of Poytiau, with all the appartenaunces. The ſignorie of Beleuyle. The lordeſhip of Exanctis, Exaucdoure, and Exancone. The citie of Agen, the citie of Agenoys, the citie of Caours, and lordſhyp of Caourſyn. The citie of Tharbe, the city and countrey of Gaure, Angouleſme, of Rodes, ⁊ of Rauerne. The lordſhip of Moſtruell, with all reuenues ther vnto belonginge. The ſignory of Caleys, of Marquel, of Sandgate, ⁊ Coligne. The lordeſhip of Hammis, of Walis, and of Oule. And the Earldome of Guines, w̃ all profites therunto belonginge. All whiche lordeſhips, honours, Caſtels, towers, cities, and Townes, the Kynge of Englande, then Edward the thirde, and his heyres Kynges of England, ſhould haue and holde for euer more, in as royall wyſe and like maner, as done the kinges of Fraunce, wythout doyng for thẽ any homage feauty, or other duty.

And kyng Edwarde, after that daye for him and his heires kinges of England, ſhould clearly renounce and geue ouer al his title right, ⁊ intereſt, that he had vnto the crowne of Fraunce, ⁊ ſpecially the name of the king of Fraũce.

Alſo al hys right and title that he had vnto the Duchye of Normandy, of Thoraine, of Aniow, of Britayne, and of the ſouerayntie of the Earledome of Flaunders, and of all other lordeſhips, cities, Caſtelles, honoures, townes, towres, manoures, yͭ any kinge of Englande before that day had any right vnto, within the realme of Fraunce, and to holde hym content with the aboue named lordſhippes, withoute anye further clayme.

Forthermore it was agreed, that the Frenche king ſhould pay for his raunſome, three Millions of Scutes of gold, whereof twoo ſhould alwaye make a noble Engliſh. Ye ſhall vnderſtande that a million of Scutes, is .x. hundred thouſande of Scutes, whiche extende after the valne of ſterlynge money, vnto the ſumme of twoo hundred fiftie thouſande marke. And ſo three Millions, amounte vnto ſeuen hundred ⁊ fiftye thouſande marke, whiche maketh iuſte fyue hundreth thouſande pounde of ſterlynge money.

Of the whiche three Millions of Scutes .x. hundred thouſande to bee payde at Caleys, by the fyrſte daye of Iune nexte folowynge the ſayde treatie, and an other .x. hundred thouſande, or Myllyon to be payde at the ſayde towne of Caleys, wythin eyght monethes, after the Frenche Kynge was common vnto Cales, and the thyrde Myllyon, to be paide at London, in two yeres and halfe. That is to ſaye at Myghelmas twelue monethes, after the agreemente, made .iiii. hundred thouſande Scutes, and at Myghelmas nexte after enſuynge, foure hundred thouſande Scutes, and at Eaſter then next folowynge, twoo hundred thouſand Scutes, in full payment of three Millions or. xxx. hundred thouſand Scutes.

And further it was agreed, that after yͤ Frenche kyng was comen vnto Caleys, he ſhoulde reſt him there. iiii. monethes. Wherof the firſt moneth ſhould be at yͤ charge of kyng Edwarde & the other. iii. monethes, to bee at the coſte and charge of the ſayde French kyng and to pay for eueriche of the ſayd three monethes, if he ſo longe taried there for the perfourmaunce of the ſayde accorde. x. thouſande royalles of Fraunce, whiche at that tyme, were in value after the rate of ſterling money, euerye royall. xxi. d. or. xiiii. ſous Parys, and ſo he ſhoulde pay for a monethes charge, eyght hundreth. lxxv pounde.

And ouer that, it was accorded that the Frenche kyng Jhon for the time beynge, nor no kynge of Fraunce, after him ſhould ayde or aſſiſt the Scottes agaynſt kinge Edwarde, nor agaynſt his heyres kynges of Englande. Nor kynge Edwarde nor his heyres kynges, ſhall allye them with the Fleminges, nor ayde nor aſſiſt theym againſt the ſayde kynge Jhon, nor his heires kynges of Fraunce.

And for the title or right of the duchie of Britayne, whiche was in queſtion betwene the Erles of Blois and of Mountforde, it was accorded that bothe kinges being at Caleis, the ſayd parties ſhould be called before thē. And if a peace betwene them by the two kinges might not be ſette, then the ſayde kinges to aſſigne certayne indifferent perſons to agree the ſayde Erles, & they to haue halfe a yere of reſpite for to quiet the matter. And if the ſayd perſons, ſo by the two kinges aſſigned, might not agree the ſayde Erles, by yͤ terme, that then either of the ſaid Erles to make the beſt purueyaunce for him ſelf, that either of them could make, with the helpe of his friendes or otherwiſe, whereby they might attayne to their right and clayme of the ſayde Duchy.

Prouided alway, that nother of the ſayde kynges, nor any of their ſonnes, ſhould ayde or aſſiſt anye of the ſayd Erles, by reaſon wherof the peace betwene them accorded, might be lowſed or broken. Alſo prouided, that to whether of the ſaid two Erles, the ſaid duchy ſhould fall by ſentence, of man or otherwiſe, that the homage for it, ſhall alway be done to the kyng of Fraunce. All which ordinaunces and agreementes, with many moo, that woulde aſke longe leyſoure to write, were ratifed & confirmed, by the inſtrumentes and ſeales of the prince of Walis, vpō the partie of kynge Edwarde for Englandes partie, and by Charles, regent of Fraūce for that partie, as by their letters pattentes, then ſealed appeared, beryng date that one at Louuers in Normandie, the. xvi. day of May, in yͤ yere of grace. M.CCC. and. lx. & that other at Paris the. x. daye of the ſayde moneth and yere.

And ouer yͤ either of the ſaid. ii. Princes, that is to ſay Edwarde prince of Walis, was ſworne in preſence of. vi. Frenche knightes, vpon the Sacrament of the aulter, after the thyrde Agnus was ſayde in tyme of a lowe maſſe, at the foreſayde Louuers, ſonge or ſayde, that he to the vttermoſte of his power, ſhould vpholde & kepe the foreſayd peace in euery poinct as farre as in him was. And in like maner was Charles, then regente of Fraunce ſworne, in the preſence of. vi. Englyſh knightes to perfourme the ſame.

The retourne of kinge Edward with his ſonnes into Englande.

After which treaty thus finyſhed & ended, king Edwarde with his ſonnes and nobles of Englãd tooke ſhippinge at Huntflete in Normandye, vpon the. xx. daye of May, & ſayled into England, leauyng behinde him yͤ Erle of warwike, for to guide the Englyſhemen that remayned in Guian and other places, and to ſe that the peace which then was proclaimed thorough Fraunce were kept and not broken by them, which endured not longe without violacion, as ſayth the Frenche booke.

HEre I leaue apart the greate reioyſynge and honourable receyuyng of the kinge by the citezens of London and other ceremonies, whiche at this ſeaſon I ſpare, to thentẽt I may the more ſubſtancially ſhewe vnto you, the finall ende of this accorde. Then trouthe it is, that in this ſeaſon of the kinges beyng in Fraũce, king Jhon for his moore conſolacion, was remoued from Sauoy vnto the towre of London, where after the kinges retourne, he feaſted the kyng and his lordes vpon the xiiii. day of the moneth of June. And yͤ. viii. day of yͤ moneth of July next enſuyng, yͤ French king in the morning landed at Caleys, & was lodged in the Caſtel, & there bode the cõming of king Edward.

Vpon the. ix. daye of October, king Edwarde arriued at Caleis and went ſtreight vnto the caſtel for to viſite kynge Jhon, the whiche welcomed him in a louing and frendly countenaunce. And when the kinge ſhoulde departe to hys lodging into yͤ towne, the Frẽche king required him, that he with his ſonnes ſhould dyne with hym vpon the morow folowing, whiche of the kynge was graunted to be vpon the Monday folowynge, the. xii. day of the moneth. At whiche daie kinge Edward was firſt ſet and kepte the eſtate, and then ſecundarily the Frenche kinge. Thirdly the prince of Walys, and fourthly the Duke of Lancaſtre, without moo at the table. In the time of which dynner, came to the Caſtell the Earle of Flaunders, whome the French kynge welcomed in moſte louing maner. And when the ſayd dinner, with al honour was ended. ii. of the kynges ſonnes of Englande, & two of the French kinges toke leaue of their fathers, & rode towarde Bolein, where at that time the Regent of Fraunce was. The which met thẽ in the myd waye betwene Caleys and Boleyne, & ſo conueyed them vnto Boleyn, and reſted ther with them that night, and vpõ the morow, left them there, and him ſelf came vnto Caleys firſt to his father, and after hys father and he, came bothe to the kynges palaies to dinner. Whiche king Edwarde receyued with much ioye and honoure, and made vnto them a ſũptuouſe feaſt.

Vpon yͤ fourthtene daye of October, the ſayde Regent departed from Caleis, and retourned vnto

Boleine, and the twoo ſonnes of kynge Edwarde retourned from Boleyne vnto Caleys.

And vpon a ſaterday the .xxiiii. daye of the moneth of October, bothe kinges beinge in twoo trauerſes and in one chapell at Caleys, a maſſe was ſayde before thē to the offeringe of whiche Maſſe neither of them came. But when the Paxe was borne fyrſte to the Frenche kynge, and eft to kynge Edwarde, and eyther refuſed to kyſſe it firſt, the French kyng roſe vp and came towarde kinge Edwarde. Wherof he beynge ware, roſe vp and mette with him, and refuſed the Paxe and kiſſed either other. At the which Maſſe either of them was ſolemply ſworne to maynteyne the articles of ẏ ſayd peace. And for more aſſuraunce of the ſame, many lordes vpon bothe parties, wer alſo ſworne, to mainteyne the ſame to theyr powers.

Ye ſhall alſo vnderſtande, that in this ſeaſon, that the Frenche kynge ſoiourned thus at Caleys, bothe for the paiment of his raūſome, and alſo for the deliuery of certaine holdes and townes whiche as yet were not deliuered, he put in ſuch ſuerties as foloweth. The duke of Orliaunce, the duke of Burgoyne, the Duke of Burbone, the erles of Angeou, of Poiteau, of Bloys, of Alenſone of S. Poule, of Eſcamps, of Valencenoys, of Brame, of Ew, of Longevyle of Cancaruile, of Ancerre of Dampmartine, of Vendatyre, of Salyſbruge, and of Vendoſme, the vicountes of Bandemounte, of Beawmount, and of Ancuerre, the lordes of Craon, of Derual, of Dabyguy, of Couſy, of Fiers, of Preaux, of Sayncte Venante, of Garanciers, of Aluerne, of Mōtmorency, and of Angeſt, and alſo the lorde or wardeyne of the foreſtes, and knightes, ſir william de Craon, ſyr Lewes de Harcourte, ſyr Jhon de Laguy, and ſyr Galtier de Donehame. Of the whiche .xxxviii. perſons, diuers of theym as before is touched, were taken priſoners at the battayle of Poytiers. For the whiche it was agreed, that as many as hadde not payde theyr finaunce, before the thirde daye of Maye laſte paſte, ſhould be acquited by the kynges finaunces, with diuers other condicions, which I paſſe ouer.

Then vpon the morow folowynge, of the takyng of the foreſaid othe by the twoo kynges, that is to ſaye Sundaye the .xxv. daye of October, the French kynge was frely deliuered, the which the ſayd day before noone departed from Caleys, and rode towarde Boleyne. whome kynge Edwarde conueyed a myle vpon his way, at whiche miles ende, they departed with kyſſinge and other louynge maner, and Prince Edward kept on his way with kyng Jhon, and ſo conueyed him vnto Boleyne, where he taried that night. And vpon the morow the ſayde prince Edwarde, and Charles Duke of Normandy, with the Earle of Eſtamps and other noble men ther then being preſent, were agayne ſworne to maynteyne and holde the ſayde peace, withoute fraude, colour, or diſcepte. And that done, the ſayd Prince taking his leaue, returned that night vnto Caleis And ſo it now appereth vnto you that kynge Jhon ſtoode as priſoner

ner by the ſpace of.iiii.yeres, and as muche as from the.xix.day of September, vnto the.xxv.day of October.

And when kynge Edwarde had ſped his nedes at Caleys, he after, as ſhalbe ſhewed in the yere folowynge ſayled into Englande.

It is alſo to be noted, that this yeare, while the kynge was occupied in his warres in Fraunce, as before is touched, the Earle of Seinpoule ẇ an army of French men ſayled aboute the borders of Kent and Suſſex, and landed in ſundry places, as Rie, Wynchelſee and Haſtinges, and ſpoyled the townes, ⁊ ſlew many of the men, and dyd much harme to the poore Fiſhers.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lix.
Anno domini.M.CCC.lx.

Jhon Wroth.
Jhon Denys.
Walter Borney.
Anno.xxxv.

Vpon the euen of Saint Quintine, or the.xxx.daye of Nouember, in the ende of the thyrtye and.iiii.yeare of kynge Edwarde and beginnynge of this Mayres yere, the kynge tooke ſhippyng at Caleys, and ſayled toward Englande, bringing with him certayn of his hoſtages. That is to ſaye Lewes the ſeconde ſonne of kyng Jhon newly made Duke of Aniou and of Mayn, whiche before was Earle of Angeou, and Jhon hys brother newly made Duke of Aluerne and of Berry, which before was Erle of Poytiers, which Erledome now belonged to kyng Edward, by reaſon of the foreſaid treatie. He alſo hadde with ſyr Lewes duke of Brabant, and the Erles of Alenſon and of Eſcampes, which were nere of ẏ French kinges bloud, with.viii.other erles ⁊ lordes, named in the French Chronicle, with the whiche the kyng landed at Douer ſhortly after, and ſo came to London the.ix.day of Nouember.

And in this.xxxv.yere, men and beaſtes were peryſſhed in Englande in diuers places with thunder and lyghtning.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lx.
Anno domini.M.CCC.lxi.

Jhon Peche.
Wyllyam Holbech.
James Tame.
Anno.xxxvi.

IN this.xxxvi.yere Prince Edwarde wedded the counteſſe of Kent, which before was wyfe vnto ſyr Thomas Holande, and before that, wyfe vnto the Erle of Saliſbury, and deuorced from him, and maried vnto the ſayde ſyr Thomas.

In this yere alſo was greate mortalite of menne in England, during the whiche the noble duke Henry of Lancaſtre died. Thyſ

The ſe
mortal

of writers is named the ſeconde mortalitie. For it was the ſeconde that fell in thys Kynges dayes.

When Duke Henrye was dead, ſir Jhon of Gaunte the Kynges thirde ſonne, whyche had maryed the ſaide dukes doughter, was made duke of that duchye.

In this yeare alſo, were ſeene two caſtelles in the aire. Wherof that one appeared in the Southeaſt, and that other in the South weſt, oute of the whiche ſondrye times, as it wer about the noone tide, iſſued out of either of theym, an hoſt of armed men to mannes ſight. And that hooſte whiche iſſued out of the caſtell of yͤ south-Eaſt, appeared whyte, and that other apeared blacke. These two hooſtes appeared as though they fought eche of theym with other, and ſhewed as the white was firſt victorious, and laſtlye ouercomen, and ſo diſappeared.

In this yere alſo a great company of diuers nacions aſſembled them in Brye and Champayne, wherof the leaders or captaines were Engliſhmen, the whiche did much harme in Fraunce.

But after the affirmaunce of the Frenche chroniche, this company whiche is there called newe company, beganne their aſſembles in the forenamed countrey of Brye, or Kynge Jhon were delyuered from Caleys. And when they were ware of hys delyueraunce, they departed oute of Brye, and yode into Champayne, and tooke there diuers holdes, and ſpoyled and robbed diuers ſmale townes, and raunſomed manye men.

And in this yere, as ſaieth the French boke, they toke the bridge and towne of ſainct Sprites, vpon the daye of the Innocentes, or the eyght and twenty day of December. And as affirmeth Polychronicon, aboute the ſame time a nother companye in like maner, aſſembled theim in Italy, whiche was called the white companie, and moleſted that countrie in like maner. And in the moneth of Aprill folowing, king Jhon ſent the Earle of Cancaruile, and the erles of Saleſbrugh of the Marchez, of Foreſtes, and of Joinguy. the whiche Earles with their retinue, mette with the ſaid companie at a place then named Bruke, neare vnto Lion ſur Roſene.
At the whiche place was foughten a cruell fighte. But in the ende the Frenchemen were ouerſette, and diſcomfited, ſo that the ſaide Earle of Cancaruile was taken priſoner, and the two ſaid Earles of Marchez and Foreſtes ſlayne, wyth muche of the common people.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxi.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxii.

Stephan Caūdiſh.
Jhon of S.Albons.
James Andrew.
Anno.xxxvii.

ANd in the.xxxvii. yere, vpon the daie of ſainct Maurice, or the fiftene daie of Januarie blew ſo exceding a winde, that the like thereof was not ſene many yere: paſſed. This began aboute euenſonge in the South, and wyth

A great winde.

ſuche

ner by the ſpace of.iiii.yeres,and as muche as from the.xix.day of September, vnto the.xxv.day of October.

And when kynge Edwarde had ſped his nedes at Caleys, he after,as ſhalbe ſhewed in the yere folowynge ſayled into Englande.

It is alſo to be noted,that this yeare, while the kynge was occupied in his warres in Fraunce,as before is touched, the Earle of Seinpoule wͭ an army of French men ſayled aboute the borders of Kent and Suſſex, and landed in ſundry places,as Rie,Wynchelſee and Haſtinges, and ſpoyled the townes, & ſlew many of the men, and dyd much harme to the poore Fiſhers.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lix. Anno domini.M.CCC.lx.

Jhon Wroth. { Jhon Denys.
Walter Borney. } Anno.xxxv.

Vpon the euen of Saint Quintine, or the.xxx. daye of Nouember, in the ende of the thyrtye and.iiii.yeare of kynge Edwarde and beginnynge of this Mayres yere,the kynge tooke ſhippyng at Caleys,and ſayled toward Englande,bringing with him certayn of his hoſtages. That is to ſaye Lewes the ſeconde ſonne of kyng Jhon newly made Duke of Aniou and of Mayn, whiche before was Earle of Angeou, and Jhon hys brother newly made Duke of Aluerne and of Berry, which before was Erle of Poytiers,which Erledome now belonged to kyng Edward,by reaſon of the foreſaid treatie. He alſo hadde with ſyr Lewes duke of Brabant, and the Erles of Alenſon and of Eſcampes,which were nere of yͤ French kinges bloud,with.viii.other erles & lordes,named in the French Chronicle, with the whiche the kyng landed at Douer ſhortly after,and ſo came to London the.ix. day of Nouember.

And in this.xxxv.yere,men and beaſtes were peryſhed in Englande in diuers places with thunder and lyghtning.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lx. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxi.

Jhon Peche. { Wyllyam Holbech.
James Tame. } Anno.xxxvi.

In this.xxxvi.yere Prince Edwarde wedded the counteſſe of Kent,which before was wyfe vnto ſyr Thomas Holande, and before that, wyfe vnto the Erle of Saliſbury,and deuorced from him, and maried vnto the ſayde ſyr Thomas.

In this yere alſo was greate mortalite of menne in England, during the whiche the noble duke Henry of Lancaſtre died. Thys

The ſe
mortali

of wryters is named the ſeconde mortalitie. For it was the ſeconde that fell in thys kynges dayes.

When Duke Henrye was dead, ſir Jhon of Gaunte the kynges thirde ſonne, whyche had maryed the ſaide dukes doughter, was made duke of that duchye.

In this yeare alſo, were ſeene two caſtelles in the aire. Wherof that one appeared in the Southeaſt, and that other in the South weſt, oute of the whiche ſondrye times, as it wer about the noone tide, iſſued out of either of theym, an hoſt of armed men to mannes ſight. And that hooſte whiche iſſued out of the caſtell of yͤ ſouth Eaſt, appeared whyte, and that other apeared blacke. These two hooſtes appeared as though they fought eche of theym with other, and ſhewed as the white was firſt victorious, and laſtlye ouercomen, and ſo diſappeared.

In this yere alſo a great company of diuers nacions aſſembled them in Brye and Champayne, wherof the leaders or captaines were Engliſhmen, the whiche did much harme in Fraunce.

But after the affirmaunce of the Frenche chroniche, this company whiche is there called newe company, beganne their aſſembles in the forenamed countrey of Brye, or kynge Jhon were delyuered from Caleys. And when they were ware of hys delyueraunce, they departed oute of Brye, and yode into Champayne, and tooke there diuers holdes, and ſpoyled and robbed diuers ſmale townes, and raunſomed manye men.

And in this yere, as ſaieth the French boke, they toke the bridge and towne of ſainct Sprites, vpon the daye of the Innocentes, or the eyght and twenty day of December. And as affirmeth Polychronicon, aboute the ſame time a nother companye in like maner, aſſembled theim in Italy, whiche was called the white companie, and moleſted that countrie in like maner. And in the moneth of Aprill folowing, king Jhon ſent the Earle of Cancaruile, and the erles of Saleſbrugh of the Marchez, of Foreſtes, and of Joinguy. the whiche Earles with their retinue, mette with the ſaid companie at a place then named Bruke, neare vnto Lion ſur Roſene. At the whiche place was foughten a cruell fighte. But in the ende the Frenchemen were ouer ſette, and diſcomfited, ſo that the ſaide Earle of Cancaruile was taken priſoner, and the two ſaid Earles of Marchez and Foreſtes ſlayne, wyth muche of the common people.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxi.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxii.

Stephan Caũdiſch. { Jhon of S. Albons.
James Andrew. } Anno.xxxvii.

And in the.xxxvii. yere, vpon the daie of ſainct Maurice, or the fiftene daie of Januarie blew ſo exceding a winde, that the like thereof was not ſene many yeres paſſed. This began aboute euenſonge in the South, and wyth ſuche

A great winde.

ſuch ſtormes, that it blew downe ſtronge and myghtie buyldynge, as towres, ſteples, houſes, and chymnies, and continued for the more part in ſuche ſtormes by the ſpace of fyue daies after.

The death of kinge Jhon of Fraunce.

And in this yere, and .xxiiii. day of the ſaide moneth of January, came king Jhon of Fraunce vnto Eltham beſide Grenewich, and dined there that daye wyth the king. And vpon that after noone, he was honorably conueyed thorough the citie of London vnto Sauoy, aſwell by the citezins as other, whiche met with him vpon Blackeheth well horſed, in a lyuerye of one coloure. And while the ſayde king Jhon, lay at the ſayde place of Sauoy, about the beginning of March folowing, a greuous ſickenes toke him, of which he died the .viii. day of Aprill folowinge, in the beginninge of the yere of grace. M.CCC.lxiiii. and after was caryed into Fraunce, and buryed at ſaincte Denys, the ſeuenth daye of May folowing.

And in thys yeare, kynge Edwarde created Lionell his ſonne Duke of Clarence, and ſyr Edmunde hys other ſonne Earle of Cambridge.

And in the ende of this yeare, and ſeuen and twentye daye of September, beganne a greate froſt, the which endured to the beginning of the moneth of Aprill. By reaſon whereof muche harme grew and enſued of the ſame.

And that yere came thre kinges into England, for to ſpeake with king Edward. Firſt, the kinge of Fraunce, the king of Cypres, and the kyng of Scottes.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxiii.

Jhon Notte.
Richarde Croydon.
Jhon Hiltoſte.
Anno. xxxviii.

IN thys .xxxviii. yeare, Prince Edwarde ſailed vnto Burdeaux, and receiued the poſſeſſion of Guyan, that kinge Edwarde had newlye geuen vnto him. For the whiche he after did his homage to his father, in like wiſe and maner, as his father and other kinges of Englande were wonte to doo, for the ſaid Duchie, vnto the kinges of Fraunce. And vpon Mihelmas day being then vpõ ſonday, before the caſtel of Danhoy, faſt by yͤ city of Vaunes in Britaine, met the hoſtes of ſir Charles de Bloys, & of ſir Jhon de Mountfort, which long before had ſtriuen, as before is ſhewed, for the ſaide duchie of Britaine, & there fought a ſtrong bataile. But by the helpe of god & of the Engliſh archers, the victorie fell to ſir Jhon Mõufort. And in that fight ſir Charles de Blois was ſlayne, & many Frenchmen and Britons that toke his party. After which victorie notwithſtanding, that the wyfe of the ſayd ſir Charles laye within that countrey, ther was againſt the ſaid ſir

Jhon made no reſiſtaunce, but that he enioyed that countrey in peaceable wyſe.

Then Charles the ſyxt of that name, newely crowned kynge of Fraunce, in the righte of the woman, ſent the Archbyſhoppe of Raynes, and the Marſhall of Fraunce, into Britayne, for to ſette an vnitie and a reſtfull peace betwene the ſaide ſyr Jhon, and the laſt wyfe of ſyr Charles. The whiche endeuoured them ſo well, that in the moneth of Apryll folowynge the ſaide bataile, they agreed theym, ſo that the enheritaunce of that Duchye, ſhould remayne vnto the ſaide ſyr Jhon, and his heyres, for euermore, and the wife of the ſayde ſyr Charles ſhould hold her cōtented with the Earledome of Peniture, and the Vicountie of Lymoges, which of olde tyme belonged vnto her auncetours.

And aboute thys time was an ordenaunce and ſtatute made, that Sergeauntes and Prentyſes of lawe, ſhoulde plede theyr plees in their mother tongue. But that ſtode but a ſhort while.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxiii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxiiii.

Adam of Bury. { Simond Mordon. / Jhon Metford. } Anno. xxxix.

And in this .xxxix. yeare, after ſome writers, king Edwarde vppon S. Stephans daye, finiſhed his wars, wherefore in the worſhyppe of God and ſainct Stephan, he this yeare, after the opinions of the ſaid authours, began the foundacion of ſainct Stephans chapell at Weſtminſter. The which was finiſhed by Richarde the ſeconde, and ſonne of prince Edward next king of England, after this third Edwarde.

The foundacion of ſainct Stephans chapel in weſtminſter.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxiiii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxv.

Jhon Luſkyn. { Jhon Brykilſworth. / Jhon Orelande. } Anno. xl.

In this. xl. yeare, and Moneth of Februarye, was borne the fyrſte ſonne of Prynce Edwarde, & was named Edwarde, the which dyed when he was aboute the age of eyght yeres. And in thys yere one named Barthran de Claycon, a Norman, with an army of Frēch men entred the lande of Caſtyle, and warred vpō Peter then king of that land, and ſo behaued him, that in leſſe than foure monethes ſpace, he chaſed the ſaide Peter out of hys owne lande, and crowned his brother named Henrye king of Caſtyle, at a towne called Burges, vpon Eaſter day. Wherfore

fore the ſaid Peter conſtrained of neceſſitie was compelled to come to Burdeaux, for to haue and aſke ayde of Prynce Edwarde.

This peter was rightfull heyre vnto the crowne of Caſtile, and Henry his brother after moſt writers was baſtard. But this Peter was ſo vile of condicions, that his ſubiectes had to hym but lytle fauour. And ſo the warre continued a ſeaſon, betwne hys brother and him, as after ſhall appeare, in the whiche the Prynce with hys Archers, tooke partye with thys Peter, and the French king with his ſpeares tooke partie with Henry.

And in thys yeare, at the kynges commaundement, Adam Burye than Mayre of London, was diſcharged the eyghte and twentie day of January, and for him elect & choſen Mayre, Jhon Louekyn Grocer. And (as witneſſeth Polichronicon and other) this yeare was commaunded by by the kynge, that Peter pence ſhoulde no moore bee gathered in Englande, nor payed vnto Rome, as they of longe time hadde been vſed and graunted, in the tyme of Juo or Jewe ſometime kinge of Weſtſaxons, as before in his ſtorie is ſhewed.

But how ſo at that dayes it was then by the kynge forbidden, yet neuertheleſſe at this preſent time and ſeaſō, they be gathered in ſondrie ſhyres of Englande.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxv.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxvi.

Jhon Louekyn. { Jhon Warde. / Wyllyam Dikman. } Anno.xli.

The birth of Richard the ſecond.

AND in thys .xli. yeare, was borne the ſecond ſonne of prince Edward, at Burdeaux named Rycharde in the moneth of Aprill, and thirde daye of the ſaide moneth. The ſayde prince Edwarde with the kynge of Nauerne, and the foreſayd Peter kinge of Caſtile, mette with Henrye barſtarde and vſurper of the ſaide kingdome, nere vnto a towne called Dominge, where betwene theym was a cruell and long fight: howe beit in the ende, the victorie fell vnto the Engliſhe men, and Henrye and all his men were chaſed.

In thys battayle was taken ſyr Barthram de Glaycon, and Arnold Dodenham then marſhall of Fraunce, with other, as well Frenche as Britains, and ſlaine vpon fiue thouſande men, vppon the party of the ſaide Henry, and vpō .xvi.C. vpō prince Edwardes partie.

After whiche victorie, ẏ prince with the ſaid Peter, ſped them vnto Burges, whiche was yelden to theym ſhortlye after the comming, and after holpe the ſaid Peter to wyn other cities & holdes, ſo that he taried there till the moneth of Auguſt folowing: at whiche ſeaſon (as ſaieth the Chronicle of Fraunce) he retourned vnto

Burdeaux withoute payment of wages foꝛ his ſouldiours, that befoꝛe to him was by the ſaid Peter pꝛomiſed.

In this ſeaſon, that Pꝛynce Edwarde was thus in Spayne, Henrye Baſtarde fledde with hys wife into Fraunce, and abode in a place oꝛ countrey called Carcaſſon. But ſo ſoone as he was warned that Pꝛynce Edwarde was retourned vnto Burdeaux, he gathered to him a newe companye, and paſſed by the mountaynes of the foꝛeſtes, and ſo entred the ſayd lande of Caſtyle, the xxxvii. day of the moneth of September folowinge, and hadde the Cytye of Calahoꝛe yelded vnto him. Where, vnto him dꝛew much people of the countrey, ſo that his ſtrength encreaſed hougelye. Then from thence he yode vnto the Cytye of Burges, where he was ioyouſlye receaued, and behaued him in ſuche wiſe, that in ſhoꝛte whyle after he hadde the whole rule of the land of Caſtile, and his bꝛother was faine to auoide the land, and to ſeke ayde of Sarazyns, as affirmeth the ſaide chꝛonicle.

And in this yeare aboute the moneth of June, the companye befoꝛe minded, in the ſyxe and thirtie yeare of this kinge he entred the Duchye of Guyan and there helde theym in doing muche harme to that countrey, lyke as they befoꝛe hadde dooen in diuers places of Fraunce, by all that ſeaſon of foure yeres paſſed. And in the moneth of December, they departed from thence, and yode vnto the countreys of Auerne, and Berry. And in the moneth of Febꝛuarye they paſſed the ryuer of Loyꝛ, and tooke the waye towarde Marcyll, and after entred the countrey of Burgoyne: And euer as they paſſed countreys, they raunſomed men, and ſpoyled manye townes as they went.

And albeit the French kynge appoynted diuers of hys loꝛdes and knights to go agaynſt them, yet at ſuch ſeaſons as they dꝛew neare vnto theym, they woulde ſuffer theym to departe wythout bataile. Foꝛ they were ſo manye, that they were numbꝛed at fourtie thouſande. But of their captaynes is none named. Howe be it, there were Englyſhmen, Gaſcoynes, Pycardes, Frenchemen, and of Nauerne, and manye other nacions, whiche the chꝛonicle reherſeth not, & continued in their foꝛce & ſtrength long after to the great damage of the countreys, which thei paſſed thꝛough, as Noꝛmādy, Gaſcoyne, Guyan, Burgoine, & al the chief cōtreys in Fraunce, & liued by rauen & pillage, to the great enpoueriſhinge of the ſaide countreys, & townes, which thei paſſed by, oꝛ lodged in.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxvi.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxvii.

James Andꝛew. { Jhon Toꝛgolde. / William Dikman. } Anno.xlii.

AND in the two and fourtie yeare, and the moneth of March, appeared Stella cometa, that is a blaſinge ſtarre. And in the moneth of Aprill next enſuinge, that is to ſay: the ſyxte daye of the ſayde moneth, Lionel the ſonne of this Edwarde entred the citie of Paris, where he was of the Dukes of Berry and Burgoyne honorablye receyued, and ſo them conueyed vnto theyr brother, the kynge of Fraunce, vnto Louure, where he at that ſeaſon was lodged. Of whome he was alſo ioyouſlye receyued and lodged within the kinges palays, and dyned and ſupped with the kyng at his owne table, and vppon the morowe folowinge, he dined wyth the Queene, at a place of the kynges neare vnto S. Paule, where the Queene then was lodged.

And when after dinner he had a while daunſed, and paſſed the tyme with other diſportes, he then with the ſaide two dukes, was agayne conueyed vnto the Kynge, and ſupped with him agayne that nyght. And vpon the morninge beinge Tweſdaye, the ſaid dukes feaſted the ſaid ſir Lionel at a place of theirs in Paris, named Artoys.

And vpon the Wedneſdaye he dyned and ſupped agayne wyth the quene. And vpon the Thurſdaye and morowe folowinge, the ſaide ſir Lionell tooke hys leaue of the Kynge and Queene, the which gaue vnto him giftes, and to ſuche as were in his company, to the value of twentye thouſand Floreins and aboue, and was conueyed with noble men, as the Earle of Cancaruile, tyll he was comen to Sens, & with knyghtes, tyll he came to the borders of Fraunce, where he gaue vnto theym riche gyftes wyth greate thanke.

And after he contynued hys iourney, tyll he came to the cytye of Mylayne, where ſhortlye after he maried the doughter of Galyace Duke of the ſayde citie, and countrey, and had by her greate poſſeſſions, by reaſon that her father died ſhortly after.

The age o nel.

And in the end of this yere, the earles of Arminake, of Bret, and of Perygõt, with diuers other nobles of ẏ duchy of Guyã, apealed ẏ prince of wales in ẏ frẽch kyngs courte that he had broken peace, and wronged theym, contrarye the peace ſtablyſhed betwene Englande and Fraunce, and required the Frenche kynge that the ſayde appeale mighte haue due proceſſe agaynſt the ſaide prynce. The whyche (as ſayeth the Frenche Chronicle) Kyng Charles deferred, for certayne cauſes there touched, whiche were longe to rehearſe.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxvii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxviii.

Simon Mordõ. { Adam Winbingham.
Robert Gyrdler. } Anno. xliii.

AND in this .xliii. yere, or moore certaynly in the ende of the precedynge yeare, one Walter Bernes Mercer, was vpon the day of the tranſlation of S. Edward king and confeſſour, or the .xiii. dai of October, choſen by the Maire and Aldermen, Maire of the citie of London. But how it was for lacke of ſubſtaunce, or by other impediment, which is not noted the ſaid Walter vpon Simon and Iudes day folowinge, when he ſhoulde haue taken his oth at Guildhall, appeared not: wherefore in his roume by election of the foreſayd Maire and Aldermen, was admitted for that yeare folowynge Simond Mordon Fiſhmonger, Maire of that citie.

And in this yeare and moneth of March, Peter king of Caſtyle, the which by the ayde of the Sarazins dwelling in the borders of Spayne, had won and recouered ſome part of the lande of Caſtile, encountred with his baſtard brother Henry beforeſayd, and gaue vnto him battaile, neare vnto a towne called Sybyll. Wher after longe fight, the ſaide Peter was diſcomfited, and much of his people ſlayne, and him ſelf driuen vnto a caſtell, oute of the whiche he was ſhortly after by treaſon gotten, and preſented vnto his brother forenamed: by whoſe ſentence he was immediatly beheaded. After whoſe death the ſaide Henry enioyed the whole lande of Caſtile. Whiche miſfortune or miſchaunce, fell to thys Peter after diuers wryters, for ſo muche as he cruelly ſlew his owne wife, the doughter of the duke of Burbon.

And in this yere, and moneth of Maye, the king of Fraunce in his high court of parlament holden at Parys, proceded in iudgement vppon the appellations before made by the Earle of Armenake, the lorde of Bret, and Earle of Peregort, agaynſt Prince Edward, as before is touched in the precedinge yere. Wherevpon diſcorde & variaunce began to take place betwene the twoo kynges, in ſo much, that by meane of the ſaid thre lordes (not withſtanding that they were before ſworne to be to the king of Englande trewe liege men) diuers townes of the coūtrey of Poyteaw yelded them to the Frenche kinge, as Aubyle, Rue, and the moore parte of the ſaid townes of the ſaid countrey. Wherevpon ambaſſades were ſent vppon both parties, and dyuers meanes of treatie wer commoned, which contayneth a longe worke, with reaſoning made vpon the ſame: but in concluſion, all came to none effecte. So yͤ breche of the peace, which before betwen the two kinges was ſo ſubſtancially concluded, was broken, and either king for his partye, made prouiſion for the war. In ſo much that kinge Charles ſped hym to Roan in Normandye, and there in the moneth of July rigged his nauy, & ſet them forwarde to war vpon Englande. In whiche tyme and ſeaſon, that kinge Charles was thus occupied in Normādy, the duke of Lancaſter landed at Caleis wͭ a ſtrong company of archers & other warriours, & from thence, paſſed to Thorouenne, and ſo to Ayre in waſting the coũtrey wyth yron and fyre as he went. Wherefore the Frenche kyng in defence of thoſe partyes, ſent the duke of Burgoyne with a puyſaunt army, to withſtande the ſayde Duke of Lancaſter.

The which duke of Burgoyn ſped him in ſuch wiſe, that aboute the xxiiii. dai of Auguſt, he lodged his hoſt vpon the moũtayn of Turnham nere vnto Arde. And the Engliſh hooſte was lodged betwene Gygowne and Arde, ſo that the froũtes of both hoſtes wer within a myle. Betwene whome were daylye ſkyrmiſhes, and ſmall bickeringes, without anye notarye bataile. And when the ſaide duke of Burgoyne had thus kepte the ſayd mount, from the. xxiiii. daye of Auguſte, vnto the. xii. daye of September, he remoued his hoſt and yode vnto Heſden. For which dede he was after blamed of king Charles his brother. After whiche departynge of the Frenchemen, the duke of Lancaſter wyth his hoſte, tooke the way towarde Caus or Caux, and paſſed the riuer of Summe, & ſo rode toward Harflew, entending as ſaieth the French booke, to haue fyred the French kings nauy. But at their comming thither, the towne was ſo ſtrongly manned, that they did there but litle ſcath. wherfore the ſaid duke departed ſhortly thens, and ſped him into the countrey of Poyteau, and ſo came vnto the towne of Aubeuile. Where, withoute the Frenchmen encountred him: and gaue vnto him bataile. In the whyche was taken ſyr Hugh Chaſtelon knight, wyth other knightes, Eſquyres, and burgeyſes of the towne, and vpon. xvi. ſcore Frenchemen ſlayne. Which ſayde pryſoners to the nũber of fyue and fourtie, were ſent vnto Caleys, and the duke wyth his companye yode vnto Burdeaux, in ſpoylynge of the Frenchemen as he went.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lviii.

Jhon Chicheſter. { Jhon Pyell.
Hugh Holdiche. }

Anno domini. M. CCC. lix.

Anno. xliiii.

And in this. xliiii. yere, & moneth of January, died the earle of Warwike at Caleys, after he was returned from the duke of Lancaſter, whiche was a man of great fame.

The death of Queene Philippe.

And in the moneth of Auguſt, dyed that noble woman Queene Philip and wife vnto Edwarde the third. The which was a great benefactour vnto the Chanons of S. Stephans Chapell at Weſtminſter. And ſone after died dame Blaunche, ſometyme the wyſe of Henry duke of Lancaſter, and was buryed at Paules vpon the Northſyde of the hygh aulter by her huſbande. Where ſhe ordeined for him and her, foure Chaunters for euer, & an anniuerſarye yerely to bee kept, at the whiche ouer greate thinges, beſet vnto the deane and chanons of the church, ſhe ordeyned that the Mayre being preſent at the maſſe, ſhould offer a peny, and take vp.xx.ſ.the ſhyreffes either of theim a penye, and to receyue either of theym a marke, the Chamberlaine of the citie.x.ſ.the ſworde bearer.vi.ſ.viii.d.and euerye officer of the Maires there preſent.xxii.d.and to euerye officer to the number of viii.either of theim.viii.d.admitted for the ſhyreffes. The whiche obite at this day is holden. But by reaſon that the lande is decaied, theſe forenamed ſummes been greatly miniſhed, ſo yͭ the Maire at this daye hath but.vi.ſ.viii.d.both the ſhyreffes.vi.ſ.viii.d.and other after that rate.

In this yere alſo, the king held his parlament at Weſtminſter. In the which was graunted vnto him thre fiftenes to be paied in thre yeres folowing. And by a cōuocation of the clergye, was alſo graunted vnto him thre diſmes, to be payde in lyke maner.

And in this yere was the third mortalitie, whereof died muche people. And ſuche a morrayne fell alſo among beaſtes, that the like therof was not ſene many yeres before. And vpon that enſued ſuch exceſſiuenes of rayne, that corne was therewith drowned in the earth, and ſo bukked with water, that the yere enſuing wheat was at fourtie pence a buſhell.

And in the ende of the moneth of July, ſyr Roberte Knolles accōpanied with diuers noblemen and ſouldiours, entred ſainct Omers. And when they had executed their pleaſures there, & in the countrey enuyron, they then rode vnto Arras, in waſting and ſpoyling the countrey as they went. And when they had brent the bulwerkes of yͤ ſaid towne of Arras, they paſſed by Noyñ & Vermendoys, and brent the houſes of all ſuch as would not to theym geue due raunſome. And thus holding their way, they paſſed the riuers of Oyſe and of Syre, and ſo came vnto the citie of Raines, and paſſed there the riuer, & rode toward Troyes, and paſſed the riuers of Aube, and of Seyne, and ſo helde their way toward S. Florentine, and there paſſed the riuer of Jon, in holdinge their courſe towarde Joygny, and ſo to Corbueyll, and Eſſon or Eſſoin. And vpon a monday being the.xxii.day of Septēber, the ſaide Engliſhmen lodged theym, vpon the mount of S. Albone, and in the countrey thereabout. And vpon the wedneſdaye folowing, they enbatayled theym in a fielde betwene the townes of Juny and Parys.

In all which ſeaſon they paſſed wythoute battayle through thoſe foreſayd countreys, in ſpoylynge theym and raunſomynge the inhabitauntes thereof without reſiſtence or impediment. And albeit that in the city of Paris at that daye were.cc.men of armes waged by the French king, beſide the ſouldiours and ſtrength of the citezins of that citie, yet the ſayd hoſt of Engliſhmen lay as before is ſayde, enbattayled tyll it was paſt noone of the foreſayde daye. At whiche time, for ſo muche as they were crediblye enfourmed that they ſhoulde there not haue battayle, they brake their fielde, & ſped theym to a place or towne called Antoygnye, and there lodged that nyghte, and vppon the morowe tooke their iourney toward Normandy.

But after foure dayes labour, they tourned their waye towarde Eſtampis or Eſcamps, by Beauſe in Eaſtnoys, in pillinge and domaging the countreys, as they before had done, continuing their iorney til they came into the erledome of Angeou, wher thei wan by ſtrength the townes of Vaas and Ruyllye, with other ſtronge holdes thereabout.

But then as the deuill wolde, which is rote of all enuy and diſcorde, the lord Fitzwater and the lord Grauntſon, fell at a variaũce with ſir Robert Knolles and hys company, which grew to ſo great hatred and diſpleaſure, that ſyr Robert Knolles with the flour of the archers, and ſouldiours, departed from the ſaid two lordes, leuing them in the foreſaid Vaas and Ruylly, and he then yode into Britayne.

Wherof, when certaintye was brought vnto the French kyng, anone he commaunded ſyr Barthram de Glaycon, newlye made Marſhall of Fraunce, wyth a ſtrong armye to entre the ſayde countrey of Angeou, and to make ſharpe war vppon the ſayde Engliſhmen. The whiche vppon the twelfe day of October folowyng, layde ſiege vnto the ſaide towne of Vaas, whereof iſſued oute the ſaide Lordes of Fitzwater and Grauntſon, and gaue vnto the Marſhall battayle. But in the ende, the diſcomfiture fell vnto the Engliſhmen, ſo that of theim was ſlayne ſixe hundred, and the reſt put to flight.

In the whiche was taken the ſaide lord Grauntſon with other. And that dooen, the ſayde Syr Barthram yode vnto the towne of Vaas, and gate it by aſſaute. Where alſo were ſlayn vpon thre hundred Engliſhmen, and the other put to flyght, & manye taken priſoners. And after this, the ſaid Barthram purſued the Engliſhemen that were fled vnto a towne called Verſure. Where in aſſauting of the ſayd towne, he ſlewe and tooke priſoners vppon foure hundred Engliſhmen. And thus by ſtrife and diſſencion amonge theim ſelues, thoſe that before by amitie and good accorde were victours, nowe by hatred and dyſcorde, were ſlayne and taken priſoners.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxix. Anno domini. M.CCC.lxx.

Jhon Barnes. { William Walworth. / Robert Bayton. } Anno. xlv.

AND in this. xlv. yeare, and beginnynge of the moneth of Marche, the Archbyſhoppe of Wyncheſter, then beynge a Cardinall, and preſent at Auynyon wyth Pope Gregorye, the eleuenth of that name, was put in cõmiſſion with ỹ archbiſhop of Beauuays, to make or treat a peace & vnitie, betwene the two realmes of Enland and of Fraunce. Whiche ſaid Cardinal of Wincheſter, after his departing from the Pope, came

downe

came downe towarde Meleune, wher, by the ſaid archbiſhop & alſo the Cardinall of Beauuais, he was honorably met, & ſo conueied vnto the citie of Meleon. And when he had reſted him there vpon foure daies, and the two cardinals enſemble ſped them to Paris, where thei to king Charles, had cōmunication touchinge the ſaid peace. And after his pleaſure knowen, the ſaid archbiſhop, and cardinal toke his leaue, and was conueied toward Caleys, where he toke ſhipping, and ſo ſailed into England, and ſhewed vnto the kinge, the Popes pleaſure, with the French kinges anſwere.

And in this yeare folowing the ſomertide, in Guyan were made and foughten manye ſkirmiſhes, in the which for yͤ more party the Engliſhemen were put vnto the worſe, ſo that many of them were ſlain and taken priſoners, and diuers holdes and townes taken frō them, and ſpecially in the countrey of Limoſyne. For by the fyrſt day of the moneth of July, the citie of Limoges, with al the countrey of Limoſyne foreſaid was vnder yͤ obeyſaūce of yͤ French king, as witneſſeth the French chronicle. wherof the occaſion was, as affirmeth the Engliſh boke, for ſo much as prince Edward had lately before arrered of the inhabitauntes of that citie and coūtrey, a great and greuous taxe, to their great hurt and enpoueriſhing, by meanes whereof, he loſt the loue of the people. when the Frenche kyng had thus optayned the rule of Limoſine, he emmediatly after ſent ſyr Barthram de Glaicon into the Earledome of Poyteaw or Poytiers, and wanne ther many townes and caſtelles, and laſtlye layde his ſiege vnto Rochel, as after in the folowinge yere ſhall be ſhewed.

And to the ende that good and meritorious dedes ſhuld be holdē in memorie, here is to bee noted that yͤ maire for this yere beinge Jhon Bernes mercer, gaue vnto the comminaltie of the citie of London, a cheſt with thre lockes and keyes, and therin a thouſand marke of readie money, willinge the keyes thereof, to be yerely in the keping of thre ſondry perſons, that is to meane, the maiſter of the felowſhip of the mercerye; to haue one, the maiſter of the felowſhyp of drapers the ſeconde, and the thirde to be in the keepinge of the chamberlayne of that citie. And ſo therein the ſaid thouſand marke to be kept; to thentēt that at all times when anye citezyne woulde borow anye money, that he ſhoulde haue it there for the ſpace of a yeare, to lay for ſuche a ſumme as he would haue, plate or other iewels, to a ſufficient gage, ſo that he exceded not the ſumme of an hundred marke. And for the occupiyng therof, if he were learned, to ſaye at hys pleaſure, De profundis for the ſoule of Jhon Barnes and al chriſten ſoules, as often tymes, as in hys ſumme were compriſed ten markes. As he that borowed but ten marke, ſhould ſaye but ouer that prayer. And if he had twenty marke, then to ſaye it twies, & ſo after yͤ rate. And if he were not learned, then to ſaye as often hys Pater noſter. But howe ſo this money was lent or guyded, at thys daye the cheſte remayneth in yͤ chamber of London, wythout money or pledges for the ſame.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxx. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxi.

Jhon Bernes. { Robert Hatfeelde. Robert Gayton. } Anno.xlvi.

IN this.xlvi.yere, and moneth of February, kyng Edwarde helde hys Parlyament at Weſtminſter, in the whiche he aſked of the ſpiritualtie.l.M.pound, and as much of the lay fee. The whiche by the temporall was graunted, but the clergye kepte theym of with pleaſaunt anſweres. So that yͤ kyng and his counſaile was with them diſcontented, in ſo muche that to their diſpleaſures, diuers officers, as the chaũceller, the priuyſeale, the treaſurer, and other were remoued beyng ſpirituall men, and in their offices and places temporall men ſet in. And ſhortly after, the foreſayde Cardinall of Beauuais came into Englande, to treate the peace betwene the two realmes. But he ſped nothing to the effect therof. Wherfore, in the moneth of July, the French king ſent into the coũtrey of Poyteau, the forenamed ſyr Barthram de Claycon with a ſtronge armye, where he wan diuers holdes and Forſtreſſes frõ the Engliſhemen. In whiche ſeaſon king Edwarde for ſtrengthinge of the countrey, and ſpecially to defend the towne of Rochell, which as aboue in the other yere is ſhewed, was at this yere beſieged by the ſaid ſyr Barthram, ſente, the earle of Penbroke with other noble men, to fortifie the ſaid towne, and to remoue the ſiege. But or he myghte win to the ſaid towne, he was encountred with a flote of Spayniardes, the which king Henrye of Caſtile had ſent into Fraunce, to ſtrength the French kinges party. Of the which Flote, after long and cruell fighte, the ſaide Earle was taken, with ſir Guycharde de Angle and other, to the number of. C. and.lx.priſoners, & the more party of his men ſlaine and drowned, with the loſſe of manye goodes ſhippes.

And in the beginninge of the moneth of Septẽber folowing, a Gaſcoyne borne, a man of good fame, whom the king of England had admitted for his liuetenaũte, and gouernour of the countrey of Poyteaw, named le Captall de Bueff, fought wͭ an army of frẽch men, before a towne named Sonbiſe, where in concluſion his men were ſlaine & chaſed, and he with lxx.of hys party taken pryſoners. Then the Dukes of Berrye, and Burgoyne vpon the ſyxte daye of September came before Rochel, and had certayne communications with the rulers of the ſayde towne for the delyuerye thereof. In thys paſſe tyme and ſeaſon, Kynge Edwarde hearynge of the taking of the earle of Penbroke, & of the loſſe that he dayly had of his men in diuers parties of Fraũce, with alſo the ieopardye that the towne of Rochell and other ſtode in, made haſty prouiſion, and entended to haue paſſed the ſea. But the winde was contrarious, that he might haue no paſſage, wherefore he retourned, as ſaieth Policronicon, agayne into the lande.

Then vpon the.viii.day of September beforeſayd, the capitayne of Rochell, hauyng no comfort of ſhort reſcous, yelded vpon certain appoyntementes, the ſayd towne vnto the forenamed dukes, vnto the French kynges vſe. And ſhortlie after were alſo yelden to them, the townes of Angoleſme, of Exanctes, of ſaynct Jhon de Angely, with diuers other.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxi. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxii

Jhon Piell. { Jhon Philpotte. / Nycholas Brember. } Anno.xlvii.

AND in the.xlvii. yere, at a wreſtlynge holden vpon blacke Heth beſyde London, was ſlayne a Mercer of London, named Jhon Northwode. For the which great diſſecion grewe amonge the feliſſhippes of the Citie, to the houge diſtourbaũce of it, and a good ſeaſon after or the rancoure thereof might be duely apeaſed.

In this yeare alſo the duke of Lancaſtre ſyr Jhon of Gaunt and ſir Edmunde his brother earle of Cambrige, wedded yͤ two doughters of Peter, whiche was late kinge of Caſtyle, put to death by Henrye his baſtarde brother, as before J haue ſhewed in the.xliii. yere of this kynges reygne. Of the whiche twoo doughters, ſyr Jhon of Gaunt maried the eldeſt named Conſtãce, and his brother the yonger named Jſabel, ſo that by theſe mariages, theſe two brethren claymed to bee enheritours of the kyngedome of Caſtile or Spayne.

And in this yere after the duke of Britayn had receiued many exhortacions & requeſtes from the Frenche kyng, to haue him vpon his partie: he ſente for certayne ſouldioures of Engliſhmen, and ſtrengthed with them ſome of hys Caſtels and holdes. Wherof hearing kinge Charles, ſente thither with a ſtronge power the forenamed ſyr Barthram de Claycon, warnynge theym to make warre vnto them as an enemie vnto the houſe of Fraunce. The which accordynge to theyr commiſſion entred the land of Britayne, in waſtyng it with yron and fyre, and in ſhort proceſſe had yelden vnto him the more parte of the chiefe townes, except Breſt, Aulroy, & Daruall. Than in the ende of June, the ſayde Barthram layde ſyege vnto Breſt, and the lord of Craon with other lay before Daruall. In all whiche ſeaſon the duke of Britayne was in Englande. For ſo ſoone as he hadde, as before is ſayd, beſtowed the foreſayde Engliſh ſouldyoures, he ſayled into Englande to ſpeake with kynge Edwarde.

In the moneth of July, the duke

of Lancaſtre with ſir Jhon de Mountforde, Duke of Britaine ⁊ other, with a mightye puiſſaunce landed at Caleys.

The iourney of kig Edwarde, into fraūce

And after they had reſted them there a certayne dayes, they rode vnto Heſden, and lodged theym within the parke an other ſeaſon. And after paſſed by Dourlons, by Benqueſne, and ſo vnto Corbye, where they paſſed the Ryuer of Some, ⁊ rode vnto Roy in Vermendoys, where they reſted them by the ſpace of. vii. dayes. At whiche terme ende, they ſet fyre vpon the towne, and tooke theyr waye towarde Laemoys, and burned and ſpoyled the countrey as they wēt: and in proceſſe of time paſſed the riuers of Oſne, Marne and of Aube, and rode through Chāpain and by the Earledome of Brame ſtreyte vnto Guy, and paſſed the riuer of Seyn, and ſo toward the riuer of Leyr, and vnto Marcinguy the Nonnery. And when they were paſſed the ſayde Nonnery, they kept their way towarde the riuer of Ancherre, ⁊ ſo vnto Burdeaux. In all which iourney they paſſed without fight or battayle, notwithſtanding the great hurte and domage they did vnto yͤ townes and coūtreys as they paſſed. Except at a place or towne called Orchie, a knight of Fraunce, called ſyr Jhon de Vienne encountred. l. ſpeares and. xx. archers, yͭ wer ſtrayed from theyr hoſte, and ſet vpon them, and ſlew ſome part of theym, and tooke the reſidue of them priſoners. So yͤ the French boke ſayth, for ſo much as for lacke of meat for their horſes and other paynefull thinges, that in that iourney to theym happened, that thoughe that iourney were vnto yͤ Engliſhemen honorable to ride ſo farre in the kynges lande, vnfoughten with, yet it was to them very paynefull, conſiderynge the manyfolde chaunces fallynge to them, as loſſe of horſes, and other thinges duryng that paſſage.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiii.

Adam of Bury. { Jhon Awbry.
Jhon Filſhyde. } Anno. xlviii.

IN this. xlviii. yere were ſente fro the Pope of Rome, than beyng the. xi Gregory, the archbyſhop of Rauēne and the Byſhop of Carentes, for to treate of the peace, betwene yͤ two kynges of Englande and of Fraunce. The which aſſembled them at Bruges in Flaunders. Whether alſo for kynge Edwardes partie, came the duke of Lancaſtre, and the Byſhop of London with other. And for Charles the Frenche kyng, appeared there the Duke of Burgoyne, and the Byſhop of Amiens, and other. The whiche commiſſioners, after they had ſpent a great parte of the lent in diſputacions of this matter, yͤ parties for the French kyng, deſired a licēce of the Legates, that they might ride vnto Paris, and ſhew vnto the kynge the offers of the Engliſh partie, and ſo to returne tourne with his pleaſure. Whereupon it was agreed, that a certaine ſhould ride and to ſhew vnto the French kyng, that the Engliſhmen abode ſtyffely vpon the ſoueraintie, that the kyng of Englande, and his heyres kynges, ſhall enioy all the former landes, compriſed in the peace made betwene him and Jhon, than kinge of Fraunce, as before is ſhewed in the .xxiiii. yere of this kinge, without homage or other dutie for thē doyinge.

For thys matter as ſayeth the Frenche chronicle, kynge Charles aſſembled at Paris, a great parte of the nobles of the realme, wyth many other wiſe men & doctours of diuinite, to haue that cauſe ſufficiently argued and debated. In which counſayle it was plenerlye determined, that the kinge might not geue ouer the ſayd ſoueraintie without great peryll of his ſoule, as there was ſhewed, by diuers reaſons. When this report was brought vnto Bruges, the ſayde treaty was diſſolued without any concluſion takynge, excepte the peace was continued til the feaſt of all ſaynctes next enſuyng.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxxiii. Anno domini. M.CCC.lxxiiii.

Wyllyam Walworth. { Richarde Lions. / William Wodhowce. } Anno. xlix.

IN this yere, that is to vnderſtande, in yͤ beginninge of this Mayres yere, and ende of the .xlviii. yere, of kynge Edwarde, a new aſſemble was appoyncted, for treaty of the foreſayde peace, to be kept at ſaint Omers, but after at Bruges. Where for king Edwarde, appered againe the duke of Lancaſtre, and ſir Edmunde his brother, erle of Cambrige, with diuers other of his counſayle. And for yͤ French kynge yͤ dukes of Angeou, and of Burgoyne, with diuers other of his counſayle. Where the ſayd lordes with the other helde their aſſembles and courtes, till it was neare Eaſter, to the great charge and coſt of bothe parties. And in the ende departed agayne without effecte excepte that they prolonged the peace till the firſt daye of Aprill next enſuynge.

And after by laboure of the ſayd Legates, the kynge of Englande his counſaill being at Caleis, and the Frenche kinge his counſayle at Boleine, a longer day of yͤ ſaide peace was concluded, till midſommer next folowyng.

In which time and ſeaſon the twoo Legattes rode from Bolein to Caleys, & from Caleys to Bolein, to conclude ſome treatye betwene the two realmes. But in concluſion none was taken, whereof after the Engliſhe writers the Frenche men bare the wyte. And after the French auctors, the Engliſh are put in the blame. But were the faulte in the kynge of Englande or in the French king, trouth it is that the French kyng

during

duryng this treaty wanne manie townes & holdes, aſwel in Guian as in Britayne, and in other places, to his great aduauntage.

This yeare alſo died, doctoure william wyttelſey archebyſhop of Cãterbury. After whoſe deth, the Monkes chaſe to that ſee, the Cardenall of wincheſter. with which election the kyng was nothinge contented, ſo that after great goodes ſpent by the Monkes to opteyne their entent, by the conſent of the Pope of Rome, and the kynge, Doctoure Symonde Sudbury was laſtly admitted to that dignitie, whiche before was Byſhop of London.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxiiii. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxv.

Jhon warde. { Jhon Hadley. William Newporte. } Anno. l.

A greate death.

IN this. l. yere fell manie wonderfull sickeneſſes among the people, whereof the people died wonderfully faſte as well in Italie as in England. Emonge the whiche, died ſir Edward, called the lorde Spenſer, a man of greate fame, whoſe bodye was enterred at Teukeſbury.

And this yere a great murmure and grudge began to ſprynge agaynſt certayne perſons, that wer aboute the kyng, as the lord Latimer, then the kynge his greate Chamberleyne and other.

By whoſe ſiniſter counſayle, the kyng in his age was miſſad, and his treaſoure myſpended, to hys great diſhonoure, and al his trew ſubiectes great hinderaunce.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxvi. Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxvi.

Adam Staple. { Jhon Northamton. Robert Launde. } Anno. li.

AND in this li. yere ŷ kyng aſſembled his high courte of Parliamente at Weſtminſter. In the whiche was aſked a Subſidy of the commons for the defence of his enemies. wherunto it was aunſwered by the cõmon houſe, that they might no lenger beare ſuch charges, conſideryng theyr manifolde charges by them borne in times paſſed. And ferther they ſayd, they knew well the kynge was riche inough to defende him and his lande, if the lande & his treaſure were well guyded. But it had ben long time euill ruled by euill officers, that ŷ lande might not be plenteouſly of chafre, marchaundiſe, or riches. By meane whereof, and by theyr inportune charges, the cominaltie was greatly enpoueriſhed. Moreouer the ſayd cõmons complayned them, vpon diuers offycers, cauſers of this miſorder. Wherof the Lorde Latimer was noted for principall, with alſo dame Alis Piers, the whiche the kynge had longe time miſuſed for his concubine, and one named ſyr Richard Scurri knight, by whoſe counſayles and ſiniſtre meanes, the kyng was miſguided, and the rule of the lande miſordered.

Wherefore the ſaide commons prayed by the mouth of theyr ſpeaker thẽ ſir Piers Dalamere, that the ſaid perſons with other might be remoued from the kyng, and other to be ſet in aucthoritie abont his perſone as were for hys honoure and weale of his realme. Whiche requeſt of the commons, by the meanes of the noble prynce Edward was accepted ſo that the ſayd perſon wer from the kyng amoued, and other by the aduiſe of the ſayd prince and other wiſe lordes of the realme, for the ſaid perſons about the kyng deputed and ordeyned. And ſhortly after the commons graunted the kyng hys pleaſure, ſo that he had of euerye man and woman, ouer the age of fourtene yeres. iiii. d. beggers onlie excepted.

ate

And by the clergy was graunted, that the kynge ſhould haue of euery beneficed man. xii. d. and of Prieſtes not beneficed. iiii. d. the iiii. orders of Freers onely excepted. But or this money were leuied, the king was faine to borow ſummes of money in diuers places, emonge the whiche the Citie of London was ſente to for foure thouſande pounde, But for the Maior then Adam Stapul, was not quicke or fortherynge in that matter, he was by the kynge hys commaundement diſcharged, the xxiſ. day of the moneth of March, and for him, was then Richarde Whityngton Mercer choſed.

The death of yͤ noble prince Edwarde.

And vpon the eight day of June beyng then Trinitee ſonday, died that noble & famous man Prince Edwarde, within the kinge hys Paleys at Weſtminſter, and after with greate ſolempnite conueyed to Caunterbury, and there honorably buried: after whoſe death the kyng contrary his promiſſe before made, called to him agayn all ſuche perſons as he tofore for hys honour and profite of his realme auoyded out of hys court, and admitted theym agayne to the ſame offices that they before occupied. By the meanes of whom the fore ſayde ſpeaker of the Parliament ſyr Piers Delamere, was in ſuch wiſe complained vpon to the king that he was throwen into priſon, where he lay many yeres after.

Then kyng Edwarde created Richard ſonne of Prince Edward prince of Walis, and gaue vnto him the erledomes of Cheſter and Cornewall. And alſo for the king waxed feble and ſickely: he then betooke the rule of the lande vnto ſir Jhon of Gaunt duke of Lancaſtre, and ordeyned him as gouernoure of the lande. Which ſo continued during his fathers life.

In this yeare alſo the tenauntes or meniall ſeruauntes of the Earle of Warwike, made a ryote vpon the Monkes of Euyſhã, & ſlewe and hurte manye of the Abbottes tenauntes, and ſpoiled and brake his cloſures and warynnes and ſewed their pondes and waters, and did vnto them many diſpleaſures, to the vtter ruyne of yͤ

Monaſtery, ne had the kynge the ſooner ſent downe to the earle his letters, chargyng him to eaſe and withdrawe his menne from that riot. Which afterward was pacyfied, without any notary puniſhment of ſuche perſonnes, as were beginners or executours of that ryot.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xcvi. Anno domini. M.CCC.xcvii.

Nycholas Bembre. { Andrewe Pykman. / Nichalas Twiford. } Anno.lii.

AND in this .lii. yere and .xii. dai of the moneth of April, ſir Jhon Minſterworthe knight for certayne treaſons, of the which he was conuict before the Maire and other iuſtices of the king in Guildhalle, was this forſayde day at Tyborne put in execucion, yͤ is meane, hanged hedded, and quartered, & his head ſet after vpon London brydge. The cauſe of whoſe deathe was, for ſo muche, as he beynge put in truſte by the kyng, receyued great ſummes of money to pay with the kynge hys ſouldiours, the whiche he kept to his owne vſe, and deceiued the kinge and his ſouldiours. And when thereof, he was to the kyng accuſed, he fearing punyſhment, fled into Fraunce, and there conſpired newly againſte his naturall prynce, and ſo laſtlye was taken and receyued his merite.

In this yere alſo began a wonderful cyſme, in yͤ church of Rome. For after the death of the .xi. Gregory, was choſen twoo Popes. Wherof the fyrſt was named the vi. Urban, and that other the ſeuenth Clement, the firſt an Italian borne, & that other a Frenche man. Of the which enſued ſuche diſcorde in election of the Pope, yͭ by the terme of .xxxix. yeare after, there was euer twoo Popes of Rome in ſuch aucthoritie, yͭ harde and doubtfull it was to knowe, whether was indubitat Pope of Rome.

And vpon the .xxii. daye of the moneth of June, dyed at hys maniour of Shene, now called Richmount, kyng Edwarde the third of that name, when he had reigned .li. yeares and .v. monethes, & odde dayes, leauynge after hym iiii. ſonnes, that is to ſay Leonell Duke of Clarence, Jhon of Gaũt Duke of Lancaſtre, Edmunde of Langley duke of Yorke, and Thomas of Wodſtocke, Erle of Cambridge. Of the which ſonnes with other nobles of his Realme, he was honourablie conueyed from hys ſayd maniour of Shene vnto the Monaſtery of Weſtmynſter, and there ſolempnelye enterred, within the chapell of Saynt Edward vpon the ſouthe ſyde of the Shrine, wyth this Epytaphy or ſuperſcripcion in a table hangyng vpon his Tombe.

Hic decus Anglorum, flos regũ
preteritorum,
Forma futurorum, rex clemens,
pax populorum.

Tercius Edwardus regni com-
plens iubileum,
Inuictus pardus, pollens bellis
Machabeus.

¶ The which is thus to be vnderſtand in our mother tongue, as folowyng.

Of Engliſh kynges, here lieth the
beauteous floure
Of all before paſſ d and myrrour to
them ſhall ſue,
A mercifull Kinge, of peace conſer-
uatour,
The thyrde Edward The death of
whome may rue
All Engliſhmen, for by knighthode
due.
VV as liberd inuicte, and by feate
Marciall
To woorthy Machabe in vertue
peregall,

Francia.

Phylyp de Valoys, Earle of Valoys, and ſōne of Charles de Valois brother vnto the .iiij. Philip, was admitted for protectour of ẏ realme of Fraunce, in the beginnynge of the moneth of February. And vppō Trinite ſondaie next enſuing, he with his wife wer crowned at Raynes, in the yere of our Lorde God a M.ccc.xxviii. and the ſeconde yere of kyng Edwarde the thyrde, then beyng in poſſeſſion of the crowne of England. Betwene this Philip and the ſayd Edward kynge of Englande, as ſomedeale before in the ſtory, and .iiij. yere of Charles the fift is touched, great diſputacions and argumentes, aroſe betwene their counſailes, for the right and title to the Crowne of Fraunce. For it was thought by the counſayle of Englande, for ſo muche as Edwarde was coſin to Philip le Beaw, and ſonne of the ſayd doughter, whiche had no moo children but Edwardes mother, that he ſhould rather be king of Fraunce, then Philip de Valoys, that was but coſin germain to Philip le Beawe, and ſonne of his brother Charles.

Of whiche diſpicions and argumentes, the finall concluſion was, that for an olde decree and law by aucthoritee of Parlament longe before made, was enacted, that no woman ſhoulde inherite the crowne of Fraunce; therefore the title of Edward, by myght of the French men was put by, and this Philip, admitted to the gouernaunce of the ſame. After whiche direction thus taken, and ſpecially by the meanes of ſir Robert Erle of Artoys, this Philip anon was proclaimed regent of Fraũce vnto ſuche time, as the Queene wyfe of Charles the .v. which thẽ was with childe were deliuered, and ſo receyued the rule of ẏ lande as Regent. In tyme wherof, Peter Remy principall treaſourer of kyng Charles laſt deade; whyche Peter (lyuyng the ſayd Charles) was accuſed of miſpendyng of the kyng his treaſoure, and enriching of him ſelfe contrary to right and reaſon, ſo that his goodys ſhould be eſtemed at .iiij. C. M. li. after Paris money (wherof the value is ſet out in diuers places before in this worke) was taken out of priſon and arreyned at Parys, and ther conuicte and adiuged: and vpon the .xxiiij. day of Marche drawen through the citie, and hanged vpō the common gibet at Paris. And vpon the firſte day of Apryll folowynge the olde Queene and wyfe of Charles laſt kynge, was lighted of childe and brought forthe a doughter at Bloys in Vincent, which after was named Blaunche. Wherefore, where before the ſayde Philip de Valoys ruled before but as regente, now he was allowed and taken for kyng, and crowned (as before is ſayd) at the citie of Raynes, with the Queene his wife vpon Trinitee ſonday.

Philip de Valoyes crowned kynge of Fraunce.

And when the ſolempnite of hys coronacion was ended, he then aſſembled before him and his counſayle Lewes the erle of Flaũders, and receyued of him homage for the ſayd Erledome. And that doen he beſought the kyng of ayde to oppreſſe certayne townes of his countrey which rebelled agaynſt him. Wherunto the king graunted, and by counſaile and exhortacion of ſyr Gualtier or Walter de Crecy, then Counſtable of Fraũce the kyng ſent out hys commiſſioners, chargynge his lordes with their aſſygnes and ſouldiours, to mete with him in diffenſible array at the citie of Arras by Mary Magdelein day next enſuyng.

At which daye, the kynge with his Lordes and people there meting, toke forward vpon his iourney, and ſped him toward Caſſile a towne of Flaunders. Where within litle ſpace of the towne he pight his pauilions and Tentes, and waſted and pilled the countre thereaboute. But the Flemminges keping within the ſaid town feared nothyng the French kyng, but in diriſion of him and of his lordes, they cauſed a red Cocke to be paynted vpon a white clothe, and wrote in great letters in the ſayde cloth this ryme folowynge, and hanged it ouer the walles.

Quant ce quoc icy chantera.
Le roy troue ca entrera.

☞ Whiche is thus to meane in our vulgare ſpeche.

VVhẽ this cocke lo here doth ſing,
Then ſhall this founde Kinge his
hoſt in bring.

VHen this was red of the French men, and reporte was made therof vnto the kynge, he was therwith ſore amoued, and ſpecially for that that they named him the founden king therfore they aſſayled them ſtrōglie vpon all parties. But they of the towne defended theym manfully, ſo that their enemies had of them none aduauntage.

Then the kynge ſente ſyr Roberte de Flaunders, a knyghte of the Earles, wyth certayne Souldiours, commaundyng him to aſſayle the Flemynges, toward ſaynt Omers. And therle he moniſhed, yͭ he with his people ſhould aſſayle them towarde the Iſle.

The commons of Bruges, Ipre, of Turney, of Fourneys, and of al Caſſyle aſſembled them, and prouyded yͭ a certayne of thē ſhould kepe the mount of Caſſile, and another companie ſhould kepe the countrey towarde Tourney, and the third hoſte ſhould fortifie the countrey towarde the Iſle.

The whiche people ordered euery hoſte his limit to him aſſigned, and daylye ſkirmiſhed with the Frenche men, ſo that betwene them, men were ſlayne vpon both parties. When the king had thus lien before the towne a certayne ſeaſon, the Flemmynges not fearyng their enemies, iſſued oute of the towne, and pight their Tentes vpon the mounte of Caſſyle, & ſhewed theym boldly vnto theyr enemies. Then king Philip ſeing the boldneſſe of the Flemminges, and howe litle they feared him, tooke counſayle of his lordes, how he might cauſe them to deſcende the hylle, for ſo longe as they kepe the hyl it was ieoperdous and perelous to ſtie towarde them. Laſtly it was agreed by the kyng and his lordes, yͭ ſir Robert de Flaundres with other, ſhould aſſayle an hold or towne therby, called Terroner de Burgner , by meane wherof, the kyng thought yͭ they would deſcende the mount, to reſcue the ſayde towne. Whiche accordinge to the kynge his minde was done, and a Bulwerke ſette vpon a fyre. But the kyng had neuer the rather his entent. For thei kept them and their gates in ſure wyſe, that the Frenche kynge for all his great power, might to thē do no ſcath. In ſo much that the kynge conſidering their ſtrength was condeſcended to famyſh thē, by hunger, in that thei might not wynne by ſtrength: and for that tooke the leſſe watche or regarde to his people, but ſuffered them to play and diſport them out of their harneys, eche of theim in others Tent, thinkyng him ſure of his enemies, for any aſſaute or warre by them to bee procured or attēpted agaynſt him or his lordes.

But whether it were that hys enemies of this were warned, or that of their owne courage and pride they would aſſayle yͤ French hoſt, vpon the .xxiij. day of Auguſt toward the night, the ſayde hoſte of Flemmynges aualed the moũt in as ſecrete wiſe as men of warre might, and drew them toward the Frenchemen, which then wer vnarmed , and in theyr diſportes of diſing and plaiyng, at Cheſſe and other games.

Vpon whome the Fleminges came ſo ſodaynly, that they ſlewe many of their enemies, and forced many to fley towarde Saynt Omers for theyr ſaue garde. And ſo the Flemmynges helde on theyr way till they came neare vnto the kyng his Tent, whiche then was alſo vnarmed. But by the noyſe & crie he beyng warned, in all haſte armed him. In the whiche ſeaſon (as God woulde for the Frenche hoſte,) certayne Marſhals of the Frenche hoſt with a ſtronge companie, retourned from the aſſaute of an hold therby, and encountred the Flemmynges, and helde wyth them battayle, while the kynge & his lordes made them redye. So that in proceſſe the Flemmynges were cloſed with theyr enemyes and had a ſharpe and cruell fight, wherin they defended theym vygorouſlie.

But in the ende the loſſe of the fielde tourned vpon the Flemynges, ſo that the capitayne named Zaunqun was ſlayne, with many other, to the number of. xviii. M. and aboue, as witneſſeth yͤ Frẽche booke, ouer many which wer ther taken priſoners of poore men and artificers, for the multitude of yͤ gentilmen were vpon the earles partie.

After which victory thus opteyned by the kynge, anone he cauſed the ſayd towne of Caſſell to be ſet vpon a fyre, and after yode vnto Bruges and hadde it yolden vnto him. And in like wiſe was Ipre, Poperyng, Fournays, Tournay, Terrouer and manye other good townes yolden vnto him. Among the which Gaunt is not named. Wherfore it is to deeme, that it was none of thoſe townes that at this ſeaſon rebelled.

Then in ſhort proces folowing the king had the rule of the whole Erledome of Flaunders, and deliuered the poſſeſſion thereof vnto Lowes the foreſayde Erle of that countrey, and after retourned into Fraunce with pompe, leauyng the earle in hys countie of Flaunders. The which did after ſo cruel iuſtice vpon his ſubiectes, that he put to death by diuers tourmentes, as rakkynge, headdynge and hanginge, in ſondry townes and places of his lordſhips, vpon the number of. x. thouſande ouer and aboue manye and diuers whiche were baniſhed, ſome for fewe yeres, ſome for many and ſome for euermore.

IN the ſecond yere of this kyng Philip, lyke as before is ſhewed in the thyrde yeare of kynge Edwarde, the ſayde Edwarde, made his homage vnto the ſayde Philippe in the towne of Amyas, for the Duchye of Guyon and countie of Poytiers. And ſoone after, thys Philip ſente into Flaunders dyuers biſhops and other noble mẽ, by whoſe meanes, the gates of Bruges, of Ipre, of Courtrai and of other townes, wer abated and throwen downe, for feare leaſt the ſayde townes woulde oft rebel agaynſt him or their Erle.

In this yere alſo ſir Robert de Artoys began his plee in parliament agaynſte Jhon counteſſe of Artoys, for that erledome, in claymynge the right ther of by certain endentures of couenãtes of mariage, betwene ſir Philip de Artoys his father, and dame Blaunche of Britayne his mother, whiche writinges had bene by longe time kept from him and now newlie founden. And for to haue the better expedicion in his matter, he brought vnto the king, the erle of Alenſon, the duke of Britayne, with diuers nobles, the whiche made requeſt for him to the kynge that he might haue iuſtice. And with the counteſſe, came the duke of Burgoine, Lowes erle of Flaũders, and diuers other noble men makinge like requeſt for her and for her right. Than ſir Roberte ſhewed forthe a writinge, ſealed with the ſeale of armes of the erle of Artoys, conteynyng that when the mariage was ſolempniſed of

ſir

ſyꝛ Philip de Artoys, father to yͤ ſayd Robert, & of dame Blaũch doughter vnto the Duke of Bꝛitayne, and mother vnto the ſayde Robert, it was accoꝛded that the ſayde ſyꝛ Philip his father, gaue vnto the ſaid dame Blaunch and to her heyꝛes, the erledome of Artoys. Which wꝛitinges at the inſtaunce and pꝛaier of the coũteſſe, of Artoys, wer then deliuered into the courte to be kept, ſaiynge yͭ the ſayd wꝛitinges, were vntrue and counterfeted. Upon the whiche the ſayde counteſſe bꝛoughte ſufficient pꝛoufe, that yͤ ſayd wꝛytinges were falſely made and ſealed by a gentilwoman, doughter vnto the Loꝛde of Dygnon of the Caſtel of Bethune, yͤ whiche was ſo learned in Aſtronomy, that ſhe toke vpon her to ſhew thynges to come. Wherin ſometime ſhe happed vpon the ſothe, but moꝛe oftener ſhe fayled.

By meanes of whych woman an olde chartre ſealed with yͤ ſeale of the foꝛenamed ſir Philip was found, the which ſhe craftly tooke of, and ſet it vpon a new wꝛitinge made to the auaũtage of the ſayd ſir Roberte of Artoys, and after pꝛeſented them vnto the ſayde ſyꝛ Robert, ſaiyng that ſhe had foũd them in the towne of Acras. The whiche he ioyfullie receyued, and made his title and clayme vpon the ſame.

This matter thus hangynge befoꝛe the kyng and his Loꝛdes, in the thirde yere of his reygne, in the city of Paris, after due pꝛoufe made vpon the ſame, the ſentence was giuen agaynſt ſyꝛ Robert of Artoys, to his great diſpleaſure. In ſo much that he ſayd openlye, by me he was made a kynge, and by me he ſhall be diſmyſſed, if I may. And foꝛ he feared to be caſte in pꝛiſon by the French kynge, he therefoꝛe conueyed his hoꝛſe and goodes ſecretely vnto Burdeaux vpon Gerounde, and there tooke ſhippynge and ſo paſſed into England his ſayd hoꝛſes & treaſour, and him ſelf yode vnto his coſyne, the duke of Bꝛabant: With whom he bode a certayne of time, and after paſſed into England, and excited kinge Edwarde hougelye foꝛ to make warre vpon the Frenche kynge.

In the, iiij. yeare of the reygne of this Philip, the ſayd ſir Robert was pꝛoclaymed open enemie, to the Crowne of Fraunce, and hys landes ſeaſed into the French kinges handes, and he baniſhed the land foꝛ euer, except that he within a moneth after Eaſter next enſuynge, wolde come vnto the kinges courte, and ſubmit him wholy vnto the kynges grace. Whiche ſentence paſſed agaynſt him, foꝛ ſo muche as he appeared not.

In the. vi. yere of the reygne of this Philip, the wife of ſir Robert of Artoyes, the which was ſyſter vnto kyng Philip, was accuſed to be a great occaſioner of the offence of her huſbande. Foꝛ the whiche ſhe with her childꝛen was ſente into Gaſtenoys and there holden in ſtrayte pꝛiſon.

In the eyght yeare of hys reygne, kynge Phylyppe vyſyted dyuers parties of hys Realme, and in that doynge, vyſited manye places of Pylgrymages, whiche befoꝛe, he hadde pꝛomyſed to ſeeche, foꝛ the reſtitucion of health to hys eldeſt ſonne Jhon than duke of Normandy, whiche the yere before by meanes of ſycknes was in great ieopardy of life, and continuynge the ſayde iourney, rode vnto Auignon and viſited there the Pope of Rome, than beyng Benet the .xii. of that name And when he had ſped his nedes with him, he yode into yͤ prouince of Mercile for to ſe ther his nauy, and after retourned by Burgoyne where, of the duke he was royally receyued and feaſted.

In which ſeaſon of his ther tarying, a complaynt was brought before him by yͤ ſayd duke, againſt ſyr Jhon de Chalon, for claime of certayne landes within that Duchie: The whiche variaunce to apeaſe, the kyng toke therin ſome payne. But no direction he might ſet therin, ſo that the ſayde Duke and ſyr Jhon departed with wordes of defiaunce. And ſhortly after the ſayde ſyr Jhon accompanied with diuers noble men of Almayn, entred the duchye of Burgoyne, & therin did muche harme to the countrey and people, and gat certayne Caſtels, and theym fortified with Almaynes. Than the duke hauynge in his ayde, the king of Nauerñ, the duke of Normãdy, wͭ the erle of Eſcamps & of Flaunders, aſſieged the Caſtell of Chauſy, & at the ende of .vi. wekes wan the ſame, and after yode vnto the Citie of Beſenſon, and laide ſiege to it alſo. But whan he had lyen there a longe ſeaſon, he was fayne to conclude a truce, his hoſt was in ſuch diſtres of vytaill. By reaſon of which peace or truce the hoſtes wer deſeuered, and the ende of the warre vnparfited. But in thende folowing, by meane of the Frenche kynge, a direction was taken betwene the ſayd parparties.

And this yere kyng Philip ſẽt certayne meſſengers vnto kynge Edwarde, vpon certayne demaũdes for the Caſtell of Yauntes and other, for the which, contrauerſie firſt began to kyndle betwene the ſayd two princes, as in the .x. yere of Edwarde is touched, with the other yeres folowynge.

In the .ix. yere of this Philyp, appeared a blaſing Sterre. After the whiche enſued great mortalitie within the Realme of Frãce, aſwell of men as of beaſtes.

And in this yere, another man of the prouince of Langedok, named Arnolde of Normandy, was headed and hanged, vpon the cõmon Gibet of Paris, for as much as by his meanes it was proued, that the Englyſhmen had wonne the Caſtell of Paracol. And in the .x. yere of kynge Philip, kyng Edwarde of Englande, ſent ſir Barnarde de Bret into Flaunders, for cauſes touched and ſhewed in the .xii. yere of the ſayd Edward. And in the .xi. yere of this Philip, kyng Edwarde ſayled into Brabant, & alyed him with Lowys the Emperour. And while the Frenche kinge taried with his hoſte at S. Quyntayne in Vermãdoys, king Edwarde entred into Fraunce, and ſpoyled and brente a parte of Crereſſe, not without ſome note or of cowardiſe arretted to the Frenche kyng and his hoſte, of his owne ſubiectes. And in the ſame yeare, began the towne of Gaunt to rebell, with other townes of Flaunders, by the mocion of Jaques de Artiuile, as in the

xiiij.

xiiii.yere is ſhewed of kinge Edwarde the thyrd.

In the.xii.yere of thys Philyp whiche the French booke calleth the yere of confuſion, kyng Edwarde beyng retourned into Englande, the Frenche kyng aſſembled a myghtye hooſte to goo agaynſt the Henauders, Flemmynges, and Britons, and came with the ſaide hooſt vnto Arras, and ſent from thence a part of his people, with his ſonne Jhon then duke of Normãdy into Henaude, for to warre vppon the countrey there.

Whiche went ſtreyghte vnto Cambray, and after layde ſiege to that caſtel called Caſthandun. And within fiftene dayes folowinge, the Frenche king his father came vnto yͤ ſaide ſiege with innumerable people. The which caſtel at the ende of a moneth after the kynges comminge, was geuen vp by appoyntment. And that doen, the kyng remoued hys ſiege to a caſtel of the byſhoppe of Cambray named Thune, ſtandyng vpon the ryuer of Leſcaut, where the kyng laye longe tyme withoute harme doing vnto the ſaide caſtell. At length the duke of Brabant, with the Earle of Gerle with a ſtrong hooſte of diuers nacions, came for to remoue that ſiege, ſo that the Frenche hooſte laye vpon that one ſyde of the riuer, and the Brabanders vpon that other. But by meane of foure bridges which wer made ouer that riuer, both the hooſtes at ſondrie times met, and foughte diuers ſharpe ſkyrmiſhes to the loſſe of people vpon both parties. But in the ende, the caſtel was ſo beaten with gonnes, that the capitaine thereof, put all his moueables into a ſhyp, and after wyth ſuche ſouldiours as were left, entred the ſaide ſhyppe, and ſette the Caſtell vpon a light fyre, whereof when the French king was ware, in all haſte he cauſed the walles to be ſcaled, and entred and ſtanched the fyre. And the ſame nyght the hooſte of Brabanders departed alſo.

When the king had thus won this caſtell, he then ſent the dukes of Normandy and of Burgoyne, vnto a towne named Queſnoy. And when the ſaide dukes hadde brent a part of that towne and other villages there aboute, he retourned againe vnto the Frenche hoſte. And ſhortlye after the king returned into Fraunce, and there made prouiſion to ſende forth his nauie, to meete with kinge Edward, whiche were to the number of foure hundred or aboue, the whiche as in the fyftene yeare of Edwarde the thyrde, is before ſhewed, mette the Englyſh nauy, and there at a place called the Swyn, were ouercomen.

After this victory thus optayned by the kynge of England, the French kyng wyth a great hoſt hearyng comfortable tidynges of the diſcomfiture of ſyr Roberte of Artoys, before the towne of S. Omers, as before in the fyftene yere of kyng Edwarde is alſo ſhewed, ſped him tyll he came to the priorye of S. Andrew. where he taryng with hys people, certaine letters were ſent to him, by king Edwarde, whereof the tenour with the anſwere of the ſame, are ſette out in the foreſayde fyftene yere, with other matters, appertaynyng to the actes of both princes. When the peace was concluded betwene the ſayde kynges, as in the fiftene yere is declared, the kynge of Fraunce retourned to his owne. And in the .xiii. yere of his raygne, dyed Jhon duke of Britayne. After whoſe death Charles de Bloys, and Jhon de Mountforte, claimed ſeuerallye to bee enheritours of that duchy. Whiche Charles was ſonne vnto the Earle of Bloys, and neuew vnto the Frenche kynge, by reaſon that Margaret his ſiſter was mother vnto the ſayde Charles. The whiche Charles had maryed the doughter of Guy de Britayn, vicount of Lymoges, ſecond brother of the forenamed Jhon duke of Britayne. And the ſaide Jhon de Mounfort was the thyrd brother vnto the foreſayde Duke of Britayne nowe dead. So that this queſtion of this claime reſted vppon this poyncte, whether the doughter of ẏ ſecõd brother ſhuld enherite the duchie, or the yonger brother, conſiderynge that Jhon the eldeſt brother dyed withoute heyre of his body, and Guy the ſecond brother without heyre male, wherfore the thyrd brother Jhon de Mountfort claimed to be duke of Britaine. Whiche caſe and queſtion was broughte before the French king and his lordes, and there debated and argued by a lõg ſeaſon: but in the end the ſentence paſſed againſt ſir Jhon de Moũtfort, and Charles de Bloys was put in poſſeſſion of that duchy, by king Philippe; to whom the ſaide Charles did homage for ẏ ſame.

For this ſentence aroſe mortall war betwene the ſayde ſyr Charles and ſyr Jhon. In the whiche the two kinges of England and Fraunce toke partie, ſo that king Edwarde ayded Syr Jhon de Mountfort, and king Philip his neuewe ſyr Charles. Then Syr Jhon de Mountforte before the ſentence geuen, fearinge the ſequele of the ſame, departed from the courte, and gat hym into a ſtronge towne of Britayne, and there helde him. Whereof kynge Philip being aduertiſed, ſent ſyr Jhon his ſonne duke of Normãdy, & his brother ſyr Charles erle of Alenſon, fer to war on the ſaid ſyr Jhon de Mountfort: the whiche ſped theym with a number of people into Britayne, and beſieged a ſtrong caſtell ſtanding in an yſle by the riuer of Loyer. And after the winning therof, they rode vnto the citie of Nauntes, the whiche the citezins yelded vnto them without ſtroke. And ſoone after (as teſtifieth the Frenche ſtory) vpon certen condicions and couenauntes, the ſaide ſyr Jhon de Moũtfort yelded him vnto the duke of Normandye, the whiche ſent him vnto ẏ king his father, to Parys, where by the ſaid king he was impriſoned in the caſtel of Louure. But howe it was by fauour or other wiſe, he eſcaped priſon after two yeres impriſonmẽt. Or after ſome wryters, he was after two yeares deliuered vppon certain condicions. Whereof one was, that he ſhoulde not come in Britayne, nor anye thing medle or haue to do in the cõutrey. But this impriſonment of ſyr Jhon de

Mountfort notwithſtanding the war was mainteyned in Britain by the frends of the ſaid ſyr Jhon and manye townes and caſtelles therof was holdē to the vſe of the ſayd ſyr Jhon, wherof to ſhew vnto you the circūſtaunce ⁊ proces, it woulde aſke a longe tyme. But the concluſion and fyne of thys warre ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtory of the ſyxte Charles, and ſonne of king Jhon. In the ſyxtene yere of this Philip, the earle of Saliſbury accompanied with ſyr Robert of Artoys, and other noblemen, entred Britayne, and ayded the frendes of ſyr Jhon de Mountfort, in doing great domage to the countrey, and brent muche of the Frenche kinges nauy: in aſſailing whereof, ſyr Roberte of Artoys was wounded in the thigh with a gonne, wherevpon he lay ſicke, and vpon that enſued a flux, and ſo therof dyed, and after conueyed into England, and there buryed. And ſoone after kinge Edwarde entred into Fraunce with a ſtrōg armye. But a peace was atwene him and the French king condeſcended for a certayne tearme by labour of two Cardinales, as before in the ſixtene yeare of kynge Edward is declared, and in this yere king Philip arrered a taxe of his people, called a Gabell in Frēche. This was prouided that no ſubiect of the kings, nor other, within his land, ſhould bye anye ſalt but of the king his price. And ouer that he arered and lowed the coynes and moneys of his lande, to the great aduauntage of hym ſelfe, ⁊ enpoueriſhing of his ſayd ſubiectes, by meane whereof, he fell in great hatred of his people.

In the ſixtene yere of his raigne a great diſcencion grew amonge the nobles of Normandy, by reaſon of parties taking; ſome wyth Jhon of Harecourte, and other with ſir Robert Barthram then marſhal of Fraunce, for couenaūtes of mariage apointed betwene the ſonne of the ſaid ſir Robert vpon that one party, ⁊ the doughter of ſir Roger Bacon, whoſe wife or maides mother was then maryed vnto ſir Godfrey de Harecourt brother of yͤ aboueſaide ſir Jhon, vpon the other partie. For variaunce whereof great warre was likely to haue enſued, yf the kyng the ſoner had not ſent ſtrayt commaundement, that either partye ſhould kepe peace, ⁊ to apeare before him and his lordes at Paris, and there to haue their greuaūce by him and his lords determined. At which day of apearaunce, the ſaid ſir Godfrey apeared not, nor none for him, but contrary yͤ kynges cōmaundement, aſſyeged ſyr Williā Berthram biſhop of Bain ⁊ brother to the foreſaide ſyr Robert then beinge in a caſtell. And whē he ſaw he might not preuayl againſt him, he then drewe vnto the Englyſhmen ⁊ ayded theym agaynſt the Frenche kyng.

In this yere alſo king Philyp entending to releue the duchye of Burgoyne with wheate, whiche there then was ſcant, ordeyned that certain quarters of wheate ſhuld be gathered in the coūtreys of Terroner, of Orleaunce ⁊ Gaſtenoys, ⁊ ſo ſent into Burgoyne. But the ſtudientes of Orleaūce, with the burgeiſes ⁊ commons of the city, toke therwͭ ſuch grief that of one mynde they went downe

vnto

with the anſwere of the ſame, are ſette out in the foreſayde fyftene yere, with other matters, appertaynyng to the actes of both princes. When the peace was concluded betwene the ſayde kynges, as in the fiftene yere is declared, the kynge of Fraunce retourned to his owne. And in the .xiii. yere of his raygne, dyed Jhon duke of Britayne. After whoſe death Charles de Bloys, and Jhon de Mountforte, claimed ſeuerallye to bee enheritours of that duchy. Whiche Charles was ſonne vnto the Earle of Bloys, and neuew vnto the Frenche kynge, by reaſon that Margaret his ſiſter was mother vnto the ſayde Charles. The whiche Charles had maryed the doughter of Guy de Britayn, vicount of Lymoges, ſecond brother of the forenamed Jhon duke of Britayne. And the ſaide Jhon de Mounfort was the thyrd brother vnto the foreſayde Duke of Britayne nowe dead. So that this queſtion of this claime reſted vppon this poyncte, whether the doughter of ẏ ſecõd brother ſhuld enherite the duchie, or the yonger brother, conſiderynge that Jhon the eldeſt brother dyed withoute heyre of his body, and Guy the ſecond brother without heyre male, wherfore the thyrd brother Jhon de Mountfort claimed to be duke of Britaine. Whiche caſe and queſtion was broughte before the French king and his lordes, and there debated and argued by a lõg ſeaſon: but in the end the ſentence paſſed againſt ſir Jhon de Mõutfort, and Charles de Bloys was put in poſſeſſion of that duchy, by king Philippe, to whom the ſaide Charles did homage for ẏ ſame.

For this ſentence aroſe mortall war betwene the ſayde ſyr Charles and ſyr Jhon. In the whiche the two kinges of England and Fraunce toke partie, ſo that king Edwarde ayded Syr Jhon de Mountfort, and king Philip his neuewe ſyr Charles. Then Syr Jhon de Mountforte before the ſentence geuen, fearinge the ſequele of the ſame, departed from the courte, and gat hym into a ſtronge towne of Britayne, and there helde him. Whereof kynge Philip being aduertiſed, ſent ſyr Jhon his ſonne duke of Normãdy, & his brother ſyr Charles erle of Alenſon, fer to war on the ſaid ſyr Jhon de Mountfort: the whiche ſped theym with a number of people into Britayne, and beſieged a ſtrong caſtell ſtanding in an yſle by the riuer of Loyer. And after the winning therof, they rode vnto the citie of Nauntes, the whiche the citezins yelded vnto them without ſtroke. And ſoone after (as teſtifieth the Frenche ſtory) vpon certen condicions and couenauntes, the ſaide ſyr Jhon de Mõtfort yelded him vnto the duke of Normandye, the whiche ſent him vnto ẏ king his father, to Parys, where by the ſaid king he was impriſoned in the caſtel of Louure. But howe it was by fauour or other wiſe, he eſcaped priſon after two yeres impriſonmẽt. Or after ſome wryters, he was after two yeares deliuered vppon certain condicions. Whereof one was, that he ſhoulde not come in Britayne, nor anye thing medle or haue to do in the cõtrey. But this impriſonment of ſyr Jhon de

Mountfort notwithſtanding the war was mainteyned in Britain by the frends of the ſaid ſyr Jhon and manye townes and caſtelles therof was holdẽ to the vſe of the ſayd ſyr Jhon, wherof to ſhew vnto you the circũſtaunce & proces, it woulde aſke a longe tyme. But the concluſion and fyne of thys warre ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtory of the ſyxte Charles, and ſonne of king Jhon. In the ſyxtene yere of this Philip, the earle of Saliſbury accompanied with ſyr Robert of Artoys, and other noblemen, entred Britayne, and ayded the frendes of ſyr Jhon de Mountfort, in doing great domage to the countrey, and brent muche of the Frenche kinges nauy: in aſſailing whereof, ſyr Roberte of Artoys was wounded in the thigh with a gonne, whereupon he lay ſicke, and vpon that enſued a flux, and ſo therof dyed, and after conueyed into England, and there buryed. And ſoone after kinge Edwarde entred into Fraunce with a ſtrõg armye. But a peace was atwene him and the French king condeſcended for a certayne tearme by labour of two Cardinales, as before in the ſixtene yeare of kynge Edward is declared, and in this yere king Philip arrered a taxe of his people, called a Gabell in Frẽche. This was prouided that no ſubiect of the kings, nor other, within his land, ſhould bye anye ſalt but of the king his price. And ouer that he arered and lowed the coynes and moneys of his lande, to the great aduauntage of hym ſelfe, & enpoueriſhing of his ſayd ſubiectes, by meane whereof, he fell in great hatred of his people.

In the ſixtene yere of his raigne a great diſcencion grew amonge the nobles of Normandy, by reaſon of parties taking; ſome wyth Jhon of Harecourte, and other with ſir Robert Barthram then marſhal of Fraunce, for couenaũtes of mariage apointed betwene the ſonne of the ſaid ſir Robert vpon that one party, & the doughter of ſir Roger Bacon, whoſe wife or maides mother was then maryed vnto ſir Godfrey de Harecourt brother of yͤ aboueſaide ſir Jhon, vpon the other partie. For variaunce whereof great warre was likely to haue enſued, yf the kyng the ſoner had not ſent ſtrayt commaundement, that either partye ſhould kepe peace, & to apeare before him and his lordes at Paris, and there to haue their greuaũce by him and his lords determined. At which day of apearaunce, the ſaid ſir Godfrey apeared not, nor none for him, but contrary yͤ kynges cõmaundement, aſſyeged ſyr williã Berthram biſhop of Bain & brother to the foreſaide ſyr Robert then beinge in a caſtell. And whẽ he ſaw he might not preuayl againſt him, he then drewe vnto the Englyſhmen & ayded theym agaynſt the Frenche kyng.

In this yere alſo king Philyp entending to releue the duchye of Burgoyne with wheate, whiche there then was ſcant, ordeyned that certain quarters of wheate ſhuld be gathered in the coũtreys of Terroner, of Orleaunce & Gaſtenoys, & ſo ſent into Burgoyne. But the ſtudientes of Orleaũce, with the burgeiſes & commons of the city, toke ther wͭ ſuch grief that of one mynde they went downe vnto the ryuer of Loyr, where at that ſeaſon certayne ſhyppes laye freyghte with victayle to bee had vnto the ſayde countrey, and ther fet out the grayen, and ſpoyled it in ſuche wyſe, that muche thereof came neuer to good. And that doen, many of that companye being needye and poore, yode vnto the villages thereby, and robbed the people, and did muche harme. When the Prouoſt or ruler of Orleaunce, behelde thys rage and riot of the people, and conſidered the multitude of theim, he forbare for a time, tyl they were ſomedele aſſwaged. And then wͭ ſuch company as he had of his officers and other, he tooke a certaine of them and put theym in ſondrie priſons, tyll he knewe farther of the kynges pleaſure. But it was not long after that the other of that affinitie, hearing of the enpriſonmēt of their felowes, aſſembled theim of newe, and lyke woode menne ranne vnto the priſones, and not alonely delyuered theyr felowes, but alſo manye other, which laye ther for great cauſes and crimes, and ſome ſuche as were condempned to death for their tranſgreſſions. when noticion of thys great outrage and ryot came vnto the king, anone he ſent thither two knightes of his courte, with a puiſſaunte armye, chargynge theym to take all ſuche as were occaſioners & beginners of thys ryot, and as many as wer founde culpable to put theym to death.

The whiche knightes accordynge to theyr commiſſion, wyth ayde of the Prouoſt of Orleaunce, toke ſuch as were dempte gilty of this cryme, and hanged theym vppon the common gybet or galous of the citie, among the which were diuers clerkes, and one a deacon, and within orders.

And in the ſame yeare, and moneth of Auguſt, a noble knight of Britayne, called Syr Olyuer de Clycon̄, for treaſon that he had conſpyred agaynſt kynge Philyp, or for that he fauoured kinge Edwardes partie, was taken by a trayne, at a iuſtes or turnement holden for the ſame cauſe at Parys, and ſhortlye after iudged to death, as fyrſte drawen through the citie vnto the place of iudgement, and there vpon a ſcaffolde purpoſelye ordeyned, was beheaded, & after his bodye wyth chaines hanged vpon a gybet, and his head ſtandinge there ouer vpon a ſtake, or after another authoure, had vnto the citie of Nauntes in Britayne, and there pyght vppon a gate of the city. And in the ſame moneth ſyr Godfrey de Harcourt, whiche as before is ſayde, alyed him with king Edwarde, & wold not appeare after certayne ſommons, was nowe openlye banyſhed as a traytour and enemye to the crowne of Fraunce. And in the ſame moneth, was ſyr Jhon de Mountforte delyuered oute of priſon, vpon ſuche conditions as before is rehearſed in the .xiii. yere of thys kynge. And ſoone after were put to deathe at Parys, ſyr Jhon de Maleſtrete, ſyr Godfrey de Maleſtrete the father and the ſonne, ſyr Jhon de Mountalbone, ſyr William de Bruys, ſyr Jhon de Cablat, and ſyr Jhon de Pleſſes knyghtes, and eſquiers, Jhon de Maleſtrete neuewe to the foreſayde knyghtes, Guyllin̄ de Brize, Robert de Bruys, Jhõ de Senne, and Dauid de Senne. And ſhortlye at Parys were put in execution thre Normã knightes, for affinitie or fauour, which they had borne towarde ſyr Godfrey de Harecourt, and their heades ſent vnto S. Loup in Conſtantine a citie in Normandye, whiche ſaide knightes were called ſir William Bacon, ſir Roulande de la Rache teſſone, and ſir Richarde de Perry.

IN the.xvii. yeare of this Philippe, one Hẽry de Maleſtrete clerk and deacon, and brother to the aboue named Godfrey before put in execution, which ſaid maiſter Henry was maiſter of the requeſtes w kyng Philip, forſo much as he after the death of hys brother, yode vnto kyng Edwarde and counſailed him agaynſt kyng Philip, and after by aſſignement of king Edwarde was ſet in great authoritie within the towne of Uannis in Britayne, whiche towne was after gotten by the Frenchmen, and he therein as one of ỹ chiefe Capytaynes of the ſame taken, was impriſoned within the caſtel of Parys. Out of the whiche at this ſeaſon he was taken thens, & ſet in a tumbrell, & therevnto faſtened with chaynes of yron, and ſo conueyed bareheaded with din and crie through the hygh ſtretes of Parys, till he came to the byſhoppes palais, and there deliuered vnto the biſhop. And ſone after, by vertue of a commiſſion purchaſed by kinge Philip of the Pope, to haue the ſaide maiſter Henry diſgraded and depriued of al degrees and orders of ỹ church; and then delyuered vnto the executioners. The whiche by thre dayes continuall a certaine ſeaſon of the daye, ſet him vpon a lader in the ſyght of all the people, to the entent that euery man and childe mighte throwe at him all fylth and ordour of the ſtrete, the which was doen without al compaſſion and pitie, in ſo cruel wiſe, that by ỹ thyrd daies end he was dead, and after buryed vnreuerentlye.

In the ſaid.xvii. yere of kynge Philip alſo, as before is ſhewed in the.xix. yere of king Edwarde the thirde, Jaques de Artiuile, whiche was a ſpeciall promoter of kinge Edwardes cauſes, came vnto the towne of Gaunte, and ſhewed vnto theym diuers appoyntmentes to bee holden betwene theym and other townes of Flaunders. Where vppon the xv. day of July, by diuers conſpitours of the ſayde towne of Gaũt he was purſued from one houſe to another, and laſtly ſlayne and murdred by theym, to the kynge of Englandes greate diſpleaſure and hurt. Wherefore the ſaid king Edwarde was fayne to retourne into Englande, without ſpede of his purpoſe, like as before in the ſaid ninetene yere is declared.

Jaques de Artiuile murdred.

In this yere alſo, and moneth of December, died ſyr Jhon earle of Mountfort, whiche as before is ſayde, claymed the Duchye of Britain, and maintened warre agaynſt ſyr Charles de Bloys, as his father before had doen.

In the.xviii. yere of king Philip,

lip and firſt day of July at Paris was then putte to death by cruell execution, a citezin of Compeyñ, named Simond Poylet, a man of great riches. The which for he had ſayde in open audience, that the right of the crowne of Frãce belonged more ryghtfullye vnto king Edward, then to king Philip, he was fyrſt hanged vppon a tree, like as an oxe is hanged in the bocherye, and there diſmembred, as firſt the armes, and after the legges, cut from the bodye, & laſtly his head ſtriken of, and the truncke of his bodye hanged by chaynes vpon the common gybet of Paris. And vpõ a Saterdaie, being the .xviii. yere of king Philip, was foughtẽ at Creſſy the batayle, before expreſſed in the .xxi. yere of king Edward the thyrde, where the floure of the chiualrye of Fraunce was ſlain and taken priſoners. Then ſone after kyng Philip for the defence of yͤ charge of his warres, aſked a ſubſidie of the mõkes of ſainct Denis. And emong certaine iewelles of that place to be had, he demaũded the greate crucifix of golde, ſtandyng ouer the high aulter of the monaſterie. Wherunto the monkes anſwered, that thei might not depart with that crucifix, for Pope Eugenius the third of that name accurſed all theim that laied any hande vpon that crucifixe, to the entente to remoue it from that place, as it appeareth by writing ſet vnder the fote of the croſſe, by which aunſwer the king was pacified. And in the moneth of December, ſyr Godfrey de Harecourt wyth a towell double folden aboute hys necke, came vnto the preſence of kyng Philip, and yelded hym wholy vnto his mercye and grace, the whiche graunted to him his pardon. And in ſhort whyle after, all the Lumbardes vſurers wythin the Realme of Fraunce, were taken and ſent to diuers priſons. And all ſuche perſons as ſtode boũden vnto theim, for any bargayns or lone of money by way of vſury, it was ordeined that the ſayde perſons beyng debtours to the ſayde Vſurers, ſhould pay the principall debt vnto the kyng at theyr daies of paiment, and the reſidue whiche remayneth to the vſurer for his lucre of gain, for the lone of his money, ſhould be pardoned to yͤ debtour. And after the ſaid Lumbardes vſurers wer deliuered frõ priſon, by paiyng of greate and greuous finaunce.

The aunſwer of the Monkes to kyng Philip, demaũding a crucifix of gold that was ĩ the Monaſterie.

In the nynetene yere of thys Philip, for ſo much as witneſſeth the Frenche Chronicle, that the Flemmynges by greate manaces and perforce, hadde conſtrained their earle to be aſſured by bonde of aſſuraunce, vnto the doughter of king Edward, contrary his voluntie and wyll, the ſaid earle not wyllyng to accompliſhe that mariage, in the Eaſterweke by a cautele departed out of Flaunders, and came to the Frenche kyng to Parys, of whome he was honorablye and ioyouſlye receyued.

And in the ſame yeare, one named Gawin de Belemunte, an Aduocate of the ſpirituall lawe, entendynge to betraye the cytye of Laoñ, acquaynted hym wyth a poore manne, than dwellynge in the Cytye of Meaus, named Colyn Temelyn, the whyche before time was fled the Citie of Laon, and was then for lacke of ſubſtance comen to Meaus and there maintened a poore life, to the whiche this Gawyn reſorted and releued. And laſtly when he thought, he was ſomedele of him aſſured, he brake vnto him hys minde, and ſayd, if he would be ruled by him, he woulde reſtore him to his former proſperity, & welth, wherunto this Coliner graunted then anone, this Gawyn ſhewed him a letter, and willed him, to beare it vnto the king of Englād, with certaine rewarde to him geuyng, and alſo promiſing of much more, with that yͤ he retourned to him ſhortly to the citie of Raines with anſwere of the ſame. When this poore and indigent man had receiued this letter, he caſt many perels in his minde. How be it finallie contrary his othe and promiſe, he tooke his way towarde the Frenche kynge, and preſented him with the letter in the which was expreſſed all the maner and order, how the ſaied citie of Laon ſhould be betraied. When the king was aduertiſed of all the circumſtaunce of this treaſon, he enfourmed this Coliner, how he ſhoulde behaue him ſelf in bearyng of his anſwere, and prouided his time accordyng as though he had been in Englande, and by conuenient day came vnto him to Raynes accordynge to the former appoinctment. In which ſeaſon, the kyng had ſent in ſecrete maner vnto the prouoſt of Raynes, that ſo ſoone as the ſaied Coliner, had ſhewed to the ſaied Gawin his aunſwer, that the ſayd Gawin ſhould be attached and had vnto priſon, the which was accordingly executed. And in ſhorte proceſſe folowinge, for ſo much as he was wᵗin orders he was by the prouoſt ſente vnto the citie of Laon, and ther put to the biſhops priſon. But when the commons of the ſaied citie heard of ſuch a man there beynge priſoner, yͤ woulde haue betraied theyr citie, they aſſembled them in great multitude, and woulde haue broken the priſon, to the ende to haue ſlaine him. But they were ſo paciently anſwered by the biſhops officers, that they retourned vnto their houſes. Upon the morowe folowyng, to ceaſe the rumour of the people, he was brought vnto his iudgement, and ther condempned vnto perpetuall priſon. And more therunto was added, that for his more diffamie and ſhame, he ſhould be ſet vpon a tumbrel vp on highe bareheaded, that of all people he might be ſeen, & ſo with moſte ſhamefull inſtrumentes lad through the highe ſtreetes of the citie, and brought agayn vnto the biſhops priſon, & there to remayn for terme of life. But he was not ferre in ſuch maner conueighed by the officers from the gaole, but yͤ commons fell vpon him with crie, and caſtynge of myre and ſtones, that or he were halfe way lad of his circuite or progreſſe, he was ſtoned to death, and after his bodie buried within a mariſ, neare vnto the ſaied citie.

And ſhortly after at Paris was doen to cruel death a citezē of the ſaid citie which entēded to haue betraied the ſaid citie of Paris: for yͤ which treaſon he was firſt diſmēbred of legges & armes, & after hāged by yͤ neck vpō yͤ gibet of paris.

In the ſame yere about the feaſt of ſaint Jhon Baptiſt, the Engliſhe menne that had holden the towne and caſtell, called the roch of Arian in Britain, by the terme of twoo yeres paſſed, at this ſeaſon they were beſieged and fierſly aſſauted, by ſir Charles de Bloys and his freendes, in ſo furious maner, that they rent with great ordinaunce, diuers places of the caſtell walles, & in proceſſe threw downe the roofe of a chaumber, where the wife of the capitain of the caſtell lay in her childbed, and ſo ferre put in feare, that the rulers of the towne and caſtel, graūted to deliuer the towne and caſtel to the ſaied Charles, with that they might depart with their lyues and goods: the which offer to his paine & charge he refuſed. For in ſhort time after, ſir Thomas of Agorum, an Engliſhe knight, with a ſtronge cōpany of archars and other ſouldiours, reſcowed yͤ ſaied towne and caſtell. And after longe fight and greate daunger, as by longe proces is declared in the Frenche ſtorie, the ſaied ſyr Thomas, tooke the ſayd Charles de Bloyes priſoner, and ſlew many of his lords, as before is ſhortlie touched, in the ende of the .xxii. yere of king Edward. After whiche victorie thus obteined, & his piſoners put in ſure kepynge, he tooke the ordinaunce of the duke, left in the field with other pillage, & put it within the towne and caſtell aforeſaied. And for the villages and men of the countrey there about, had ayde to yͤ duke againſt the towne and the caſtel, therfore the ſaied ſir Thomas puniſhed the ſaied villages and rulers, by greuous fines, & helde them in greate ſeruitude and daunger, and ouer that ſlew many of them, and manie they held as drudges and captyues. And thus doen, the Engliſh men repayred again yͤ walles and ſuch other places, as were before time beaten downe by force of the ſaied ſiege, and ſtrengthed it in their beſt maner.

IT was not long after, that kyng Philip at the requeſt of the countrey, ſente thyther the Lorde of Caron, with a ſtrong army, to whom alſo greate multitude of the people of yͤ countrey reſorted. With whoſe aydes the ſayde lorde, aſſayled the ſaied towne and caſtell, by twoo daies continuall. But the Engliſhmen defended them ſelfe vigoriouſly, & threw vpon their enemies, hote boylyng oyles and other greaſes, with fyer, coles, and hote aſhes, wherewith they greued their enemies painfully.

Thus continuynge the ſiege, meanes of a treatie were offered, & condeſcended to yelde the towne with condicion, that they myght ſaufely departe with theyr lyues and goodes, but the French men, and Britons would not to it be agreable. Than the aſſaute began of new. And yͤ lorde Carō to encourage his ſouldiours, henge a purſe, and therin fiftie Scutes of golde, vpon a ſpeares ende, & cried with a loude voice, that who that fyrſt entred yͤ towne, ſhould haue the ſaied fifty Scutes of golde. When the Januays or ſouldiours of the citie of Jeane, a Citie of Itali, hard yͤ promiſe of their chieftayne, a certaine of thē with long picarſes & ſharpe, approched them vnto yͤ walles, & ſo demeaned thē that in leſſe then .v. houres, they mined ſo the wall, that there fell therof (as teſtifieth yͤ ſaid French cronicle) the length of .l. foote: By reaſon wherof entred firſt the Januayes, and after the whole hoſt. The whiche without compaſſion or pitie, ſlew man woman & child yͤ came in their waye, not ſparyng the children that ſouked vpon the mothers breſtes: and ſpoyled and robbed the towne, euery man gettyng what he might to his owne aduantage. And when the Frēch men & Britons had thus miſerablie ſlayne the Engliſhmen, & alſo Britons & other inhabitauntes of the towne, they then aſſailed the caſtel, to the which was fled vpon ii.C. & .xl. Engliſhmen. After dyuers aſſautes, it was offered by yͤ ſouldiours of the caſtel, that they would yelde the caſtel, their lyues and goods ſaued. And finally it was agreed, their bodies onlie to departe, & to bee conueied .x. miles vpon their way toward ſuch place as they would appoint. Upon the whiche appointment .ii. knightes Britons, that is to ſay, ſir Silueſter de la Fulle, and ſir William de Stratton, receiued them in theyr coates, and conueied theym wyth great payne, & not without loſſe of ſome. For their enemies of the hoſt caſt ſtones at them: and beate them ſo with their ſtaues, that diuers of them died, & the remnaūt were brought nere vnto the caſtel then in the power of Engliſhmen named Quintine.

But when the commons of the towne there nere, hard of the commyng of ſuch Engliſhmen vnder ſafe conduit, the which before in yͤ battayle of the Roche of Arian, where ſir Charles de Bloys was taken, had ſlayne their lorde, that is to meane the lorde of Quyntin anon they iſſued out of the towne and for they fond litle reſiſtaunce, of their guides, they ſlew thē ther except one, whiche was capitaine of the Engliſhmen, which one of the ſaied knightes cauſed to be ſet vpon his horſe, and ſo fled from the perill. And when the cruell Brytons had thus ſhamefully ſlayne the Engliſhmen, thei gathered the cariens vpon an hepe, and ſuffered thē there ſo to lie, to the ende that the beaſtes and foules might deuoure them. And in ſhort tyme after, therle of Flaunders by meanes of the Frenche kinge left the doughter of king Edward & was maried vnto the doughter of the duke of Brabant.

In the .xx. yere of Philippe, the towne of Calays was gotten, like as the circumſtance therof is declared in the .xxii. yere of kynge Edwarde the thirde. And in the ſame yere the mortalitie or ſickeneſſe, which after reigned in England, reigned now feruentlie in Fraunce, and moſte ſpecially in yͤ citie of Auinion, by force wherof the third part of the people of the citie died. And from thens it came vnto Saynct Denis, and ſo vnto Paris. In whiche cooſt it was ſo feruente, that there died in thoſe twoo townes, ouer the number lvi. thouſande, within the ſpace of eyght and twentie monethes.

A greate death.

And in this yere the dolphine of Uien named ſir Imberte, ſold his dolphinage vnto yͤ French kyng, and became a freer at Liō vpon yͤ roſne of the ordre of the freer preachers, or blacke freers.

In the. xxi. yeare of this Philippe, Charles the fyrſt begotten ſonne of Ihon duke of Normandy eldeſte ſonne of this Philip, toke poſſeſſiō of theſaied dolphinage of Vien. And in yͤ moneth of Auguſt folowynge, dyed the Ducheſſe of Normandy, ⁊ mother of the ſaied Charles. And in the moneth of Decembre folowynge, dyed dame Iane quene of Fraunce, ⁊ doughter of Robert duke of Burgoyne. And in this yeare was the treaſon wroughte by ſyr Godfreye de Charny, to haue agayne won the towne of Calais, like as I to you before haue ſhewed in the. xxiiii. yeare of kynge Edward the third. And in the moneth of Ianuarye nexte enſuynge, and. ix. day of the ſame, kyng Philip ſpouſed his ſecond wyfe Blaunche, ſomtime the doughter of the quene of Nauern lately deceaced, whiche was ſiſter vnto the earle of Foyze. Whiche eſpouſailes were ſecretely done in the manoure of Roberte earle of Braye. And ſo the ſayd king Philip was wydowe from the. xii. day of December to the. ix. day of Ianuary, whiche was by the ſpace of xxviij. daies. And vpon the. ix. day of the moneth of February, Ihon duke of Normandye, eldeſt ſonne of this Philip, ſpouſed his ſecond wife Iohanne Counteſſe of Boloign, at a towne called Miriaux next vnto Meulene. And ſo he morned for his wyfe whiche was named the good ducheſſe of Normandy, by the terme of ſixe monethes, and. ij. dayes lackyng.

In the two and twenty yeare of kyng Philip and moneth of Iuly ſyr Thomas de Agorne beforenamed, was by chaunce medley ſlain of a Brytone knighte, called ſyr Rauffe de Cuours. And vpon the xxiij. day of Auguſt folowyng, dyed ſyr Philip de Valoys kynge of Fraunce, whan he had reygned ouer the Frenche men in greate vexation and trouble by the ſpace of. xxij. yere lackyng. ii. monethes and odde daies, and was after [illegible]terred at ſaint Denis by his firſte wife, and left after hym Ihō duke of Normandy for his heyre.

Of kynge Iohn.

Ihon of F

IHon the fyrſte of that name and ſon of Phylyp de Valoys, began to reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the moneth of Auguſte, and yeare of our lord. M. ccc. and. l. ⁊ the. xxiiii yeare of Edwarde the thyrd, than kynge of Englande, ⁊ was crowned at Raynes the. xxvi. daye of Septembre folowing, with dame Ihone his wyfe. In tyme of the whiche ſolempnitie, kinge Ihon dubbed his eldeſt ſonne dolphyne of Vyen, and Lowys his ſeconde ſonne erle of Alenſon, knyghtes, with other noble men.

And vpon the. xvi. daye of Nouembre folowynge, ſyr Raufe erle of Ewe and conſtable of Guynes whan it was Frenche, the whiche was newely commen out of Englande where he had ben long priſoner, was accuſed of treaſon, and ſoo commaunded vnto pryſon at Parys. Within which priſon he was ſhortlye after beheaded in the preſence of the duke of Burgoyn and other nobles.

In the third yere of king Jhon and.viii.daie of Januarij, Charles kyng of Nauerne, cauſed to be ſlain within the toune of Aigle in Normãdie, ſir Charles de Spain, Conſtable of Frãce. For the whiche murder ſourged greate warre betwene kyng Jhon, and theſaid kyng of Nauerne, whiche continued many yeres after, notwithſtandyng that the ſaied kyng of Nauerne, had maried the doughter of the ſaied kyng Jhon. Then by mediation of frendes, a peace was driuẽ betwene them, ſo that kyng Jhon ſhould giue vnto the king of Nauerne, for contentaciõ of certaine ſommes of money, yet owyng vnto hym for the dower of his wife, certaine landes within the Duchie of Normandie, and ouer that the Frenche kyng ſhould pardone all ſoche perſones, as wer conſenting to the death of the conſtable, before murdred. After whiche treatie thus cõcluded, the king of Nauerne, vnder aſſuraunce of hoſtage, came vnto kyng Jhons preſẽce at Paris: and after he had taried there a ſeaſon, he departed with diſſimulation, on either partie vſed, as after ſhall appere.

In the fowerth yere of kyng Jhon, ſir Godfrey de Harecourte, whiche with his ſonne and other, had been cõſenting vnto the death of the Conſtable of Fraunce, wer reconſiled again to the kyng. The whiche enſenſed hym againſt the kyng of Nauerne, by meanes of their ſiniſter reporte, ſo that the peace betwene theim before concluded, was diſapointed and broken. And ſone vpõ this, ſir Robert Lorize, that was Chamberlaine vnto kyng Jhon, auoided the Courte for feare, leaſt the ſaied ſir Godfrey had ſhewed of hym any thing to the king, and ſo yode vnto the kyng of Nauerne in Normandye.

After whoſe commynge, the kynge of Nauerne departed ſhortly thence, and ſpedde hym towarde Auinion. It was not long after that the kynge of Nauerne was departed out of Normandy, but that kyng Jhon ſped him thither, and ſeaſed al the landes that the kynge of Nauerne had within that duchye, and put officers and rulers in his caſtelz and townes, ſuche as hym lyked, and diſcharged the other, excepte.vi.caſtelles, that is to ſaye Euroux le Pount Audemer, Chirebourt, Ganeray, Auranches and Martaygne, the whiche were holden by the ſeruauntes of the kinge of Nauerne, and men of Nauerne borne.

In the moneth of January folowyng, ſyr Roberte de Loryze aboue named, vnder ſafe conduyte came vnto kyng Jhon to Parys, and ther was to him in proces reconſyled. And in this yeare were the articles of peace betwene the kynges of England & of Fraunce prolonged, tyll the feaſte of ſaynte Jhon Baptyſt next enſuynge, as before in the end of the.xxviii.yere of kynge Edwarde is moore at length declared.

In this.v.yeare of kinge Jhon and moneth of Apryll, he ſente ſyr Charles hys ſonne Dolphyne of Vyenne into Normandye, to aſke ayde of the Normans agaynſt the kynge of Nauerne. The whiche graunted vnto hym.iii.M. men at theyr charge for.iii. monethes. And in the moneth of Auguſte folowing, the kynge of Nauerne accompanied with.ii.M. ſouldyours, came vnto the caſtel of Conſtantine, and there taryed wyth the ſayd people. With whoſe comming the ſouldiours of the fornamed.vi.caſtelles were ſo wel comforted, that they robbed and pilled all the countrey about them. And ſome of the ſaid ſouldiours came vnto a caſtel of the French kings named Conket, and wanne it by ſtrength, and after vitailed and mãned it in moſt warly wiſe, and did many thinges to the Frenche kings great diſpleaſure: the whiche war thus continuing, by mediacion of frendes the king of Nauerne rode vnto the dolphin, to a towne called the Vale of Ruyll, wher thei meting and either to other ſhewing louing countnaũce, vpon the.xviii.daye of Septẽber they together toke their waye toward Parys. Where the king of Nauerne was brought vnto the French kinges preſence: where he excuſed him of all treſpaſſes doen againſt the kinge ſyne the time of the laſt accord, beſeching the king to be good & gracious lorde vnto him, & he ſhould be vnto him as a ſonne ought to be vnto the father, & as a trew man to his ſouereign lord. And after the king by menes of yͤ duke of Athenes, forgaue vnto him his offences, & promiſed to ſtand his good & gracious lord, & ſo either departed from other, in louinge maner. And ſoone after king Ihon gaue vnto yͤ dolphyn of Vien ſir Charles his eldeſt ſon, the duchye of Normandy, for the which he did vnto his father homage, in yͤ houſe of maiſter Martyn chanon of Paris, in yͤ cloyſter of the minſter called Noterdam. And by authoritie of a parlament holden in the citie of Parys, was graunted vnto king Ihon of the thre eſtates of hys realme, that is to meane, the ſpiritualtie, the lordes and nobles, and the heades or rulers of cities, and good townes of his realme, that he ſhoulde haue.xxx.M.men waged for a yere, for to defend his auncient enemye the king of England. For purueyaunce whereof, certayne perſones of the ſayde thre eſtates aſſembled ſhortly after, to prouide for the leuiyng of yͤ great ſumme of money. After whiche prouiſion or ſeſſing agred or concluded by the ſayde perſones, and commiſſioners ſent out to diuers coaſtes and good townes for the leuiyng of the ſayde money, in the towne of Arras fell a diſſencion betwene the riche and the poore of that towne, the poore ſaiynge that the ryche men had layde all the burden vpon the poore men, and theim ſelfe bare lytle charge or none. For this fyrſte beganne great alteracion of wordes, and after enſued ſtrokes & ſtripes, ſo of the heades and chiefe burgeyſes of the towne were.xvii.men ſlain. And the day folowing, they ſlew foure mo, & baniſhed diuers that at that time were abſent and out of the towne. And ſo the town of Arras reſted as then in the gyding of the pore artificers of that towne.

ANd in the.vi.yere of the reigne of king Ihon, & moneth of Marche, he beynge accompanyed with a ſecret meyny, before yͤ day departed from the town of Manuyle, nile, and rode ſtreyght, he and his lordes beyng armed, vnto the caſtle of Rouan, and entred ſodainly into the ſame. Where he fand in the chief hall of the Caſtell, ſyr Charles his eldeſt ſoonne duke of Normandy, Charles king of Nauerne ſyr Jhon earle of Harecourte, the Lordes of Preaux and of Grauile and the lorde of Cleremount, ſyr Lowes and ſir Guilliam de Harecourt brethren of the foreſayd erle ſyr Friquet de Friquante, the lord of Tournebu, ſir Manbuc de试Mameſmares, with Colinet Doubliet and Jhon de Pountalu Eſquyres.

The whiche lordes and knightes, the kyng toke at dinner within the ſayde hall, and theim tooke ſodainly, and diuers of theim put vnder ſure kepinge. And as ſoone as yͤ kyng had there taken a ſmale and ſhort repaſt, he with his ſonnes and other nobles in his companie, tooke their horſe, and rode into a fielde vpon a backeſyde of the Caſtell, whether ſhortly after were brought in bandes the foreſaide Erle of Harecourt, the lorde of Grauyle, the foreſayd ſir Manbue, and Colinet Doubliet: which iiii. were there beheaded, and after the bodies of theym drawen to the gibet of Roan, and there hanged, and their heades ſet ouer thẽ vpon the ſame gibet: At the whiche time of the execution of headding of the ſayde. iiii. perſons, the Frenche kyng as before is ſayde, was preſent in proper perſon.

After the whiche execucion, the kyng vpon the morow folowyng deliuered many of the other priſoners, ſo that ther remayned no mo as priſoners, but three, that is yͤ kyng of Nauerne, ſyr Friquet de Fryquant, and Jhon de Pountalu, the whiche were ſent vnto Paris. Where the kynge was kepte in the Caſtell of Louure, and the other. ii. in the Chaſtelet. In whiche time of his impriſonment, ſyr Philip brother to the kyng, wyth ſir Godfrey de Harecourt vncle to the Earle lately headed, held certayne Caſtelles in Normandye, and came with their powers into the countrey of Conſtantine, and helde it maugre the French kynges will and pleaſure.

In the moneth of Apryll, ſyr Arnolde de Denham than Marſhall of Fraunce, rode by the kynges ſond vnto Arras, and there without great diſtourbance of the towne, toke vpon an hundreth of ſuche as before had made the former rebellion within the ſame. And vpon the day folowynge, he cauſed to be headed in the market place, vpon. lx. of the ſame, and yͤ remnaũt he ſent vnto pryſon there to abide the kynges pleaſure.

In this time and ſeaſon was the noble prince Edwarde at Burdeaux, and warred vpon the French kynges landes, like as it is before to you ſhewed, in the. xxx. yeare of kynge Edwarde the thirde.

And in the. vii. yeare of kynge Jhon and beginnyng of the ſame was the battaile of Poytiers. In the which kyng Jhon was taken priſoner of Prince Edwarde, and manye of his Lordes, taken and ſlayne, as before in the. xxx. yere of the foreſayd Edwarde is declared at length. After the which diſcomfiture, the Duke of Normandye which hardlie eſcaped frõ the ſaide battayle, entred yͤ citie of Parys,

the

folowing, the kynge of Nauerne accompanied with .ii. M. ſouldyours, came vnto the caſtel of Conſtantine, and there taryed wyth the ſayd people. With whoſe comming the ſouldiours of the fornamed .vi. caſtelles were ſo wel comforted, that they robbed and pilled all the countrey about them. And ſome of the ſaid ſouldiours came vnto a caſtel of the French kings named Conket, and wanne it by ſtrength, and after vitailed and mãned it in moſt warly wiſe, and did many thinges to the Frenche kings great diſpleaſure: the whiche war thus continuing, by mediacion of frendes the king of Nauerne rode vnto the dolphin, to a towne called the Uale of Ruyll, wher thei meting and either to other ſhewing louing countnaũce, vpon the .xviii. daye of Septẽber they together toke their waye toward Parys. Where the king of Nauerne was brought vnto the French kinges preſence: where he excuſed him of all treſpaſſes doen againſt the kinge ſyne the time of the laſt accord, beſeching the king to be good & gracious lorde vnto him, & he ſhould be vnto him as a ſonne ought to be vnto the father, & as a trew man to his ſoueraign lord. And after the king by menes of ye duke of Athenes, forgaue vnto him his offences, & promiſed to ſtand his good & gracious lord, & ſo either departed from other, in louinge maner. And ſoone after king Jhon gaue vnto ye dolphyn of Uien ſir Charles his eldeſt ſon, the duchye of Normandy, for the which he did vnto his father homage, in ye houſe of maiſter Martyn chanon of Paris, in ye cloyſter of the minſter called Noterdam. And by authoritie of a parlament holden in the citie of Parys, was graunted vnto king Jhon of the thre eſtates of hys realme, that is to meane, the ſpiritualtie, the lordes and nobles, and the heades or rulers of cities, and good townes of his realme, that he ſhoulde haue .xxx. M. men waged for a yere, for to defend his auncient enemye the king of England. For purueyaunce whereof, certayne perſones of the ſayde thre eſtates aſſembled ſhortly after, to prouide for the leuiyng of ye great ſumme of money. After whiche prouiſion or ſeſſing agreed or concluded by the ſayde perſones, and commiſſioners ſent out to diuers coaſtes and good townes for the leuiyng of the ſayde money, in the towne of Arras fell a diſſencion betwene the riche and the poore of that towne, the poore ſaiynge that the ryche men had layde all the burden vpon the poore men, and theim ſelfe bare lytle charge or none. For this ſtryfe beganne great alteracion of wordes, and after enſued ſtrokes & ſtripes, ſo of the heades and chiefe burgeyſes of the towne were .xvii. men ſlain. And the day folowing, they ſlew foure mo, & baniſhed diuers that at that time were abſent and out of the towne. And ſo the town of Arras reſted as then in the gyding of the pore artificers of that towne.

AND in the .vi. yere of the reigne of king Jhon, & moneth of Marche, he beynge accompanyed with a ſecret meyny, before ye day departed from the town of Manuyle, uile, and rode ſtreyght, he and his lordes beyng armed, vnto the caſtle of Rouan, and entred ſodainly into the ſame. Where he fand in the chief hall of the Caſtell, ſyr Charles his eldeſt ſoonne duke of Normandy, Charles king of Nauerne ſyr Jhon earle of Harecourte, the Lordes of Preaux and of Grauile and the lorde of Cleremount, ſyr Lowes and ſir Guilliam de Harecourt brethren of the foreſayd erle ſyr Friquet de Friquante, the lord of Tournebu, ſir Manbuc de Maneſmares, with Colinet Doubliet and Jhon de Pountalu Eſquyres.

The whiche lordes and knightes, the kyng toke at dinner within the ſayde hall, and theim tooke ſodainly, and diuers of theim put vnder ſure kepinge. And as ſoone as yͤ kyng had there taken a ſmale and ſhort repaſt, he with his ſonnes and other nobles in his companie, tooke their horſe, and rode into a fielde vpon a backeſyde of the Caſtell, whether ſhortly after were brought in bandes the foreſaide Erle of Harecourt, the lorde of Grauyle, the foreſayd ſir Manbue, and Colinet Doubliet: which iiii. were there beheaded, and after the bodies of theym drawen to the gibet of Roan, and there hanged, and their heades ſet ouer thẽ vpon the ſame gibet: At the whiche time of the execution of headding of the ſayde. iiii. perſons, the Frenche kyng as before is ſayde, was preſent in proper perſon.

After the whiche execucion, the kyng vpon the morow folowyng deliuered many of the other priſoners, ſo that ther remayned no mo as priſoners; but three, that is yͤ kyng of Nauerne, ſyr Friquet de Fryquant, and Jhon de Pountalu, the whiche were ſent vnto Paris. Where the kynge was kepte in the Caſtell of Louure, and the other. ii. in the Chaſtelet. In whiche time of his impriſonment, ſyr Philip brother to the kyng, wyth ſir Godfrey de Harecourt vncle to the Earle lately headed, held certayne Caſtelles in Normandye, and came with their powers into the countrey of Conſtantine, and helde it maugre the French kynges will and pleaſure.

In the moneth of Apryll, ſyr Arnolde de Denham than Marſhall of Fraunce, rode by the kynges ſond vnto Arras, and there without great diſtourbance of the towne, toke vpon an hundreth of ſuche as before had made the former rebellion within the ſame. And vpon the day folowynge, he cauſed to be headed in the market place, vpon. lx. of the ſame, and yͤ remnaũt he ſent vnto pryſon there to abide the kynges pleaſure.

In this time and ſeaſon was the noble prince Edwarde at Burdeaux, and warred vpon the French kynges landes, like as it is before to you ſhewed, in the. xxx. yeare of kynge Edwarde the thirde.

And in the. vii. yeare of kynge Jhon and beginnyng of the ſame was the battaile of Poytiers. In the which kyng Jhon was taken priſoner of Prince Edwarde, and manye of his Lordes, taken and ſlayne, as before in the. xxx. yere of the foreſayd Edwarde is declared at length. After the which diſcomfiture, the Duke of Normandye which hardlie eſcaped frõ the ſaide battayle, entred yͤ citie of Parys, the.xxix.daye of September, and called there a greate counſaile of the three eſtates of the realme, & the.xv.day of October next enſuyng there to be aſſembled. At whiche day, the ſayde Duke with the ſayde.iii.eſtates of the realme, beynge in the Parlament chamber, Peter de la Foreſt, Archebyſhop of Roan and chaũceler of Fraũce, declared there the greate myſfortune that to the lande was lately fallen, by the takyng of their head and prince, and exhorted theym by a longe oracion to ayde and aſſiſt euery man after his power, for the redeliuery of their Prynce agayne.

Wherunto it was anſwered for the cleargie or ſpirituall, by the mouth of maſter Ihon de Carone than archebyſhop of Raynes, and for the nobles of the cheualry of Fraunce, by the mouth of ſir Philip, duke of Orleaũce and brother vnto kyng Ihon, and for the commons of ẏ good townes of Fraũce by the mouthe of Stephin Matell, Burgeys of Parys, and prouoſte of the ſame, that euery of theym ſhould helpe to the vttermoſte of theyr powers, and prayd that they might haue conuenient leyſer to counſayle and common, for prouiſion of the ſame, the whiche to them was graunted.

Then the ſaid three eſtates helde theyr counſayle at the Frier Mynours, or Graye friers in Parys, by the ſpace of.xv.dayes. In whiche ſeaſon they appoynted among them, to the number of.l.perſons, to take a vyewe and make ſerche of certayne thynges, then myſlad & euill guided within the realme. The which.l.perſons, when they had appoyncted.vi. of theym ſelfe to go vnto the Duke, they in the names of the other, made requeſt vnto the duke, that he would kepe ſecrete, ſuch thinges as they entẽded to ſhewe vnto hym: which requeſt he graunted. Than they ſhewed vnto the Duke, that the Realme beforetyme, had ben miſguided by officers, and except that remedy for it wer ſhortly founden it ſhould ſtande in great parell to be loſt. Wherefore they beſought him to diſcharge all ſuche as they would name vnto hym, and ouer that, to forfayte their goodes vnto the kynges vſe. And fyrſt they named maiſter Peter de la Foreſt Archbiſhop of Roan and Chaunceler of Fraunce, ſyr Symonde de Bucy, chief councellour of ẏ king, and chief councellour of the Parlamente, ſyr Roberte de Loryze, that before tyme was chaumberlayne vnto the kynge, ſyr Nycholas Brake knyght and mayſter of the kynges Paleys, Engueram of the Celer, Burioys of Parys, and vnder Treaſourer of Fraũce, Ihon Pryll burioys, alſo ſoueraigne maiſter of the money, and maiſter of the accomptes of the kynge, and Ihon Channean de Charters, Treaſourer of the kynges warres. All whiche officers, the ſayd perſons would that they ſhould be diſcharged of all royall offices for euer. Alſo the ſayd conſtituted perſones, would that the kynge of Nauerne were deliuered free from priſon, alſo that he hym ſelfe would be contented, to be aduertiſed and coũſeyled, by ſuch as they would appoynte vnto hym, ẏ is to ſay.iiii.prelates.xii.knightes, and.xii.Burioys.

The whiche. xxviii. perſones ſhould haue aucthoritie to rule and ordeine all thinges neceſſarie for the realme, to ſet in and putte out all officers apperteyninge to the realme with diuers other requeſtes, which vnto the duke wer nothing agreable. Upō the which requeſtes, the duke gaue anſwere, that he would gladly fele the opinion of his counſail, and vpō that ſhape vnto thē ſome reaſonable aunſwer. But firſt he deſired of them to know what ayde the .iii. eſtates would geue vnto hym, for the deliuery of his father. Wherunto it was aunſwered, that the clergie had graunted a diſme and a halfe to be payed in a yere, wyth that that they may haue licence of the Pope, and the Lordes as muche to be leuied of theyr landes and the commons the .x. peny of theyr mouable goodes.

Then vpon the morow folowyng, within the Palais of Louure, the duke aſſembled his counſayle, and there ſhewed vnto them the deſire and requeſt, of the three eſtates. Wherevpon were made many reaſons, and many meſſages ſente betwene the Duke and theim, to refourme ſome parte of the ſayde articles. But it was fermely anſwered by theym, that excepte he would reforme the ſayd defautes, and confirme him vnto their mindes, for the cōmon welth of all the lande, they woulde not ayde him with their goodes, like as they had to hym ſhewed. Wherfore the Duke by ſecrete meanes, ſent letters vnto his father, ſhewynge vnto him the circumſtaunce of all this matter, yͤ which wrote vnto him agayne, that in no wyſe he ſhould be agreable vnto yͤ ſayd requeſtes. Then the Duke, to the ende that he would not that theſe matters ſhould be touched, in the open Parlament, ſente for ſuche perſons as were the chiefe rulers of the ſayd three eſtates, ſo that to hym, came for the clergy, the archbyſhops of Raynes and of Lions, and the Byſhop of Laon, and for the Lordes, came ſyr Warayne de Lucenbourgh, ſir Jhon de Comflans, Marſhall of Champeyne, & ſyr Jhon de Pigueny, then ruler or gouernour of Artoys, and for the commons, Stephan Martel, than prouoſtes of the Marchaūtes of Paris, Charles Cuſake, with other, of other good townes.

Then the Duke ſhewed vnto them of certayne newes, that he had lately receiued, from the king his father, and that done, he aſked their aduiſes, whether it wer beſt that daye, to ſhew theyr requeſtes openly in the Parlament chaumber, or els to deferre it for that day: And laſtly, after manye reaſons made, it was agreed, that it ſhould be deferred til the fourth day after, at the which fourth day the Duke with the other aſſembled in the parlament chaumber. At whiche ſeaſon the duke ſayde, that he might not entende that day to heare and argue the ſayde requeſtes, for certayne tidynges that he had latelye receyued from his father, and from his vncle the Emperour of Almayn, of the whiche he then ſhewed ſome openly, and after diſſolued for that day the counſayle.

In the moneth of October, the iii. eſtates of the prouince of Lāguedocke, by yͤ aucthoritie of the

Erle of Armenake, than liuetenaunt for the kyng, aſſembled for to make an ayde for the Kynges deliueraũce. And firſt they agreed to puruey at theyr proper coſtes. v hundred men of armes, with a ſeruiture to eueriche ſpeare, and ouer that a thouſande Souldiours on horſbacke, and a. M. of arbalaſters, with twoo thouſand of other, called gũſiers in Frenche all which to be waged for an hole yere. The ſperes to haue for them and their cuſtrun euery day halfe a florein, and euery ſoudiour and arblaſter. viii. florins for a moneth, and the paunſiers after the ſame rate.

Alſo it was forther ordeined by the ſaid three eſtates of Languedocke, that no man ſhould weare anie furres of any great price, and that women ſhould leue the riche atier of their heades, and weare neither perle nor glod vpon them, nor ſiluer vpon their girdels, ſo longe as the kyng remained priſouer. Alſo, that al maner of minſtrels for that ſeaſon ſhould be put to ſilence, with diuers other thinges for the weale of that prouince which would aſke a longe leyſour to write.

VPon Alſoulen day, or yͤ ſeconde day of Nouember, the Duke of Normandy by the aduiſe of his counſail, diſſolued the counſaile of three eſtates, aſſembled at Paris, and commaunded euerie man, to retourne vnto his owne, without effect growinge of theyr long counſeyl or aſſemble. Wherwith, many of the ſaied perſons, wer greuouſly miſcontent, ſaiyng among them ſelues, that they perceiued well, that this was doone by the duke, to thentent, that the requeſtes by them deuiſed, ſhould not take place, but that the olde miſgouernaunce ſhould continue like as it before times had doen: Wherefore diuers of them aſſembled after againe at the gray freers ⁊ ther made out diuers copies of the ſaied requeſtes, to the ende that eyther of them might beare theym into their countreys, and there to ſhew them vnto the good townes. And albeit, that yͤ duke after his counſaile thus diſſolued aſked ayde of the citie of Paris, ⁊ other good townes, to maynteyn his warres, he was playnlye anſwered, that they might not ayde him without the ſaied three eſtates were againe reaſſembled, and that the graunt of the aide might paſſe by their aucthorite, wherunto the duke in no wiſe woulde be agreable.

In the moneth of Nouembre afore ſaied, ſir Roberte de Cleremount, then liuetenaunte for the duke in Normandie, fought with ſir Philip, brother vnto the kyng of Nauerne, and ſir Godfrey de Harecourt, the which then tooke partie againſt the French kynge for the death of his neuew, before put to death by kinge Ihon. The whiche knightes with other, held the more parte of the countrey of Conſtantine within Normandy, maugre yͤ dukes power. In this ſayde fight, the victory tourned vnto the Frenche partie, ſo that the ſaied ſir Philip was chaſed, ⁊ ſir Godfrey de Harecourte ſlain with. viii. hundred men of that partie. And the fourth day of December folowing, was the caſtell de la Poũt nere vnto Roã, which by a longe ſeaſon had ben in yͤ rule of the forenamed ſir Philip geuen vp by appoyntment, the which by the dukes ſoudiours had ben beſiged from the moneth of July to that day: ſo that than the holders of the Caſtell departed with all their goodes, and .vi. thouſande frankes, for a reward, for the yelding vp of the ſaid caſtel. A Frank is in value after ſterlinge money ii.s̃. or therupon.

Upon the. x. day of December were proclaymed at Paris certain coynes and values of money newlie ordeined by the duke and his counſaile: With the whiche proclamacion the commons of the citie wer greuouſly amoued. And for reformacion, the prouoſte of the marchaũtes with other, yode vpon the ſeconde day folowynge vnto the caſtel or Palais of Louure, ther to treate with ſir Lewes erle of Angeon, brother vnto the duke and his liuetenaunt, whyle the ſayd duke was gone vnto the citie of Meaus, there to ſpeake with Charles of Bohemye, or of Beaume, then Emperoure of Almayne, and vncle vnto the ſaied duke. Where the ſaid prouoſt with the other, made requeſte vnto the Erle, that he would ceaſe the vſe of that money: And if not, they woulde ſo demeane theim that it ſhould not be ſuffered to bee putte forth nor taken within the citie. Wherupon it was aunſwered by therle, that he would take aduiſe of his counſaill, and vpon the morow giue to them anſwere. Upon the day folowing, the ſayd prouoſt with a great company of the citie retourned. At whiche ſeaſon the erle in curteiſe maner, deſired thẽ to retourne that other day, for as muche as yet he had not ſufficientlie commoned with his counſayll: Upon the morowe, the ſaied prouoſt retourned with a much greater company. Where after longe debatyng of the matter, it was agreed by the ſayd erle and prouoſt and his companie, that the money ſhould bee ſtopped & not to be put forth, till they had further knowledge of the Dukes pleaſure: for knowledge wherof the earle ſente forth meſſengers in al ſpedy wiſe.

And in this paſſetime, Peter de la Foreſt, archebiſhop of Roan, & Chaunceller of Fraũce, was made and publiſhed a cardinal. And the xxiiii. day of the moneth of Januarie, the duke returned vnto Paris with the ſaied Cardinal in his company, the which for reuerence of the Cardinall, was fet into the citie with proceſſion and other ceremonies, as wel of the clergie as of the citezyns. The. xxvi. day of the moneth of Januari, yͤ prouoſt of the marchauntes of Paris, wͭ other of the citie, appeared before the dukes counſail at ſaynt Germaynes. Where it was deſired of the ſayde prouoſt, that he ſhoulde ſuffre the foreſaied money to run and be currant thorough the city. The which the ſaied prouoſt with his company vtterly denied, and after many great and bolde wordes, departed from the ſayd counſail in greate yre, and after theyr retourne vnto the citie, encenſed ſo the cominalty, that they ſet a part al workemanſhip and occupacion in ſhutting in their ſhoppes, and drew vnto them theyr armoure &

harnes. When the duke was enfourmed of this murmour of the cōminaltie of the citie, he ſent vnto the prouoſt commaundyng him ſtraytlye, that the kynges peace were kepte within the citie, and ouer that, that he with a certayn of citezins, ſhould appeare before him in the palayes of Louure vpō the morow folowyng, at an houre aſſigned. At which houre the ſayd prouoſt with his company, came vnto Louure, & ſo were conueyed into the Parlamente chaumber, where the duke with his counſail was than preſent. Than the duke after certayne chalenges made, vnto the prouoſt for his obſtinacie in this matter, and miſleading of the cōminaltie of the citie, ſaied vnto him, that all bee it, that the kyng by his prerogatiue, myght at his pleaſure, and for his auauntage, make his moneys when he would, and ſo to ſuffer them to be currant thorough his realme: yet for the weale and eaſe of his ſubiectes, conſideryng their manifold and late charges, he was content that all this ſeaſon this new money ſhould be ſpared, and that the three eſtates ſhould be agayne aſſembled, and that they ſhould depriue all ſuche perſons, then bearyng offices, as they ſhould think preiudiciall to ẏ realme, and ouer that to ordeyne ſuche money, as might be beneficiall for the lande. Of all whiche grauntes, the prouoſt, to thentent that he might of aucthoritie ſhew theym vnto the comminaltie of the Citie, deſyred writyng. The which the duke, to appeaſe the people, though it wer ſomedeale contrari his minde and pleaſure, graunted vnto his requeſt. For the which graunte, dyuers of the ſaied officers, as the chaunceller or cardinal, and other abſented them ſelfe, and came not in Paris, by a tract of time after. The .xxx. day of January enſuing the duke at the requeſt of the ſayd prouoſt, ſent certain officers vnto the houſe of ſir Simonde de Bucy and of ſir Nicholas Brake, and of Enguerram of the Celer, and of Jhon Prille, whiche before with other were accuſed of miſgouernaunce of the realme, whoſe houſes were by the ſaied officers kept, & inuentaries made of ſuch goods as then remained within the ſaid houſes. And that doen, the duke ſent out commiſſioners, that the three eſtates ſhoulde aſſemble at Parys, the .xv. day of February, next folowyng, which was obſerued and kept. When the ſayd three eſtates were agayne aſſembled in the parlament chaumber at Paris in the preſence of the duke and his brethren, with diuers other nobles of Fraunce, maſter Robert Coke biſhop of Laon, by the commaundement of the ſaied Duke, made a longe prepoſicion of the miſguidyng of the kyng and the lande, by meane of euill officers, as well by chaungyng of the money as other many vnlefull excyſis and taxis, to the great inpoueriſhyng of the comminaltie of the realme, greate diſclaunder to the kyng, & to the ſinguler enrichyng and auauncement of the ſayd officers. Wherefore the three eſtates praien, and ſpecially the poore cōmons, that all ſuch officers may be remoued from their offices, and other that ſhalbe thought more beneficial for the kyng & his realme to be admitted. Of the which the cardinal was noted foꝛ pꝛincipal, and other to the nomber of .xxi. whereof ſome were right nere vnto the Duke.

AFter whiche pꝛepoſition oꝛ oꝛation, thus by the ſaied Biſhop ended, ſir Jhon de Pigquenie, in the name of the .iii. eſtates, offered that the ſaied thꝛee eſtates ſhould giue vnto the Kyng thirtie thouſand men, foꝛ an whole yere, with that that all thinges might after that daie be oꝛdered, as the biſhop had befoꝛe deuiſed: all whiche articles wer vnto them, by the duke graunted. And incontinently all ſoche officers as thei befoꝛe had named, were clerely auoided, and other ſoche as by theſaied thꝛee eſtates, were thought moſte neceſſarie, wer put and choſen to their romes, except that ſome of the old as maſters of the accomptes, and ſome of the Pꝛeſidentes, and maſters of the requeſtes, were holden in foꝛ a tyme, to pꝛactiſe and ſhew vnto the new, how thei ſhould oꝛder and guide theſaied offices.

And the .xxvi. daie of yͤ moneth of Marche, was a newe money pꝛoclaimed thꝛough Paris, ſoche as theſaid thꝛee eſtates had newly deuiſed. Upon the ſixte daie of Apꝛill was pꝛoclaimed in Paris, that the people ſhould not paie ſoche ſubſidies as the thꝛe eſtates had oꝛdeigned, foꝛ the wagyng of thirtie thouſande men afoꝛeſaied, oꝛ foꝛ the kyng his finaunce, and alſo that theſaid thꝛee eſtates after that daie, ſhould no moꝛe aſſẽble foꝛ any cauſes oꝛ matters befoꝛe touched, till thei had farther knowledge of the Kyng his pleaſure. Foꝛ the whiche Pꝛoclamation, the Citezeins of Paris were greuouſly amoued againſt the biſhop of Sens, the erle of Ewe coſine germaine to the kyng, and againſt therle Cãcaruile: by whoſe meanes thei ſaid, this pꝛoclamation was purchaſed. And truth it is, that theſaied Archebiſhoppe of Sens, with theſaied twoo erles, were ſent from the kyng frõ Burdeaux, yet there beyng, to the entent that thei ſhould ſee the ſaied Pꝛoclamation put in vꝛe. But ſo ſoone as the ſaied Pꝛoclamation was made, thei hearyng of the murmoure of the people of the citee, ſped them thens ſhoꝛtly after. Then vpon this, the Commons waxed ſo wild, that thei left their occupations, and dꝛewe theim to conuenticles and companies, and had many vnſittyng woꝛdes, by the kyng and his counſail. Wherof in auoidyng of inconueniencie, the duke commaunded a watche to bee kept within the citie bothe by day and by night, and certayne gates of the citie kept ſhutte, and the remnaunt watched with men of armes. Upon the eyght day of Apꝛill, then beyng Eaſter euyn, another pꝛoclamacion was made, all contrary to that other, by vertue whereof it was charged, that the foꝛeſayd ſubſidie ſhould be leuied, and that alſo the thꝛee eſtates ſhould reaſſemble at Parys, the fiftenth day after Eaſter, and there to pꝛocede vpon all ſuch maters, as befoꝛe were by theim begonne. Upon the ſixt day of Apꝛil the French kyng ſhypped at Burdeaux, and ſo was conueyed into England, like as befoꝛe is ſhewed in the.xxxi.yere of king Edward. And about Midſomer folowing, the duke of Lancaſter, whiche by a longe ſeaſon had lien before a towne of Britaine named Roſne brake vp his ſiege, taking of them of that towne for a finaũce.lx.M Scutes of golde. A ſcute is worth xl.d.ſterlyng. Aboute the feaſt of Mary Magdalene, in the moneth of July, controuerſy and variaunce began to ariſe emong the parſones aſſigned for the three eſtates. Wherof the cauſe was, for ſo much as the ſeſſyng which they had auewed and ſeſſed for the.xxx M.men would not extende vnto the ſumme by large and great ſũmes. So that the clergie aunſwered that they would pay no more, then they were firſt ſeſſed vnto. And in like maner anſwered ſuch as were apoincted for the lordes, and for the good townes. Wherfore the archebiſhop of Raynes, which before was one of the chief rulers of them, refuſed their partie and drew him all to the duke. By meanes of which controuerſy many of their actes fayled, & ſuch as before were put out of theyr offices, wer again reſtored. About the middell of Auguſt, the Duke ſente for the prouoſt and Charles Cuſake, with Jhon de la Jſle, the which bare the principall rule within the citie, and alſo were greate ſayers and doers in the aſſembles of the three eſtates, and had takẽ vpon them much rule in the buſines, ſo that much of the buſines, was ruled by them & their meanes. To whome the duke gaue ſtrayte cõmaundement, that they ſhould ceaſe of their auctorities, and not to deale any more with ẏ rule of the realme but onely to the good rule and gouernaunce of ẏ citie of Paris. And that doen, the duke rode aboute, vnto diuers good townes, & made requeſt vnto them for ayde, and alſo to haue the money to be curraunt emong them, which as before is ſhewed, the.x.daye of December was at Parys proclaymed. But he ſped litle of his purpoſe.

Jn this meane while, the citizens of Paris ſent vnto the duke ſo pleſaunt meſſage, that he returned againe vnto the citie, whom they receiued with al honour, and reuerence. And vpon the morow after his retourne, the prouoſt with certayne other of the Citie, ſhewed vnto the duke that they would make a great ſhift for him toward the mayntenaunce of his warres. And to brynge that matter to good concluſion, they beſought him that he would aſſemble at Parys ſhortlye, a certayne parſones of.xx.or.xxx.good townes there next adioynaunt. The which was vnto them graunted, ſo that ſhortlye after there aſſembled at Paris, vpon.lxx.perſones the whiche helde their counſail together by ſundry daies. Howbeit in the ende they ſhewed vnto the duke, that nothyng they might bryng to effecte, withoute aſſemble of the.iii.eſtates, and beſought him that they might be eft reaſſembled, truſtynge that by theyr preſence the dukes minde ſhoulde be contente and ſatiſfied.

Upon which requeſt the duke ſet his cõmiſſions, chargynge the ſaid three eſtates to apere before him at Paris, the wedniſday next folowyng the day of all sayncłes.

And full faine he was to doo all thing that the citizens of Paris him required to doo: for (as teſtifieth the French cronicle) he was ſo bare of money, that he had not ſufficient to defende his quotidiā charge.

IN the. viii. yere of kynge Jhon and wedneſday after Alholowen day, the. iii eſtates reaſſembled at Paris, and helde their counſaill within the blacke freers. Durynge whiche counſaile, the kynge of Nauerne yͤ longe had bene in priſon within the caſtell of Alleux, was deliuered by meanes of ſir Jhon Pyquygny, then gouernour of the countrey of Arthoys, and after conueyed by the ſayd Jhon, vnto the towne of Amyas. When the kyng of Nauerne was thus ſet at large, anone his ſiſter and other of his freendes made meanes vnto the duke of Normandy, for an vnite and a peace to bee had betwene them, and by them a mean was founden, that the king with ſuch as were in his compaignie, ſhould come vnder ſafe conduite to Paris to cōmon with the duke. When diuers of the three eſtates as ſuch as wer of Champein and Burgoyn, knew of the commyng of the Kynge of Nauerne vnto Parys, they withoute leaue takyng departed. And vnto the euin of ſaynct Andrew the ſaied kyng entred Parys with a great compaignie of men of armes. Emong the which was the biſhop of Paris, with many other of the ſaied citie. Upon the morow folowyng the day of ſaint Andrew, the kyng entending to ſhew his minde vnto the cōminaltie of the citie, cauſed an high ſcaffold to be made by the wall of S. Germaine, where he was lodged. Where much people beynge aſſembled, he ſhewed vnto them a long proceſſe of wrōgfull empriſonment, and of thys miſguidyng of the lande by meanes of euill officers, with many couert wordes to the diſhonour of the French king, and iuſtificaciō of him ſelfe, and excuſinge of hys owne dedes, and ſo retourned into his lodgyng.

Upon the thirde day of december, the prouoſt with other of the citie yode vnto the duke, and in the names of the good townes or comminalties of the ſame, required of him that he would doo vnto the kynge of Nauerne reaſon and iuſtice.

To whome it was anſwered by the biſhop of Laon, that the duke ſhould not alonly ſhew vnto the kynge reaſon and Juſtice, but he ſhould alſo ſhew vnto him frendly brotherhead, with all grace and courteſie. And all bee it, that at that ſeaſon many of the duke his counſaile were preſent, to whome the giuyng of that anſwer hadde more conueniently apperteyned, then to the ſaied byſhop, yet they were at that time in ſuche feare, that they durſte not to moue any thyng that ſhould ſounde to the diſpleaſure of the king of Nauern or of the prouoſt and other. Then it was agreed, that vpon the ſaterday folowyng, the kynge and yͤ duke, which as yet had not ſpoken together, ſhould meete at the place of the ſiſter of the ſaid kyng. Where they met with vnfriendly countenaunce, and after they had cōmuned there a long ſeaſon, they departed with litle loue oꝛ charitie. And vpon munday folowing, were ſhewed vnto the Duke and his counſaile, certayne requeſtes deſired by the kyng of Nauerne, the which the duke was foꝛſed to graunt. Wherof the ſubſtāce was that the kyng ſhould haue again & enioy all ſuche landes, caſtels, & townes, with al mouables to thē belonging, as he was in poſſeſſion of that day that he by kyng Jhon was taken within the caſtell of Roan, & ouer ẏ, he would be pardoned of all offences by him doen againſt the croune of Fraunce befoꝛe ẏ day, & al other his adherentes, oꝛ ſuch as had taken his partie befoꝛe ẏ time. And ſoone vpon this, was oꝛdeined that therle of Harcourt and other, which kinge Jhon had cauſed to be beheaded & after to be hanged vpon the common gibet of Roan, ſhould be deliuered vnto their friendes, to bee buried at their pleaſures. After whiche concluſions taken, & aſſurāces made as far as the dukes autoꝛitie would extende vnto, ſir Almari knight, ſir Melen knight with thꝛee oꝛ .iiii. men of honour mo, wer ſent into Noꝛmandy, to repoſſeſſe the kyng of Nauerne in all ſuch landes, caſtels and townes, as he befoꝛe time was in poſſeſſion of, with al mouables vnto the ſaied landes appertaynynge. And then the ſayd kyng and duke held familier companie, and dyned and ſupped together often ſithes, at the manour oꝛ lodgynge of quene Johanna, ſiſter vnto the ſaied kyng, and at other places.

Alſo the ſaied kynge deliuered out of pꝛiſon, all pꝛiſoners as wel ſpirituall as tempoꝛall, ſuche as were thought any thing fauourable vnto his cauſe. Emong the whiche ſome there were, that foꝛ their demerites wer adiudged to perpetuall pꝛiſon.

In this time and ſeaſon, tidinges ſpꝛāg within the citie of Paris, that the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce were agreed, and that kyng Jhon ſhould ſhoꝛtly returne into Fraunce. By reaſon of which tidynges, the king of Nauerne made the moꝛe haſte to diſpatche him out of Paris, ſo that he with his companie departed from Paris the .xx. day of Decēber, and rode towarde the citie of Maunte in Noꝛmandy. Soone after the king was thus departed diuers enemies to the number of .x. oꝛ .xii. C. came within .iiii. oꝛ .v. miles of Paris, which wer demid to be of the cōpany of ſyꝛ Philip bꝛother vnto ẏ kyng of Nauerne. Theſe robbed & pilled the cōtrey therabout, in ſo muche ẏ the people of the countrey of Pꝛeaux and Trappes, & other ther about, wer conſtrained with their mouables to flee vnto Paris. Wherfoꝛe the Duke ſente oute his letters and commiſſions, foꝛ to aſſemble his knightes to withſtande the ſaied enemies.

But the ſaied citezens of Paris caſte another way, & thought it to be doen to the greuaunce oꝛ coꝛrection of them. Foꝛ doubte wherof, the pꝛouoſt with other ẏ had the gouernaunce of the citie, cauſed the gates to be kepte, and none ſhould enter but ſuch as liked them.

In this paſtime ẏ kyng of Nauerne being in Noꝛmandy, required deliuery of the caſtels of Bꝛetnell, of Europr, ⁊ other, the whiche to him by the capitaines wer denied. Wherfore, he thinkynge that the duke performed not to him his promeſſe, gathered unto him great ſtrength, to winne by ſtrength that he might not haue by his former bande and promes. Of this was putte in great wite the biſhop of Laon, whiche was the chief councelour of the Duke, and eſpeciall friend unto the king ſo that what thyng was ſpoken, in the Duke his counſaile, was ſhortly after manifeſted by him ⁊ his meanes unto the kyng of Nauerne. This alſo was one of the chief rulers of the aſſemble of the three eſtates, and after left them and fell by his great doubleneſſe, and diſſimulation in the duke his fauour, and ſo became chief of his counſaile: for the which of the cōmon people, he was named the beaſt with twoo mouthes. Then the citezens of Paris hearyng of the denaiyng of the ſayd caſtelles unto the kinge, knew well that mortall warre ſhoulde grow betwene him and the duke. And for they wold haue the citezens knowen from other ſtraungers, therfore they ordeyned them hoodes parted of red and blew, chargyng euery mā that he ſhould not paſſe his lodgyng withoute the hoode and cogniſaunce.

Upon the eyght day of Januarie, the kyng of Nauerne entred the citie of Roan, with a greate company of men of armes, and drew unto him many Engliſhmē, and ſuch as were enemies unto the French kyng. And upon the twelf day of Januarie, the ſaied kyng aſſembled the people of that citie, and made a like ſermon unto them as before he had done unto the comminaltie of Paris, and did a ſolempne obſequy to be doen for the erle of Harcourte and the other with him put to death, as aboue is ſaied by kyng Jhon. In this while the duke of Normandie, that longe while had taried in Paris, in hope and ayde of the citizens, and was euer by the prouoſt and other driuen of from day to day: it was aduiſed him by his counſaile, that he ſhould ſhew his minde unto the comminaltie of the citie.

Wherof when the biſhop of Laō and the prouoſt were ware, anon thei ſhewed unto him many doubtes and impedimentes, and alſo parels, for to treat with a comminaltie. Notwithſtandynge he refuſed their coūſail, and cauſed the people to bee aſſembled at their common hall. whither he with a ſmall company came, the. xi. daye of January about. ix. of the clock in the mornyng, where he ſhewed unto the commons a longe and a pleaſaunt oracion. Wherof the effect was, that he bare very faithful minde unto the citie, ⁊ for the weale therof he would put his life in ieoperdy. And wheras by his euill willers he was reported, that he ſhould gather men of armes to greeue the citie, he ſaied ⁊ ſwore it was neuer his entencion, but onely to auoyde ſuche enemies as dayly pilled ⁊ robbed their neighbours and friendes. And where he alſo knew wel, that great ſummes of money were gathered of the people towarde the kynges fynaunce, he let them underſtand that no penny thereof was commyn vnto his handes.

But his minde was, that ſuch perſons as had receiued that money, ſhould with their aſſiſtaunce be called to a due accompt. Which oration, with many kinde and louyng woordes ended, the people with it were very wel contented ſo that of them he was well commended and alowed. Upon the morow beyng friday and twelfte day of January, the prouoſt and other of his affinite, hearynge of the fauour that many of the commons bare vnto the duke, and fearyng leaſt the duke ſhould by this meanes turne the commons vpō, them, aſſembled a great parte of the citie at a place called S. James hoſpitall, and ſpecially ſuche as they knew well fauoured their partie. When the duke was ware of their aſſēble, anon he ſped him thither, hauyng with him the biſhop of Laon. wher by the mouth of his chaunceller, he cauſed to be ſhewed a part of the matter whiche he him ſelf ſhewed the day before vnto the comminaltye, with more, that where ſuche as ought vnto him no good will, reported him that he kepte not promiſe, made with the kyng of Nauerne he ſhewed there the contrary. And if any thyng wer not to him perfourmed, it was contrary to hys minde and pleaſure, & that that in his power laye not to fulfill.

And ſo ſoone as the Chaunceller had ended his tale, Charles Cuſake ſtode vp to thentent to haue ſhewed his minde: But ther was ſuch a rumoure and noyſe emong the people, that he might not bee harde, ſo that then the duke parted with ſuche compaignie as he brought, except the biſhop of Laō which taried there with the prouoſt & other. And when the duke was departed, Charles Cuſake began his tale, and ſpake boldlie agaynſt the kyng his officers, and by couerte wordes ſome what againſt the duke. After which tale finiſhed, one named Jhon de ſaint Ounde, whiche by aucthoritie of the thre eſtates, was newly made one of the generall gouernours of that ſubſidie, ſtoode vp and ſaied, that the prouoſt nor no other perſon of the three eſtates, had no peny of that ſubſidie in their handes, the which ſaiyng the prouoſt alſo affirmed.

Furthermore he ſhewed theim there the ſaied Jhon, that certain knightes whiche he there named, ſent from the Duke, had receiued of the ſaied ſubſidie to the ſumme of. l. or. lx. thouſande Motons of Golde, the whiche were enployed to no good vſe. After whiche proceſſe ended by the ſaied Jhon, Charles Cuſake againe began to ſpeake, and made a longe cōmendacion of the prouidence and good diſpoſition of the prouoſt, whiche had taken vpon him greate payn and diſpleaſure, and ſpent largelie of his owne for the common welth of the citie. Wherfore if he might know that the cōminaltie, would not ayde and ſtand by him for the furtheraunce of the ſame, he would be content to leaue of, & get him ther as he ſhould be quite of all trouble, and alſo oute of the dāger of all his enemies. Wherunto was anon made a great exclamation by the people, ſaiyng, they would liue and die with him in that quarell.

Vpon the .xiii. day of Ianuary, the duke ſent for diuers perſons of the iii eſtates; and exhorted them by goodly and amiable wordes, that they woulde demeane them agaynſt his father and him as faithful and louyng ſubiectes; and he ſhould ſo reporte them vnto the kyng, yͤ they of him ſhoulde haue great thankes.

And as touching him ſelfe, he would be ſo good Lord vnto thē, that thei ſhould thinke their kindneſſe and fidelitie well beſtowed: The which did graunt vnto him their trouth and ſeruice vnto the vttermoſt of theyr powers, aduiſynge him to take vpon him the gouernaunce of the ſaied realme, for they thought he taried to lõge or he toke the rule therof. Then ſoone vpon this, the ſaied three eſtates ordeyned a more feable money then they before had made to the aduauntage of the duke: to the ende that he ſhould withſtand the enemies forenamed, which as yet remayned in the countrey about Paris, and pilled the villages and tooke priſoners, the whiche they conueyed vnto ſuch holdes as they then held in that coũtrey. Thus durynge theſe manyfolde aduerſities among yͤ Frenchmen, vpon the .xxiiii. day of the ſayd moneth of Ianuary, Ihon Baylet treaſourer to the Duke, was ſlayne at Parys of a yoman or Varlet, of the chaunge called Peryne Marke. The which Peryne after that curſſed dede done, fled vnto ſaynt Mary church: but at night the duke ſent ſyr Iohn de Shalons his marſhall, with the prouoſt of the Citie named Guilliam Stayſe and other, the whiche brake vp the church doores, & toke the ſaied Perine out by force and ladde him vnto priſon called the Chaſtelet: Out of the whiche vpon the morne he was taken & his handes ſmitten of, and ſo drawen vnto the gibet of Paris, and there hanged. But vpon the third day folowynge, by meanes of the byſhoppe of Parys he was taken downe and buried within the ſaid churche of our Lady, with great reuerence and ſolẽpnite. At whiche obſequy was preſent the prouoſt of the marchaũtes with many other burgeſis of the citie.

The firſt daye of the moneth of Februarie, ſir Ihon de Pyquinie came vnto Paris, from the Kyng of Nauern, and made requeſt vnto the Duke, of diuers couenauntes, by him to be perfourmed towarde the kynge, whiche as yet were not accompliſhed. which requeſt the duke tooke vnpaciently and gaue vnto the ſaied ſir Ihon many high and diſpleaſaunt wordes. How be it in the ende, the byſhop of Laon ſaied, that the duke ſhould bee aduyſed vpon the aunſwer of the Kynges demaunde.

Upon the thyrd day of Februarie the prouoſt of the Marchauntes, with certayne of the vniuerſite of Parys and other Burgeyſes, yode vnto the duke vnto Louure. Where it was required by the ſaied perſones, that he would fulfill vnto the Kyng of Nauerne, al ſuch couenauntes as were lately made with him, & ſpecially that yͤ caſtels of Eurour & other before named, might bee deliuered vnto him according to his appoyntmẽt And furthermore, it was ſhewed vnto the duke by a doctour of diuinitie, that if he or the kinge of Nauerne would ſwarue from anie point or article of the ſaid former agreement, that the .iii. eſtates had vtterly determined for to ayde & aſſiſt him, that would kepe the ſaied agreement, and to withſtande the other ÿ would not obey or vphold ÿ ſaid cõcord & agremẽt Wherunto the duke was well agreable, ſaiynge that he had perfourmed all his promeſſe, excepte the deliuery of certayne caſtels, which the capitaynes with helde contrary his minde and pleaſure, laiyng for their excuſes, that by ÿ king his father to them they wer deliuered, & to him and none other they will deliuer them agayne.

Upon ÿ .xi. day of February, certain of ÿ .iii. eſtates beyng at cõſaill in their place accuſtomed, the prouoſt of ÿ marchãtes aſſẽbled their craftes of the citie at a place called ſ. Clow or Cloy in harnes.

In which time of his with them there beyng, an aduocate of the Parlyment called maiſter Reynold Dacy, as he was going from the dukes Palays, towarde his owne houſe, he was ſlayn by men of the towne.

And ſoone therafter, the ſaid prouoſt with a great company of armed men entred ÿ palais of Louure, & ſo with a certaine complices entred the dukes chaumber, & there without ſalutyng of ÿ duke ſaied vnto him: Sir diſmay you nothynge what ſomeuer ye ſe vs do, for we entende to your perſon no harme. And or theſe wordes were fully ended, his company fel vpõ a knight called ſir Nicholas de Cõflans then marſhal of Chãpaine, & vpon ſir Robert de Cleremount leanyng vpon the dukes bed, and ſlew him oute of hande. When the duke behelde this horrible dede, he was in meruelous feare of his owne perſon, & praied the prouoſt with his cap in hand, that he would ſafegarde his perſon, the which the prouoſt graunted, with that he would by him be aduertiſed.

Then the ſaied .ii. dead corſes were drawen downe the ſteyers without pitie, & laid in the courte that all men might beholde that miſerable ſpectacle. And for the dukes ſafegarde, the prouoſt toke vnto his party a hoode of red and blew, the whiche he put vpon his hed, and the prouoſt receyued the dukes hoode beyng of Burnet, & garniſhed with a frenge of golde and ſo either ware others hode al that day. And that done the prouoſt with his company went vnto their common halle, where he ſhawed vnto the cominaltie that the .ii. perſons were eſpeciall enemies vnto the common weale, & falſe traytours to God and to the croune of Fraunce, and that he & his adherentes entended the preſeruacion of the cõmon weale of the realme, and the citie: & wolde vnderſtand of them, whether they would ſtand by him in that doing or not. The which cried with one voice ouy, ouy, that is to ſay, yee, yee. And when he had receyued this comfort of the people, he retourned againe vnto the duke. Then he recomforted him & ſayd, that al that was done, was done by the aſſent of the people, & for to auoyde the great inconuenience: For theſe ÿ wer ſlayne, wer great enemies vnto the common welth and traytours vnto the crowne. Wherfore he willed the duke to alow that dede, and if any pardon were requiſite for that deede or any other to be had, that he ſhuld liberally grau̅t it. All which thinges the Duke was fayne to ſaye yea vnto, and praied him and the other then alſo of the citezens to be his friendes, and he woulde in likewiſe be theirs. And after this agrement, the prouoſt ſent for. ii. clothes one of red, & the other of blew, & willed the duke to make hodes of the ſame for all his ſeruauntes. And ſo the duke and his ſeruauntes were clothed in the liuery of the towne, the blew ſet vpon the right ſide. Then againſt night when ẏ ſaied. ii. corpſis had lien all day vpon the ſtones of the palays, the prouoſt commaunded them to be laide in a carte, and ſo without preeſt or other reuerence to be conueied vnto a place of S. Katherine ther to be buried. And when the ſaied corpſis were thus brought vnto the ſaied place, the carter tooke one of their garmen- for his labour, and ſo departed.

It was not lōg after that a meſſanger came from the byſhop of Parys, whiche warned the brethren of that houſe to ſpare the buriynge of ſir Robert de Cleremount, for as much as the biſhop noted hym, accurſed for breakyng vp of ſ. Mary church, when he by force fet out Perin Marke, as before is ſhewed. But after, they & alſo the aduocat maiſter Reinold Dacy were buried ſecretly. Upon the morne folowyng the prouoſt aſſēbled at the frere Auguſtines, a great company of the citie, with all ſuch as then were there of the good townes, by reaſon of ẏ foreſaied counſell. To which aſſemble by the mouth of maiſter Roberte de Corby, a man of that citie, was ſhewed a poteſtacion of al the circumſtaunce of the foreſaied matter, and how that by the Dukes counſell and alſo by the three eſtates, many good thynges were concluded for the deliuery of the king & ſhould or ẏ time haue comē to good effect, ne had bene the enpechemente of. iiii. perſones, the which at ẏ ſeaſon wer not named.

This buſines thus continuing, the kyng of Nauern came to Paris ẏ. xxvi. day of February, with a good company of armed men, & was conueyed by the citezens vnto a place of the dukes called the Neel, & there lodged. To whome the prouoſt with his complices made requeſt, that he wold make alliaunce with them, and to ſupporte theim in that that they had done, the which by him was grau̅ted. Then the queene his ſiſter & other, made inſtant labour to agreee him and the duke. which in concluſion toke ſuch effect, that ẏ kyng ſhould haue in recompencement of his wronges, therldome of Bigorre & the vinery of Ramer with therledom of Maſton, and other landes to thextent of. x. M. li. of Paris money by yere. And ouer that his ſiſter called queene Blanch, ſhould haue the lordſhip of Moret for her dowrie. After which accord thus concluded, the king & the duke kept together verie frendly & louyng familiarite, dined & ſupped either wͭ other by many & ſundry times, & either vnto other gaue rich giftes. Among the which one was, that the duke gaue vnto the kyng theſaid place of Neell, which he then lodged in.

The duke of Noꝛmãdie pꝛoclaymed regẽt of Fraũce.

Upon the twelue day of March the duke of Noꝛmandy was pꝛoclaimed regẽt of Fraũce, thꝛough the citie of Paris, and after thorough all Fraunce. And ſoone after he parted from Parys, & rode into the countrey of Champayne, where he taried a ſeaſon: and the kynge of Nauerne retourned to Maunte in Noꝛmandie. Then the regent dꝛew vnto him the nobles of Champaine and of Pꝛouince, and began to manace the pꝛouoſt and other of Parys, that befoꝛe had put hym to diſhonour, and ſlayne ſo vilainouſly his trew councellours. And after pꝛomeſſe taken of the Earle of Bꝛene, and other nobles of that coũtrey, that they ſhould ayde him agaynſt his fathers rebelles and his enemies he then roode vnto the Abbey of Ponley in Monſtruell, and after yode vnto a caſtel which belonged vnto queene Blanche ſiſter vnto the king of Nauerne, and willed the Capitayne named Tanpine to deliuer vnto him, that caſtell: The which after diuers denayes, opened the gates, and receyued in the regent, and lodged him therin that night. Upon the whiche the regent cauſed the ſaied Tanpine to ſweare vnto him, that he ſhould kepe that caſtell vnto hys vſe, and after made him ſtill wardeyne of the ſame, and ſo departed thence and rode vnto Meaux, where his wife lay.

In this time and ſeaſon, the pꝛouoſte of the Marchauntes of Parys, hearynge of the regentes doyng, and of the affinitie that he made with them of Champayne, feared the ſequele therof. Wherefoꝛe by yͤ aduiſe of ſuche as fauonred his cauſe, he yode into the caſtel of Louure, and there toke out artilerie, gunnes, and other abylimentes of warre, & put them in the ſtoꝛe houſe of the citie, to bee redy when time required. The regent ſpendyng his iourney returned againe to Compeigne. And where as befoꝛe was appoynted, that the .iii. eſtates ſhould yͤ firſt day of Maye aſſemble at Parys, the regent then ſent out his commiſſions, and charged the ſaied thꝛee eſtates to aſſemble the third day of the ſaied moneth of Maye at Compeigne afoꝛeſaied, wherwith the ſaied citizens of Parys, were greatly amoued. At thys aſſemble was graunted vnto the regent, a ſubſidy bothe of the clergie and alſo of the lay fee, ſo that the regent waxed dayly ſtronger and ſtronger. Wherof hearing the kyng of Nauerne, remoued from a towne called Merlo, and with a ſtrong company came to a place oꝛ towne named Domage, purpoſelie foꝛ to treate with the regente foꝛ the citezins of Paris. Wherein the beginning of May the ſaid two pꝛinces mette, either hauing great ſtrength of men of armes.

When the kyng of Nauerne had by .ii. daies continual made the requeſt to theregẽt foꝛ the eitezens of Pairs and might not ſpede of his requeſt, he departed the thirde day and rode to Parys: where he was honorably receyued and feaſted by the ſpace of .x. oꝛ .xii. daies. In which ſeaſon he warned thẽ of the great diſpleaſure that the regente bare towarde the citie, ⁊ aduiſed theim to make them as ſtronge as they might. In this paſſetime the byſhop of Laon beynge with the regent at Compeyne, was like to haue ben vilonied by ſome of the regentes counſaile. Wherefoꝛe in ſecrete wiſe he departed vnto S. Denis, ⁊ from thens he was fet by the kynges ſeruauntes of Nauerne vnto Paris, in whom was put great faute of al this trouble.

About the middel of May, one named Guilliam Calley, gathered to him a company in the pꝛouince of Beauuaiſin, ⁊ of the townes of Cerreux, Noꝛcel, Cramoyſie, ⁊ other there about. The whiche beyng euill diſpoſed, ſlewe dyuers knightes ⁊ eſquiers of that countrey, and their wiues ⁊ ſeruauntes, and pilled and ſpoyled yͤ coũtrey as thei went, and thꝛew downe certayne piles and other ſtrēgthes, ⁊ a part of the caſtell of Beawmount: and foꝛced the ducheſſe of Oꝛleaũce to foꝛſake that caſtell, yͤ then was there lodged, ⁊ foꝛ her ſafegard to go to Paris.

Vpon the .xxx. day of May, the pꝛouoſt and other gouernours of the citie of Paris, cauſed Jhon Paret, maſter of yͤ bꝛidge of Paris, and the maiſter carpenter of the kynges workes, to be dꝛawē, hanged, headed, and quartered: Foꝛ it was put vpon theim, that they ſhould haue bꝛought into yͤ citie a certaine number of the regentes ſouldiours, and ſo to haue betraied the citie. And the foꝛſaid people of Beauuayſine gathered vnto them dayly moꝛe people, as labourers ⁊ vilaynes, the whiche came into the countrey of Moũtmerencie, and ſlew ⁊ robbed ther the gentilmen of that countrey, as they had doen of other, and ſo paſſed the countrey withoute reſiſtence. And the regent in this while came vnto yͤ citie of Sens in Languedocke, where he was honoꝛably receyued, albeit that the commons of that citie ⁊ gentiles of that countrey, wer greatlie leanyng vnto the citezens of Paris, and there taried a ſeaſon to expꝛeſſe to them his minde. In which meane time a ſpicer oꝛ grocer, named Gille of Paris, with one Jhon Vayllaunt pꝛouoſte of the kynges money, with a companie of .viii. C. men in harnes rode vnto the citie of Meaux, wher, of the mayꝛe of that citie they were ioyfully receiued, cōtrary his pꝛomiſſe befoꝛe made vnto yͤ regent. Where, with aſſiſtence of the ſayd Maire ⁊ other of that citie: they entended to haue taken yͤ wife of theſaied regent, with other noble women then there ſoiournyng wͭ her, ⁊ ſo to haue conueied thē vnto Paris, ther to haue kept them till yͤ citizens might purchaſe the fauour and grace of the regent. But when therle of Foyſe, which then had the rule of the ſayd gentilwomen, knew their entente, anon he gathered vnto him his cōpanie, and with aſſiſtence alſo of ſome of yͤ ſayd citie, he made vpon vi. oꝛ vii. C. men in harneſſe, and iſſued boldly againſt the foꝛeſaied perſons ⁊ ſkirmiſhed with them. In whiche ſkirmiſhe in the ende, the men of Paris were diſconfited and chaſed, and the Mayꝛe of Meaus named Jhō Soulas takē with other, which after foꝛ their rebellion were put in execution.

And after thys victory thus obteyned, and in reuẽgement of the death of a knight, called ſyr Lewes de Chãbly there ſlayne with other gentilmen, and for vntruth of the citie: the foreſayd Earle ſet fyre vpon a ſide of the citie, and brent a great part therof, as well churches as other, which fyre was ſcantly ſtenched in. viii. dayes.

In this while the kyng of Nauerne hearing of the great harme and diſtruction that the company of Guylliam Calley made of gentilmen in Mountmerency and other places, like as before is ſhewed, yode agaynſt him, and nere to a place called Cleremount, encountred him and his people, and gaue vnto them battayle, ⁊ ſlewe much of his people and tooke him on liue, and cauſed hys head to be ſtriken of. And ſone after, the citezens of Paris ſent vnto hym, requiryng him to draw toward thẽ at whoſe requeſt, he ſped him thitherwarde, and entred the citie vpon the. xv. day of June, ⁊ was conueyed vnto ſaynct Germayne in Pree, and there lodged. And vpon the morne he went vnto the cõmon hall of the citie, where the commons beynge aſſembled, he made vnto them a long and pleaſaunt oracion, of the great kyndneſſe, that he had founde in many of the good townes of Fraunce, ⁊ ſpecially in the citie of Paris: for the which they had bound him to take their parte agaynſt al other, makyng none exception. After whiche tale by him ended, Charles Cuſake ſtoode vp, and ſhewed vnto the people, what ruinous poynt the lande ſtode in for lacke of a wiſe head and gouernour: Wherfore he exhorted ỹ people to choſe ỹ kyng for their gouernour. Whiche then was ſo doen, and he there tooke vpon him the rule, ⁊ promiſed with them to liue and dye. Vpon the. xxii. day of the ſaid moneth of June, the kyng of Nauerne with a company of. vi. M. ſpeares of the citie and other departed from Parys, and rode vnto a towne called Gonneſſe, wher an other company of the citie taried for him, and from thens rode towarde Sẽlys. But when the gentilmen of hys hoſt vnderſtode that he had taken vpon him to be captayn of the cõminaltie, where againe the more partie of the nobles of Fraunce were of the contrarie partie, they left him many of them, and ſpecially ſuch as wer of the duchie of Burgoyne, and with congy of him taken, reſorted into their countreys. When the Regent had viſited diuers countreys, and wonne vnto him the beneuolence of the ſame, and had alſo gathered to him great ſtrẽgth he ſped him towarde Paris, and lodged him in the ende of the moneth of June, in a place called in French le Pount de Charenton, faſte by Boyes in Vincente. In whoſe company were numbred, vpon. xxx. thouſand horſemen, ſo that the countrey there aboute, was pilled and waſted with that hoſte.

Whereof hearyng the kyng of Nauerne retourned backe againe and came with his hoſte vnto S. Denys, within. ii. myles of Paris. And the citie of Paris, was kept day and night, that no man might enter or go out, withoute licence of the prouoſte and other rulers thereof. In this meane while, that the ſaied twoo princes laie thus with their two hoſtes about the citee, quene Ihone ſiſter vnto the kyng, made an inſtaunt labour to the Regent, for grace for the citezens. By whoſe meanes, a communication was appointed to bee holden, betwene the kyng and the regent, the .viij. daie of July, at a place called the windemill, faſte by the houſe of ſainct Anthony. At whiche metyng it was laſtly accorded betwene the ſaied princes, that the kyng of Nauerne ſhould doe his beſt, to bryng the citezens of Paris vnto due obedience. And if he ſawe in thē ſoche obſtinacie, that thei would not dooe their duetie, and to giue for their rebelliō ſoche ſommes of money, as by him and the regent ſhould be thought accordyng: that then the king ſhould vtterly refuſe their partie; and tourne vnto the Regent with all his power.

And ouer that, the kyng for all demaundes that he could aſke of the regent for any cauſe, ouer the agremente betwene theim laſte made, ſhould haue fower hundred thouſande Florins of gold. Wherof an hundred thouſande to bee paied that daie twelue monethes and yerely after fiftie thouſande, till the full were paied. And further it was accorded, that the kyng after that daie, ſhould take partie with the Regente againſt al perſones, except onely the kyng of Fraunce. And to the ende that this accord ſhould be firmely holden vpon bothe ſides, the Biſhop of Liſeux there beeyng preſente, with many other Lordes, ſang Maſſe within the tent, wher this accorde was concluded, and after Agnus dei, ſware the twoo princes vpon the Sacrament, that without colluſiō or fraude, thei ſhould obſerue and kepe euery article of the ſaied accorde.

After whiche concluſion thus taken, the Regent repaired vnto his hoſte, and the Kyng vnto. S. Denis: Then vpon the morowe, the Kyng entred Paris, and conueighed thether with hym but a certain, and ſo taried there al that daie, without any report ſendyng vnto the regent.

And the ſeconde daie, for the more ſtrengthnyng of the toune, he ſent for certain Engliſhe ſouldiours, as archars and other, and ſet them in the toune wages, and nother ſente, nor retourned vnto the Regente with any aunſwere. Then towarde the nighte, how it was, aſſaulte was made by ſome of the regētes people, vpon a part of the toune, ſo that diuers menne were ſlaine vpon bothe ſides, but the mo vpō the partie of the citee.

Then the kyng of Nauerne vpon the morowe, retourned vnto ſainct Denis, leuyng within the citee the foreſaid ſtrength of Engliſhemen, with other.

When the regent was ware of the kinges beyng at ſainct Denis he ſent vnto hym, and hym required of performaunce of ſoche accorde, as lately betwene thē was condeſcēded: and ſince by his meanes, he might not enduce the citezeins to due obedience, that he would accordyng to his promeſſe, take partie with hym, whereby thei and other enemies to the cōmon wealth, might be reconſiled.

wherunto, the Kynge anſwered and ſaid, that the regent had broken the ſaied accorde. For wher he by his diligēce and labour, had brought the citezyns to a neare poynt of reconſiliacion and ſubmiſſion, the regent by the meane of that aſſaulte whiche he made vnto the towne, cauſed the ſayed citizens to renounce all their former graunte, and to binde theym vpon their former wilfulnes. After the which anſwer thus giuen by the king, the regent cauſed his people to paſſe the riuer of Sayn by a bridge made of botes, and ſo to burne the towne of Vittry & diuers other townes, and robbed & pilled the country there abaute.

Upon the .xxiii. day of Iuly, diuers of the towne of Paris iſſued oute of the towne, and with aide of the Engliſh men, endeuoured them to haue ſuccoured the ſayde towne of Vittry, wᵗ alſo to haue deſtroyed the Bridge: At whiche iourney they bare theym ſo well, that with theyr ſhot they wounded manye of their enemies, and tooke priſoner the regentes marſhal named ſir Reynold de Fountaynes, with diuers other, and after returned vnto theyr citie.

Upon the .xix. day of Iuly, the quene Iohan ſiſter vnto the king of Nauerne with the Archbiſhop of Lions, the byſhoppe of Parys, with certaine other temporal perſons of the citie yode vnto a place aſſigned without the towne, wher with theim met the regent & certayne of his counſaile, & at length concluded an vnitie and concorde betwene the ſaid regent and citezens, without further payne or exaction, to be put vnto them, except that the ſaied citizens ſhould humbly ſubmit them vnto the regent in acknowledgyng their offence, and aſkynge of his mercy & grace for the ſame, and ouer that to be ordered further as the kyng of Nauern, the ſaid quene Iohan with the Duke of Orleaunce and the Erle of Eſtāpes, would deme and adiudge: and that graunted, than the regent to open al waies and paſſages, as well by lande as by water, that all marchauntes may paſſe, as thei before time vſed and in likewiſe, they of the citie to open the gates of the towne, and to receiue all ſtraungers.

After whiche agrement thus concluded and agreed, with al other before made betwene the kyng and the regent to be mayntained and vpholden, the regent ſent from him much of his people and appoynted the ſaied biſhops and the other for the towne, to mete with him the fourth day folowyng at a place called Laigny ſir Marne: wher he would haue alſo the kyng of Nauerne and the other, to perfight and clerely finiſh the ſaied agrement, and vpon this made proclamaciōs through the hoſt, that a good and perfecte peace was agreed. Wherfore, manie of the hoſte for diuers cauſes them mouyng, yode towarde the citie, truſting there gladly and louyngly to be receiued: But vpon the morne, whan they came vnto the gates, they fande them watched with harneſſed men, whiche woulde none ſuffer to enter, but ſuche as them liked, amonge the whiche, one named Macequet a ſeruaunt of the regent was miſſe entreated. And notwithſtanding that accorde, yet the moueable goodes of ſoche as were with the regēt, and had houſes within the citee, were diſperkled and deſtroyed. Upon the.xxi. daie of July, and euen of Marie Magdalein, a ſtrief begā to kindle within the Citee, ſo that the Citezeins complained them vpon the Engliſhe men, ſurmiſyng againſt theim diuers cauſes. By meane whereof, the comont in a furie yode vnto the palais of Neel, where at that time many of the captaines of the Engliſhmen dined with the king of Nauerne, vpon whom thei fell ſodainly, and ſlue of theim vpon xxiiii. and after in diuers places of the citee, tooke the other deale to the nomber of fower hundred, or thereupon, and cloſed them in diuers priſons. With whiche doing the Kyng of Nauerue, with alſo the prouoſt, and other the gouernours of the citee, were right ſore diſcontented. Wherfore vpon the daie folowyng, the Kyng aſſembled the cominaltie at their common hall, entēdyng by pleaſaunt woordes, to haue cauſed theim to haue been repentant of the murder of the foreſaid captaines, and alſo to hane gotten the remnaūte out of priſon.

But the more the Kyng ſpake for the Engliſhemen, the moare wodder wer thei diſpoſed againſt theim, ſaiyng, that thoſe whiche were within the citee, ſhould not alonely bee put to death, but alſo ſoche as wer at ſainct Denis, the whiche there ſpoiled that toune, and Countrie enuiron: And had ſoche wordes vnto the king, that in thende he with the prouoſt and the other gouernours, were fain to graunte vnto theim, that thei would go with theim, for to helpe to diſtreſſe theſaied Engliſhmen. And ſo theſame daie againſt night the Commons iſſued by the gate of ſainct Honoure, and the Kyng of Nauerne with theprouoſt and their companie, went out by the Windmill, ſo that in theſaied aſſembles of the king and thecommons, were nombred vpon.xvi.c. ſperes, and of footemen vpon.viii M. When the king with his compaignie was come into the fielde, where theſaid Windmill ſtādeth, he houed there well vpon half an houre, to ſee what the other compaignie would doe. The whiche ſent out thre ſperes, to eſpie wher the Engliſhemen wer, and eſpied of them vpō.xl. or.l. that appered by a wooddes ſide, nere vnto S. Clow, and wenyng that theſaied Engliſhemen, there had been no moe, retourned and ſhewed what thei had ſeen. Whereupon theſaid commons, in haſt ſped them thether. And when thei wer within the daunger of their ſhot, the Engliſhmen iſſued out of diuers parties of the wood, and wounded & ſlue many of thē. Where with the other beyng feared, fled incontinently, whō the Engliſhmen purſued ſo cruelly, that thei ſlue of the footemen vpon.vi.C. in all. Whiche ſeaſon, the kyng of Nauerne, and alſo the Prouoſte with their people ſtoode ſtill, and neuer moued towarde thē, for their defence or aide. After this diſcomfiture, thus ſuſtained by the Pariſians, the Kyng lefte the citee, and rode vnto S. Denis, and the Prouoſt with his company, retourned vnto Paris. Where he was receiued with hidious noiſe & crie, aſwell of women as men, for that he ſo cowardly had ſuffered his neighbours, to be wounded and ſlaine. By reaſon of this, the murmure of the common people encreaſed daily more and more againſt the prouoſt, ſo that in maner, a partie was taken betwene the Prouoſt, and the other gouernours of the citee, and the Comminaltie. For the commons would haue put to death, many of the priſoners of yͤ Engliſhmen, but the prouoſt with his affinitie let them, and preſerued them frõ their furie & malice.

And vpon the .xxvii. daie of July beyng Fridaie, theſaid Prouoſt beeyng encompanied with .clx. or CC. men in harneſſe, yode vnto Louur, and other priſons, & toke out theſaied Engliſhmen, and cõueighed them vnto the gate of S Honoure, and ſo ſent theim vnto their other feliſchip, then beeyng at ſaincte Denis. Of whom thei were ioyouſly receiued and welcomed, and ſpecially of the Kyng of Nauerne, at whoſe requeſt, as the common fame went, the Prouoſt with the other rulers of the toune, them deliuered. Thus more and more ciuill diſcorde began to encreaſe within the Citee, ſo that the rulers of the citee, were now in as greate doubte and feare of their neighbours, as before tyme thei were of the regente and his knightes. So that vpon the tuiſdaie folowing, beyng the laſt daie of July, the prouoſt with other of his companie beyng in harneſſe, as daily thei were vſed, went to diner vnto the Baſtile of ſaincte Denis. And there beyng at diner, the prouoſt commaunded to ſoche as then kept the keies of that baſtile, that thei ſhould deliuer them vnto Geffrey de Maſtõ, then treaſorer of the warre of the Kyng of Nauerne. But the porters denayed that commaundemente, and ſaid preciſely, that thei would not deliuer the Keies to hym, nor yet to any ſtraunger. For whiche anſwere, many haute wordes were blowen on either partie, ſo that people gathered aboute theim. Whereof hearing one Jhon Mailart, to whom belõged the watche of a quarter of the citee, wherein and in the which quarter, theſaid baſtile ſtode, drewe nere, and gaue eare vnto the wordes, and ſhortly after in bold maner ſaid vnto the prouoſt: that the keies ſhould remaine ſtill with the ſaied kepers, and not to bee taken out of their poſſeſſion. By meane of whiche wordes, the prouoſt with his compaignie, wer encenſed with more malice, and vttered many highe and diſdainous wordes, to feare the ſaied Jhon Mailart, and the other. Wherefore the ſaied Jhon Mailart fearyng the prouoſt, leſt he ſhould ſhortly call his ſtrength to hym, and by meane wherof, put him and other to an after dele, ſodainly gat him on horſebacke, and bearyng a banner of the Frenche Kinges in his hande, cried with a loude voice; Mon ioye ſainct Denis au Roy et a Duke. When the people ſaw hym thus ride about, and crie ioy to the Kyng and the Duke, anon moche people folowed hym, and cried in theſame wiſe. And in like wiſe did the prouoſt and his compaignie, whiche toke the waie toward the baſtile of ſainct Anthonie.

nie. And the ſaied Mailart rode toward the Markette place, and there houed with his companie. In whiche tyme and ſeaſon, one called Pepin de Eſſars, not knowyng of the feate of Jhon Mailart, in like maner gatte hym on horſe backe, and bearyng a baner of the armes of Fraunce, rode about, criyng the foreſaid crie, and ſo laſtly came vnto thother. While the commons wer thus aſſembled in the market place, the Prouoſte came vnto the foreſaied baſtile of ſainct Anthonie, where it was reported to the kepers of the baſtile, that the prouoſt had lately receiued letters from the kyng of Nauerne, whiche thei deſired to ſee, whereof the Prouoſt denaied the ſighte, and ſpecially one named Guiſſarde. Wherefore, after ſome wordes of diſpleaſure, one ſtrake at the ſaied Guiſſard, and through his armes wounded hym. Wherewith the prouoſt beyng amoued, made reſiſtence againſte the ſaied kepers, ſo that either ran at other with their weapons. In whiche ſtrief the ſaied Guiſſard was firſt ſlain, and after the Prouoſt, with one of his comperes named Symond Palmer. Whereof hearyng the foreſaied Jhon Mailart and his companie, in all haſt ſped hym thether, and purſued vppon other that then were fled for feare, and ſo ſtraitly ſearched, that thei foũde one called Jhon of the Iſle, and Giles Marcell, Clerkes vnder the prouoſt of Marchauntes, whiche alſo thei ſlue without pitie. And after at the baſtile of ſ. Martine, thei founde one called Jhon Parret the yonger, whom thei ſlue alſo. And ſone were thei ſpoiled of al that thei had, and laied naked in the open ſtrete, for all men to loke vpon. And whẽ the .vi. corpſis had lien by a certaine tyme, thei were then put in a carte, & drawen vnto a houſe of ſainct Katherin, and there buried vnreuerently. And vpon the morowe folowyng, wer taken Charles Cuſake, and Joſſeron or Geffry Maſton, and put into the chaſtelet, and there kepte in ſtreite priſon. And thus ſeaſed this riotte within the citee of Paris, that had cõtinued for the more part by the ſpace of a yere, and .ix. monethes, as from the beginning of the Monethe of Nouember, in the .vii. yere of Kyng Jhon, vnto the ende of the moneth of July, in theight yere of this ſaid king, and from the taking of the duke in his chãber, to the death of the prouoſt by the ſpace of .vi. monethes. After whiche perſones thus ſlain, the ſaid Jhon Mailart ſent vnto the Regente, requiryng hym that he would ſpede hym vnto the citee, & in the meane while to ſende ſome noble man, to haue the rule of the ſame. And in that while the commons made ſearche, & toke many of ẏ former rulers, as Peter Gill Grocer, whiche as before is ſaied was capitain vnto them that wer ſent vnto Meaus. And with hym was taken Sir Piers Caillarte knight, & wardain of the caſtle of Louure. Alſo one called Jhõ Preuoſt, with Peter Blount. Alſo an aduocate named maſter Puiſſour and felowe of his named maſter Jhon Godarde. All whiche perſones were ſhortly after putte to death by ſondrie tymes, and their bodies caſte into a Riuer called Bone Voicine. And vpon the .xii.

daie of Auguſt, the Regente was receiued into Paris, with all honour and gladnes. whereof hearyng the Kyng of Nauerne, and of the puttyng to death of Joſſeran his treaſourer, ſent vnto the regente wordes of diffiaunce, lettyng hym to vnderſtande, that he would be reuẽged of that wrong doen and other.

Vpon the .xiii. daie of Auguſt, the Regente cauſed to bee aſſembled within the common halle of Paris, the citezeins, to whom he made a long declaratiõ of the treaſons and riotes, dooen by theſe perſones put to death, and by the biſſhoppe of Laon, and other yet liuyng, which entẽded (as he ſaid) to haue made the Kyng of Nauerne Kyng of Fraunce, and to haue yelden the citee of Paris in to the power of Engliſhemenne.

Then the Kyng of Nauerne with the Engliſhmen, yode vnto Miloon, where thei by fauoure and ſtrength, occupied the Iſle, and the coũtry, whiche ſtretched towarde Bier, and warred vpon the countrie toward Gaſtenois, and did therin moche harme, as well by fire as otherwiſe. And ſhortly after, ſir Jhon Piquegny and ſir Robert his brother, whiche were Capitaines vnder the Kyng of Nauerne, made warre vpon the toune of Turney, and other tounes of Picardie, and ſlue many of the common people, and toke priſoners of the gentlemen of that countrie, to the nomber of an hundred, and aboue. Emong whiche the Biſhop of Noin was taken, and with the other led vnto a caſtle or toune called Creeil, whereof the foreſaied ſir Robert was capitaine, and ſo continued in dooyng damage in diuers places, as well nere vnto Paris, as els where. During whiche warre thus made by the Kyng of Nauerne, and his acceſſaries, in the moneth of September, and beginnyng of the .ix. yere of Kyng Jhon, the foreſaied ſir Jhon de Piquegny, laied his ſiege vnto the citee of Amias, and wã within the Bulwerkes of the ſame, ſo that the Citee was like to haue been yelden vnto him, ne had ben the reſcous of the erle of Saincte Poule, whiche draue the ſaid Jhõ and his people backe. But the ſaid ſir Jhon, with the aide of the Engliſhmen, quite hym ſo manfully that he had the dominion of all that Countrie of Beawuaſe, ſo that wine, nor no marchaundiſe might paſſe to Turney, nor other tounes there about, without his ſaufe conduicte or licence. And in like maner ſir Roberte Knolles, capitaine of the Engliſhemen in Britaine, gat there many holdes and tounes, whiche I paſſe ouer.

Vpõ the .xxv. daie of October, diuers of the Burgeiſſes & rulers of the Citee of Paris, as Jhon Guiffarde, Nicholas Poret, and other to the nomber of .xix. perſones, by the commaundemente of the regent were areſted, and ſent vnto priſon, and ſo remained by the ſpace of fower daies. whereof the frendes of the ſaid priſoners, yode vnto the prouoſt of the marchauntes, then named Jhon Culdoe, and required him to make labour with other vnto the regent, then beyng at Louure, for the deliuery of their frendes, or at the leaſt to knowe the cauſe of their impriſonmēt, whiche requeſt the prouoſt & other executed. It was anſwered to them by the regent, that vpon the morowe he would be at their common halle, where before the cominaltie, the cauſe of their impriſonment ſhould be ſhewed: And if then the Citezeins thought good to haue theim ſet at large, he would therwith hold hym contented. At whiche houre appoincted, the regent came vnto the ſaied hall, and there with ſhewed that one named Ihon Damiens, whiche had maried the daughter of Ihon Reſtable, one of the ſaied priſoners, had cauſed his ſaied father and thother, that thei had allied thē with the kyng of Nauerne, contrary their allegeaunce, wherefore he thought thei had deſerued to dye: But for the fauour that he owed vnto the citee, and to them (for thei wer of good ſubſtaūce) he would not doe any thyng to them, till thei were enquired of by their neighbours. After the whiche declaratiō thus made by the regent, euery manne feared to ſpeake any more for thē, but ſuffered the lawe to haue his courſe. Howbeit, in the ende thei were acquited of that treaſon, and finally deliuered by thende of the next moneth.

Vpon the third daie of Decēber, entred into Paris the Cardinalles of Pierigorte and Vrgill, to treat a concord and peace betwen the regent, and the kyng of Nauerne. But in concluſion, nothing thei ſped that thei came for, wherfore thei retourned vnto Auinion. In whiche returne, thei were robbed of greate ſubſtaunce, wherof Engliſhemen bare the diſclaunder. And thus this grudge hangyng betwene yͤ kyng and the regent, many robberies & other harmes wer doen vnto diuers tounes in Fraunce, to the greate enpoueriſhyng of yͤ people of that lande, and to the great enriching of ſoche Engliſh men, as then wer there abiding in daily warres, bothe with the king of Nauern, and alſo in Britaine. For ſhortly after this, the forſaied ſir Robert Knolles and other Engliſhe menne, wan the toune of Aucer & other, like as in the .xxxiii. yere of king Edwarde is before more at lēgth declared.

In the moneth of Maie, and .xix. daie of the ſame, the regēt for tidynges, which he had receiued from his father out of England by the reporte of the Archbiſhop of Sens and other, aſſēbled many of the good tounes at Paris. But the waies wer ſo ſtopped by men of warre, that he was fain to tary till the .xxv. daie of the ſaid moneth folowyng. At whiche ſeaſō was ſhewed to the people there aſſēbled, that the king of Englande, to haue a finall cōcord with the Kyng of Fraunce, would haue ouer and aboue his raunſome, the Duchie of Normandy, the duchie of Guian, the duchie of Exanctes, the Citee of Angeu, the citee of Carbe, the citee of Pierigot, the Citee of Lymoges, the citee of Caours, with all dioces of the ſaied citees belōgyng, the erldome of Bigorre, of Poitiers, of Angeou, & of Main, of Thorain, of Boloin, of Guinis of Pounteſſes, or Pountieu, the tounes of Mounſtruel, of Caleis and of Marquet, with al appurtenauntes to the ſaied duchies, erledomes, citees and tounes belongyng, thē to enioye and hold without feautie or homage for theim doyng, with many other thinges to the kyng of Englandes greate aduauntage. Whiche tidynges were right diſpleaſant vnto all that compaignie, in ſo moche that thei anſwered, that theſaied treatie was neither honourable nor profitable. And rather then the Kyng ſhould binde hym and his lande to ſoche inconuenience, thei would prepare to make ſharpe warre againſt England. With which anſwere theſaied aſſemble was diſſolued.

Upon the .xxviii daie of Mai, the regēt aſſembled theſaid people, where it was condiſcended that the nobles of the realme, wͭ a certaine perſones, euery man after his eſtate, ſhould ſerue the regēt in his warres, by the ſpace of a moneth, at their owne proper coſtes. And the Citee of Paris graunted to finde to hym, at their charge .vi. C. ſperes. iiii. C. archers, and a .M. of other ſouldiours. And for ſo moche as the other good Tounes, would not graunt any ſubſidie, til thei had ſpoken with their cominalties, therefore thei, were licēced to depart home, and to bryng reporte again within .xiiii. daies. At whiche ſeaſon thei ſhewed vnto the regent, that their countries wer ſo pilled and waſted by the kyng of Nauerne and Engliſhemen, that the people might nothyng aide hym, as thei thoughte to haue doen. Wherefore wͭ moche pain, thei graunted to hym .viii. M. men for .iii. monethes.

In the beginnyng of the moneth of June, the regent with a ſtrong power ſped hym towarde Meleon, where the kyng of Nauern lay with his people, ſo that the Kyng occupied the countrie toward Bieir, and the regēt the Countrie towarde Brie. Where both hoſtes thus liyng, without notable feate of warre, a treatie of accorde was yet again moued at lengthe, by agremente of the Pariſiens, accorded moche like vnto the former accord, cōcluded at Paris. So that by mediation of certaine temporall Lordes of bothe hoſtes, the ſaied princes agreed to mete at Meniane, and there to conclude theſaied peace. Where about the .xx. daie of Auguſt, with hoſtage deliuered vpō bothe parties, the ſaied Princes met, & after rode vnto Pountoiſe, where thei bothe lodged within ẏ caſtle, where bothe their coūſailes were aſſigned to mete, for the perfiting of this accord: but ſo it was that for ſoche landes as ſhould be aſſigned vnto the King, thei could not agree. Wherefore the regente in concluſion ſent vnto the erle of Stamps, or Eſcamps, chargyng hym to ſaie, that he to the entente to haue his good will, had offered vnto hym reaſonable offers: Whiche if he would accepte, he would be fain thereof, and if not, he lette hym vnderſtande, that he ſhould haue no peace with hym while he liued. By reaſō of whiche meſſage the counſailes on bothe parties, cōceiued none other, but that this treatie ſhould haue concluded no amitie nor peace. But how it was by coũſail or of his own liberalitie when the Kyng had digeſted this matter in his mynde, by all that night folowyng, he on the morow ſent for the counſail of the regent, and willed theim to ſhew vnto the regent, that he conſidered well in his mynde, the greate daunger and miſerie, whiche the realme of Fraunce ſtode in. Wherfore, he beyng of the natural houſe of Fraũce and one of the Flouredelice, ought to ſee the maintenaunce of the honour of theſame. And for yͤ that no ruine of theſaied realme ſhould to hym (if any felle) after be aretted, therefore he was contented to ſet aparte all ſoche greate offers and promiſes, as to hym before tyme had been offred and promiſed, and to hold hym onely contented with his own right, as he before times had enioyed. And to the ende that this his will and pleaſure mighte to the people be knowen, he willed the regent, that the people of that toune of Pountoiſe ſhould be aſſẽbled, in the courte of that Caſtell, that he mighte declare it vnto thẽ in proper perſone. The whiche accordyng to his mynde was doen. All whiche reherſalle he made before the regent, and cominaltie of the toune, promiſyng there to deliuer out of his poſſeſſion, all ſoche tounes, caſtles, and holdes, as he had won, ſin he ſtode enemie to the croune of Fraunce, and to become true ſubiect vnto the king, and louyng neuewe and frende vnto the regent, from that daie foreward. Whereof the regent and al the cõmons, wer very glad and ioyfull, albeit that ſome truſted little to this accord, nor yet to thecontinuaunce therof, conſideryng the manifold accordes, whiche before tymes had been betwene thẽ concluded. After whiche accordes thus eanded, the Kyng with his people returned to Menlant, ⁊ the regẽt to Paris, appoinctyng betwene theim to mete at Paris, the firſte daie of Septẽber next folowyng.

ACcordyng to thappointment made at Pountoyſe, betwene the king and the regent, vpõ the firſt daie of ſeptẽber, ⁊ beginning of the .x. yere of kyng Ihõ, the ſaid kyng and regent mette at Paris, where atwene theim was holden familier compaignie, and greate kindneſſe ſhewed vpon either partie. There alſo thei counſailed how thei ſhould withſtand the kyng of England, whiche entended to entre Fraunce ſhortly after, with a ſtrong power. And after many amities and frendly dealynges betwene thẽ executed, the kyng rode to Meleon, to deliuer that toune and caſtle, into the regentes poſſeſſion, as the ſtorie ſheweth: But when he was comen thither, were it with his wille, or contrary, the ſouldiours tooke greuous tolles of all wines and other marchaundiſes, that paſſed that waie, whiche after was knowẽ to be for the wage and ſoude, of the Nauarois and Engliſhmen, whiche held the ſaied toune and caſtle. And ſo the Frenchemen were conſtrained for to paie the wages of their enmies whiche greued them very ſore, cõſideryng that manifolde harmes and pillages of theim before were receiued. And after the Kyng had auoyded the ſaied ſouldiours, he departed and rode vnto Maunte, leauyng Creiel in the poſſeſſion of Engliſh menne and other. And ouer theſe manifold miſeries ⁊ miſchiues, thus fallyng in the realme of Fraunce, there fell ſo greate abundaũce of water in the Harueſt ſeaſon, that the corne was loſte, ſo that it roſe to an high price, to the great damage of the comō people.

Abūdaũce of raine.

And in the moneth of Nouēber folowyng, the kyng of Englande, with Prince Edwarde, and other many lordes with a ſtrong power landed at Calais, and ſo perced Fraũce by Artois in Picardy and Vermendois, ⁊ ſubdued the countries before hym, till he came to Reines, like as before is ſhewed in the .xxxiiii. and .xxxv. yeres of king Edwarde, where all this matter with the tenoure of the peace, betwene theſaid kinges of Englãde and of Fraunce, is more at length declared.

The arriual of king Edward ⁊ the Prince wᵗ a greate armie at Calaies.

The laſte daie of the moneth of December, one Marten of Piſdo Burgeiſe of Paris, was drawen vnto the place of iudgement, and there vpon a ſcaffolde, had firſt his armes cut of, and after his legges by the thies, and laſtly his heade, and then he was quartered, and his fower quarters ſet vpon .iiii. principall gates of the Citee, and his hed ſet vpon the pillorie. The cauſe of this iudgemēt was, for ſo moche as one called Deniſot Palmer, vnto whom he had diſcouered his counſail, ⁊ cauſed hym to be as an acceſſary in all his workes, had accuſed hym, that the ſaied Marten had agreed and couenaunted, with certaine officers and Capitaines of the Kyng of Nauerne, that thei at a tyme appoincted, ſhould haue entred the Citee of Paris, and to haue ſlaine the Regent and other, and to haue had the citee at their rule and pleaſur. And ſo the ſeaſon then of the tenth yere, till the moneth of July, paſſed in the warres and treatie before touched, ſo that theight daie of July, the Frenche Kyng landed at Calais, and there taried as priſoner til the .xxv. daie of October followyng, as before in the xxxiiii. yere of Kyng Edwarde, is more plainly ſhewed.

Marten piſdo what maner of death he ſuffered.

Then vppon the .xxix. daie of October, and beginnyng of this leuenth yere, Kyng Ihon came to ſainct Omers, where he taried til the fowerth daie of Nouember. And the leuenth daie of December he came vnto .S. Denis, where vnto hym vpon the twelueth daie came the Kyng of Nauerne, whiche had not ſeen him, ſence he was deliuered frō priſon, and brought with hym certaine hoſtages, whiche the Frenche king had ſent vnto hym for his ſaufegarde, puttyng hym wholy in the Frenche Kynges grace and mercie. And vpon the morow folowyng, he was newly ſworne vnto the Kyng, to bee his true and faithfull ſonne and ſubiecte, and the Kyng again vnto hym, to bee his kinde father, and good and gracious ſoueraine lorde. And forthwith wer ſworne the duke of Normandie, and Philippe brother to the ſaied Kyng of Nauerne, to mainteine all couenauntes, made and to bee made, betwene the ſaied twoo Kynges, ſo that thei were finiſhed and concluded, by the eightene daie of Januarie nexte followyng. And ſone after retourned the ſaied Kynge

How
Ihon
again
uered
Fraun

of Nauerne vnto Maunt. And kyng Jhon the.xiiii. day of December with great triumph, was receiued into Paris.

And when he was commen vnto his Palays, the pꝛouoſt of marchauntes with certayne burgeyſes of the citie, in the name of the cominaltie of the ſame, pꝛeſented him with a pꝛeſent, to the value of a.M. marke ſterlyng.

ttayle
wene
knigh

Upon a tuiſday beyng the firſt day of July, was foughten a battayle at Paris, betwene twoo knightes, wherof the appellaunt was named ſir Foukes Doꝛciat, and the defendaunt ſir Maugot Mawbert. Which appellaũt was ſoꝛe vexed with a feuer quarteine by reaſon wherof ⁊ of the greate heat that that day appered, after longe fight the ſaied appellaunt light frõ his hoꝛſe foꝛ his refreſhment, wherefoꝛe his friendes of him were in great doubt: but his enemie was alſo ſo ſoꝛe trauayled that what foꝛ heate and laboure, he was alſo ouercome, ⁊ was likly to haue fallen from his hoꝛſe, and ere he might be taken down he ſwowned and died.

When ſir Fowkes was ware of the febleneſſe of his enemy anone as he might, he dꝛeſſed him on foote towarde his aduerſary, and fande him ſtarke dead, whiche by licence of the kyng was after had out of the fielde, and ſecretly buried, and the ſaied ſir Fowkes foꝛ feblenes was by his friendes lad vnto his lodgyng.

In the.xii. yere of kyng Jhon and.xxi.day of Nouember, Philip duke of Burgoine, erle of Artois, of Aluern, and of Boligne, a child of the age of.xiiii.yeares oꝛ leſſe, died at a towne neare vnto Rome called Guyon: By reaſon of whoſe death, kyng Jhon as nexte heyꝛe had after poſſeſſion of al the ſaied landes, and tooke poſſeſſion therof ſhoꝛtly after.

In the.xiiii. yere of the reigne of kyng Jhon, and thirde daye of January, he foꝛ ſpeciall cauſes him mouing, as foꝛ the enlarging of his ſonne the duke of Oꝛleaũce and other yet pledges foꝛ his raũſome, tooke ſhipping at Boloigne and ſo ſailed into Englande, and arriued at Douer, the.vi. daye of the ſaied moneth, and after yode to Eltham, and from thens was conueied vnto London, as befoꝛe is ſhewed, in the.xxxvii. yeare of kyng Edward. In time of whoſe there beynge, ſir Barthꝛam de Glaicon made war vpon the king of Nauerne, and wan from him the towne of Maunt in Noꝛmandy. And by the duke of Noꝛmandy, ſoone after was wonne from the ſaied kyng the towne of Mẽlence. Within the which were taken diuers Pariſiens that ſhoꝛtly after foꝛ their infidelitie, were put in execution at Paris. And thus the warre betwene the kinges of Fraunce and Nauern was newly begon. Then kyng Jhon being as befoꝛe is ſaid in Englãd a greuous maladie tooke him in the beginnyng of Marche, of the whiche he died at London vpon the.viii.day of Apꝛill folowynge: and ſo with great honour and ſolempnitie conueyed to the Seas ſide, and ther ſhipped, and then in pꝛoceſſe caried into Fraunce.

The death
of Jhon
kynge of
Fraunce.

Wherupon the.vii.day of May ⁊ yere of our loꝛde god. M.CCC.lxiiii, he was ſolemnely enterred in the Monaſtery of Sainct Denis, when he had reigned .xiiii. yeres .vii. monethes and odde dates leauinge after him three ſonnes, that is to ſaie Charles, whiche was kyng after him, Lewes, and Philip.

Francia.

CArolus or Charles the .vi. of that name, or fift after ſome writers the eldeſt ſonne of king Jhon, began hys reigne ouer the realme of Fraūce the ninth day of Aprill, in the beginnynge of the yere of our lorde God a thouſande three hundred .lxiiii. and the .xxxviii. yeare of Edwarde the thirde, then kynge of England, and was crowned with Dame Jane his wife at Raines, the .xix. day of May folowyng.

In this firſt yere, ſir Barthrā de Glaicon lieutenaūt of the ſaid Charles in Normandye, fought with a capitaine of the kynge of Nauern named le Captal de Bueſſe, neare vnto a place called Cocherell, nere vnto the croſſe of S. Lieffroy, in which fight the ſaied Captall was diſcomfited, and a great number of his people takē and ſlayn, him ſelf chaſed and taken: for whome the Frēch Kyng gaue after vnto the ſaied ſir Barthrā thee rledome of Longeuyle. And when he had receiued him he ſente him vnto a ſtronge priſon, called the Merchy in Meaux.

At Mighelmaſſe folowing, the Duke of Britaine, ſir Charles de Bloys, and ſir Jhon de Mountforte ſonne and heyre to the forenamed ſir Jhon Mountforte before dead, whiche by a longe ſeaſon bothe father and ſonne hadde holden warre with the ſayed ſyr Charles, met in playne batteile, in the which as before is ſhewed, in the .xxxviii. yeare of kyng Edwarde, the ſayd ſir Charles was ſlayne and diuers noble menne of Fraunce with him.

In the moneth of June and ſeconde yere of this Charles, another accord was yet concluded betwene this Charles and the king of Nauerne. By reaſon of which accorde, the Captall of Bueſſe was clerely deliuered, & Maunt and Menlene againe alſo vnto the kyng reſtored. And ouer that vnto the kynge of Nauerne was giuen for a recompenſement, the Erledome of Longeuile, whiche (as aboue is ſaid) yͤ French kinge had geuen vnto ſyr Barthram de Glaycon, for to haue the Captall to his priſoner. And alſo to the ſayd Kyng of Nauerne was geuē the lordeſhyppe of Mountpiller. And in the moneth of Februarie began the war in Spaine, where prince Edward aided Peter king of that lande as before is ſhewed in the .xl. and .xlii. yeres of kynge Edwarde.

In the .iiii. yere, the peace betwene the kynges of England & of Fraunce began to breake, by meanes of the erle of Armenake and other, as in the .xlii. yeare of kyng Edward is before ſhewed. And in the moneth of December, and the ſaied yeare, the Queene was lighted of a man child in the Hoſtel of Saint Paule, the whiche was after chriſtened with exceding ſolempnitie ouer other before foꝛe paſſed, in the churche of ſainct Paule in Paris, the ſixte daie of December, of the cardinall of Paris. To whom were Godfathers, the Erles of Mountmerency, and of Dampmartin, and Godmother Jane Quene of Euroux, and bare the name of Charles, after therle of Mountmerency.

In the fiueth yere of this Charles, he called his coūſaill of parlament at Paris. Duryng the whiche, the appellations of the erle of Arminake and other, purpoſed againſt pꝛince Edward, wer publiſhed and red, and the anſweres of the ſaied pꝛince, vpon the ſaied appellations made, whiche I ouerpaſſe foꝛ lēgth of the matter. But the concluſiō was, that the pꝛince had bꝛoken the peace, and couenauntes of theſame, as thei were demed. wherfoꝛe all ſoche tounes and holdes, as the Frenche kyng had gotten, he ſhould them retain and make warre vpon the king of Englande, foꝛ the recouery of the other. Where vpon kyng Charles in the moneth of July folowyng, rode vnto Roan, and there rigged his nauie, entendyng (as ſaith the Frenche Hiſtoꝛie) to haue made warre vpon Englande, an to haue ſente thither his yongeſt bꝛother Philip, then Duke of Burgoyne, with a ſtrong armie: but while he was there buſied aboute his purpoſe, the Duke of Lancaſter arriued with a ſtrōg power at Caleis and ſo paſſed to Turwin, and ſo vnto Arde: wherefoꝛe kyng Charles then chāged his purpoſe, and ſente his ſaied bꝛother into thoſe parties. Then by that ſeaſon that the ſaid Duke was pꝛepared with his people, the Engliſhemen were comen vnto Arde. And the Frēche men ſped theim in ſoche wiſe, that thei lodged them the .xxiiii. daie of Auguſt, vppon the Mountaine of Tournehaw, nere vnto Arde, ſo that both hoſtes wer lodged within an Engliſhe mile. Atwene whō were daily bikerynges: and ſmall ſkirmiſhes. All whiche ſeaſon the Frenche Kyng taried ſtill aboute Rowan.

Then the Kynge of Nauerne, which by a long ſeaſon had dwelled in Nauerne, came by ſhip into Conſtantine, and ſent vnto kyng Charles: that if he wer ſo pleaſed, he would gladly come vnto hym, foꝛ to ſhewe to hym his mynde. Wherefoꝛe the Kyng ſente vnto hym as hoſtages, the Erle of Salebꝛuge, the deane of Paris, with twoo other noble men, the whiche the Kyng of Nauerne would not accepte.

In the moneth of September, and vpon the .xii. daie, when the Duke of Burgoyn had lien (as befoꝛe is ſaied) nere vnto thengliſhe hooſte, he that daie remoued his people, and ſo wente vnto Heſden. And the Engliſhe hoſte remoued to Caux and other places, as befoꝛe I haue ſhewed to you in the .xliii. yere of Kyng Edwarde, with other thynges apperteinyng vnto theſame matter. And in the ſaied moneth of Septēber, kyng Charles manned and victailed certain Galeis and other Shippes, and ſente theim into Wales, and ſo to haue entred into Englande: But thei retourned with litle woꝛſhip, notwithſtanding that he had two noble men of Wales, named Owā and James Guinne, which made to him faſt pꝛomeſſe of great thinges

ges, by reaſon that thei were enemies vnto the kyng of Englande. For this and for other charges, the Kyng called a Conuocation of the Temporaltie, and Spiritualtie at Paris. where to maintain his warres, was graunted vnto hym of all thyng bought and ſold, except vitaile, the fowerth penie, ſo that all thyng was ſolde by retaile, the ſeller ſhould paie the exaccion, and that whiche was ſold by great, the buier ſhould paie the ſaied exaccion. And the Spiritualtie graunted a dime, to be paied in twoo halfe yeres. And the Lordes and gentlemen wer ſtinted at a certaintie, after the valewe of their landes.

In the moneth of Februarie, the Kyng ſente vnto the Kyng of Nauerne, then beeyng at Chierbourgth certaine meſſengers, to perfite an amitie atwene thē, leſt he tooke partie againſt hym with the Engliſhmen. But this treatie continued a long ſeaſon, ſo that in the ſixt yere, and moneth of Iune, the kyng of Nauerne hauyng ſufficiēt hoſtages, came to the Frēch kyng to Vernō. Where in concluſiō the kyng of Nauerne made his homage vnto the Frenche kyng, ⁊ became there his feodarie, wherof the Frenchemen made moche ioy. After whiche accord, theſaid king of Nauerne the third daie folowyng, tooke his leaue of the Kyng, and ſo rode vnto Eureux. Al whiche ſeaſon, the warre was continued by Engliſhe men, within the Realme of Fraunce, and prouince of Britaine, as before is expreſſed in the. xliiii. xlv. xlvi. yeres of king Edwarde.

In the ſeuēth yere, and moneth of Auguſt, the Duke of Braban, with many nobles of Fraūce, met in plaine battaile, with the Duke of Iuillers, ⁊ the Duke of Guelre In whiche battaile, after cruell fighte, the Duke of Braban was chaſed, and vpon his ſide ſlain the Erle of Sainct Poule, with many other noble men, whiche the ſtorie nameth not. And vppon the other ſide was alſo ſlaine the Duke of Guelre, with many other vppon that partie.

IN the leuēth yere of kyng Charles, ⁊ moneth of Mai he aſſembled his greate counſail of parlament at Paris, where emong many Actes, made for the weale of his realme, he with aſſente of his Lordes and Commons there aſſembled, enacted for a lawe, after that daie to be continued, that all heires of the croune of Fraunce, their fathers beyng deade, maie bee crouned as kinges of Fraunce, ſo ſone as thei attained vnto thage of. xiiii. yeres

At wh
age ẏ h
of Fra
ſhould
croune

And in this yere was a treatie of peace laboured by the two cardinalles, ſent from the biſhoppe of Rome, as before is ſhewed in the xlix. yere of kyng Edwarde. After whiche treatie not concluded, the kyng of Englande loſt daily of his landes in Fraunce. For in the moneth of Auguſt folowing, the duke of Berrie, the duke of Angeo, and many other Lordes to theim aſſigned in diuers places, as in Guiā Angeo, and Main, gate and wan from the Engliſhe men many coūtries, tounes, and caſtles, as Pierregort, Rouerge, Caourſin, Bigorre,

gorre, Baſindas, Berregart, Daimet, with many other tounes and holdes, whiche would aſke a long leiſure to rehearſe, to the nomber of ſixe ſcore and fowertene, what of tounes, caſtles, and other holdes, whiche in ſhorte while were wonne from the Engliſhe men, in the parties of Fraunce & Britain.

erecei-
ge of
arles.
.iiii.
peror
Fraũce
ſo to
is.

In the .xiii. yere of this Charles, the Emperoure of Rome and Almaine, named Charles the .iiii of that name, came into Fraunce, by Cambry, to doe certain pilgremages at ſaincte Denis, and els where, and ſo was conueyed with honourable men, as the Lorde of Couſy and other, vnto S. Quintine, where he taried Chriſtemas daie. And after he was conueyed to a toune called En of Ewe, and from thens to Noyen, and then to Compeigne, where he was mette with the duke of Burbone, and other nobles. Then he rode to Sẽlis, where he was mette with the dukes of Berray and of Burbon, brethren of the Frenche kyng, and many other, as biſhops and other Lordes. And ye ſhall vnderſtande that all ſoche as rode in the compaignies of theſe foreſaied dukes, excepte biſhops and prieſtes, rode in their liueries. As the companie firſt of the Duke of Burbon, brother vnto the Quene, to the nomber of three hundred men, were al clad in white and blewe. The cõpaignie of the twoo other Dukes, the nomber of fiue hundred men, in blacke and Ruſſette, that is to meane, the Erles and other Lordes in clothe of gold, the knightes in Veluet, the gentlemen in Damaſke and Saten, and the yemen in cloth. Then frõ Senlis he was brought vnto Louuris, wher met with hym the duke of Barre, with a companie of two hundred horſe, and his compaignie clad in grene and redd. And from thens he was had vnto ſainct Denis, vppon the thirde daie of January, whither the Kyng ſent to hym a chaire richely garniſhed, for ſo moche, as he was vexed with ẏ Goute. And the Quene ſente to hym an Horſe litter, with twoo white palfreis: where he was alſo mette with a greate company of biſhoppes, and other Spirituall men, as Abbottes, priours and other, and taried there twoo daies.

Vpon the fift daie of January beyng Mondaie, he rode towarde Paris: but or he were halfe a mile from ſainct Denis, he was mette with the prouoſt of the Marchãtes, with a compaignie of fiftene hundred horſe, the citezeins being cladde in white and Violet, and ſo roade before hym, till he came to Paris. When the kyng was warned, that he was nere the citee, he lepte vpon a white palfraie, and accompanied with many Lordes and other, to the nomber of a, M. men, all his houſhold ſeruauntes, being clad in one liuery, of broune blewe and darke Taunie: and the ſeruauntes of the Dolphin of Vien, in blewe & crimſine, euery man after his degree, and ſo the Kyng with his compaignie, mette with the Emperour at the Mill without the toune, called the Windmil Where after due ſalutes made either vnto other, the Frenche kyng put the Emperour vpon his right hande, and tooke the kyng of Romaines, ſonne vnto the Emperor vpon his lefte hande: and ſo the

Frenche kyng ridyng in the middes, paſſed through the high ſtretes of Paris, till thei came to the kinges palais, where he was lodged with al honour, and after feaſted with the kyng & the quene, by the ſpace of ſixtene daies. Whiche terme eanded, like as with all honour he was conueighed into the lande, ſo with greate honoure and riche giftes, he was againe conueighed out of the lande.

In the moneth of February folowyng, and the .vi. daie, died the Quene of Fraunce in the Hoſtelle of ſaincte Poule in Paris, and after buried with greate ſolempnitie and honoure, in the Monaſtarie of ſainct Denis.

In the moneth of Marche, the kyng receiued letters frō certaine Lordes of his land, in the whiche was contained, that the Kyng of Nauerne had imagined and conſpired with one Iaket, that was then comen into Fraunce, to execute his curſed purpoſe. Wherfore the Frēche kyng laied ſoche waite for him, that he was taken, & thei found vpō him, a bill of certain inſtructions, how he ſhould behaue himſelf in accompliſhyng his euil purpoſe. Then he was brought vnto the kynges preſence, to whō he confeſſed the circumſtaunce of all his treaſon, to be doen at the commaundement and counſaile of the king of Nauerne. Sone after, the eldeſt ſoonne of the Kyng of Nauerne, whiche was newly comen into Normandy, ſent vnto yͤ king Charles, ſhewyng vnto hym, if it were his pleaſure, he would gladlie come vnto his preſence, for to ſpeake with hym, with that he might haue a ſure ſaufe conduite for him, and all ſoche as he ſhould bryng with hym. The whiche to hym was graunted, and vpon the ſame came vnto Sēlis, where the kyng then was. And after he had comoned a ſeaſon with the kyng, he made to him requeſt, for the deliuerie of the foreſaied Iaket de Rue, laiyng for hym ſondrie excuſes. But when the kyng had cauſed the ſaied Iaket to be brought foorthe, before the ſaied ſoonne of the Kyng of Nauerne, named ſir Charles, he auouched ſoche thynges before hym, that he could not denaie, but that his father hadde committed many and ſondry treaſons, as well againſt kyng Ihon, as now againſt king Charles his ſonne. Wherefore, after diuers aſſembles and counſailes had vpon this matter, the king and the ſaid ſir Charles agreed, that all ſoche tounes and holdes, as the ſaied king of Nauern had within Normandy, ſhould be deliuered vnto yͤ Duke of Burgoin, to the Frenche kynges vſe. And for that promes ſhould bee truely perfourmed, the kyng firſt ſware the ſaid ſir Charles, and after many of the capitaines, whiche had the rule of the ſaid tounes and caſtelles. And for ſo moche as the ſaied ſir Charles, had there preſent with hym a capitain named ſir Fernande de Oyence, in whoſe guidyng many of the ſaid holdes then wer, & ſuſpected hym that he would not performe the ſaied promeſſe, therefore he cauſed him to be areſted, and to be had vnto priſon, till the holdes beeyng vnder his guidyng, were clerely deliuered. Vpon whiche agrement thus concluded & ſworne the Duke of Burgoyne, with the

ſaied

ſaid ſir Charles, & theſaid ſir Fernande, as a priſoner was ſent into Normandie, with a conuenient armie. Where, with awe and fauour, the Duke in proceſſe of time had to him deliuered, al ſoche tounes and holdes, as the Kyng of Nauerne there hadde, excepte the toune and caſtle of Chiribourgeth. In whiche paſſetyme and ſeaſon, was alſo taken in a Toune called Bretnel, a ſecretarie to the Kyng of Nauerne, with certain writynges beyng in a Coffer within the chāber. By reaſon of whiche writynges, and alſo by the confeſſion of the partie, many moe thynges concernyng the confeſſion of Jaket de Rue, was then manifeſted and proued, whiche Secretarie was named maſter Peter de Tertre, a Frenche man borne, but he had ſerued the Kyng of Nauerne, by the more time of his life. Upon this confeſſion made, and written by the ſaied Secretarie, the kyng called his Courte of Parlament: Duryng whiche, bothe the ſaied maſter Peter, and alſo the ſaied Jaket, were broughte before the Lordes and Commons, where their confeſſions wer red, and thei examined vpō euery article of the ſame, and affirmed al their former ſaiynges. Wherefore, ſhortly after by aucthoritie of the Courte, thei were demed to dye for their treaſons, and ſo were hanged and headed, and their eight quarters hanged at ſondrie gates and places of Paris.

And when the kyng had receiued into his poſſeſſion the forſaid holdes, belongyng vnto the kyng of Nauerne, the whiche had ſo oftē rebelled againſt his father and him, he was counſailed by his lordes, ỹ he ſhould throwe to groūde diuers of the ſaied caſtles, leſt the kyng of Nauerne them recouered againe, and by meane of their forces, worke vnto hym & his realme newe diſpleaſures. By reaſon of whiche counſaill, the kyng made euen with the grounde, theſe fortreſſes folowyng. Firſte the caſtle of Bretnel, of Dorlet, of Beaumounte le Roger, of Pacy Damiet, and Cloiſters of theſame, the toure and caſtle of Nogent le roy, the caſtle of Eurour, the caſtle of Pount Andemer, ỹ caſtle of Mortaigne, and of Ganraux or Ganray, with other in the countrie of Conſtantine. But the Toune of Chirebourgh remained ſtill in the poſſeſſion of the Nauarois, the whiche with aide of the Engliſche men, was kept from the Frenche kyng. And the forenamed ſir Fernande, was countermaunded to priſon, for ſo moche as he was capitain of the ſame toune, thinking in him default, that theſaid toune was not deliuered with the other.

IN the xiiii. yere of this Charles and Monethe of Auguſte, tidynges came vnto him of the ſciſme, whiche was begō in the churche of Rome. For after the death of the leuenth Gregorie, whiche died in the moneth of Aprill forepaſſed, by meane of the Frenche Cardinalles, whiche were a leuen in nomber, after the other Italien cardinalles, wͭ other of their affinitie had elected and choſen a Napolitaine, & archbiſhop of Barre, the Frenche cardinalles with the election not beyng contented, with ſoche as fauoured their partie, denoūſed and publiſhed one named Robert cardinall of Baſile, and named hym Clemente the ſeuenth, where the firſt was named Urban the ſixte. Of the maner of this ſciſme, ſome what I haue ſhewed vnto you in the. lii. yere of kyng Edwarde the third. But to expreſſe the certaintie of this ſciſme, truthe it is, that after the death of the forenamed leuenth Gregorie, the Cardinals beyng in the conclaue or counſaile chāber, where the biſhop of Rome is accuſtomed to bee choſen, the Romains beyng in harnes, made ſoche exclamations vpon the cardinalles, beyng in the cōclaue, for to haue an Itailan Biſhoppe of Rome, that the Cardinalles for feare to be ſlain, elected and chaſe one named Bartholomew, a Napolitan, and archbiſhop of Barre and named Urban the ſixte. But this after he was admitted, was ſo proude and ſo cōbrous, that he ruled all by will, and nothyng by right or good order of reaſon or conſcience. Wherefore, the Cardinalles beyng repentaunte of that thei had doen, a certaine of theim in the citee of Fondes the twentie daie of September, elected and choſe an other, named Robert cardinall of Baſile, and named hym Clement the ſeuenth, and by their authorities, publiſhed him for the biſhop of Rome, & diſalowed that other before choſen. But the Romaines would not thereto bee agreable, but held them vnto their former biſhop of Rome, with whō helde the prouinces of Germanie and Pānonie, with the more partie of Italie. And with the laſte choſen Biſhoppe of Rome, helde Fraunce, Spaine, Cateloine, and Englande. And thus beganne the Sciſme, whiche continued by the terme of. xxxix. yere after.

In the. xv. yere of kyng Charles, he for ſo moche as ſir Jhon de Mountforde Duke of Britaine, toke partie with the Engliſhmen againſt hym, and would not appere at ſoche daies, as to him wer aſſigned, therefore the ſaied kyng Charles ſente into the Duchie of Britain, to ſeaſe the land into the kinges handes, the Duke of Burbon, ſir Lewes de Sancer Marſhall of Fraūce, ſir Jhon de Uien, Admirall of Fraunce, & ſir Brian de Reuier his chamberlaine, with other men of name, with a greate compaignie of men of armes, the whiche at their cōmyng into Britaine, fande the countrie all other wiſe diſpoſed then thei ſuppoſed. For where as thei at their commyng, thought to haue the poſſeſſion of the tounes and Caſtles in peaceable wiſe, thei were denaied, and plainly aunſwered, that thei were ſworne to their duke, to bere to hym true fidelitie and ſeruice, whiche thei entended to obſerue & kepe, with which anſwere theſaid Duke and his compaignie, were fain to retourne vnto the Frenche Kyng. The whiche ſhortly after ſent thither the Duke of Angeou with a ſtrong armie, to warre vpō the countrie. In whiche ſeaſon ſir Jhon de Mountforde, hearyng of the Frenche kynges entent, arriued in Britaine with a companie of Engliſhe Archers. To whom drewe ſoche multitude of Britōs, that the duke of Angeou was fain to retourne into Fraunce, without worſhip there then winnyng.

In the moneth of October, the Flemynges of Gaunte and other, for greuous exactions vpon them ſet, rebelled againſt their erle, and ſlue his Bailiffe and Officer, aſſigned by the erle to gather his tolles, and after beſieged other tounes, whiche tooke partie with the erle againſt them, as Audenarde, Terremonde, and other. Whereof hearyng yͤ duke of Burbon, whoſe doughter the ſaied Duke had maried, aſſembled his Burgonions, and ſped hym into the Marches of Flaūders, and ſo laied his ſiege vnto Tourney. But the Flemynges defēded the duke in ſochewiſe, that the duke was agreable to fal to a treatie: in the whiche, it was firſt accorded and agreed, that the Earle at the requeſt of the Duke, ſhould pardon and forgiue clerely to his ſubiectes, al offences by thē to hym doen before that daie, and alſo that he ſhould graunte vnto theim, all their former liberties and priuileges, in as ample and large wiſe, as thei had thē graunted at his firſte commyng in, and maintain and vphold their auncient cuſtomes, and to rule them after theſame. Secondarily, if any letters haue been made and ſealed contrary their priuileges, in the tyme of this rebellion, that the Erle ſhall reuoke theim, and cancell theim for euer. Thirdly, that all ſoche capitaines of Almaigne, as at this tyme haue been in the Dukes or Erles wages, againſte the Flemynges, ſhall be ſolemply ſworne, yͤ for any hurte or harme, by theim in this warre receiued, thei nor none of their nations, as farre as thei might lette it, ſhall not hurte nor harme any man of the countrie of Flaunders, at any tyme here after, in reuengemente of this warre.

And ſo fowerthly, that of fower of the beſte tounes of Flaunders, xxv. men to be choſen by the Burgeſes of theſame, the whiche ſhall haue correction of al defaltes, not touchyng life and death, doen by yͤ Flemynges, and alſo to haue power to correct all ſoche as be foūd culpable of the Erles counſaile, in complaintes or offences criminal.

Fiftly, that the ſaied. xxv. perſones ſhall haue aucthoritie and power, to make inquiſitiō from yere to yere, of the gouernaunce of the lande, and what faultes be to thē preſented, as often as. xiii. of thē be ſittyng together in one coūſail, thei ſhall haue full power to giue ſentence, to be obeied without interruption. And what by theim is ſentenſed, the Erle to vphold and maintain with all his might and power.

Sixtly, it was deſired, but not cōcluded, that for ſo moche as the toune of Audinarde and of Terremounde, tooke partie againſt their neighbours, that the walles of them in certaine places, ſhould be euened with the grounde, in token of their vniuerſall dealyng.

And ſeuēthly, and laſtly it was cōcluded, that the prouoſt of Bruges ſhould after that daie, bee put out of the Erles counſaile, and after thereunto not to be admitted, without conſent of the fornamed xxv. perſones. All whiche articles were agreed vnto by the erle, and paſſed and aucthoriſed by his letter and ſeale, albeeit, this accorde continued no while, as here after ſhall appere.

In the .xvi. yere and Monethe of October, the inhabitauntes of the citee or toune of Mountpiller in the Countrie of Languedoke, for an impoſitiō or aide, that was put to them by the Duke of Angeou, aroſe by one accorde againſt the miniſters and counſailours of the duke (whiche Duke was liuetenaunte generall, vnder his brother the Frenche kyng) and without diſcretion, in their furie and rage, ſlue ſir Guillyam Poncell knighte, and Chaunceloure to the Duke: ſir Guy Deſſerike, ſteward of Rouarge, maſter Arnold, gouernour of Mountpiller, maſter Jamas de Chaſny, ſecretarie to the Duke, and many other Officers, and ſeruauntes of the ſaied duke, to the nomber of fower ſcore perſones, and when thei had theim ſlain (as tyrauntes not beyng cōtented with that cruelneſſe) thei threwe the deade bodies into diuers foule and ſtynckyng pittes, not ſuffring theim to be buried, as Chriſtian menne ſhould.

Whereof, when knowlege was brought vnto the Duke, he was therewith greuouſly amoued, and made his othe, that he ſhould puniſhe them, to the feare and example of al other, & thereupon gathered his people, for to reuenge this cruell deede. When the rumour of this miſcheuous deede was ſomedeale apeaſed, and the wiſe menne and auncient of the toune, had digeſted this haſtie and cruel deede, and looked vpon the ende thereof, then thei were appalled in their myndes, and were very repentaũt of the deede that thei had dooen. And when thei had conſidered all thinges, as the deede deteſtable of it ſelf, the great might of the duke and ouer that the aide, whiche ſhould to him be giuen of the king thei conceiued well there was no remedy, but to ſeche for meanes of mercie & grace. For obtainyng whereof, thei made diuers waies to the Duke, but none would bee accepted. Laſtly, in the moneth of Januarii, when the duke had prepared al thynges neceſſarie to the warre, he tooke his iourney towarde the ſaied toune of Mountpillar, leadyng with hym a ſtrong hoſte of men of armes, vtterly entendyng to ſubuerte that toune, and to deſtroie the more partie of the people. Whereof hearyng the people of the toune, toke their aduiſe, and ordered thē as foloweth.

How th
habitaũ
of Moũ
ler, ſou
mercie
duke of
geou,
their ſha
ful mur

Firſt thei ſent out againſt him, diuers officers of the kynges, ſoch as thei knewe were in his fauour, and ordained them to be in a place and there knelyng, to aſke grace and mercie for the toune. Secondarely, thei ſente the Cardinall of Albanie, and thirdly, al the Collages of menne of Religion, as well Nunnes as other, and fowerthly, thei ſent the ſtudentes of the law, Cannon and Ciuill, and alſo of Medicine or Phiſike, all being ſet vpon either ſide of the waie, wher the Duke ſhould paſſe, and knelyng vpon their knees, ſhould crie without ceaſing, mercie gracious prince, mercie. Then after theſe were ſet the Conſuls, or rulers of ỹ toune, in gounes without their clokes vngirde, euery man with a corde aboute his necke, hauyng with theim the Keyes of the citee. And at the entre of the citee, ſtode the women with the maidens of theſame, and all menne children, whiche were vnder the age of .xiii. yeres. And betwene that age and vi. yeres, were ſet next after ẏ ſtudientes aforſaid. When this innumerable people was thus ordered and eueriche taught in what wiſe the ſhould behaue them, vpon the fiftene daie of Januari, about the houre of three, the Duke with his people approched the toune, and beholdyng the multitude, and the lamentable crie, was ſomewhat moued with compaſſion, and ſo holdyng his waie, mette with the ſaied Cardinal. The whiche after conuenient ſalutation vnto hym made, ſhewed that as a Legate & meſſenger he was ſent vnto hym from the Biſhoppe of Rome, Clemente the ſeuenth, requiryng of him pardon for the toune and people of Mountpiller, admoniſhing him further in the ſaied Biſhoppe of Romes behalfe, that whatſoeuer puniſhemente he did vnto the toune, that he ſhould abſtain hym frō the ſheding of Chriſten blood, and ſpecially of ſoche as he might knowe was innocent of the deede. To which meſſage the duke gaue no aunſwere, but tooke the Cardinall vppon his right hande, and ſo roade foorthe together, where euer the people kneeled on either ſide of the waie, and cried lamentablie, mercie gracious Prince, mercie, and ſo paſſed till he came where the Conſuls ſtoode, which kneling offred vnto him the keies of the toune. But he as though he regarded theim not, caſt his looke from them, and commaunded the Seneſhal of Beaucair, to receiue the ſaied Keyes, and ſo paſſed on, till he came to the compaignie of women, whiche relented his ſtony harte, to ſee the greate lamentation thei made with their wofull crie. Wherefore to be rid of theim, he called vppon his foreriders, to paſſe on more faſter, ſo that laſtly he came to his lodgyng.

When the duke was comen to his lodgyng, anon he commaunded al the officers of the toune with the Conſulat or Rulers of that ſame, vnto a place called ſaincte Germain, and the gates of that place, he toke to bee watched with men of armes, and vpon the morowe folowyng, commaunded all the armour and artillerie, belongyng to the toune to bee brought to a place by hym aſſigned, and there to bee kepte by his officers. Then the Cardinall came againe to the Duke, and brought with hym diuers Doctours of Diuinite and other, whiche made to hym aſſiduate labour for mercie to bee ſhewed to the toune, and to the inhabitauntes of theſame: but all thei could gett no graunte of hym, but that as vpō the morowe, thei ſhould knowe the Sentence that he would giue vpon the toune, and inhabitauntes of theſame. And for that ſentence might be well vnderſtanden of the people, he commaunded that at after Noone a ſcaffolde ſhould be made, in the chief place or ſtrete of the toune, where, vpon the morowe, beyng the ſeuentene daie of January, diuers of the Dukes counſaile beyng vpon the ſaid ſcaffolde, and the people of the toune beyng there preſente, as well priſoners as other, after a long oration made by the Dukes Chaunceloure, of the greate and heinous deede lately there dooen, by the inhabitauntes of that toune, for the whiche, correction tẽporall might not be to greuous, albeit that the Duke at the commaundement of the Biſhop of Rome, and requeſt of his Legate and cardinall there preſent, had mitigate or leſſed the puniſhement, as after ſhould wel appere by declaration of the ſentence folowyng, after whiche proteſtation, the Sentence was proclaimed as foloweth.

A terible and ſore iudgemẽt.

Firſt ỹ cominaltie of the toune for their rebellion and diſobediẽce againſt their prince dooen, ſhould paie vnto the king ſixe ſcore thouſande Frankes, and a Franke is worthe twoo ſhillynges ſterlyng. And ſo the toune ſhould bee charged with three ſcore thouſande.li. And ouer that to paie all ſoche coſtes and charges, as the duke had ſpent, by occaſion of this iourney. Secondarily, ſixe hundred perſones of the toune, ſoche as mighte be tried moſte culpable in this offence, ſhould ſuffre death: That is to wite, twoo hundred to be hanged with chaines, twoo hundred to be headed, and their heades to bee ſent vnto diuers good tounes of Fraunce, and the other twoo hundred, ſoche as of the ſixe hundred ſhall be founde moſte guiltie of the beginnyng of that riotte, ſhould be brent: and that thei and alſo the other twoo hundred, whiche ſhould be hanged, ſhould be caried vnto diuerſe good tounes of Fraunce, and there to haue their execution, to the vtter feare and terroure of all other, and all their goodes to be forfaited to the king. Thirdly, twoo gates of the toune ſoche as the duke would appoinct, with the walles and towers, ſtãdyng betwene the ſaied gates, to be made plaine with the grounde, and the dike of the toune to be filled with theſame. Fowerthly, all maner of ordinaunce and abilimẽtes for warre, belongyng to the Toune, to bee forfaited vnto the kyng. Fiftly, the cominaltie of the Citee to builde a Chapell, and to endowe it with ſo moche lande, as might finde ſixe prieſtes therein, to ſyng for euer, and to pray for the ſoules of the perſones before ſlain. And the bodies, whiche thei had throwen before into the foule and ſtinckyng pittes, the counſail & chief rulers of the toune, ſhould vppon their proper backes, bryng theim vnto the ſaied Chapell, and there cauſe theim ſolemply to bee enterred. Sixtly, that all ſoche gooddes as the ſaied perſones ſo ſlain, had within the toune, or els were ſpoiled by the ſaied citezens, that it ſhould be reſtored vnto the wiues, or nere kinneſfolkes of thẽ ſo deade.

Whẽ the proclamation of this ſentence was ended, there was an exclamation and criyng of mercy, and ſoche ſorowe and lamentyng made of the people, that the noyſe thereof ſounded to the heauens. But to bryng this tragedie to cõcluſion, finally, ſoche labour was made vnto the Duke, as well by exhortation of ſermons and other that all thynges were pardened, excepte the foundation of the chapell, and execution of certain perſones, whiche were accuſed to bee the occaſioners of this miſchief, and alſo the coſtes of that iournie the whiche were ceſſed at fower & twentie thouſande Frankes, oꝛ fower and twentie hundꝛed poūd Sterlynges. After whiche cande thus made, the Conſulates of the toune wer reſtoꝛed again to their habite and rule, and to them was admitted all foꝛmer offices & rule of the Toune, excepte the office of Bailiwike.

erebel-
ofthe in
itaūtes
Gaunt.

In the monethe of July began the inhabitauntes of Gaunte in Flaunders, to rebell againſt their Earle of newe, the cauſe whereof is not ſhewed. But thei with aide which thei had of Ipꝛe, Courtray and other tounes, made a greate hooſte, and yode ſtraighte vnto a toune in Flaunders called Dixmewe, entendyng to haue taken it. But the Earle beyng warned thereof, with aide of Bꝛuges and of Franke and other, manned out a compaignie againſte the other, and met with them in a plain feld, and after a ſharpe ſkirmiſhe, put them of Gaunte to flight, and ſlue of them diuers, and toke of theim certaine pꝛiſoners, and purſued them vnto the toune of Ipꝛe, and laied ſiege to the ſame. When the heades of the toune knewe that the Erle was there in pꝛoper perſone, vnder a certaine appoinctemente, thei opened the gates, and receiued hym in. But many of his enemies were fled vnto Courtray And when the erle had reſted him in the toune twoo daies, and doen there ſome execution, he departed thens and rode vnto Bꝛuges, and helde him there. In whiche ſeaſon the other, whiche as aboue is ſaid were fledde vnto Courtray, fell at variaunce within theim ſelf, and ſlue their capitaine, and after fled the toune, and ſhifted euery man foꝛ hym ſelf. Then a knight called Sir Soyer of Gaunte, came vnto the toune of Courtray, and ſo exhoꝛted the rulers of ẏ toune, that thei pꝛomiſed him to take his part Wherevpon he gate a baner of the erles armes in his hande, and ſo ridyng aboute that toune, cried, who that would take the Earles partie and his, let him folow that baner, whom the peopled folowed in greate nomber. And when the erle was aſcertained of that dede, and howe the toune of Courtray was turned vnto his partie, anon he aſſembled of other tounes, and alſo of that, and of Ipꝛe, ſo moche that his hoſte was eſtemed at .lx. thouſande men. With the whiche he ſped hym vnto Gaūt, and laied a ſtrong ſiege there about. But by the death of the Frēche king, whiche died ſhoꝛtly after, the erle was fain to chaunge his mynde, and to remoue his ſiege, oꝛ els (as ſome wꝛiters repoꝛt) foꝛ ſtrength of the ſaid toune, which might not lightly be gotten, foꝛ lacke of good vpō the erles partie, to maintain that ſiege. Then in the moneth of September, and .xxvi. daie of the ſame king Charles died at his manour called Plaiſance ſur Marne, and was buried by his wife in the monaſterie of ſainct Denis, when he had reigned fiftene yeres and ſixe monethes, with odde daies, leauing after him thꝛe ſonnes, Charles, whiche was kyng after hym, and Lewes that he had made erle of Valois, and after Duke of Angeou, and Philip erle of Poitiers.

Anglia.

Richard the ſecond.

RIchard the ſeconde of that name, & ſonne of prince Edwarde, eldeſt ſonne of king Edward the third, a childe of the age of a leuen yeres, began his reigne ouer the realme of Englande, the .xxii. daye of Iune, in the yere of our Lorde, a thouſand three hundred twentie and ſeuen, and the thirtene yere of the ſixte Charles, then Kyng of Fraunce. This Richard was borne at Burdeaux, of whoſe birthe ſome writers tell wounders, the whiche I paſſe ouer.

And vpõ the fiftene daie of Iuly, the yere aboue ſaied, he was crouned at weſtminſter, beeyng the daie of the the Tranſlation of ſainct Swithin. In whiche tyme and ſeaſon, ſtoode Maior & Sheriffes of the citee of London, theſe perſones folowyng.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxvii.		Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxviii.
Grocer. Nicholas Brembre.	Andrewe Pikman. Nicholas Twiſforde.	Anno.j.

The firſte yere.

THe whiche did continue ſo in their offices, that is to ſaie, the ſheriffes til Michelmas and the Maior till the feaſt of Simon & Iude. At whiche ſeaſon wer choſen and admitted new officers.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxviii.		Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxix.
Grocer. Ihon Philpot.	Ihon Boſeham. Thomas Cornwaleis.	Anno.ij.

The ſecõd yere.

IN the moneth of Auguſte, and beginnyng of the ſecond yere of kyng Richard, for variaunce which was betwene the Lorde Latimer, and ſir Rauſe Ferrers vpon that one partie, and Sir Robert Hall and Shakerley Eſquier vpon that other partie, for a priſoner taken beyonde the ſea in Spaine, called the Lorde of Dene, whom the ſaid Eſquier helde in his poſſeſſion, cõtrarie the willes of the foreſaied Knightes, for the ſaied cauſe, the ſaied Knightes entred the Churche of Saincte Peter in London, and there findyng the ſaied Sir Roberte knelyng at Maſſe, without reuerence of the Sacrament, or place, ſlewe hym in the Churche at the high Maſſe ſeaſon, and after that other named Shakerley, was by their meanes areſted, and had to the Towre of London, where he was kepte as priſoner, long after.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxix. Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxx.

Grocer.
John Hadley. { John Heylyſdone.
Wylliam Baret. } Anno.iii.

third
r.

IN the moneth of May, and the latter ende of the. ii. yeare of kinge Rycharde, certayne Galeys and other ſhyppes ſent by Charles the fyfte then king of Fraunce, of the whiche was cheif patron oꝛ capitain a knighte named ſyꝛ Olyuer de Clycon, landed in dyuers places of England, and dyd much harme and laſtelye entered the ryuer of Thames, and ſo came to Grauiſende, where he ſpoyled the towne and bꝛent a parte thereof, and retourned into Fraunce with much richeſſe as affyꝛmeth the Frenche Cronicle. In this yeare alſo was holden a parliament at Weſtminſter, in the whiche was graunted that all men and women beynge of the age of. xiiii. yeares and aboue, ſhoulde paye vnto the kinge iiii.d. By reaſon whereof, greate grudge and murmure grewe among the commons, as after ſhal appeare. Then with that moneye an army was pꝛepared, and therof was made chiefe gouernour ſir Thomas of Woodſtocke Earle of Cambꝛidge, and vncle vnto the kynge. The which with a companye of. vii. oꝛ eight thouſand (as teſtifieth the Frenche Cronicle) paſſed the water of Summe, in the beginning of Auguſt, and alſo the beginninge of the thyꝛde yere of Kinge Rycharde, and ſo came vnto Soyſons, and paſſed the ryuers of Oiſe and of Marne, and other, and ſo went befoꝛe Troyes and wanne it, and after lodged them betwene Newe towne and Sens. And euer as thei paſſed the countreis, other thei toke greate finaunces, oꝛ elles fyꝛed the townes as thei went. And albeit, that the French kyng had ſent againſt theim an army of Frenchemen to withſtande theim, they letted theim nothinge of theyꝛ purpoſe, but and they had any ſkyꝛmyſhes with theim, the Frenchemen were put vnto the wooꝛſe, ſo that they bette theim, and toke of theim diuerſe pꝛyſoners, and raunſomed theim at their pleaſures.

ueſēde
led by
chmē

And thus holdynge theyꝛ iourneye, they paſſed by the countreye of Gaſtynoyes, and ſo into Bꝛytayne, where they were ioyouſelye receiued of ſyꝛ John de Mountfoꝛde, duke of that pꝛouince, whiche then was newelye comen thither.

◆

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxx. Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxi.

Fyſhmonger.
Wylliam Walwoꝛth. { Walter Doket.
Wylliam Knighthode. } Anno.iiii.

The.iiii. yeare.

An inſurrection in Kente and Eſſex.

IN this mayers yeare and ende of the thyꝛde yeare of king Richard towarde the ſommer ſeaſon, in diuers places of the land the commons aroſe ſodeinly, and oꝛdeined to them rulers and capitaynes, and ſpecially in Kent and Eſſex. The which named their leaders Iacke ſtrawe, Wilwaw, Wat Tiler, Iack ſhepeherde, Tomme Miller, and Hob Carter. Theſe vnruled companye gathered vnto theim great multitude of the commons, and after ſpedde theim towarde the citie of London, and aſſembled theim vpō Blacke heath in Kent, within.iii. miles of London. And vpon Coꝛpus Chꝛiſti daye beinge then the eleuenth daye of Iune, they entered the Towꝛe of London, and there the king being then lodged, tooke from thence parfoꝛce, maiſter Sudberye then Archebyſhop of Caunterburye, ſir Robert Hales, loꝛde oꝛ pꝛiour of S. Iohans, and a white freer confeſſour vnto the kinge. Whiche.iii, perſonnes with houge noiſe and crie they lad vnto the Hylle of the ſayd Towꝛe and ſmoote of their heades. And when they had ſo done, they returned into Southwarke by boates and barges, and there ſlewe and robbed all ſtraungers that they might finde. And that doone, thei went vnto Weſtminſter, and toke with theim all maner of Sayntuarye men, and ſo came vnto the Duke of Lācaſters place ſtanding without the Temple barre, called Sauoy, ⁊ ſpoiled that was therein, and after ſet it vpon a fyꝛe, and bꝛēt it. And from thence thei yode vnto the hed place of ſaint Iohns in Smithfeld, and dyſpoiled that place in lyke wiſe. Then thei entered the cytie, and ſerched the temple and other Innes of courte, and ſpoiled their places and bꝛent their bokes of lawe, and ſlewe as many men of lawe and queſtmongers as they myghte fynde. And that done, they wente to ſayncte Martins the Graund, and tooke with them al ſaintwary men, and the pꝛiſoners of Newgate, Ludgate, and of bothe counters, and deſtroied their regeſters ⁊ bokes, and in lyke maner thei dyd wyth the pꝛiſoners of the Marſhalſy ⁊ kinges benche in Southwerke.

Jackſt ſlayne.

Whan Iacke Straw had thus done all thing at his wil, and ſaw that no reſiſtēce was made again him, he was ſmitten with ſo houg a pꝛeſūpcyon, that he thought no man his pere. And ſo beynge enſlamed with pꝛeſumpcyon and pꝛyd, he rode vnto the Towꝛe wher the king was, beyng ſmally accompanied of his loꝛdes, and cauſed him to ryde about part of the city, and ſo conueyd hym into Smythfeld. Where in the Kinges pꝛeſence, he cauſed a pꝛoclamation to be made and dyd full ſmall reuerence vnto the kynge. Which miſoꝛder ⁊ pꝛeſumpcion whē william Walwoꝛth then Mayꝛe of London behelde, of verye pure dyſdayne that he hadde of his pꝛyde, ran to hym ſodaynely wyth his ſwearde, and wounded hym to death, and foꝛthwith ſtrake of hys hedde, and arerid it vppon a ſpeares pointe, and therwith cryed kinge Rycharde, kyng Rycharde.

When the rebelles behelde theyꝛ capytaynes hedde, anonne they fledde as ſheepe.

How

Howbeit, many were taken, and many were ſlaine, and the remenaunte chaſed, that the cites and ſuburbes of theſame, was cleane voided of them that night, which was Mondaie, and the fiftene daie of June.

When the Kyng had beholden the greate mãhode of the Maior, and aſſiſtence of his brethren the Aldermẽ, anon in reward of that deede, he dubbed theſaid William Walworthe, Nicholas Bremble, Jhon Philpot, Nicholas Twiforde, Robert Laundre, and Robert Gaiton, Aldermẽ, knightes.

The hurlyng tyme.

And in this ſeaſon alſo called the hurlyng tyme, the commons of Norfolke and Suffolke, came vnto the Abbeie of Burie, & there ſlue one of the Kynges Juſtices, called Jhon Candiſhe, and the Prioure of the place, with other, and after ſpoiled and bare awaie moche thyng out of the ſaid place. But after this, as well the one as the other of theſe rebelles, wer taken in diuers and ſondrie places, and put in execution by.x.and.xii by.xv.and.xx, ſo that one of them accuſed the other, to the deſtruction of a greate nomber of theim.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxxi. Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxxii.

Jhon Northampton. { Jhon Rote. Jhon Hinde. } Anno.v.

IN this Maiors yere and moneth of April, landed in Kent, dame Anne the doughter of Charles the fowerth late Emperour of Almaine lately deade, and ſiſter vnto Wenſlaus at that daie Emperour, the which of the Maior and Citezeins of London, was honorably met vpon black heath, and conueighed with greate triumph vnto Weſtminſter, the eight daie of the moneth of Maie, and ſhortly after there ſolemply maried vnto kyng Richard.

An yearth quake.

And aboute theſame ſeaſon, or after ſome writers, in the latter ende of June, was an yearthquake in Englande, that the like thereof was neuer ſeen in Englande, before that daie nor ſen.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxxii. Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxxiii.

Jhon Northampton. { Adam Bame. Jhon Sely. } Anno.vi.

IN this yere maiſter Henrie Spencer Biſhop of Norwich, with a great power of ſpirituall men and other, was croyſed by the cõmaundement of Pope Clemente the ſeueth, enduryng the ciſme before touched in the laſt chapiter of Charles the ſixth, then Kyng of Fraunce. This ſaied Pope gaue auctoritie to the ſaied Biſhop, to make warre vppon the Kyng of Spain, as ſome writers haue, for ſo moche as he contrary the ſaied

Popes commaundemente, withheld certain poſſeſſions belonging of ryght vnto the duke of Lancaſtre, ſyr John of Gaunt, and ſpecially vnto Dame Conſtaunce his wife. In perfourmaunce of which acte, the ſayd byſhop entringe the countrey of Flaunders, fand ther the Flemminges with diuers miſcreantes, ſuch as the forſaid king of the contrey of Spayne had ther ſent, making reſiſtēce againſt him. Wherfore, he made to theim ſharpe war, and wan vpon theim certayne townes, as Graueling, Burbugch, and Dunkyrk, & wan great and riche pillage, ſo that he and his ſouldiers, ſtuffed & freight with it (as teſtifieth Policronicō) xli. ſhippes. But ſone after the Fleminges aſſembled with ſuche a ſtrength, that aboute Dunkyrke thei gaue vnto him ſuche aſſaute, that he was conſtrayned to geue backe. And for the ſayde ſhyppes and goodes ſhould not come vnto the poſſeſſion of his ennemies, he ſet them on fire within the hauen, and ſo was waſted both ſhyppes, and goodes. And albeit that after this miſhap he recouered his ſtrēgth, and layd ſiege vnto the towne of Ipre, and wrought the Flemminges muche care and trouble, ſhortly after, ſuche ſickneſſes fell amonge his people, as the flix and other, that his ſouldiours died of them in great nūber, for the whiche he was compelled to leaue his iourney and to retourne into England. In this yeare alſo, was a battel or feates of armes done in the kinges palayes of Weſtminſter, atwene one called Garcon Appellaunt, and ſyr John Anſlye knight defendaunt, of which fight at length the knight was victour and cauſed his enemy to yeld vnto him. For the which, the ſayd Garcon was from that place drawen vnto Tiburne, and ther hāged for his falſe accuſation and ſurmyſe.

A batta
of arme

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxiii. Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxiiii.

The. vii. yeare.

Grocer.
Nycholas Brembre. { Symond Winchecombe. John More. } Anno. vii.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxiiii. Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxv.

Nycholas Brembre. { Nicholas Exton. John Frenche. } Anno. viii.

The. viii. yeare.

THis yere king Richard holding his Chriſtmas at Eltham, thither cam vnto him the kynge of Ermony, which was chaſed oute of his lande by the Infideles and Turkes, and required ayde of the kynge to be reſtored vnto his dominion. The kinge feſted and comforted him accordinge to his honoure, and after counſayle taken with his lordes concerninge that matter, he gaue vnto hym greate ſummes of money and other riche gyftes. with the whiche (after he hadde taried in Englande vppon

ii. monethes.) he departed wyth glad countenaunce.

And ſone after Eaſter the king with a great army yode towarde Scotlande. But whan he drewe nere vnto the borders, ſuche meanes were ſought by the Scottes, that a peace was concluded atwene both realmes for a certain tyme. After whiche concluſyon ſo taken, the kynge retourned vnto Yorcke, and there reſted him a ſeaſon, in which tyme varyaunce fel betwene John Hollande brother to the Earle of Kent, and the Earles ſonne of Stafforde, by reaſon of the whiche varyaunce, in concluſyon the ſayde ſonne of the Earle was ſlayne of the hande of the ſame ſyr John Holande, for the whyche dede the kynge was greuouſly amoued, and departed ſhortly after with his company towarde London.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxv. Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxvi.
Grocer
Nycholas Brembre. { John Oran / John Chyrchman } Anno.ix.

IN this year king Rycharde aſſembled at Weſtminſter his high court of Parlyamente. Durynge the whiche emonge other many actes in the ſame counſayle concluded, he created two dukes, a Marques, and .v. Earles. Of the which firſt ſyr Edmund of Langley the kinges vncle and Erle of Cambridg was created duke of Yorke, ſyr Thomas of woodſtoke hys other vncle Earle of Buckingham was create duke of Gloceter, ſyr Lyonell Vere that was Earle of Oxenforde, was made Marques of Deuelin, ſir Henry Bolyngbroke ſonne and heyr of John of Gaunt duke of Lancaſter was made erle of Darby, ſyr Edward ſonne and heyre vnto ẏ duke of Yorke was made Earle of Rutland, ſyr John Holand brother to the Earle of Kente was made Earle of Huntingdone, ſir Thomas Monbraye was made Earle of Notyngham and Marchall of Englande, and ſyr Mychaell de la Poole was made erle of Suffolke, and chauncellour of England. And by authorytye of the ſame parlyament, ſyr Roger Mortymer Earle of Marche, and ſonne and heyre vnto ſir Edmunde Mortymer and of dame Phylyppe eldeſt daughter and heyre vnto ſyr Lyonel the ſecond ſonne of Edward the third was ſoone after proclaimed heire paraunte vnto the crowne of Englande. The whiche ſir Roger ſhortly after ſayled into Ireland, ther to pacyfye his Lordſhyp of Wulſter, whych he was lord of by hys foreſayde mother. But whyle he was ther occupied about the ſame the wylde Iryſhe came vpon hym in nomber, and ſlewe him and much of hys company. Thys ſyr Roger hadde Iſſue, Edmunde, and Roger, Anne, Alys, and Elianoure that was made Nunne. The two foreſayde ſonnes dyed wythoute yſſue, and Anne eldeſt daughter was maryed to Rycharde Earle of Cambridge, whiche Richarde was ſoonne vnto ſir Edmunde of Langly before named. The which Richard had iſſue by ẏ ſaid Anne, Iſabell Ladie Boucher, Richard that was after Duke of Yorke, & father to Kyng Edwarde the. iiij. whiche ſaied Richarde Erele of Cambridge, was put to death by Henry the fiueth, as after ſhal appere.

In this yere alſo Sir Henrie Bolinbrooke Erle of Darbie, maried ẏ counteſſe daughter of Hartforde, by whom he was Lorde of that Countrie. And by her he had iſſue Henry, that after hym was king, Blaunche ducheſſe of Barre and Philip that was wedded to the kyng of Denmark. Alſo Thomas duke of Clarence, John duke of Bedforde, and Humfreye duke of Glocester.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxxvi. Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxxvii.
Goldeſmith.
Nicholas Exton { Wyllyam Stondon / Wylliam More. } Anno.x.

The.x. yeare.

And in this.x. year the earle of Arundell was ſent into the duchy of Guian, for to ſtrength ſuche ſouldiers as the king at that time had in thoſe parties, or after ſome wryters, to ſcoure the ſea of rouers and ennemies. The whiche earle in keping his courſe or paſſage, encountred a myghty flote of Flemminges, laden with Rochell wyne, and ſet vpon them and diſtreſſed thē and their ſhips, and ſo brought theim vnto diuers portes of Englande: By reaſon wherof the ſayde wine was ſo plenteous in Englande, that a tunne thereof was ſold for a marke and.xx.s. the choiſe. And amonge other, in that flote was taken the Admirall of Flaunders whiche remayned here long after as priſoner.

Anno dñi,M.ccc.lxxxvii. Anno dñi.M.ccc.lxxxviii.
Nycholas Exton. { Wylliam Venour. / Hughe Foſtalfe. } Anno.xi.

The.xi. yeare.

This.xi. yere of king Rycharde, ſyr Thomas of Wodſtocke duke of Gloceſter, the earle of Arundell, with the earles of Warwyk, of Darby, and of Notingham, cōſidering how the king and his lād was miſled by a few perſōs about the king, entendinge reformation of the ſame, aſſembled thē to haue a counſayle at Radecoke bridge, and after arrered greate people, and ſo with a ſtronge powre came to London, and there cauſed the king to call a parliament. Wherof hearinge maiſter Alexander Neuyle than archebyſhop of york, ſyr Lyonel Vere Marques of Deuelyn, and ſir Michael de la Poole, chauncellour & Earle of Suffolke fearing puniſhment, fled the land, and ſo dyed in ſtraunge countreis. Than the king by counſaile of the other aboue named loꝛdes, during the parliament, cauſed to be takē ſir Robert Triuilian cheif Juſtice of Englande, ſyꝛ Nicholas Bꝛembꝛe late mayꝛe of the citie of London, ſir John Saliſbury knighte of houſhold, ſyꝛ John Beuchampe ſteward alſo of the kinges houſe, ſyꝛ Symonde Burly knighte, ſyꝛ James Bernes and ſyꝛ Roberte Belknappe knightes, and a ſergeaunt of armes called John Uſke, the whiche by aucthoꝛitie of the ſayd parliament were conuicte of treaſon, and foꝛ the ſame put to execution at Tyboꝛne, and at the towꝛe hill. And John Holt, John Locton, Richarde Gꝛay, Wylliam Burgth, and Robert Fulthoꝛpe iuſtice, with the other foꝛeſayde loꝛdes, whiche as befoꝛe is ſayde voyded the land, were by authoꝛitie of the ſayde courte of parliament baniſhed and exiled the land foꝛ euer.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxviii Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxix.

Goldſmith.
Syꝛ Nicholas Twiffoꝛd { Thomas Auſtyne. / Adam Cathyl } Anno.xii.

.xii.
re.

And in the .xii. yere and moneth of Nouēber, yet duringe the parliamente, was executed in Smythfeilde of London a marciall Juſtes & tournement, where as all ſuch perſons as came in vpon the kinges parti theyꝛ armour and apparayle was garniſhed with white hartes and crownes of golde aboute their neckes.

tes and
rnemēt

And of that ſoꝛte were .xxiiii. with .xxiiii. ladyes alſo apparaled as aboue is ſayd, lad with .xxiiii. cheynes of golde, the hoꝛſes of them, and ſo conueyed theim thorough the citie vnto Smythfeilde from the towꝛe of London. Wher the king, the quene, and manye other great eſtates beyng pꝛeſente (after pꝛoclamations by the Harauldes made) many goodlye and marciall actes of warre were put in vꝛe, to the greate recreation and comfoꝛte of the kinge and the quene, and all other beholders of the ſame. To this diſpoꝛte came many ſtraungers: amonge whiche the earle of S. Poule, the Loꝛde Oſtteuaunt ſonne and heyꝛe vnto the duke of Hollande, and a yong ſonne of the earle of Oſtrich, were greatelye commended. And whan this Juſtes hadde continued by ſondꝛy times by the ſpace of .xxiiii dayes, to the greate comfoꝛte and recreation of manye younge and luſtye bachelers, deſyꝛous to win worſhyppe, and to the kynges great honoure, that by all the ſeaſon kepte open houſholde foꝛ all honeſt commers, it was fynyſhed, and the ſtraungers retourned to theyꝛ countreys with many ryche gyftes.

Anno

The condition of thys oblig[illegible]

[illegible]

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxix. Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxx.
Grocer.
Wyllyam Uenour. John walcot. Anno.xiii.
John Loueney.

The.xiii. yeare.

AND in the.xiii. yere of kynge Rychard an eſquyre of the prouince of Nauerne by Fraunce, accuſed an Engliſhe eſquyer called John welſhe of certayne poyntes of treaſon. For the triall whereof a daye of fyght was betwene theim taken to be foughten in the kinges palayes at Weſtminſter, where eyther of thẽ kept his day, & fought there a ſtronge fight. But in the ende John Welſhe was victoure, and conſtrayned that other to yelde him: where after he was diſpoyled of his armour, and drawen to Tiburne, and there hanged for his vntruth.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.xc. Anno dñi. M.ccc.xci.
John Fraunces
Adam Bamme. Anno.xiiii.
Thomas Vyuente.

The.xiiii. yeare.

IN this.xiiii. yeare of kinge Rychard John of Gaunte, duke of Lancaſter with a goodly companye of men of armes, ſayled into Spain, to claime there ſuche landes as he there ſhould haue in the righte of dame Conſtaunce his wife, whiche was the doughter of Peter ryghtfull kyng of Spayne, as in the.xl. yere of kynge Edwarde the thyrde is more playnly declared. Whan the ſayde duke was vpon that other ſide of the ſea, there cam vnto him the kinge of Portingale with a ſtrong army, and ſo entred the territory of Spaine. But whether it were of the Englyſhmen, or longe of the Portingales, muche harme was done to the Spanyardes, in robbing and pilling the countrey, whiche was cauſe of grudge betwene the kynge of Portingale, and the duke, and cauſed manye Spanyardes whiche oughte to them good wyll, to withdraw and departe from them. In reformation of whiche euell, certayne perſons aſwel Engliſh as Portingales that were found gyltie of ſuch robberye, were put to death: by meane whereof the other feared ſo, that where by that meane the kynge and the Duke were before put to greate afterdeale, by reaſon of reformation of that euell, they gatte dayelye vppon theyr enmemies, ſo that in proceſſe of tyme folowynge, the Kynge of Spayne was dryuen of neceſſitie to treate with the Duke of a peace and concorde. Of the whiche peace as witneſſeth Policronicon in his laſt boke and ſeuenth chapter, the condition was, that fyrſte for fynall concorde, the Kinge of Spaine ſhould marye the dukes eldeſt doughter named Conſtaunce and that donne he ſhulde geue vnto the duke in recompenſacyon of coſtes, ſo manye wedges of golde as ſhuld charge or lade. viii. charrettes and ouer that yearely durynge the lyues of the ſayd duke and his wyfe, he ſhulde at his proper coſt and charge delyuer to the dukes aſſygnes. x. thouſād marke of golde wythin the towne of Bayon.

And after this peace was ſtablyſhed, and ſuretyes taken for the perfourmaunce of the ſame, the duke departed wyth the kyng of Portyngale: To whom ſhortly after he maryed his ſecond daughter named dame Anne.

In this yere alſo for cruel war which the Turckes made againſt the Januayes or men of Jeane, they requyred ayde of the kynges of Englande and Fraunce.

For the whyhce cauſe oute of Englande was ſente, a noble warriour called erle of Alhy, with two thouſand archers, and out of Fraunce the duke of Burbon and erle of Ewe, with. xv. C. ſpeares. The whyche kepte their iourney tyll they came vnto the cytie in Barbary named Thunys, ſōtime belongyng to the ſayde Januais. Wher yͤ ſaid Engliſh and French men bare them ſo manfully wyth the ayde of the Januayes, that in proceſſe of tyme thei wan the ſaid cytye from the Turkes, and put the Januayes agayne in poſſeſſyon therof, and toke of them many priſoners, the which were exchāged for chryſtē pryſoners before taken, and ouer that forſed the ſaide Sarazyns to yelde vnto the Januayes. x. M. dukates of golde, for confyrmacyon of a peace for a certayne time. But the French cronycle ſayeth, that for ſo muche, as the duke of Burbon had vnderſtādyng that the duke of Lancaſter made warre vpon kynge John of Spaine, he therfore left this iourney and ayded him again the ſaid duke of Lancaſter to hys lytle honoure.

But how ſo euer it was, many of the Englyſhmen were loſte in thoſe countreys by reaſon of the flixe and other ſikeneſſes. Alſo Antoninus ſayth that the Sarazins at this iournay were not diſpoſſeſed of the cytie of Thunis, but for a truce to be had for two yeares, they graunted vnto the Chryſten men a certayne ſumme of monye, and reſtytucyon of manye Chryſten pryſoners.

Anno dn̄i. M.ccc.xci.
Draper
John He ende

Jhon Cadworth
Henry Vamere

Anno. xv.
Anno dn̄i. M.ccc.xcii.

IN thys. xv. yeare of kynge Rycharde, he kepynge hys Chryſtmas at his manyoure of Woodſtoke, the Earle of Penbrooke beynge yong of age was deſyrouſe to learne to iuſte, and requyred a knyghte named ſyr John ſaynt Johan, to ren wyth hym certayne courſes.

At whoſe requeſt the ſayde knyght ran wyth hym in Woodſtocke

ſtocke parke certaine courſes, In the whiche, were it with ſtroke, or other miſhap, theſaied Erle receiued there his deathes wonde, and died ſhortly after. In this yere alſo and moneth of June, a Bakers man bearing a baſketfull of horſe breade, to ſerue his maſters cuſtomers in Fleteſtrete, when he came fore again the biſhop of Saliſburies place, ſtandyng in Saliſbury Aley, a ſeruaunte of the biſhoppes ſtart vnto the baſket, and toke out one of the loues. And for the baker would againe haue recouered his horſe lofe, the biſhopes ſeruaunte with his Dagger, brake the Bakers head. Then came the inhabitauntes of the ſtreete, and would haue broughte the yoman vnto ward, for breakyng of the kynges peace. But he was reſcowed by his felowes, and ſo had vnto the biſhops palais, whiche that daie ſtode treaſourer of Englande. For this reſcowes the people beyng in a furie, in great multitude gathered about the palaies, and would haue entred perforce to haue fette out the yomā. Againſt whom the biſhops ſeruauntes made reſiſtēce ſo that the rumoure grewe more and moare. And the people of the citee, as well ſoche as were of euil diſpoſition as other, encreaſed into a greate nomber. Fame of this doyng then ſprang to the Maior, whiche in all haſt with diuers Aldermen and the ſheriffes, ſped thē thether to ſee the peace kepte, and did that he could, to withdrawe the people. But after the Maior and the officers of the citee were common thither, the commōs out of all parties of the Citee drewe thither, in moche more multitude then thei had before: So that the moare thei were in nomber, the worſe thei wer to rule. In ſo moch that thei would not bee ſatiſfied, except thei might haue the yoman deliuered, whoſe name was Walter Romayne. And for to bring about their folye, thei made manye aſſautes at the gates of theſaid palais, the biſhop himſelf being then at Windſore. Laſtlye after manye ſhowtes & liftes at the gate made by diſcretion of the mayre & aldermen with other diſcrete comoners of yͤ citie, the peple was miniſhed and ſent againe euery man to his dwelling, and all was ſet in quiet and reſt. When word of this came vnto yͤ biſhop, in much worſe maner then the thing was in dede, he geuing light credence without examination made in the matter, aſſociat vnto him maiſter Arundell then archebiſhop of Yorke, & chaūceler of England, and ſo greuouſly enfourmed the king, that he toke againſte the citie righte greuouſe diſpleaſure, ſo that in all haſt, the Maire was ſent for, to the king. At whoſe comminge was layed vnto his charge gret and heinous matters, that he none other wiſe ruled the citie, but ſuffered the citizens to make ſuch aſſautes vpon yͤ kinges heade officers, to the kinges great diſhonour, and ieopardye of ſuch great treaſure as he then had of the kinges in his cuſtodye & keping: And after brought vnto the king his preſence, of whō (notwithſtanding his reaſonable excuſe before made) he was of yͤ king right ſore blamed and greuouſly ſaid vnto. Then was the mayre and the ſheriffes diſcharged of the rule of the citie, and the liberties of the

ſame

The l
ties of
don ſe

ſame ſeaſed into the kinges hãdes and a knight of the court called ſir Edward Dalingrige, a good mã and fauourable to the Citizens, was made gouernour of the citie the.xxi.day of June, and continued in that office to the fyrſt day of July next enſuinge. At which day being in the beginning of the kinges.xvi.yere of his reigne, he was diſcharged, and ſir Baldewin Radyngton knight, put in his roome & ſo continued til the feaſt of Symon and Jude folowing. And for the more diſpleaſure of the citizẽs al plees and ſutes kept beforetime in weſtminſter hall, were then remoued and holden at york, to the greate noyaunce of all the lande, whiche ſo continued tyll Chriſtmas. And in this mayres year alſo, was a great tranſlation of Biſhops. This diſpleaſure thus hanging toward the citie, the citizens made continuall labour vnto the kinges grace, by meanes of the quene and of doctour Graueſende then biſhoppe of London, whiche ought their eſpecial fauours vnto the citie, by whoſe meanes the citizens were reſtored vnto their liberties, and had licence to chooſe of them ſelfe a mayre and two ſhyrifes, ſo that vpon ſaint Mathews day folowing, they choſe for ſhirifes Gylbert Manifold, or Manfelde, and Thomas Newyngton, and vpon saynt Edwardes daye, kyng and confeſſour, they choſe for their mayre Wylliam Stondon Grocer, which by the lieutenaunt of the towre were at that time admitted and ſworne. But yet the kinges diſpleaſure was not reconciled, nor the citizens admitted vnto his grace and fauour.

e term
mouedto
orke.

The liberties reſtored agayn.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.xcii.
Grocer.
William Stondon.

Gylbert Manfeilde.
Thomas Newington.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.xciii.
Anno.xvi.

e. xvi.
re.

IN this Mayres yeare & .xvi.yeare of king Richard, this newe Maire with the worthyeſt men of the citie made aſſiduate and daily meanes vnto the kinges grace, for to haue his moſt bounteouſe pardon, and eſpecial fauour vnto the citie. The which at length by meanes of ſuch frendes as they purchaſed about the king, and ſpecially by laboure of the good quene Anne, and the forenamed byſhoppe of London, thei were put in good comfort, vpon their demeanour and ſubmiſſion at the kinges coming to London. Vpon whiche comfort the citizens made royall and coſtious purueyaunce to receiue the kynge in their beſt maner, and hauynge moniſhion that the kynge entended to come to his palays of weſtminſter, appareled them in one liuery, and to the numbre of.iiii.C. horſmen wel beſene, met with him vpon the heth, on this half his manour of ſhene. Where in moſt lowly wyſe accordynge to their dueties, they ſubmitted theim vnto his grace, beſechinge him of his ſpeciall grace, and pardon in all ſuch thinges as they before times had offended againſt his highnes. And to the entent that hys grace might ſe the confirmite of all his other ſubiectes, the recorder made inſtaunce to him, that he would of his great boūt take ſo great peine vppon hym, as to ryde thorough his chaumber of London.

Howe the citezens of Londō enterteined kinge Rychard, comminge thorow the citie.

The which requeſt he graciouſly accepted, and ſo helde on his iournay til he came at London brydg, wher he was preſented wyth .ii. fayre ſtedes trapped in ryche cloth of gold parted of redde and white. The whiche preſent he thankefull receyued, and after helde on hys way tyll he came at the ſtandarde in chepe, the cytezens of the cytie ſtandyng vppon eyther ſide of the ſtretes in their lyueryes, and cryeng kyng Rychard king Rychard ⁊ at their backes, the windowes ⁊ and wales hanged wyth tapettes and clothes of araſſe in moſt goodly ⁊ ſhewing wyſe. And at the ſaid ſtandarde in chepe, was ordeyned a ſumptuouſe ſtage, in the whiche were ſette dyuers perſonages in rych apparell. Among the whiche an Aungell was ordeyned, whych ſet a ryche crowne of golde garniſhed wyth ſtone and perle vpon the kynges head as he paſſed by. And that done he rode to Poules and ther offered, and ſo rode vnto weſtminſter, wher the mayre and his company taking their leue, returned vnto London.

A preſente geuen to Kyng Rychard.

Upon the morowe whych was the fyftene daye of the moneth of the ſayde mayre and his brethren yode vnto Weſtminſter, and preſēted there the kyng with two baſyns gylt, and in them two thouſande nobles of golde, beſechynge him in moſt hūble wyſe to be good and graciouſe lord vnto the citie. The whych he accepted ryght fauourablye, and gaue vnto them many comfortable woordes.

The lib
ties of
don ne
confirm

And the thyde daye folowynge, the receiued a new confyrmacion of all theyr olde Fraunchyſes and liberties. wherfore by counſail of ther frendes, thei ordeined an aulter table of ſyluer and ouer gylte, and therin ymagery grauen and enameled moſte curiouſlye of the ſtory of ſaynt Edward, the whych was valued at a .M. marke, and preſēted that alſo, and gaue it vnto the kynge, the whiche he ſhortely after offered to the ſhrine of ſait Edward, within the abbay. And for the greate zele ⁊ loue whyche the foreſayde byſhop of London ought vnto the cytie, and that by his meanes their lybertyes were agayne reſtored, they therfore of their owne goodly diſpoſycion, after hys deceaſe accuſtomed them, and yet at this daye donne, to go yerely vpon the feaſtfull dayes folowyng, that is to ſaye, fyrſte the morowe after Symon and Jude which daye the mayre taketh his charge at Weſtminſter, to Poules and there to ſaye in the weſte ende of the churche wher he lyeth grauen (De profundis) for his ſoule and all chriſten, and in lyke maner vpon Alhalowen daye, Chriſtmaſſe daye, and .ii. the nexte dayes folowing, Newyeres day, Twelfday, and Cādelmas day, wyth alſo the morowe after Myghelmaſſe day, vpon the whiche the ſhryfes yerely taken their charge at Weſtminſter. All which .ix. dayes not alonely the mayre and his brethren vſe thys progeſſe ⁊ kepe his obſequy, but alſo all the craftes of the cytie

The ca
yͤ the m
and cite
goo vn
Pouls
ten day
in the y

in their lyueryes vſe the ſame yerely.

And when the kinge had withdrawen as aboue is ſaid, his diſpleaſure from the cytie, then at Hyllarye terme folowyng the feaſt of Chriſtmaſſe, al the kinges courts and plees of the crowne with other retourned from Yorke to Weſtminſter.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.xciii. Anno dñi. M.ccc.xciiii.

Grocer.
John Hadley. { Drewe Barintyne.
Richarde Whytyngton. } Anno.xvii.

he.xvii.
are.

In this mayres begynnynge and.xvii. yere of kinge Richarde that is to meane the moneth of Nouembre, certaine gentilmen of Scotlande entendyng to wyn honoure, chalenged certaine pointes of armes. As fyrſt the lord Morlf chalenged the erle of Notingham and marſhal of England, ſir Wylliam Darel knight, and Cokborn eſquyer chalenged, ſyr Nycholas Hawberke knight. which feates of armes were done in ſmithfelde of London. But Marſe was ſo frendly vnto the Englyſhemen, that the honoure of that iourney went with them, in ſo muche that ỹ erle marſhal ouerthrew his appellaunte, ⁊ ſo bruſed him, that in his returne towarde Scotlande he died at Yorke. And ſir William Darel refuſed his appellaunt, ere they had ronne their full courſes. And the third of them, that is to wyt Cokborne, was throwen at the ſeconde copynge to grounde horſe and man.

And vpon the.vii. daye of Juny folowynge, dyed that gracyouſe woman quene Anne, ⁊ lyeth now buried at weſtminſter by her lord kynge Rychard, vpon ỹ ſouthſyde of ſaynte Edwardes ſhryne, to whoſe ſoule and all chryſten our lorde be mercifull. And this yere in the moneth of September (as witneſſeth the Frenche Cronicle) by menes of the erle of Derby and other, whyche then were in Fraunce for the kyng of Englandes partie, and the duke of Burbone and the erle of Ewe vppon the Frenche partie with other, a truce was cõcluded at S Omers for.iiii. yeares. But notwithſtandynge that peace, the Frenchmen and Englyſhmen ranne together ſundrye tyme, when the one eſpyed to haue any auauntage vpon that other.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.xciiii. Anno dñi. M.ccc.xcv.

Mercer.
John Frenche. { Wylliam Brampton
Thomas Knolles. } Anno.xviii.

The.xviii. yeare.

THis.xviii.yeare of king Richarde, he ſhortli after Chriſtmas with a ſtrong armyė ſayled into Jreland. The whiche iorny was more to his charge then honour. For the maner therof, ſince it ſounded nothing to the honour of the prince, mine auctor therof liſt not in his boke to make any longe proceſſe of the matter.

John Wic lyffe.

In this yere alſo about this time began yͤ hereſy of John Wyckliffe in England, the which was greatly auaunced by mean of the ſciſme in the churche hanginge at thoſe dayes betwene twoo Popes, ſytting at ones, the whiche began as before is ſhewed in the foure and twenty yeare of Charles the ſyxte then king of Fraunce, Urban the ſixte, and Clemente the ſixte, and continued vnder Boniface the. ix. and Benet the.xiii. Of whiche erronious opinions of the ſaid hereſy, who ſo is deſyrous to ſe the contentes of them, lette them ſearche cronica cronicarum, and there he ſhall ſee them breifly ſet out.

In this year alſo was wonderfull tempeſt of winde, by the ſpace of July, Auguſt, & ſpecially September, by violence wherof in ſondry places of this realme, greate and wonderfull hurte was done, both of Churches and houſes. This yeare died Conſtance, ſecond wife to John duke of Lancaſter, and lyeth buried at Leyceter.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.xcv.
Wintener.
Wyllyam More.
{ Roger Ellys.
Wyllyam Sherigham. }
Anno.xix.
Anno dñi. M.ccc.xcvi.

The.xix. yeare.

ANd in the beginninge of this Mayres yeare, and nineteenth yeare of kynge Rychard, &. xviii daye of Nouembre (as affyrmeth the Frenche Cronicle) kynge Rycharde beyng then at Calys, ſpouſed or tooke to wife within the churche of Saint Nicholas, Jſabell the doughter of Charles the vi. then king of Fraunce. Whiche lady Jſabel as witneſſeth the ſaid French ſtory, at the day of hir mariage was within. viii. yeares of age. And as it is regiſtred in one of the bokes of the Guylde hall of London, the Frenche king in propre perſonne, came downe with a goodlye companye of Lordes and knightes, vnto a towne called Arde, whiche ſtandeth vppon the vtter border of Pycardye, where, within his owne domynyon a ryche and ſumptuouſe pauylyon was pyghte. And in lyke maner, a lyttle beyonde Guynes, within the Engliſhe pale, was another lyke paulyon pyghte for kynge Rychard, ſo that betwene the two ſaied pauilions, was a diſtaunce of thre ſcore and ten pace. And in the midway atwene both was ordeyned the thirde pauylyon, at the whiche both kynges comminge from eyther of theyr tentes ſondry tymes there mette, and hadde communication ether with other, the wayes or diſtaunce atwene, ſet with certaine perſons appointed ſtãding in arme two and two, the one ſide beynge ſet with Engliſhmen, and that other with Frēche. And a certain diſtaunce from eyther of the two firſt ſayd pauilions, ſtode bothe hoſtes of bothe princes, or ſuche companies as before eyther of theim was appoynted to brynge. Here if I ſhoulde bryng in the dyuers metynges of the ſaid princes, and the curyous ſeruices that eyther cauſed other to be fed and ſerued within either of their tentes, or of their dalyaunce or paſtymes continuing the ſeaſon of their metinges, and the diuerſitie of the manyfolde ſpices and wines whiche there was miniſtred at the ſayd ſeaſon, with all the ryche apparell of the ſayd pauilions and copbordes garniſſhed with plate & rich iewels, it wolde aſke a longe tracte of tyme. But who that is deſirous to knowe or here of the cyrcumſtaunce of al the premyſſes, let him redde the work of maiſter John Froyſarde made in Frenche, and there he ſhall ſe euery thinge touched in an ordre. And here I wyll ſhortlye touche the giftes that were geuen of eyther of the princes & of ther lordes. And fyrſt kinge Rychard gaue vnto the Frenche king an hanap or baſin of gold with an ewer to the ſame. Then againewarde the French kinge gaue vnto hym .iii. ſtandynge cuppes of gold, with couers garniſſhed wyth pearle and ſtone, and a ſhippe of golde ſet vpon a bere richely garnyſhed with pearle and ſtone. Than at their ſeconde metynge kinge Rycharde gaue vnto hym an ouche ſet with ſo fyne ſtones, that it was valued at .v. C. marke ſterlynge. Where agayn the French kyng gaue vnto hym .ii. flaggons of golde, a tablet of gold, and therin an ymage of ſaint Michael richly garniſhed Alſo a tablet of golde with a cruſifixe therin well & rychly dight. Alſo a tablet of golde with an ymage of the Trynitie, rychly ſet with perle & ſtone. Alſo a tablet of golde with an ymage of ſaynte George, in likewiſe ſet with perle and ſtone. whiche al were valued at the ſumme of. xv. C. marke. Then kinge Richarde ſeynge the bounte of the Frenche king, gaue to him a bauderyke or coloure of golde ſet wyth great diamantes, rubyes, and baleſſes, beyng valued at. v. M. marke, the whiche for the preciosyte therof, that it was of ſuche an excellency and fyneſſe of ſtuffe, the French king therfore ware it about his necke as often as the king and he met together. Then the Frenche kinge gaue vnto him an ouche, a ſpyce plate of golde of great weyght, and valued at. ii. M. marke. Many were the riche giftes that were receyued of lordes and ladyes of bothe princes. Amonge the whiche ſpecially are noted. iiii. gyftes, which king Rychard gaue vnto the duke of Orleaunce, for the which he receyued agayne of the duke trebell the value. For where his were valued at a. M. marke, the dukes were valued at three thouſande marke. Finally when the ſaid princes had thus eyther ſolaſed with other, and concluded all matiers concernynge the aboue ſayd mariage, the Frenche kinge delyuered vnto kynge Richarde dame Iſabell his doughter, ſayenge theſe wordes folowynge.

ts ge-
y both
ces, &
ng Ry
de and
ing of
ance.

How king
Richard receaued the
doughter
of the Frēche kinge.

Right dere beloued ſonne, I deliuer here to you the creture that I moſte loue in this worlde nexte my wife and my ſonne, beſechyng the father in heuen, that it maye be to his pleſure, and of the weale of you and your realme, and that the amyte atwene the .ii. realmes in auoyding of effuſion of chriſten mens blode, maye be kepte inuyolat for yͤ terme atwene vs concluded, which term was .xxx. winter as expreſſeth the Frenche Cronicle. After which wordes with manye thankes geuen vpon eyther parties, preparacion was made of departyng. And after kyng Richarde had conueyed the Frenche kinge towarde Arde, he toke his leaue & returned to his wife. The whiche was immediatlye with great honoure conueied vnto Caleis, and there after to the kinge ſpouſed, as before to you I haue ſhewed. After the whiche ſolempniſacion with al honour ended, the king with his yong wife toke ſhippinge, and ſo within ſhorte while landed at Douer, and from thence ſped him towarde London, wherof the cytezens beeynge warned, made out certaine horſmen well appoynted in one liuerie of coloure, with a coniſaunce brodered vpon their ſleues, wherby euerye felyſhyppe was knowen from other. The whiche with the Mayre and his brethern clothed in ſcarlet, mette the kinge and the quene vpon the Blackeheath, and after due ſalutacion and reuerente welcomes vnto them made by the mouth of the recorder, the ſaide citezenes conueied the kinge vpon his way till he came to Newington: where the kynge commaunded the Maire with his company to retourn to the citie, for he with his lordes and ladies was appointed that night to lie in Kenington. It was not longe after but that ſhe was from Kenington, broughte with great pompe vnto the Towre of London. At whiche ſeaſon was ſo exceadynge preſe at London bridge, that by reaſon thereof certayne perſonnes were thruſt to deth, amonge the whiche the prioure of Typtre a place in Eſſex was one. And vpon the morowe folowinge, ſhe was conueyed through the citie with all honour that mighte be deuiſed vnto Weſtminſter, and there crowned queene vpon the ſondaye beinge then the .viii. day of January. In the ſomer folowing the king by ſiniſtre counſell delyuered vp by appointement the towne of Breſt in Britaine to the duke, which was occaſion of diſpleaſure atwene the kinge and the duke of Glouceſter his vncle, as in the yere folowing ſhalbe more clerely ſhewed.

Anno dn̄i. M.ccc.xcvi.

Anno dn̄i. M.ccc.xcvii.

Goldeſmithe. Adam Bame.	Thomas Wylforde. Wyllyam Parker.	Anno .xx.

IN thys .xx. yeare of king Richard and moneth of February, the kinge holdyng a ſumptuous feaſt in Weſtmynſter halle, many of the ſoudyours whiche were newly comen from the towne of Breſt foreſaid, preſed into the hall, & kept a rome together. Whiche company whan the duke of Glouceſtre had beholden, and frained and knowē what men they were, and how the ſayd towne was gyuen vp, contrarye his knowlage, was therewyth in his mynd ſore diſcomforted. In ſo muche that when the kynge was entred his chaumbre, and few nere vnto hym, he ſayde vnto the kyng: Syr haue ye not ſene the felowes that ſatte in ſo greate number to daye in your hall at ſuche a table. And the kynge aunſwered yes, and aſked of the duke what compaignie it was.

The cauſe of ſtryfe betwene kig Rychard & the duke of Gloceter.

To whom the duke anſwered and ſaid, Syr theſe been the ſoudiours comen from Breſt, and as nowe haue nothīg to take to, nor know not how to ſhifte for their lyuing, and the rather for that as I am enfourmed, they haue been before tyme euill payed. Then ſayed the kynge, it is not my wyll but that they ſhoulde bee well payed. And if anye haue cauſe to complaine, lette theim ſhewe it vnto our treſourer, and thei ſhalbe reſonably aunſwered. In reſonyng of this mater farther, the duke ſayed vnto the kyng, Syr he ought to put your body to payne for to wyn a ſtrong holde or towne by feacte of warre, or ye toke vpon you to ſel or delyuer anye towne or ſtronge holde gotten with great difficulte, by manhod of your noble progenitours. To thys the kynge with chaunged countenaunce aunſwered and ſaide, Uncle howe ſaye ye thoſe wordes. Then the duke boldly recited the foreſayde woordes. Wherunto the king beynge more diſcontented, ſayde, wene ye that I bee a marchaunt or fole to ſell my lande, by ſaynt John Baptiſt nay. But trouth it is, that our coſyn the duke of Brytain hath rendred vnto vs all ſuche ſummes of money as our progenitours lente vnto him or his auncetours, vpō the ſayd towne of Breſt: For the which, reaſon and good conſience will that he haue his towne reſtored againe. By meane of whyche woordes thus vttred by the duke ſuche rancoure and malice kyndelid atwene the king and him, that it ceaſed not tyll the ſayde duke was put to death by murdre vulefully. Thē the duke apperceyuing the king his miſledyng by certain perſones about him, entendynge therof reformacion for the weale of the kynge and his realme, called vnto him the abbot of ſaint Albons, & the abbot & priour of weſtminminſter, and ſhewed to theim his ſecrete mynde. By whoſe counſelles he made aſſemble ſhortly after at Arūdell, to whiche aſſemble came at ẏ day appoincted, diuers lordes both ſpiritual and tēporall as him ſelf, the erle of Arundell & other. Alſo thither came ẏ erle of Notynghā then marſhal of Englāde, the erle of warwik, & of ſpiritual lordes, the archbiſhop of Cātterbury, the abbottes of ſaint Albones & of weſtmīſter with other.

The counſell of monkes. &c.

After whiche aſſēble thus made and eueriche of theym to other ſworne within the caſtel of Arundell, the eyght day of Auguſt thei toke there their counſaile, and condeſcended that dyuers lordes aboute the kinge, as the Duke of Lancaſter, the Duke of Yorke and other, ſhoulde bee put from ſuch aucthorie and rule of the land as they then bare, and other offycers ſuche as were thought preiudycycal vnto the weale of the lād, ſhoulde be diſcharged and punyſſhed for their demerites. When this with manye other thynges was emong theim concluded, eueriche of theim departed tyll the time of an nother metinge betwene theim appoincted. But the erle of Notingham contrarie his othe and promyſe fearinge the ſequele of the matter, rode ſhortlye after vnto the kinge, & diſcouered vnto him all the promiſſes. wherfore the king in all haſt called a ſecrete counſaile at London in the ſaid erle of Notingham his place, or after ſome at the place of the erl of Huntingdone.

Kinge Richarde in propre perſon areſted the duke of Glocester.

Wher it was concluded that the ſaid erle of Huntindon and other, ſhould by ſtrength fetche vnto the king the erles of Arundell and of Warwike. And in the meanewhile the kinge in proper perſon areſted hys vncle ſyr Thomas of woodſtoke at Plaſhy in Eſſex as ſaieth the Englyſhe cronicle. Al bee it an other wryter in latin ſayeth, that kinge Richarde in proper perſon rode vnto the maniour of Grenewyche in the night tyme, and ther toke him in his bed, and commādded him vnto the Towre of London, which ſhortly after was conneighed vnto Caleys and there piteouſly murdered. And ſoone after were the forſayde erles of Arundell and Warwike brought vnto the towre of London, with alſo ſir John Cobhā and ſir John Cheynie knightes. But the erle of Arūdell was taken to bayle and went at large vnder ſuertie, tyll the beginninge of the parliamente. In whiche ſeaſon diuers other were brought to ſondry priſones. Then the king ſente out his commiſſioners vnto the lordes of his realm for to come vnto his parliamente, which began after vpon the .xviii. daye of September, in the begynnyng of the .xxi. yeare of the king, and later ende of this maires yere Here it is to be noted, that Adam Bame mayre died in the begining of the moneth of June. For whom was after choſē and admitted the. viii. daye of the ſaide moneth for maire Richard whitington, to occupie the full of that yere, that is to meane till the feaſte of Symon and Jude. But vpō ſaynt Edwardes day folowyng when the newe mayre is accuſtomed to be choſen, Thē was he elect againe for that yere folowynge.

And ſo he ſtode in the offyce of mayraltye an hoole yere, and fiue monethes. Then to retourne to oure fyrſt mater, when the kinge had aſſembled his lordes, the whiche came with ſo ſtrong and mightie companies, that the citie ſuffiſed not to lodge the people, but were fayne to be lodged in ſmall vyllages neare vnto the ſame, within ſhorte tyme after the ſaide parliament was begon, the erles of Arundell and of Warwyke were broughte before the lordes of the parlyamente holden at Weſtminſter, and there fynallye

iudged

e earls
Arundel
& War-
e con-
mpned.

iudged as foloweth, the Earle of Arundell to be led on fote frome Weſtminſter, and place of his iudgement, thorow the hie ſtretes of the citie, vnto the towre hil, wher his head to be ſtriken of, and the Earle of Warwike was alſo iudged to death.

But for his great age, by mean of his freindes, his iudgemente was pardoned, and altered to perpetuall priſonne, where as the kinge woulde commaund him. Whiche after was had vnto the Iſle of man in Lancaſhyre, where he conſumed the reſidue of his old dayes.

And the Earle of Arundell, according to the ſentence vpon him geuen, vpon the morow folowing the feaſt of Saint Mathewe, being ſaturday, and the. xxii. day of September, was lad on fote vnto the towre hyll, beynge accompanied with great ſtrength of mē for ſo much as it was demed that he ſhould haue ben reſcued by the way: howe be it noue ſuche was attempted, but peaceably he was brought vnto the ſaid place of execution, and there pacientlye and mekely toke his death. Whoſe bodye after was by the freer Auguſtines borne vnto their place within the ward of Bradſtrete in London, and there in the north ſyde of the quier, ſolempnely buried, and after vpon his graue a ſumptuouſe toumbe of marble ſtone ſette and edified. And by aucthoritie of the ſayde parliamente, the archebyſhop of Caunterbury was exiled the realme. And vppon the mondaye folowinge, beynge the xxiiii. day of Septembre, ſir Iohn Lorde Cobham, and ſyr Iohn Cheyny knighte, were iudged to be drawen, hanged and quartered. But by inſtaunce and labour of their frendes, that iudgement was chaunged vnto perpetuall pryſon. And this done, the kynge ordeyned a royall feaſt, and helde open houſhold for all honeſt commers. For as affirmeth Peter Pictauience a writer of hyſtories this prince kynge Rycharde paſſed all other of his progenitours, in liberalitie and bountie. The whiche feaſt and alſo parliament yet holdinge, the kinge created fiue dukes, a marques, and fyue Earles. As fyrſte the earle of Derby ſyr Henrye of Bolingbrooke, ſonne and heire of Iohn of Gaunt duke of Lancaſtre, was created duke of Herforde. The .ii. whiche was Earle of Rutlande, was created duke of Amnerle. The thyrd, being Earle of kent, was created duke of Surrey. The fourth, beinge Earle of Notingham, was created duke of Norfolke. And the fyft was the erle of Huntingdon, the whiche then was created duke of Exeter. Alſo the earle of Somerſet was made a marques of Dorſet. And for the earles, firſt the lord of Weſtmerlande, named Dane Raby Neuil, was made erle of Weſtmerland, the lord Treaſorer ſyr Wylliam Scrope, was made erle of Wylſhyre, & ſir Moũtague was erle of Saliſburi. And when this buſines was finiſhed, the parlyament was remoued to Shrewiſbury, vnto Hillary term where it was finiſhed to manye mennes diſpleaſures, and dyſheriting of many true heyres.

The parlament remoued.

Anno dñi.M.ccc.xcvii. Anno dñi.M.ccc.xcviii.
Mercer.
Rychard whittington. Wyllyam Aſkeham. John woodcocke. Anno.xxi.

IN this. xxi. yeare of kynge Rycharde, the people of the land murmured, and grudged ſore agaynſt the kinge and his counſayle, for ſo muche as the goodes belongynge vnto the crown, were diſperbled and geuen to vnworthy perſonnes, by occaſion whereof dyuers charges and exactions were put vpon the people. Alſo for that the cheife rulers about yͤ prince, were of lowe birth and of ſmall reputation, and the men of honour were kept out of fauoure. Alſo for that the Duke of Gloceter was ſecretelye murdred without proceſſe of the lawe, and manye thinges els miſordered by the laſte parliamente, whereof the wyte and blame was layed vnto the kinge and other perſonnes after named, as well for wrongefull diſheritinge of ſundrie perſons at the ſaid parliament, ſuch as were meniall ſeruauntes of the foreſaid duke of Gloceter, and of the erles of Arundell and of Warwike, contrarye his owne proclamations made concerninge ſuche matters. Alſo that where dyuers patentes and grauntes paſſed the kyng his greate ſeale, as well for pardons and other maters, yet for the king his ſinguler aduantage, and ſuch fewe perſons as bare the rule aboute him, many of them were called agayne. Alſo where for ſheriffes and other officers of all ſhyres of England, were wonte to be named foure, by diſcrete perſons, as iudges and other, of the whiche the kinge ſhoulde aſſigne two for the yeare folowyng, he of his own will and pleaſure woulde refuſe them, and choſe ſuche two as him liked, the whiche he knewe well woulde leane more to his weale, then to the common weale of this lande, or of his ſubiects. Alſo that where before times the kinges of Englande vſed to ſende oute commiſſions vnto burgeſes of Cities and townes, to choſe of theyr free lybertie ſuch knightes of the ſhire as they thought mooſte wealfull for the common weale of the ſayde ſhyre and lande, nowe kinge Rychard would appoint the perſons and will them for to choſe ſuch as then he named, whereby his ſinguler cauſes were preferred, and the common cauſes put by. Alſo kynge Rycharde throughe euyll counſell, commaunded by his letters vnto the ſheriffes of al ſhires fewe excepted, that all perſons of honoure within their counties, as well ſpiritual as temporal, ſhould make certayne othes in generall wordes, and ouer that to wryte and ſeale certayne bondes for perfourmaunce of the ſaid othes, and alſo for blancke chartour, whiche many men of ſubſtaunce were conſtrayned to ſeale to theyr greate charges. And as Hardinge ſayth, he was very prodigall, ambicious and lecherous. For there reſorted to his courte at theyr pleaſures, aboue the nomber of ten thouſand perſons, that had theyr deſyres and commaundements. And that in his kitchin were thre hundreth ſeruitours, and in euerye office a great numbre. Moreouer, of ladies, chamberers, and lauenders, were aboue the noumbre of three hundred, and they all exceaded in gorgeous and coſtelye apparell, farre aboue theyr degrees. Yomen and gromes were clothed in ſilke, as ſaten and damaſk both doblets and gounes, with cloth of graine and ſcarlet ouer ſumptuouſe, and had theyr garmentes cut both in the court and townes, farre other wyſe then it hadde ben before his dayes, with brodery worke, ryche furres, and goldſmythes woorke, deuiſing euery day a new faſhion to the greate ruyne and decaye of the wealth of England. Alſo that king Rycharde did preferre ſuche byſhops to byſhoprykes, as would neyther teache nor preache, nor knewe any thinge of the ſcripture of God, but onely to call for theyr tythes and dueties, and to helpe to ſerue his luſtes and pleaſures, whiche in dede were not worthye the name of byſhops, but rather of noughtye packes diſguiſed in byſhoppes apparell. In this time reigned alſo plentye of the fylthye ſynne of lechery and fornication, with the abhominable ſynne of aduoutry, ſpecially in the kynge, but mooſte chiefly in the prelacye, whereby the whole realme was ſo infect, that it cryed for the wrath and vengeaunce of God. And as for taxinge and exactinge of the commons, it was a ſmall thinge with him, and therefore was he hated in manner of all his whole realme, ſo that the people continually murmured and grudged, for theſe iniuries and many mo, whiche at the tyme of his depoſynge were articuled agaynſte him in xxxviii. ſondry articles, with alſo the rumour that ranne vpon him, that he had letten to ferme the reuenues of the crowne, to Buſhey Bagot, and Grene, whiche cauſed aſwel the noble men of the realme to grudge agaynſte him, as other of the common people. Thus continuing this miſorder within the land, died ſir John of Gaunt duke of Lācaſter, at the biſhop of Elies place in Holborne, and from thēce was caried vnto ſayncte Poules and there vpon the North ſyde of the quire honourably buried. At whoſe enterrement all the cheife lordes of the realme were preſent. For whom after was founded by dame Blaunche his wife an honorable anniuerſarye, as before is ſhewed in the .xliiii. yeare of Edwarde the thyrde, whiche of right ought to be ſet in this place.

This yeare alſo about the feaſt of Saynt Bartholomew, fell diſcention and diſcorde betwene the duke of Herforde, and the duke of Norfolke. Wherefore the duke of Herforde, accuſed the other that he had taken foure thouſand markes of the kinges, of ſuche moneye as he ſhoulde therwith haue waged certaine ſouldiours at Calais whiche he lefte vndoen, and toke the ſame money to his owne vſe. But an other wryter ſayeth, that as the ſayd two dukes rode vpon a tyme frome the parliamente towarde theyr lodginges, the duke of Norfolke ſayd vnto that other: Syr, ſe you not how variable the kinge is in his wordes, and howe ſhamefully he putteth his lordes, and kyneſfolkes to death, and other exileth and holdeth in priſon wherfore full neceſſarye it is to take kepe, and not for to truſte mnche in his woordes. For without dout in tyme to come, he will, by ſuche like meanes bryng vs vnto lyke death and diſtruction. Of whiche woordes the ſayd duke of Herford accuſed that other vnto the kyng, wherfore either waged bataile with other before the king To whom daye of metynge was geuen to eyther vpon the eleuenth day of September, to fight with in lyſtes at Couentree, where all thing was ordeined for. At which place at that day aſſigned thither came the ſaid twoo dukes, and appered in the fielde before the kyng his preſence, redye to do their battayle. But the kyng anon forbed that fight, and forthwith exyled the duke of Herforde for ten yeres and the duke of Norfolk for euer, whiche ſentence was ſhortly after put in execution. Then the duke of Herforde ſailed into Britaine. And the duke of Norfolke paſſed dyuers countres, and laſtly came vnto the cytie of Venice, and ther endid his life. And ſone after this was maiſter Roger walden a chapeleyne of the kynges, made archbyſhop of Caũterbury, the which was a ſpeciall louer vnto the citie of London, and made greate laboure for theim vnto the king his grace, that greuouſly wyth theim was of new diſpleſed, for ſo much as he was of newe enfourmed of theim, that thei woulde counſaile with other ſheriffes to withſtand certain actes made in the laſt parliament, for the which the commynaltie of the citie was endited w other ſhyriffes. In redreſſe wherof by counſaile of the archbiſhop, and of maiſter Robert Braibroke then biſhop of Londõ, the citezens made a lamentable ſupplycacion vnto the kyng. Which by aide and fauoure of the ſayde two byſhops and other louers of the citie, the kynge his yre and indygnacyon by meane of that lowly ſupplycacion was ſome part appeaſed & withdrawen. But yet to contẽt a part of the king his mind, many blank chartours were deuiſed & brought into the citie, which, many of the moſt ſubſtanciall men of the ſame were faine to ſeale, to their paine and charge in concluſion, the whiche ſhortly after was vſed thorugh all countreys in Englande.

Anno. dñi, M.ccc.lxxxxviii.
Goldſmith.
Drewe Barentyne.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.lxxxxix.
John Wade
John Waruer.
Anno. xxi.

The. xxii. yeare.

IN this. xxii. yeare of king Richard, the common fame ranne, that the king had letten to ferme the realme of England vnto ſir Williã Scrope, earle of wylſhyre, and then treaſurer of Englãd, to ſyr John Buſhei, ſir John Bagot, and ſir Henry Grene knightes, ỹ which returned ſhortlyafter to their gret cõfuſiõs. This yere alſo, Thomas the ſon & heire of ỹ erle of Arũdel lately beheded, ỹ which Thomas not

all to

to his pleaſure, was kepte in the houſe of the duke of Exeter, paſſed the ſea by the meanes of one William Scot mercer, and yode vnto his vncle the archebyſhop of Cau̅terburye, and ſoo continued with him in the citie of Colaine, then being. In this paſtyme greate purueyaunce was made for the kinge his iourney into Ireland, ſo that when all thinges neceſſarye to the honour and nede of the kinge and his people were ready, he ſet forthward vpon his iourney, in the moneth of Apryl, leuing for his lieutenaunt in England, ſyr Edmond of Langley his vncle, and duke of Yorke, and after toke ſhipping at Briſtowe, and ſailed with a mighty and ſtronge hoſt into Ireland: wher he had ſo proſperous ſpede, that in proceſſe of time with manhode and good policie he ſubdued to him that countrey. In the whiche voyage, were it for act that he did, or of the kynge his bountee, Henry, ſonne and heyr of the duke of Herford then exiled, was of the kynge made knight. This Henry was after his father crownd king of Englande, and named Henrye the fyfte.

e iour-
of king
chard in
Ireland

Kinge Richarde thus beynge occupied in Irelande, and receyuing of the capitaines of the wild Iriſh into his ſubiection, and orderinge of that countrey, to ſet in an ordre and rule, Henrye of Bolingbroke duke of Herford before exiled, with the Archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye, and Thomas of Arundell, and other, landed with a ſmall company at Rauinſpore in the North countrey, in the moneth of Auguſt, and vnder colour of the clayme of his rightful inheritaunce, reyſed the people as he wente, to whom in ſhorte proceſſe great multitude of the peple drew and gathered.

Of this landinge kynge Rycharde beinge warned, for haſtye ſpede of returning into England, lefte in Ireland behind him much ordenaunce, and landed at Mylforde hauen in the beginninge of Septembre, and beginninge alſo of the .xxii. year of his reigne, and ſo yode vnto the caſtell of Flint in wales, and there reſted him and his people, and entended there to gather vnto him more ſtrength.

In the whiche meane tyme the foreſaid Henry that then had proclaymed him ſelfe duke of Lancaſter in the right of John of Gau̅te his father, was commen to Bryſtow, and there without reſiſtence toke Syr Wylliam Scrope, earle of Wylſhyre and treaſurer of Englande, ſyr John Buſhey, and ſyr Henry Grene.

Alſo there was taken ſyr John Bagot, but after he eſcaped and fled into Ireland. Then were the other thre there iudged, and put to execution.

And kinge Richarde beynge at the caſtell of Flint, hearing of the greate ſtrength that was aboute the Duke, feared ſore of him ſelfe: And in likewiſe ſo did all ſuche as were aboute hym: wherefore ſyr Thomas Percye Earle of Worceſter and than Stewarde of the kinges houſholde, contrarye his allegiaunce, brake openly yͤ white rodde in the hall, and commaunded euerye man to ſhifte for hym ſelfe. By reaſon whereof the people voyded, and the kinge lefte without comforte, ſo that he was

The takig of Kynge Richard.

ſhortly after taken and preſented vnto ẏ duke. The whiche put him vnder ſafe keping, and ſhortly after ſped him towarde London.

And when he came nere vnto the citie, he ſent kinge Rycharde with a ſecrete company vnto the towre there to be ſafely kept tyll his cōminge. Whereof manye euill diſpoſed perſons of the citie, beynge warned, aſſembled theim in great nomber, and entēded to haue met him without the towne, and there to haue taken him from ſuche as ledde him, and ſo to haue ſlayne him for the great cruelty that he before tyme had vſed vnto the citie. But as God woulde, the mair and rulers of the citie were enformed of theyr malicious purpoſe, and gathered to thē the worſhipfull commoners, and ſad men, by whoſe policies, not without great difficulte they were reuoked from theyr euill purpoſe, albeit, that laſtinge that rumour they yode vnto Weſtminſter, and there tooke mayſter John Slake dene of the kynges Chapell, and from thence broughte hym to Newegate, and there caſt on hym yrons.

A parliament.

Shortly after, the duke came vnto London, and there by the conſent of kinge Richarde, a parliament was begonne vpon the .xiii. day of the moneth of September. Enduring which parliament, manye accuſations and articles of miſrulinge the lande, were layed vnto ẏ charge of this noble prince kinge Richarde, whiche be engroced at length in .xxxviii. articles. For the whiche voluntarelye as it ſhould ſeme by the copye of an inſtrumente hereafter ſhewed, he ſhoulde renounce, and wilfully be depoſed from all kyngly mageſte, the monday being the .xxix. day of September, and the feaſte of S. Michael the archeaungell, in the yeare of our lordes incarnation of the accompt of the Church of England. M.ccc.lxxxix. and the .xxiii. yeare of the reigne of the ſayde Rycharde. The copy of whiche inſtrument here vnder enſueth.

The c
of the
ſtrum

This preſente inſtrument made the mondaye the .xxix. daye of September, and feſt of S. Michael in the yeare of our lord God. M.ccc.lxxx and .ix. and the, xxiii. yeare of king Richarde the ſeconde, witneſſeth, that where by the autoritie of the lordes ſpirituall and temporall of this preſent parliament, and commons of the ſame, the right honorable and diſcrete perſons here vnder named, were by the ſayd autoride aſſigned to go vnto the towre of London, there to here and teſtifie ſuche queſtions and aunſweres as than and there ſhould be by the ſayd honorable & diſcrete perſons harde, knowe all men to whome theſe preſente letters ſhall come, that we ſyr Rycharde Scrope archebyſhoppe of Yorke, John byſhoppe of Hertforde, Henrye earle of Northumberlande, Rafe earle of weſtmerlande, Thomas lorde of Barkeleye, Wyllyam abbot of weſtminſter, John Pryoure of Caunterburye, Wylliam Thyrning, and Hugh Burnell knights and John Markeham Juſtice, Thomas Stowe, and John Burbage, doctours of the law Ciuile, Thomas Fereby and Denis Lopham notaries publyk, the day and yeare aboue ſayd betwene the houres of viii. and .ix. of the clocke, before noone, were preſente in the cheife chaumber of the kinges lodgyng, within the ſayd place of the towre where was reherſed vnto the king by the mouth of the foreſayde erle of Northumberland, that before time at Conwaye in North wales the kynge being there at his pleaſure and libertie, promiſed vnto the Archebyſhop of Caunterbury than Thomas Arundel, and vnto the ſayde Earle of Northumberlande, that he for inſufficiencie whiche he knewe him ſelfe to be of to occupie ſo greate a charge as to gouerne this realme of England, he would gladlye leaue of and renounce the ryght and tytle, aſwell of that, as of his title of the crown of Fraunce, and his mageſty, vnto Henry duke of Hertford, and that to do in ſuche conuenient wyſe, as by the learned men of this land it ſhuld moſt ſufficiently be by them deuiſed and ordained.

To the whiche rehearſall the kinge in oure ſayd preſences aunſwered benynglye, and ſayde that ſuche promyſe he made, and ſo to the ſame he was at that houre in full purpoſe to perfourme and fulfyll, ſauynge that he deſyred fyrſt to haue perſonall ſpeache with the ſayde Duke, and with the Archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury, his coſyns. And farthermore he deſyred to haue a byll drawen of the ſayde reſignation, that he mighte be perfecte in the rehearſall thereof. After whiche copy to him by me the ſayde Earle delyuered, we the ſayde Lordes and other departed. And vppon the ſame after none the kynge deſyrynge muche of the commynge of the Duke of Lancaſter, at the laſte the ſayde Duke, wyth the Archebyſhoppe of Caunterburye entered the foreſayde Chaumber, bringinge with theim the Lorde Roos, the Lorde Burgeinie, and the Lorde Willoughbye, with dyuers other.

Where after due obeyſaunce done by theim vnto the kinge, he familierlye and with a glad countenaunce to vs appearynge, talked with the ſayde Archebyſhoppe and duke a good ſeaſon. And that communication finiſhed, the king with a glad countenaunce in preſence of vs, and the other aboue rehearſed, ſayde openlye, that he was readye to renounce and reſygne all his kyngelye maieſtye, in maner and fourme as he before ſeaſons hadde promyſed. And although he had and myghte ſufficiently haue declared his renouncemente by the readinge of an other meane perſon, yet he for the more ſuerty of the matter, and for the ſayde reſignation ſhould haue his full force and ſtrength, he therfore redde the ſcroule of reſignation him ſelfe, in maner and fourme as foloweth.

In the name of God Amen. I Richarde by the grace of GOD kynge of England and of Fraūce, and Lorde of Irelande, acquite and aſſoyle all Archbyſhops, Byſhoppes, and other prelates ſeculer or religious, of what dignitie, degre, ſtate or condition that they be of, and alſo all dukes, Marques Earles, Barons, Lordes, and all myne other liege menne both ſpirituall and ſeculer, of what maner of name or degre they be, from their othe of feaute and homage, and al other dedes and pryuileges made vnto me, and from all maner bandes of alegeaunce and regalye or lordeſhip, In the whiche they were, or be bounden to me, or in any otherwyſe conſtrayned, and theym theyr heyres and ſucceſſours for euermore from the ſame bandes and othes I releaſe, deliuer, acquite, ⁊ let them for fre diſſolued, and acquyte, and to be harmleſſe, for ſo much, as longeth to my perſon, by any maner waye or title of ryght that to me might folowe of the forſayde thinges or anye of them. And alſo I reſygne al my knyghtly dygnitie, mageſty and crowne, wyth all the lordeſhyppes powre, and pryuileges to the foreſayd kingely dygnitie and crown belonging, ⁊ al other lordſhyppes and poſſeſſyons to me in any maner of wyſe pertaynynge, what name and condicion thei be of, out take the landes and poſſeſſions for me and myne obyte purchaſed and broughte.

And I renounce all ryghte and coloure of ryght, ⁊ al maner of tytle of poſſeſſyon and lordeſhyppe, whiche I euer had or haue in the ſame lordſhyppes and poſſeſſyons or any of them or to them, wyth any maner of ryghtes belongyng or appertayninge vnto any parte of them.

And alſo the rule and gouernaunce of the ſame kingdome and lorſhyppes, with al miniſtracions of the ſame and all thinges and euerych of theim, that to the whole Empyre and iuriſdiccions, of the ſame belōgeth of ryght, or in any wiſe maye belonge.

And alſo I renounce the name worſhyppe, and regalye, and kingly highneſſe, clearly, frelye, ſyngulerlye and holy, in the mooſte beſt maner, and fourme that I maye, and with dede and worde I leaue of and reſygne them, and go from them for euermore, ſauing alway to my ſucceſſours kynges of Englande, all the rightes pryuelegis, and appurtenaunces to the ſayde kyngedome and lordſhyppes abouesayde belongynge and appertayninge. For well I wote and knowledge, and deme, my ſelfe to be and haue bene vnſufficient and vnable, and alſo vnprofitable, and for mine open deſertes not vnworthie to be putte downe. And I ſweare vpon the holye Euangeliſtes here preſently with my handes touched, that I ſhal neuer repugne to this reſignacion, dimiſſion, or yeldinge vp, nor neuer inpugn them in any maner by word or by dede, by my ſelfe nor by none other: Nor I ſhall not ſuffer it to be impugned, in as muche as in me is preuelye nor aparte. But I ſhall haue, holde, and kepe this renounſinge, dymiſſion, and leuyng vp, for ferme and ſtable for euermore in all and in euerye parte therof, ſo God me helpe and all ſaynctes, and by thys holy Euangelyſt by me bodelye touched and kyſſed. And for more recorde of the ſame, here openly I ſubſcribe and ſygne this preſente reſygnacion with mine owne hand. And forth with in oure preſences and other ſubſcrybed the ſame, and after delyuered it vnto the archbyſhop of Caunterburye, ſayinge that if it were in his power or at hys aſſignemente, he woulde that the duke of Lancaſter there preſente, ſhuld be his ſucceſſoure and kinge after him. And in token thereof, he toke a rynge of golde from his fyngar, beyng his ſignet, and put it vpon the ſayde dukes fynger, deſyringe and requyrynge the archebyſhop of Yorke, to ſhewe and make reporte vnto the lordes of the parliament of his voluntary reſignation, and alſo of his entente and good minde, that he bare towarde his coſyn the duke of Lancaſter, to haue him his ſucceſſoure and kinge after him. And this done, euery man tooke theyr leaue, and retourned to theyr owne.

VPon the morowe folowinge, beynge tueſdaye and the laſt day of Septēber, all the lordes ſpyrytuall and tēporall, with alſo the commons of the ſayde parliamente, aſſembled at weſtminſter: where in the preſence of them, the archebyſhop of Yorke, accordinge to the kynges deſyre, ſhewed vnto them ſeriouſly the voluntary renounſinge of the kynge, with alſo the fauoure the which he ought vnto his coſin the duke of Lancaſter, for to haue him his ſucceſſour. And ouer that ſhewed vnto them, the ſedule or byll of renouncemēt ſygned with king Richardes hande. After whiche thinges in order by him finiſhed, the queſtion was aſked firſt of the lordes, yf they woulde admit and allow that renouncement. The whiche whan it was of the lordes graunted and confyrmed, the like queſtion was aſked of the commons, and of theim in lyke maner affyrmed. After whiche admiſſion it was than declared, that notwithſtandinge the foreſayde renouncinge ſo by the lordes and commons admitted, it were nedefull vnto the realme, in aduoydinge of all ſuſpections and ſurmyſes of euell dyſpoſed perſons, to haue in writinge and regeſtred, the manifolde crimes and defaultes before done by the ſayde Rycharde late kyng of England, to the ende that they might fyrſt be openly ſhewed vnto the people, and after to remayne of recorde among the kinges recordes. The whiche were drawen and compyled as before is ſayde in .xxxviii. articles, and ther ſhewed ready to be redde. But for other cauſes than more nedefull, to be preferred, the reading of the ſayde articles at that ſeaſon were deferred and put of. Whiche articles for that that they would aſke long tyme to wryte, and alſo wold to ſome readers be but ſmal pleaſure to rede, I haue therefore left them out here of this worke, whiche at length ar ſet out in the boke of the Mayres, and year of Drew Barentyne than Mayre of London.

Than for ſo muche as the Lordes of the parlyament hadde well conſydered this voluntarye renouncemente of kinge Rycharde, and that it was behouefull and neceſſarye for the weale of the Realme to procede vnto the ſentence of his depoſall, they there appoynted by aucthoritie of the ſtates of the ſayde parlyamente, the byſhoppe of ſaynt Aſſe, the Abbot of Glaſtenburye, the Earle of Glouceſter, the Lorde of Barkeley, Wyllyam Thyrnynge, Iuſtyce, and Thomas Erpyngham and Thomas Graye knightes that they ſhuld geue and bere open ſentence to the kinges depoſicion. Wherupon the ſaid commiſſioners leiynge there their heades together, by good deliberacyon, good councel and aduiſement, and of one aſſente, agreede emonge theim, that the biſhoppe of ſainte Aſſe ſhulde publiſhe the ſentence for theim and in theyr names, as foloweth.

The depoſicion of kinge Rycharde,

In the name of God. Amen. We John biſhop of ſaynte Aſſe or Aſſenence, John abbot of Glaſtẽburye, Rycharde the Erle of Gloceſter, Thomas Lord of Barkley. Wyllyam Thyrnynge Juſtyce, Thomas Crepyngham, and Thomas Graye knightes, choſen and deputed ſpeciall commyſſaryes by the thre eſtates of this preſent parliament, repreſentyng the whole bodye of the realme, for all ſuch matters by the ſayde eſtates to vs commytted: we vnderſtand and conſyderynge the manifolde crymes, hurtes, and harmes done by Rycharde kynge of Englande, and miſgouernaunce of the ſame by a longe tyme, to the great decay of the ſayd land, & vtter ruine of the ſame ſhortlye to haue bene, ne had the eſpecyall grace of oure Lord God therunto put the ſoner remedy, and alſo furthermore aduerting the ſaide kynge Rychard knowynge his owne inſufficiency hathe of hys owne mere volunte and frewyll, renounced, and geuen vp the rule and gouernaunce of this lande, with all rightes and honoures, vnto the ſame belongynge, and vtterly for his merytes, hath iudged him ſelfe not vnworthely to be depoſed of al kingly mageſt and eſtate royall, we the premyſſes well conſyderynge by good and dylygent delyberacion, by the power, name, and authoritie to vs as aboue is ſayde committed, pronoũce, diſcerne, and declare, the ſame kinge Rycharde before this to haue ben and to be vnprofitable, vnable vnſuffycient and vnworthy, to the rule and gouernaunce of the foreſayde realmes and lordſhyppes, and al other thappartenaunces to the ſame belonginge.

And for the ſame cauſes, we priue him of all kyngely dignytie and worſhyp, and of anye kyngly worſhyp in him ſelfe.

And we depoſe him by our ſentẽce difynitiſe, forbidding expreſſely to all achbyſhops, byſhops, and all other prelates, dukes, Marqueſes, Erles, barons, and knightes, and to al other man of the forſayde kingdome and lordeſhyps, or of other places belongynge to the ſame realmes and lordeſhyppes, ſubiectes and lyeges what ſo euer they be, that none of theym from thys tyme forwarde, to the foreſayde Rycharde as kyng and lorde of the foreſayd realmes and lordſhyppes, be neyther obedyent nor attendaunte.

After whiche ſentence thus openlye declared, the ſayde eſtates admytted forwyth the ſame perſons for theyr procuratours, to reſygne and yelde vp vnto kyng Rychard, al their homage and fealty which they haue made and ought vnto hym before tymes, and for to ſhewe vnto hym yf nede were, all thynges before doone that concerned his depoſynge.

The which reſignation at that tyme was ſpared, and put in reſpite tyll the morowe nexte folowing. And anone as this ſentence was in this wiſe paſſed, and that by reaſon thereof the realme ſtode voyde without heade or gouerner for the tyme, the ſayde duke of Lancaſter ryſyng from the place where he before ſate, and ſtanding where all mighte beholde him, he mekelye makinge the ſigne of the croſſe vpon his forheade and vpon his breaſt, after ſcilence by an officer was commaunded, ſayde vnto the people there beyng theſe wordes folowing. In the name of the father, and ſonne and holy ghoſte, I Henry of Lancaſter clayme the realme of Englande, & the crowne with all the appurtenaunces, as I that am deſcended by right line of the bloud comminge from that good lorde kinge Henry the third, and thorough the right that God of his grace hath ſent to me, with the helpe of my kynne and of my frendes to recouer the ſame, whiche was in point to be vndone for defaute of good gouernaunce and due iuſtice. After whiche wordes thus by him vttered, he returned and ſet him downe in the place, where he before had ſitten. Than the lordes apperceiuinge and hearinge this clayme thus made by this noble man, eyther of theim frained of other what he thought. And after a diſtaunce or pauſe of tyme, the Archebiſhoppe of Caunterburye hauinge noticion of the Lordes minde, ſtode vp and aſked the commons, yf they woulde aſſent to the Lordes, which in their mindes thoughte the clayme by the duke more to be ryghtfull and neceſſarye, for the wealth of the realme, and of them all. Wherunto with one voice they cried ye, ye, ye. After whiche aunſwer, the ſaid archbyſhop goyng vnto the duke, and ſettinge him vppon his knee, had vnto him a fewe wordes. The whiche ended, he roſe, and taking the duke by the right hande, ledde him vnto the kinges ſeate, and with great reuerence ſet him therin, after a certayne knelynge and oryſon made by the ſayde duke, or he were therein ſette.

ry duke Lanca-
er clay-
ed the
owne.

Hēry duke of Lancaſter admitted kynge.

And when the kinge was thus ſet in his throne, to the greate reioyſinge of the people, the archebiſhop of Caunterbury began there an oration, or colation in manner as after foloweth.

An Oration.

VIR DOMInabitur in populo. Primo Regū, Capitulo, 9. Theſe be the wordes of the highe & moſt mightye kinge, ſpeakinge to Samuel his prophete, teachinge him howe he ſhoulde choſe and ordayne a gouernour of his people of Iſrael, when the ſaid people aſked of him a kinge to rule theim. And not without cauſe may theſe wordes be ſayd here of our Lorde the kinge that is.

For yf they be inwardly conceued, they ſhall geue vnto vs matter of conſolation and comforte, whan it is ſayde that a man ſhall haue lordeſhip and rule of the people, and not a chylde. For GOD threateneth not vs as he ſomtime threat the people by Eſay, ſaying: Eſa. iii. Et dabo pueros principes eorum, & effeminati dominabũtur eis, I ſhal ſaith our Lord geue children to be their rulers ⁊ princes, and weake or fearefull ſhall haue dominion ouer them.

But of his great mercy, he hath viſited vs I truſt his peculier people, and ſent vs a man to haue the rule of vs, and put by chyldren, that before time ruled this lande after chyldyſhe conditions, as by the workes of them it hath righte lately appeared, to the greate dyſtourbance of all this realme, and for want and lacke of a man.

For as ſayth the Apoſtle Paule Ad Corintheos.i. Capitulo.xiiii Cum eſſem paruulus, ſapiebam vt paruulus, & loquebar vt paruulus, &c. Quãdo autem factus ſũ vir, euacuaui quę erãt paruuli. That is to meane, when I was a chylde, I ſauoured and ſpake as a chylde: But at the time whan I came vnto the ſtate of a man, then I put by all my chyldyſhe conditions.

The Apoſtle ſayth he ſauoured and ſpake as a child, in whõ is no ſtedfaſtneſſe or conſtancie. For a child wil lightly promiſe, ⁊ lightli he wyl breake his promiſe, and do all thinges that his appetite geueth him vnto, ⁊ forgetteth lyghtly what he hath done. By whiche reaſon it foloweth, that nedelye, great inconuenience muſte fall to that people that a childe is ruler and gouernoure of. Nor it is not poſſible for that kingdom to ſtand in felicitie, where ſuch conditions reigne in the hed, and ruler of the ſame. But now we ought al to reioyſe, that all ſuch defautes bene expelled, and that a man and not a child ſhal haue lordſhip ouer vs. To whom it belongeth to haue a ſure raine vpon his toung, that he may be knowen from a child, or a man vſinge chyldiſhe conditions. Of whome I truſt I may ſaye as the wiſe man ſaith in his Prouerbes, Prouerbiorum tertio capitu. Beatus homo qui inuenit ſapientiam, & qui affluit prudentia. The whiche is to meane, Bleſſed be the man that hath ſapience or wiſedome, and that habundeth in prudence. For that man that is ruled by ſapience, muſte nedes loue and dread our lord God, And who ſo loueth and dredeth him, muſte conſequently folow that he muſte kepe his commaundementes. By force wherof, he ſhall miniſter true iuſtice vnto his ſubiects, and do no wronge nor iniurye to anye man, ſo that then ſhall folowe the words of the wiſe man, the which ben rehearſed, Prouerbes the.x. Benedictio domini ſuper caput iuſti, os autem impiorum operit iniquitatem. Which is to meane. The bleſſing of our lorde god ſhall alight vpon the hed of oure king, being a iuſt and ryghtwyſe man, for the tunge of him worketh equitie and iuſtice. But the tunge of wicked and of ſinners couereth iniquite. And who that worketh or miniſtreth iuſtice in due order, he not alonely ſauegardeth him ſelf, but alſo holdeth ẏ people in a ſuretye of reſtfulneſſe, of the which enſueth peace and plenty. And therfore it is ſayd of the wiſe king Salomon. Eccleſ.x. Beata terra cuiꝰ rex nobilis eſt, & cuius principes veſcuntur in tempore ſuo. Which is to be vnderſtande, that bleſſed and happy is that land, of the whiche the king or ruler is noble and wyſe, and the princes bene bleſſed that liue in his tyme.

As who would ſaye, they maye take example of him to rule and guide their ſubiectes. For by the diſcretion of a noble and wyſe mā being in auctoritie, many euyls be ſequeſtred and put aparte, and all diſſimulers put vnto ſilence. For the wyſe man conſidereth and noteth well the great inconueniences whiche daylie nowe growe of it; where the childe or inſipient drinketh the ſwete and delicious wordes vnaduiſedlye, and perceiueth not intoxication which they bene mingled or mixt with, tyl he be inuironed and wrapped in all daunger, as lately the experience therof hath ben apparente to all oure ſightes and knowledges, and not without the great daunger of all this realme. And all was for lack of wiſedome in the ruler, which demed and taught as a chyld, geuing ſentence of wilfulnes, and not of reaſon. So that while a child reygned, ſelfe wyll and luſte reigned, and reaſon with good conſcience were outlawed, with iuſtice, ſtedfaſtnes, and many other vertues. But of this parell and daunger we ben deliuered by the eſpeciall helpe and grace of god, Quia vir dominabitur in populo, That is to mean, he that is not a child but perfit in reaſon. For he commeth not to execute his owne wyll; but his wyl that ſent him, yͭ is to wyt, gods wil, as a man vnto whō god of his habundaunt grace hath geuen perfit reaſon and diſcretion, to diſcerne and deme as a parfite man, wherfore not alonlye of this man we ſhal ſay that he ſhal dwel in wiſedom, but as a perfect man and not a child, he ſhal thinke and deme, and haue ſuch a circumſpect with him, that he ſhall diligentlye forſloke and ſe that gods wyll be done and not his. And therfore nowe I truſt the wordes of the wiſe man Eccleſia. x. ſhalbe verified in oure king ſayeng, Iudex ſapiens iudicabit populum ſuum, & principatus ſenſati ſtabilis erit, That is (as ſayeth the wiſe man) A wyſe and diſcrete iudge ſhal nowe deme his people, ⁊ the dominion or lordſhip of a diſcrete wiſe man, ſhall ſtand ſtedfaſt. Wherupon ſhal the folow the ſecond verſe of the ſame Chapter, ſaying. Secundum iudicem populi, ſic & miniſtri eius. That is. Lyke as the hed and ſoueraigne is repleniſſhed with all ſapience and vertue, in guiding of his people, adminiſtring to theim law, with due and conuenient iuſtice, ſo ſhall the ſubiectes agayneward be garniſſhed with awe and louing drede, and beare vnto him next God all honoure, trouth, and allegeaunce, So that then it may be concluded with the reſydue of the foreſaid verſes. Qualis rector eſt ciuitatis, tales & inhabitantes in ea. Whiche is to meane, Suche as the ruler of the citie is, ſuche then be the inhabitauntes of the ſame. So that conſequently it foloweth, a good maiſter, maketh a good diſciple. And in likewiſe, an euyll Kinge or ruler ſhall looſe his people, and the cities of his kyngdome ſhall be left deſolate and vnhabited.

Wherefore thus I make an end in ſtede of a chyld wilfully doynge his luſt and pleaſure without reaſon, now ſhall a man be lorde and ruler, that is replenyſhed with ſapience and reaſon, and ſhall gouern the people by rightfull domis, ſettynge aparte all wylfulneſſe and pleaſure of him ſelfe. So that the worde that I began with, maye be verifyed of him. Ecce quia vir dominabitur in populo. The whiche oure Lorde graunte, and that he maye proſperouſly reygne vnto the pleaſure of God, and welthe of his realme. Amen.

The which oracion beyng thus finiſhed, and the peple anſwering with great gladneſſe, Amen: The kyng ſtandyng vpon his fete, ſaid vnto the lordes and commons preſent. Sirs, I thãke you my lordes ſpirytuall and temporall, and all the ſtates of thys lande, and doo you to vnderſtande, that it is not my wil, that any man thinke, that by the waye of conqueſte, I wolde dyſherype anye man of hys heritage, frãchyſe, or other rightes that him oughte to haue of ryghte, nor for to put him oute of that which he nowe enioyeth, and hath had before tyme by cuſtome of good lawe of this realm, except ſuch priuate perſons as haue bene agayne the good purpoſe and the common profyte of the realme.

And this ſpeche thus finiſhed, all Sheriffes, and other officers were put in their auctorities which ſeaſon for the time that the kinges ſea was voyde, and after euery man departed.

And at afternoone were proclamacions made in acuſtomate places of the cytie, in the name of kinge Henrye the fourth. And vpon the morow folowinge beynge wednyſdaye, and the firſte day of October, the procuratours aboue named, yode vnto the towre of London and there certifyed hym of the admiſſion of kynge Henry. And the foreſayd Juſtyce Wyllyam Thirninge, in the name of the other, and for all the ſtates of the land gaue vp vnto Rychard, late kynge all homage and fealtie vnto him before time due, in like maner and fourme as before I haue ſhewed to you in the. xix. yeare of kyng Edwarde the. ii.

And thus was the noble Prince priued of all kyngly dignitie and honoure, by reaſon of hys euell councell, and ſuch vnlawful wayes and menes, as he by his inſolencye in his realme ſuffered to be vſed, when he had reygned. xxii. yeares, thre monethes, and. viii. dayes.

¶ Charles the. vii.

Frauncia.

Carolus or Charles the. vii. of that name, or the ſyxt after the accompte of the frẽch hiſtorye, a chylde of. xiii. yeres of age, and ſonne vnto Charles the ſixt, beganne his reigne ouer the Frenchmen in the moneth of September, and yere of our Lord a thouſand. iii. C. and lxxx. and the thyrde yere of the ſeconde Rycharde then beyng kyng of Englande. This Charles was crowned Kynge wythin the age of. xiiii. yeares, contrarye a lawe made in the. xi. yere of his father.

Charle ſeuenth

And where by hym he was commytted vnto the rule of Lewys his vncle and duke of Angeou, to the tyme of the full of .xiiii. yeres, yet after the death of the father, ſuche vnkindneſſe began to ſpring betwene the lordes of the realme, that for the comon welthe of the ſame, it was agreed by the more partye, that thys Charles ſhulde be crowned at Raynes in al haſty ſpede. The whiche was donne in ſhorte ſeaſon after, and ſo continued, not without diſturbaunce of malyce, whiche kyndled betwene his two vncles, and other inconueniēces, by the ſpace of .iii. yeres enſuyng. The fourth yeare of his reigne, the citezens of Paris murmuring aud grudging for dyuers impoſicions and taſkes of theim leuyed, ſodeinly aroſe in great multitude, entending to haue dyſtreſſed ſome of the kinges houſholde ſeruaūtes, and ſuch as were men of perſone. But by mediacion of one diſcrete perſone named John Marſile, with aſſiſtence of the prouoſt of the marchauntes, the rumoure was ſomdeale appeaſed, in ſo much that the great multitude was wythdrawen and retourned vnto their occupacions. But ſome euyll diſpoſed, which in a ſuſpicyouſe congregation euer vſe to exyte and ſtyre the people vnto robbynge and other vnlefull actes, reaſſociate theym, and ſayde, and cried that they wold haue the Jewes baniſhed the citie. To whom it was aunſwered that the Kyng ſhuld be enfourmed of their deſire and that vpon it, thei ſhulde haue knowledg of the Kinges pleaſure. Wherupon in a rage they ranne vnto the houſes of the Jewes, and entred them by force in robbynge and ſpoylynge them, and bare awaye what they might cary, in ſleynge ſuch of the Jewes as any reſiſtence and defence made againſt them, and neuer after reſtored the ſaide goodes, notwithſtange that the kynge in that behalfe, gaue ſore and ſtreit commaundemētes. It was not longe after that ſuch as were of the kinges ſecret counſayle, conſideringe the great charges and nedes of the king and the weakeneſſe of his treaſoure, by authorytie of the kinges commyſſions called before theim the rulers of Paris, of Roan, and other good cytees. The which beynge aſſembled, to theim was ſhewed the many and importune charges which the kyng dayly had for the defence of his realm and ſubiectes. Wherfore by all wiſe and polityke meanes that they might vſe, thei exhorted the ſayd cōmons to graunt vnto the king in way of ſubſidie, .xii. d. of the pounde of all wares at that day currant. To the which requeſt in concluſion after aduyſe taken of theyr neyghboures, it was aunſwered that the people were ſo ſore charged in tymes paſſed, that they myghte not ſuſteine or beare anye moore charges, tyl their neceſſitie were otherwiſe releuid, ſo that in concluſion at this ſeaſon the kyng & his councel were diſpounted.

In the .vi. yere of this Charles, the Flemynges, whiche by a certaine ſeaſon had reſted them from battayle, were it for neceſſitye or ſinguler couetize of Lewis their duke, he aſked of theym a greate ayde or taxe. And for he knewe well that if he might wyn the fauoure and graunte of the towne of Gaunte, he ſhuld the ſoner haue his pleaſure of the reſydue, therfore he fyrſt beganne by meanes of fayrneſſe. And after whan ther by he ſawe he might take none aduauntage, he added therunto manaſſes and threteninges, the whiche not withſtanding the Fleminges bode ſtedfaſt in one opinyon, and denaied ſtifly their dukes requeſt. Wherupon he laſtly departyng from Gaunt, with great diſpleaſure ſayde, I ſhall ſhewe me to be lorde and ſoueraigne of this towne and of the obſtinate people of the ſame. And ſhortly after the duke made ſharpe war vpon them of Gaunte, and they in lykewiſe defended theim vigorouſlye ſo that their enemies wan of them lytle aduauntage. And after this warre had ben a ſeaſon contynued, not without loſſe of many men vpon both parties, The Gaunteners remembringe the obedience and fidelitie whiche thei ſhoulde beare to their ſoueraign lord and duke, made meanes yͤ thei might be herd. After graunt wherof, thei ſent vnto him a certayne oratour which had vnto him yͤ words in ſētence folowing: Moſt ſoueraigne nexte vnto God, we deny not but we accept the for oure prince and leader, and to the as thine it becometh vs to obey withal reaſon.

And thou agayne arte bounde to defende vs. If we any thing by ouerſighte and necligence haue againſte the treſpaſſed, we mekely beſech the of forgiuenes. And furthermore beſechyng the, that ſuch fraunchyſes and liberties to vs by thy noble progenitours before graunted, thou wilte not from vs withdrawe nor abridg, by reaſon wherof thy people of Gaunt may not to anye taxe contrarye their volunt be conſtrayned. But and to thy nede of warres thou haue neceſſitie of thy commons, they of free wyll all conſtraynte ſette aparte, are redye to aide and helpe the, as fre and as liberall as thy trewe ſubiectes.

By reaſon of whiche wordes the duke was of his ire towarde theim ſomewhat apeaſed. But after their departing from the duke or elles in his preſence ſuche yong knightes as were of the erles hoſt had vnto theim manye highe and diſdainous wordes, ſaienge that thei were thrall vnto their Earle which ſhoulde be to the vttermoſt of their reproche and correccion, and they by occaſyon and conſtraint forced to do theyr dutie.

By occaſion of whiche wordes, the Gaunteners retourninge to their former wilfulnes, kepte ſtill their former opinion, and defended the erle and his people as thei before had done.

Wherfore the earle ſeynge he myght not by ſtrength preuaile againe his enemies, ſtudyed the waies and meanes to famyſhe theim by hunger, ſo that by that meane he might drawe the towne to his ſubiecciō: And that to bring to effecte he girde the towne aboute with a ſtronge ſyege.

Then the Gaunteners ſuppriſed with obduracion of harte againe their Prince, made theim a capitayne named Philyppe Artiuele, the ſonne of Iakes de Artuele before ſlayne of the Flemynges, like as to you I haue before ſhewed in the .xvii. yere of Philyp de Waloys late king of Fraunce. The whiche furniſhinge his people with al habilimentes of war, made out of the towne, and pight his field in a plaine ioyning vnto it, where the earles people & they fought a ſharpe fight and longe. But in the ende fortune was vnto the earle or duke ſo frowarde, that with loſſe of .v. M. of his ſoudiers he was forced to take Bruges for his ſuerty.

By reaſon of this victory, this Artiuele beinge not a lytle ſupprized with pryde, exhorted in ſuche wyſe the dwellers within ẏ town of Gaunte, and all ſuche as were nere neyghboures vnto theim, to ſet a parte all occupation as well huſbandri as other, and geue their hole ſtudye vnto actes and feates of warre. The earle thus beynge within the towne of Bruges, a daye of great ſolempnitie yearely holden by them of Bruges approched, whiche they worſhypped in the honour of oure Lordes bloud. To this daye of ſolempnitie, vſed yearely to come, all the inhabitauntes of the vyllages and countrey there about. Whiche daye or feaſt Philip de Artiuele callynge to mynde, appointed vnto him .ii. M. of his ſouldiers, and warned them, with armoure beinge clad vnder theyr clothes, to aſcende by two, by three, by foure, and lyke ſmall companies vnto this feaſtefull ſolempnitie, and at ſuche time as he gaue warning euery man to be ready with ſweard in hande, to make rome amonge the preaſe, to the ende that they might take the earle then of helpe deſtitute. Whiche cautele thus prepared for, at the daye commen of this ſaid feaſt the towne being repleniſhed with people, the ſayde Artyuele vnſuſpecte of any perſon, with his companye in maner aboueſayd, entered the towne of Bruges. And when he ſawe his beſt tyme, he ſodeinly cryed aſarmis, aſarmis. With whiche ſodeyne crye the erle beinge aſtonnied, manfullye for a whyle withſtode his enemies, and encouraged the people againſte them. But for that the Gaunteners were in armoure, and the other vnarmed, they of the earles party fled ſoone. That ſeynge the earle, with greate difficultye fled, and ſo leapinge ieopardouſly into the houſe of an olde woman, eſcaped and wente vnto Scluſe, and there a while helde him.

Then this Artiuele ſeing that by the ayde of theim of Bruges, he was diſapoynted of the earles takinge, fell vpon the inhabitauntes of the towne, and ſlew of them a certayne, and after with greate pompe and pyllage retourned vnto Gaunt.

IN the ſeuēth year of this Charles, bi procuringe of his vncle Lewis duke of Angeou, a taxe was eſtaxed of the commons of Fraunce. The which to bringe to effect, many frendes and promoters were made, aſwell of citezens as other. But anone, as the commons of Paris vnderſtode of this, they became wylde, and aſſembled in thick companies not regarding the reaſonable allegations to them layde and ſhewed by Peter Dilet and John Matſyl, though in them they had

greate

A rebelliō.

great affection and truſt, but toke them to their affection and mind, and made amonge them certayne capitaynes and rulers, and kepte the watche by night, as enemies had lien about the citie. Whiche inſurrection and rebellion thus begonne within the citie of Paris the citie of Roan takinge thereof example, arrered a like murmure, and fenſed the citie of Roan with like prouiſion, and made theim a mamet of a fatte, and vnweldy as a vylayne of the citie, caried him aboute in a carte, and named him in deriſion of their prince, theyr king, and ceaſed not to fall into manye incōueniences, as robbing of holy places and other, not without ſheding of bloude, wherof the circumſtaunce were longe to tell. But as all operation of man hath ende, ſo this foly and rebellion of Frenchemen was ceaſed, and many for the treſpaſe thereof caſte in harde and darke priſon. Of the which the kynge entended to haue taken cruel correction, ne had ben the great inſtaunt laboure made by the rulers of the vniuerſitie of Paris, and other ſuche as were nere aboute the kinge: By whoſe meanes the multitude was pardoned, and a fewe ſuche as were the beginners, were put in execution. And then as teſtifieth myne author mayſter Robert Gagwyn for to appeace the kinges highe diſpleaſure, vnto him was graunted an hundreth thouſande frankes, whiche after ſterlinge money amounteth the ſumme of ten M. pounde.

Ye haue before heard, howe the erle of Flaunders with great ieopardy eſcaped ẏ handes of Philip de Artiuele capitayne of Gaunte, and how he came to Scluſe, and there ſafegarded himſelfe. Where with all diligence he gathered vnto him his peple, and made a new reiſe vpon the ſaid Artiuele: The whiche to him had aſſociate (as affirmeth my ſayde auctor) fourtye thouſande men, ſo that betwene the Earle and hym was foughten a cruell fyghte.

Wherof in thende Artiuel was a victour, and conſtrained the erle to forſake the feld, with loſſe of .x. M. of his knightes, and he hym ſelfe eſcaped with great daunger, vnto the ylande called Lyle, and dyuers of his people as Frenchemen and other, in a good number fled vnto a towne called Anwerp, where a ſeaſon they defended theim agaynſt the malyce of their ennemies. In whiche paſſetyme this Artiuele coniecturing in his mynde that the Frenche kynge would take the earles party, ſent vnto hym an Ambaſſade or meſſage, with letters, beſechinge him not to entermedle of this warre betwene the earle and the Gaunteners, whiche warre the earl had commenced onely of tyranny and not of Iuſtice, entending vtterly to deſtroye the auncient libertye and fraunchiſe. Shewing alſo further, that if he would not at theyr contemplacion and praier forbere to aid theyr ſaid erle, that then to defende their righte, they woulde ſeke aide of the king of England. To the whiche requeſte none aunſwere was made, neither by the kynge nor by his counſayle. Wherfore this Artiuele made ſtronge prouiſion to withſtand the French kynge, and ſette a certayne of his ſoudyſoudiours for to kepe the ſiege before Andwarpe, whyle he made prouiſion for other nedes.

In this meane while, the erle went vnto the duke of Burgeine, and thei together yode after vnto king Charles, ſhewing to him lamentably what wronges the erle had ſuſteined of ẏ obſtinate Gaunteners, beſechinge him of aide to redres the ſaied wronges. Whiche complaynte the kinge graciouſly hearde, and beningly graunted to them their petition. And notwithſtandynge that the ded of winter was comming, he in all haſte aſſembled his knightes, and taking with him, the Orikambe with a mightie ſtrong hooſte, perced the countrey of Flaunders towarde Marquet, in thend of the moneth of Octobre. Whereof hearing Artiuele, made prouiſion to ſtop the wayes, by breakinge of brydges and other meanes, whereby the Frenche hoſte was greatly empeched and let, ſo that with greate difficulty and daunger, thei paſſed the riuer of Lize at a bridge, longe defended by the inhabitauntes of the coūtrey, with aide of their capitain named Peter wood whiche there was ſlaine with three thouſande of his adherentes. After winnyng of whiche Bridge, the Frenche hoſte paſſed the riuer, and ſpoiled the countrie before theim, which vnto them was much auailable, for the circuitie was inhabited with many rich cloth makers. Then the king with his hoſt made toward the mount of Ipre. Whereof the dwellers of Ipre beynge ware, ſent out two friers of thorder preachars, to beſeche the kyng to accepte that towne & dwellers vnto his mercy, the which retourned with comfortable anſwere. Wherefore, forthwith yode forth .xii. of the notableſt of that towne, and offered the towne and dwellers to bee in the Kinges power. The whiche offer the king accepted and after entred the town. Of whō the king receiued .xl. M. frākes, or .iiii. M. li. ſterling, toward the waging of his knightes. And ſhortly after al the villages there towarde the ſea, ſubmitted theim vnto the king, bringing vnto him certaine capitaines which belonged vnto Phylip de Artiuele, with alſo fourty thouſande frankes towarde their coſtes, whiche capitaines the King commaunded to be forthwith beheded.

w the
enche
g per-
the coū-
y of
ders.

When king Charles had taried fiue dayes at Ipre, woordꝭ was brought to him that Philip Artiuele was comming towarde him with .lx. thouſand men. Wherfore the kinge ſet forwarde his hoſte, and folowed after as faſte as he might, ſomdeale to his paine, by reaſon of raine and fowle waye that he paſſed, ſo that finallye he approched within .iii. miles of his enemies. Upon the morowe folowing beinge the .v. day of the moneth of Decembre, and yere of our lordes incarnacion . M. CCC. lxxxviii. and beginninge of the .viii. yeare of this Charles, in a plaine nere vnto the towne of Courtray was foughten a cruell bataile. Whereof in the beginning the Fleminges hadde the better, and forced the Frenche hoſt to loſe place: But in the ende halfe by miracle (as witneſſeth mine autour) the Frēchmen obteined victory, & put the Flemīges to flight, & them

The battaile of Courtrey.

Victory of of yͤ Frēch kinge ouer yͤ Flemminges.

chaſed in ſo cruell wyſe, that by death in the felde, and drowninge in mareis and other waters, ther was of them ſlayne at that fyght vpon .xl. M.

Then narowe ſerche was made for the capitayne Philyp de Artiuele. And laſtly a flemyng beyng a capitayne of his ſore wounded, ſayde that he ſawe him fall in the felde. Where vpon ſerche beynge made, his caryen was founden oppreſſed of his owne people as they fled. Anon as tidinges came vnto the Flemynges, that laye aboute Andwerpe of the loſynge of the feelde, they in al haſt leuyng their ordinaunce behinde thē, fled from the ſiege. That perceiuyng their enemyes, iſſued out of the towne, and ſlewe of theim many, and many were drowned in fennes and maricys.

When the Frenche king had obteined thus this glorious victory he than entred the toune of Courtray, where he ſo reſting him, oratours wer ſet to him frō the toune of Bruges, which then had newly taken partye with Artuele, and with the paiment of an .C. and .xx. M. frankes or .xii. M. pound ſterlynge money, there made a peace for the ſayd towne of Bruges.

And when the king ſhulde depart from Courtrai, he commaunded his knyghtes to bete downe yͤ gates of the ſame, without harme doynge vnto the people. But the Frenchmē beringe in mind the rebukes and harmes, which thei before of that towne had ſuſteined, bete downe great part of the walles, robbed and ſlewe much of the ple, and ſet fyre vpon the towne when they had done. In robbyng of this town of Courtray, diuers dyuers letters were founde of the towne or cytie of Paris, whiche conteined the rebellion of the Pariſiens before declared with comfort to theim for aide if thei neded which letters when thei came vnto the kinges ſighte, he was with theim of Paris greuouſly diſpleaſed, and for the ſame, them by fine, greuouſly after puniſhed. At ſuch time as the kig had thus repoſſeſſed the erle of the lordſhip of Flaūders, Gaunt yet remaynynge in their firſt errour, held their town ſo ſtrongly, that nother kinge nor erle might win within theim. Albeit, that after the Frenche kinge was retourned into Fraunce, thei ſent certaine oratours vnto him, the which he in no wiſe would ſuffer to come in his ſyght.

In theſe paſſed yeres many ſkirmyſhes and fyhgtes were don betwene the Frenchmen and Englyſhmen, which ſomdeale are touched in the beginnyng of Richardes reigne: But nothing to the honoure of the Frenchmen, as they in their crōnicles boſt and auaūce theim ſelfe. Many mo rebellyons and inſurreccions of thys people might I here brynge in: But for dyuers conſyderacions whiche to wyſe men maye appeare, I thinke it better to ſpare, and alſo the reherſall of them wold aſke a longe tracte of tyme, wherfore I paſſe ouer.

After the appeaſinge of theſe inordynate inſurreccions and murmures, and that the lande was ſome deale ſette in a quyetneſſe, kinge Charles in the begynnynge of the nynthe yeare of his reigne, maried Iſabel the doughter of the duke of Bauari. In this yeare alſo dyed Charles the kinge of Nauerne, a man of greate age, and by a wonderfull happe, as reherſeth myne autoure. For ſo it was, that for feblenes or debilitie of age, he by counſayle of phiſitiõs was ſowed in a ſhete waſhed with aqua vite, to thende to cauſe his olde bodye to catche naturall heate. But howe it was, as this ſheete was tacked aboute his body, the ſewer taking his candle to burne of the ende of the threde, or he were ware the fyre faſtened in the ſhete, and ſo brent his fleſh, or it mighte be looſed frome him, that he caughte thereof ſuche diſeaſe, that he died the thyrd day folowing. Which miſhap fell to him after the opinion of mine autoure by the werche of God, as condign merite for his vnſtedfaſtnes and vntruth by him before vſed, as in ſundry places before in the ſtories of kinge John, and Charles his ſonne are manifeſtly ſhewed.

In this yeare alſo a battayle was done at Paris betwene two knightes of the duke of Alenſon, whereof the cauſe enſueth. This ſayde duke had in his courte two knightes, whereof that one was named John Carengon, or Carongion, and that other Jaquet Gryſee, which were both in good fauour of their maiſter.

This Carongon, were it for delite to ſe ſtraunge countreys, or cauſe of other aduenture, as pylgrimage, or other, departed oute of Fraunce, leauinge his wyfe in a caſtell or fortreſſe of his owne, whiche wyfe was goodly, and very fayre.

After whoſe departing, were it for beauty of the woman, or for euyll will that he bare toward his felow, this Jaquet Gryſee entred the caſtell, bearynge his wyfe in hande, that he was commen to ſe that houſe, whiche ſhewed ſo fayre outwarde. The woman caſtynge no parell, acceptinge hym for her huſbandes frend and his, ſhewed to him the circuite of the place. But he in contrary awayting his praye, whan he ſawe the woman farre from company, forced her in ſuch maner, that contrary her wil he committed with her aduoutry. At whoſe departyng ſhe gaue vnto him manye rebukefull wordes, ſayinge playnelye, that if hir huſband euer retourned, ſhe woulde of that villany be reuenged. This dede was kept ſecrete tyll the retourne of hir huſbande. At whoſe home comming, ſhe with lamentable countenaunce ſhewed to hyr huſband all the demeanour of the ſayde Jaquet.

After whiche complaint by her huſbande well vnderſtanden, he yode ſtreyght vnto the duke of Alenſon, requiringe him to do correction vppon the aduouterer, or elles that he myghte trye it with hym in the feilde by fortune of batayle: whereof nother the Duke woulde graunt, but broughte the quarell before the Kynge: By whoſe agrement and commaundement, a daye by the Kinge was ſette to fyght at Parys. Whan the daye of batayle was commen Carongon brought his wyfe vnto the place, to iuſtyfye her former ſayinge. After affyrmation wherof, eyther fyrſte ran at other with ſharpe ſpeares. At whiche courſe

Jaquet woūded his enemy in the thygh with his ſpere. But Carongon beinge wyth it nothynge diſmayed, lyght from his horſſe, and bare him ſo manfully, that he ouercame his aduerſarye, and cauſed him to confeſſe his offence, for the whiche he was ſtreyghte drawen vnto the gibet of Paris, and there hanged. And to the ſaide Carongon, the king gaue in reward a thouſande frankes or a hundreth pounde ſterling money, and ouer that he gaue vnto him as an annuall fee or rent two hundreth frankes, whiche is in value of .xx. pounde ſterlyng money.

Kynge Charles thus paſſyng his time wͭ greet murmur of his cōmons, and rebellion of the duke of Brytayn, with many other aduerſyties whiche were long to write, laſtly in the .xiii. yere of his reigne or nere about, he made warre vpon the people of weſt Fraunce called in laten Cenomanni.

When Charles was entred this countrey, whiche was in the dominion of the duke of Britayn, that duke ſent vnto him meſſengers, ſayenge to him that he ſhuld not nede to inuade his countreye with ſo great ſtrength, for he and his ſhoulde be holye at his commaundemēt. But of this meſſage the kinge toke no regarde, for as ſayeth myne autour, he was not moſt wyſeſt prince, but was ruled by his houſſhoulde ſeruauntes, and beleued euery lyght tale that was broughte to hym, and ouer that he was ſo lyberall that it was of wiſe men accompted more prodigalitie then liberalitie.

As Charles (notwithſtanddynge this meſſage of the duke) held on his iourney, comming nere vnto a wood, he was ſodenly met of a man lyke vnto a begger whiche ſayd vnto him: whither goeſt thou ſir kinge, beware thou go no farther for thou arte betrayed, and into the handes of thyne enemies thyne owne meyny ſhall delyuer the. Wyth this monyſhion of this poore man, the kyng was aſtonied, and ſtode ſtyll, and beganne to muſe: In whiche ſtudy he ſo being one of his folowers whiche then bare hys ſpeare, ſleped vpon hys horſe backe, and in his ſo ſlepyng let his ſpeare fall vpon the helmet of his felowe, Wyth which ſtroke the kyng was ſodeynly fered thinkinge his enemyes had commen vnwarely vpon him. Wherfore he in anger drewe his ſwerd and layed about him at the geyneſt, and ſlewe .iiii. of hys knyghtes or he were refrayned, & toke therwith ſuche an endlye fere, that he fell therwith dyſtraughte.

A won
full thi

Wherfore he was to a place there by brought, and lay there in point of deathe a longe ſeaſon after, in ſo much that the fame ran that he was dead: But by prayers and other great dedes of charitie done for him, laſtly he recouered and retourned vnto Parys. And for he was not yet retourned to his perfyght helth, his two vncles then beynge that one duke of Berrye and that other duke of Burgoyne, toke vpon theim by autority of the eſtates of the land to rule the realme for that ſeaſon, in whiche ſeaſon diuers offycers were altered and chaunged.

The kinge thus contynuynge hys ſykenes manye interludes and games were deuyſed for the kinges recreacyon and comforte.

And vpon a ſeaſon he beynge lodged in the quenes lodgyng in the ſuburbes of ſaynte Marcell, dyuers noble men of the courte made a dyſguyſinge, and apparailed theim in lynnen clothes glewed vnto their naked bodies with piche, and floriſhed theim with dyuerſe colours and oyles ſo that they were couered all excepte the faces, and thus apparayled wyth torche lyghte entred the Chaumber where as the kinge was, and ther in goodly maner ſhewed ther diſport ſo that the king was therwith well contented.

But were it of rechelesneſſe or of ſome euyl diſpoſed perſon, fyre was put to the veſtures of that diſguyſers, the whiche anon was vpon ſuch a flame, that no man ther coulde quenche it. Wherfore the ſayd diſguyſers beynge by reaſon of pitch and oiles greuouſly tourmented, ranne into pittes and waters whiche they might ſoneſte attayne vnto, and ſo with great diſfyculte ſaued theim ſelfe.

In meane tyme wherof, the chaumbre beeynge with the ſame fyred, grewe in ſo greate a flame, that in ſhorte while the more part of that lodgynge was conſumed, to the great feare of the king and other eſtates then there beynge preſent, and augmentyng againe of his former ſickenes, ſo that certaine appoyntmentes to be holden betwene him and Rycharde kinge of Englande, were for that time put of.

THe .xvii. yeare of thys Charles, the maryage of peace betwene both realmes was concluded and finiſhed at Calais as before I haue ſhewed to you in the .xix. yere of king Rycharde. And that tryumphe finyſſhed, Charles at the contemplacion and praier of the king of Hungarye, ſente vnto him Philyp erle of Artoyes, wyth dyuerſe other knightes in good number, to aide the ſayde kinge againe the Turkes. The whiche after thei hadde there a ſeaſon warred, the capitaines and the moſt partie of the Frenchemen, of the Turkes were dyſtreſſed and ſlaine, and many taken priſoners to their gret charg.

This Charles thus continuinge his ſickeneſſe, twoo fryers of ſainct Auguſtines order beyng deſirous of money, tooke vppon theim to cure the kinge. And after thei had ſhauen his head and miniſtred to him medicins, the king dayly febled in ſuche wiſe that he was nie deade.

For which conſideration, thei examyned by Philoſophiers and doctoures of phiſyke and founden vncūning, were degraded of their preſthode, and after beheded. To this foly were theſe friers brought by the exciting of the duke of Burgoine as the common fame went.

In the .xix. yere of this Charles the land of Fraunce was greuouſly vexed wyth the plage of ipidiemy, of which ſikeneſſe a great multytude of people dyed. And yͤ yere was ther alſo ſene a blaſing ſtarre of wōderful bygnes, with ſtremes apperinge to mens ſight of moſte feruent brennynge. In this yere alſo Charles hearynge of the ſubduyng of kinge Rycharde, ſent into Englande twoo of his houſholde knyghtes, requyryng king Henrye the fourth than newely made kynge, to ſende home hys Iſabel lately maryed vnto kynge Rycharde, with ſuche dowar as with her was promyſed.

In dooynge of which meſſage kyng Henry toke ſuch diſpleaſure that as ſaith Gaguinus myne autoure, he threwe the ſayde two knyghtes in pryſonne; where through one of theym named Blanchet dyed in Englande, and that other called Henrye, after greate ſykeneſſe retourned into Fraunce. And ſhortly after, king Henry ſent the ſayd dame Iſabell vnto Calays, where ſhe was ioyouſly receyued of the Frenchmen, and ſo conueyed vnto her ſayde father, which as yet was not of his ſykeneſſe cured. By reaſon whereof, amonge the lordes of Fraunce, euerych of them coueytynge to haue rule, greate diſſencion and malyce began to kindle, and ſpecially betwene the dukes of Orleaunce, of Burgoyne, and of Berrye. Than the duke of Orleaunce entendyng to promote his cauſe, vnknowynge the other lordes, allyed hym with the duke of Geldre, and ſtrengthed him with .v.C. men of his, and ſo entred the feldes of Paris. And in lyke maner the duke of Burgoine, with a ſtronge companye kepte another coaſt of the countreye.

Notwithſtandinge, by meanes of other lordes theſe twoo dukes wer kept aſunder, & at length the duke of Orleaunce by þ kinges cõmaũdement þ ſomwhat was than amended, was ordayned regente of the realme. The whiche anone as he was ſet in autorite, fel to al rauine, and oppreſſed the people with cotidyan taſkes and tallages, and the ſpirituall men with diſmes and other exaccions. Wherfore by reaſon of the ſtudientes of Parys, he was at lengthe diſcharged of that dignitie, and the duke of Burgoyne for him put in autoritie. Then the duke of Orleaũce beeynge diſcontented, yode vnto Lucenbourghe a towne in hyghe Almayne and ſo ſoughte agayne ayde of the duke of Geldre forſaid But by his frendes he was ſo aduiſed, that wyth his owne folkes he returned into Fraunce. But yet the malyce and ſtryfe atwene him and the duke of Burgoine ſeaſed not.

About this ſeaſon or ſoone after dyed the duke of Bretayne. And as affermeth the autoure aforenamed, kyng Henry the .iiii. maryed his wyfe, wherof heryng the duke of Burgoine with a company of .vi.M. knyghtes entred Brytaine, and there by ſtrength toke from her, her .iii. ſonnes named Iohn, Richard and Arthur, and preſented them vnto kinge Charles. In the .xxii. yere of this Charles, was borne of Iſabel his wife a man chyld, which alſo was named Charles, the whiche after the deth of his father, to the great aduerſitie of all the realme of Fraunce, was kinge of that realme, and contrary the apointment taken atwene Henrye the .v. after kyng of England, and this Charles þ father now king of Fraunce as after ſhal more ap peare in the

Iſabel

ſtorye of the ſayde kynge Henrye the fyfte.

In this yeare alſo was dame Iſable ſomtyme wyfe of Richard lately king of Englande, maryed vnto Charles, eldeſt ſonne of the duke of Orleaunce. And Iohn the eldeſte of the forenamed ſonnes of the duke of Brytayne lately dead, tooke to wyfe Margaret the daughter of kynge Charles. And Phylype duke of Burgoyne dyed ſoone after, leauing an heyre after hym named Iohn. The whiche, after he was gyrde with the ſwerde of the duchy of Burgoine, he anon by euyl entiſing and councell, arrered war agayne the duke of Orleyaunce, to the great diſturbaunce of all the realme. For the ſayde duke of Orleyaunce, was a prince of a wonderfull highe courage, and deſyrous of gret honor, and after the ſayenge of Gagwinus, coueited to be king of France The whiche went to Auygnyon, wher as than ſate the. xiii. Benet then Pope, during the ſciſme, and admytted by ſome of the Cardynalles after the death of Clement the. vi. To whiche Benet the ſaid duke made gret labour, to depriue the Uniuerſite of Paris from the gret autoritie that it at thoſe dayes ſtode in, which was of merueylous autorytie then (as ſayeth the forenamed auctur) In this while thus endurynge the lande full of myſeryes & aduerſities, the quene whiche that muche fauoured the duke his party, accompanied with the ſayd duke rode to take her diſporte of huntynge into the contre of Meldon. To whiche place ſhe ſente letters vnto the Dolphyn by the duke of Bauary hir brother that he with his wyfe which was doughter vnto the duke of Burgoyne, ſhulde come for to diſporte theim. Where of Iohn then duke of Burgoyne beynge warned, ſuſpected the quene that ſhe with aid of the duke woulde conueighe the Dolphin into Garmany, and ther to holde him at their pleaſures. And to enpeche that purpoſe he in all haſte ſpedde hym towarde the Dolphin, and contrarye the mynd of the duke of Bauary which then was vpon his waye with the ſaid Dolphine towarde the quene, retourned him and lodged him in a ſtrong caſtel called Lupar. Wherof hering the duke of Orleiaunce, aſſembled to hym a compaignie of ſixe thouſand knightes, and came againe towarde Parys, where as that time the duke of Burgoin was. And he herynge of the duke his coming made him ſtrong to receiue him. To whome the citezens of Parys were verye fauourable and ayding, for the eiuul will that they before bare vnto the duke of Orleyaunce, and alſo for thei hoped by him to bee defended from taxes and tallages. Thus continuynge the prouiſyon vpon bothe parties to mete ſhortly in playne battayle, ſuche polytyke meanes was founde by a noble man called Mountague, that a concord and vnite was for that tyme by him ſette atwene the ſaid dukes. And for that new occacion ſhoulde not by preſence kindle atwene theim, therfore the duke of Orleyaunce with his compaignye was ſente into Guyan to war vpon the Engliſhmen, and that other vnto Caleys to lay ſiege vnto that towne. The whiche before had prepared a wonderful engine ſet vpon wheles, by the ſtrength wherof he thought to woꝛke great diſturbaunce vnto the ſaied towne, and as ſaith mine authoꝛ Gagwyne, was in great hope to recouer it againe to the ſubiection of yͤ houſe of Frãuce But that hope was ſone diſpaired foꝛ it was not longe after oꝛ the ſayd duke by the king was countermaunded and retourned. And the duke of Oꝛleyaunce, after he knewe that reſcous were cõming from Burdeaux, he remoued his ſiege, layed by him to Burgus, a towne of Guian, and ſo retourned into Fraunce to his confuſion, as after ſhal appeare.

The duke of Oꝛliãce murdꝛed.

IN the.xxvii. yeare of this Charles, the foꝛmer malice and enuy continuinge in the bꝛeſtes of the ſayd duke of Oꝛleyaunce and of Burgoyne, as the ſayd duke of Oꝛleyaunce was goinge towarde his lodginge in the night of the tenth daye of December, fill vppon him certayne knightes, of the whiche one named Rauſe Auctouile was leader and ſlewe him nere vnto a gate of the citie of Paris named Barbet gate.

After whiche murdꝛe finiſhed, the ſayd ſyꝛ Rauſe with his adherentes fledde vnto the place of the earle of Artoys, where the duke of Burgoyne vſed accuſtomablye to reſoꝛt. And the dead coꝛps was ſoone after by ſuch as came to the exclamation, with alſo a ſeruaunt of his with hym ſlaine, boꝛne into the next houſes. when the rumur of this murder was blowẽ about the citie, anone Lewys vncle vnto the kynge, and then kyng of Scicyle, the dukes of Berrye and of Burbon with other, dꝛew thither, and there with lamentation beholding the coꝛps, commaunded pꝛouiſion to be made foꝛ the buriyng of it within the monaſtery of Celeſtines, wher vpon the ſecond day folowĩg, he was buried with great pompe. Whome amonge other loꝛdes folowed to his buriengethe duke of Burgoyne, not without great ſuſpitiõ of the ſayd murdꝛe. And that enterremente with due obſeruaunce finiſhed, auctoꝛitie was geuen vnto twoo knightes, named Robert Tuplier and Peter Oꝛpheuer, to make enquiry foꝛ yͤ murder of this pꝛince. Wherof the duke of Burgoine beynge aſſertayned, voyded the cite, and bꝛake the bꝛidge of ſaint Maxence after hym, that purſute after him ſhoulde not be made, and ſo haſtly ſped him, that that night folowing he came to Andwarpe, whiche is vpon an hundꝛeth myle from Paris. When Charles the kinge hard of the eſcape of the ſaid duke, fearing leſt he would accuſe him to be conſentinge vnto that euell dede, ſent vnto him comfoꝛtable meſſages, ſo that the ſayde duke withoute warre reſted all that winter, ſometime in Arthois and other whyle in Flaunders at his pleaſure. In the whiche paſtime he ſente into dyuers places of Fraunce ſondꝛy accuſations of the Duke befoꝛe ſlayne, that he entended to depoſe the kinge, and to take vppon hym the rule and gouernaunce of the realme, and to haue poyſoned the ſayd Kynge, as by diuers tokens by hym affirmed for performaũce of the ſame. And alſo that the ſaid duke of Orleiaunce was cauſe of fyrynge of the diſguyſers garmentes before ſhewed, to thende to bringe the kinge in more daunger of ſickeneſſe, or els to be conſumed with the ſame fyre, with ſondrye other diffamations, as leuying of taxes and impoſitions of the people, to his ſinguler aduauntage, and hauge enrychinge, whereby he myght the ſoner attayne vnto his ſayde purpoſe. Thus continuinge this great vnkindnes atwene the duke of Burgoyne and the ſonne, and other of his bloud of the duke of Orleyaunce, the ſayde Duke againſt the beginning of the yeare, hearinge that the kinge and the quene were departed from Paris to Charters, aſſembled to him a ſtronge power of Holanders and other, and came vnto Paris, in whiche citie he muche truſted, to the ende to cauſe the kynge, the quene, and the Dolphin, to whom he had maried his doughter, for to retourne vnto Paris. And to ſtrength his partye, he broughte with him Wylliam earle of Hanſter, whiche Wylliam was a man of great ſtrength and alliaunce, and had maried his ſiſter vnto the duke of Burgoyne aforeſayd, and his doughter and heyre vnto one of kinge Charles his ſonnes, and was goſſip vnto the Quene. For whiche ſayde conſiderations, the ſaied earle entendyng the weale of that realme of Fraunce, laboured ſuche waies and meanes, that by him for that time a concorde ⁊ vnitie was made atwene the two dukes of Orleyaunce and Burgoyne, with aſſured othes and neceſſary actes to that concorde belongyng, and the king with his retynue was agayne retourned vnto Paris. Theſe Dukes thus appeaſed, and the duke of Burgoyne agayne reſtored to the gouernaunce of the realme, aſſociat vnto hym the kinge of Nauerne, whiche varied not frome his fathers vnſtable conditions, ſo that by him newe occaſions of ſtryfe ⁊ variaunce were moued atwene the ſated dukes and theyr alies.

For fyrſt they ſoughte occaſion agaynſte the forenamed Mountague, a man of great wiſedom and honour in the king his courte, and eſpeciall frende vnto the duke of Orleyaunce: and by their malice and vntrue ſurmiſes fynally put to death. And one named Peter Eſſayer or Sayer, then prouoſt of the citie of Paris, or gouernoure, they admitted to the rule of the king his treaſourye, and other diuers officers, ſuche as were anye thing fauoured of the duke of Orleyaunce, they clearly diſcharged. The which for their releif ⁊ comfort reſorted vnto the ſayed duke, ſhewing to him all the demeanure of theyr aduerſaries, adding therunto, that all ſuche conuentions concerninge the amitie atwene him and the duke of Burgoyne before ſworne and enacted, were clearely adnulled and broken.

With theſe tidinges the duke beinge fyred with newe malice, accompanied to him the Dukes of Berry, of Burbon, and of Alenſõ, the earles of Richemount of Alybert, and of Armenak, with other nobles not a fewe, by whoſe counſayles he determined to be auenged vpon the Duke of Burgoyne and other his fautours. Whereof the ſayd duke beyng admoniſhed, drewe him towarde Paris, and ſtrengthed the fortreſſes as he yode. To this duke of Burgoyne, was brother the duke of Brabant named Antonye, a man of greate pollicy and wyſedome, the whiche forecaſtinge the great ſhedinge of chriſten mannes bloude, with many other inconueniences likely to haue enſued of this variaunce betwen theſe two dukes, made ſuch effectuous labour, that with great difficultie he pacified them againe for that time, and brought theim to perſonall communication, and laſtly to amiable and frendlye departinge. After whiche concorde and amitie thus againe concluded the Duke of Burgoyne departed into Picardy, leauing behind him the forenamed Peter Eſſayr to rule the citie of Paris. The which ſhortlye after drewe to him ſuche perſonnes, as before tyme had vexed and diſturbed the duke of Orleyaunce freindes and ſeruauntes within that citie. By whoſe meanes the ſaid Peter ſought fyrſt occaſion againſt the knyght named Venit Thorney, and by falſe ſuggeſtion ſmote fyrſt of his hed, and after did his body to be hanged vpon the common gibbet of Paris in deſpite of the ſaid duke as teſtifieth mine autour. Wherwith the duke beinge wonderſly amoued, reſembled his knightes, and ſped him toward a towne named Schãny. And for to ſtrength another towne named Hane, he ſent a certayne noumber of his knightes, charginge theim with the dwellers to withſtande the force of his enmies. Of this hearing the duke of Burgoine, anone gathered vnto him the numbre of ſixtene M. Fleminges and Pycardes, & ſped him vnto the ſayd towne of Hane. And ſo with his inſtrumentes of warre, aſſayled the gate of the ſayd towne, which ledeth towarde Saint Quintine, that in ſhorte ſpace the ſayd Fleminges wanne the entre of the towne. In which meane ſeaſon, the dwellers with the other ſouldiers, by a backe way or water, wherof the maner by this auctoure is not expreſſed, left the towne and yode vnto the duke of Orleyaunce, beinge as yet at the foreſayd towne of Schanny.

When the Fleminges were entred the towne, and founde it deſert of People and pillage, were it for that they lacked their pray, or for other cauſe here not ſhewed, thei toke ſuch vnkindnes againſt the duke, that for prayer, nor yet for manaces thei would not with him any lenger tary, but returned them home in all haſtely ſpede toward their owne countreye. So that the duke was fayne to withdrawe, and for the more ſuerty, to aſke aide and help of the Engliſhmen, and ſo was holpen by the Prince his coſin Henrye, ſonne of Henry the fourth, as after ſhalbe touched in the twelfe yeare of the fourth Henry.

IN the .xxxi. yeare of this king Charles, whiche was the twelfth yeare of the .iiii. Henry then kinge of Englande, the duke of Orleaunce ſeinge his enemy was turned from

Paris, cauſed ſuch bridges as before by his ſayd enemye were broken, to be redifyed. By the whiche he paſſed the ryuer tyll he came to ſaynte Denys, where as then he founde a capitaine a noble man named ſyr John Cabilõ of the dukes of Burgone, there lefte by him to ſtrength the towne. The whiche ſir John, conſiderynge the wekenes of the ſayde towne, with alſo his lacke of ſtrength, yelded him an the towne vnto the duke, ſwerynge to hym by ſolempne othe, that after that daye he ſhoulde neuer beare armes agayne him. In this paſſimean other capitaine of the Burgonions called Gancourt ſecret by night wan vpon yͤ Frenchemen the bridge of ſaynte Clodald. But not long after the duke of Orleiaunce ſent thither certain Britons, the whiche againe recouered the ſayde bridge, and helde it vnto the ſayd duke his vſe. In which time and ſeaſon the duke of Burgoyn recouering his ſtrength paſſed the bridge of Melent, and ſo came vnto the citie of Parys, and the day folowyng with helpe of the citezens recouered the aboueſaid bridge of ſaint Clodald, and diſtreſſed vpon a thouſande Brytons, whiche had the warde of the ſame. Then the duke of Orleyance made out of ſaynt Denis ouer Saine bridg toward Paris wherof that other duke beynge warned, refuſed the city, and with the kynge then there beynge preſent, remoued with the Dolphine to the town called Stamps, and ſent the earle of Marche named James, with certaine knyghtes to a towne named Poyſete to ſtrength it again the duke of Orleyaũce. The which of the ſayd dukes knyghtes was encountred with, and taken, and ſo ſente to priſon. Wherof heryng the duke of Burgoyne, in ſhorte proceſſe after returned vnto Paris with the king and dolphin, and the duke of Orleyaunce yode to a towne called Seyntclowe.

And in the .xxxii. yere of this ſaid kyng Charles, by counſaile of the duke of Berry and other, ſeinge that the ſaide citie of Parys was ſo ſette againe him wyth alſo the kynge and the Dolphin, ſent a noble man of his hoſt named Albert vnto Henry the fourth yet kynge of Englande, to requyre him of ayde to withſtande the tiranny of the duke of Burgoyne, that wyth hys complices entendid to ſubuert the realme of Fraunce. To this requeſt king Henry gaue good eare, and laſtly graunted to his peticion, and ſent thither (as ſaieth the Frenche cronicle) Thomas hys ſonne duke of Clarence, alſo the duke of Yorke, with John erle of Cornwale acompaignied with him eyght hundreth knightes and ſouldyours, and a thouſande archers. The which compaignie when the were landed in Fraunce, and herde that the Frenche lordes were in treatie of peace, and no man to theim gaue wages as thei tofore were promiſed, fell vpon a towne called Bellin, and it thei ryfled, and therein toke as priſoners the abbot of that monaſterye with other & conueighed them to Burdeaux & after into England, wher for finaunce & other money due of olde by the French king (as affirmeth Gagwine) thei remained many yeres after. And thus the Englishmen gliſhe menne wer thus departed: albeit that in the Engliſhe Chronicle, and thirtene yere of the fore named kyng Henry, of them is other report made. The Lordes of Fraunce retourned to their olde diſcention, and continued in long ſtrief, whereof the circumſtaunce were long and tedious to tell, and to ſhewe the vnſtableneſſe of thē, how ſomewhile the Duke of Orleiaūce was fauoured of the king and the dolphin, and there again the Duke of Burgoyne clene out of conceite. The whiche contencion thus enduryng, kyng Henry the fowerth died, and Henry his ſonne the fifth Hēry, was admitted for Kyng of Englande after hym, that ſhortly after ſente his Ambaſadours vnto the Frenche kyng, aſkyng of hym his doughter Katherine in mariage (as affirmeth the Frenche booke). But diuers other writers ſhewe, that he aſked the whole landes due to him within the realme of Fraūce, by reaſon of the compoſitiō made in tyme paſſed, atwene his progenitoure Edwarde the thirde, and Jhon then kyng of Fraunce. And for he was diſdeinouſly anſwered, he therfore made vpon thē ſharpe warre, as in the fowerth yere of the ſaied Henry after ſomedeale doeth appere. By reaſon of which warre, the ciuill battaile or ſtrief that long while had continued emong the Frenchemen, then did aſwage. For in the fowerth yere of this Hēry, which was the .xxxv. yere of this Charles, the ſaid Henry inuaded the realme of Fraunce and had at Egincourte a triumphant victorie: as in the ſaid third yere of Henry the fifth is more at length declared. Then it foloweth in the ſtorie, after many townes ⁊ ſtrong holdes, by the Engliſhmen in ſondrie places of Fraunce obteined, in the .xxxviii. yere of this Charles, a Frenche man named the lorde of the Iſle of Adam, and Jhō Willers in proper name, gatheryng to hym a compaignie of tyrauntes, to the nomber of three hūdred or mo, whereof many wer olde ſeruauntes of the Kyng his houſhold, and then put out by the dolphin, and other that then had the rule of the king, by treaſon of a clerke, obteined the keies of one of the gates of Paris, ⁊ ſo entred the citee by night, and by a watch woorde emong them deuiſed, aſſociate to them many Burgonions and ſo beyng ſtrong, yode where the king was, and gat the rule of his perſon. And that doen, al ſoch as thei might find that then bare any rule, thei ſlue by one meane ⁊ other, ſo that vpon the daie folowyng, was nombred of ded corſes within the citee vpon .iiii.M. Emong the whiche, of noble menne was Henry de Marle, then chaūceller of Fraunce, and Grauntpre with many other. And for to haue the more aſſiſtance of the common people, the ſaid Willers ſet yͤ kyng vpon an horſe, and lad hym about the citee, as he that had ſmall reaſon to guide hymſelf, and ſo ruled al thing as his companie would. Wherefore the dolphin fearyng to fall in the daunger of ſo wilde a cōpanie, yode to Meldune, and then called to hym ſoche as then were left on liue, to withſtande theſe tiraūtes: and the duke of Burgoine then beyng within the Citee, and compaſſer of all this miſchief, as

Murde

ſome conſtrued and demed. After whiche compaigny to him gathered, he returned to the citie of Paris, and aſſailed one of the gates. But when he ſawe the citezens toke partie agaiſt him, he thought his trauaile loſt. wherefore without great aſſaute making, he called thence his knightes, and ſo departed againe to the place which he came from, and from thens vnto Thurō, in appeaſing the countreys and townes as he wente, whiche at thoſe dayes were farre out of frame. And thē in the two and thirty yere of the ſaid Charles, king Henrye the fifth landed with a ſtronge power at a place called Touke in Normandy, and after laide ſiege to many ſtronge holdes and townes, and theim wanne, as Cane, Phaleis, Roan, and other, as in the ſixte yeare of theſaied Henry folowing, is more at length declared. In tyme of whiche warre thus made by king Henry, the dolphine and the duke of Burgoine, either of them prouided to defende the malice of the other, in ſo muche that as teſtifyeth the French cronicle, the duke was aduiſed to haue taken party with the Engliſhmen. This ſaying (as witneſſeth an auctour named Floure of hyſtories, whiche touched in latin many geſtes and dedes doen by kinges of Englād) the Frenche men bringe in for to excuſe their infortune and cowerdiſe, by reaſon wherof, thei loſte not alonely their land, but alſo the honoure and name of the ſame. Then laſtely the duke beynge of minde by exhortacion of Philyp Joſquine and Jhon de Tolōgun, with alſo a ladye called the counteſſe of Grat, the duke was reconſiled vnto the Dolphine, and a day of meting apointted at Monſtruel, wher either of theim ſhould be accompaignied with ten lordes onely without mo. At whiche day the ſaid princes with their aſſigned lordes beinge aſſembled, many reaſōs and argumentes were layd and replied vpon both ſides: By occaſion wherof one of the Dolphine his compaignie ſodainely drew his knife and ſtrake to duke vnto the hart, ſo that he died ſone after. Whiche murder was ſuppoſed to be dooen by a knight called Tanguide de Chaſtell, whiche oftyme paſſed, had been familyer ſeruaunte with the duke of Orleaunce, before ſlaine by meanes of the ſaid duke of Burgoine.

The duke of Burgoine murdred.

After which murder thus committed, the land of Fraunce was brought in muche more ſtrife and variaunce, in ſo muche that Philip the ſon of the ſaide Jhon duke of Burgoine being then in Paris and hauinge the rule of the kinge and the Citee, tooke partie with the Engliſhe menne againſte the Dolphine. By reaſon whereof as ſondry, writers agreen, king Henry his partie was greatlye augmented and holpen, ſo that finally king Henry obteined much of his will, and ſhortely after maryed dame Katherine doughter of Charles kinge, in the. xli. yere of his reigne, with aſſuraunce and promiſe of the inherytaunce of the realme of Fraunce to him and his heyres, after the deathe of the ſaide Charles, as to you more plainelye ſhall be ſhewed in the eyghte yeare of the ſayde Henrye the fyfte. After whyche ma-

mariage concluded and finiſhed, yet the Dolphi ceaſed not to make new motions and ſteringes. Duringe the whiche, Kinge Charles died in October, and was buried at S. Denis, when he had reigned in greate trouble vppon the poynt of.xlii.yeares, leauinge after hym, as is affirmed by the foꝛe named auctour Gagwine, a ſonne and Dolphin of Vienne, called Charles, whiche after was kinge of Frenchemen, and was named Charles the ſeuenth, oꝛ the eyght after ſome wꝛyters.

❧ Henry the fourth.

Anglia.

Henry the fourth.

HEnry the.iiii. of that name, and ſonne of Iohn of gaũt late Duke of Lancaſter, toke poſſeſſion of yͤ dominion of the realme of England, as befoꝛe in the end of the ſtoꝛy of the ſeconde Richarde is ſhewed, vpon the laſt day of September, in the yeare of oure Loꝛde. M. iii. C. lxxxxix, and in the. xix. yeare of Charles the. vii. then Kinge of Fraunce. After whiche poſſeſſion ſo by hym taken, anone he made newe officers. As the earle of Noꝛthumberlande he made conſtable of Englande, the earle of Weſtmerlande was made Marſhall, ſyꝛ Iohn Serle Chaũceller, Iohn Neweberye Eſquier Treaſoꝛer, and ſyꝛ Rycharde Clyffoꝛd knight keper of the pꝛiui ſignet. And that done pꝛouiſion was made foꝛ his coꝛonation againſt the day of the tranſlation of S. Edwarde the confeſſour next then comminge. And the parliament was pꝛolonged tyll the tueſday folowing the ſayde daye of coꝛonation. Then vpon the euen of the ſayde daye of Coꝛonation, the King within the Towꝛe of London made. xli. knightes of the Bathe, whereof thꝛe were his owne ſonnes, and thꝛee earles, and fyue loꝛdes. And vpon mondaye being the ſayd day of S. Edwarde, and the. xiii. day of October, he was crowned at Weſtminſter of the archebiſhop of Caũterbury. After which ſolempnitie finiſhed, an honourable feaſt was holden within the greate halle of Weſtminſter. Where the kyng being ſet in the midde ſea of the table, the archbiſhop of Caunterbury with. iii. other pꝛelates was ſet at the ſame table vpon the ryghte hand of the king, and the Archbyſhop of Yoꝛke, with other four pꝛelates was ſet vpõ that other hand of the king, & Henry the kinges eldeſt ſon ſtode vpon the right hand with a pointles ſwearde holdinge vp right, and the earle of Noꝛthũberland newely made conſtable, ſtode vpon the lefte hande with a ſharpe ſwerd holden vp right, and by either of thoſe ſweardes, ſtoode two other loꝛdes, holding. ii. ſcepters. And befoꝛe the king ſtode all the diner while the dukes of Amnarle, of Surrey & of Excetor, w other. ii. loꝛdes. And the earle of Weſtmerlande then newlye made Marſhal, rode about the hal with many tipped ſtaues about him, to ſe the roume of the hall kept, that officers might with eaſe ſerue the tables. Of the whiche tables the

The coꝛonation of Henry the fourth.

chief

chiefe vpon the righte ſyde of the halle was begonne with the Barons of the fiue portes, and at the table next the cupborde vpon the lefte hande, ſat the mayre and his brethren the aldermen of Londō. Whiche mayre then beinge Drew Barentine goldeſmith, for ſeruice there by him done, as other mayres at euery kinges and Quenes coronation vſe for to do, had there a ſtandinge cuppe of golde. Then after the ſeconde courſe was ſerued, ſyr Thomas Dimoke knight being armed at all pieces, and ſitting vpon a good ſtede, rode to the higher part of the halle, and there before the kinge, cauſed an Harauld to make proclamation, that what man would ſaye that kinge Henry was not the rightfull enheritour of the crown of England and rightfullye crowned, he was there ready to wage with him bataple, then, or at ſuche tyme as it ſhoulde pleaſe the king to aſſigne. Whiche proclamation he cauſed to be made after in three ſundrye places in the halle in Engliſh and in Frenche, with many mo obſeruaunces at his ſolempnite exerciſed and done, whiche were longe to rehearſe.

Then this feaſt with al honour ended, vpon the morne being tueſday, the parliament was agayne begonne. And vpon wedniſday ſir John Cheynye, that before tyme had occupied as ſpeaker of that parliament, by his owne laboure, for cauſe of ſuche infirmities as he then had, was diſcharged, and a ſquier named William Durward was elect to that rome for him.

And then was the Parliament and the actes therof laſt called by kinge Richarde, adnulled, and ſet at noughte, and the parliamente holden in the eleuenth yere of his reigne holden for firme and ſtable. And the ſame day Henry the kinges eldeſte ſonne was choſen and admitted Prince of wales, and duke of Cornewalle, and Earle of Cheſter, and heire apparaunt vnto the crowne. Vpon the thurſday folowinge, was put into the common houſe a bylle, deuiſed by ſyr John Bagot, then priſoner in the Towre. wherof the effecte was, that the ſayde ſyr John confeſſed, that he harde king Richarde ſay, diuers times, and at ſondrye parlamentes in his time holden, that he would haue his entent and pleſure concerning his own matters what ſoeuer betide of the reſidue. And if any withſtode his wyll or mynde, he would by one meane or an other, bringe him oute of hys life.

Alſo he ſhewed further, that kinge Richarde ſhulde ſhewe and ſaye vnto him at Lichefield, in the xxi. yeare of his reigne, that he deſyred no longer for to liue, then to ſe his lordes and comons to haue him in as great awe and dreade, as euer they had of any of his progenitours, ſo that it might be cronicled of hym, that none paſſed hym of honnoure and dignitie, with condition that he were depoſed and put from his ſayde dignitie the nexte morowe after. And if euer it came ſo to, that he ſhoulde reſygne his kingelye maieſtye, he ſayde his minde was to reſigne vnto the duke of Herford, as vnto him that was mooſte hableſte for to occupie that honoure: But one thinge he feared, leaſte he would do tyranny againſt the churche. Moreouer, he ſhewed by the ſaide bill, that as the ſaide ſir Jhon Bagot rode behinde the duke of Northfolke toward Weſtminſter, the ſaid Duke laide vnto his charge, that he with other of the kinges councell had murdred the duke of Gloceter, the which at that time to the ſaide duke he denied, and ſaid at that day he was on liue. But within. iii. wekes af the ſaide ſir Jhon by the kinges commaundement was ſente with other perſonnes vnto Calais: where for feare of his owne life, he ſaw the ſaid murder put in execution. And furthermore he ſhewed, that ther was no man of honoure at that dayes more in fauoure with kinge Richarde; then was the Duke of Amnarle, and that by his councell he toke the lordes, and wrought many other thinges after the ſaid dukes aduiſe. Alſo he ſhewed, that he harde the king being then at Chiltrine langley ſwere many othes, that the duke of Herforde nowe king, ſhould neuer retourne into Englād, and rather then he ſhuld againe enherite his fathers landes, he wold geue theim vnto the heires of the duke of Gloceter, and of the earles of Arundell, and of Warwike, at the laſt parliament adiuged. And further he ſhewed, that of all theſe matters he ſente the ſaide duke knowledge into Fraunce, by one named Roger Smert, admoneſhing him to prouide by his wiſedome to withſtand the kinges malice, which ſhewed him to be his mortall enemy.

And laſtly he ſhewed in the ſaid bill; that he hearde the Duke of Amnarle ſay vnto ſir Jhon Buſſhey, and to ſir Henry Grene, J had leuer then. xx. thouſand poūd; that this man were deade. And when thei had aſked him whiche man, he ſaid the Duke of Herford not for dred that J haue of his perſon, but for ſorowe and rumours that he is likely for to make within this realme. Whiche bill was borne vnto the kinges parliamēt chaumber, and ther red. After reading wherof, the ſaid duke of Amnarle ſtode vp, & ſaid as touchinge ſuche articles as in that bill were put againſte him, they were falſe and vntrewe, and that he would proue vpon his body, or otherwiſe as the king wold commaund him. Upon fridaye, yͤ ſaid ſir Jhon Bagot was brought into the ſaid parliament chaumber, and examined vpō euery article of his bill, al the which he there affirmed.

Then it was aſked of him what he could ſaye againſt the duke of Exceter. Wherunto he anſwered and ſaid that he could lay nothing vnto his charge. But there is (he ſaid) a yoman in Newgate called Halle, that can ſaye ſomwhat of you. Then ſaide the duke what ſo euer he or ye can or liſt to ſay of me this is truth that J ſhall here expreſſe: Truth it is that yͤ laſt time that the king was at Woodſtoke, the duke of Norfolke and ye haue had me to you into the chapel, and cloſed the dore vpon vs. And ther ye made me ſwere vpon the ſacrament there preſente, to kepe ſuche counſaile as there ye ſhoulde then ſhewe vnto me.

Wher after ye ſhewed to me, yͭ ye could neuer bring your purpoſe about, while ſir Jhon of Gaūt late duke of Lancaſter lyued. Wherfoꝛe ye were aduiſed foꝛ to haue ſhoꝛtly after a councel at Lytchefeld, by the whiche ye condiſcēded ẏ the ſaid ſir Jhon ſhould be reſted in ſuch maner that he ſhulde haue occaſion to diſobey that areſte, by reaſon wherof by chaunce medley he ſhoulde be there ſlayne. Wherunto my counſaile then was, that the king ſhuld cal his ſecret councell, and if they agreed therunto, J foꝛ my parte wolde agree vnto the ſame. To whiche ſaiyng Sir John Bagot gaue none anſwere. And vpon Saturdaie, the ſaied Bagot & Hal were both bꝛought into the Parliamente chaumber, and ther examined, and after countermaunded to pꝛiſō. And as ſone as they were departed, the loꝛde Fytz Water ſtoode vp and ſayde, Mooſte redoughted Souerayne Loꝛde, where as the duke of Amnarle hath befoꝛe tymes and now lately, excuſed him of the death of the Duke of Glouceſter, J ſaye and will iuſtifye it, that he was cauſe of his death, and that J ſhal pꝛoue vpon his body if your grace be ſo contented. To the contrarie wherof the duke with ſharp woꝛdes aunſwered, ſo that gauges of battayle were offerd of bothe parties, and ſealed and delyuered vnto the loꝛde Marwall.

Then parties began to be taken among the loꝛdes, in ſo much that the duke of Surrei toke partie with the duke of Amnarle, and ſayed that all that by hym was doen, was doen by conſtrainte of Richarde then kyng, and he hymſelf and other, conſented parfoꝛce vnto the ſame.

Where againſt the ſayde loꝛde Fitz water and other replyed. Wherfoꝛe ſilence was commaunded, and foꝛthwith the foꝛe named Halle foꝛ that he had confeſſed befoꝛe the Loꝛdes, that he was one of theim that putte to death the Duke of Glouceter at Calais, he therfoꝛe was iudged to be dꝛawen from the towꝛe of Lōdon vnto tiburne, and there to be hanged and quartered.

The which execution was done vpon the monday folowing.

Thus with theſe cauſes and many other, this Parlamēt continued till a newe Maioꝛ named Thomas Knolles Grocer, was admitted and alſo ſwoꝛne, vppon the next daie folowing the feaſt of Simond and Jude.

Anno dñi. M.ccc.xcix. Anno dñi. M.cccc.
Gꝛocer.
Thomas Knolles. { wyllyam walderne. / wyllyam Hyde. } Anno.i.

he firſte
re.

IN this firſte yere of king Hēry the.iiii. yet laſtinge the foꝛeſayde parliament, vpon the wedniſday next folowing the feaſte of Simonde and Jude, the loꝛde Moꝛley appealed the Erle of Saliſbury of treaſon, & caſt his hoode foꝛ a gage to trie with him by battayle. The which ſayeng he replyed, and caſte from him his gloues foꝛ a gauge, foꝛ to pꝛoue his ſayenge falſe and vntrewe, whiche were there ſealed and delyuered vnto the Lorde Marſhall. And vpon the monday paſſed an acte, that no lorde nor other perſon of no degree, ſhoulde after that daye laye for his excuſe any conſtraynt or coarcting of his Prince, in executing of any wrõg iudgment or other criminous and vnlefull dedes, ſaeynge that for feare they durſte none otherwiſe doo, for ſuch excuſe after that day ſhall ſtande him in none effecte. And alſo that all ſheryffes maye yelde accompt in the Eſcheker, vpon theyr othes, and that they be chaunged in al ſhires yerely. And alſo that no lorde nor other man of might, geue any gownes or liueries vnto any of their tenauntes or other perſõs, except onely their houſhold and meinial ſeruauntes. And alſo then was enacted, that all repiers and other fiſhers from Rie and Winchelſe & other coſtes of the ſees ſide, ſhould ſell it them ſelfe in Cornehill and chepe and other ſtretes of London, vnto all men that woulde of theim bye it, excepte fiſhmongers and other that woulde bie the ſaide fiſhe, to make ſale of it againe.

And vpon the wedniſday folowinge, was enacted that Richarde late king of Englande, ſhould for his miſgouernaunce of the realme be holden in ſuche priſon as the king would aſſigne, duringe his naturall life. And then the kinge graunted vnto all perſons generall pardones, ſo that thei were fet out of the Chauncery by Alhalownetide nexte folowing, excepte ſuch perſons as were preſente at the murder of the duke of Gloucester. And in this while was the archbyſhoppe of Caunterburye reſtored to his church of Caunterbury, and doctoure Roger, whiche there was ſet by king Richarde, was remoued and ſet in the ſea of London, with the whiche he was righte well contented. And then was the earle of Arundels ſonne reſtored to all his fathers landes, with diuers other before by king Richarde diſherited.

And ſhortlye after was the ſaide parliament diſſolued, and euerye man had licence to departe vnto his owne. And then was Richarde late kinge hadde vnto the caſtell of Ledes in Kent, and there kepte. And prouiſion was made at Windeſore for the king to kepe there his Chriſtemaſſe. In which paſtime the dukes of Amnarle, of Surrey, and of Exeter, with the Earles of Saleſbury, and of Glouceter, with other of their affinity, made prouiſion for a diſguiſynge or a mummynge to be ſhewed vnto the kinge vppon Twelfthnight, and the time was nere at hande and all thinge redy for the ſame.

Vpon the ſayde Twelfte day came ſecretlye vnto the king the duke of Amnarle, and ſhewed vnto hym that he with the other lordes afore named wer apointed to ſlea him in the time of the foreſaid diſguiſyng ſhewinge, wherfore he aduiſed hym to prouide for his owne ſuretye.

Treaſo

At whoſe warninge, the king ſecretlye departed from Windeſore, and come the ſame night vnto London.

Wherof the ſaide lordes beinge ware and that their counſell was bewrayed, fledde in all haſte weſtarde.

But the Kyng cauſed haſtie purſute, to be made after thē, ſo that ſhortly after the Duke of Surrey and the Erle of Saliſburie were taken at Sirceter, where thei wer ſtreight behaded, and their heades ſent vnto London, and ſet vppon the bridge.

And at Oxenforde were taken ſir Thomas Blont, and ſir Benet Sely knightes, and Thomas Wintercell Eſquire, the whiche were there headed and quartered, and their heades ſent vnto London bridge. And at Pitwel in Eſſex, was taken ſir Ihon Hollande duke of Exeter and after brought to Plaſhy, a place faſt by, where he was beheaded, & after his head was ſent to London, and ſet ther with the other vpon the Bridge, pight vpō a ſtake. And nere about theſame tyme at Briſtowe, was taken the lorde Spenſer, then erle of Gloceter, and there beheaded, & his hed ſent vnto London bridge.

And in theſame yere, ſir Barnarde Brokeis, ſir Ihon Selly, ſir Ihon Maundely, and ſir Ihon Fereby, knightes & clerkes, were taken as priſoners in the Tower of London, and ſone after foriudged, hanged and heded, and their heddes alſo ſet vpō Lōdon bridge. In whiche paſſetyme, Richarde late kyng was remoued from the caſtell of Ledis in Kente, and ſent vnto Pountfreit caſtell.

In this yere alſo, as before is touched in the .xix. yere of the .vii. Charles, Kyng Henry ſente vnto Caleis Iſabell late quens of Englande, and wife vnto Richarde lately Kyng, and with her greate treaſoure, and many riche iewelles, as teſtifieth the Engliſh chronicle, and there receiued by the Frenchmen, vnder ſaufe conduite paſſyng, and by theim conueighed vnto her father into Fraunce, and after maried vnto Charles, ſonne and heire to the duke of Orleaūce as before I haue ſhewed in yͤ .xxii yere of her ſaied fathers reigne.

Then it foloweth in the ſtorie of Kyng Henry, when he had firmely conſidered the greate conſpiracie againſt hym, by the forenamed Lordes and other perſones, intended and imagined to his deſtruction, and releauyng of Richarde late Kyng, he in auoydyng of like daunger, prouided to put the ſaied Richard out of this preſent life, and ſhortly, after the opinion of moſte writers, he ſent a Knight, named ſir Piers of Exton, vnto Pountfreite Caſtell, where he with eight other in his compaignie, fell vpon the ſaid Richarde late Kyng, and hym miſerablie in his Chambre ſlewe, but not without reuengement of his death. For, or he were felled vnto the grounde, he ſlewe of the ſaied eight, fower menne, with an Axe of their owne. But laſtly he was wounded vnto death, by the hand of the ſaied Sir Piers of Exton, and ſo died.

Kinge Richard murdered.

After execution of whiche dedly deede, the ſaied ſir Piers tooke greate repentaunce, in ſo moche that lamentably he ſaied, alas, what haue we doen, we haue now put to death hym, that hath been our ſoueraigne and drad lorde, by the ſpace of .xxii. yeres, by reaſon wherof I ſhall be reproched of all honor, where ſoeuer I after this daie become, and all men ſhall redound this deede to my diſhonor &

ſhame. Other opinions of yͤ death of this noble Prince are lefte by writers, as by waie of fame and other. But this of moſte writers, is teſtified and alledged.

When the death of this prince was publiſhed abrode, he was after, open viſage laied in the minſter of Pountfrait, ſo that all men might knowe and ſee that he was dead. And the .xii. daie of Marche folowyng, he was with greate ſolempnitie brought through the citee of Lōdon to Paules, and there laied open viſage again, to thende that his death might be manifeſtly knowen. Whiche was doubtfull to many one, and ſpecially to ſuche as ought to hym fauour. And then after a fewe daies, the ſaied corps was caried vnto the Freers of Langley, and there enterred. But after he was remoued by kyng Henry the .v. in the firſte yere of his reigne, and with great honour and ſolempnitie, conueied vnto the monaſterie of Weſminſter, and there within the chapell of ſaincte Edwarde, honourably buried vppon the Southe ſide of ſaincte Edwardes Shrine, with this Epitaphie vpon his toumbe as foloweth.

Prudens & mundus Richardus iure ſecundus
Per fatum victus, iacet hic ſub marmore pictus,
Verax ſermone fuit, & plenus ratione,
Corpore procerus, animo prudens vt homerus,
Eccleſiam fauit, elatos ſubpeditauit,
Quemuis proſtrauit, regalia qui violauit.

Whiche verſes are thus to bee vnderſtande, in our vulgare and Engliſhe tongue, as foloweth.

Perſite and prudent Richard by right the ſeconde,
Vanquiſhed by fortune lieth here now grauen in ſtone.
True of his worde, and thereto wel reſounde.
Semely of perſone, and like to Homer as one.
In worldly prudence, and euer the churche in one
Vphelde and fauoured, caſtyng the proude to grounde.
And all that would his royall ſtate confounde.

But yet alas, thoughe that this Metre or rime
Thus doth enbeliſh this noble princes fame,
And that ſome clarke whiche fauoured hym ſometyme
Liſte by his connyng, thus to enhaunce his name
Yet by his ſtorie appeareth in hym ſome blame.
VVherefore to princes is ſureſt memorie.
Their liues to exerſice in vertuous conſtancie.

When this mortall prince was thus deade and grauen, kyng Hēry was in quiette poſſeſſion of the realme, and founde greate riches that before time to kyng Richard belonged. For as witneſſeth Polichronicon, he founde in king Richardes treaſourye. iii. hundreth thouſand pounde, of ready coyne, beſyde iewels and other riche veſſels, whiche were as muche in value or more. And ouer that he eſpied in the keping of the treaſourers handes, an hundred and fyftye nobles, and iewels and other ſtuffe that counteruayled the ſaid value. And ſo it ſhoulde ſeme that kinge Richarde was riche whan his money and iewels amounted to ſeuen hundred thouſand poũde.

And in the moneth of October, and ende of this Mayres yeare, was brent in Smithfeild of London a preiſte named ſyr william Sawtry, for certayne pointes of hereſy.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.i.

Goldſmith John Fraunces.
John Wakele
Wyllyam Ebot,
Anno .ii.

he secōd re

IN this ſeconde yeare of king Henry, and moneth of Februarye, was drawne and hanged for treaſon a knight named ſir Roger Clarengton at Tyburne with twoo of his ſeruauntes, the pryour of Lande, and .viii. freers minours of graye freers, of the which ſome were bachelers of diuinitie.

And in this yeare began a great diſcention in Wales, betwene the lorde Gray Ruffin, and a welſhman named Howen of Glendore. Whiche Howen gathered to him great ſtrength of Welſhmen, and did much harme to that country, not ſparinge the kinges lordſhips nor his people. and laſtly toke the ſayde lorde Graye priſoner, and helde him priſoner, tyll contrarye his wyll he hadde maryed the ſaid Howens doughter. After whiche matrimony finiſhed, he helde the ſayd Lorde ſtyll in Wales, tyll he dyed, to the kinges great diſpleaſure.

Wherefore the kinge with a ſtronge armye ſpedde hym into Wales, for to ſubdue the ſayde Howen and his adherentes. But whan the kinge with his power was entred the countrey, he with his fautours fledde into the mountaynes and helde hym there, ſo that the kynge might not wynne to theim withoute deſtruction of his hooſte. Wherefore fynallye by the aduice of his Lordes, he retourned in to Englande for that ſeaſon.

In this yeare alſo wheat and other graynes beganne to fayle, ſo that a quarter of wheate was ſolde at London for .xvi. ſhyllynges, and dearth ſhoulde haue ben, hadde not bene the prouiſion of marchauntes that broughte Rye, and Rye floure oute of Spruce, wherewith this land was greatlye ſuſteyned and eaſed.

Anno.dñi.M.cccc.i. Anno dñi M.cccc.ii.

Jhon Shadworth. { Wyllyam Venoure / Jhon Fremingam. } Anno.iii.

The third yeare.

The making of the cundupt in Cornehill.

A rebelliō.

AND in this yere the conduite ſtanding vpon cornehill in London, was begonne to be made. And in the ſommer folowing ſir Thomas Percy Erle of Worceter, and ſir Henry Percy ſonne and heire vnto the Earle of Northumberlande, gathered a great power, and vpon the day of ſainte Praxed the virgin or the .xxi. day of July, met with the king nere vnto Shrowesbury, and ther gaue vnto him a crewell battell but to their owne confuſion. For in that fight the ſaid ſir Thomas Percy was taken, and his neuew the forſaide ſir Henry with many a ſtrong man vpon their partie, was ſlaine. And vpon the kinges partie, the prince was wounded in the hed, and the earle of Stafford with many other ſlayne. And the .xxv. day of July folowing at Shrowesburye, the ſaid ſir Thomas Percy was beheded, and after his heade caried to London, and there ſet vpon the bridge.

In this battaile was many a noble man ſlaine vpon either partye. And it was the more to be noted vengeable, for ther the father was ſlaine of the father, and brother of brother, and neuewe of neuewe. And in the moneth of Auguſt folowing, the ducheſſe of Britaine landed at Fulmouth, in the prouince of Cornewaile, and from thēce was conueied to Wincheſter, where in ſhort time after, king Henry maried her in the cathedrall churche of the ſaide citie. And ſoone vppon was the eldeſt daughter of kinge Henry named dame Blanch maryed at Coleine to the dukes ſonne of Bayer.

Anno.dñi.M.cccc.ii. Anno dñi.M.cccc.iii.

Jhon Walcot Draper { Richarde Merlewe / Robert Chichile } Anno.iiii.

The .iiii. yeare.

IN this yeare and .xiiii. day of the moneth of September, was the foreſaid ducheſſe of Britaine and the wife of the kinge receaued with great honoure into the citie of London, and ſo by the maire and the citezins conueied vnto Weſtminſter. Wher, vppon the morowe folowing, ſhe was crowned quene of England, with great honour and ſolempnytie, the circumſtaunce wherof I paſſe ouer.

In this yere alſo Rupertus which after the depoſing of Wenſelaus was by the electours of yͤ Empire and by authoritie of Boniface the ix. than byſhop of Rome, admitted for Emperour of Rome, came into England with a goodly company onely to ſe the countrey and commodities of the ſame. The whiche of the kinge was honourablye receaued and feaſted, and laſtely conueyed by the kynge towarde the ſea ſyde, where eyther departed from other, wͭ exchaūge of ryche and precious gyftes. For this Rupertus was named of writers a man of excellente bountye and largeſſe. And he gaue more liberally, for ſo much as al the time of his being in England, he laye here at the kynges coaſtes. And while he was at London, he was lodged at the houſe of S. Iohns in Smithfielde.

This yeare alſo vpon S. Laurence euen, or the. ix. daye of Auguſte, a Lorde of Britaine named the Lorde of Caſtile in Frenche, landed within a myle of Plummouth, with a great company of Normans and Brytons, and cam vnto the ſayd towne, and lodged there all nighte, and ſpoyled and robbed the ſayde towne. And vpõ the daye folowinge, whan they had done what they woulde, they retourned to theyr ſhippes, with plentye of pillage and priſoners ſuche as they fande.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.iii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.iiii.

Wylliam Aſkam.
Thomas Fawconer.
Thomas Pooll.
Anno. v.

he.v.ye.

AND in this yeare, ſoone after Candlemas, the foreſayd Lorde of Caſtile truſtynge to wynne a lyke enterpryce, as in the yeare paſſed he had doen, he beyng accompanyed with a ſtronge nauye of Frenchemen and Brytons, was encountred of the englyſhe flote, within two myles of Dertmouth, at a place called Blacke Poole. Where after long and cruel fight, the ſaid lorde was ſlayne, with the more party of the people, and dyuers of his ſhippes taken, as witneſſeth the Englyſhe Cronicle with diuers other Englyſh authoures. But the Frenche booke excuſeth this diſcomfiture of Frenchmen, and ſayeth, that by treaſon of a Gaſcoyne named Peryn or Perot de Languyle, whiche ſhewed vnto the ſayde Lorde Caſtile that he had eſpied certaine Englyſh ſhippes in a Creke lightely withoute reſiſtence to be taken, cauſed the ſaied lorde to make ſayle towarde the ſayde towne of Dartmouth. Where, after he had continued a certaine time his courſe, he eſpied the whole flote of Englyſhmenne whiche made towarde him, and ſo at the ſayde Blacke poole encountred and faught, and laſtely eſcaped the daunger of his ennemies, as teſtifieth the ſayde French cronicle, but not vnhurte, for he was ſo wounded in that fyght that he dyed ſhortely after.

And the moneth of Aprill folow-lowing, the duke of Clarēce with the earle of kent and many other lordes, toke ſhippinge at Meregate, and ſo ſailed vnto Scluce in Flaunders: And after the ſaied duke had there refreſſhed him and his compaignie, he toke ſhippyng againe, and holdynge his courſe toward Spin, he was encountered with thre greate Carikes of Jeane, the which he aſſailed, and after long bekering theim tooke, beyng laden with marchaundiſe, and ſo with that pray retourned to Cambre before Winchelſee, in the whiche hauen the ſaid goodes were eanted and ſhared. But how it was by variaūce among theim ſelfes, or other wiſe, one of the ſaid carickes was ſodēly fiered and ſo conſumed. For reſtituciō of which goodes and ſhippes, the marchauntes Januence made after great and longe ſute to the king and his counſaile, in the whiche paſſe time they borowed cloth, wolle and other marchaundiſes, amounting vnto great and notable ſommes of diuers marchauntes of Englande. And whan thei ſaw that thei might haue no hope of recouerye of their loſſe, thei ſodenly auoyded the lande, and left the foreſaide notable ſummes vnpaied, to the greate hinderaunce and vtter vndoing of many Engliſh marchauntes.

In this yeare a yeman named Wyllyam Serle, ſometime yoman of king Richardes robes, was taken in the marches of Scotland and brought vnto Lōdon, and there in the Guildehal areigned for the murder of the duke of Gloceter at Calays. Uppon whiche murder he was attainte and conuict, and vpon the.xx.day of October he was drawen from the towre vnto Tibourne, and there hanged and quartered, and his head was after ſet vpon London bridge, and his foure quarters were ſent to.iiii.ſundry good townes.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.iiii. Anno dñi.M.cccc.v.

John hinde Draper

Wyllyam Lowſte
Stephau Spilman.

Anno.vi.

The.vi. yere.

AND in this yeare and moneth of Januarye, were certayne courſes of warre ron in Smithfelde, betwene ſir Edmonde Earle of Kent, and the lord Moriſ a baron of Scotland, vppon the chalenge of the ſaide Scottiſhe lorde. But the Earle of Kente bare hym ſo valyauntly, that to him was geuen the price of that iourney to his great honoure. And in the ſame yeare, ſir Richarde Scrope than Archbiſhop of Yorke, and the lord Moubray then Marſhall of England, with other to thē alied, for grudg that they bare againſt the kinge, gathred vnto them great ſtrēgth, entendinge to haue put downe the kinge, as the ſame than wente. Wherof the king beinge enfourmed, in all haſt ſped toward them and met with them on this ſyde Yorke: Where after a ſkirmyſh by the

Traito

theſaied lordes, thei were then taken, and after preſented vnto the Kyng at Yorke, where thei were bothe demed to ſuffer death for their rebellion, and ſhortly after, thei were bothe behedded.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.v. Anno dñi. M.cccc.vi.

Jhon Woodcok Mercer. { Henry Berton. / Willyam Crowner. } Anno.vii.

he.vij.
re.

IN this yere, dame Lucie the Duke of Milãs ſiſter, came into England, and was maried vnto ſir Edmunde Holand erle of Kent, in the church of S. Mary ouery in Southwarke, vpon the.xxiiii. daie of Januarie, where the king was preſent, and gaue her that daie vnto the prieſt. And after the ſolẽpnization of the Mariage was finiſhed, ſhe was with greate honour conueied vnto the Biſhop of winchеſters palais, there faſt by, where that daie for her was holden a ſumptuous and pompeous feaſte. And in the ſame yere and monethe of Maie, dame Philip the yõgeſt doughter of king Hẽry, accompanied with diuers Lordes, Spiritualle and Temporalle, was Shipped in the North, and ſo conueied into Denmarke, where in a towne or Citee called London, ſhe was Maried vnto the king of theſame coũtrie.

Traito

In this yere alſo Sir Thomas Ramſton, then Coneſtable of the Towre, by ouerſight of his Botemen, as he would haue paſſed the bridge towarde theſaied Towre, was drouned. And in ẏ ſame yere, for the greuous complaintes that before tyme had been ſhewed, and euidently proued before the Kynges counſaill, and alſo before the Maior and his brethren, of the great Deſtruction of Frie and yõg fiſhe, by reaſon of Weires, ſtandyng in diuers places of the riuer of Thames, whereby the fiſhe of the ſaied riuer was greatly miniſhed and waſted, and that alſo if theſaied Weires ſo continued, the ſaied riuer ſhould in ſhort proceſſe be deſtroied: wherfore the Maior and his brethren the Aldermen, as conſeruatoures of the Riuer, made ſoche labour vnto the kyng and his counſaill, that thei obteined Commiſſion, to pull doune all the Weires that ſtoode betwene London, and ſeuen miles beyond Kingſton, and in likewiſe for ſoch other as ſtoode betwene London, and Grauiſende, as well crekes or ſeueralle groundes and other, the whiche Commiſſion by the ſaied Maior and his officers, was this yere put in execution.

And in this yere Sir Roberte Knolles knight, which in Fraũce & Britaine, had before tyme doen ſo many victorious actes, as in the.xxiiii. yere of Edward the.iii. and other yeres of his reigne, is ſomedeale touched, made an ende of his werke at Rocheſter bridge, and Chapell at the ſaied Bridge foote, and died ſhortly after, when he had reedified the bodie of the White Freers churche, ſtanding in Fleteſtrete, and doen to that hous many notable benefites, where, after he was buried in the bodie of theſaied churche. Whiche churche and place was firſte founded, by the auncetours of the Lorde Graie Cotnore.

Anno domini.M,cccc.vj.

Anno domini.M.cccc.vij.

Mercer.
Richard Whitington, { Nicholas Wotton.
Godfrey Brooke. } Anno.viij.

The.viij. yere.

AND in this yere, and moneth of Nouember, one named the Walche Clarke, appeached a knight, called ſir Parciall Sowdan, of treaſon: for triall whereof, daie was giuen to theim to fight in Smithfeld, the daie aboueſaid: at whiche daie eyther appeared, and there fought a ſeaſon, but in the ende the clarke was recreant. Wherefore immediatelye he was ſpoyled of his armoure, and laide vpon an hardel, and ſo drawen to Tyburne, and there hanged.

A battayle betwene a clerke and a Knyghte

And in this yeare alſo, ſyr Henry Erle of Northumberland and the lorde Bardolfe, comming out of Scotland with a ſtrong company to the diſpleaſure and hurte of the king as they entended, wer met and encountred with the gẽtlemen and comons of the North and foughten with and diſtreſſed and after ſtrake of theyr heades, and ſent them to London, whiche than were pight vpon the bridge amonge many other.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.vii.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.viii.

Grocer.
Wylliam Stondon { Henry Ponfreit
Henry Halton } Anno.ix.

The.ix. yere.

AND in this yeare and moneth of December, began a froſte, the whiche continued by the ſpace of.xv.wekes after an other vpon, ſo that birdes were wonderfullye famiſhed and diſtreſſed by vyolence of the ſame.

Agret froſt

And in the ſame yeare, ſyr Edmund of Holande Earle of Kent, was by the kinge made admyrall of the ſea: The whiche ſcoured and ſcymmed the ſea ryghte well and manfully, and laſtely landed in the coaſte of Britaine, and beſieged there a Caſtell named Briake, and wanne it by ſtrength. But in the winninge thereof he was deadly wounded with an arrowe in the heade, that he died ſhortly after: And than his corps was broughte againe into England and buryed with his auncetours. And in the beginninge of this yeare was ſlayne and murthered the duke of Orleaunce in Paris, like as before it is more at length ſhewed in the.xxviii. yeare of Charles ẏ.vii. king of Fraũce.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.viii. Anno dñi.M.cccc.ix.

Goldſmith
Drewe Barentine { Thomas Duke.
Willyam Norton. } Anno.x.

The.x.
ere.

IN this yere the ſeneſhal of Henaude came into this lãd with a goodly cõpaignie of Henauders and other ſtraungers, for to dooe and performe certaine faites of armes againſt diuerſe nobles and gentilmen of this lande. And firſte the ſaid Seneſhall chalenged the erle of Somerſet, & other of his company, other gentilmen of this lãd, as after ſhall appere. For executing of whiche diſporte, the place of Smithfeld by the king was apointed, and barred and fẽſed for the ſame intent, and day ſet for euery man to be redy by the ſame. At which day the ſeneſhal as chalenger entred the felde pompeouſly. And after with a goodly companye of men of honoure, was the earle of Somerſet broughte into the ſame, wher they ran together certaine courſes and executed other faites of armes, wherof the priſe and honour was geuen by the herawdes vnto the earle, ſo that he wanne that day great honoure.

Then the ſeconde daye came in a knight Henauder as Chalengeoure. To whom as defendaunte cam ſir Richard of Arũdel knight the whiche ran certain courſes on horſebacke, and after went together with axes on fote, where ſir Richarde was put to the worſe, for the Henauder broughte him vpon his knee.

Then the thirde day came in an othe knight of Henaude Chalenger. To whõ as defendaunt came in, ſir Jhon Cornewale knighte, and ſo well bare him, that he put the ſtraunger to the worſe. Upon the.iiii. daye came into the feld an eſquire Henauder. Againſt whom ran the ſonne of ſir Jhon Cheiny. The whiche at the ſeconde courſe ſet his ſtroke ſo egerly, that he ouerthrewe the Henauder horſe & man, for which dede the king dubbed him forwith knighte. Upon the.v.day played together an Henauder and a ſquyre called Jhon Stewarde, whiche daye alſo the Engliſh man wan the worſhippe. Upon the.vi.day ſkyrmiſhed ther together an Henauder and an Engliſhe Eſquier, named Wyllyam Porter, the which gat ſuche worſhip of the ſame Henauder, that yͤ king for his guerdon, made him ſtreyght knighte. Upon the.vii. daye in likewiſe plaied in ſemble an Henauder and one Jhon Stãdiſh Eſquier, the which ſẽblably for his proweſſe and manly dealynge, was alſo of the kyng dubbed knight. And a Gaſcoyne that the ſame daye wan the price of an other ſtrainger, was immediatly made knight of the kinge. And vpõ the.viii. day or laſt day of this chalenger, came into the feld two Henauders. Unto whõ cam two brethren beyng ſowdiours of Calais, the whiche bekered together a longe ſeaſon, ſo that either partie receiued plẽty of good ſtrokes, till peace by the Kyng was commaunded. And ſo this chalenge was finiſhed, to the greate honoꝛ of the kyng, the whiche after feaſted theſe ſtraungers, and with riche giftes, ſente and retourned theim again to their countries.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.ix.
Ironmonger.
Richard Marlowe.
{ Jhon Lawe.
willyam Chicheley. }
Anno.xi.
Anno dñi.M.cccc.x.

The.xi. yere.

IN this yere, ⁊ moneth of Marche, a Tailoꝛ of London, named Jhon Badby, was bꝛente in Smithfeld foꝛ hereſie, albeit ẏ by meanes of the pꝛince, ⁊ one maſter Courtnay, then chaunceloꝛ of Oxenfoꝛde, he was foꝛ a while reconciled, ⁊ pꝛomiſed to leaue that erroꝛ. But when the Sacrament of the Altare was bꝛought befoꝛe hym, he deſpiſed it, and would in no wiſe therein beleue, wherefoꝛe he had as he deſerued.

A battaile betwene.ii Eſquiers.

In this yere alſo and monethe of Apꝛille, within the Liſtes of Smithfielde, was foughten a ſoꝛe fighte, betwene an Eſquier named Glouceter appellante, and an other Eſquire called Arthure defendaunt. The whiche acquited theim either partie ſo manfully, that the king of his eſpecial grace ſeing thei wer both ſo wel fighting mẽ, toke ẏ quarel into his hãdes, ⁊ pardoned thoffẽce to either partie

And this yere the market hous called the Stockes, ſtãding by the churche of ſ. Mary wolchurche of London, was begon to be edified. In this yere alſo, ẏ king helde his parlamente at weſtminſter. During the whiche, the cõmõs of this lande, put vp a bill vnto the king, to take the tempoꝛall landes, out from ſpirituall mennes handes oꝛ poſſeſſion. The effect of which bill was, that the tempoꝛalties, inoꝛdinatly waſted by mẽ of ẏ churche might ſuffiſe to finde to ẏ king.xv. erles.xv.c. knightes, vi.M.cc. Eſquiers, ⁊ a.c. houſes of almoſe, to the relief of pooꝛe people, mo then at that daies wer within Englãd And ouer all theſe foꝛeſaied charges, the king might put yerely in his coffers.xx.M.pounde.

Pꝛouided that euery erle ſhuld haue of yerely rent.iii.M.marke, and euery knight.C.marke, ⁊.iiii plow land, euery eſquier.xl. mark by yere, with twoo plough land, ⁊ euery houſe of almoſe, c.marke, wᵗ ouerſight of two true ſeculers vnto euery houſe. And alſo with pꝛouiſion that euery touneſhip ſhould kepe al pooꝛe people of their owne dwellers, which might not laboꝛ foꝛ their liuyng, with condition, ẏ if mo fel in a toune, then the toune might maintein, thã ẏ ſaid almes houſes to releue ſoche touneſhips.

And foꝛ to beare theſe charges thei alledged by their ſaied bille, that the tẽpoꝛalties, beyng in the poſſeſſiõ of ſpiritual mẽ, amoũted to.iii.c.⁊.xxii.M. marke by yere. Whereof thei affirmed to be in the ſee of Caunterburie, wᵗ thabbais of Chꝛiſtes churche, of ſ. Auguſtines, Shꝛowiſburie, Coggeſhale, ⁊ S. Oſiis.xx.M.marke by yere. In the ſee of Durham ⁊ other abbeis ther.xx.M.mark. In ẏ ſee of

Yoꝛke

Yorke and abbais there. xx. M. marke. In the ſee of Wincheſter, & abbais ther.xx.M.marke. In the ſee of London, with Abbais and other houſes there, twentie thouſãde marke. In the ſee of Lincoln with the abbeys of Peterbourth Ramſay, and other.xx.M.marke In the ſee of Norwiche, with the abbais of Bury and other.xx.M. marke. In the ſee of Ely, with the abbais of Ely, Spalding and other.xx.M.marke. In the ſee of Bathe, with the abbaye of Okinborne and other.xx. M. marke. In the ſee of worceter, with the abbays of Euiſham, Abingdon and other.xx.M. marke. In the ſee of Cheſter with precinct of the ſame, with the ſees of.ſ. Dauide, of Saliſburye, and Exceter, with their precinctes. xx. M.marke. The abbais of Rauens or Reuãs of Fountaines, of Gernons, and diuerſe other to the uumber of. v. mo.xx.M. marke. The abbais of Leiceter, walthã, Goſborn, Merton, Ticetir, Oſney, & other, vnto the nomber of.vi.mo, twentie M marke. The Abbaies of Douers, Batill, Lewes, Cowentrie, Dauentre, and Tourney, twentie.M marke. The Abbaies of Northãpton, Thortone, Briſtow, Kelingworth, winchecõbe, Hailes, Parchiſſor, Frediſwide, Notley, and Grimmiſby twentie.M.marke.

The whiche foreſaied ſommes, amounte to the ful of three.c. M. marke. And for ẏ od of.xxii. thouſand marke, thei appointed Hardforde, Rocheſter, Huntyngdone, Swineſhede, Crowlande, Malmeſburie, Burton, Tewkiſburie, Dunſtable, Shirborne, Taunton and Bilande.

And ouer this thei alledged by the ſaied bill, that ouer and aboue the ſaied ſomme of three hundred and.xxii.M.mark, diuers houſes of religion in Englande, poſſeſſed as many temporalties, as might ſuffice to finde yerely fiftene. M. prieſtes and clerkes, euery prieſte to be allowed for his ſtipende, vii. marke by the yere.

To the which bill none anſwere was made, but that the Kyng of this matter would take deliberation and aduiſemente, and with that aunſwere eanded, so that no farther labour was made.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.ix. Anno dñi.M.cccc.x.

Thomas Knolles Grocer. { Jhon Penne. / Thomas Pike. } Anno.xii.

he.xii.
e.

AND in this yere, a Squier of Wales, named Rize ap dee, the whiche had lõg tyme rebelled againſte the kyng, and fortified the partie of Howan of Glẽdore, was taken and brought to London, and there vpon the.ix. daie of December, drawen, hanged, and quartered, and his heade ſet vppon the Bridge, emong the other.

In this yere alſo was the guilde halle of London begon to be new edified, and of an olde and litle cotage, made into a faire and goodly houſe, as it now appereth.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.x. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xi.
Grocer.
Robert Chicheley { Jhon Rainewell. Willyam Cotton. } Anno.xiii.

The.xiij. yere.
Thre floudes folowing one an other, with out ebbing betwene.

IN this yere, and vpon the twelue daie of October, were thre floudes in Thamis, whiche thing no man then liuyng could remember that like to be ſeen.

And in this yere was the lorde Thomas, ſonne to the kyng, created duke of Clarence. And in this yere, the kyng at the requeſt of the Duke of Orleaunce, ſent ouer the foreſaied Duke his ſonne, to aide the ſaied Duke of Orleaunce, againſt the duke of Burgoyne: Of whoſe actes and his companie, I haue before made reporte in the ſtory of Charles the ſeuenth, king of Fraunce.

A newe coigne of Nobles.

And in this yere, the king cauſed a newe coine of Nobles to bee made, whiche were of leſſe value then thold Noble, by fower pence in a Noble.

In this yere alſo, the king created Jhon his ſoonne duke of Bedforde, and his other ſoonne Humfrey duke of Gloceter, he made alſo ſir Thomas Beauforde erle of Dorſet, and the duke of Anmarle he created duke of Yorke.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xi. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xii.
Mercer.
Willyam waldren. { Rauſe Leuinhm. William Seuenok. } Anno.xiiii.

The.xiiij. yere.

IN this yere, and.xx. daie of the moneth of Nouember, was a greate counſaill holdē at the White Freers of London: By the whiche it was emong other thynges concluded, that for the kynges greate iournay that he entēded for to take, in viſityng of the holie Sepulchre of our lorde, certain galeis of warre ſhould be made, and other purueiaunce, cōcerning theſame iourney.

Whereupon all haſtie and poſſible ſpede was made: but after the feaſte of Chriſtmas, while he was makyng his praiers at ſaincte Edwardes Shrine, to take there his leaue, and ſo to ſpede hym vpō his iourneye, he became ſo ſicke, that ſoche as were aboute hym, feared that he would haue died righte there, wherefore thei for his comfort, bare hym into the Abbottes place, and lodged him in a chāber, and there vpon a palet, laied hym before the fire, where he laie in greate agonie, a certain of tyme.

At lengthe when he was commen to hym ſelf, not knowyng where he was, freined of ſoche as then were about hym, what place that was. The whiche ſhewed to hym, that it belonged vnto the abbot of Weſtminſter: and for he felt hymſelfe ſo ſicke, he commaunded to aſke if that chāber had any ſpecial name. Wherunto it was anſwered that it was named Hieruſalem. Then ſaid the king: loauyng be to

The death of king Hẽ ry the. iiij.

the father of heuen. For nowe I knowe that I ſhall dye in thys chaumber, accordinge to the prophecye of me beforeſaide, that I ſhoulde dye in Hieruſalem. And ſo after he made himſelf redy, and died ſhortly after vpon the daie of ſaincte Cuthberte or the twentie day of March, when he had reigned.xiii yeres.v. monethes, and. xxi. dayes, leauing after him.iiii. ſoonnes, that is to meane, Henry that was king. Thomas that was duke of Clarẽce, Jhon duke of Bedforde, and Humfray duke of Glouceter, and.ii. doughters, that one beynge quene of Denmarke, and that other Ducheſſe of Barre, as before is ſhewed.

When king Henry was dead, he was conueighed by water vnto Feuerſham, and from thens by lande vnto Caunterburye, and there enterred.

Anglia.

Kyng Henry the.v.

enry the
neth.

HEnry the. v. of the name, and ſonne of Henrye the. iiii. begã his reigne ouer this realme of England, the.xxi.day of yͤ moneth of march In the yere of our Lord, and end of the ſame, fourtene hũdreth and xii. And in the thyrtye and twoo yere of Charles.the.vii. yet king of Fraunce. And the.ix. day of Aprill folowinge, whiche was that yere paſſion ſondaie, beyng a daie of exceding rain, he was crowned at Weſtminſter. This man before the death of his father, applyed him vnto all vyce and inſolency, and drewe vnto him all riottours and wildly diſpoſed perſons. But after he was admitted to the rule of the lande, anon and ſodainely he became a newe man, and turned all that rage and wildeneſſe into ſoberneſſe and wiſe ſadneſſe, and the vice into cõſtant vertue. And for he would continewe that vertue, and not to be reduced ther vnto by the familiartie of his old niſe company, he therfore after rewardes to them geuen, charged them vpon paine of their liues, that none of them were ſo hardy to come within .x. mile of ſuche place as he were lodged in, after a day by him aſſigned.

In the beginninge of this kinge Hẽry, the olde maire and ſhriues continued their offices to the termes accuſtomed.

Anno.dñi.M.cccc.xiii. Anno dñi M.cccc.xiiii.
Mercer.
Wylliam waldern { Rauffe Leuingham.
William Seuenoke. } Anno.i.

The. firſte
ere.

ANon as kinge Henrye was crowned, and the ſolempnitie of the feaſt of Eſter was paſſed, he ſente vnto the friers of Langley wher the corps of king Richarde was buried, and cauſed it to takẽ out of yͤ earth, ⁊ ſo with reuerẽce ⁊ ſolẽpnity to be cõueied vnto weſtminſter, ⁊ vpõ yͤ ſouth ſide of ſaint

Edwardes ſhrine there honorably for to be buried by quene Anne his wife, whiche, there before time was enterred. And after a ſolemne terrement there holden, he prouided that fower Tapers ſhould bren day and night about his graue, while the world endureth, and one daye in the weke a ſolempne Dirige, and vppon the morowe a maſſe of Requiem ſong by note, after which maſſe ended, to be geuen wekely vnto the poore people a.xi. S̃. and.viii.pence, in pens. And vppon the daye of his anniuerſary after the ſaide maſſe of Requiem Songe, to bee yerely deſtributed for his ſoule.xx.poũde in pens. And about herneſt time, was ſir Jhon Oldcaſtell knighte appeched for an heretike and committed to priſon. But howe it was he eſcaped for that time out of the towre of London, and ſo yode into wales, where he liued ouer.iiii.yeres after.

Sir Jho Oldecaſt accuſed hereſie.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xiii. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xiiii.
Draper.
Wyllyam Crowmer { John Sutton. Jhon Mycoll. } Anno.ii.

The.ii.ye.

IN this yere and moneth of Januarye, certaine adherentes of the fore named ſir Jhon Oldeeaſtel, entending the deſtruccion of this lande and ſubieccion of the ſame, aſſembled theim in a felde nere vnto ſainte Giles in great nomber. Wherof the kinge beinge enfourmed, toke the felde before them, and ſo toke a certain of them. Among the whiche was ſir Roger Acton knight, ſir John Beuerley preaſt, and a ſquier called ſir Jhon Browne. The which with. xxxvi. mo in number were after conuicte of hereſy and treaſon, and for the ſame hanged and brente wythin the ſaide felde of ſaint Gyles.

And in theſame yere, Jhõ Claidon ſkinner and Ritharde Turmine baker, were for hereſy brent in Smithfelde.

And this yere the king held his Parliament at Leiceter. Where amonge other thinges, the foreſaide bill put vp by the commons of the lande, for the temporalties beyng in the Churche, as it is before touched in the eleuenth yere, of the. iiii. Henrye, was againe minded. In feare wherof, leſt the king woulde therunto geue anye confortable audience (as teſtifye ſome writers) certaine Byſhops and other head men of the church, put the king in mind to claime his right in Fraunce. And for the exploit therof, thei offered vnto him great & notable ſummes. By reaſon wherof the ſaid bil was again put by, and the king ſet his minde for the recouerye of the ſame, ſo that ſone after he ſent his letters vnto the French king concerning that mater, & receiued from him anſwere of diriſion as affirmeth the Englyſh boke.

And Gagwinus ſaieth in his Frenche cronicle, that king Henry ſent his oratours vnto Charles the.vii.then king of Fraunce, for to haue dame Katherine his doughter in mariage, with other requeſtes touching his right and enheritaunce, whereunto it was anſwered by the cōūſel of Fraūce, that the kinge had no leiſer to entende ſuche ydel perſons. Whereupon king Henrye made quick prouiſion for the warre vppon the Frenche king, as after appereth.

Synode
counſell
ept at Cō
aunce.

In this yere alſo, by procurement of Sigiſmunde then Emperoure, a great councell or Synode of biſhops were aſſembled, at a citie in highe Almain, called Conſtaunce, for the vnion of the churche. And for to auoyde the Sciſme, which began in the .xiiii. yere of Charles the .vi. as before in the ſaide .xiiii. yere is touched.

In the ſaied Synode or generall councel, was the .xxiii. Jhon then biſhop of Rome, put downe or reſigned by his volunte.

Wyclife cōdempned

And by autoritie of the ſame councell the opinions and hereſy of Wiclife were vtterly adnulled and dampned, and twoo of his diſciples there preſent, named Jhō Hus or Huſſe, and Jerom the Heretike, were there brent.

Huſſe and Jerom brēt

And many notable actes for the wele of the churche there were enacted: And finallye, whan the ſaid counſel had endured nere vpon the terme of .iiii. yeres, they there by an whole aſſente, chaſe a new biſhop of Rome, and named him the .v. Martine.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xv. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xvi.

Thomas Fawconer Mercer } Jhon Mychell. / Thomas Aleyn. } Anno .iii.

he. iii.
re.

IN this yere after the kinge had made ſufficient prouiſion, for all thinges concernynge his warre to be made vppon the Frenche kyng, he with his lordes honourably accompanied, rode through London, vpon the eightene day of Juny, toward the port of Southampton, where he had appointed his hoſt to mete with him. And while the kynge there was ſhipping of his people, dyuerſe of his lords, that it to ſay ſir Richarde Erle of Cambridge, and brother vnto ẏ duke of Yorke whiche ſir Richarde bearing the name of Langley, hadde wedded dame Anne, the doughter of ſir Roger Mortimer Erle of March and Wolſter, by whom he had iſſue Iſabel, whiche after was maried vnto the lorde Boucher earle of Eſſex, and Richarde whiche after was Duke of Yorke and father to kyng Edwarde the fowerth. To whom alſo was aſſenting ſir Rychard Scrope then treaſourer of Englande, and ſir Thomas Gray knighte, were there arreſted for treaſon, and arreygned, and ſo examined vppon the ſame, that the .xxix. daye of July folowinge, thei were all three beheeded. After which execution ſo done, the kyng vppon the morowe or ſhortlye after, wyth his lordes tooke ſhippinge there, and landed at a place called Kydcaus in Normandy. And the .xvi. day of Auguſte he layed ſyege vnto the towne of Herteſlewe, and aſſay-

owe the
ng tooke
ppingto
ſſe into
raunce.

led

ſayled them by the lande and by water, and continued ſo his ſiege vnto the.xxii.day of September. At which day (as ſaieth the Frēch Gaguinus) it was deliuered by Albert than there captaine, vpon condicion that king Henry might ſauely win or paſſe to Calais, and ſo he beynge there, the towne to be yelde vnto him. But the French writer Gaguinus vpholdeth the honoure of the Frenchmen, in all that he may, and borowech of his conſience for ſparyng the truth in report of many thinges. For after moſt writers, the ſayd towne after ſondrye appointmentes of recourſe, was deliuered vnto yͤ king without any condicion, the daye aboue ſayd. Where after the king had ordayned ſir Thomas Beauforde his vncle and earle of Dorſet captaine of that towne, he ſped him towarde Calais.

Than the dolphin with other lordes of Fraunce, whiche at that time had the realme of Fraunce in gouernaunce, for ſo muche, as the French king was viſited with ſuche maladye as before I haue ſhewed, brake the bridge to let the king of his paſſage ouer the water of Summe. Wherfore he was conſtrained to draw towarde Picardy, and ſo paſſe by the riuer of Pericon. Wherof the Frenchmen beyng ware, aſſembled and lodged them at certayne townes named Agyncourt, Rolandcourte, and Blangye, with all the power of Fraunce.

An when king Henry ſaw that he was ſo beſet with his enemies he in the name of God and ſ. George pight his field in the plaine, betwene theſaid townes of Agincourt and Blangy, hauing in his company of hole men that might fyght, not paſſing the nomber of vii. M. But at thoſe dayes the yomen had their limmes at lyberty, for theyr hoſen were than faſtened with one poynt, and their iackes longe and eaſy to ſhote in, ſo that they myghte drawe bowes of greate ſtrength, and ſhotte arrowes of a yarde longe, beſyde the head.

The batte
of Agyn-
court.

Than the king conſydering the great nomber of his enemies, and that the acte of Frenchmen ſtandeth much in ouer ryding of their aduerſaries, by force of ſperemen, he therfore charged euery bowmā to ordaine him a ſharpe ſtake, and to pitch it a ſlope before him, and whan the ſperes came, ſomdele to drawe backe, and ſo to ſhote at the horſmē. And at the proper requeſt of the duke of Yorke, he ordayned hym to haue the vawarde of the felde. And whan king Henry had thus prouidently ordered for his battel ouer night, vppon the morow beynge the.xxv.day of October, and the day of Cryſpine and Criſpinian, the kinge cauſed dyuers maſſes to be ſongen. And where that night before, the Enlyſh hooſt was occupied in praier and confeſſion, he than cauſed the byſhoppes and other Spirituall men to geue vnto them generall abſolucion.

The cu
gious
make of
rie the.v

And that done, with a comfortable chere ordered his people as they ſhoulde fight, hauinge vnto them good & comfortable wordes, and ſo abode the comming of his enemyes, whiche of dyuers wryters were and are remembred to be aboute.xl. M. fyghtyng men.

Note th
at this b
were.xl
thouſan
French
and but.
thouſan
engliſhm

The whiche aboute. ix. of the clocke in the moꝛning, with great pꝛide ſet vpon the Engliſhe hooſt, thinking to haue ouer rydden thẽ ſhoꝛtlye. But the archers like as befoꝛe they were taughte pight their ſharpe ſtakes befoꝛe them. And whan they ſawe the French galantes appꝛoch, thei a litle yode backe and receaued them as here after enſueth.

¶ The battaile of Agincourt

THat is to meane, thei ſhot at thẽ ſo feruẽt, that what with the ſhot, and goꝛinge of their hoꝛſes with the ſharpe ſtakes, they tumbled one vppon another, ſo that he oꝛ they which ran foꝛmoſt, were the confuſiõ of him oꝛ them that folowed ſo that in a ſhoꝛte while a great multitude of hoꝛſe and men were layed vpon the ground. And after there ſhot ſpent, they laide about them with their glaues and axes that by the great grace of God, and comfoꝛtable aide of the king, the victoꝛy fell that daye to ỹ Englyſhmen, and with litle loſſe of their company.

hetrium
at victo-
of Hery
.v. ouer
Frech-
en.

Foꝛ after the opinion of ſondꝛy writers, were ſlaine that daye of Englyſhmen, the dukes of Yoꝛke and of Suffolke, and not ouer. xxvi. perſonnes moo. But of the Frenchmen were ſlaine that daye after Englyſhe writers, ouer the number of. x. thouſande Albeit, the French Gaguinus ſaieth that of the Engliſhe hoſte were ſlaine the duke of Yoꝛke and with him hundꝛed men, and of the Frenche hoſt foꝛe thouſande men of name beſide other which he numbꝛeth not. Alſo he affirmeth to be hoꝛſemen at that feld vpon the French partye. x. thouſande ouer and beſide the fotemen, and that the Engliſh men were nombꝛed at. xv. C ſpere men, and. xviii. M of yemen and archers.

At this ſaide battaile was taken pꝛiſoners the duke of Oꝛleyaunce, the duke of Burbon, the Earle of Wendoſme, of Ewe, of Richemounte, and Burſigaunte then marſhall of Fraunce, with manye other knightes and eſquires, which were tedious to name to the nomber of. xxiiii. C. and aboue, as witneſſeth the booke of maires. And in this bataile were ſlaine of the nobles of Fraũce, the dukes of Barre, of Alanſon, and of Bꝛaban. viii. Earles, and barons aboue. lxxx. with other gentilmen in coote armours to the nomber of thꝛee thouſande and aboue. By reaſon of the whiche pillage the Engliſhmẽ were gretly aduaunced. Foꝛ the Frenchmen were ſo aſſured of the victoꝛye by reaſon of their great nomber, that they bꝛought the moꝛe plenty of rycheſſe with them, to the ende to by pꝛiſoners either of other, and alſo after the victoꝛy by them optained, to ſhewe vnto Englyſhmen their pꝛide and pomperous araye. But God which knew the pꝛeſumpcion and pompe turned all thing cõtrary to their mindes and ententes.

Whan the kinge by grace and power of God, moꝛe than by foꝛce of man, had thus gotten this triumphant victoꝛy, ⁊ returned his people frõ ỹ chaſe of their enemies tidinges were bꝛought vnto him that a newe hoſt of Frenchemen were comminge towarde him. Wherfore, he anon commaunded his people to be enbatayled, and that dooen, made proclamations through his hoſt, that euery man ſhoulde ſlee his priſoner. By reaſon of whiche proclamacion, the duke of Orleaunce and the other lordes of Fraunce, were in ſuche feare, that thei anon by licence of the king ſent ſuche word vnto the ſaid hoſte, that thei withdrew thẽ, And the king with his priſoners vpon the morowe folowyng, toke his waye towarde his towne of Calais, wher he reſted him during this maires time.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xv.
Draper.
Nicholas Wotten

Wyllyam Cambridge,
Alein Euerarde.

Anno .iiii.
Anno dñi. M.cccc.xvi.

The .iiii. yere.

Triumphinge.

This yere and .xvii. day of Nouember as the maire rode toward Weſtminſter for to take his charge, a Purſiuaunte of the kynges, came with letters vnto the maior, giuing to hym knowledge of the kynges good ſpede. Wherefore the biſhop of Wincheſter than chancelour of Englande, hauyng like wittyng, came that daie to Poules, & there caused Te deum to be ſongen with greate ſolempnitie. And in like wiſe was lyke obſeruaunce dooen in the Pariſhe Churches and other Religious houſes, throughe the citie of London.

And at Poules, by theſaid chãcellour ſtanding vpon the ſteppes at the quire doore, were the ſaied tidinges denounced vnto the people. And vppon the moro[illegible]olowing, the ſaid chauncell[illegible] with other biſhops and tẽporal lordes, with a generall proceſſion of the maire and cominaltie of the citie, yode from Poules to weſtminſter on fote, and offered at ſainte Edwardes ſhrine, and ſo retourned to their owne houſes. Than kinge Henrye with his priſoners ſhipped at Calays, and ſo landed at Douer, and then ſped him on his iournei til he came to Eltham where he reſted him a ſeaſon.

The rec
ning of t
kingby t
citezins
London.

Vpon the .xxiii. day of Nouember he was mette with the maire and his brethren vpõ Black heth, and ſo conueyed with all honoure through the citie vnto Weſtminſter. Wher, in diuers places of the ſaide city, as the bridge and croſſe in chepe, were ordeyned certaine pagẽtes to the kinges great comfort. The maner wherof with all proceſſions and other ceremonies I paſſe ouer for letting of time.

The rec
uing of
giſemno
themper
by the ci
zins of L
don.

In this yere alſo Sigiſmund, Emperour of Almaine, came into Englande. And in the moneth of May by the kinges commaundement, and vii. daye of the ſaid moneth, the maire and brethren met him vppon Blake hethe. And at ſaint Georges, met him the kinge and his lordes in great nombre, and ſo conueied hym vnto Weſtminſter with great honoure, and lodged him in his owne palays. And ſhortly after was the feaſte of ſaint George holden at Windſore, whiche before was deferred for his comming. In time of whiche ſolempnite, during the diuine ſeruice, the kinge kept the eſtate: But in ſittinge at the feaſte, the Emperour kepte the eſtate. The ſeruice & ſotelties of whiche feaſt, with ſitting of the lordes in their degrees, I paſſe ouer. And ſhortly after came the duke of Holand into this lande for certayne cauſes concerning the Emperour. Whom the kinge honourably receaued, and lodged him in the byſhops palays of Ely in Holborne. And ſo the kynge entreated and chered the ſtraungers that for the ſeaſon that they taried in Englande they laye here at the kinges coſt and charge.

And the Emperoure and he were made knightes of the garter, and alſo a greate duke of the emperors named duke of Briga. And whan the emperour had taried vpon .vii. wekes and od daies in Englande, whiche after ſome writers, was to the entente to ſet an vnitye and reſte, betwene the French king, and king Henry: he after toke minde to retourne into Almaine, whom the kinge for his comforte and nedes, that he had to do at Calays, accõpanied him thither, wher either with giftes and thãkes, departed from other. And the duke of Hollande wente with the Emperour into Holland and other countryes. While the king was thus at Caleys, to him came thither vnder ſafe conduite the duke of Burgoine, and hadde with the king diuers communycacions, and after returned to his owne: And ſone after the king returned into Englande, and came to weſtminſter vpon S. Lukes euen or the .xvii. day of October.

This yeare and ſeaſon whyle the king was at Calays, that is to meane vpon the day of Aſſumpcyon of our bleſſed ladye, the duke of Bedforde, accõpanied with the erle of Marche and other lordes, had a great conflyct and battaile with diuers Carickes of Jeane and other ſhippes. Where after longe and ſore fighte, the honoure fell to hym and his Englyſhmen, to the greate loſſe of the ſtraungers, bothe of their men, and alſo of their ſhips, as ſome drowned, and .iii. of the greateſt of their carickes taken.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xvii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xviii.

Skinner
Henry Barton
Robert Wodtington
Jhon Couent[illegible]
Anno .v.

And in this yeare the kyng holdyng his parliament at weſtmynſter, to him was graũted by authorytye of the ſame, a fyftene. And by a conuocacion of the clergy, was graũted to him a dime, for the maintenaunce of his warres. Wherupon newe prouiſion was made for his ſeconde viage into Fraunce.

By autoritie of this parlamēt alſo Richard which was ſōne and heyre of the earle of Cambridge, whiche erle was put to death at Southampton, was created duke of yorke, whiche after was maryed vnto Cicile the doughter of Dareby erle of Weſtmerlande, by reaſō that he bought his wardſhip of the king. By the which ladye Cecyle he had Henry that dyed yong, Edward that after was kyng. Edmund erle of Rutlande, Anne ducheſſe of Exeter, Elyzabeth duches of Suffolke, George duke of Clarence, Rycharde duke of Glouceter and after kyng, and Margarete ducheſſe of Burgoin, And whan all thing was redy for the kinges voyage, he ordayned Jhon duke of bedford his brother protector of this lande in the time of his abſence. And that doone, he with his lordes aboute Whitſontyde toke his ſhipping at Southampton, and ſo ſayled into Normandy, and landed vppon Lammas day at a place called Toke or Towke. And after he was, with his hoſt there landed, for ſo much as he was warned of certaine ſhippes of warre that intended to do ſome harme in Englande beinge than vpon the ſea, he therfore to withſtande their maliciouſe purpoſe, ſent the earle of Marche, the erle of Huntingdon, with other, to ſcowre the ſea. The whiche encountred the ſaid ennemies, and after a long and cruell fight them vanquiſhed and ouercam. Which fight was vpon the daye of ſ. Romaine or the. ix. daye of Auguſt, as hath the French cronicle. And of the Frēch nauy, was chefe captaine ỹ vicount of Narbon, which in that fight was takē with gret plenty of treaſour. For as ſaieth Gaguinus, he with one Mōũtney another captayne, to whom the ſouldiours wages was commytted, of one aſſent of their ſinguler lucre withelde theſaid wages. By reſon wherof, whan they ſhoulde ioyne in battayle, manye of them with their ſhippes withdrew, and left their capitaines in the daungier of their enemies. But this is like to bee a fained excuſe of the ſaied Gagwine, to ſaue the honor of the Frenchmen, as he many times ſemblably doth in many places of his bookes.

Victory on the Frēche ſhippes.

Then to retourne vnto kinge Henry, whan he was thus lāded, he ſēt vnto the rulers of the towne of Towke, and had it vnto him deliuered. But the caſtell was defended againſt him, till ſaint Laurence daie folowyng, the whiche he gaue after vnto his brother the duke of Clarence, with all the ſignory therunto belonging.

And this done, the kinge ſped him towarde Cane, and laide his ſiege therunto vpon the. xvii. day of the forſaide moneth of Auguſt. The which continued til the feaſt of the Natiuytie of our lady, and than won vppon the partie that the duke of Clarence aſſauted. But the caſtell helde by appoyntment, if no reſcowe were had till the. xiiii. day folowing. At whiche daye the ſaid caſtel was deliuered with other. xiiii. ſtronge holdes, whiche had before taken the ſame appointmente. Than the kinge made the forſaid duke of Clarence captaine of the ſayde towne and caſtell.

And in this paſſetime wer diuers

other Tounes and ſtrong holdes gotten by diuers of the Kynges retinewe, as the Erle Marſhall, the Erle of Warwicke and other, the whiche wan Lauers, Falois, Newlin, Cherburth, Argentine, and Bayons the Citee, with many other ſtrong Abbais and Piles. Then the kyng helde there S. Georges feaſte, and dubbed there xv. knightes of the Bath, and after continued his warres, during this Maiors yere, in winnyng vpon the Frenchemen, by appointmẽtes and otherwiſe, wherof the circumſtaunce were very long to declare in order.

fraie on aſterdaie

In this yere alſo, and vpon the feaſtfull daie of Eaſter, felle a chaunce in London, whiche to the feare of all good Chriſten men, is neceſſary to bee noted. For vppon the high and ſolempne daie, by exityng of the deuill, and euill diſpoſicion of twoo women, that is to meane, the wife of the Lorde Straunge, and the wife of ſir Jhõ Trueſſell knight, ſoche vnkindeneſſe fell betwene their twoo huſbandes, that either would haue ſlaine other, within the Pariſhe Churche of ſaincte Dunſtons in the Eaſte. In partyng of whiche perſones, diuers men were hurte and ſore woũded, and one named Thomas Petwarden ſlain out of hande, whiche was a free manne and Fiſhmonger of the citee: then laſtly both fraiers wer taken and brought vnto the Counter in the Pultrie. And for the ſaied Lorde Straunge was demed culpable of the beginnyng of this fraie, he therefore vpon the Sondaie folowyng, and for ſuſpendyng of the churche, was denounced accurſed at Poules croſſe, and in al pariſhe churches of London.

And finally, he was demed to open Penaunce, and did it, and made greate amendes vnto the wife of the ſaied Thomas, for the death of her huſband: And in the ende of this yere, wheate at London was ſolde for twoo ſhillinges a Buſhell.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xviii.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xix.

Ironmonger.
Richard Marlowe { Henry Rede.
Jhon Gedney. } Anno. vi.

The. vi.
ere.

AND in this yere, ſir Jhon Oldecaſtell lorde Cobhã, the whiche as before is ſhewed in the ende of the firſt yere of this Kyng, eſcaped out of the Towre of London, was in the monethe of ſente vnto London by the lorde Powis, out of Wales.

The whiche ſir Jhon for heriſy and treaſon, was conuicte in the moneth of folowyng, and for the ſame drawen vnto S. Giles fielde, where he was hanged vppon a newe paire of Galowes with chaines, and after conſumed with fire.

Sir Jhon Oldcaſtel lorde Cobham put to death.

And about that ſeaſon, the perſone of Worthã in Norfolke, whiche long tyme had haunted New-markette Heth, and there robbed and ſpoiled many of the Kynges ſubiectes, was now with his concubine brought vnto Newgate, where laſtly he died.

And kyng Henry beyng ſtill in Normandie, diuided his people in three partes. Whereof one he reſerued vnto hymſelf, the ſeconde he cōmitted to the rule of the duke of Clarence, and the thirde to the Erle of Warwike: whiche ſaied duke and Erle, emploied their armes ſo well and valiauntly, that either of theim encroched ſore vpō the Frenche men, and wan from them many ſtrong holdes and piles. And the kyng after long ſieges by hym continued, about Argentine, Creſſy, Sainct Launde, and other, he then in the eande of this yere, that is to ſaie, vpon the daie of the Tranſlation of ſanict Edwarde, or the thirtene daie of October, laied his ſiege vnto the Citee of Roan, and continued the ſame, till the twelue daie of Januarie folowyng.

In the whiche paſſetyme, the olde Maior was chaunged to a newe, as foloweth. Uppon the.ix. daie of October died Jhon Brian Sherife, and for hym was choſen to yͤ office, Jhon Parnes Draper.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xix. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xx.

Grocer.
willyam Seuenoke { Jhon Brian.
Rauſe Berton.
Jhon Parneſſe. } Anno.vii.

The.ii. yere.

IN this yeare the forſaid ſiege about the Citee of Roan continuyng, vpon the.xii. daie of January foreſaid, the Frenche menne offered to treate, which treatie the kyng admitted vnto the Erles of warwicke and Saliſburie, with other. And for the Frenche partie, was appoincted the capitaine of the Citee, named ſir Guy de Bocier, and other By reaſō of whiche treatie, it was agreed, that the ſaied capitaine, vpon the ninetene daie of the ſaid preſente monethe of Januarie, at ſoche an houre as it ſhall pleaſe yͤ king to aſſigne, ſhould deliuer vnto ſoche perſones, as the Kyng would appoincte, the citee and caſtell of Roan, in all peacable wiſe, except the ſaid citee and caſtell bee reſcowed by the dolphin of Fraūce before the ſaid.xix, daie.

And the two and twentie daie of the ſaied monethe, the inhabitauntes of the ſaied citee, to paie vnto the Kyng fiftene hundred Scutes of golde, whereof twoo ſhould bee alwaies worth an Engliſhe Noble. And other fiftene hundred of like ſcutes, thei ſhould paie vpō the twentie ⁊.iii. daie of Februarie next folowing. Whiche couenauntes with many ⁊ diuers other cōpriſed to fiue and twentie articles, wer by the aſſuraunce of bothe parties, ſurely ratified and aſſured. And for no reſcous by the ſaied Dolphin, or any other Frēch manne, was made by the daie aboue limitted, therefore the ſaied capitain, accordyng to his bonde and promes, deliuered theſaied citee and caſtell, vpon the.xix.daie of Januarie aforeſaied, beyng the daie of ſainct Wolſtan.

The winnyng of this Citee of Roan aſcribeth Gagwinus, vnto the Ciuill diſcorde, that was betwene the citezens, and their firſt capitaine, named Earle of Danmale, whom thei expulſed the Citee with a ſtrong power of Normans. But yet (as he affirmeth) the Citezeins helde the Citee, till thei were conſtrained for lacke of victualle, to eate horſes, dogges, cattes, rattes, and other vermin.

When kyng Henry had ſet the citee of Roan in an order, he then paſſed ẏ countries toward Frāce ſo that he ſubdued the citees and tounes as he rode. And the twentie daie of May, he came to Trois in Champaine, where he was honourably receiued.

In whiche paſſetyme, Jhon Duke of Burgoine, that before tyme had been the occaſion of the murder, of the duke of Orleaunce was now ſlaine in the preſence of the dolphin, like as before J haue ſhewed to you, in the xxxix. yere of Charles the.vii. wherefore Philip his ſonne, and duke after him, refuſed the Dolphins partie, and drewe hym vnto king Henry, and deliuered to hym the poſſeſſion of Charles the Frenche Kyng, and dame Katherine his doughter, as affirmeth Gagwinus.

Then wer meanes of concorde and vnitie, ſoughte and laboured by the Frenchemen, in ſo effectual maner, that ſhortly after for a final peace to be had, betwene both realmes, kyng Henry at Trois in Champaine foreſaied, by the meanes of the ſaied Philip Duke of Burgoine, maried the forenamed Katherine vppon Trinitie Sondaie, then beyng the thirde daie of June.

Before ſolempniſation of whiche mariage, a treatie and concluſion of a peace, conteinyng.xxxvii articles, betwene bothe Kynges was concluded. Whereof the effect was, that kyng Henry ſhould bee admitted and named Regente of Frāce, and that Charles ſhould be kyng for terme of his life, and receiue the iſſues and profites of theſame, and Quene Jſabell his wife, to enioy her dower for terme of her life, to Quenes of Fraunce due and accuſtomed. And Quene Katherine, king Henries wife, to haue her dower in Englande, to the value of.xl. thouſande ſcutes, whiche ſhould be in value.x. thouſande marke Engliſhe. And if ſhe ouerliued Kyng Henry, then ſhe to haue dower of the realme of Fraunce, to the value of twentie thouſande Frankes, yerely to bee leuied of ſoche lordſhips, as Blanche ſometyme wife to Philippe le Beawe helde. And after the death and tyme of the foreſaid Charles, the croune with all rightes belongyng to the ſame of the realme of Fraunce, to remaine vnto Kyng Henry, and to his heires kynges.

And for the ſaied Charles was viſited with ſickeneſſe, the Kyng as regente ſhould haue the whole gouernaunce of the ſaied realme, and defence of theſame, and ſpecially againſt the Dolphin, whiche entended and did his vttermoſte power, to diſturbe the ſaid peace. And that the Lordes and nobles of Fraunce, as well Spiritualle as Temporalle, ſhall make othe vnto Kyng Henry, to be obedient vnto his lefull commaundementes, concernyng the foreſaied gouernaunce and defence, and thei with the heades and rulers of citees, caſtles and tounes, to maintaine and vpholde theſaied peace, to the vttermoſt of their powers, and after the death of the ſaied Charles, to become his true ſubiectes and liege men. And that all ſoche Lordſhippes, as after that daie ſhould bee conquered or won from the Dolphine, and other diſobedientes, that thei ſhould remaine to the vſe of theſaid Charles, duryng his naturall life.

Prouided, that if any wer won yͤ within the duchy of Normandy thei ſhould incontinently remain to kyng Henries vſe. And that after the diſeaſe of the ſaied Charles, the duchie of Normandy, and all other Lordſhippes thereunto belongyng, to be as one Monarchie vnder the croune of Fraunce. And alſo that duryng the life of yͤ ſaid Charles, kyng Henry ſhould not name or write hymſelf Kyng of Fraunce. And that the ſaied Charles ſhould in all writynges, name Kyng Henry his moſte deareſt ſonne Henry king of Englãde and enheritoure of the Croune of Fraunce. And that none impoſition or taxe, ſhould bee put vpon the Commons of Fraunce, but to the neceſſarie defẽce and weale of the realme. And that by thaduiſe of both counſailes, of the realmes of Englande and of Fraunce, ſoch ſtabliſhed ordinaunces might bee deuiſed, that when theſaid realme of Fraunce, ſhould fall to the poſſeſſion of Kyng Henry, or his heires, that it might with ſoche vnitie, ioyne vnto the realme of Englande, that one kyng might rule bothe Kyngdomes, as one Monarchi, reſerued alwaies to either principate or realme, all rightes, libertees, fraunchiſes, and lawes ſo that nother realme ſhould bee ſubiecte vnto other. And that perpetuall amitee and frendeſhippe, with all familier conuerſation, as well by Buiyng, Sellyng, and al other leefull, to bee continued betwene bothe ſubiectes for euer, al cuſtomes and priuileges to either Realme, to bee paied and obeied. And that king Charles, nor Philippe Duke of Burgoyne, ſhould make any concorde or peace with the Dolphine of Uien, without the aſſent and agremente of king Henry. Nor he in likewiſe, without the conſent of the ſaied Charles and Philip. And theſaid Charles duryng his life, ſhould honourably bee founde and entreated, and to haue in his houſholde and aboute hym, noble menne of his owne nacion, with all other thinges concernyng his eſtate, and to be lodged in notable places of his realme, where the people to hym ſhould be moſte obedient.

Henry the fift, enheritour of the Croune of Fraunce.

After whiche articles, by the conſentes of bothe Princes, well and notably ratified and confirmed, and ſolempnization of the foreſaied mariage eanded, Kyng Henry with his people, ſped hym towarde Paris, where he was honourably receiued. And when he had with his newe wife reſted hym there a ſeaſon, he then with the duke of Burgoine, and diuers other Lordes of Fraunce, laied ſeige vnto diuers townes, whiche helde vpon the Dolphins partye, and them wan by ſtrength or by appointment, and haſtlye laide ſiege and his ordenaunce about a ſtrong towne named Meldune or Meleon, whereof was capitaine a noble warriour named Barbaſan, the whiche defended that towne manfully. Then the kinge ſeyng the forſaide ſterneſſe of the capitaine, beclipped that towne with a ſtrong ſiege, lienge himſelf on that ſide towarde the wood, and the duke of Burgoyne vppon the other ſide againſt the temple of the monaſtery of ſainte Peter, which ſiege ſo continued duringe this mayres yere.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xix. Anno domini. M.cccc.xx.

Mercer.
Richarde Whytingham. { Robert Witingham. Jhon Butler. } Anno. viii.

The.viii. yere.

THis yere continued ſtill the former ſiege aboute Meleon til about the middle of Nouember. At whiche time the forenamed capitaine ſore famiſhed, ſought meanes of treaty: By meane whereof it was agreed, that he with al other ſhuld ſauely auoide by a day limited, excepte all ſuche perſons as before time had bene conſentinge vnto the death of Jhon lately duke of Burgoine. For the whiche cryme the forenamed capitaine named Barbaſã was after accuſed with many other, and ſente vnto Paris, and there holden in pryſon.

And that done king Henry laide his ſiege vnto a town called Melden. The whiche finally was alſo geuen vp by a lyke apointment. Wherin were founden certayne perſones detected of the foreſayd murther, for the whiche after due examinacion made, they were hãged vppon an Elemen tree ſtanding by the way leding vnto Paris. Whan kinge Henry had thus wroughte muche of his will in Fraunce, he tooke leaue of his father the Frenche kinge, and with the quene his wife ſailed into Englande, and landed at Douer vppon Candelmas daye, leauing in Fraunce for his deputye, his brother the duke of Clarence. Then the kinge ſped on his iourney toward London, and came thither on the. xiiii. daye of Februarye. And the quene came thither vpon the. xxi. daye of the ſame moneth. But here for lẽght of time I will paſſe ouer the great and curious ordinaunce, prouided by the cytezens for the the receuinge of the kinge and quene, aſwell of their ordinate metinge with theim vpon horſebake, as the ſumptuous and honourable diuiſes prepared within the citie, to the kinges and quenes greate reioyſynge. And forth I will procede to ſhewe vnto you ſome parte of the great honour that was vſed and exercyſed, vppon the daye of the ſayde queenes coronacion, whyche was after ſolempnyſed in ſaynte Peterres churche of Weſtmynſter

The coronacion of the quene.

minſter, vppon the daye of ſainte Mathy the Apoſtell, oꝛ the foure and twenty day of Febꝛuary. After which ſolempniſacion in that churche ended, ſhe was conueyed into the great halle of Weſtminſter, and there ſet to diner. Upon whoſe right hande ſat at the ende of the ſame table the archebyſhop of Cauntoꝛbury, and Henry ſurnamed the riche cardinall of wincheſter. And vppon the lefte hand of the queene ſatte the kynge of Scottes in his eſtate, the whiche was ſerued with couered meſſe, like vnto the foꝛenamed byſhops, but after them. And vpō the ſame hande and ſyde nere to the boꝛdes ende, ſat the ducheſſe of yoꝛke, and the counteſſe of Huntingdō. The erle of Marche holding a ſceptre in his hand, kneled vpon the right ſide. The erle marſhall in lyke maner kniled vpon the lefte hand of the queene. The counteſſe of kent ſat vnder the table at the ryghte foote, and the counteſſe Marſhal at the lefte foote. The duke of Glouceter ſir Humfray was that daye ouerloker, and ſtode befoꝛe the queene bare heded. Sir Rycharde Neuil was that daye caruer to the quene, the erles bꝛother of Suffolke cupberer ſir Jhon Steward Sewar, the loꝛd Clyffoꝛde panterer in ſtede of the erle of warwike, the loꝛde wyllughby boteler in ſtede of the earle of Arundell. The loꝛde Gꝛay Ruthin oꝛ Riffyn naperer. The loꝛde of Awdelei amner in ſtede of the erle of Cambꝛydge. Therle of woꝛceter was that daye erle Marſhall in abſence of the erle Marſhall, the which rode about the hall vpon a great courſer, with a multytude of tipped ſtaues aboute him to kepe the roume in the hall. Of the which hall the barons of the. v. poꝛtes begā the table vpon the right hande towarde ſaynt Stephens chapell, and beneth them at the table ſat the bowchyers of the Chauncery. And vpon the left hande nexte vnto the copboꝛd, ſat the maire and his bꝛethꝛen aldermen of London. The byſhops began the table foꝛ againſt the barons of the. v. poꝛtes, and the ladies the table againſt the mayꝛe. Of whyche two tables, foꝛ the biſhops, began the biſhop of London, and the byſhop of Durham, and foꝛ the ladyes the counteſſe of Staffoꝛde, and the counteſſe of Marche. And ye ſhal vnderſtand, that this feaſte was all of fyſhe. And foꝛ the oꝛderynge of the ſeruyce thereof were dyuers loꝛdes appointed foꝛ hed officers, as ſtewarde, controller, ſurueiour, and other honourable officers. Foꝛ the whiche were appoynted the erles of Noꝛthumberlād, of Weſtmerlande, the loꝛde Fitz Hughe, the loꝛd Furneuall, the loꝛd Gꝛay of wilton, the loꝛde Feres of Gꝛoby the loꝛde Poninges, the loꝛde Haryngton, the loꝛd Darcye, the loꝛd Dacre, & the loꝛd Delaware.

The which with other oꝛdered the ſeruice of the feeſte as foloweth, and thus foꝛ the firſt couſe.

Bꝛawne and muſtarde.
Ded ellyes in Burneux
Frument with Balien
Pyke in Erbage
Lampꝛey powdered
Trought
Codlyng
Playes fryed
Marlyng fryed

Crabbys
Leche lumbarde floryſhed
Tartys.

And a ſotiltye called a Pellycane ſyttinge on his neſt with her birdes, and an image of ſaint Katherin holding a boke, and diſputing with the doctoures, holdyng a reaſon in her righte hande, ſayinge: Medame le Rone, and the Pellican as an anſwere Ce eſt la ſigne, & du roy, pur tenir ioy, & a tout ſa gent, elle mete ſa entent.

¶ The ſeconde courſe.

Gely coloured with columbine floures.
White potage or creme of almandes.
Breme of the ſee
Counger
Solys
Cheuen
Barbyll with Rache
Freſhe Samon
Halybut
Gurnarde
Rochet broyled
Smelth fryed
Creuys or lobſter
Leche Damaſke with the kynges word or prouerbe flouriſhed, Vne ſanz plus.
Lamprey freſhe baken
Flampeyne flouryſhed with a ſcochon royall, and therein. iii. crownes of golde planted wyth floure delyce and floures of camemill wrought of confeccions.

And a ſotiltye named a Panter with an ymage of ſaynte Katherine wyth a whele in her hande, and a rolle with a reaſon in that other hande, ſayenge, La Royne ma file, in ceſta ile, per bon reſon aues renoune.

¶ The thirde courſe.

Dates in compoſt
Creme motle
Carpe deore
Turbut
Tenche
Perche with goion
Freſhe ſturgeon with welkes
Porperus roſted
Mennes fried
Creuis de eawe douce
Pranys.
Elys roſted with lamprey
A leche called the whyte leche flouryſhed wyth hawthorne leues and red hawis.

A marche pain garniſhed with dyuers figures of angels, among the whiche was ſet an ymage of ſainte Katherine holdinge thys reaſon, Il eſt eſcrit, pur voir & eit, per mariage pure ceſt guerre ne dure. And laſtly a ſotiltie named a Tigre loking in a myrrour and a man ſittinge on horſe backe clene armed, holdinge in hys armes a Tigre whelpe with thys reaſon, Per force ſanz reaſon ie ay priſe deſte beſt. And with his own hand making a countenaūce of throynge of myrroures at the great Tigre. The whiche helde this reaſon, Gile the mirrour ma fete diſtour.

And thus with all honour was finiſhed this ſolempne coronacion. After the which the quene ſoiourned in the palayes of weſtminſter till Palme ſondaye folowinge.

And vpon the morne ſhe toke her iournai toward Windſore, where the king and ſhe held their Eaſter

And after that hygh feaſt paſſed, the kinge made prouiſion for his warre in Fraunce, duringe the terme of this mayres yere.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xx. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxi.

Grocer.
Wylliam Cambridge.
{ John Butler
Wylliam Weſton. } Anno.ix.

The.ix. yere.

The duke of Clarẽce ſlayne.

THis yeare vppon Eaſter euen, beynge then the.xxii day of Aprill, the duke of Clarence, brother vnto the kynge, whome at his departinge out of Fraunce, he had left there for his deputy, was at a place called in Frenche Baugy, or Bauge, ouerſet and ſlayne by a Frenche Capitaine, named ſyr John de la Croiſe. And the Earles of Huntingdon, and of Somerſet, with many mo gentlemen of England and Gaſcoyne taken pryſoners, to the kinges greate diſpleaſure. Then ſhortelye after the Kynge helde his parliamente at Weſtminſter. By auctoritie whereof, and of a conuocation of the clergy holden at Poules, was graunted to him a fiftene and diſme. And for the money thereof ſhould not be haſtly called on of the commons, the biſhop of Wincheſter of his owne free minde, lente to the kinge.xx.M.pounde.

Howe t
byſhop o
Wynch
ter lente
the king
xx.M.li.

And about Pentecoſt folowing kinge Henrye ſhipped at Douer, and ſayled to Calays, and from thence yode the thyrde tyme into Fraunce, wher he warred during this mayres yere.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxi. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xxii.

Grocer.
Robert Chicheley.
{ Rycharde Goſſelyn.
Wyllyam Weſton. } Anno.x.

The.x. yere.

The birth of Henrye the.vi.

ANd in the beginning of this Mayers yeare and.vi day of Decembre, was kinge Henry the. vi. borne at Windeſore. And in the ninth daye of the ſayde moneth began a parliament at Poules. By the whiche was graunted to the kynge a fyftene and a diſme of the clergye. And for the coyne of gold at thoſe daies was greatly miniſhed with clippynge and waſhynge, to the great hurte of the comminaltie, therefore at this Parliamente it was enacted and agreed, that in the paymente of this ayde to the kinge graunted, his officers ſhuld receiue all light coynes of golde, ſo that thei wanted not in weight ouer the rate of twelue pence in the noble. And if any noble wanted more then.xii.pence, or any other peſe of golde after the rate, then the owner to make vp the value to ſixe.s.eight.d. By reaſon of this alſo, ſiluer, as Grotes and pens pence were geſon, for all men put forthe the gold, and made ſtore of ſiluer. This yere alſo at Eaſter, the quene toke ſhippyng at Southampton, & ſailed to the king into Fraunce, where ſhe was honorably receiued of her father & mother, and of the Citees and good tounes. And in the citee of Paris vpon whitſondaie, the kyng and ſhe ſat doune at diner, which had not before tyme been ſeen, of any kyng of Englande.

In this Maiors yere alſo, but the .x. yere of the kyng, and .x. daie of Auguſt, a newe weathercocke was ſet vpon the croſſe of ſaincte Paules ſteple of London.

The death of Henrye the fyfte.

Then Kyng Henry beyng ſtill occupied in his warres in Frãce, and daiely winnyng vppon the Frẽchmen, in this ſaied moneth of Auguſt, and .x. yere of his reigne, he waxed ſicke at Bois in Vincente, and died there like a good chriſten man, vpon the laſt daie of Auguſt, when he had reigned .ix. yeres .v. monethes, and ten daies leauyng after him his onely yong ſonne Henry, of the age of eight monethes and od daies. And then his bodie was enbaumed and cered, and after brought vnto Weſtminſter, as in the beginnyng of yͤ next Maiors yere ſhal be ſhewed. And in the moneth of October folowyng, died the Frenche kyng, father vnto the Quene, as in his ſtorie before is declared.

Who that would take vpõ him to rehearſe, all the conqueſtes and triumphaunt victories, obteined by this moſte victorious Prince, with other laudable deedes, he ſhould to rehearſe them ceriouſly, make a great volume. But where tofore I haue ſhewed to you briefly, ſome part of the famous deedes of this excellent prince, touchyng the actuall dedes of his body, now I will briefly touche thactes doen by him, for the merite of his ſoule. And firſt for as moch as he knew wel, that his father had laboured the meanes, to depoſe the noble prince Richard the ſecond, and after was conſentyng to his death, for the whiche offence, his ſaid father had ſente to Rome, of that greate crime to be aſſoiled, & was by the Pope enioyned, that like as he had beraft hym of his natural and bodily life, for euer in this worlde, that ſo by continuall praier and ſuffrages of the churche, he ſhould cauſe his ſoule to liue perpetually in yͤ celeſtiall worlde, whiche penaunce, for that his father by life did not performe, this ghoſtly knight in moſte habundaunte maner performed it. For, firſt he builded three houſes of religion, as the Charterhouſe of Monkes, called Shene, the hous of cloſe Nonnes, called Sion, and the .iii. was an houſe of obſeruaũtes, builded vpõ that other ſide of Thamis, and after let fall by hym for the ſkil that foloweth, as teſtifieth yͤ boke or regiſter of maiors.

Where it is reported, that after this noble Prince, had thus founded theſe ſaied three houſes, and endowed theim with competente landes, he of a ghoſtly diſpoſition with a ſecrete companie for to viſet theim, and to ſee how thei kept their diuine ſeruice, would diuers tymes go from his Manoure of Shene, now called Richmounte vnto theſaid .iii. places, for yͤ cauſes abouеſaid. At whiche times &

ſeaſons, he euer founde the twoo houſes of Monkes and Nonnes, occupied as their ſtatutes required. But the thirde houſe, whiche was of Frenche Friers, he founde ſundrie times negligēt and ſlacke in doing of their duetie. Wherfore he called before hym the father, with ſome other of that place, and reaſoned with them ſharply, why none otherwiſe thei entēded their diuine ſeruice, and praied moare ſpecially for hym, as thei were bounde of duetie. Whereunto it was, after pardon required, laſtely by theſaied Father aunſwered, in cōueniente wiſe, thei naturally might not praie for hym, and his good ſpeede, conſideryng that he daily warred vppon their fathers and kinſmen, and ſlewe of theim, and ſpoiled theim daily, and enpoueriſhed that lande, whiche thei of very kind, ought to loue and pray for. After whiche aunſwere, thus by theim made, the kyng auoyded the houſe of them, and turned the lande thereof, to ſoche vſe as hym beſt liked, and ſuffred the houſe to fall in ruine. And ouer this great acte, of founding of theſe twoo religious houſes, he ordeigned at Weſtminſter to bren perpetually, without extinction, fower tapers of waxe, vppon the Sepulture of Kyng Richard: and ouer that he ordeined thereto, to be continued for euer, one daie in a weeke, a ſolempne Dirige to be ſong, and vppon the morowe a Maſſe, after whiche Maſſe ended, certaine money to be giuē, as before is expreſſed, with other thynges in the beginnyng of this kynges reigne.

And ouer this his greate buſineſſes (warre notwithſtandyng) this moſte chriſten Prince, by his life chaſe his place of Sepulture, within the foreſaied Monaſterie, and there ordeined for hym to bee ſong, iii. Maſſes euery daie in the weke, while the worlde laſteth, in maner and forme, as by theſe verſes folowyng doeth appere.

Henrici Miſſæ quinti, ſunt hic tabulatæ,
Quæ ſucceſsiue ſunt per Monachos celebratæ.

Prima ſit Aſſumptæ de feſto virginis almæ.	Dominica.	Miſſa Aſſumptionis Mariæ.	
Poſcit poſtremam Chriſtus de morte reſurgēs.		Miſſa dn̄icæ reſurrectionis.	1.
Prima ſalute de feſto virginis extat.	Lune.	Miſſa ſalutationis Mariæ.	
Nunciat angelicis laudem poſtrema choreis.		Miſſa annūciationis marię.	2.
Eſſe deum natum de virgine prima fatetur.	Martis.	Miſſa nrtiuitatis Chriſti.	3.
Commemorat natā, ſit vltima miſſa Mariam.		Miſſa natiuitatis Mariæ;	
Prima celebretur, ad honorē neupmatis almi	Mercurij.	Miſſa ſancti Spiritus.	4.
Vltima conceptam denunciat eſſe Mariam.		Miſſa Conceptionis.	
Semper prima coli, debet de corpore Chriſti	Iouis.	Miſſa corporis Chriſti.	5.
Vltima ſit ſata, de virgine purificata.		Miſſa Purificationis.	
Cōcedet vt prima, celebretur de cruce ſancta	Veneris.	Miſſa ſancte crucis.	6.
Atq; ſalutate fiet poſtrema Mariæ.		Miſſa ſalutationis Mariæ.	
Oīs ad ſanctos, eſt prima colenda ſuper nos.	Sabata.	Miſſa omnium ſanctorum.	7.
Vltima de requie, pro defunctis petit eſſe.		Miſſa de reliquie.	
Semper erit media, de proprietate diei.	Omni die.	Miſſa diei quotidie.	

☞ Whiche verſes maie thus to the vnlittered bee Engliſhed.

Loo, here is noted and put in memorie,
That ouer theſe actes noble and Marciall,
This excellent Prince, this fift kyng Henrie,
His ſoule to endowe, he was memoriall.
For with ſuffrages, whiche euer laſte ſhall,
Of Maſſes three that folowe ſeuerally,
At Weſtminſter he ordeined to bee ſaied daily.

Sondaie. Upon Sondaie the firſte Maſſe to beginne,
Deuoutly to bee ſaied, of the Aſſumpcion,
Of our bleſſed Ladie, and not thereafter to blinne.
But then the latter of the Reſurrection.
Mondaie. And on the Mondaie, of the Viſitacion,
The firſte Maſſe ordeined is.
Of the Annunciacion, the latter Maſſe ſaied is.

Tuiſdaie. Upon the Tuiſdaie, to kepe the order iuſte,
The firſte to bee ſaied of Chriſtes Natiuitee:
Then of our Ladie birthe, the latter folowe muſte.
Wedniſdaie. On Wedniſdaie, the holie Ghoſte halowed bee,
And of the Conception the thirde willed be.
Thurſdaie. The Thurſdaie to ſyng the firſte of Corpus Chriſti,
Of the Purification the laſt of our Ladie.

Fridaie. Upon the Fridaie, a Maſſe of Chriſtes croſſe,
And of the Salutacion, the latter for to ſyng.
And for of daie or tyme ſhould bee no loſſe.
Saterdaie. Upon Saterdaie, the firſt of that mornyng.
A Maſſe of all ſainctes to praie for the kyng,
Then Maſſe of Requiem to bee laſt of all.
Quotidie. And euery daie, the daie Maſſe amid theſe maſſes to fall,

Lenuoye.

O mercifull God, what a Prince was this,
Whiche his ſhort life in Marciall actes had ſpent,
In honour of conqueſt, that wonder to me it is.
How he might compaſſe, ſoche deedes excellente,
And yet for that his mynde nothyng detente,
All ghoſtly health for his ſoule to prouide,
Out of this worlde, or he fatally ſhould ſlide.

So that though I had Tully his eloquence,
Or of Seneck the greate moralitee,

Or of Salomon the perfite Sapience,
Or the ſwete dities of dame Caliope,
yet might I not in proſe or other ditte,
Accordyngly auaunce this Prince his fame,
And with due honour to inhaunce the ſame.

Conſideryng his actes, whereof percell appere,
In this rude werke, with many mo lefte out,
The tyme alſo, whiche was leſſe then ten yere,
That he ſo ſhortly brought all thyng aboute,
By diuine grace forthred without doubte,
That mightfull Lorde, he holpe his ghoſtly knight,
With grace and honour, to paſſe this worldes ſlight.

And to haue rewarde, double and condigne,
And firſt for Marciall actes by hym dooen,
To bee aduaunced emong the worthies nine,
And for his vertues vſed by hym eſtſoone,
With many good deedes, whiche he in yearth had dooen,
Aboue the Hierarches, he is I truſt now ſtalled,
That was on yearth, kyng of kynges called.

Anglia.

Kyng Henry the .vi.

Kyng Henrie the ſixt.

Henry the .vi. of that name and onely ſon of Henry the fifth, and of quene Katherine, doughter of Charles the ſeuenth kyng of Fraunce, began his reigne ouer the realme of England, the firſt daie of September, in the yere of our Lorde, a thouſande fower hundreth twentie and twoo, and in thende of the laſte yere of the reigne of the foreſaied ſeuenth Charles, then kyng of Fraunce.

This Henry, for the inſufficiēce of his age, whiche as before is ſhewed, was but of eight monethes and od daies, was committed vnto the rule of his vncles, the Dukes of Bedforde and Glouceter. The whiche duryng his none age ruled the realmes of Englande, & of Fraunce honourably, as the duke of Gloceſter, Protectoure of Englande, and the Duke of Bedforde, Regente of Fraunce. Then vpon the .xxi. daie of October, duryng this Maiors yere, Roberte Chiceley died at Paris, ẏ aboue named ſeuenth Charles Kyng of Fraūce. By reaſon of whoſe death by force of appoinctmenet, before made betwene Henry the fift and hym, as before is touched in ẏ .vii. yere of the ſaid Henry, the realme of Fraunce and the right thereof fell vnto the yong king Hēry. To whoſe vſe the Nobles of Fraunce, (excepte a fewe of ſoche as helde with

How th
nobles o
Frauce
liuerd
poſſeſſio
thereof
the duke
Bedfo:
during

nage of
nry the
r.

with the Dolphine) deliuered the poſſeſſion thereof vnto the Duke of Bedforde, as Regent thereof, duryng that nonage of this king.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xxii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xxiii.

Willyam Walderne. { William Eſtfeilde. Robert Taterſale. } Anno. j.

he firſte
er.

IN yͤ beginnyng of this Maioꝛs yere, and firſte yere of the kyng, that is to ſaie, the ſeuenth daie of Nouember, the coꝛps of the excellent pꝛince Kyng Henry the. v. was with greate ſolempnitie and honour, bꝛought vnto the Monaſterie of Weſtminſter, and there at the feete of ſainct Edward, with due reuerence enterred, to whoſe ſoule Jeſus be mercifull.

And vpon the nineth daie of the moneth, was a Parlament called at Weſtminſter: by reaſon wherof, the kyng his gouernaunce, duryng his nonage was pꝛouided foꝛ, with all the rule of bothe realmes, of Englande and Fraunce. And by auctoꝛitie of theſame, the duke of Gloceter ſir Hũfrey, was oꝛdeined pꝛotectour of England, and duke Jhon of Bedfoꝛde regēt of Fraunce. And duryng the parlamente, was graunted vnto the king foꝛ a ſubſidie foꝛ. iii. yeres. v. nobles of euery ſacke of woll that ſhould paſſe ouer the lande. And yͤ firſt daie of Marche after, was of his pꝛieſthode deregraded, an heretike named William Taillour, and bꝛent to aſhes in Smithfeld. Whoſe opiniõs foꝛ the hearyng of them, ſhuld be tedious & vnfrutefull, J therefoꝛe will not with thē blot my booke. In this moneth of March alſo, was yͤ toune of Poũt Melane deliuered by appointmēt vnto the regēt of Fraunce. Of the whiche appointmente one article was, that all hoꝛſes, abilimentes of warre, harneis, and other ſhuld be left within theſaid place, & alſo golde and ſiluer and other iewels ther to remain wholy. And if that any perſone were within the hold founde, whiche befoꝛe tyme had been giltie, oꝛ conſentyng to the death of the duke of Burgoyne, yͤ he ſhould bee deliuered to the Regent, and not to take any benefit oꝛ pꝛiuilege by that appointment.

he duke
Gloceter
otectour
Englād
d duke
Bedfoꝛd
gent of
aunce.

heritik
rnte.

In this yere, the Weſt gate of yͤ citee called Newgate, was newely builded, and repared by the executours of Richard Whitington late Maioꝛ of London. And this yere after Midſomer, fell greate water oꝛ rain, ſo that foꝛ the moꝛe partie, euery daie atwene the beginning of July, & ende of Septē ber, it rained litle oꝛ moch, and yet that notwithſtandyng, that yere was conuenient plentie of grain, ſo that wheate paſſed not. viii. s. at London, and malte. v. s.

Newgate newly builded and repared.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xxiii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xxiiii.

Dꝛaper.
William Crowmer. { Nicholas James. Thomas wadefoꝛde. } Anno. ij.

The.ii. yere.

THis yeare, that is to mean, in the beginning of this Maiors yere, & xiii. daie of Nouember, the kyng, and the Quene his mother, remoued from Windſore towarde London, and came that night vnto Stanes, and on the morow he was borne to the chare with glad ſemblaunte and merie chere, and ſo came to Kyngſtone that night, and vpon the morowe vnto his Manour of Kyngſtone. Vpon Wedniſdaie, the Quene ſittyng in her chaire, and he vpõ her lap, paſſed with greate triumphe throughe the Citee, and ſo vnto Weſtminſter, wher then was holden his Parlament, and there ſat in his kyngly maieſtie, within the Parlamente chamber, emong all his Lordes. where the ſpeaker of the Parlamente, made a famous prepoſitiõ, whereof the effect was of the grace that God had endewed the realme with, for the preſence of ſo towarde a Prince, and ſoueraigne gouernour as he was, with many other wordes of commendation, whiche I paſſe ouer.

The.xxvi. daie of the ſaied moneth of Nouember, the kyng with the Quene, remoued from Weſtminſter vnto waltam croſſe. And after he had there a ſeaſon ſoiourned, he remoued vnto Hertforde, where he helde his Chriſtmaſſe, and the Kyng of Scottes with hym. And the foreſaied Parlament was iourned, vnto the twẽtie daie of Chriſtmaſſe. In the whiche Parlament emong other actes, was ordeined, that what priſoner that for graunde or petie treaſon, was committed to ward, and after wilfully brake theſame, it ſhould bee demed petie treaſon, and that the goodes of hym ſo eſcapyng, ſhould bee forfeited to the Lorde of that ſoile, that thei wer founde in.

The King of Scottes maried in S. Mary Ouereis.

In the moneth of February, ſir James Steward kyng of Scottes, maried in the face of the churche of Sainct Mary Ouereis in Southwerke, dame Johan, the Ducheſſe doughter of Clarence, whiche was doughter vnto therle of Somerſet, firſt huſbande vnto the ſaied Ducheſſe: and the feaſte was holden in the biſhop of Wincheſters place by. And ſone after, vpon the.xiii. daie of Februarie, yͤ foreſaid Parlament being again holdẽ at weſtminſter, for breaking of the foreſaid acte of breakyng of priſon, ſir Jhon Mortimer was accuſed by a yoman, named Willyam Kyng, and ſeruaunt vnto ſir Robert Scot knighte, and keper of the tower of London, of diuers pointes of treaſon, as folowen.

Mortime

Firſte, he counſailed with the ſaied Willyam Kyng, to the ende to breake out of priſon, and promiſed to hym for theſame, the yerely value of.xl. pounde lande, and in proceſſe an Erledome. And the ſaied Mortimer ſhould ſaie, that he would go into Wales, vnto the Earle of the Marches, and there he would raiſe fourtie thouſande menne, and with that power he would entre this land, and ſtrike of the heddes of the lorde Protectour, and of the biſhop of Wincheſter, to thentent that he might tel or plaie with ſome of his money. And farthermore he accuſed him, that the ſaied Mortimer ſhould ſaie, that therle of Marche ſhould bee Kyng, by right enheritaunce,

and

6

and that he hym ſelf was nexte rightfull heire to theſaied croune, after the ſaied Earle of Marche: wherefore, if theſaied Erle would not take vpon hym the Croune, and rule of this land, he ſaid that he els would. And ouer this the ſaid William alledged, to theſaid ſir Jhō Mortimer, that he ſhould ſaie, that if he failed of his purpoſe and might not win vnto the Erle of Marches, that then he would ſaile vnto the Dolphine, and aide and take his partie, where he wiſt well, he ſhould bee accepted, and haue good aide of hym, to bryng aboute his purpoſe. All whiche matter were duely approued by theſaid Willyam, againſt theſaid ſir Jhon, before the Lordes and Commons of theſaied Parlamēt for the whiche treaſons, he was after drawen and hanged.

In this yere alſo, the Duke of Bedford beyng in Fraunce as regente, warred ſtrongly vppon the Dolphin, and wan from him many ſtrong holdes and Tounes, as Crotey, Baſide, Rioll, Rula, Gyround, Baſile, Mermound, Milham, Femel, Seintace, Jenſake, Mauron, Duras, Mountſuer, la Venak, Palogeeir, Cerneis, Noe lam, Cuſak and Doual, with diuers other, and ſo continued til he came vnto Verneil in Perche. The whiche he helde ſo ſtreighte, that laſtly Girande the capitaine thereof agreed, to deliuer it by a certaine daie, excepte he were reſcowed. After whiche appoinctement ſo taken, theſaied Girande, as witneſſeth Gagwinus, ſente woorde to Charles the eighte of that name, or the ſeuenth after diuers writers, whiche of his fautours, was then occoumpted for Kyng of Fraunce. And he in all poſſible haſte, ſēt thether the duke of Alenſon, the Erle of Turon or of Douglas, of Bowghā or Boucam, of Daumail, and the Vicoūt of Nerbon, with a ſtrong power of Armenakes, Scottes & Frēche men, the whiche hoſte or it might approch to theſaid toune to make reſcouſe, the daie expired, and it vnto the Duke deliuered. When the Duke of Alanſon was aſcertained, of the deliuerie of yͤ toune, he tooke his aduiſe of the other capitaines, whether it was better to retourne, conſideryng the toune was yelden, or to giue bataile vnto the Engliſhe menne. But finally, for no reproch ſhould bee to theim aretted, as thei had fled for feare, thei kepte on their iourney, and pight their fielde in a plaine, nere vnto the ſaid toune of Vernoill, where thei beeyng ſtrongly enbattalled, vpon the ſeuenth daie of yͤ moneth of Auguſt the duke of Bedforde with his retinue, gaue to them ſharpe & cruel battaile, the whiche endured lōg, without knowlege of victorie.

But finally, by Goddes ordenaunce and power, the victory fel to thengliſhe partie, to the greate loſſe of their enemies. For in the fight was ſlaine, as teſtifieth the Frenche Gagwine, the Earles of Turon, and Boucā, of Daumaile with the Vicount of Narbone, & diuers other men of name. And of the Commons were ſlaine to the nomber of .v. M. And there was taken the Duke of Alenſon, the Marſhall of Fraunce, and other. But thengliſhe writer affirmeth ten thouſande to be ſlain and mo.

Victorie ouer the Frenche menne.

Anno domini.M.cccc.xxiiii. Anno domini.M.cccc.xxv.

Jhon Michell. { Simonde Seman. / Jhon Biwater. } Anno.iii.

The.iii. yere.

This yere after Eaſter, the kyng helde his parlament at Weſtminſter the whiche began vpon the daie of ſainct Erkenwalde, or the laſte daie of Aprill. And twoo daies before, the Kyng with the Quene his mother, came through the citee frō windſore. And when he came at the Weſt doore of Paules, the Lorde Protectoure tooke hym out of his chare, and ſo was ladde vpon his feete, betwene the ſaied Lorde Protectoure, and the duke of Exceter, vnto the ſteppes goyng into the Quier: fro whens he was borne vnto the high alter and there kneled in a trauers purueighed for him. And when he had been there, he yode to the roode of of the Northdore, and there made his offerynges. And then was he borne into the churche yarde, and there ſet vpon a faire courſer, and ſo cōueighed through Chepe, and the other ſtretes of the citee, vnto S. George his barre, and ſo helde his iourney to his manour of Keningtone. And cōtinuyng the forſaied Parlamente, the kyng was ſometyme cōueighed to Weſtminſter, and within the Parlamente Chamber, kepte his royall eſtate, By aucthoritee whereof, to hym was graunted a ſubſidie of. xii.d. the pounde, of all maner of Marchaundiſe comming in, or paſſyng out of this realme, and three ſhillynges of a tunne of wine, for the terme of three yeres to be holden. And farthermore it was enacted, that all Marchaunte ſtraungers, ſhould be ſet to an Engliſhe hoſte, within fiftene daies of their commyng to their Porte ſale, and to make no ſale of any marchaūdiſe, or thei were ſo lodged, and then within fourtie daies folowyng, to make ſale of all that the brought. And if any remained vnſolde, at the ſaied fourtie daies eande, that then all ſoche Marchaundiſe beeyng then vnſolde, to be forfaicted to the kyng. Alſo that all ſtraungers, that caried any Wolles out of this lande, ſhould paie. xliii. s. and fower pence, for a ſacke Cuſtome, where the Engliſhe Marchaunt and Denezen paie but fiue nobles, with many other condicions and penalties, aſwell for Engliſhe, as thother Marchauntes, whiche ſhould aſke long leiſure to ſhewe, enacted and paſſed, during this ſaied Parlament.

Certaine ordinaun
ces for ma
chauntes
as well
ſtraũgers
as other.

And the ſeconde daie of the moneth of Auguſt, was yelden vnto the Erle of Saliſburie, appoincted with other by the regente, the citee of Mans, vnder appoinctement, compriſed in nine articles. Whereof one ſpeciall was, that if any perſones were founden within the citee, whiche had been conſentyng vnto the Dukes deathe, Jhon late Duke of Burgoyne, that thei ſhould ſtand at the grace of the ſaied regent.

And this yere the duke of Gloceter lorde protector, which lately before had maried the ducheſſe of Holāde, a woman of greate poſſeſſion,

ſion, for cauſe of rule whereof, to haue dominion of the ſame, he with the ſaide ducheſſe ſayled towarde that coūtree, and therof hir ſubiectes was peaſiblye and with honour receiued: But finally he had ſuche there, that he was glad to retourne into Englande, leauyng his wife there in a toune of hir owne named Mounſe. But after his departing, the Duke of Burgoin ſo demeaned him to the rulers of that towne, were it by battaile or otherwiſe, that they deliuered hir to the ſaid duke, and he forthwith ſent her vnto Gaunt there to be kept as priſoner. But by the frendſhip of one named ſir Jaques de la Grayll a Burgoniō knight, and her owne polecy, ſhe eſcaped thens in a mans clothing and came to the towne in Zeland named Zyryre, and from thence to another towne in zelande called Ghwode or Ghowde, where ſhe withſtode the dukes power.

Then the duke of Gloceter hearyng of the eſcape of his wife, and of the malyce of the duke foreſaid, in all haſte prouided a ſtrong companye of ſouldiers and archers, and committed thē vnto the rule of the lord Fitzwater. The which in proceſſe of time landed wyth them at a place in zelande called Brewers hauen, whereof their enemies thei were encountred and driuen backe, and ſo retourned into England without anye great fete doyng, leuing the ducheſſe behinde them for that ſeaſon.

This yere about Myghelmaſſe the prince of Portingale came into Englande, and was honourably rereaued & feſted of the kinges vncles, and taried here the time of this maires yere. This yere alſo began a grudge to kyndle betwene the lord protectour and his halfe brother the byſhop of Wincheſter, the whiche after grewe to a great diſtourbaunce of the citie of London, as in the next maires yeare ſhalbe ſhewed. And in the ende of this yere, were many honeſt men of the citye apeached of treaſon, by a falſe and malicyous perſon belonging vnto the ſayde byſhop, and put them vnto great vexacion and trouble. Which was dooen by the procuremente of the ſayd biſhop, as the common fame then went. And not alonely men of the cytie were thus vexed, but alſo other burgeyſes of dyuers good townes, as Leiceter, Caunterburye, Northampton, and other.

A grudge betwene yͤ lordprotectour and yͤ biſhoppe of Wicheſter

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxv. Anno domini.M.cccc.xxvi.

Mercer.
Jhon Couentree.
Wyllyam Mylrede
Jhon Brokle.
Anno.iiii.

The.iiii. yere.

IN thys yere the.xxix. daye of October, and ſelfe ſame day that the maire yͤ for yere folowyng yerely at Weſtminſter taketh his charge, at ſuch tyme as he was holdynge hys greate dyner, he was by the lorde protectour ſente for in ſpedy maner. And when he was commen

Howe the ſeruaũtes of the byſſhop of wincheſter aſſauted the bridg gate of London

men to his preſẽce, he gaue to him ſtreyght commaundemente, that he ſhuld ſe that the city wer ſurely watched in that night folowyng, and ſo it was. Then vpon the morowe folowinge aboute.ix. of the clocke, certaine ſeruauntes of the forenamed biſhop would haue entred by the bridge gate. But the rulers therof would not ſuffer thẽ in ſo greate number, but kept thẽ out by force, lyke as before they were commaunded. Wherewith they beyng greuouſly diſcontented, gathered to thẽ a more number of archers and men of armes, and aſſauted the gate with ſhotte and other meanes of warre. In ſo muche that the Commons of the citee hearyng thereof, ſhutte in their Shoppes and ſped theim thither in greate nomber. And likely to haue enſued greate effuſion of bloude ſhortly therevpon, ne had been the diſcrecion of the Maire and his brethren, that exhorted the people by al politike meane to kepe the kinges peace. And in this paſſe time, the archbyſhop of Cauntorbury, with the prince of Portingale and other, tooke great laboure vpon them to pacify this variaunce betwene the lorde protectour and the byſſhoppe, in ſo much that they rode betwene theim.viii.times or they might bring theim to any reſonaconformitie. Then laſtly they agreed to ſtande to the rule of the regent, or if ſuche as he wolde aſſigne. Wherupon the citie was ſet in a more quiet. Then the biſhop of Wincheſter wrote a letter vnto the duke of Bedforde or lorde regent, whereof the tenoure enſueth.

The copie of a letter ſent by the byſhop of Wincheſter to the duke of bedforde then lorde regẽt of Fraũce

Right & mighty prince and right noble, and after one leueſte earthly lorde, I recommaunde me vnto your grace with all mine hert. And as ye deſire the welfare of the king our ſoueraine lorde, & of his realmes of Englande and of Fraunce, and your owne weale with all youres, haſte you hither, for by my touth, and ye tary long we ſhall put this lande in ieopardy with a felde, ſuche a brother ye haue here, God make him a good man. For your wiſedom knoweth well that the profyte of Fraunce ſtandeth in the welfare of Englande. Righte highe and mightie prince, I beſech you hold maiſter Ihon Eſtcourt your councellour excuſed of his taryinge, for it is muche againſte his will. But the counſaile here hath made him do contrary his minde. And that it may like you to giue credence vnto your chamberlaine ſir Roberte Butler. And the bleſſed Trinitie kepe you.

Writen in greate haſte at London the laſte daie of October.

The retourne of the duke of bedforde.

Vpon the.x. daye of Ianuary nexte enſuynge, the ſaide duke of Bedforde with his wife came vnto London: And with them came alſo the ſaid biſhop of Wincheſter. And the maire and the citezyns receiued him through the citie vnto Weſtminſter, wher he was lodged in the kinges palais, and the biſhop of Wincheſter was lodged within the abbottes lodging.

Then vppon the morowe folowing or the.xi. daye of Ianuarye, the mayre preſented the regent with a paire of baſins of ſiluer and ouer gylte, and in them

A counſaill holden at ſainte Albones.

The parliamente of Battes.

The complaint of yͤ duke of Glouceter againſt the byſhop of Wicheſter

a.M.marke of gold.But the biſhop had ſo incenced him againſt the citie,that they receaued but a ſmall thanke for all their labour and coſt.Upon the.xxi.day of February,then began a great counſaile at ſaint Albons,and after it was adiourned vnto Northampton.But for due concluſiōs might not bee driuen by the ſaid counſel, therefore vppon the.xxv.daye of Marche enſuynge, was called a parliamēt at Leiceter,the which endured till the.xv.daye of Juny folowing.This was cleped of the common people the parliament of battes.The cauſe was, for proclamacions were made,that men ſhould leue their ſweardes and other weapons in their Innes,the people toke great battes & ſtaues in their neckes, and ſo folowed their lordes and maiſters, vnto the parliament. And whan that weapen was inhibited then, they toke ſtones and plumets of lede,& truſſed thē ſecretly in their ſleues and boſomes. Duryng the parlamente, and among other notable thinges for yͤ weale of the realme, the variaunce that was betwene the forſayd lordes was herein debated and argued. In ſo muche that the duke of Glouceter put in a bill of complaynt, againſte the biſhop conteyninge.vi.articles. Whereof the firſt was,that wher the lorde protectour,would haue had his lodging within the towre of London,he was by the comfort and aide defended and let of the biſhop, Richard wideuile eſquier then beynge Liuetenaunt of the ſame.The ſeconde was, for that, yͭ the biſhop would haue remoued the king from Eltham, and haue ſet him at his gouernaunce without the aduice and counſell of the lorde protectour.The thirde was that when the Duke was enformed,of the biſhops entent,and he entending according to his office & duetie, in peaſible wiſe to haue riden to the kynge to haue geuen vpon him attendaunce:the biſhop entendinge the diſtruccion of the duke,aſſembled a gret multitude of men of armes and archers in Southwarke, and there drewe the cheine at the bridge fote, and ſet vp pipes and other engins to ſtop the kinges hie way, and ordeined men to ſtande in chaumbers and ſolers to throwe ſtones, and by their ordenaunces and policye, to haue deſtroyed the duke and his company. The.iiii.artycle was,that king Henry the fift ſhould by his life time ſhewe vnto the ſaied Duke , that by the openyng of a ſpaniell , a manne was taken behind a tapet in one of the kinges chambres.The which mā after examined by the erle of Arundel,confeſſed that he was ſent thither by the ſaid biſhop, to the ende to murther kinge Henry the fourth.After which confeſſion,the ſaide erle let ſacke that man, and ſo caſte him into the Thamys.

The fifte was, that the ſayde Henry the fift beynge prince and heire parante to the crowne, the ſayde byſhop ſhoulde come vnto him and ſaye,that for ſomuche as his father was vexed with greuous ſicknes, and was not apte to come in conuerſacyon of the people, nor myghte not conueniently gyde the realm,that he therfor ſhould take vpon him the rule and gouernaūce of the ſame,and put his father from all kinglye power. The.vi. and laſte article was, that ſediciouſly the ſayd biſſhop, had by his letters, ſent lately vnto yͤ duke of Bedford, wrongfully acuſed him, in that he ſhould araiſe the kinges people, and iouparde this lande by a fielde, contrarye to the kynges peace and common weale of this lande.

Al whiche artycles were by the byſſhop well and ſufficiently anſwered & replyed, ſo that he laied from him the blame. And finally by the prouident counſaile of the lorde regent, all the ſaied articles and matters of variaūce atwene the ſaide twoo lordes hanginge, were put to the examinacion and iudgemente, with the aſſytence of the lordes of the parliamente, of Henry the archbiſhop of Caunterbury, of Thomas duke of Exceter, of Jhon duke of Northfolk, Thomas byſhop of Durham, of Philippe byſſhop af Worceter, of Jhon biſhop of Bathe, of Humfrey then Erle of Staffor de, of Rauffe Lorde Cornewell, and of maiſter Wylliam Alnewike then keper of yͤ preuy ſeale. The which lordes with aſſiſtence of the other lordes of the parliament, made a decre and awarde, ſo that eyther partie toke other by the hande, with frendly and louing wordes, none hauing amendes of other, except the biſhop had words of ſubmiſſion vnto the duke, in requyring him of his fauoure and good lordſhip: And the accorde thus finiſhed till after Eaſter. Uppon whitſondaye folowinge, was a ſolempne feaſt holden at Leyceter foreſaid, where the regent dubbed kinge Henry knighte. And than forthwith the kinge dubbed Rycharde duke of Yorke, that after was father to king Edward. Alſo he dubbed knightes, the ſonne and heire of the duke Jhon of Northfolke, and the erles of Oxforde and Weſtmerlande, with other lordes and gentilmen to the number of.xxxiiii.

And after that feaſt with al honour was ended, the kinge with the regent and other of his lordes drewe towarde London. And ſo the regent cōtinued with the king in Englande, by the full terme of this mayres yere.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxvi. Anno.M.cccc.xxvii.
Fiſhmonger { Jhon Arnolde. } Anno.v.
Jhon Raywell { Jhon Higtham. }

The .v. yere.

THe.v.yere and moneth of Februarý, the regente with his wife and houſhoulde meny paſſed the ſea vnto Calais, and ſo through Picardy into Fraunce. But or he departed thens, that is to meane vppon the day of annunciacion of our Lady the biſhop of Wyncheſter within the church of our Lady of Calais, was created cardinall. And after that ſolempnitie done, the regent tooke him on his right hand, and ſo conueied him vnto his lodging.

This yere was vnreaſonable of wedering, for it rayned moſt parte continually from Eaſter to Mighelmaſſe, where through haye and corne was greatly hindered.

And in this yere the duke of Alenſon, that before was taken priſoner at the battaile of Vernel in Perch, was deliuered for a raunſon of.ii.C.M.ſcutes of golde as teſtifieth Gagwinus, whiche is fifty.M.marke ſterlinge money.

In this yere the erle of Saliſbury, which of diuers writers is named the good Erle, accōpanied with therle of Suffolke, the lorde Talbot, and other, layde a ſtrong ſiege vnto the citie of Orleaunce. and held the citezins very ſtreight and mauger the duke of Orleaūce and the marſhal of Fraunce then named Bouſſak, the Engliſhmen wan from theim diuers ſtronge holdes adioynyng to the city, and forced them to bren a great parte of the ſuburbes of the cytie.

But ſorowe it is to tell and dolfull to wryte, whyle one daye the ſaid good erle ſir Thomas Mountagu, reſted him at a baye windowe, and behelde the compaſſe of the citie, and talked with his familiers, a gon was leueyled out of the city from a place vnknowē, whiche brake the timber or ſtone of the windowe with ſuche violence, that the peces therof all to quaſhed the face of the noble erle, in ſuche wiſe that he dyed within thre daies folowing. Upon whoſe ſoule and all chryſten Ieſu haue mercy. Amen. This after dyuers wryters was Initium malorum. For after this myſhap, the Engliſhmen loſte rather then wan, ſo that by lytell and litell thei loſt al their poſſeſſion in Fraunce. And albeit that ſomewhat they gate after, yet for one that they wan they loſte three, as after ſhall appeare,

The death of ẏ erle of Saliſburi.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxvii. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxviii.

Draper
Jhon Gedney
{ Henry Frowike.
Robert Otley. }
Anno.vi.

The.vi.
ere.

THe.vi.yeare and beginning of the ſame, the king held his parlament at Weſtminſter. By authoritye whereof, was graunted to him a ſubſidye in maner as foloweth. Firſt of euery tunne of wine that came into his land, from the feaſt of ſaynte Ambroſe or the fowerth daye of Aprill till the ende of that yere, the king ſhoulde haue.iii. s. belonging to a denizin or ẏ kinges liegeman. Alſo of all marchaundiſe paſſing or comming into this land, ſhipped by denizon, the king to haue of euery.xx.s xii.d. except woll, fell and clothe. Alſo to him was graūted, that of all pariſhes throughout this realme, being the benefice of the valew of.x.marke, that.x.of the ſaid pariſhons ſhuld paye of their mouables.vi.s.and viii.d.after the rate of.viii. pens euery man. And of all benefices ẏ were of.x.poūd.x.pariſhōs to pay xiii.s.&.iiii.d.al cities & borowes to be excepted. And ſo rate & rate like frō ẏ loweſt benefice to ẏ hieſt And for ẏ inhabitauntes of citees boroughes it was enacted, that euerye man beinge in valew of .xx. li. aboue his ſtuffe of houſhold and his aparaile, and his wiues, ſhuld paye .iiii. d. and ſo after the rate vnto the richeſt.

In this yere alſo and daye of ſaint Giles or the firſt day of September, the cardinall of Wincheſter was met by the maire and his brethren and certaine citezins on horſebacke with out the citie, and ſo broughte vnto his palays in Southwerke.

A murder.

About the ſame time, a Briton that a good widowe and honeſte woman, had cheryſhed & brought vp of almes, dwellynge in white chapell pariſhe without Algate, murdered the ſaide woman in a night ſleping in her bed, and after conueied ſuche iewelles and ſtuffe as he might cary: But he was ſo purſued vppon, that for feare he tooke a Churche in Eſſex, and there forſware the kinges lande. And the conſtables cauſed him be brought to London, and ſo entended to haue conueyed him weſtwarde. But ſo ſoone as he was commen in the pariſhe where before he had committed the murther, the wifes caſte vppon him ſo moche filth & ordure of the ſtrete, that not withſtandinge the reſyſtence made by the conſtables, thei ſlewe him there out of hande.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xxviii. Anno domini. M.cccc.xxix.

Skynner.
Richard Barton
{ Thomas Duſhous
Raffe Holande. }
Anno .vii.

The .vii. yere.

AND in this yere vppon the .viii. day of Nouember, the duke of Norfolk accompanied with many gentilmen, toke his barge at ſaint mary Ouereis, entendinge to haue paſſed through the bridg, and ſo vnto Grenewitche. But by the miſguidinge of the ſteriſman, he was ſet vppon the piles of the bridge, and the barge whelmed, ſo that all were drowned, except the duke and a fewe perſons that lept vppon the piles, whiche after were drawen vp with ropes and ſo ſaued: And in the moneth of Iuny folowinge, the cardinall of Wincheſter with a warly company paſſed the ſea, entending to haue made warre vpon the Heretikes or lollers that inhabited the countree of Prage: But howe it was for nede of men that the regente had in Fraunce the cardinal chaunged his purpoſe, and taried there a ſeaſon with the ſaide regent.

After ſom writers it was for to ſtrength and repleniſhe certaine holdes, that were by reaſon of a conflict that the Engliſhmen had with the Frenchmenne. At the which the lorde Talbot was taken priſoner, and the lorde Scalis with many other, to the nomber of thre thouſand Engliſhmen were ſlaine and taken: But after the opinion of the Frenche cronicle, this victorye ſhould be obteined by Jane or Johan called in Frenche la pucelle de dieu, in the .xi. yeres of this kinge.

Of the foreſaide heretikes of

Prage, ſpeaketh ſomedeale the auctour of Chronica Chronicarum, and ſheweth that the chief capitaines of theim were named, Procapius, Saplicius, and Lupus a prieſt, with other bothe lerned and vnlearned. And Polichronicō ſheweth in the ninetene chapiter of his laſt booke, that in the xii. yere of Kyng Henry, the foreſaied three capitaines were ſlain, with one maſter Peter clerke, beyng an Engliſhe manne taken on liue, with diuers other, and of the ſaied heretickes ſlain at two iournais ouer. xxii. M.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xxix.
Mercer.
William Eſtfelde.
Willyam Ruſſe.
Raffe Holande.
Anno dñi. M.cccc.xxx.
Anno. viij.

The. viii. yere.

IN this eight yere, vpō the daie of ſaincte Leonarde, the ſixte daie of Nouember, kyng Henry beyng vpon the age of nyne yeres, was ſolēply crouned in ſainct Peters Churche of Weſtminſter: at whoſe Coronation were made xxxvi. knightes of the Bathe. And after that ſolempnization in the ſaied churche finiſhed, an honourably feaſte in the greate halle of Weſtminſter was kept, where the Kyng ſittyng in his eſtate, was ſerued with three courſes, as here vnder enſueth.

Frumentie with veniſon.
Viand royall planted loſinges of golde.
Bore heddes in Caſtelles of gold, and enarmed.
Befe with Motton boiled.
Capon ſtewed.
Signet roſted.
Heiron roſted.
Greate Pike or Luce.
A redde Leche, with Lions coruin therein.
Cuſtarde royall, with a liopарde of gold ſittyng therein, and holdyng a Flourdelice.
Fritoure of Sunne facion, with a flouredelice therein.

A ſotiltie of Saincte Edward and ſainct Lowis armed, and vpō either his coate armour, holdyng betwene theim a figure like vnto kyng Henry, ſtandyng alſo in his coate armour, and a ſcripture paſſyng from them bothe, ſaiyng: beholde twoo perfecte Kynges vnder one coate armoure. And vnder the feete of the ſaied ſainctes, was written this balade.

Holie ſainctes, Edwarde and ſainct Lowice,
Conſerue this braunche, borne of your bleſſed bloud,
Liue emong chriſten moſte ſoueraigne of price,
Enheritour of the Flowerdelice ſo good:
This ſixte Henry, to reigne and be wiſe,
God graunte he maie to bee your mode,
And that he maie reſemble your knighthode and vertue,
Praie ye hartely vnto our Lorde Ieſu.

Viande blacke barred with gold,
Gelie partie written and noted.

with Te deum laudamns.

Pigge endored
Crane roſted.
Bittore.
Conies.
Partriche.
Pecoke enhakill.
Greate Breme.

A white Leche planted with a redde Antelop, with a croune aboute his necke, with a chaine of golde. Flampaine poudered with Leopardes & flourdelice of golde.

A fritor garniſhed wͭ a leopards heade and twoo Eſtrich fethers.

A ſoteltie, an Emperour and a kyng, araied in mãtelles of garters, whiche figured Sigiſmund the Emperoure and Henry the.v. And a figure like vnto kyng Henry the ſixte, knelyng tofore theim with this balade tacked by hym.

Againe miſcreauntes the Emperoure Sigiſmunde,
Hath ſhewed his might, whiche is Imperiall.
And Henry the fifte a noble knight was founde,
For Chriſte his cauſe in actes marciall,
Cheriſhed the Churche, to lollers gaue a fall,
Giuyng example to kynges that ſuccede,
And to their braunche here in eſpeciall,
While he doeth reigne to loue God and drede.

Quinces in compoſt.

Blaund ſure poudered with quarter foiles gilt.

Veniſon.
Egrettes.
Curlewe.
Coke and Partriche.
Plouer.
Quales.
Snites.
Greate birdes.
Larkes.
Carpe.
Crabbe.
Leche of three colours.

A bake meate like a Shilde, quartered red and white, ſet with loſynges gilt, & flours of Borage.

A fritoure criſped.

A ſoteltie of our Ladie, ſittyng wͭ her childe in her lap, & ſhe holdyng a croune in her hande. Sainct George and ſ. Denis knelyng on either ſide, preſẽted to her king Hẽry his figure, bearyng in hande this Balade, as foloweth.

O bleſſed Ladie Chriſte his mother dere,
And thou ſainct George that called art her knight,
Holie ſainct Denis, O martyre moſte entere,
The ſixt Henry here preſent in your ſight,
Shedeth of your grace on hym your heauenly light,
His tender youth with vertue doeth auaunce,
Borne by diſcent and by title of right,
Juſtly to reigne in Englande and in Fraunce.

This ſolempne coronation wͭ all honour and ioye finiſhed, prouiſion was made for the kyng his iourney into Fraunce. In the whiche paſtyme, that is to meane vpõ the.xxiii. daie of January, an heretike was brẽt in Smithfelde.

Vpon the morowe next folowyng, was in that felde foughten a ſtrong fight, betwene Jhon Vpton

battaile
twene.ii
Smith-
elde.

ton appellant, and Jhon Doune defendante. But for thei quit thē bothe ſo manfully, the Kyng at length releaſed their quarell, and pardoned theim of their treſpas.

Then vpon ſaincte George his daie folowyng, or the .xxiii. daie of Aprill, the kyng tooke Shippyng at Douer, and landed the ſame daie at Calais, hauyng in his cōpanie twoo Dukes, of Yorke and Northfolke, three Biſhoppes, of Bath, Elie, and Rocheſter: eighte Earles, that is to meane, of Huntyngdon, Stafforde, Warwicke, Oxenforde, Deuonſhire, Morteine, of Ewe, and of Vrmunde, and eleuen Barōs, that is to ſaie, the Lorde Bowchier, Beaumoūd Tiptoff, Fitzwater, Roos, Arundell, Audeley, Fawcunbridge, Graie Codnoor, the lorde Scrope and the lorde welles.

woman
lled the
aiden of
OD, in
hom the
Frenchmē
ad greate
ffiaunce.

In this tyme and ſeaſon, that the king laie thus at Calais, many ſkirmiſhes were foughten betwene the Engliſhe menne, and the Frenche menne, in diuers partes of Fraunce. And greatly the Frenche menne preuailed, by the helpe of a woman, whiche thei as before is touched, named the maiden of GOD. So that laſtly ſhe with her compaignie, came to a toune called Compeine, to the entent to remoue the ſiege, laid ther vnto by the Duke of Burgoyne, and other of the Engliſhe capitaines. And therevpon the twentie and three daie of Maie, ſhe gaue battail vnto the Engliſhe menne and Burgoniōs, and fought with them long tyme: but in the eande, by the manhode of a Burgonion knight, named ſir Jhon Luxemburgh, ſhe was taken on liue, and her compaignie diſtreſſed, and ſhe caried to the Citee of Roan, and there kept a ſeaſō, for ſo moche as ſhe feined her with child. But whē the cōtrary of it was knowen, ſhe was therfore iudged and brent.

Of this womā Gagwinus maketh a great proceſſe, of her parētie, and of her firſt taking vpō her whereof part I entende to ſhewe after, in the ſixte yere of Charles next folowyng kyng of Fraunce.

And in this tyme and ſeaſon, one Richard Hounden Wolle packer of London, was conuicte of hereſie, and brent at Towre hill. Then kyng Henry thus lodgyng at Calais, was aſcertained of the foreſaid woman, by the letters of the Duke of Burgoyne: and after he toke his ſmalle iournais till he came into Fraunce, & ſo vnto Paris. Of whoſe citezens he was honourably receiued, and taken for the ſoueraigne and kyng, & there to tary all this Maiors yere.

In which ſeaſon, at witneſſeth Gagwinus, the Frenche menne wan diuers holdes of Engliſhe men and Burgonions, in the cōtrey of Brie. And a capitaine named Barbaſan, diſcomfited eight thouſande Engliſhe menne and Burgonions, at a place called in Latine Cathalamencis, as affirmeth the foreſaied authour.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xxx. Anno domini. M.cccc.xxxi.

Nicholas Wotton. { water Cherſey. / Robert Large. } Anno.ix.

The. ix. yere.

THis. ix. yere about midlent a prieſt named ſir Thomas Bagley, vicare of a village in Eſſex called Manueden, a little from Walden, was detect of hereſy: vpon the whiche he was degraded, and then brent in the place of Smithfeld. And ſone vpõ Eaſter folowyng, the lord protector was warned of an aſſẽble of heretikes at Abindon: wherfore he ſent thither certain perſones, or rode thither hymſelf, as ſome writers affirme, and there arreſted the bailife of that toune, named William Maundeuile a Weuer, the whiche was appoincted for a capitaine of theſaid heretikes: and for to draw the people vnto hym, he chaunged his name, and called hymſelf Iak Sharpe of Wigmores lãd in Wales. But after he was examined, he cõfeſſed to haue wrought moch ſorowe againſt prieſtes, ſo that he would haue made their hedes, as chepe as ſhepe heades, ſo that he would haue ſold three for a penie, or. x. after ſome writers: & the ſame ſeaſon wer taken many of his cõplices, which wer ſẽt vnto diuers priſons. And theſaid Iak Sharp was for his offence, drawen, hanged, and headed, at the forenamed toune of Abindon, vpon the Tuiſdaie in whitſon weke, and his hed was ſent to London, & ther pight vpon the bridge: and the other of his fautours wer put in executiõ, in diuers places and countries, to the terrour of other. And vpõ the. xiiii. daie of Iuly, that yere was one named Richard Ruſſell a wolman, drawen, hanged, and quartered at Tiborne for treaſon.

And this yere the kyng beeyng ſtill in Fraunce, therle of Arũdell accompanied with. ii. M. of Engliſhe ſoldiours, ſent a certaine of his companie vnto a toune called Beale mount, to prouoke yͤ toune whiche ſmall company, whẽ Boſſicant and Seintrales then capitaines beheld, anõ thei with their ſoldiours of the toune ſped theim forth to take theſaid Engliſhmen the which litle & litle gaue backe, till thei had tolled the Frenchmen a good ſpace from the toune, and then ſet vpon theim with a ſterne courage, and held thẽ on hand till theſaid erle with his company reſcowed them. Then betwene them was a cruel fight: but in thende yͤ Frenchmen wer chaſed, & the ſaid Seintraile with many footemen of theſaid toune wer ſlain at that iourney. And ſhortly after yͤ duke of Burgoin, with aide of the Engliſhmen, at a place called Barre, ſcomfited a greate compaignie of Frenchmen, and toke two capitaines, belõging to yͤ duke of Barre, the which wer named Renat and Barbazan, for whoſe raunſome the Duke had yelden to hym the Vale of Caſſile in Flaunders.

Anno dñi. M. cccc. xxxi. Anno dñi. M. cccc. xxxii.

Ihon Welly Grocer. { Ihon Adirlee. / Stephen Browne. } Anno. x.

The. x. yere.

IN this. x. yere, and. vii. daie of December, king Hẽry the vi. was crouned at Paris, of the Cardinall of Wincheſter. At the whiche coronatiõ was preſent the lorde regent, the duke of Burgoine, and diuers other nobles of Fraunce, whoſe names Gagwinus putteth not in his booke, for reproche of the Frenchemen. And after the ſolempnitie of this feaſt was eanded, whereof the circumſtaunce to ſhewe in order, would aske a long leiſure, the king departed frō Paris, & ſo came to Roan, where he helde his Chriſtmas, & that doen, he ſped hym to Calais. And when he had ſoiourned there a ſeaſon, he toke ſhippyng and retourned into Englande, & landed at Douer the .ix. daie of Februari Then he was met vppon Baram doune, or Baram Houth, that is betwene Douer and Cantorbury with a greate company of gentiles, and commoners of Kente, all clad with red hodes. The whiche accompanied hym till he came to Black Heth, where he was mette with the Maior, and the citezens of London, vpon a Thurſdaie, beyng the .xxi. daie of February, the citezens being clad in white, with diuers werkes or Cogniſauntes, browdered vpō their ſleues, after the facultie of their Miſteries or craftes: and the Maior & his brethren, wer al clothed in Scarlet. And after due obeiſaunce & ſalutyng of the kyng, thei rode on before hym toward the citee. When the kyng was comen to ye bridge, there was deuiſed a mightie Gyaunt, ſtādyng with a ſweard drawen, hauyng this ſpeache written by hym.

All tho that been enemies to the kyng,
I ſhall theim clothe with confuſion.
Make hym mightie by vertuous liuyng,
His mortall foon to oppreſſe and beare doune.
And hym to encreaſe as Chriſte his champion,
All miſchieues from hym to abridge,
With grace of God at the entrie of this bridge.

And whē the king was paſſed the firſt gate, and was comen to the draw bridge, there was ordeined a goodly toure, hāged and apparailed with ſilke and clothes of aras, in moſt riche wiſe. Out of which ſodainly appered .iii. ladies richely clad in gold and ſilke, with coronettes vppon their headdes. Whereof the firſte was named dame Nature, the ſeconde dame Grace, and the thirde dame Fortune, the whiche vnto the kyng had thus ſpeache.

Wee Ladies three all by one conſent.
Three ghoſtly giftes heauenly and deuine,
To thee ſir kyng, as now wee doe preſent.
And to thyne highneſſe here we doe this tyme,
Utterly ſhewe and theim determine,
As I Grace, firſt at thy commyng,
Endowe thee with ſcience and cunnyng.

And I Nature with ſtrength and faireneſſe,
For to bee loued and drad of euery wight,
And I Fortune, proſperitee and richeſſe,
Thee to defende and to giue thee might,

Long to enioye, and holde thy true right,
In vertuous life, with honour to procede,
That thy twoo Sceptours thou maie well poſſede.

There was alſo in yͤ ſaid towre xiiii. virgins, all clothed in white, whereof ſeuen ſtode vpō the right hande of the ſaied thre ladies, and vii. vpon the left hande, the. vii. vpon the right hand had bawderikes of Saphire colour or Blewe, And the other. vii. had their garmentes powdered with ſterres of gold. Then the firſt. vii. preſented the kyng with the. vii. giftes of yͤ holy ghoſt, as ſapience, intelligēce, good counſaill, ſtrength, cunnyng, pitie, & drede of God. And thother vii. gaue vnto hym the. vii. giftes of grace, in maner as foloweth.

God thee endowe, with Croune of glorie,
And with the Scepter, of clenneſſe and pitie,
And with a ſwearde, of might and victorie,
And with a Mantell of Prudence, clad thou bee
A Shield of Faithe, for to defende thee.
An Helme of Health, wrought to thyne encreaſe,
Girte with a Girdell, of loue and parfite peace.

And after thei had thus ſaluted the kyng, anon thei beganne this roundell, with an heauenly melodie and ſong as foloweth.

Souerаigne Lorde, welcome to your citee,
Welcome our Ioye, and our hartes pleaſaunce,
Welcome our gladneſſe, welcome our ſuffiſaunce,
Welcome welcome, right welcome mought ye bee,
Singyng before, thy Royall maieſtie,
We ſaie with harte withouten varſaunce,
Souerаigne Lorde, now welcome out of Fraunce.

The Maior and Citezeins with all Comminaltie,
Reioyſe your commyng newly out of Fraunce,
Whereby this citee, and thei releued bee,
Of all their ſorowe, and former greuaunce,
Wherefore thei ſaie, and ſyng without greuaunce,
Welcome, welcome, welcome our hartes Ioye,
Welcome you be, vnto your owne newe Troye.

Then the king rode forth a ſofte pace, till he came at the entree of Cornehille wherevpon the Conduite was ordeined a tabernacle of curious werke. In the whiche ſtode Dame Sapience, and aboute her the ſeuen Artes or Sciences, as firſte Grammer, Logike, Rethorike, Muſike, Arithmetike Geometrie, and Aſtronomie, euery of them exerciſyng their cunnyng and facultie, and the Ladie her ſelf hadde this ſpeache to the Kyng.

Lo I chiefe princeſſe, dame Sapience,
Shewe vnto you this ſentence of ſcripture,
Kynges that been moſte of excellence,
By me they reigne, and moſte ioye endure,
For through my helpe and my buſy cure,
To encreſe their glory and their high renowne,
Thei ſhall of wiſedome haue full poſſeſſion.

Then the kyng paſſed on till he came to the conduite in Cornehill. Where was ſet a pagente made circle wiſe, and in the ſumet or top there was ſette a childe of wonderfull beautie, apparayled like a kinge. Uppon whoſe ryght hande ſatte lady Mercy, and vpon the lefte hande ladye Truth, and ouer theim ſtode dame Clenneſſe embraſing yͤ king his trone. Then before the king ſtode twoo iudges, and eyghte ſergeauntes of the coyfe. And dame Clenneſſe had this ſpeche to the ſixt Henry the kyng.

Lo by the ſentence of prudent Salomon,
Mercy and right preſeruin euery kinge,
And I Clenneſſe obſerued by reaſon,
Kepe his trone from miſchefe and fallinge.
And maketh it ſtrong with long abidyng,
So I conclude that wee ladies three,
A kyng preſerue in longe proſperitie,

And Dauid ſaied, the pſalme bearith witneſſe,
Lorde god thy dome geue thou to the king,
And geue to him thy trouth and righwiſneſſe,
The kyng his ſonne here on erth liuynge,
And thus declare he by his writyng,
That kinges and princes ſhould about them drawe
Folke that been trewe and well lerned in lawe,

After his ſpeche thus declared, the king rode forth a quicker pace till he came vnto the conduite in Chepe. Where were ordeined dyuers welles as the wel of mercy, the well of grace, and the well of pyte. And at euerye well a ladye ſtandyng, that miniſtered the water of euery welle to ſuche as woulde aſke it, and that water was tourned into good wine. About theſe welles were ſet diuers trees with flouriſhyng leues and fruytes, as orenges, almandes, pomegarnardes, oliues, lymones dates, pepis, quinces, blaunderelles, peches, and other more common fruites and coſterdes, wardens, pomewardons, rycardons, damiſins, and plummes, with other fruites longe to rehearſe, the whiche wer ſo cunyngly wrought that to many the appeared naturall trees growyng.

In the bordour of this delicious place which was named Paradiſe, ſtode twoo forgrowen fathers, reſemblynge Enocke and Hely, the whiche had this ſaiyng to the kyng.

Long to enioye, and holde thy true right,
In vertuous life, with honour to procede,
That thy twoo Sceptours thou maie well poſſede.

There was alſo in yͤ ſaid towre xiiii. virgins, all clothed in white, whereof ſeuen ſtode vpõ the right hande of theſaied thre ladies, and vii. vpon the left hande, the. vii. vpon the right hand had bawderikes of Saphire colour or Blewe. And the other. vii. had their garmentes powdered with ſterres of gold. Then the firſt. vii. preſented the Kyng with the. vii. giftes of yͤ holy ghoſt: as ſapience, intelligẽce good counſaill, ſtrength, cunnyng pitie, ⁊ drede of God. And thother vii. gaue vnto hym the. vii. giftes of grace, in maner as foloweth.

God thee endowe, with Croune of glorie,
And with the Scepter, of clenneſſe and pitie,
And with a ſwearde, of might and victorie,
And with a Mantell of Prudence, clad thou bee
A Shield of Faithe, for to defende thee,
An Helme of Health, wrought to thyne encreaſe,
Girte with a Girdell, of loue and parfite peace.

And after thei had thus ſaluted the kyng, anon thei beganne this roundell, with an heauenly melodie: and ſong as foloweth.

Soueraigne Lorde, welcome to your citee,
Welcome our Joye, and our hartes pleaſaunce,
Welcome our gladneſſe, welcome our ſuffiſaunce,
Welcome welcome, right welcome mought ye bee,
Singyng before, thy Royall maieſtie,
We ſaie with harte withouten variaunce,
Soueraigne Lorde, now welcome out of Fraunce.

The Maior and Citezeins with all Cominaltie,
Reioyſe your commyng newly out of Fraunce,
Whereby this citee, and thei releued bee,
Of all their ſorowe, and former greuaunce,
Wherefore thei ſaie, and ſyng without greuaunce,
Welcome, welcome, welcome our hartes Joye,
welcome you be, vnto your owne newe Troye.

Then the king rode forth a ſoft pace, till he came at the entree of Cornehille wherevpon the Hille, was ordeined a tabernacle of curious werke. In the whiche ſtode Dame Sapience, and aboute her the ſeuen Artes or Sciences liberall. As firſte Grammer, Logike, Rethorike, Muſike, Arithmetike Geometrie, and Aſtronomie, eueriche of them exerciſyng their cunnyng and facultie, and the Ladie her ſelf ſpake this ſpeache to the Kyng.

Lo I chiefe princeſſe, dame Sapience,
Shewe vnto you this ſentence of ſcripture,
Kynges that been moſte of excellence,
By me they reigne, and moſte ioye endure,
For through my helpe and my buſy cure,
To encreſe their glory and their high renowne,
Thei ſhall of wiſedome haue full poſſeſſion.

Then the kyng paſſed on till he came to the conduite in Cornehill. Where was ſet a pagente made circle wiſe, and in the ſumet or top there was ſette a childe of wonderfull beautie, apparayled like a kinge. Uppon whoſe ryght hande ſatte lady Mercy, and vpon the lefte hande ladye Truth, and ouer them ſtode dame Clenneſſe embraſing yͤ king his trone. Then before the king ſtode twoo iudges, and eyghte ſergeauntes of the coyfe. And dame Clenneſſe had this ſpeche to the ſixt Henry the kyng.

Lo by the ſentence of prudent Salomon,
Mercy and right preſeruin euery kinge,
And I Clenneſſe obſerued by reaſon,
Kepe his trone from miſchefe and fallinge.
And maketh it ſtrong with long abidyng,
So I conclude that wee ladies three,
A kyng preſerue in longe proſperitie,

And Dauid ſaied, the pſalme bearith witneſſe,
Lorde god thy dome geue thou to the king,
And geue to him thy touth and righwiſneſſe,
The kyng his ſonne here on erth liuynge,
And thus declare he by his writyng,
That kinges and princes ſhould about them drawe
Folke that been trewe and well lerned in lawe,

After his ſpeche thus declared, the king rode forth a quicker pace till he came vnto the conduite in Chepe. Where were ordeined dyuers welles as the wel of mercy, the well of grace, and the well of pyte. And at euerye well a ladye ſtandyng, that miniſtered the water of euery welle to ſuche as woulde aſke it, and that water was tourned into good wine. About theſe wells were ſet diuers trees with flouriſhyng leues and fruytes, as orenges, almandes, pomegarnardes, oliues, lymones dates, pepis, quinces, blaunderelles, peches, and other more comon fruites and coſterdes, wardens, pomewardons, rycardons, damiſins, and plummes, with other fruites longe to rehearſe, the whiche wer ſo cunyngly wrought that to many the appeared naturall trees growyng.

In the bordour of this delicious place which was named Paradiſe, ſtode twoo forgrowen fathers, reſemblynge Enocke and Hely, the whiche had this ſaiyng to the kyng.

Enoke firſte with abenigne chere,
Prayed God to vpholde his proſperitie,
And that none enemies haue of the power,
Nor that no childe of falſe iniquitie
Haue power to perturbe thy felicitie,
This olde Enoke to proceſſe canne well tell,
Prayed for the king as he rode by the welle.

After Helias with his lockes hore,
Saied well deuoutly lokinge on the kyng,
God conſerue the and kepe euermore,
And make thee bleſſe here on earth liuyng,
And preſerue the in all maner thing,
And ſpecially emong kinges all,
In enemies handes that thou neuer fall.

And that ſpech finiſhed, the king rode forth a lytell forther. And there was ordeyned a towre garniſhed with the armes of Englande and Fraunce. This tower was wonderful to behold for ther was ſhewed in order the tytle, which yͤ king had vnto the crown of Fraunce.

And vpright by this towre ſtode two grene trees artificially with grene leues garniſhed & wrought that one bearing the genelogy of ſaint Edwarde, and that other of ſaint Lewis, and garniſhed with leopardes and flourdelices. And ouer theſe.ii. foreſayed trees, was ordeyned that third, whiche was made the fourth ſpringe of Jeſſe, wherein was ſhewed the genelogy of our bleſſed Lady, ſet out in moſt curyouſe wiſe. And vpon the front of this tower were written theſe verſes folowinge.

By theſe.ii.trees whiche here grewe vpright
From ſaint Edwarde and alſo ſaint Lewys,
The rote I take, palpable to eche ſyght,
Conueyed by line from kinges of great pryce,
Whiche ſomo bare Leopardes, and ſome flourdelice,
Armis excellent of honoure haue no lacke.
Which the.vi.Henry may nowe beare on his backe.

As in degre of iuſte ſucceſſion,
As olde cronicles truely determine.
Unto this kinge is nowe diſcended downe,
From eyther party right as any line,
Upon whoſe hed nowe freſhly doth ſhine,
Two riche crownes much ſoueraine and pleaſaunce
To bringe in peace betwene Englande and Fraunce

Then from this, the kyng paſſed on, til he came at the conduite at Poules gate, where was pight a celeſtyall trone, and therin was ſet a perſonage of the Trynitye, with multitude of aungels playenge and ſiginge vpon all inſtrumentes of muſike. And vppon the the fronte of the ſaide trone, was written theſe verſes or ballades folowing, the which were ſpoken by the father vnto the king.

To you my aungels this precepte, ye aſſure,
This prince that is ſo yonge and tender of age,
That ye ended and do your buſye cure,
To kepe and ſaue him from all maner damage,
In his life here duringe all his age,
That his renowne may ſprede and ſhine farre,
And of his .ii. realmes to ceaſſe the mortall war.

And I will further as I ſhewe to him here,
Fulfyl him with ioye and worldly habundaunce,
And with length of many a holſom yere,
I ſhall comforte and helpe him with all pleaſaunce,
And of his lyeges to haue faithfull obeyſaunce,
And alſo multiply and encreſe his line,
And cauſe his nobles through the worlde ſhyne.

AND this done he entred the churchyarde, where he was met with proceſſion of the deane ⁊ the Chanons of Paules. with whom alſo in pontyficalibus came the Archbiſhop of Caũbury and Chaucelor of England, with the biſhop of Lincolne, of Bathe, of Saliſbury, of Norwich of Ely, and of Rocheſter, ẏ which ſo conueyed him into the church, and there made his oblacyons. And that doone, he toke agayne his ſtede at the weſt dore of Paules, and ſo rode forth vnto Weſtminſter, where againe he was of the abbot and couente receyued with proceſſion, and by them conueied vnto ſaint Edwards ſhrine and there taried while Te deum was ſonge in the quier. And that finiſhed, he was of his lordes conueied vnto his palays. And then the mayre with his cytezens returned ioyouſly to London.

Then vpon the ſaturday folowyng beynge the .xxiii. daye of February. the maire and aldermen yode vnto the king, and preſented him with an hamper of gold, and therin a thouſand pounde of faire nobles, for the which the king yelded vnto theim louing thankes.

This yere alſo by reaſon of the ſowdiours of Calays, a reſtraint was made there of the wolles, for they were not content of their wages. Wherefore the regent of Fraunce beynge then capitaine of Calais, cam downe thither in Eaſter weke. At whiche time beynge the wedniſday in the ſayde weke, many ſoudiours were areſted and put into ward: And when he had ſo done, he rode to Tirewin and there by the meanes of the biſhop of Tyrewin, he maried the earle of ſaint Paules doughter, and ſhortlye after retourned to Calais, and cauſed the ſayde ſoudiours to be enquired of, and finally .iiii. of them were demed to dye. Whiche .iiii. that is to ſaye Jhon Maddely, Jhon Londeye, Thomas Talbot, were beheded at Calais the eleuenth day of Juny. And an hundreth and .x. ſoudiours were baniſhed the towne, ouer ſixe ſcore baniſhed before that time. And vpon midſomer euen folowyng lowing, the ſaid loꝛd regent with his newe ſpouſe came vnto London, and ſo taried in England till the later ende of Auguſt.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxxii.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxxiii.

Fiſhmonger
Jhon Perneys { Jhon Olney.
Jhon Paddyſley. } Anno.xi.

The.xi. yere. IN this.xi.yere after ſome wꝛyters, was by the auctoꝛitye of Pope Martine the.v of that name, the coũcell of Baſile gathered, Duringe the which, the heretikes of Pꝛage otherwiſe called of Bohemye oꝛ Beme, were ſomoned thither. The whiche vnder a ſuerty oꝛ ſafe conduite, ſente thyther foꝛ them with other, an Engliſh clerke, named mayſter Peter a renegate. The which defended ſo ſtifly their erronyous opinions, that they retourned without reconſilyacion. Thus hãging this councel Martin Pope dyed, and foꝛ him was choſẽ Eugeny the.iiii. The which being admitted, demeaned him ſo nicely in the beginninge, that he was put out of Rome, and diuers pꝛinces toke partie againſte him in ſuch wiſe, that he was likely to be depoſed. But after he bare him ſo ſadly, that he recouered ſuche as he had loſt, and continued the ſee by the ſpace of.xvi.yeres, and ruled ſo, that of ſome wꝛyters he is called Eugenius gloꝛyoſus, And that is of religiouſe men, foꝛ vnto them he had a ſpeciall zeale and fauour. And vppon the.viii. daye of July, kinge Henrye this yere began his parlamẽt at Weſtminſter, and ſo continued it tyll it was Lammas, ⁊ then it was adiourned to ſaint Edwardes day.

And this yeare in the Southe weſt appered a ſtarre, which was like to a blaſyng ſtarre, ⁊ of ſome it is ſo named. The Erle of Huntingdon alſo this yere was ſente into Fraunce with a warly companye, and did there greate feates (as ſayeth the Engliſh cronycle) But of that is nothinge touched in the Frenche booke.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxxiii.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxxiiii.

Jhon Bꝛokley Dꝛaper. { Thomas Chalton.
Jhon Linge. } Anno.xii.

The.xii. yere. IN this.xii.yere and.ix day of Nouember, the terment of the erle of ſaint Paule, father vnto the ducheſſe of Bedfoꝛde was ſolemply holden in Paules church of London, where the moꝛe partie of the eſtates of this realm pꝛeſent. And the ninth day of March folowing, the loꝛd Talbot with a goodly companye paſſed thꝛough yͤ citee of London toward yͤ ſee into Fraunce, where he wꝛought muche woe vnto the Frenchmen, wherof the parciculers be not touched. Continuinge the foꝛeſaide warre in Fraunce, the towne of ſaint Denis, whiche is within.ii. Englyſhe miles of Paris, was gotten by treaſon oꝛ pꝛactiſe of one named Johan Notice a knight of Oꝛleaunce, from Mathew Gougth and Thomas Kyriell capitaines, and ſlew there many ny Englyſhmen, and many they toke priſoners. But ſoone after the ſaid capitaines with ſtrength taken vnto them of the Pariſans and other, dyd laye ſuche a ſtrong ſiege round about the ſaid Town of ſaint Denis, that fynally they agreed to delyuer the towne, yf they were not reſcowed of the Frẽch Kyng within fiftene dayes ſo that the ſaide dayes expired, it was retourned vnto the Englyſhmen. But this notwithſtandinge the Frenchmen wan dayly vpon the Englyſhmen, bothe in thoſe parties and alſo in Normandy. Among whiche games, the Frẽch Gagwine bringeth in a matter of game as he reherſeth vnto the mockage of Engliſhmen, and ſayeth that in this yere and feaſt of Myghelmaſſe, at a place called Fewgery in Guyan, a ſtrõg fight was foughten betwene the Englyſhmen and the Frenchmen, during the whiche, one named Booſapreſt a French knight, for feare fled from that fight, and hyd him in a couerte of buſhes, and there ſtode ſtyl till the fight was ended, and the Englyſhmen diſcomfited and ſcared: Of the whiche.ii. aduenture to ſauegarde theym ſelfe fled to the ſaid thicke buſh, where the coward French knight ſtode. The whiche whan he had eſpyed and learned of theim, that the French partie had won the felde, he became ſo coragious, that he forced the ſaid two Englyſhmen to become his pryſoners, and ſo with theim entered the hoſte of the Frenchmen, and bare a countenaunce as he had won them in the foreſayd fight. But at length when al his demeanour was knowen, he was for his feate had in great deriſion, and by his chiefe capitayne named Guyllyam de ſaincte Albine, pryued of his pryſoners.

And in this ſeaſon alſo the erle of Arundell, whiche in Normandy had manly borne him, hearing that one Hyrus a Frenche cappytaine had fortified a ſtrong caſtel named Gerborim, before deſtroyed of the Englyſhmen, toke with him a certaine of ſowdioures, and girde the caſtel with a ſtrong ſiege and aſſauted it by ſondrye times mãfully, as ſaith the French cronicle. But Gagwine in his cronicle ſaieth, that or the ſiege were fully laide, or the caſtell were fully repayred, the ſaide Hirus with his company iſſued out of the caſtell, and gaue vnto the ſayd earle a cruell ſkirmiſh, in the which the ſaid erle receiued a deadly wound and died ſhortly after. And that victory ſo by the Frenchmen obtayned, that caſtell was to the hurte of the Englyſhmen reedified, and a place called Dyepp̄ with other alſo won from them.

Anno domini.M.cccc.xxxiiij. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xxxv.

Robert Otlay Grocer. { Thomas Bernwell.
Symonde Eyre. } Anno.xiij.

The.xiii.
ere.

And in thys.xiiii. yeare and euen of ſaincte Katherine, began a froſt that endured to the feaſt of ſaint Scolaſtica

A gret froſt

or the .x. day of February, ỹ which fraſe the Thamys ſo feruently, that ſhip nor bote mighte come with vitaile to London. Wherefore ſuche ſhippes as came thys yere to Thamis mouth frõ Burdeux were diſcharged there, and the wine and other marchaundiſe by theim brought, caried by land to the citie. And in the latter ende of December, this yere ended the Parlamente holden at Weſtminſter, begon at Mighelmas terme before paſſed.

A coũſaile.

This yere alſo by meanes of Eugeny the .iiii. Pope at Aras in Picardy was holden a great coũſaile, for to conclude an vnion and peace atwene the two realmes of Englande and Fraunce. To the which counſel, by the ſaide Pops commaundement: came as a perſon in different, Nicholas cardinal of the holy croſſe. with .vi. Romaine biſhops to him aſſygned. And for the kinge of Englandes party was there aſſigned the cardinall of Wincheſter, the archbiſhop of Yorke, the earles af Huntingdon and of Suffolke, with diuers other. And for the Frenche king was there the duke of Burbon, the earle of Richmount, the archbiſhop of Raines chauncellor then of Fraunce, the deane of Paris, with many other, whiche I paſſe ouer.

There where alſo as fortherers of the mater, the cardinall of Cypres. And for the duke of Burgoyne, was there the byſhop of Cambray, and Nycholas Raulin the ſaide dukes chauncellor, with diuers earles and barons of that duchy. And for the duke of Brytaine, were there the earles of Alenſon and of Barre, with other, ouer and aboue diuerſe oratours appointed for the county of Flaũders. At which aſſemble and councell thus holden, as teſtyfie dyuerſe writers, many great offers by meane of the abouenamed cardinal of holy croſſe, or ſaint croſſe, to the Engliſh Lordes were offered. But as ſaith Gagwinus, the Engliſhmen were ſo obſtinately ſet on warre, that reaſon myght not content. By reaſon of whiche obſtinacy, the councell was deferred till an other daye. At whiche day the Engliſhmen entendinge the continaunce of warre, abſented theym ſelfe. Wherewith the ſaide cardinall beynge diſcontented made meanes of an entreatye of peace atwene Charles, that toke vpon him as Frenche king, and Philip duke of Burgoyne. Wherof the ſaid Charles was ſo faine, that for ſtabliſhinge of the peace, and to ſatiſfie him for the murther of his father, he gaue vnto him all the vtter boundes of Champaine marching vpõ Burgoin, with diuerſe cities, as ſaint Quintine, Corbie, Peron, Abbeuile, and other, with the countye of Poytiaw and lordſhip of Macon. And (as witneſſeth the foreſaid Gagwine) many mo thinges were vnto the Duke by the ſaide Charles promiſed, whiche after their both deathes were broken and ſtode for nought. After which peace thus atwene them confirmed and proclaymed, the ſayde duke became vtter enemy to the king of Englande, as after ſhall appere. And ſoone after the ſaide duke began his order of the lylye and the golden flece, ordeined certain

The ord
of the lyl
and ỹ go
den flece

taine knightes of that order, and made thereunto many ſtatutes & ordinaunces, whereof diuers wer like unto the ſtatutes of the Garter. And in the ende of this yere, and.xiiii. daie of September, at Roan in Normandie, died the noble prince Jhon duke of Bedforde regent of Fraunce, and was after with great ſolempnitie buried w in the Churche of noſter Dame of theſame Citee, where for hym are founded wonderfull thynges after ſome mennes reporte. But for I finde thereof in writyng nothyng, I paſſe it ouer.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xxxv. Anno domini. M.cccc.xxxvi.

Mercer.
Henry Frowike. { Thomas Catworth. / Robert Clopton. } Anno.xiiii.

he.xiiii.
re.

IN the.xiiii. yere & beginnyng of the ſame, the Duke of Barre, accompanied with Burgonions and French men, wan the toune of Harflewe, with diuers other villages. And in Aprill folowyng, theſaied duke accompanied with the lorde Teruan, and the maſter of the kinges chiualrie, toke the toune of ſainct Denis, and ſlue therin aboue.ccc Engliſhemen, and tooke priſoner Thomas Belamounde their captain, with many other. And then the Frechmen aſſaulted a Towre thereby called Ueuen, and toke it by appoinctmente. Then one named Notice a knight of Orleaũce with a ſtrength of knightes, drue hym nere the Citee of Paris, and there at a houſe of religion, of the Charterhouſe order, lodged hym beyonde.ſ. Denis, ouer the water of Sain: and confedered with certaine citezens of the citee named, Michael Lailery, Jhõ Frountain Thomas Pigacen, Jhon de ſaint Benoit, Nicholas Louein, and Jaques Bergerey, for to betraie the citee, and to bring it out of the Engliſhe poſſeſſion. The whiche perſones being hedes of the citee, conueighed their purpoſe in ſoche wiſe, that thei tourned the cõmõs of the citee vpon the Engliſh men, and ſodainly aroſe againſt theim, and by force ſlue of them a greate nõber, and there thei did take many priſoners. And as the Engliſh men fled or fought by the ſtretes, the women and other feble perſones, caſt vpon them ſtones & hote licours, to their greate confuſion, ſo that the Engliſhe men were in paſſyng miſerie and deſolation.

In this tyme of perſecutiõ, the biſhop of Morel, which then was named Chauncelour of Engliſhe men in thoſe parties, with other, hardly eſcaped, and toke the towre of ſainct Denis, whiche as yet reſted in the Engliſhe poſſeſſion.

Then the other hoſte of French men, hearyng of this rumoure in the citee, anon drewe nere, and entered by ſainct James gate, without moche reſiſtence, and ſo enioyed the citee at their pleaſure.

Then the Engliſhemen beyng in the towre of.ſ. Denis, fearyng that thei might not long hold the ſaied place againſt their enemies, Engliſhe men mocked & ſcorned of the Frenche menne.

fell to a treatie, & condeſcended to paſſe fre wͭ their liues. The which when thei ſhould paſſe vpon their iourney, were dirided & ſcorned of the Frenche nation out of al meaſure. And when the citee of Paris was thus ſubdued to the Frenche dominion, anon the Engliſhe people that ther abode vnder fine and raunſome, wer ſworne to Charles the .vii. then takyng vpon him as Frēche kyng. And anon after wer wonne from the Engliſhe power, the holdes named Creoll and S. Germaine. In whiche paſſetyme and ſeaſon, for to ſtrength & haue the guidyng of Normandie, the duke of Yorke encompanied with the Earle of Saliſburie, and the lorde of Fawcunbridge, ſailed into Fraunce, and the erle of Morteine beyng then at Calais, made a voiage into Flaunders, and ſkirmiſhed with theim that bordered vpon Picardie, and ſlue of theim ouer .cccc. and gate a greate droue of beaſtes, and brought thē vnto Calais. And for that certaintie was had, ẏ Philip Duke of Burgoine, entended to laie his ſiege aboute Calais, therefore London and al the good townes of Englād wer charged to ſende thither certain men, well and ſufficiently for the warre apparailed. Whereof London ſent at their charge menne.

Calais beſieged.

Then vpon the .ix. daie of Iuly the duke of Burgoin with a great multitude of Burgonions & Flemynges, appered before Calais, and there pight his Pauiliōs and Tentes, ſo that euery Towne of Flaunders had their Tentes by theim ſelf. At whiche ſeaſon was Lieutenaunt of Calais ſir Ihon Ratclife knight, and of the caſtell was Lieutenaunte the Baron of Dudley: and ſo that ſiege endured vpon iii. wekes. In whiche ſeaſon many knightly actes were doen & exerciſed vpō bothe partes, which for lengthyng of the time I paſſe.

Then vpon the ſeconde daie of Auguſt, the duke of Gloceter and Protectoure of Englande, with a compaigny of fiue hundred ſailes as ſome writers haue, landed at Calais, and entended vppon the thirde daie folowyng, to haue iſſued out of the towne, and to haue giuen battaill to the Flemynges. But (as teſtifieth al Engliſh writers) ſo ſone as the Duke of Burgoine was ware of the greate power of the lorde protector, he toke with hym of his ordinaunce, that he might lightly cary, and thother that wer heuie and combrous, he left behind him. Emong ẏ whiche one was lefte before Guiſnes, a greate gunne of braſſe named Digon, ouer diuers ſerpentines, and other great gunnes. And the Fleminges left behinde them a great quantitie of Bere, beſide Wine and flaure, and other victuall.

The gre
gunne D
gon.

Variaun
of write

But of this voyage writeth otherwiſe Gagwine, and ſaieth, that the Duke well and manfully, as a valiaunte knight in his actes, continued his ſiege before Calais ouer twoo monethes, and there did many noble actes in aſſailyng of his enemies. And after the Flemynges by reaſon of their murmure and rebellion had refuſed hym, and in maner lefte hym almoſte without companie, yet notwithſtandyng, he daiely aſſailed his enemies, and after with ſoche ſmall compaignie as was lefte hym, when he ſawe he might not preuaile, he retourned into his countrie: and ſo thus alwaie in al yͤ ſaid Gaiwinus boke, he wipeth from the Engliſhmen in all that he make the honor, and excuſeth their enemies vnto his power. When the Duke with his hoſte was thus fled, the lorde protectoure with his people, folowed hym into the cōtrie, by the ſpace of a leuē daies. In whiche ſeaſon he brent but twoo tounes, whiche wer named and yet be, Popering and Bell, and retourned into Calais, and after into Englande.

And in this yere was the caſtle or Toune of Rokkeſborouth in Scotland, beſieged of the king of Scottes. But ſo ſoone as he had wittyng yͭ ſir Rauſe Gray knight was commyng with a competent nomber, for to remoue that ſiege, anon he departed, leauyng ſome parte of his ordinaunce behynde hym, to his greate diſhonoure.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xxxvi. Anno domini. M.cccc.xxxvii.

Jhon Michell. { Thomas Morſted. / Willyam Gregorie. } Anno.xv.

The.xv.
re.

IN this.xv.yere, and iii. daie of January, quene Katherine, mother vnto Henry the ſixte, wife of Henry the.v. died at Bermundiſſey in Southwarke, and after with dewe ſolempnitie, broughte through the citee, and ſo conueied to Weſtminſter, & there buried in the middeſt of our Ladie Chapell vnder a Tumbe of Marble.

But when our ſoueraigne lorde Henry the.vii. then beeyng kyng, cauſed the chapel to be takē doune and builded a newe, without the like thereunto (as now to menne doth appere) then the corps of the excellent princes was taken vp, & ſet by the tombe of her Lorde and huſbande, duryng the time of the building of the ſaid new chapell, & after buried with her ſaied lorde, within the ſaied Chapell.

And the.viii. daie of the ſaied moneth, fell doune ſodainly yͤ fartheſt gate toward Southwarke, with the Towre thereupon, and twoo of the fartheſt arches of the ſaid bridge, but as God would, no creature was therwith periſhed, yͭ is to meane of humain perſones.

And the.xxi. daie of the ſame moneth of January, the kyng began his parlamente at Weſtminſter, whiche before was purpoſed to haue been holden at Cambrige. To this parlament came the Biſhop of Turuin, and the counſaile of the Erle of Armenake, whereof I finde not yͤ cauſe expreſſed. And after Eaſter was a daie of Diote holden betwene Grauelyng and Calais, for matters touching the kyng, and the duke of Burgoyne, where, for the Kyng appered the Cardinall of Englande, the duke of Norfolke, and the erle of Stafforde, with diuers other. And for the ſaied Dukes partie, appered there the Ducheſſe his wife, with diuers other of the ſaid dukes counſail. Where, by meanes of the ſaid perſones, all abſtinence of warre was taken for a certaine tyme, in

A daie of Diote.

fell to a treatie, & condeſcended to paſſe fre wͭ their liues. The which when thei ſhould paſſe vpon their iourney, were dirided & ſcorned of the Frenche nation out of al meaſure. And when the citee of Paris was thus ſubdued to the Frenche dominion, anon the Engliſhe people that ther abode vnder fine and raunſome, wer ſworne to Charles the. vii, then takyng vpon him as Frēche kyng. And anon after wer wonne from the Engliſhe power, the holdes named Creoll and S. Germaine. In whiche paſſetyme and ſeaſon, for to ſtrength & haue the guidyng of Normandie, the duke of Yorke emcompanied with the Earle of Saliſburie, and the lorde of Fawcunbridge, ſailed into Fraunce, and the erle of Morteine beyng then at Calais, made a voiage into Flaunders, and ſkirmiſhed with theim that bordered vpon Picardie, and ſlue of theim ouer. cccc, and gate a greate droue of beaſtes, and brought thē vnto Calais. And for that certaintie was had, yͤ Philip Duke of Burgoine, entended to laie his ſiege aboute Calais, therefore London and al the good tounes of Englād wer charged to ſende thither certain men, well and ſufficiently for the warre apparailed. Whereof London ſent at their charge menne.

Engliſhe men mocked & ſcorned of the Frenche menne.

Calais beſieged.

Then vpon the. ix. daie of July the duke of Burgoin with a great multitude of Burgonions & Flemynges, appered before Calais, and there pight his Pauiliōs and Tentes, ſo that euery Towne of Flaunders had their Tentes by theim ſelf. At whiche ſeaſon was Lieutenaunt of Calais ſir Jhon Ratclife knight, and of the caſtell was Lieutenaunte the Baron of Dudley: and ſo that ſiege endured vpon iii. wekes. In whiche ſeaſon many knightly actes were doen & exerciſed vpō bothe partes, which for lengthyng of the time I paſſe.

Then vpon the ſeconde daie of Auguſt, the duke of Gloceter and Protectoure of Englande, with a compaigny of fiue hundred ſailes as ſome writers haue, landed at Calais, and entended vppon the thirde daie folowyng, to haue iſſued out of the towne, and to haue giuen battaill to the Flemynges. But (as teſtifieth al Engliſh writers) ſo ſone as the Duke of Burgoine was ware of the greate power of the lorde protector, he toke with hym of his ordinaunce, that he might lightly cary, and thother that wer heuie and combrous, he left behind him. Emong yͤ whiche one was lefte before Guiſnes, a greate gunne of braſſe named Digon, ouer diuers ſerpentines, and other great gunnes. And the Fleminges left behinde them a great quantitie of Bere, beſide Wine and floure, and other victuall.

The gr
gunne
gon.

But of this voyage writeth otherwiſe Gagwine, and ſaieth, that the Duke well and manfully, as a valiaunte knight in his actes, continued his ſiege before Calais ouer twoo monethes, and there did many noble actes in aſſailyng of his enemies. And after the Flemynges by reaſon of their murmure and rebellion had refuſed hym, and in maner lefte hym almoſte without companie, yet notwithſtandyng, he daiely aſſailed his enemies, and after with ſoche ſmall compaignie as was

Varian
of writ

was lefte hym, when he ſawe he might not preuaile, he retourned into his countrie: and ſo thus alwaie in al yͤ ſaid Gaiwinus boke, he wipeth from the Engliſhmen in all that he maie the honor, and excuſeth their enemies vnto his power. When the Duke with his hoſte was thus fled, the lorde protectoure with his people, folowed hym into the coũtrie, by the ſpace of a ſeuẽ daies. In whiche ſeaſon he brent but twoo tounes, whiche wer named and yet be, Popering and Bell, and retourned into Calais, and after into Englande.

And in this yere was the caſtle or Toune of Rokkeſborouth in Scotland, beſieged of the king of Scottes. But ſo ſoone as he had wittyng yͭ ſir Raufe Gray knight was commyng with a competent nomber, for to remoue that ſiege, anon he departed, leauyng ſome parte of his ordinaunce behynde hym, to his greate diſhonoure.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xxxvi. Anno domini. M.cccc.xxxvii.

Thomas Morſted.
Jhon Michell. Anno. xv.
Willyam Gregorie.

IN this. xv. yere, and iii. daie of January, quene Katherine, mother vnto Henry the ſixte, wife of Henry the. v. died at Bermundiſſey in Southwarke, and after with dewe ſolempnitie, broughte through the citee, and ſo conueied to Weſtminſter, & there buried in the middeſt of our Ladie Chapell vnder a Tumbe of Marble.

But when our ſoueraigne lorde Henry the. vii. then beeyng kyng, cauſed the chapel to be takẽ doune and builded a newe, without the like thereunto (as now to menne doth appere) then the corps of the excellent princes was taken vp, & ſet by the tombe of her Lorde and huſebande, duryng the tyme of the building of the ſaid new chapell, & after buried with her ſaied lorde, within the ſaied Chapell.

And the. viii. daie of the ſaied moneth, fell doune ſodainly yͤ fartheſt gate toward Southwarke, with the Towre thereupon, and twoo of the fartheſt arches of the ſaid bridge, but as God would, no creature was therwith periſhed, yͭ is to meane of humain perſones.

And the. xxi. daie of the ſame moneth of January, the kyng began his parlamente at Weſtminſter, whiche before was purpoſed to haue been holden at Cambrige. To this parlament came the Biſhop of Turuin, and the counſaile of the Erle of Armenake, whereof I finde not yͤ cauſe expreſſed. And after Eaſter was a daie of Diote holden betwene Grauelyng and Calais, for matters touching the kyng, and the duke of Burgoyne, where, for the kyng appered the Cardinall of Englande, the duke of Norfolke, and the erle of Stafforde, with diuers other. And for the ſaied Dukes parte, appered there the Ducheſſe his wife, with diuers other of the ſaid dukes counſail. Where, by meanes of the ſaid perſones, an abſtinence of warre was taken for a certaine tyme, in

A daie of Diote.

the Ducheſſe name. For the Kyng would take none appoinctmente with the Duke, for ſo moche as he had gone from his truth and alegeaunce, that before tyme he had made with the kyng. And vpõ the ſecond daie of July this yere died quene Jane, the whiche ſomtyme had been the wife of kyng Henry the.iiij. and before that the wife of the Duke of Britaine, and was caried frõ Barmundeſſey to Caũterbury, and there buried by her huſebande Henry the fowerth.

And this yere fell a chaũce that had not been ſeen many yeres before: for all Liõs died in the towre the whiche had continued there a long ſeaſon.

The Ki
of Scot
murdere

In this yere alſo the Kyng of Scottes was traiterouſly murthered by ſeruauntes of his owne. Of the whiche traitours, the capitaine of theim was named Roberte Grame, the whiche was with other of his compaignie taken, and put vnto moſte painfull death. This ſaied Kyng of Scottes had been priſoner fiftene yeres in Englande.

The ky
of Scott
priſoner
yeres in
Englan

Anno domini.M.cccc.xxxvii.
Anno domini.M.cccc.xxxviii.

Mercer.
Willyam Eſtfelde.
William Chapman.
William Hailes.
Anno.xvi.

The.xvi.
yere.

IN this.xvi. yere & moneth of Nouẽber, Kyng Henry cauſed to bee kepte a ſolempne obit or termẽt within the Churche of Paules, for Sigeſmond the Emperour, and knight of the Garter.

This was a mã of merueilous great and worthy fame, as by the auethour of Chronica Chronicarum is expreſſed. After whoſe death the guidyng of the Empire fell to Alberte, that had maried the onely doughter of theſaid Sigeſmond.

Anno domini.M.cccc.xxxviii.
Anno domini.M.cccc.xxxix.

Grocer.
Stephan Browne.
Hugh Dike.
Nicholas yoo.
Anno.xvii.

The.xvii.
yere.

IN this yere, vpon Newe yeres daie in the after noone a ſtacke of woode fell doune ſodainly at Bainardes caſtell vpon Thamis ſide, and ſlue ccc. men, and hurte diuers other. And at Bedforde this yere, at the keping of a Shire daie, by the fallyng of a ſteyer, wer.xviii. murdered and ſlaine, beſide many other ſore hurte and maimed. And the laſt daie of Aprill, died in Roan ſir Richard Beuchãp, called of fame, the good erle of Warwicke. This was Lieutenaunte of the king in Normandy, and demeaned hym there full well and mãfully, whoſe bodie was after broughte vnto Warwike, and there in a new chapell, builded vpon the South ſide of the quier, buried ful honorably.

dearth.

This yere alſo was great derth of corne in Englande, and alſo in Frãce, in ſo moche that a buſhell was ſolde at London for thre ſhillynges, and three ſhillynges and fower penies: and in Fraunce in Paris, it was at like value. And there alſo thei died ſore of the ſickneſſe of Ipidimie. For this ſcarcitie of Wheate in Englande in many places, the people made thẽ bread of Fetches, Peaſon, and Beanes. And after ſome writers, for lacke of theſe foreſaied graines, ſome poore people made theim bread of Ferne rootes. But yet by the prouidence of Stephan Browne this yere Maior, many Shippes were freighte with Rie out of Pruce, and diſcharged at London, that eaſed the people nere to the citee greatly. This of many writers is named the ſeconde deare yere.

In this yere eanded the counſaile or Sinode holden at Baſile; begun as before is ſaied, in the leuenth yere of this kyng. By auctoritie of whiche counſaile, Eugenie yͤ fowerth was depoſed, and Amedeus a Duke and Prince of Sauoy, was choſen for Pope, in the place of the forenamed Eugenie. But yet he had ſoch aide, that he continued in Rome as Pope, all his life tyme. And that other, whiche was named of his aiders, Felix the fifte, continued his dignitie in other places: ſo that then aroſe a great Sciſme in the churche, whether of theſe twoo was indubitate Pope. For ſome countrees vphelde the one, and ſome that other, ſo that there wer that alowed none of theim bothe, and that was called the neutralitee. This Sciſme continued vpon .ix. yeres, the tyme while Eugenie liued. After whoſe death was choſen, a Cardinall named Thomas Sarazan, and after was named Nicholas the fifte. To whom the ſaied Felix, after that he was admitted for Pope, of his own good mynd renounced his dignitie, and ſummitted hym to the rule and obedience of the ſaied Nicholas, then beeyng indubitate Pope of Rome. And thus ſeaſed yͤ Sciſme in the Churche, whiche had continued by the terme aboue ſpecified. This Felix was a deuoute prince and ſawe the ſoonnes of his ſoonnes, and after liued a deuout and holie life, and laſtly was choſen Pope, as before is ſhewed: for the whiche he is of diuers writers accompted for happie. But and he had not medled with the title of the Churche, and therewith blotted his olde age, he had after the opinion of other writers, bee named or allowed moche more bleſſed and happie.

And this yere in the moneth of Auguſt in Lõdon, were two baudes puniſhed with wearing of ray hoodes, and after fourtie daies impriſonmente, thei were baniſhed the toune, and driuẽ out with moſte ſhame.

In this yere alſo the Conduite in Fleteſtrete was begon by ſir Willyam Eſtfielde knight, and late Maior, and ſo finiſhed of his good diſpoſition without coſt and charge to the Citee. And he with ſir Lewes and Jhõ of Eſtſex wer made knightes of the Bath in the ſame yere.

And in this yere died Sir Roberte Chichely Grocer, and twiſe mayre of London, the which wylled in his teſtamēt, that vpon his mynde day a good and competent dyner ſhuld be ordayned for .xxiiii. C. pore men, and that of houſholders of the citee yf they myght be founde. And ouer that was .xx. pounde deſtributed among them, whiche was to euerye man two pence.

Anno dn̄i. M.cccc.xxxix. Anno dn̄i. M.cccc.xl.

Robert Large Mercer. { Robert Marſhal
Phylyp Malpas. } Anno. xviii.

The xviii. yere.

IN this xviii. yeare vpon the daye of ſainte Botolph or .xvii. daye of Juny, a preaſte (after he was degrated of his preſtly dignite) named ſyr Richarde, was brente for hereſye at the Towre hyll, howe well in hys latter daye he tooke great repentaunce, and died Gods man in the faith of the church. This fore wordes ſpoken by his life that the poſterne of the towre ſhould ſyncke (as after it dyd) and other fantaſtycall dedes or wordes, he of many lewde folkes was accompted for an holye man. Wherfore after his death they came to his place of execution, & there made theyr oblacion and prayers, and arered a great hepe of ſtones, and pyght there a croſſe by nyght, ſo that by this meanes a great diſclaunder ran vpon the church, and ſpecially vpō ſuch as had put hym to deth. But to ceaſe the rumour, cōmaūdement was ſent from the kyng, to puniſh al ſuch as thither went on pilgremage. By vertue wherof the mayre and ſhryffes dyd ſuche diligēce, that ſhortly after al that ſekyng and offering was fordone and layde a parte.

This yere alſo the of Sherifes of London fet out of ſ. Martins le graūt .v. perſones beyng there in Sanctwarie, and led them to the counter in Bredſtrete, where thei remained certain daies. But thoſe daies expired, thei wer by the kinges Juſtice, reſtored vnto ſainctwarie. In this paſtime, the warre betwene Englande and Fraunce, enduring in a Winter ſeaſon, whē the grounde was couered with a mightie Snowe, and therewithal a greate froſt had hardned the pōdes and diches, the Engliſhe men, whiche laie in a ſtrong holde nigh vnto a toune called Pountlarge, araied them in white clothes ouer their harneſſe, and ſo in great nōber approched the dikes, and paſſed vppon the Iſe to the walles, and theim ſcaled, and the watche of the toune ſlepyng, tooke the toune, and diſtreſſed therin moche people. From the whiche daunger eſcaped right hardly, twoo capitaines of the toune, named Jhon de Willers, and Narabō a knight Burgonion.

The coūtrie about Paris was alſo ſore vexed with the rauenyng of wolues, that Proclamation was made, that euery grene or newe ſlain ſkin of a Wolfe, yͭ was brought vnto Paris, the Prouoſt ſhould giue to yͭ brynger .xx. ſ. or .xx. ſouce of that countrie money, whiche amounteth to twoo ſhillinges, and .vi. penies ſterling. It was not longe after, or Charles the French kinge layde vnto the foreſaid towne ſtrong ſiege.

But by the duke of Yorke and the lorde Talbot it was well and knightlye defended, in ſo muche, that one time thei put the French men to rebuke, and were likely to haue taken their kinge, ne had be the ſoner reſcous. Laſtly, the duke of Yorke and theſaid lord Talbot, for vrgent cauſes departed thence to Roan, and be tooke the towne to the rule of ſir Gerueis of Cliftō knight and other, hauing with them to the nomber of a. M ſouldyours.

But the thirde daye after the dukes departing, the French king ſo fyerſly aſſailed the towne, that in the ende he wan it by ſtrength, and ſlewe therin manye an Engliſh man, and toke many priſoners And ſoone after was the townes of Meleon, of Corbeyll, and of the Ebreouſe, loſte from the Engliſhmen. For ye ſhal vnderſtand that ſōdry and many times the towns and holdes in Fraunce were loſte and after won. But euer the more loſſe turned to the Engliſh party, till all Normandy were loſt, and al other lādes of Fraunce appartayning to the kyng of England.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xl.
Goldſmith
Jhon Padiſley
Jhon Sutton
Willyam Wetinhale
Anno dñi. M.cccc.xli.
Anno. xix.

The. xix. yere. IN this. xix. yere, began murmoure a grudg to breake at large, that before had bene kept in mewe, betwene perſons nere about the king, and his vncle the famouſe Humfrey duke of Gloceter and protectour of the land, againſt whom diuers coniectures wer attempted a far, which after were ſet nere to him, ſo that they lefte not tyll thei had broughte him to his confuſion.

And fyrſt this yere dame Elianour Cobham, whō he was familiar with or ſhe were to him maried, was areſted of certain pointes of treaſon, and therupon by examination conuicte, and laſtly demed to dwell as an outlaw in the yſle of man, vnder the warde of ſir Thomas Stanley knighte. And ſone after were areſted as ayders and councelours of the forſayde ducheſſe, maſter Thomas Southwell a chanon of ſaint Stephans chapell at Weſtmynſter, Jhon Hum a chaplaine of the ſaide ducheſſe, and Roger Bolingbroke a man experte in nigromancy, and a woman called Margery Jourdemaine ſurnamed the witche of Eye beſyde Wincheſter.

To whoſe charge it was laide that theſe. iiii. perſons ſhoulde at the requeſt of the ducheſſe, deuyſe an ymage of waxe lyke vnto the king, the whiche ymage the delte ſo with, that by theyr Deuilliſhe Incantacions and Sorcery, thei entendinge to bring out of life lytle and litle the kinges perſon, as they lytle and lytell conſumed the ymage.

For the whiche treaſon

and other, finally they were conuicte, and adiudged to dye. But Thomas Southwell dyed in the towre of Lōdon, the night before he ſhould haue bene iudged on the morne, as in the nexte year folowing ſhalbe ſhewed.

Ye haue in the precedinge yere hard, howe the towne of Pountlarge was won by Charles, that toke vpon him as king, where as many Engliſhmen wer taken priſoners, and ſent to a caſtle named Coruile. Where thei beinge ſo in priſon, laboured vnto the ruler of that hold, that one of them might be ſet at large to labour to their frendes for their raunſom. The which parſon whan he was at his liberty, went vnto a ſtrēgth there by, whereof an Aragon knighte was a captaine vnder the duke of Yorke, and ſhewed to him that the caſtle of Coruile was but ſlēderly mā̄ned, and that it might bee won by policy and ſtrength. Wherupon the ſaid captain named Frauncis, in the night folowyng, ſet a buſhment nere vnto the ſaid caſtle, and in the daunyng of the mornyng, arrayed. iiii. of his ſouldyours in huſbandmens aray, and ſent them with ſackes fylled with dyuers frutes, to offer to ſell to the occupiers of the caſtell.

The whiche whē they were comen to the gate, and by their langage taken for Frenchmen, anon without ſuſpicion were taken in, and ſeyng that fewe folkes were ſtirringe, helde the porter muet while one gaue the foreſaid buſhment knowledge, ſo that ſhortly they entred an tooke the captaine in his bed, and after ſpoyled the caſtell, and deliuered the Engliſh priſoners, and conueied the Frēchmen with al the goodes that thei might cary out of the caſtle, vnto Roan.

Upon the day of the trāſlacyon of ſaint Edward or the. xii. day of October, vppon whiche daye the maire and his brethren for the yere folowing, and day whan the commons of the citie after theyr auncient cuſtome had choſen two aldermen, ſuche as before had ben ſhyryffes of London and of Myddelſex, that is to wit Robert Clopton Draper, and Rauffe Holland Taylaure, and them preſented by name vnto the Mayre and hys brethren, than ſitting in the vtter chamber wher the maires courts be kept, to the entent that the ſaid maire and his brethren mighte choſe one of the ſaide. ii. ſuche as thei thought moſte neceſſary and worſhipfull for the rome, the ſaid maire and his brethren chaſe ther Roberte Clopton and broughte him after downe vppon his right hande towarde the hall.

Whereof, whan certain Tailours there beyng were ware, and ſawe that Rauſe Holland was not choſen, anon they cried, nay, nay, not this but Rauffe Holland. Wherewith thold maire being aſtoned, ſtoode ſtyll vpon the Staire, and commaunded them to kepe ſilence and after helde on his way to the Eaſt ende of the hal, and there ſet him downe, and his brethren about him. In which meane time the ſaid Taylours had continued their crye, and encenſed other of lowe felowſhippes of the citie as ſimple perſons, to take their part and to crye as faſte as they, and would not ceaſe for ſpeache of the maire, nor oyes made by the maires ſergeant of armes. Wherfore the maire to appeaſe the rumour, ſent doune the ſhiriffes and commaunded theim to take the miſdoers, and to ſend theim vnto priſon.

The which precepte obſerued, and a.xii. or.xvi. of the chiefe of them ſent vnto Newgate, the ſaid rumour was anon ſeaſed. Of the whiche priſoners ſome were after fined and ſome puniſhed by longe inpriſonment.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xli. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xlii.

Roberte Clopton. { Wyllyam Cumbis. Rycharde Ryche. } Anno.xx.

The.xx. yere.

AN in this twentie yere and in the moneth of folowyng, the parties before in that other yere arreſted for treaſon, were broughte vnto the guilde hall of London, and there arreyned of ſuche poyntes as before are reherſed, and for the ſame finally Jhon Hum and Roger Bolinbroke, were iudged to be drawen, hanged, and quartered, and the witche to be brent. But Thomas Southwel dyed in the towre the nighte before that he ſhuld haue bene iudged. Than accordyng to the Sentence of the court before paſſed, maſter Roger was drawen to Tiborne, & there hanged and quartered, the which at that ſeaſon toke vpõ his death, that he was not giltie of the treaſon, that he was put to and iudged for. And the nexte day folowinge was the witche brente in Smithfelde, and maiſter Jhon Hum was pardoned and ſued out his charter.

This yere alſo the lorde Talbot laide ſyege before an hauen town in Normandy named Depe and ſet his ordynaunce vppon an hill called Peleet, where amonge other engines and inſtrumentes of warre, he had deuiſed a myghtye towre of tymber, out of the whiche he ſhotte his gunnes and other ordinaunce, and therwyth broſed and craſed the walles, and wrought there by great diſpleaſure vnto the towne of Depe.

In thys towne was Capptaine Charles Mareis a French knight, the whiche manfully defended the towne, till vnto hym wͭ reſcouſe did come Jhon Notice of Orleaunce knight, with a company of a thouſande ſowdioures. And there after came to the reſcous of the ſaide towne. ii. other knightes named Arthur de Longeuyle and ſir Thomas Droynon with.vi.C men.

And after this Charles which named him ſelf Frenche king, ſent thither the thirde reſcous of fiue hundred menne of armes and a thouſande of other ſoldiours, vnder twoo leaders called Theodalde, and Guillyam Richauill knightes.

The which reſcouſe notwithſtandinge, the ſaide Lord Talbot wel & manfully cõtinued in right cruell maner, ſo that they were faine to call for more aide. Where of the lorde Talbot beinge ware, thinking that ſhortly the French men ſhuld be conſtrayned to geue ouer the towne, left the guidinge of the ſiege vnto ſir William Paiton and ſir Jhon Rippelande or Trippeland knight, and after departed. After whoſe departinge within ſhort while, the Dolphin of Vyenne Lowis by name, and ſonne vnto the fornamed Charles French kyng, accompanied with the erle of ſaint Paule and other to the number of. xvi. C. knightes came vnto the reſcouſe of the ſaid towne. And after he had a daye reſted him and his ſoudiours, he ſente the forenamed Theodalde with a ſtrength of. iiii. hundred men for to aſſaile the foreſayde towre of timber, but lytell hurte dyd thei thereunto.

Then the ſaid Dolphin ſent an other ſtrength of. vi. C. men to aſſaile it, but the Englyſhmen quit them ſo maafully that thi ſlewe. viii. ſcore Frenchmen, and wounded ouer. iii. C. wherwith ẏ Dolphin beyng greuouſly amoued, aſſembled the vttermoſt ſtrength he might make, aſwell of the towne and other, and ſet vpon the Engliſhmen, whiche were ſore bruſed with dayly fight and few in numbre, and finally diſcomfited them, and ſlewe of them vpon. iii. hundred, and toke the reſt priſoners. Among the whiche the foreſaide. ii. Engliſhe capitaines were taken, and a kinneſman of the lord Tabottes or more verely one of his baſte ſonne. And thus was Depe reſcowed, and the Engliſh men diſcomfited, after the hadde manfully mainteyned that ſyege by the ſpace of. ix. weekes and od dayes.

A fraye in Fleteſtrete

Alſo this yere in the moneth of Auguſte was a great affraye in Fleteſtrete, betwene the getters of the ynnes of courte, and the inhabitauntes of the ſame ſtreete. Which affray began in the night, and ſo contynued with aſſautes and ſmal bekeringes till the next day. In which ſeaſon muche people of the city thither was gathered, and diuers men of bothe parties were ſlaine and many hurte. But laſtly by the preſence and diſcrecion of the mayre and ſhiriues this affraie was appeaſed. Of the which was chiefe occaſion a man of Cliffordе ynne named Herbotell. In this yere alſo, by certaine ambaſſadours that were ſent out of Englãd into Guian, a mariage was concluded in the beginning of the yere folowinge, atwene the king and ẏ erles doughter of Armenacke. Whiche concluſion was after diſalowed and put by, by the means of the Earle of Suffolke. Whiche kindeled a new brande of burnyng enuy atwene the Lorde protectour and him, & toke fire in ſuche wiſe that it left not. til both parties with many other wer cõſumed and ſlaine, whereof enſued muche miſchiefe within ẏ realme, and loſſe of all Normãdy, as after to you ſhall appere.

Anno dñi. M. cccc. xlii.
Irenmonger.
Jhon Athyrley } Thomas Beaumount.
Rycharde Nordon.
Anno dñi. M. cccc. xliii
} Anno. xxi.

The. xxi. yere.

IN this. xxi. yere, the foreſaid Erle of Suffolke, which as before is touched had fordon the concluſion of the mariage, taken by the ambaſſadours betwene the kinge and the earle of Armenakes doughter, went ouer him ſelf with other vnto him aſſigned, & ther in Fraunce concluded a mariage betwene the kinge and dame Margaret the kinges doughter of Cecile and of Hieruſalem, as ſayeth the Engliſh cronicle. And for the mariage to bring about, to the ſaide king of Cecile was deliuered the duchy of Angeou & erledome of Maine which are called the keies of Normandy.

But the Frenche writer Gagwine ſayth in his latin cronicle, that aboute this time the erle of Suffolke came vnto Charles the French king to a town in Lorain named Naunce or Naunt, and aſked of hym his doughter to be quene of England, but he geueth to her no name. The which requeſt of the ſaid Charls to the ſaid erle was graunted. Alſo he affirmeth litel tofore that ſeaſon, a peace betwene both realmes was concluded for the terme of. xxii. monethes, whiche peace endured but a while after.

Poules ſteple ſet on fire by lightening.

And this yere vppon Candelmaſſe euen, the ſteple of ſaincte Poules churche in London was ſet on fire by tempeſt of lightning and laſtly quenched by greate diligence and laboure of many perſons. But of all that there laboured, the morow maſſe preſt of bow church in cheape was moſte commended and noted.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xliii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xliiii.

Grocer.
Thomas Catworth { Nycholas Wifforde. / Jhon Norman. } Anno.xxii.

The.xxii. yere.

IN this.xxii. yere, the Earle of Stafforde was made or created duke of Bakingham, the Erle of Warwike duke of Warwike, therle of Dorſet Marques of Dorſet, and the earle of Suffolke, Marquys of Suffolke. The whiche Marques of Suffolke ſoone after with his wife and other honorable perſonages, aſwel of men as of womē, with great apparell of chayres and other coſtyouſe ordenaunce for to conueye the forenamed lady Margarete into England, ſailed into Fraunce, wher they were honorably receyued, and ſo taried there all this maires yere.

In this yere was alſo an acte made by auctorytie of the comon counſaile of London, that vppon the ſondaye ſhoulde no maner of thynge within the fraunchyſe of the citie be boughte or ſolde, neyther vitaile nor other thinge, nor none artificer ſhoulde bringe his ware vnto anye man to be worne or occupied that day, as tailoures garmētes, or cordewainers ſhoes and ſo in likewiſe of al other occupacions.

The which ordenaunce held but a whyle.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.xliiii. Anno dñi.M.cccc.xlv.

Mercer.
Henry Frowike { Stephin Foſter
Hughe Wyche. } Anno.xxiii.

The.xxiii. yere.

THis xxiii.yere and moneth of the forſayde ladye Margarete came ouer into Englãd, and in the moneth folowĩg ſhe was maried vnto kyng Henry at a towne called Southwike in the countre of Hamſhire. And from thens ſhe was honorably conueied by the lordes and eſtates of this lande, which mette with her in ſondry liueries, with their ſleues browdered, and ſome beaten with gold ſmithes workes in moſt coſtly maner. And ſpeciallye the duke of Glouceter mette with her with v.C.men in one liuerey. And ſo ſhe was conueyed vnto Blacke Heth, wher vpon the xviii.day of Maye ſhe was mette with the Maire, Aldermen, and ſherifes of the citie, ⁊ the craftes of the ſame, in browne blew with brawderyd ſleeues. That is to meane euery miſtery or craft with coniſaunce of his miſtery, and red hodes vpon either of their heddes and ſo the ſame daye brought her vnto London, where for her were ordeined ſumptuouſe and coſtlye pagentes and reſemblaunce of diuers olde hiſtoryes, to the great comforte of her and ſuch as came with her, the maner whereof I paſſe ouer for length thing of the time. And ſo with great triumph ſhe was brought vnto Weſtminſter, where vpon the thirty day of the moneth of Maye, that was the ſondaye after Trinity ſonday ſhe was ſolemply crowned.

After which feaſte, iuſtes were there holden by thre dayes contynuall within the ſainctwary before the abbay. Of this maryage are of dyuers remembraunces, ſayenge that this mariage was vnprofitable for the realm diuers and ſundry wayes. For firſte was geuen vp for her out of the kinges poſſeſſion the duchye of Angeou and the erledome of Maine. And for the coſtes of her conueyeng into this land, was aſked in plaine parliament, a fiftene and an halfe by the Marques of Suffolke. By reaſon whereof he grewe in ſuche hatered of the people, that finally it coſt him his lyfe.

And ouer that it appered that God was not pleaſed with that mariage. For after this daye the fortune of the world began to fall from the kinge, ſo that he loſt his frendes in Englande and his reuenewes in Fraunce.

For ſhortly after all was ruled by the quene and her councell, to the great diſprofyte of the kinge and his realme, and to the great mauger ⁊ obloquy of the quene.

The whiche as ſyn that tyme hath been well prouid, had many a wrong and falſe report made of her, which were to long to reherſe All which miſery fell, for breaking of the promiſe made by the kyng vnto yͤ erle of Armenakes doughter, as before in the.xx. yere of the king is touched, as agreeth moſt wryters. Whiche miſerye in this

ſtory

ſtorie ſhall ſomedeale appere, as firſt by the loſyng of Normandie, the diuiſion of the Lordes within this realme, the rebellion of the comminaltie againſt their prince and Soueraigne, and finally, the kyng depoſed, and the quene with the Prince faine to flee the lande, and loſte the rule thereof for euer.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xlv. Anno domini. M.cccc.xlvi.

Simõde Eyer Draper. { Jhon Derby. / Godfray Fieldyng. } Anno.xxiiii.

The.xxiiii. yere. Appeale of Treaſon.

IN this.xxiiii. yere the Prior of Kilmaine appeached therle of Urmõde of Treaſon: For trial whereof, the place of battaill was aſſigned in Smithfield, and the Barriers for the ſame there ready pight. In whiche meane tyme, a doctour of Diuinitie named maſter Gilbert Worthyngton, Parſone of ſainct Andrewes in Holborn, and other good menne, made ſoche labour to the Kynges counſaill, that when the daie of battaill approched, the quarell was taken into the Kynges hande, and there ended.

This yere alſo came a greate Ambaſſade into this lande, out of Fraunce, for to conclude a generall peace, a perpetuall peace, as the common brute then went: but finally, it tourned to a peace for a yere, of the whiche ambaſſade ſpeketh nothing the Frenche chronicle. And in this yere an Armurer named   was appeched of Treaſon, by a ſeruaunte of his owne: for triall whereof, a daie to thẽ was giuen to fight in Smithfield, at whiche daie of battail the ſaied Armurer was ouercomen & ſlain, and that by the miſguidyng of hymſelf: for vpon the morowe when he ſhould come to the fielde his neighbours came to hym, and gaue vnto him ſo moche wine and good Ale, that he was therewith diſtempered, that he reeled as he went, and ſo was ſlaine without gilt. But that falſe ſeruaunt liued not long vnpuniſhed, for he was after hãged for felony at tiborne.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xlvi. Anno domini. M.cccc.xlvii.

Jhon Olney Mercer. { Godfrey Boloyne. / Roberte Horne. } Anno.xxv.

The.xxv. yere.

THis.xxv. yere, was a Parlament holden at ſaincte Edmondes Burie in Suffolke. To the whiche towne all the Commons of that Countrie wer warned to come in their moſt defencible aray, to giue attendãce vpõ the kyng. And ſo ſone as this parliament was begon, and the lordes aſſembled, ſir Hũfrey duke of Glouceter and vncle vnto the kinge, ſhortlye after was arreſted by the Vycounte Beawmõde thẽ hygh conſtable of Englande, whõ accompanied the Duke of Bukkynghā and other. And after this areſt was executed, all his owne ſeruauntes were putte from hym: and thirtie and twoo of the principall of them, wer alſo put vnder areſt, and ſent vnto diuers priſōs, whereof aroſe a greate murmure emong the people.

The duke of Gloceter murdered.

Then thus cōtinuing this parlament, within.vi. daies after the duke was arreſted, he was found deade in his bed, beyng the.xxiiii. daie of February. Of whoſe murther diuers reportes are made, whiche I paſſe ouer.

Then his corps was laied open that al men might ſee him, but no wound was found on him. Of the honorable fame of this manne, a longe ſtile I mighte make, of the good rule that he kept this lande in, duryng the none age of ẏ king; and of his honourable houſholde and libertee, whiche paſſed all other before his tyme, and true of his allegeaunce, that no manne could with right accuſe hym, but malicious perſones, whiche his glorious honor and fame enuied, and lefte not to maligne againſte him, till he wer put frō al worldly rule, & ſpecially for it was thought that duryng his life, he would wſtand the deliuery of Angeou and Maine before purpoſed. This for his honourable and liberall demeanour, was ſurnamed the good duke of Glouceter. Then after he had lien open a ſeaſon, that all mē might be aſſured of his death, the corps was honourably prouided for, and ſo conueid vnto. S. Albones, and there buried nere vnto the ſhrine of. S. Albone, to whoſe ſoule God be mercifull, Amen.

And whē this noble prince was thus enterred, fiue perſons of his houſholde, that is to ſaie, ſir Roger Chamberlaine knight, Middelton, Herbarde, and Arthur Eſquiers, and one Richard Nedam yeman, were ſent to London, and there arrained, and iudged to bee drawen, hanged, and quartered. Of the whiche ſentence, drawyng and hangyng were put in execution. But when thei wer cut doune to bee quartered, the Marques of Suffolk there beyng preſent, ſhewed the kynges charter for them, and ſo wer deliuered, to the great reioyſyng of the multitude of the people, there beyng preſente. But for this the grudge and murmure of the people, ceaſed not againſte the Marques of Suffolk, for the death of the good Duke of Glouceter, of whoſe murder he was ſpecially ſuſpected.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xlvii. Anno domini. M.cccc.xlviii.

Jhon Gedney Draper { William Abraham. / Thomas Scot. } Anno.xxvi.

The.xxvi. yere.

IN this ſixe and twentie yere, after concordaunce of moſte writers, or nere there about, ẏ.xxiii. Sciſme of the Churche ceaſed, that before had continued betwene Eugenie the fowerth, and Felix the fift, vpon ſixtene yeres.

This Sciſme, as before is touched, began by reaſon of the depoſition of the ſaied Eugenie, at the counſaill of Baſile, for that that he would not obſerue the decrees, before made in the Counſaile of Conſtaunce, and other cauſes to him laied. But yet that depoſing notwithſtandyng, perforce he cõtinued Pope, by the terme of. xiiii yeres after. And theſaied Felix at theſaid counſaill admitted, in like maner continued as Pope, by all that ſaied ſeſon, like as before to you I haue ſhewed in the. xvii. yere of this kyng. And as now by exhortacion of Chriſten Princes, as the Kyng of Englande, whoſe meſſangers in that behalfe, were the Biſhop of Norwiche, and the Lorde of ſainct Ihons, and other princes, theſaid Felix to ſet a perfite vnion in the Churche, in this yere of his own volunte, reſigned his aucthoritie of Papacie, and ſubmitted hym vnto the obediẽce of Nicholas the fift of that name, notwithſtandyng that the ſaied Felix was a man of greate birth, and allied to the more partie of al chriſtian Princes. And this Nicholas a manne of lowe birth, and of vnknowen kinred, without the citee of Ieane.

Then was Felix made Legate of Fraunce, and Cardinal of Sauoie, and liued after a bleſſed and holie life, & ſo ended. And as ſome writers teſtifie, God for hym hath ſhewed diuers Miracles ſens he died. And for this Sciſme thus graciouſly ended, a verſifier made this verſe folowyng.

Lux fulſit mundo, ceſſit Felix Nicholao.

The whiche Verſe is thus to meane in Engliſhe.

Light to the worlde now doeth ſpryng and ſhine,
For Felix vnto Nicholas al frely doeth reſigne.

Alſo as teſtifieth Gagwin and alſo ſome Engliſhe writers, the trewce betwene Englande and Fraunce continuyng, a knight of the Engliſhe partie, named ſir Fraunces Arrogonoiſe, tooke a toune vppon the borders of Normandie, belongyng vnto the duke of Britain. For the which he complained him to Charles the Frẽch kyng, and he at theſaied dukes requeſt, ſente vnto the Kyng of England, Ihon Hanart and Guilliã Conſinot knightes, to aſke reſtitucion of that harme. The whiche were anſwered of the kinges cõſaill, that the deede was right diſpleaſaũt vnto the kyng, and that theſaied ſir Fraunces had enterpriſed the feacte of his owne preſumption, and nothyng with the kynges mynde or pleaſure. Then after this anſwere thus made, it was agreed by the Duke of Somerſet, then liutenaunt vnder the kyng in Normandie, that a communicatiõ for this matter ſhould be had at a toune named Louers. To the which place at the daie aſſigned, appered and came certaine perſones for bothe parties, where thei beeyng ſo occupied, a traine was compaſſed by the Frenchmẽ, to take from the Engliſhe menne a ſtrong Toune or holde, named Pount all Arche, whereof the maner was this.

A cautele wrought by yͤ Frẽch menne.

A Frenche man or Norman beyng a carter, whiche daily vſed to enter this toune with victuall, & other lodyng of his Carte, ſeeyng the negligence of the Engliſhmen how litle heede thei toke vnto the watche of the Towne, warned a Frenche capitain named Floquet and ſaied that with litle helpe, the toune would be gotton. For expidition whereof, this Floquet with other, couenaunted with the ſaied carter, to bryng aboute their purpoſe, and ordeined vnto hym two hardie ſoldiours of Frenche men, whiche bare in their neckes twoo Carpenters Axes, to ſhewe that thei were Carpenters. And after agremente made emong thē, how thei ſhould entre into the Toune, and where thei ſhould meete the Carter, whiche after his olde cuſtome, entered at the gates without ſuſpicion, and ſone after with his axe on his necke, came by one ſoldiour, and in a while after that other, ⁊ ſo with litle queſtionyng vnto them made, paſſed the gates and ſo laſtly vnto the houſe of the carter before appointed, and there kepte them ſecrete till night was commen, knowyng well that the hoſte of the houſe, was enemie to Engliſhe men, for an iniurie vnto hym of an Engliſhe manne before dooen, and ſhewed vnto hym all their counſaill: the whiche promiſed to them all the aſſiſtaunce and aide that he might make. In this nightes paſſetyme, for the furtheraunce of this purpoſe, the Lorde of Breſſy, with a choſen companie of knightes, lodged him in a buſhment nere vnto the toune, toward the gate of S. Andrewe, and the forenamed Floquet lodged hym with an other choſen compaignie, vnder the part of the toune, which is towarde Louers, beeyng with hym ſir James de Cleremōt and other menne of name. Theſe ordenaunces and prouiſions thus ordeined for, the forenamed Carter with his two ſoldiours fornamed in the ſpring of the morning, as in the moneth of Octerber, came early vnto the gate with his Carte, and called the Porter by name in faire maner to open the gate, and promiſed vnto hym a rewarde for his labour. The Porter knowyng well the Carter, and takyng litle regard to the other twoo, whiche came with hym, opened the gate, and ſent an other felowe of his, to open the former gate. When the firſt was opened, yͤ Carter ſet his carte in the ſelf gate, and drewe to his purſe to giue to the porter his rewarde before promiſed. And as he told the money into his hande, of a falſhode he let part of the money fal vpō the groūd. The which while the Porter ſtouped to take vp, the carter with his dagger, or other weapon, gaue ſoche a ſtroke vnto the porter, yͭ he nother ſpake nor cried after. And ſo ſone as this miſchief was dooen, ſo ſone was yͤ other porter ſlain of the twoo ſoldiours. And that doen, one of thē ran forth of the gates, and gaue a ſigne vnto the lorde of Breſſy, the which forthwith entred the toune and tooke and ſlue all ſoche as to them made reſiſtence, and wan in ſhort while the caſtle and yͤ toune and ſlue therin moche people, and toke many priſoners. Emong the whiche (as ſaieth Gagwine) the lorde Facounbridge, as capitaine of the toune was there taken priſoner. When this toune was thus won, by the cautele of the French men, and the terme of the trewes, was not yet expired, ther was labour made vnto the French king, for reſtitucion of this towne, and other wronges dooen in the winning of theſame. To which it was anſwered, that if the Engliſhemē would reſtore the towne of Fogiers, with other harmes ther doen, that then the Frenchemen ſhould reſtore this towne with the other harmes. For treatie whereof, a daie of metyng was appoincted, at a place called Bounport, where the tyme was ſpente in vaine of bothe parties, ſo that of the metyng came none effecte.

Of the takyng of this ſaied toune of Fogiers, enſued moche harme to the Engliſhe menne, for this was thoccaſion, by the whiche the Frenche menne after gat all Normandie.

Anno domini. M.cccc.xlviii. Anno domini. M.cccc.xlix.
Grocer.
Stephin Browne. { Willyam Cantlowe. / Willyam Marowe. } Anno.xxvii.

The xxvii. yere.

IN the .xxvii. yere as witneſſeth the Engliſhe Chronicle, a knighte of Fraūce, called ſir Lewes de Bueill, chalenged an Eſquire of Englād, named Rauſe Chalōs, of certain feates of warre. The whiche to aproue, a daie to theim was giuen, to mete at a toune in Fraunce named Maunte or Maunce, where the Frēche king at that daie was preſent. But fortune to Chalons was ſo frendly, that he ranne the French knight through with his ſpere, whereof theſaied ſir Lewes ſhortly after died. Then this Chalons, like a charitable chriſtian manne mourned for his enemie, and kepte for hym his Obſequie, as he had been his carnal brother. For the whiche deede of the Frēch kyng, he was greatly allowed, albeit, he was bounde ſo to doe, by the lawe of armes.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xlix. Anno dñi. M.cccc.l.
Thomas Chalton. { Willyam Hulin. / Thomas Caninges. } Anno.xxviii.

The.xxviii yere.

IN this .xxviii. yere, the Kyng called a Parlamēt at Weſtminſter, the whiche was adiourned to the black freers at London. And after Chriſtemas to London again. In which paſtyme, a Shipman of the Weſt countrie, named Robert of Cane, with a fewe ſhippes of warre, toke an whole flete of marchauntes cōming from the Baie, beyng laden with ſalt, the which wer of Pruce Holande, and Zelande, and other partes of Flaunders, & ſo brought them to Hāpton, and there made his port ſale. For the whiche priſe the marchauntes goodes of Englande wer areſted, in diuers places of Flaunders, as Bruges, Ipre, and other good Townes, and might not haue the ſaied goddes deliuered, till thei had taken appoinctment for to paie for the ſaid priſe and their hurtes ⁊ damages

The Duke of Suffolk areſted and ſente to the Towre.

And continuyng the foreſaied Parlament, the duke of Suffolke was areſted, and ſent as priſoner (to contente ſome myndes) vnto the Towre, where he was kepte at his pleaſure a moneth, and after deliuered at large, the whiche diſcontented many mennes myndes. For to hym was laied the charge, of the deliuery of Angeou and Maine, and the death of the noble Prince, Humfrey Duke of Glouceter. Then of this grudge, enſued rebellion of the commons, in ſo moche that thei aſſembled in ſondrie places, and made of them ſelues capitaines, and named thē Blewe beard, and other counterfaicte names, and ſo entended to haue gathred more company. But anon as the kynges counſail was thereof warned, thei were laied for, and taken, and put to death.

The riſing of the commons.

The Parlament reiourned to Leceter.

Then the foreſaied Parlament was adiourned vnto Leceter, whither came the king. and with him the duke of Suffolke.

Then the Commons of the cōmon houſe, made requeſt to the Kyng, that all ſoche perſones, as were conſenting and laboured for the giuyng ouer the duchie of Angeou, and the Erledome of Main, might be puniſhed. Of the whiche offence to bee guiltie, thei accuſed the foreſaied Duke of Suffolke, the lorde Saie, the biſhop of Saliſburie, and one Daniel a gentleman, with Triuilian, and other. Then to appeaſe the Common houſe, the Duke was exiled for.v. yeres, and the Lorde Saie Treaſourer of England, and the other were put a parte for a while, and were promiſed to be ſent vnto the kynges Gaioll or warde.

The Duke of Suffolk baniſhed.

Then the Duke in obeyng the Sentence foreſaied, ſped hym toward the ſeas ſide, in the moneth of Aprill, and toke his Shipping in Northfolk, entendyng to haue ſailed into Frannce. In kepyng of whiche courſe, he was met with a Ship of warre, named Nicholas of the Towre, the whiche toke his Shippe. And when the Capitaine was ware of the Duke, anon he tooke hym into his owne Shippe, and ſo kepte his courſe toward Douer. And whē he was commen vnto the roode, anon he cauſed hym to bee confeſſed of his owne Chaplain, and that doen, Shipmen put hym in a Shippe boate, and there vpon the ſide of the boate, one ſtrake of his heade, whiche heade with the body, was ſone after conueighed to the land of Douer, and there lefte vpon the Sandes, and the ſaied Shipmen retourned to the ſea againe: And thus one miſchief enſued vpon an other, to the deſtruction of the nobles of this lande. And ſo vppon the firſte daie of Maie, was this deade corps founde vpon Douer Sandes, and after conueighed to his reſtyng place, to

The Duke of Suffolk put to deth by a wōder full chaūce

This yere alſo beeyng the yere of our Lordes incarnation fouretene hundred and fiftie, was the Iubile, or the plenarie Pardon at Rome, whiche of Engliſhe men is called the yere of Grace.

And in this yere a Towne in Normandy named Wernoil, was taken by the treaſon of a Frenche

The toune of Wernoil betraied.

Baker, ẏ maner wherof, were lōg to write: but finally it came to ẏ poſſeſſion of Floquet before reherſed, to the great diſtructiō of Engliſhmen. For now was the truce ended, & mortall warre was executed vpō both parties, & the Engliſhmen vnto ẏ Frēche, wrought muche miſchiefe dyuers wayes, which were long to write. But as tofore I haue ſhewed to you, ſondry times, the moſt loſſe tourned euer laſtwarde vppon the Engliſhe partye. For this ſeaſon alſo were the townes of Nogente and Pount Andenere won by the erle of Saint Paule and other. And in the moneth of Juny this yere, the commons of Kente aſſembled them in greate multitude, and chaſe to them a captaine and named him Mortimer and coſyn to the duke of Yorke. But of moſt he was named Jak Cade. This kept the people wonderouſly together and made ſuche ordynaunces amonge them, that he broughte a greate nomber of people of theim vnto Back heeth. Where he deuiſed a byll of peticions to the king and the counſel, and ſhewed there in what iniuries and oppreſſions the poore commons ſuffered, by ſuch as were about the king a few perſons in nomber, and all vnder colour to come to his aboue. The kinges counſaile ſeyng this bill, diſalowed it, and counſailed the kynge whiche by the. vii. daye of Junye hadde gathered to hym a ſtronge hooſte of people, to go againſt his rebelles, and to geue vnto them battaile. Than the king, after the rebelles had holden their felde vpon Black heth. vii. daies, made toward them. Wherof hearyng the Captaine, drewe backe with his people to a village called Seuenoke, and there enbatailed them. Than it was agreed by the kynges counſaill that ſir Humfrey Stafforde knight, with Williā his brother and other certain gentlemen, ſhould folowe the chaſe, and the king with his Lordes, ſhould retourne vnto Grenewitche, wenyng to theim that the rebelles were fled and gone.

An inſurrection in Kent.

Mortimer otherwyſe called Jake Cade.

But as before I haue ſhewed, whan ſir Humfrey with his company drewe nere vnto Seuenok, he was ware of the capitaynes that ther abode with his people. And whā he had counſailed with the other gentelmen, he lyke a manfull knight ſet vpō the rebelles, and fought with them longe.

But in thende the captain ſlue him, and his brother and many other, and cauſed the reſte to geue back. All which ſeaſon the kinges hoſte lay ſtill vpon Blakheth, beyng among them ſondry opiniōs, ſo that ſome and many fauoured the captaine.

But finally, whan worde came of the ouerthrowe of the Staffordes, thei ſaid plainly and boldly, that excepte the lord Say and other before reherſed were committed to warde, thei would take the captaines partye. For the appeaſing of the whiche rumour, the lord Say was put into the towre but that other as than were not at hande. Than the king hauing knowledge of the diſcomfiture of his men, and alſo of the rumoure of his hooſtynge people, remoued from Grenewich to London, and there with his hoſte reſted hym a while.

The lorde Say ſent to the towre.

And ſo ſoone as Jak Cade had thus ouercome the Staffordes, he anon appareled him with the knightes apparel, and did on him his briganders ſet with gilt naile and his ſalet and gilte ſporres.

And after he had refreſhed his people, he retourned agayne to Blakheth, and ther pight againe his feld as here tofore he had done and lay there from the .xxix. of Juny being ſaint Peters day, til the firſt day of July. In which ſeaſon came vnto him the archbiſhop of of Caunterbury and the duke of Bukkingham, with whom they had longe communycacion, and found him right diſcrete in his anſweres: Howbeit, thei coulde not cauſe him to laye downe his people and to ſubmyt him vnto the kinges grace.

In this while, the kinge and the quene hering of the encreaſing of his rebelles, and alſo the lordes fering their owne ſeruauntes leſt they wold take the captaines party, remoued from Landon to Killingworth, leuing the citie without aide, excepte onely the lorde Scales, whiche was lefte to kepe the tower, and with him a manly and warly man named Mathew Gowth. Than the captaine of Kent thus houyng at Blakheth, to the ende to blinde the more the people, and ſo bringe him in fame that he kepte good iuſtice, beheded there a petie captaine of his named Paris, for ſo muche as he had offended agaynſt ſuche ordynaunce as he had ſtabliſhed in his hooſt, and heringe that the kinge and all his lordes were thus departed, drewe him nere vnto the the cytie. So that vppon the firſt day of July, he entred yͤ borough of Southſharke, being than weniſday, and lodged him there that night, for he might not be ſuffered to enter the citie.

Jake Cade how he lodged in Southwerke.

And vppon the ſame daye, the commons of Eſſex in great nomber pight them a felde vppon the plaine at Myles ende. And vpon the ſeconde day of the ſaid moneth the maire called a common counſaile at the Guildhall, for to puruey the withſtanding of theſe rebelles and other matters. In the whiche aſſemble were diuers opinious, ſo that ſome thought good that the ſaid rebelles ſhould be receaued into the citie, and ſome otherwiſe. Amonge the which, Robert Horneſtock fiſhmonger than being an Alderman, ſpake ſore againſte theim that woulde haue theim entre. For the whiche ſaiynges, the commons were ſo ameued againſte him, that the ſeaſed not till they had him commyt to warde.

And the ſame after noone about .v. of the clocke, the captaine with his people entred the bridg.

And whan he came vppon the drawe bridge, he hewed the ropes that drewe the brydge, in ſonder with his ſworde, and ſo paſſed into the citye, and made in ſondrye places thereof proclamacions in the kinges name, that no manne in peyne of death ſhoulde rob or take any thinge perforce without paiyng therfore. By reaſon whereof he wan many hertes of the commons of the the cytie, but al was done to begile the people wtih, as after ſhall euidentlye appere. For he rode through diuers ſtretes of the city, and as he came by Lõdon ſtone, he ſtrake it with his ſworde and ſayde nowe is Mortymer lorde of this cytie. And whan he had thus ſhewed himſelf in diuers places of the city, and ſhewed his minde to the maire, for the ordering of his people, he retourned into Southwarke and there abode as he before had done, hys people comming and going at all lawfull houres whan they wold. Than vpon the morne beyng the iii. day of Julye and Fridaye, the ſaide captaine entred againſt the cytie, and cauſed the lorde Say to be ſet from the Towre and led vnto the guildhall, where he was areigned before the maire and other of ŷ kinges iuſtice. In which paſſetyme he entended to haue brought before the ſaid iuſtice the foreſaide Roberte Horne. But his wife and frendes made to hym ſuch inſtaunt labour, that finally for. v. C. marke he was ſet at his liberty. Than the lorde Saye beynge as before is ſaid at guildhall deſired that he mighte be iudged by his peeres. Whereof heringe the captaine, ſent a companye of his vnto the hall, the whiche parforce toke him from the offycers, and ſo brought him vnto the ſtanderte in the Chepe, where, or he were halfe ſhriuen, they ſtrake of his head, and that doone pyght it on a long pole, and ſo bare it about with them.

The lorde Say beheded by Jak Cade.

In this time and ſeaſon had the captain cauſed a gentleman to be takē named Cromer, which before had bene ſheriffe of Kent, & vſed (as theſaid) ſome extorcions. For which cauſe, or for he had fauoured the lord Say, by reaſon that he had maried his doughter, he was haryed to Myles ende, and ther in the captaines preſence beheadded. And that ſame time was there alſo beheadded a man called Baylly, the cauſe of whoſe death was this, as I haue herde ſome men report: This Bally was of the familier and olde acquaintaunce of Jake Cade, wherefore ſo ſone as he eſpyed him comming to himward, he caſte in his minde that he would diſcouer his liuing and olde maners, and ſhew of his vile kinne and lynage. Wherefore knowing that the ſaide Bally vſed to bere ſcrowes and prophecis about him, ſhewing to his companye that he was an enchaunter and of euyll diſpoſicion, and that they ſhould well knowe by ſuche bokes as he bare vppon him, and bad them ſerch and if they found not as he ſayde, that then they ſhoulde put him to deathe, whiche all was done accordinge to hys commaundement.

Whan they had thus behedded theſe two men, toke the head of Cromer and pight it vppon a pole and ſo entred again the citie with the hedes of the lorde Saye and Cromer. And as they paſſed the ſtreates, they ioyned the poles together, and cauſed eyther dead mouth to kyſſe the other dyuers and many times.

Foliſhe vilanye.

And the captaine the ſelfe ſame daye went vnto the houſe of Philip Malpas Draper and alderman, and robbed and ſpoyled his houſe, and toke thence a greate ſubſtaunce.

But he was before warned, and therby conueied muche of his monye and plate, or els he had bene vndone. At whyche ſpoy-

Roberie.

linge

lynge were preſente many poore men of the citie, whyche at ſuche times are euer redy in all places to do harme, where ſuche ryotes are done.

Than towarde night, he returned into Southwarke, and vpon the morne reentred the citie, and dined that daye at a place in S. Margarete Patens pariſh called Gherſtes houſe. And whan he had dined, like an vncurteouſe geſt he robbed him as the daye before he had Malpas. For which. ii. robberies, albeit, that the porall, and nedy people drewe vnto him, and were partners of that euill, the honeſt and thryfty comoners caſt in their mindes the ſequele of this matter, and feared leſte thei ſhuld be delte with in lyke maner, by meane wherof he loſt the peoples fauoure and hartes. For it was to be thought, if he had not executed yͤ robbery, he might haue gone farre, and brought his purpoſe to good effecte, yf he had intended well. But it is to deme and preſuppoſe, that the entente of hym was not good, wherfore it might not come to any good concluſion. Than the maire and aldermen with aſſiſtence of the worſhypfull comeners, ſeyng this miſdemeanour of the captaine, in ſauegardinge of theim ſelues and of the citie, toke their counſayles howe they myght dryue the captayne and his adherentes from the city. Wherin their feare was the more for ſo muche as the kinge and his lordes wyth their powers were farre from them. But yet in aduoydyng of apparaunnte perell, they condiſcended, that they wold withſtand his any more entre into the city. For the perfourmaũce whereof, the maire ſent vnto the lorde Scales and Mathewe Gowghe than hauinge the towre in guidinge, and had of them aſſent to perfourme the ſame.

Than vpon the. v. day of July the captaine beynge in Southwarke, cauſed a man to be hedded for cauſe of his diſpleaſure to him done as the fame wente, and ſo kept him in Southwarke al that day. Howbeit, he might haue entred the cytie if he had would.

And when night was comming the maire and citezins with Mathewe Gough like vnto their former apointment, kept the paſſage of the bridge, beynge ſonday, and defended the Kentiſhe men which made greate force to reenter the cytie. Than the captaine ſeynge this bickering begon, yode to harnes, and called his people aboute him, and ſet ſo fyerſly vpon the cytezeins, that he draue them backe frõ the ſtulpes in Southwark or bridge foote. In defẽding wherof many a man was drowned and ſlaine. Amonge the which of men of name was John Sutton, alderman, Mathewe Goughe gentell man, and Roger Heyſande citezyn.

How the citezins of London reſyſted Jack Cade with his company in their entraunce of the citie.

And thus contynued this ſkirmyſh all night till. ix. of the clocke vppon the morne, ſo that ſome time the citezins had the better, and thus ſoone the Kentyſhmen were vppon the better ſide.

But euer they kepte them vppon the bridge, ſo that the cytezins paſſed neuer muche the bulwarke at the brydge foote, nor the Kentyſhmenne muche farther than the drawe brydge. Thus

continued

Thus conteining the cruell fight to the diſtruction of much people on both ſides, laſtly after the Kentiſhmen were put to the worſe, a truce was agreed for certayne houres. During the whirh truce, the archbiſhop of Caunterburye than chauncelor of England, ſent a generall pardon to the captaine for himſelfe, and other of his people. By reaſon wherof, he and his company departed the ſame night out of Southwarke, and ſo retourned euery man to his owne.

But it was not long after that the captaine with his companye was thus departed, that proclamacions were made in dyuers places of Kent, of Southſex, and Southery, that who might take the forſaide Jacke Cade, other on liue or dead, ſhoulde haue a. M. marke for his trauaile. After which proclamacion thus publiſhed, a gentleman of Kent named Alexanded Jden, awayted ſo his time, that he toke him in a garden in Suſſex. wher, in the taking of him the ſaide Jak was ſlaine, and ſo beyng dead, was brought into Southwarke the   daye of the moneth   and there lefte in the kinges bench for that night. And vpon the morowe, the dead corps was drawen through the highe ſtretes of the citie vnto Newgate and there hedded and quartered. Whoſe hed was than ſent to London bridge, and his. iiii. quartres were ſente to. iiii. ſondry townes of Kent.

The ende of Jacke Cade.

And thus done, the kyng ſent his commiſſions into Kente, and rode after him ſelfe, and cauſed enquery to bee made of this ryot in Caunterbury, where for the ſame viii. men were iudged and put to death. And in other good townes of Kent and Southſex, diuers other were put in execution for the ſame riot.

In this yere alſo, in the weſte countree was ſlaine the biſhop of Saliſbury by the commõs of that countree: Wherfore after the king had ſped his buſineſſe in Kent and Southſſex, he rode thither to ſe alſo thoſe malefactours puniſhed.

The biſhop of Saliſburye ſlaine.

Anno. domini. M. cccc. l.   Anno. domini. M. cccc. li.

Grocer.
Nicholas Wyſforde. } Jhon Middelton. / Wyllyam Dere. } Anno. xxix.

The. xxix. yere.

IN this. xxix. yere vpon ſaint Leonardes day or the. vi. daye of Nouember, began the parlyament at Weſtminſter. And the firſt day of December folowing, the duke of Somerſet, whiche newely was commen out of Normandy, was put vnto areſt, and his goodes by the commons were fowly dyſpoyled and borne away out of the blacke fryers. For at this ſeaſon was muche people in the cytie by reaſon of the parliament, and ſpecially of lordes ſeruauntes, whyche were awaiting vpon theyr lordes and maiſters in great multitude.

For ye ſhall vnderſtande, that temporall lordes in thoſe dayes kepte other maner of houſeholdes and other maner of reteyndour of houſholde ſeruauntes and other numbre, free exceading that the lordes at theſe dayes done.

Rumour & malyce amongeſt yͤ lordes.

Wherefore at parliament times, and other greate counſailes, the cities or townes where they aſſembled, were hougly ſtuffed with people. Then after this ryot thus committed, vpon the morowe fowinge, proclamacion was made throughe the cytie, that no man ſhould ſpoile or robbe vpon paine of death. And the ſame day at the ſtanderd in chepe, was a man beheded for breking of the ſaid proclamacion. And thus begon rumoure and malyce to ſpringe betwene the lordes of the land: And ſpecially the duke of Somerſet & other of the quenes counſell were had in great hatred, for the loſing of Normandy, wherof the chiefe citie Roan was loſte or geuen vp by apointment the yere preceding as witneſſeth Gagwinus, vppon condicyon that the duke of Somerſet with his wife and Engliſh ſoudiours, ſhuld with ſuch goodes as they might cary, departe frely from the citie. For which fre paſſage he ſhuld pay vnto the French king.lvi.M.ſcutes, which amoũt to.xiiii.M.marke ſterlyng. And alſo he was bounde to deliuer into the Frenche kinges poſſeſſion, all townes and caſtelles that at that daye were in the poſſeſſion of Engliſhmen within the duchye of Normandy. For performaunce of which couenauntes the lord Talbot was ſet for one of the pledges and ſo by one Floquet beforenamed all the ſaide townes and caſtels were by him to the Frenche kinges vſe receyued, Harflet onely excepted. Wherof the capitaine named Cyrſon or Curſon denyed the deliuery, with aſſiſtence of one named ſir Thomas Auringham. The whiche in deſpyte of all the Frenche kinges power, laid both by ſea and lande, helde it from the beginninge of December tyll the moneth of January, and then for lacke of reſcouſe gaue it vp by appointment in the begynnynge of this maires yeare. For this yelding vp of Normandy, muche diſpleaſure grewe vnto the queene and her counſaile, in ſo much that the duke of Yorke father vnto king Edwarde the.iiii. with many lordes with hym allyed, tooke party againſt her, & her counſaile ſo that mortall warre thereof enſued as here after in this ſtorye will appeare.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.li. Anno dñi.M.cccc.lii.
Skinner.
William Gregory { Mathewe Philip.
Chriſtofer Warton. } Anno.xxx.

The.xxx. yere.

IN this.xxx.yere and.xvi.daye of February, the king being accompanyed with the duke of Somerſet and manye other lordes toke their iournay toward the marches of Wales for ſo much as he was credible aſcerteined, that the duke of Yorke aſſiſted with dyuers other lordes and men of name, had in thoſe parties gathered great ſtrength of

people

and with theim was entryng the lande, and ſo helde on his iourney toward hym. But when the duke had wittyng of the kynges great power, he ſwarued the waie from the kynges hoſte, & toke the waie towarde London. And for he had receiued knowledge from the Citee, that he might not there be receiued, to refreſh him and his people, he therwith went ouer Kyngſtone bridge, and ſo into Kent, and there vpon an Heth called Brent Heth, he pight his field. Whereof the king hauyng knowledge, ſped hym after, and laſtly came vnto Blacke Heth, and there pight his fielde: Where bothe hoſtes beyng thus enbattailed, mediacion was made of peace, betwene bothe hoſtes. For furtheraunce whereof, to the Duke wer ſent, the biſhoppes of Wincheſter, and of Elie, with therles of Saliſburie and of Warwicke. To whom it was anſwered by the ſaied Duke, that he, nor none of his companie, entended none hurte vnto the Kynges perſone, nor to any of his coūſaill, beyng louers of the cōmon weale, and of hym and of his lande, but his entente and purpoſe was, to remoue from him a fewe euill diſpoſed perſones, by whose meanes the common people was greuouſly oppreſſed, and the communaltie greatly enpoueriſhed. Of yͤ which he named for principall, the Duke of Somerſet. Of whom it was finally agreed by the kyng, that he ſhould bee committed to warde, there to abide and anſwere, vnto ſoch articles as the duke of Yorke would laie againſt hym. Uppon which promiſe ſo made by yͤ king, the firſte daie of Marche beeyng Thuſdaie, the duke brake vp his field, and ſo came vnto the kinges tente, where contrary the former promiſe made, he fande the Duke of Somerſet as chief a waiter, & next vnto the king. And then was the Duke of Yorke ſente before to London, and was holden ſomedeale in maner as priſoner, and more ſtreighter ſhould haue been kept, ne had been tidinges, which daily ſprang, that ſir Edward his ſoonne, then Erle of the Marche, was commyng toward London, with a ſtrong power of Welchemen, and Marche menne, whiche feared ſo the quene and her counſaill, that the Duke was liberted to goe where he would. And ſo after he departed vnto his owne countrie, and peace was diſſimuled, with fained loue for a while.

The duke of Yorke enbatailed againſt the kyng on black heth.

The Duke of Somerſet promiſed to bee ſente to warde.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lii. Anno domini. M.cccc.liii.

Godfrey Feildyng. { Richarde Lee. Richarde Alley. } Anno.xxxi.

The.xxxi. yere.

IN this.xxxi. yere, the Kyng helde a ſolempne feaſt at Weſtminſter, vpō the twelue daie of Chriſtmas, where he created twoo Erles, the which were his brethren vppon the mothers ſide Quene Katherine, that after the death of kyng Henry the fift, was maried vnto a knight of Wales named Owain, the which begat vpon her theſe foreſaid two ſoonnes. Whereof that one this ſaid daie was created erle of Richmount, which was named ſir Edmonde, and the younger called ſir Iaſper, was creat the erle of Pēbroke, the whiche laſtly was created Duke of Bedforde, by our ſoueraine lorde Kyng Henry the ſeuenth, and ſo died.

And in Marche folowyng (as witneſſeth Gagwine) was the Towne of Herſlewe wonne by the Frenchemen. And ſone after the citee of Baions, was giuen vp by appoinctment, ſo that the ſouldiours ſhould leaue their armoure behinde theim: and for euery woman there beyng, was graunted an horſe to ride vpon, and to euery horſeman ten ſcutes, to paie for their coſtes, and to euery foote mā fiue, without more by theim to be taken. And this yere the kyng lay longe ſicke at Claringdowne, and was in great ieopardy of his life.

The birth of Prince Edward.

And in thende of this Maiors yere, and beginnyng of the. xxxii. yere of the kyng, that is to meane vpon the daie of the tranſlatiō of ſainct Edward, or the. xiii. daie of October, yͤ quene at Weſtminſter, was deliuered of a faire Prince. For the whiche, greate reioyſyng and gladnes, was made in ſondry places of Englande, and ſpecially within the citee of London, wherof the expreſſement of the circumſtaunce, would aſke a long leaſer to vtter. This Prince beyng with all honoure and reuerence, ſacred and Chriſtened, was named Edwarde, and grewe after to perfite and goodly perſonage, and laſtly, of Edward the fowerth was ſlain at Tewkeſburie field, as after to you ſhall be ſhewed, Whoſe noble mother, ſuſteined not a little diſclaunder and obloquie of the common people, ſaiyng, that he was not the naturall ſoonne of Kyng Henry, but chaunged in the Cradell, to her greate diſhonour and heuineſſe, whiche I ouer paſſe.

Cōſtantine the Noble, conquered of Turkes

This yere alſo, whiche was the yere of grace. M. cccc. liii. Mahumet then prince of Turkes, in the moneth of Juny, and. iiii. daie of theſaid moneth, being the. iii. yere of his Empire or reigne, after. L. daies of continuall aſſaute, by his innumerable multitude of Turkes to the citee of Conſtantin the noble, with exceadyng force and crueltie, made and exerciſed, wan and obtained the dominion and rule of the ſame, to the great hinderaunce and ſhame of all chriſtēdome, and enhaunſyng of the power and might of the ſaied Turkes. Of the exceadyng nomber of men, women, and children, that in that citee at that daie were ſlain, I will not ſpeake of, for the great diuerſitie that I haue ſeen of writers. Emong the whiche the Emperour named Paleologus, with many other nobles of the citee beyng taken on liue, were then beheaded, and many a prieſt and religious manne put vnto death by ſondrie cruell tourmentes. After whiche greate crueltie, with many other lōg to reherſe put in execution, a commaundement paſſed from theſaid Emperor of Turkes that all children beyng aboue the age of. vi. yeres, as well men as women kinde, ſhould bee ſtraight put vnto death, the whiche after ſome writers, exceded the nomber of. iiii. M. Here for tediouſneſſe &

lamentable proceſſe, whiche I might ſhewe in the rehearſall of the abhomination of the mooſte dampnable and accurſed Turkes, by theim dooen in Churches and Temples within the Citee, I ceaſe. For painfull it were to reade, and moare painfull and ſorowfull to heare, that the faithe of Chriſt ſhould in ſo vile maner be diſpiſed.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.liii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.liiii.

Ihon Norman Draper. { Ihon Walden. Thomas Cooke. } Anno. xxxii.

Thomas Cooke

Ihon Walden

The. xxxii. yere.

The firſte Maior that wẽt by water to weſtminſter, when he tooke his othe, the morowe of Simonde & Iudes daie

IN this. xxxii. yere Ihon Norman foreſaid, vpon the morowe of Simõ and Iudes daie, thaccuſtomed day when the newe Maior vſed yerely to ride, with greate pompe vnto weſtminſter, to take his charge this Maior firſte of all Maiors, brake that auncient and olde continued cuſtome, and was Rowed thither by water, for the whiche ỹ Watermen made of hym a roundell or ſong, to his greate praiſe, the whiche began: Rowe the bote Norman, rowe to thy lemmã, and ſo forth with a long proceſſe.

Ye haue in your remembraũce, how I before in the. xxx. yeare of this kyng, ſhewed to you of thappoinctmente taken, betwene the ſaied kyng, and the duke of Yorke at Brent Heth, whiche appoinctment, as before is ſaied, was ſone broken and ſet at naught. By reaſon whereof, greate enuie and diſcention grewe betwene the kyng and diuers of his Lordes, and moſte ſpecially betwene the quenes counſaill, & the duke of Yorke and his bloude. For all contrarie the kinges promiſſe, by meanes of the Quene, whiche then bare the cure and charge of the lande, the Duke of Somerſet was ſette at large, and made capitaine of Calais, and had as greate rule about the Kyng, as he before daies had. Wherewith not onely ſome of the nobles of the land grudged, but alſo the commons, whiche by his counſaill, and other then rulers, as the ſame wente, ſuſteined many greuous impoſicions and charges. This fire of rancour and enuie, by the ſpace of ſeuentene or eightene monethes, ſmokyng and brennyng vnder couert diſſimulacion, now at this date brake out in greate and hote flames, of open warre and wrath, inſomoche that the Duke of Yorke beeyng in the Marches of Wales, called to him the erles of Warwicke and of Saliſburie, with other many honourable knightes and eſquires, and gathered a ſtrong hoſte of people, and then in the moneth of Aprill, toke his iourney toward London the kyng then there beeyng, with a greate retinue of lordes. Whereof when the Quene and the Lordes were aduertiſed, that the duke was commyng with ſo greate power, anon thei caſt in their myndes, that it was to none of their profites. And for that, in all poſſivle haſt as thei might, thei gathethered by the authoritie of the kynges cõmiſſions, ſoche ſtrength as thei could haue, and entended to haue cõueighed the king Weſtward, and not to haue encountered the Duke of Yorke. And for the execution of this purpoſe, the kyng (accompaignied with hym, the Dukes of Somerſett, and of Buckingham, the Erles of Stafforde, and of Northumberlande, with the Lorde Clifforde, and other many noble men of ỷ realme) departed vpon the twentie daie of Maie from Weſtminſter, and ſo helde his iourney towarde ſainct Albones. Then the duke of Yorke hauyng knowledge of the kynges departyng from London, coaſted the countries, and came vnto the ende of ſainct Albones, vpon the twentie and three daie of Maie foreſaied, then beeyng Thurſdaie before Whitſondaie. Where, while meanes of treatie and peace, wer commoned vpon that one partie, the Earle of Warwicke with the Marche menne, entred the toune vpon that other ende, and fought egerlie againſt the kynges people, and ſo continued the fight a long ſeaſon. But in concluſion the victorie fell to the Duke of Yorke and his partie, in ſo moche that there was ſlain, the Duke of Somerſet, the Erle of Northumberlande, and the Lorde Clifforde, with many other honorable men, of knightes and Eſquiers, whoſe names were tedious to write. After whiche victorie thus obteined by the Duke, he with honour and reuerence vpon the morowe folowyng, cõueighed the king again to London, and there lodged hym in the Biſhop of Londons palais. And ſone therevpon was called a Parlament, and holden at Weſtminſter, by authoritie whereof, the duke of Yorke was made protectour of Englande, the Erle of Saliſburie Chauncelloure, and the Erle of Warwike, capitain of Calais. And all ſoche perſones as before wer in authoritie, and nere aboute the Kyng, were clerely amoued and put by, and the quene and her counſaill, that before dayes ruled all, vtterly ſette aparte, concernyng the rule of the Kyng and of the lande: which continued for a while, as after ſhall appere.

The duke of Yorke protectour of Englãd.

In this yere alſo (as affirmeth the Frenche Chronicle) this miſerie and vnkyndeneſſe, thus reignyng in Englande, the Lorde Talbot then beeyng in Normandie, and in defendyng of the kynges Gariſons, was beſette with Frenche menne, at a place named Caſtilion, and there ſtrongly aſſailed. Where after long and cruell fight, he with his ſoonne, and to the nomber of fowertie menne of name, and eight hundreth of other Engliſhe Souldiours, were miſerably ſlain, and many mo taken priſoners.

The lorde Talbot ſlaine.

Anno domini. M.cccc.liiii.

Anno domini, M.cccc.lv.

Stepan Forſter. } Jhon Felde.
Willyam Tailour. } Anno.xxxiii.

The.xxxiii. yere.

THis.xxxiii.yere of Henry the.vi, certain euill diſpoſed perſones, beeyng ſentuarie men win S. Martines the Graunde, iſſued out of theſaid place, and fraied with ſome Citezeins, and of them hurt and maimed, and that dooen reentred the ſanctuarie. Wherewith the commōs beyng amoued, with certain rulers of the citee, entred theſaid Sainctuarie by force, and pulled out thoccaſioners of theſaid fraie, and committed theim to priſon. Of this matter, by the Dane of ſ. Martines, and ſoche as fauoured hym, was a greuous complainte made vnto the kyng and his coũſaile, of the Maior and the Citezeins: For diſcharge whereof, the Recorder of the citee, with certain Aldermen to hym aſſigned, were ſent vnto the kyng, then liyng at the caſtle of Egle in Herfordſhire, where after the matter duely debated, before the kinges counſail, thei were with letter of commendation, returned vnto the Maior willyng hym to kepe theſaied perſones ſauely, till the kynges commyng to London, at whiche ſeaſon, he entended to haue the matter more clerely examined.

Afraie in ſ. Martins le graund.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.lv. Anno dñi. M.cccc.lvi.
Grocer. Jhon Yonge.
William Marowe. Anno.xxxiiii.
Thomas Oulgraue.

The xxx. ⁊ iiii. yere.

IN this yere ⁊ monethe of Maie, an Italians ſeruaunte walked thorowe chepe, with a dagger hanging at his girdell. Whereof a Mercers ſeruaunte, that before tyme had been in Italie, and there chalenged or puniſhed for wearing of a like weapon, chalenged the ſtraunger, and queſtioned with him how he was ſo bold to beare ſoche a warly weapon, conſideryng he was a ſtraunger, and out of his natiue countrie: ⁊ alſo knowing that in his coũtrie, no ſtraunger ſhould be ſuffered to beare any like weapon. To which queſtion, ſoche anſwere was made by the Italian, that the Mercer tooke his dagger from hym, and brake it vpon his head. The ſtraũger thus beeyng delte with, complained hym vnto the Maior, the whiche vpon the morowe folowyng, kepyng a court at the Guildhall, ſent for the yong manne, and after his anſwere made vnto this complainte, by agrement of a ful courte of Aldermen, ſent the ſaied Mercer vnto priſon. And after this Courte was finiſhed, for rumoure that he heard of, to bee emong the ſeruauntes of the Mercers, he with the twoo Sheriffes tooke his waie homewarde thorowe Chepe; but when he was nere vnto the ende of ſainct Laurence Lane towarde Chepe, he was mette with ſoche a multitude of Mercers ſeruaũtes and other, that he could not paſſe, for ought that he might doe or ſpeake, till he had contrary his will and minde, deliuered the yong man, that be-

Afraie in Chepe.

fore was cōmited by hym and his brethren to warde, and ſo was he forthwith deliuered. This thus doen, rumour ſprang therof lightly aboute the toune, in ſo moche that emōg many citezeins, it was conſtrued that this was dooen by thaſſent of the maſters and houſeholders of the Mercerie, to the entent to haue the ſtraungers puniſhed, for ſo moche as thei tooke from them greate liuyng, by reaſon of their vtteraunce of clothe of golde and ſilkes, to the eſtates and Lordes of the realme. But how ſo it was vnto men of honeſtie, to vacabōdes and other that looked for pilfrie and rifflyng, it was a greate occaſiō and ſtiring: and that appered well, for ẏ ſame afternoone, ſodainly was aſſembled a greate multitude of raſcall and poore people of the citee, whiche without head or guide, ranne vnto certain Italiās places, and ſpecially vnto the Florētines, Lukeſſes, and Venicians, and tooke and ſpoiled what thei in their places might finde, & did great hurt in ſondrie places, but moſte in fower houſes, ſtādyng in Bredſtrete warde: whereof three ſtoode in S. Bartholomewes Pariſhe the little, and one in S. Benettes Pariſhe, and moch more would haue doen, had not been the ſpedie aide of the Maior and Aldermen, and worſhipfull commoners of the citee, whiche with all diligence reſiſted them, and of them tooke diuers that robbed, and ſent theim to Newgate: and finally, not without ſheddyng of bloude, and maimyng of diuers Citezeins, the rumoure and people were appeaſed.

When the young man, beginner of all this buſineſſe, ſawe this inconuenience enſue of his wantonneſſe, were it by counſaile or otherwiſe, fearyng the ſequele of the matter, yode ſtreighte vnto Weſtminſter, and there taried as a Sanctuarie manne, till all the matter were eanded. It was not longe after or the Duke of Buckyngham, with Iuſtices and other noble men, were ſente doune from the kyng into the citee, and charged the Maior by vertue of a cōmiſſion, that an enquirie ſhould bee made of this riote. And ſo by vertue of theſaid commiſſion, called an Oyer determiner, a daie was kept at Guide hall, vpon the daie of the moneth of , where theſaied daie ſat for Iudges, the Maior as the kinges liutenaunt, the Duke of Buckyngā vpō the right hande, the chief Iuſtice vpon the left hand, with many other menne of name, which I paſſe ouer. While the Maior and the ſaied Lordes were callyng of the panels of the enqueſtes at the Guildhall, the other commoners of the Citee, not beeyng contente with thorder, many of thē ſecretly armed theim in their houſes, and entended as the common fame after went, to haue rong Bow bell, and ſo to haue reiſed and gathred the cōminaltie of the citee, and by force to haue deliuered ſoche perſones, as before for the robberie, wer committed to ward. But this matter was ſo diſcretly handeled by the counſaill, & labour of ſome diſcrete commoners, whiche appeaſed their neighbours in ſoche wiſe, that all this fire haſte was quenched, and came to none effect ſauyng the woorde was brought vnto the duke of Buckyngham, yͭ the comminaltie of the cytie were in herneſſe, and if he taryed longe ther, he with thother lordes ſhould be in great ieopardy. With which vntrewe tidinges he being fered, haſtely tooke leaue of the maior, and ſo departed vnto his lodging and ſo ceaſed the enquery for that daye. Vppon the morowe for ſo moche as the Maior had vnderſtanding of the ſecrete murmour, he commaũded the common counſail with al wardeins of feliſhippes to appere vpon the morow: at Guildhall Where by the recorder in the kinges name, & the Maior as his lyeutenaunte was commaunded to eueriche wardeins, that in that after noone folowing eyther of theim ſhoulde aſſemble his whole felyſhip at their propre halles, and there to geue euery citezen ſtreyght commaundement, that euerie man ſee and entende to ſee the kinge his peace with in the citie. And if they find any parſon that maketh any reaſoninge, wherby they might conceiue or eſpie that he fauoured anye gathering of companyes, or the deliuery of ſuche perſonnes, as were in warde, that the ſaide wardeyns ſhould with faire wordes exhort him to the beſt, and without ſigne or token therof ſhewing, ſecretly to bringe the name or names of him to theim vnto the maior. By meane of whiche policy and good order, the citezens were brought in ſuch a quietnes, that after that day the forſaid enquery was duely purſued, and .iii. perſons for the ſaid riot put in execution & hanged at tiborne. Whereof .ii. after ſome writers, were ſeintwary men of ſaint Martins, and the third was a ſhipman or boteman.

The quene with certaine lordes which fauoured hir party, diſdayned ſore the rule which the duke of Yorke bare and other, and ſpecially for yͭ that theſaid duke bare the name of protector, whiche argued that the kyng was inſufficient to gouerne the realme, which as ſhe thought was a greate diſhonour to the kinge and to all the realme: Wherfore ſhe made ſuch meanes, and wan by hir polecy ſuch frendſhip of diuers of the lordes, bothe ſpirituall and temporall, that ſhe cauſed the duke of Yorke to be diſcharged of his protectourſhip, and the erle of Saliſbury of his chaũcellourſhip, whiche was cauſe of new warre as after ſhall appere.

The Duke of Yorke diſcharged of his Protectorſhip.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lvi. Anno domini. M.cccc.lvii.

Grocer. Thomas Canynges.	Jhon Stewarde. Rauffe Verney.	Anno xxxv.

The .xxxv. yere.

In this yeere and beginninge of the ſame the queene ſuſpecting the cytie of London, & dimed it to be more fauourable vnto the duke of Yorkes partye then hers, cauſed the king to remoue from London vnto Couetrey, and there held him a longe ſeaſon. In whiche time the duke of Yorke was ſent for thither by priuey ſeale, with alſo the erle of Saliſbury and the earle Warwike, wher by couine of the quene thei were all thre in greate daunger. Howbeit by moniſhment of their frendes thei eſcaped. And ſoone after the ſaid duke or earle went into the North, and the erle of Warwike with a goodly companye ſailed vnto Calays. And ſhortly after were taken at Erith within twelfe myles of London foure wonderfull fiſhes, whereof one was called Mores Maryne, the ſecond a Sword fiſhe, and the other two were whales, which after ſome expoſitoures were pronoſticaciõs of warre and trouble to enſue ſoone after. In this yere alſo was a greate fraie in yͤ North countrey, betwene the lord Egremonde and the ſonnes of the erle of Saliſbury, and dyuers menne maimed and ſlaine betwene them. But in the ende the lorde Egremond was taken, and how it was by the dome of the king his counſaile or otherwiſe, the ſaide lorde Egremonde was founden in ſuch default, that finally he was condempned in great ſummes of money, to be payed vnto the ſaid erle of Saliſbury: For lacke of payment wherof, or of putting ſuerty for the ſame, the ſaid lorde Egremonde was committed to Newgate. Where after he had contynued a certaine of time, he brake the priſon and eſcaped with three other priſoners, to yͤ great charge of the ſheriffes.

A fraye in the North.

It was not long after that diſſencion and vnkindneſſe fell betwene the yong duke of Somerſet and ſir Jhon Neuill ſonne vnto the erle of Saliſbury, beyng then both lodged within the citie. Whereof the maior beynge warned, ordeyned ſuche watches and prouiſions, that if they had any thing ſtyred, he was able to haue put them in ward, till he had knowen the Kynges farther pleaſure. Whereof the frendes of both parties beinge ware, laboured ſuche meanes that they agreed theym for that time.

The ſciẽce of printing firſt begon.

An earthe quake.

In this yere alſo as teſtifie the Engliſhe chronycle and alſo the Frenche, a nauie or flote of Frẽch menne landed at Sandewiche and ſpoiled and robbed the towne and excerciſed ther great cruelty. Of whiche flote was capitaine a Frenche knight named after the French boke, ſir Guilliam de Pomiers. And this yere after the opinion of diuers writers, began in a citye of Almaygne named Magounce, the ſcience of emprinting of bokes, whiche ſenne that time hath had wonderfull encreaſe, as experience at that daye proueth. In this yere alſo the priſoners of Newgate by negligence of their kepers brake out of their wardes, & tooke the ledes of the towre, & it defended a long while againſt the ſheriffes and all their officers, in ſo muche that they were forced to call more ayde of the cytezens of the citie, by whoſe aide thei laſtly ſubdued theim, and put the ſaide priſoners in more ſtreyghter keping. Cronica cronicarum ſaieth yͤ aboute this tyme was ſuche an erthquake in the prouince of Naples, that by force thereof there were periſhed ouer fortye thouſande chriſten ſoules. Of the abouesayde ſpoylynge of Sandewiche

Sandwich ſpoiled.

witch ſpeaketh Policronicon, and ſaith that ſir Piers de Breſy seneſhall of Normandy, with the capitaine of Depe and many other capitains of Fraunce, came with a greate and ſtrong nauy into the Downes by night, and vpon the morow came certain of theim vnto Sandwiche and there ſpoyled and robbed the towne, and toke with theim great prayes and many rich priſoners, whereby or by whiche ſaiyng appereth ſome dyuerſitie betwene the Engliſh writers and the Frenche.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lvii. Anno domini. M.cccc.lviii.

Mercer.
Godfrey Boleyne. { Willyam Edwarde.
Thomas Reyner. } Anno. xxxvi.

The xxxvi. yere.

IN this yeere and the .iii. day of December, Reynolde Pecok then being biſhop of Chicheſter, at Lambith by ẏ archbiſhop & by a Cōt of diuines was abiured for an heretike, and his bokes after brent at Paules croſſe, and himſelfe kept in mewe euer while he lyued after. And ſone after, for to appeaſe this rancoure and malyce beetwene the quene and the other lordes, a day of meting was appoincted by the king at London, whether the duke of Yorke wyth the other lordes were commaunded to come by a daye. In obeiynge of the whiche commaundemente, the duke of Yorke came vnto London, the twentie and ſixe day of January and was lodged at Baynardes caſtel. And before him the fiftenth day of January came the earle of Saliſbury to London, and was lodged at his place called the Erber. And ſoone after came vnto London the dukes of Somerſet and of Exeter, and were lodged both without temple Barre. And in likewiſe the erle of Northumberland, the lord Egremond, and the yong lorde Clyfforde came vnto the city, and were lodged in the ſuburbes of the ſame. And the fourtene daye of February came the erle of Warwike from Calais with a greate hande of men all araied in red iakettes with white ragged ſtaues vppon theim, and was lodged at the graye freres. And laſtlye, that is to ſaye the ſeuentin daye of Marche, the kyng and the quene with a greate retinew came vnto London, and were lodged in the biſhop of Londons palais. And ye ſhall vnderſtande that with theſe foreſayde lordes came greate companies of men, in ſo muche that ſome had ſixe hundred, ſome fyue hundred and the leaſt foure hundred. Wherfore the maire, for ſo longe as the kinge and the lordes laye thus in the citie, had daily in harneſſe .v. thouſande cetizynnes, and rode dayly aboute the citye and ſuburbes of the ſame, to ſee the kinges peace were kepte.

And nightly prouided for two thouſande menne in harneſſe, to geue attendaunce vpon three Aldermē, and thei to kepe the night watch till ſeuen of the clocke vpon the morow, til the day watch were aſſembled. By reaſon whereof good order and rule was kepte, and no man ſo hardye ones to attempte the brekinge of the kinge his peace. Duringe this watch, a great counſaile was holden by the king and his lordes.

A fraye in Fleteſtrete.

By reaſon whereof, a diſſimuled vnitye and concorde betwene theim was concluded. In token and for ioy whereof, the king, the quene, and all the ſaid lordes, vpon our Lady day annunciacion in lent at Paules went ſolemplye in proceſſion, and ſoone after euery lord departed where his pleaſure was. And in the moneth of folowyng, was a greate fraye in Fleteſtrete, betwene the men of courte and the inhabitauntes of theſaied ſtreate, in whiche fraye a gentilman beeyng the quenes attourney, was ſlain.

Upon the thurſday in whitſonweke, the duke of Somerſet with Antony Riuers and other foure, kepte Juſtes of peace before the queene within the towre of London, againſt three eſquiers of the queenes, and in like maner, at Grenewich the Sondaye folowyng. And vpon Trinitie Sonday or the Mondaye folowyng, certaine Shippes apperteinyng vnto the Earle of Warwike mette with a floote of Spaniardes, and after longe and cruell fight, toke ſixe of theim laden with iron and other marchaundiſe, and drowned and chaſed to the number of twenty and ſixe, not without ſhedding of bold on bothe parties, for of the Engliſhmen were ſlaine an hundreth and many mo wounded and ſore hurt.

In this yeere after ſome auctours a marchaunt of Bryſtowe named Sturmin, which with his ſhip had trauailde in diuers parties of Leuant and other parties of the Eaſt, for ſo much as yͤ ſame ran vpon him that he had gotten grene peper and other ſpecis to haue ſet and ſowen in Englande, as the ſame wente, therfore the Januayes wayted hym vppon the ſea, and ſpoiled his ſhippe and other.

But this is full lyke to bee vntrewe that the Januayes ſhould ſpoile him for any ſuche cauſe, for there is no nacion in Englande that deleth ſo litle with ſpices. But were it for this cauſe or other, touth it is yͤ by that nacion an offēce was doen, for the which all the marchauntes Januayes, in London were areſted and committed to the flete, till thei hadde foūden ſufficient ſuerty to anſwere to the premiſſes. And finallye for the harmes whiche their nacion had dooen to the ſaide Sturmyn and to this realme, ſixe thouſand marke was ſette to their paine to paye: But howe it was payed no mencion I finde.

In this yere alſo was made an ordinaunce by auctorytie of the king and his counſaile, for the ordring of the ſeintwary men within ſainte Martins the graunde: wherof the articles are at length ſet out in the boke of. K. within the chaumbre of Guild hall in the leefe twoo hundreth nientye and nien, wherof the execucion of obſeruinge were neceſſary to bee vſed, but more pitie it is, fewe pointes of it been exerciſed.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lviii.

Draper.
Thomas Scotte.

Rauffe Joſſelin.
Richarde Nedeham.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lix.

Anno xxxvii.

The xxxvii. yere.

A fray.

This yere aboute the feaſte of Candelmaſſe, the foreſaide dyſſimulyng loueday hanging by a ſmale threde, betwene the forenamed lordes, expreſſed in the precedinge yere, the king and many lordes then being at Weſtminſter, a fray happened to fall betwene a ſeruaunt of the kinges and a ſeruaunt of the erles of Warwike, the whiche hurt the king his ſeruaunt and after eſcaped. Wherefore the kings other meniall ſeruauntes ſeynge they might not bee auenged vppon the party that thus had hurt their felowe, as the ſaid erle of Warwike was comming from the counſaile and was going toward his barge the king his ſeruauntes came vnwarely vpõ him, ſo rabbiſhly that the cookes with their ſpittes and other officers with other wepens came running as mad men, entending to haue ſlaine him, ſo that he eſcaped with greate daunger and toke his barge, and ſo in all haſte rowed to London, not without greate maymes and hurtes receiued by manye of his ſeruauntes. For this the old rancour and malice which neuer was clerely cured anon beganne to breke out, in ſo much that the queenes counſaile would haue had the ſaid erle areſted and committed vnto ẏ towre: Wherfore he ſhortly after departed toward Warwike, and by policie purchaſed ſoone after a commiſſion of the king and ſo yode or ſailed vnto Calais. Then encreaſed this old malice more and more in ſo much that where the queene and hir counſaile ſawe that they mighte not bee auenged vpon the erle that ſo vnto Calais was departed, thẽ thei maligned againſt his father the earle of Saliſbury, and imagened howe he might bee brought out of life. And in proceſſe of time after, as he was ridinge toward Saliſbury, or after ſome from his lodging toward London the lorde Audeley with a ſtronge companie was aſſigned to meete with him, and as priſoner to bring him vnto London, whereof the ſaid erle beyng warned, gathered vnto him the mo men, and keping his iourney, mette with the ſaide lorde Audeley at a place called Blore heth where bothe companies ran together and had there a ſtronge bikering. Wherof in the ende the earle was victour, and ſlewe there the lorde Audelei and manye of his retinewe. At this ſkirmiſh were the twoo ſonnes of the ſaide earle ſore wounded, named ſir Thomas and ſir Jhon, the whiche ſhortlye after as they were goynge homeward, were by ſome of the queenes partie taken, and as priſoners ſent vnto Cheſter.

When this was knowen vnto the duke of Yorke and to the other lordes of hys partye, they knewe and vnderſtode that if thei prouided not ſhortly for remedye for themſelf, thei ſhould all be deſtroied. And for that, they by one aſſent gathered to them a ſtrong hoſte of men, as of Marchemen & other, and in the moneth of Octobre the which was in yͤ beginning of the .xxxviii. yere of the reigne of king Henry, and the later ende of this Maires yere, they drewe them toward the king, to the entent to remoue from him ſuch perſons as thei thoughte were enemies vnto the common weale of Englande. But the quene and hir counſaile hering of the entent and ſtrength of theſe lordes, cauſed the king in haſt to ſend forth commiſſions to gather the people, ſo that in ſhorte while, the kynge was ſtrongly accompainyed, and ſo ſped him vppon his iourney towarde the duke of Yorke and his company: Wherof hering the ſaid duke, then beyng with his people nere vnto the towne of Ludlowe, pight ther a ſure and ſtrong felde that none of his fooes might vpon any parte enter. Where he ſo liynge, came to him from Calais the erle of Warwike with a ſtrong band of men, emonge the whiche was Andrew Trollop and many other of the beſt ſouldiours of Calais. The duke thus kepinge his feelde vppon that one partie, and the kinge with his people vppon that other, vpon the night precedinge the daye that bothe hooſtes ſhould haue mette, the forenamed Andrewe Trollop with all the chief ſouldiours of Calais, ſecretly departed from the dukes hoſte, and went vnto the kinges where thei were ioyuoſly receiued. When this thing to the duke and the other lordes was aſcerteined, thei were therwith ſore diſmaied, and ſpecially for the ſaid lordes had to the ſaid Andrew ſhewed the whole of their ententes, which then thei knewe well ſhould bee clerely diſcouered vnto their enemies. Wherfore after counſaile for a remedye taken thei concluded to flee, and to leaue the felde ſtanding as thei had been preſent and ſtil abiding. And ſo incontynentlye the ſaide duke with his twoo ſonnes and a fewe other perſons fled towarde Wales, and from thẽs paſſed ſauely into Irelande.

The flyng of the duk of York in to Ireland

And the erles of Saliſbury, of Marche, and of Warwike, and other, with a ſecrete companie alſo departed and toke the waye into Deuonſhire, where a Squier named Jhon Dinham (which after was a Lord and high treaſourer of Englande, and ſo laſtly in Henry the .vii. dayes and .xvi. yere of his raigne died) bought a ſhip for a .C. and .x. markes or a leuẽ ſcore nobles: and in the ſame ſhippe the ſaid lordes went, and ſo ſailed into Garneſey. And when they had a ſeaſon there ſoiourned and refreſhed them ſelfe, they departed thens, as in the beginning of the nexte Maires yere ſhalbe clerely ſhewed. Upon the morowe when al this couine was knowen to the king and the lordes, vpon his partie, there was ſendinge and running with all ſpede toward euery coſt to take theſe lordes, but none might be founde. And forthwith the king rode vnto Ludlowe, and diſpoiled the town and caſtel, and ſente the Ducheſſe of Yorke with her children vnto the Ducheſſe of Buckingham her ſiſter, where ſhe reſted long tyme after.

Willyam Hulin Fiſhemonger. { Jhon Plummer. Jhon Stocker. } Anno.xxxviii.

The.xxx.& viii.yere.

This yere, that is to meane, vpon the Fridaie next enſuyng Alhalowē day after theſaid erles of Saliſburie, of Marche and of Warwike, had as before is ſaied, refreſhed theim in the Iſle of Gerneſey, thei vpon the Fridaie foreſaied, landed at Calais, and there were at a poſterne by their frendes, ioiouſly receiued. Then anon vpon this, theſe foreſaied Lordes were proclaimed rebelles and traitors, and the yong Duke of Somerſet was made capitain of Calais. Wherefore in all haſt he made purueighaunce, and ſailed thither, to take poſſeſſion of the toune: but he failed of his purpoſe, for the foreſaied Erles there beyng, kepte ſo the Towne, that there he might haue no rule, notwithſtandyng that, he ſhewed the kynges Letters Patentes, with many other ſtreight commaundemētes of the king. For the whiche cauſe the ſaied Duke yode vnto Guines, and there helde hym for a ſeaſon. And anon as theſaid duke was landed, ſome of the ſhipmen, whiche had brought hym thither, for good will that thei owed vnto the Erle of Warwike, conueighed their ſhippes ſtreight into Calais Hauen, and brought with theim certaine perſones, named Geuin Fenbill, Jhon Felowe, Kalles, and Purſer, whiche wer enemies vnto theſaied Erle of Warwike, the whiche were preſented vnto the Lordes, and ſone after within the ſaied Towne of Calais, thei were behedded.

This rumour thus continewyng, daily came vnto theſe lordes greate ſuccoure out of Englande. And vppon that other partie, the Duke as before is ſaied, liyng in the caſtell of Guines, gatte vnto hym aide and ſtrength of ſouldiors, and made out and ſkirmiſhed with theim of Calais, many and ſondrie tymes. In whiche aſſaultes, many men wer ſlain and hurt vpō both parties, but moſte weaked the Dukes partie. For all bee that the Lordes loſte many men, yet thei daily came ſo thicke to thē out of diuers partes of England, that their loſſe was not eſpied, ſo that thei wanted no men, but money to maintein their daily charges. For remedy whereof thei ſhifted with the Staple of Calais for xviii.M. pounde, whiche ſommes of money, when thei had receiued, theſaid lordes of one aſſent, made ouer the forenamed maſter Jhon Dinham, with a ſtrong companie and ſente hym vnto Sandwiche, to winne the kynges Nauie, then there liyng, and other thinges for their nedes neceſſarie. The which ſped hym in ſoch wiſe, that he toke the Lorde Riuers in his bed, and wan the toune, and toke the lorde Scales, ſonne vnto theſaied lorde Riuers, with other riche priſes, and after toke of the kynges Nauie what ſhippes them liked, and after retourned vnto Calais, not

ſkirmiſhes betwene yͤ erles of Saliſburie, of Marche, & of Warwike of the one partie, liynge in yͤ towne of Calais, & the duke of Somerſett on thother part liyng in the caſtel of Guines.

A ſhifte made with the Staple of Calais.

Sandwich wonne and the kynges nauie for yͤ moſte and beſte parte taken & caried awaie without conſent and agrement of many of the Mariners, whiche owed their ſinguler fauours vnto therle of Warwike. In this iourney was the ſaied Jhon Dinham ſore hurt, yͭ he was maimed vpon the leggue, & halted while he liued after. Thã after this iourny thus achiued, the ſaied lordes victualled and manned the ſaied ſhippes, and ſent with them, as chief capitaine, the Erle of Warwike into Ireland, to ſpeake with the duke of Yorke, and to haue his Counſail for matters concernyng their charge, as reentre into this lande and other. Where, when he had happely ſped his nedes, he retourned toward Calais, bryngyng wᵗ hym his mother, the Counteſſe of Saliſburie, & alſo kept his courſe till he came into the Weſt Countrie. where at that tyme was the Duke of Exeter as Admirall of the ſea, with a competent nomber of ſhippes well mãned, in ſo moche that therle of Warwike, prouided to haue giuẽ battail, vnto theſaid Duke, if he had made any countenaũce toward hym. But the duke had ſoche murmure and ſpeache emong his owne cõpanie, whiche ſounded vnto therle of Warwikes fauoure, that he thought it was more vnto his profit, to ſuffer him to paſſe, then to fight with him.

But were it for that cauſe, or for other, whiche the cõmon fame runneth vpon, whiche were long to write, certaine and truth it is, that theſaied Erle paſſed without fight, & came in ſauete to Calais.

In this paſtyme, a Parlament or greate counſaill was holden at Couentrie; by auctoritie wherof the duke of Yorke, and all thother foreſaied lordes, with mañy other were attainted, and their landes and gooddes ſeaſed to the kynges vſe. And for the more ſurer defẽce, that thei ſhould not efte lande in Kent, prouiſion was made, to defende the hauens and portes vpõ the ſeas ſide. And at Sandwiche was ordeined a newe ſtrength, wᵗ a capitaine, named ſir Simonde Mountford. And ouer this prouiſion was ordeined, that no Marchaunte, paſſyng into the coaſtes of Flaunders, ſhould paſſe or goe by Calais, for feare yͭ any ſhould come to the aide of the ſaied Lordes. But this prouiſion notwithſtandyng, comforte to theim was ſent daily out of Englande.

Then theſe lordes hearyng of all this prouiſion, made vpon the ſeas ſide to withſtande their landyng, ſent out an other companie vnto Sandwiche, the which there ſkirmiſhed with the ſaied ſir Simonde Mountforde, and in thend tooke hym, and brought hym to Riſe bãke, and there ſmote of his head. The foreſaied Lordes conſideryng the ſtrength, whiche thei had with thẽ, and manifolde frendes and hartes, which thei had in ſondrie places of Englande, condiſcended for to Saile into Englande, and ſo to brynge aboute their entent and purpoſe. whiche was as the common fame wente, to put a parte from the Kyng, all ſoche perſones as were enemies to the cõmon weale of this lande. And this to bryng aboute, after thei had ſet the Towne of Calais in an order and ſure kepyng, thei tooke ſhippyng, and ſo ſailed into England, and landed at Douer, & from thens helde on their iourney

Sandwich again aſſailed, and the capitaine thereof taken & headded at Riſe Banke before Calais

The landing of the Lordes at Douer.

through Kēt, ſo that thei came to London the ſeconde daie of July.

And after thei had there refreſhed theim and their people, thei departed thens, and ſped them toward the kyng, which at the ſame time of their landing, was at Couentrie, and there gathered his people, and ſo came vnto Northhāpton, where he pight his felde. Whereof the ſaied Lordes beyng enformed, ſped them thitherward ſo that vpō the nineth daie of July, both hoſtes there met, & fought a cruell battaill: But after longe fight, the victorie fell vnto therle of Saliſburie, and the other lordes vpon his partie, and the kynges hoſte was ſparkled and chaſed, and many of his noble menne ſlain. Emong the whiche was the Duke of Buckyngham, the Erle of Shrowesburie, the Vicounte Beaumounde, the Lorde Egremond, with many other knightes and Eſquiers, and the kyng takē in the fielde. After whiche victory thus by the Lordes obteined, thei in goodly haſt after, retourned vnto London, and brought with thē the kyng, kepyng his eſtate, and lodged hym in the biſhop of Londōs palais. And after ſpedy knowledge ſent of all the premiſſes, vnto the duke of Yorke yet beyng in in Irelande, a Parlament in the name of the king, was then called and holden at Weſtminſter: Duryng whiche Parlamēt, the duke of Yorke came vnto weſtminſter vpō the Fridaie before ſainct Edwardes daie, or the tenth daie of October, and lodged hym in the kynges Palais. Whereof anon aroſe a noyſe through ẏ citee, that kyng Hēry ſhould be depoſed and the duke of Yorke ſhould be kyng.

Northampton fielde.

Victorie of the Lordes ouer ẏ kinges hooſte.

The kyng takē by the Lordes.

Vppon this Parlamente thus continuyng, the Duke came one daie into the parlament chamber, and there boldly, beyng the Lordes preſent, ſet hym doune in the kinges ſeate, and ſo there ſitting, made a pretence and claime vnto the croune, affirmyng it to bee his rightfull enheritaunce: and had there certain bolde wordes, in iuſtifiyng of the ſame, wherewithal the Lordes preſente were greatly diſmaied: for this, greate and many opinions were moued emong the Lordes. Howbeit as well diuers of his frendes as other, were of the mynd, that he ſhould not be admitted for king, duryng the life of Kynge Henry. For appeaſyng whereof, many greate counſailes were kepte, as well at the Blacke Freres, as at weſtminſter.

The boldneſſe of the Duke of Yorke.

In all whiche tyme and ſeaſon the Quene, with ſoche Lordes as were of her affinitie, helde them in the North coūtrie, and aſſembled to them greate ſtrēgth in the kinges name, to the eande to ſubdue (as ſhe ſaied) the kynges rebelles and enemies.

Thus continuing this vnkindneſſe, betwene the Kyng and the Duke, albeit that at that ſeaſon, bothe the kyng and he were bothe lodged within the palais of Weſtminſter, yet would he not for praier, nor yet for inſtaunce, ones viſite the kyng, nor ſee hym, til that the counſaill wer concluded vpon ſome finall ende, concernyng this greate matter, the whiche did continewe the full terme of this Maiors yere.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lx. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxi.

Richard Lee Grocer. { Richard Flemyng. / Jhon Lambarde. } Anno.xxxix.

The.xxxix yere.

This yere, whiche was in the beginnyng of the.xxxix. yere of king Henries reigne, that is to meane, vpon the euen of all ſainctes, or the laſt daie of October, it was condiſcended by the Lordes ſpirituall and temporall, and by the whole auctoritie of theſaied Parlamente, that kyng Henry ſhould continue and reigne as Kyng, duryng his naturall life, and after his death, his ſoonne prince Edward, to bee ſet a parte, and the duke of Yorke and his heires to bee kynges: and incontinently the duke to bee admitted as protectour, and regent of the land. And if at any tyme after, the kyng of his owne free wil and mynd, wer diſpoſed to reſigne and giue vp the rule of the lande, that then he ſhould reſigne vnto the Duke, if he then liued, and to none other, and to his heires after his daies, with many other matters and concluſions, whiche were tedious to write: all whiche concluſions, as then by mannes wit might be aſſured, for the performaunce of them, when time required parfited, the king with the duke, and many other lordes thã there preſent, came that night to Paules, ⁊ there hard Euẽſong, ⁊ on the morowe, came thither againe to Maſſe, where the kyng yode in proceſſion Crouned, with greate roialte, and ſo laie ſtill in yͤ Biſhoppes palais, a ſeaſon after.

Howe it was agreed yͤ prince Edward yͤ ſoonne of kyng Hẽry ſhould bee ſet a ſide, ⁊ the duke of Yorke to enherite yͤ croune and his heires after hym.

And vpon the Saterdaie folowyng, beeyng the.ix. daie of Nouember, the Duke was Proclaimed through the citee, heire apparaunt to the croune of Englande, and all his progenie after hym. Then for aſmoche as quene Margaret, accompanied with Prince Edward her ſonne, the Dukes of Somerſet, and of Exceter, and diuers other lordes, helde her in the North, as aboue is ſaied, ⁊ would not come at the kynges ſendyng for, therefore it was agreed by the Lordes, then at London preſent, that the Duke of Yorke ſhould take with hym the Erle of Saliſburie, with a certaine people, to fetche in theſaid quene and lordes aboue ſaied. The whiche duke and Erle departed from London with their people, vpon the ſecond daie of December, ⁊ ſped them Northwarde. Whereof the Quene with her Lordes beyng ware, and hauing with them a greate ſtrength of Northren menne, met with the Duke of Yorke vpon the.xxx. daie of December, nere vnto a Towne in the North called Wakelfielde, where betwene them was foughten a ſharpe fight. In the whiche the duke of Yorke was ſlain, with his ſonne called erle of Rutlande, and ſir Thomas Neuil, ſonne vnto the Erle of Saliſburie: with many other, and the Erle of Saliſburie was there taken on liue, with diuers other.

The Duke of Yorke proclaimed heire of apparaunt to the croune of Englãd

The fighte at Wakelfielde.

The Duke of Yorke ſlaine.

When the lordes vpon the quenes partie, had gotten this victorie, anon thei did ſend their priſoners vnto Pountfreit, the which wer after there beheaded, that is to meane, the erle of Saliſburie, a manne of London named Jhon Harowe, and an other capitaine named Hāſon, whoſe heades wer ſent vnto Yorke, and there ſet vpō the gates. And whē the quene had obteined this victorie, ſhe wͭ her retinue drewe towarde London, where at that tyme, duryng this troublous ſeaſō, great watches wer kepte daily & alſo nightly, and diuers opinions were emong the citezens. For the maior and many of the chief commoners helde vpon the quenes partie, but the Commonaltie was with the Duke of Yorke, and his affinitie.

When tidynges were brought vnto the citee, of the commyng of the quene, with ſo greate an hoſte of Northren menne, anon ſoche as wer of the cōtrary party, brought vp a noice through the citee, that ſhe brought thoſe Northren men, to thentent to rifle and ſpoyle the citee, where through ſhe was encreaſed of enemies. But what ſo her entent was, ſhe with her people helde on her waie, till ſhe came to ſainct Albones.

In the whiche meane time the Erle of Warwike, and the Duke of Northfolk, whiche by the duke of Yorke were aſſigned to giue attendaunce vpon the kyng, by conſente of the Kyng, gathered vnto theim ſtrength of knightes, and mette with the Quenes hooſte at Sainct Albons foreſaied, where betwene them a ſtrong fight was foughten, vpon Shroue Tuiſday in the mornyng: at the whiche the Duke of Northfolke and the ſaid Erle in the ende were chaſed, and kyng Henry taken efte vpon the field, and brought vnto the quene. And theſame after Noone, after ſome writers, he made his ſoonne prince Edward knight, which thē was of the age of .viii. yeres, with other to the nōber of .xxx. perſons.

The battaill at S. Albons.

The kyng taken.

When quene Margarete was thus commē again to her aboue, anon ſhe ſente vnto the Maior of London, willyng and commaundyng hym in the Kynges name, that he ſhould in all ſpedy wiſe, ſende to Sainct Albons, certaine cartes with Lentin ſtuffe, for the victuallyng of her hoſte. Whiche commaundement the Maior obeyed, & with great diligence made prouiſion for theſaied victual, and ſent it in Cartes toward Creplegate, for to haue paſſed to ẏ quene Where, when it was commen, the commōs many there beyng, whiche had heard other tidynges of the Erle of Marche, as after ſhall be ſhewed, of one mynd withſtode the paſſage of theſaied cartes, and ſaid it was not behouefull to fede their enemies, whiche entended the robbyng of the citee. And notwithſtandyng that the Maior wͭ his brethren, exhorted the people in their beſte maner, ſhewyng to thē many great daungers, which was like to enſue to the Citee, if theſaied victuall went not forth, yet might he not tourne them frō their obſtinate erroure: but for a concluſion, was faine to appoinct the Recorder, and with him a certain of Aldermen, to ride vnto the kynges counſaill vnto Barnet, & to make requeſt vnto theim, that the Northren menne might be retourned home, for feare of rob-

The obſtinacy of tho commons.

byng of the Citee, and ouer this, other ſecrete friendes were made vnto the Quenes grace, to bee good and gracious vnto the Citee. Duryng whiche treatie, diuers Citezeins auoyded the citee and lande. Emong the whiche, Philippe Malpas, whiche as before is ſhewed in the twentie and eight yere of this kyng, was robbed of Jacke Cade, whiche Malpas and other, was mette vppon the Sea with a Frenche manne, named Columpne, and of hym taken priſoner, and after paied fower thouſande Markes for his raunſome.

The euill chaunce of Philippe Malpas.

Thus paſſyng the tyme, the tidynges, whiche before was ſecret, now were blowen abrode, and openly was tolde, that the Earles of Marche, and of Warwike, wer met at Cottiſwolde, and had gathered vnto theim great ſtrength of Marche menne, and were well ſpedde vppon their waie towarde London. For knowledge whereof the Kyng and the Quene with their hoſte, wer retourned Northwarde. But or thei departed from ſainct Albones, there was behedded the Lorde Bonuile, and Sir Thomas Terill Knight, whiche wer taken in the forenamed feld.

Then the Ducheſſe of Yorke beyng at London, hearyng the loſſe of this fielde, ſent her twoo younger ſoonnes, that is to meane, George, whiche after was Duke of Clarence, and Richard that after was Duke of Glouceter, into Utriche in Almaigne, where thei remained a while.

Then the foreſaied Earles of Marche and of warwike, ſpedde theim towarde London, in ſoche wiſe that thei came thither vpon the Thurſdaie in the firſte weeke of Lente: To whom reſorted all the gentlemen for the moſte part, of the South and Eaſte partie of Englande. And in this while that thei thus reſted at London, a greate Counſaill was called of all the Lordes Spiritual and Temporall, that then wer there about. By the whiche finally, after many argumentes made, for ſo moch as Kyng Henry, contrary his honour and promiſe, at the laſt Parlament made and aſſured, and alſo for that that he was reputed vnable and inſufficient to rule the realme, was then by their aſſentes depoſed, and diſcharged of all Kyngly honoure and regally.

A counſaill wherein was agreed ẏ Kyng Hẽry ſhuld be depoſed.

Edwarde the eldeſt ſoonne of the Duke of Yorke, elected and made king of Englãd

And incontinently, by aucthoritie of the ſaied Counſaill, and agremente of the Commons there preſent, Edward the eldeſt ſoonne of the Duke of Yorke, then was there elected, and then choſen for Kyng of Englande. After whiche election and admiſſion, the ſaied Earle of Marche, giuyng laude and praiſe vnto GOD, vpon the fowerth daie of Marche, accompaignied with all the foreſaied Lordes, and multitude of Commons, was conueied vnto Weſtminſter, and there toke poſſeſſion of the realme of Englande. And ſittyng in his eſtate royall, in the greate hall of the ſame, with his Scepter in his hande, a queſtion was aſked of the people then preſente, if thei would admitte hym for their Kyng and Soueraigne Lorde, the whiche with one voice cried, yea, yea. And then after thaccuſtomed vſe to kynges to ſweare, and after the oth taken he went into the abbaie, where he was of the abbot and munkes met with proceſſion, and conueyed to ſaint Edwardes ſhrine, and there offered as king, & that done receiued homage and feaute of all ſuche Lordes as there then were prſent. And vpon the morowe folowynge, were proclamacyons made in accuſtomate places of the citie, in the name of Edwarde the iiii. then king of Englande. Upon which day the king came vnto the palays at Paules, and there dyned, and there reſted him a ſeaſon, in making prouiſion to go Northwarde for to ſubdue his enemyes. Then vpon the ſaterday folowing being the day of March, the erle of Warwike with a great puiſſaunce of people departed out of London Northwarde: And vpon wedniſday folowing yͤ kinges footemen went toward the ſame iourney.

And vppon friday then next folowyng, the king tooke his viage through the cytie with a greate bande of men, and ſo rode forth at Biſhops gate. In whiche ſelfe ſame daye, which was the .xii. day of Marche, a Grocer of London named Walter Walker, for offence by him doone againſte the kinge was beheded in Smithfeld. But his wife, whiche after was marito Jhon Norlande Grocer, and laſtly alderman, had ſuch frendes aboute the king, that her goodes were not fortifyed to the kinges vſe. The king than ſo holding his iourney, met with his enemies at a byllage. ix. miles on this halfe Yorke, called Towton or Shiryborn, and vppon Palme ſondaye gaue vnto theim battayle. The whiche was ſo cruell, that in the fielde and chaſe were ſlaine vpon xxx. M. men ouer the mē of name of the which here after ſome enſue That is to ſay the Earle of Northumberland, the earle weſtmerlande, the lorde Cliffорde, the lord Eyromund, ſir Jhon ſir Andrewe Trollop, and other to the nomber of a. xi. or mo. And emong other at the ſame felde was taken the Earle of Wilſhire, which ſaid earle of Deuonſhire was ſent vnto Yorke, and there after beheded. Henrye than whiche laſtely was kinge, with the quene and their ſonne Edwarde, the duke of Somerſet, the lorde Roſe and other beyng than at Yorke, hearinge of the ouerthrow of their people, and great loſſe of their men, in al haſte ſled towarde Scotlande. And vpon the morow folowing, the king with muche of his people entred into Yorke, and ther held his Eaſter tide. And vpon Eaſter euen, tidinges were brought vnto London of the winninge of the felde: Wherefore at Poules Te deum was ſong with great ſolempnitie & ſo through the citie in al pariſhe churches. And thus this gooſtly man kinge Henry loſt al, whan he had reigned full. xxxviii. yeres. vi. monethes and odde dayes. And the noble and mooſte bounteous prynceſſe queene Margarete of whom many vntrew ſurmiſe was imagined and tolde, was faine to ſlie comfortleſſe, and loſte all that ſhe had in England for euer.

The battel of Shirborne.

The ſleeng of kinge Hēry into Scotlande with hys wyfe & ſir Edwarde hys ſonne.

Whan that kinge Edwarde with great ſolempnitie had holden the feaſt of Eaſter at Yorke, he than remoued to Durham.

And after his buſyneſſe there fyſhined

niſhed, he retourned again Southwarde, and left in thoſe parties the earle of Warwike to ſee the rule and guidyng of that coūtrey.

Than the king coaſted and viſited the countries Southwarde and Eſtwarde, that about the beginning of Juny he came vnto his manioure of Shene, nowe called Richmoūt. In al which paſſetime purueiaunce was made for yͤ kynges coronaciō. In accompliſſhing whereof, the king vpon the. xxvii. day of Juny beyng friday, departed from the ſaide manioure and rode vnto the towre of London. Uppon whom gaue attendauuce the maior and his brethren al clad in ſcarlet, and to the nomber of. iiii. C. commoners wel horſed and clad all in grene. And vppon the morne being Saterdaye, he made ther. xxviii. knightes of the Bath, and after that foure mo.

The coronacyon of Edwarde the. iiii.

And the ſame after noone he was with all honour conueyed to Weſtminſter, yͤ ſaid. xxxii. knights riding before him in blew gownes and hodes vppon their ſhoulders like to prieſtes, with many other goodly and honourable ceremonies, which were longe to reherſe in due order. And vpon the morne beinge ſondaye and ſaint Peters day, he was with great triumphe of the archbiſhop of Caunterburie crowned and enoynted before the high altere of ſaincte Peters Churche of weſtminſter. And after thys ſolemnizacyon of the crowning of the kinge, with alſo the ſumptuous & honorable feaſt holden in Weſtmynſter hall was finiſhed, the king ſoone after created George hys brother duke of Clarence.

And in the moneth of Julie folowing at the ſtandard in Chepe, the hande of a ſeruaunte of the kinges called Jhon Daupe was ſtrycken of, for that he had ſtrycken a man wythin the palays of Weſtminſter.

Francia.

¶ Carolus the. viii.

Charles the. viii.

Carolus or Charles the. viii. of that name after yͤ accompte of this boke, or the. vii. after the Frenche Hiſtorie, ſoonne of Charles the ſeuenth or ſixte, began his reigne ouer the Fenche menne in the moneth of October, in the yere of oure Lorde. M. fower hundreth and. xxii. and the beginnynge of Henry the. vi. than kinge of Englande. Of this Charles ſundrye writers ſunderly writ, in ſo much as ſome affirme him to be the naturall ſonne of Charles the. vii. ſom affirme him to be the ſonne of the duke of Orleaunce, and borne of the queene, and ſom there are that name him the ſon of Charles forenamed gotten in baſte, vppon his mooſte bewteous paramoure named Agnes, the which (as teſtifieth Gagwinus) excelled al other women in feture and bewty, and for the ſame to be ſurnamed the faire Agnes. This in her middell age died, and was ſo rich that her teſtament amounteth to. xl. thouſande ſcutes of golde, whiche in ſterlinge money amouteth to the ſumme of. x. thouſand pound. Thā to returne to this Charles, likely it is that he was not the naturall ſonne of the forenamed Charles, for ſo much as his ſayd father ordayned and willed the realme of Fraunce vnto Katheryne hys daughter and, wyſe vnto kynge Henry the. v. and agreed with the conſente of the more parte of the Lordes of hys realme, bothe ſpirituall and Temporall, that durynge his life the ſaied Kynge Henrye ſhould bee Regente of Fraunce, and after his death to be kinge of theſaied region, as more at length before I haue ſhewed vnto you in the. vii. yere of the ſaid Henry the. v. But whether he bee his legittimat ſonne or not, wherupon I purpoſe no lenger to ſtand truth it is, that he was by his father admitted and made dolphyn of Vien, by reaſon wherof he was in great authorytie, and wan to hym fauoure of ſome lordes of Fraunce, whiche ſtronglye mayntayned hys partie duryng the life of knig Henry. v. and after all the ſeaſon while the duke of Bedforde occupied there as regente of that region, and was of ſome partyes of Fraunce reputed for king: Howbeit he was neuer crowned, ſo lōg as the duke of Bedford liued. Neuertheleſſe he by meane of policie and his frendes, ſo defended hym ſelfe, that litle by the Engliſhmen was won vpon him, of ſuch landes as he firſt was in poſſeſſion of. But politykely he defended them, and litle and lytle ſo preuailed againſt them, that in the ende he all onely wan not to him the poſſeſſyon of that prouynce, whiche is named Fraunce, but alſo he wan to him in thende the king of Englandes olde enheritaunce, that is Normandy, with all dominions to the ſame appertaynyng.

The maner of winning of them I will not in this ſtory ſpeake of, for ſo much, as in the former yeres of king Henry the. vi. I haue ther expreſſed the maner of ſome parte therof: But that I ſhall ſpeake of them, ſhalbe of thinges done betwene him and other princes. And for that I before in the. viii. yere of Henry the. vi. promiſed in the vi. yere of this Charles to ſhewe vnto you ſomwhat of the maiden or pucell, whiche the Frenchmen named La pucell de dieu, and her for a meſſenger from God to bee ſent, reputed, I ſhall here folowe the ſayinge of Gagwin, whiche ſaith as foloweth. In the. vi. yere or thereabout to recken from the death of this Charles father, a wench or maiden beyng bred in a ſtrete or village called in Latyn Valli color, and in this time beyng ſprong to the age of. xx. yeres or there about, hauing to father a poore man named Iakes Delarch and her mother Izabell, ſhe alſo bering the name of Iane or Iohā required by dyuers and ſondrye times an vncle of hers being prefecte of the forſaid village, that he would preſent her vnto the Frēch king for thinges cōcerning greatly the weale of his realme. Which ſaid prefecte after many delayes, for ſo much as in her wordes he had lytle truſte, yet at length her ſaid vncle beyng named Roberte Baudrincourte, ſente her with a conueniente compaignye vnto the kynge with letters, certyfiyng hym of al the maner of this maide. Whereof the ſaied Charles

La pucelle de dieu, yͭ is to ſaye the mayden of God.

les beyng aſcertained, thoughte he woulde vſee ſome meane to knowe the vertue of his wenche. And for he had perfect experience that before times this womā had neuer ſene his perſon, he thought he would chaunge hys rome and habite, to ſee whether ſhe by her vertue could knowe him from other, and that doen, he ſtandynge amonge other of his familiers as one of them, ſhe was called into the chaumber, and demaunded if euer before tyme ſhe had ſene the king. And after ſhe had anſwered naye, ſhe was bidden to eſpie out the king, whiche there ſtode amōg that company. The whiche anon without difficult hym fande, and ſaluted as kyng. And albeit, that he refuſed her reuerence, and ſaid that ſhe erred in her choiſe, yet ſhe perſeuered kneling at his feete, & ſaied that by Gods purueiaunce ſhe was taught that he was her very ſoueraine prince and none other. Wherefore the kyng and all his Lordes had her in more affiaunce, that by her the land ſhould bee releued, whiche at that daye was in paſſyng miſery.

Than after diuers queſtyons to her made, what was the cauſe of her comminge thither, ſhe aunſwered and ſaid that ſhe was ſent from God, to ſtabliſh the kyng in his realme, and that by her ſhe beyng leder and captaine of his people, by diuine grace only, the king ſhould ſhortly ſubdue his enemies By reaſon of whiche wordes, the king with his Lordes were ſomedele comforted.

Upon this, armour and ſword was ſoughte for thys mayden, which as ſaieth my ſaide autour, was founden myraculouſly, wherof the proceſſe to me appereth ſo darke and ſantaſticall, that therwith me liſt not to blot my boke, but ſuffer it to paſſe by: Than this wēch being purueied of al things neceſſary to the warre, accompanie of knightes and ſouldiours to her by the king was aſſigned. And ſo ſhe riding as a man & in mans habite contynued by the ſpace of two yeres and more, and did many wonderfull feates, and gatte from the Engliſhmen many ſtrōg townes and holdes. Wherfore, amonge the Frenchmen ſhe was worſhypped for an Aungell or a meſſēger ſent from God, to releue their greate miſery. And as affirmeth the ſaide autoure, ſhe by her prouidēce cauſed the ſaid Charles as king of Fraunce to be crowned at Raines, in the yere of our lord. M. iiii. C. and. xxix.

Albeit, nother the French cronicle nor other, which I haue ſene teſtifieth that, but affirmen that he was crowned duringe the lyfe of the duke of Bedforde. But almighty God, whiche for a ſeaſon ſuffereth ſuch ſorcery and deuiliſh wayes to proſper and reygne, to the correccion of ſinners, laſtly to ſhewe his powre, and that good men ſhould not fall into anye erroure, he ſheweth the clearneſſe of ſuche miſticall thinges, and ſo he did in this. For laſtlye ſhee by a knighte Burgonyon was taken, and after ſente to Roan, and ther brente for her demerytes, as in the. viii. yere of Henrye the. vi. is more at length ſhewed. Than the time forth paſſinge and contynuall warre betwene Englande and Fraunce contynuinge among

The ende of Lapucel de dieu.

many

The ſonne againſt the father.

mong many tribulacions by this Charles ſuſtayned, one that was his owne ſon named Lewys, conforted and aſſiſted by the dukes of Burbon and Alenſon with other men of name, rebelled againſt his father, and warred vpon him, and by ſtrength wanne from him certaine townes and ſtrong holdes. For remedye whereof, the ſaide Charles made warre vppon the forenamed duke of Burbon and waſted with iron and fire the countries of the ſaid duke of Burbon. By meane wherof, after this vnkindlye warre had dured by the ſpace of. vi. monethes or more, a peace and vnitye betwene the father and ſonne was treated, and by the meanes of the Erle of Ewe a concorde and vnytye betwene theim was finally concluded, and he the ſaid Lewis and all ſuch as with him were retained or allied, were for this offence by the ſaide Charles clerely pardoned, one perſonal onely excepted, named Jaket or Jakes, by whoſe treaſon the caſtell of Marente was loſte and taken, for the whiche offence he was after drawen, hanged and alſo quartered.

Than in proceſſe of time folowing the Fleminges of Gaũt rebelled againſt their duke or earle named Philyppe. The cauſe of which rebellyon was, for that he arerid a greuouſe taſke vpon ſalt, & put yͤ people thereby to greuous charge. Whervpon deadly warre betwene the duke & his ſubiectes aroſe, to the diſtruction of muche people vpon both parties, wherof the circumſtaunce were longe to write: Howebeit, in the ende the Duke or earle by the aide of the French kynge was victour, and held them of Gaunt ſo ſtreyt, that they were compelled by force to buie their peace with greate ſummes of money, and to their other manifolde domages.

About the. xxxi. yere of this ſaid Charles, came vnto him from the Pope Nicholas the. v. of yͤ name an Ambaſſade, for to require ayde againſt the Turkes, for the defence of Conſtantine the noble, which the Turkes purpoſed ſhortly after to aſſaile. To whiche ambaſſade by the ſaid Charls it was aunſwered, that to hym it was righte greuouſe to here of the intollerable perſecucion, which the chryſten daylye ſuſtayned of the Turkes: But he was of the Engliſh nacion ſo vexed and warred, that he might not leaue his land without an hed, to the comfort of other, and to loſe his owne. But to the entent that he for the times might haue warred vpon the ſaid Turkes, he for that cauſe onely had offered vnto the king of England many reaſonable offers. And yf of the Englyſh partye any like offers might be to him proffered, he would gladly them accept, and turne his ſpeare incontinently againſt the forenamed Turkes. And ouer that he woulde for the furtheraunce of the matter, ſende with theim vnto the kyng of England certaine ambaſſadours, to ſee if that as yet anye reaſonable peace might be betwene them cõcluded. For accõpliſhment wherof as teſtifieth myne autour Gagwinus, he ſente the archbiſhop of Reines with other honorable perſons. The which whã thei to king Hẽry and his counſell had ſhewed their legacion, it was to thē ſhortly aunſwered, that at ſuche ſeaſon as the Engliſhemen had won again ſo muche land as the Frēch men by cawtelis had won frō thē than wer it good tyme and ſeaſon to treatat of accorde, and not before. By reaſon of whiche anſwer the Popes ambaſſade retourned to Rome without aide or comforte. And thus the French wryters laie euer the charge frō their prince, and put it vnto other. But of this ambaſſade or aunſwere, find I no memory of any Engliſh writers.

The ſecond rebellyō of Lewys agaynſt hys father.

About the. xxxiiii. yere of the reigne of this Charles, Lewis his ſonne before named, being a man of greate liberalitie and largeſſe, thought his father departed not with him of hys mouables and poſſeſſions, as he had cauſe to doe. For the which by comfort of yong perſons as he had about him, rebelled agayne the ſeconde time againſt his ſaid father, and by reaſon of this largeſſe and liberality drew vnto him much wanton and wild people, and with their aſſiſtence warred vppon his fathers frendes, and entended to depriue hys father of all gouernaunce of the realme. Whereof hearyng his father, in all haſt gathered to him great ſtrength, and ſped him towarde his ſaid ſonne. But whan Lewys was warned of the comming of his father with ſo greate an hoſt, and conſidered his quarel and wekenes, he with a fewe perſons fled toward Burgoine. Wherof hearinge the father, ſent in all haſt people to kepe the paſſages, and dyd that he myghte to haue ſtopped him of of his waye. But that prouiſion notwithſtanding, the ſaid Lewis eſcaped and came ſauely vnto the preſence of Philip then duke of Burgoine, the which him receaued with glad chere, and entreated him, accordinge to his eſtate, aud ſo kept him during his fathers life. Howbeit, he made for him great ſute and labour, to win him his fathers grace. But all was in vaine. For what by obſtinacy of the ſame that he would not ſubmitte him to hys father, and come vnto his preſence when he was ſent for, and for the great ſtomacke of the father, that he would not be condicioned with of the ſoonne, this variaunce continued betwen thē as aboue is ſaid the terme of hys fathers life. In whiche paſtime this Charles concluded a maryage betwene hys daughter called Magdaleine, and Ladiſlaus king of Beme, Hungary and of Polaine. But while the Bride with greate apparaile and pompe, was conueied toward her husbande to be maried, her ſayde huſband was taken ſodenly with ſickenes, and dyed with in. xxiiii. hours after that he firſt complained hym, whiche was by force of poiſon as moſt writers agree. Of which tidinges whē Charles was aſcertained, he therwith toke ſuch a penſiffenes, that he died ſhortly after, whan he had ruled a parte of the hole realme, to reken from the death of hys father, xxxvi. yeres. Howbeit of Frenche wryters no certaine time of his reigne to him is aſſigned, for ſo much as king Henry the. vi. long after the death of his father, was alowed in Paris and many other cyties of Fraunce for ſoueraygne and

The death of Charles the. viii.

in Paris, and many other Citees of Fraunce, for Souueraigne and kyng of that region. This Charles beyng dead, left after him two ſōnes, that is to ſaie, Lewes that after was king, and a yonger named Charles, with the forenamed daughter named Magdalen or after ſome Margaret. And after with greate pompe, his corps was conueighed vnto ſainct Denis, and there buried.

Francia.

Lewes the.xj.

Lewes the ſeuenth.

LEwes the.xj of that name after the acompt of this Booke, and x. after the Frenche acompt, whereof the cauſe is before ſhewed, ſōne to Charles, laſt deade, began his dominiō ouer yͤ realme of Fraūce, in the moneth of October, in the yere of grace, a.M.cccc.lviii. and the.xxxvi.yere of Henry the ſixte, then Kyng of Englande. This of Gagwinus is called the ſturdy or fell Lewes. The whiche at the tyme of his fathers death, beyng as aboue is ſaied, vnreconciled in the prouince of Burgoin: and hearyng of the death of his father, wͭ aide of the foreſaid Duke Philip, ſhortly entred yͤ realme of Fraūce and tooke vpon hym the rule in euery good Citee and toune, as he paſſed, as the Kyng of the ſame, ſo that many Lordes and hed officers drewe vnto hym. By meane whereof he was ſtrong, and putte ſoche vnto ſcilēce, as after the wil and purpoſe of his father, would haue preferred his yonger ſoonne named Charles.

Coronatiō of Lewes kyng.

Then this Lewes by ſtrength of his frēdes, was ſhortly after at Raines crouned kyng of Fraūce. After which ſolempnitie finiſhed, he repaired vnto Paris, and there by conſente of his counſaill, made a lawe, that no man of what degree that he were, ſhould vſe huntyng or hawkyng, without ſpeciall licence, and ſpecially for chaſyng or hunting of Wolues, nor to kepe with him any houndes, or other inſtrumentes, whereby the game might bee deſtroyed. And that doen, Philip foreſaied Duke of Bargoine, after coūſaill to him giuen, that he ſhould forget and forgiue, all diſpleaſures to him to fore doen by any of his Lordes, & thē to honor and cheriſhe, & ſpecially his yong brother Charles to noriſhe, & to departe with hym louingly, of his fathers poſſeſſions, toke leaue of hym & departed. After whoſe departure, he cōtrary yͤ ſaied counſaill, refuſed the company of his Lordes, and alſo the coūſaile, and drewe vnto hym as his chief counſailours, vilaines, and men of lowe birth. Of whiche, the fower principall were named as foloweth, Jhon de Lude, Jhon Balna, Oliuer Deuill, whom for the odiouſneſſe of the name, the kyng cauſed to be chaunged, and be named Dāman, and the fourth was named Stephan, and vſher of the kynges chamber doore, the whiche he promoted to greate honour and dignities. Emong whō Balna beyng a prieſt, was by his meanes, at length made a Cardinall of Rome.

Thus he vſyng the counſaill of theſe perſons, murmure & grudge beganne to ſpryng betwene hym and his Lordes, in ſo moche that firſt the Duke of Britaine began to eſtraunge hym from the kyng, and refuſed to come vnto his preſence, when he was ſent for: wherof hearyng the Erle of Ewe with other, drewe them vnto the duke. To the whiche partie ſoone after, the kinges brother Charles, with alſo the Duke of Bnrbon, whiche had maried the kinges ſiſter, with many other noble menne of the realme, reſorted. When the Kyng was ware that his Lordes conſpired againſte hym, fearyng the rebellion of his Commons, ſente in ſpedie maner vnto Paris, the forenamed Jhon Balna, with other certain perſones, to kepe that Citee in due obeiſaunce towarde hym, thynkyng that the other citees and good Tounes of his region, would take enſample thereof: and demeane theim as that citee did: After whoſe commyng, the rulers of Paris by the amoniſhemente of the ſaied Jhon, ordeined good and ſure watche, and ſo by that meane kept the citee in good order.

And in the meane ſeaſon, the kyng gathered to him greate foiſon of knightes and Souldiours, that his hooſte was nombred at thirtie thouſande menne. And in likewiſe the other partie had aſſembled as many moe. And notwithſtandyng the aſſiduate labor and meanes, made by the Duke of Burgoin, and Carlota wife to the Duke of Burbon, and ſiſter to the king, as is aboueſaid, to make an vnitie and peace, betwene Lewes and his Lordes, yet finally, the kyng and thei mette in a plain battaill, at a place called Chartres, where betwene them was a long & cruel battail, to the loſſe of moche people on bothe parties.

A battaill betwene Lordes of Fraunce the Kyng thereof.

And albeit that the king in the beginnyng, had the better of his enemies, yet in the eande he was ouercomen, his men chaſed, and he forced to flie, and to take for his ſauegard, a caſtell named Mõtclere. From the whiche he ſhortlie departed, and yode to an other caſtell called Corboil, and frõ thens laſtly vnto Paris, where he entended to haue gathred new people, and to haue reuenged hym of his enemies: But by the wiſe and good exhortation of the Biſhopp of Paris, the kyng chaunged his purpoſe, and all was ſet in a quietneſſe for that tyme. But how or in what maner, or what the conditions of that accorde wer, mine aucthour doeth not expreſſe. The whiche accorde thus cõcluded, the kyng continued his old maners, & delited hym more to cõpanie with ſimple and inreuerent perſons, to eate and drinke with them, to the end that he might talke of ribaudrie, and vain and vicious fables, then to accompanie him with his lordes, where he might haue won him moche honor. This Lewes alſo was of ſo diuers & wanton condicions, that he would go more liker a yomã or a ſeruyng mã, then like a prince: the which was for no regardſhip, nor ſparyng of good. for as before J haue ſhewed, and alſo after ſhall appere, he was a prince of moſte liberalitie, & therwith an oppreſſor of his ſubiectes.

LEwes thus paſſing his time, was driuen of neceſſitie for lacke of money to aſke a preſte of the citezins of Paris. The whiche after many excuſes, by them laide to put it by, and might not bee alowed, thei laſtly denaied the Kynges pleaſure.

An other aſſemble of the Lordes againſt the Kyng.

Wherewithall he beyng greuouſly diſcontented, remoued diuers from their offices, and other whiche were of the richeſt and heade men of the citee, he ſought againſt theim ſurmiſed cauſes, and without proues of iuſtice, put many of them to death. For theſe foreſaied cauſes and many other, whiche tedious were to expreſſe, the foreſaid lordes again aſſembled their people, entendyng to ſubdue the kyng, and to ſette his brother in his place, or to cauſe hym otherwiſe to rule the common weale. And to ſtrẽgth the barons partie, Jhon ſonne vnto the duke of Calabre, approched to theim, with a good bande of men. And to theim came alſo the ſoonne of the Duke of Burgoine, named Charles. Al whiche barons of one aſſent, met at a toune called Stampes, wher thei continued their counſaill, by the ſpace of fiftene daies: and after that counſaill finiſhed, tooke their iourney towarde Paris.

In whiche paſſe tyme, a ſpie of the duke of Britaines, called Peter Geroldе was taken in Paris, and drawen, hanged and quartered, and diuers men and women, that wer ſuſpected to owe fauour vnto the lordes, were ſacked, and caſt into the water of Sein. Then for to ſtrength and guide the citee of Paris, the kyng ſent thither yͤ Erle of Donoiſe, by whoſe prouiſion of warly ordinaũce, for to deſẽde their enemies, was there prepared. In whiche tyme and ſeaſõ, the lordes in three partes enbattailed, approched the citee. Wherof the firſt hoſte lad Charles, brother vnto the kyng, the ſecond the Duke of Britaine, and the thirde Charles the ſoonne of the duke of Burgoine. Prouided that Charles firſte named, ladde the middle ward. When the ſaied erle of Donoiſe, had wel conſidered yͤ ſtrẽgth of the lordes, he ſent vnto theim a meſſanger, ſaiyng, yͭ in his minde he maruailed to ſe ſo great a multitude of people, aſſẽbled againſte the Citee, and common weale of the Lande, conſideryng that he was ſette there by the kyng, as a mediatour and a meane, rather to make peace then warre, if thei were contented that by hym, any mediacion might bee labored and had. But this came to none effect, ſo that ſmall aſſaultes and ſkirmiſhes enſued, to the little domage of bothe partes.

In whiche paſſe time, the king ſente by ſecrete meanes, vnto the forenamed Jhon, ſonne vnto the duke of Calabre, and hym by many meanes inſtanted, to leaue the companie of the lordes: but all his offers auailed right nought. Thã the foreſaid lordes thus liyng before the citee of Paris, in yͤ plaine where ſtandeth a Monaſterie of ſaincte Anthoine. Charles, brother to the kyng, cauſed fower letters to be deuiſed. Whereof one he ſent to the biſhops, and ſpirituall men within the citee, the ſecond to the conſuls or head men, the third to the ſcolers of the Uniuerſitee, and the fowerth vnto the Cominaltie. Of whiche letters, the entente enſueth, that he, nor none of his compaignie was commen thither, as an enemie to the citee, or to make warre againſt it, or the common weale of the lande, but for the encreaſe & augmentation thereof, to the vttermoſte of their powers. After receipte of whiche letters, and the matter in theim conteined, well vnderſtanded and debated, certaine oratours for the ſaied fower parties wer aſſigned, as three for the ſpirituall menne, three for the conſuls, three for the Uniuerſitee, and three for the cominaltie, whoſe names I ouer paſſe. The whiche with the biſhop of Paris were ſent vnto the Barons, & after long communicatiõ with thẽ had, returned to the citie with ſoche reporte as foloweth.

Firſte, the Lordes would, that the inhabitauntes of the Citee, ſhould conſider the conditions of the Kynge, the whiche yerely oppreſſeth his ſubiectes with taſkes and other greuous ſeruages. Secondarily, how he deſpiſeth the noble bloude of his realme, and draweth to him villaines, and men of no reputation, by whoſe counſailes onely, al the common weale of the lande is ruled and guided. Thirdly, how he ruleth his ſubiectes by force and wil, without miniſtration of Juſtice, and hymſelf in all counſailes and Parlamentes, is iudge of all cauſes, and calleth his ſelf counſailes & parlamẽtes, more for his ſinguler weale, then for the common weale of his realme. Fourthly, how he enhaũſeth men of lowe birth vnto great honors, and cauſeth noble men to be obedient vnto them, entending to bring the ſame ignoble men, for to bee equall with the Princes of the land. Fiftly, how the lawes be delaied and bolſtered, by ſoche as ſtand in his fauor, where through at this daie lawe is will, and will is lawe, and no man almoſte in any ſuertie of life or goodes, in ſo moche that daily, many been baniſhed and put to death, for vnlefull cauſes, and alſo to any noble manne at this daie, no power or rome of honor belongeth, ſo that to wilde beaſtes in the Foreſtes, apperteineth more libertie & ſuertie, then the more partie of yͤ kynges ſubiectes. Sixtly, the greate taſkes & ſommes of money, which daily be leuied of the Commons, been not ſpent in the Kynges honourable needes, and for the common weale of the realme, but are ſpent nicely and rioteouſly, & bribed out of the kinges coffers. For whiche enormities and miſgouernaunce with many other, the ſaid lordes wer comen thither in defẽſible araie, for yͤ ſauegard of their owne perſones, as to the hed and principall Citee of the realme, for to haue aide and counſaill, to reforme the foreſaid euils, notwithſtãdyng any harme vnto the kinges perſone, or yet to remoue hym from his regally or Kyngly maieſtie, but to enduce hym, and aduertiſe hym to that, that ſhould bee his honoure, and the weale of his realme; and to liue in welth & honour, as his noble progenitors haue liued before hym. For the whiche cauſes and conſiderations with many other, whiche I paſſe ouer, the ſaied lordes, as yͤ kinges true ſubiectes and friendes, vnto the common weale of the lande, and of that citee, deſire to entre, there to refreſhe theim and their people, and to paie truly for all thynge that thei ſhould take, and without doyng harme or violẽce to any perſone. All whiche requeſtes and matters of the Lordes, ſhewed vnto the inhabitauntes, of the citee, by fauour of ſome frẽdes that thei there hadde, it was with the more partie well accepted, and thought conuenient that the ſaied nobles ſhould bee receiued into the citee. Howbeit, that after longe debatyng of this matter, by meane of the forenamed Earle of Donoiſe, a ſparyng of this receipt of the Lordes ſhould bee, till thei had further knowledge of the Kynges pleaſure. Whiche prouiſion theſaied Earle fande, for ſo moche as he was ſecretely warned, of the kynges thyther commyng: And vpon this agrement the citee reſted. For ſuertie whereof, ſoche as were within the citee, of the kynges ſeruauntes and friendes, rode daiely and nightly aboute the Citee, with a ſtrong compaignie in harneſſe, to ſee the people kept in due order.

Then vppon the morowe folowyng, came vnto Paris a capitain of the Kynges, named Mountalbone, and with hym a good bende of menne, the whiche ſhewed vnto the citezẽs, that the kyng was comming out of Normandy with a greate hoſte The lordes beyng warned, enbattailed them in the foreſaied plaine of Sainct Anthonie, to ſhewe the ſtrength of their hooſte, vnto the Citee, or ſoche as wer therein as their enemies. Where thei ſo liyng, certain Knightes of the Kynges partie, diuers and ſondrie tymes, brake out by ſodaine reſis, and ſkirmiſhed with the Lordes people, to the little hurte of bothe parties.

In the whiche paſſe tyme, king Lewes commyng out of Normãdy, was receiued into the Citee. Where after his commyng he put in execution fiue perſones, named Jhon Worter, Euſtace, and Arnolde Worter, Jhon Coart, and Fraunces Haſſe. The whiche perſones were accuſed to hym, to bee chief occaſioners of the legation, made vnto the Lordes. Of which ſaied fiue perſones, three, as Jhõ Coart, Fraunceis Haſſe, and Arnolde Worter, wer meſſengers aſſigned in theſaid legation, for the conſuls of Paris: and the forenamed Euſtace Worter, was one of the three aſſigned for the clergie.

The kyng thus beyng in poſſeſſion of the citee, many and diuers aſſaultes and ſkirmiſhiſhes, betwene his knightes and the Lordes were made, but no notary bataile, for the kyng was farre weaker. And ouer that, in this tyme and ſeaſon, theſaied Lordes gatte vnto theim ſondrie Caſtelles and ſtronge holdes. Then at lengthe meanes of Peace was offered by the Kyng. For concludyng whereof, for the kyng was admitted the Earle of Mans, with certaine other perſones. And for the Barõs was aſſigned Jhon, ſoonne vnto the Duke of Calabre, Lewes erle of Saincte Poule and other, the whiche aſſembled and commoned together by ſondrie tymes, tenne daies. In whiche ſeaſon came vnto the Kyng, a newe ſtrength of ſouldiours out of Normandy, the whiche the Kyng appoincted, to kepe the ſuburbes of ſainct Marcell. This treatie thus hangyng, without cõcluſion or ende taking, vpon the fowertene daie of October, in the . vii . yere of the reigne of this Lewes, was Proclaimed throughe the Citee and alſo the hooſte, a daie of lenger trewes, ſo that then the Lordes withdrewe theim, vnto their ſtronge holdes and Caſtelles, holding with them many Souldiours, whiche fell to robbyng, and other vnleful actes, to the greate daunger and hurte of the lande.

And at ſoche ſeaſons as the arbitrours met, to finiſh this great matter, emong other thynges offered by the Kyng, he graunted to giue vnto his brother Charles for his portion, all Champaine, with the Lordſhip of Brie, the Citees of Melde, Monſtruell and Meldune, thereof to be excepted. And vnto Charles, ſonne of the Duke of Burgoin, he was contented to giue ſo moche money, as he had ſpent in that iourney. But al was refuſed. And finally, for obſtinacy of bothe parties, the daie of expiration of the truewes opproched, without hope of accorde concludyng: wherefore, prouiſion for warre vppon bothe parties was deuiſed. Then began grudge and murmure betwene the Citezeins and the Kynges ſouldious, where through many of the Commons hartes, tourned to the Lordes, ſo that for feare, the ſurer and ſtronger watches were kepte, to the kynges greate charge.

Shortly after, tidynges were brought vnto the kynge, that the caſtell of Giſons, was of the Lordes beſieged, and that alſo the prefecte of the kynges Palais in Roan, was taken of the citezens, and holden in priſon. And the daie folowyng, came an other meſſenger, ſhewyng vnto the kyng, that the Duke of Burbon, was by the poſterne, receiued into the caſtell of Roan, and was likely to haue ſhortly, the rule of the citee, whiche came to effecte in ſhorte while after. When the Lordes had gotten the Caſtell and Citee of Roan whiche is the heade citee of Normãdy, as Paris is hed of Fraũce. Then in maner of deriſion, thei ſent vnto the kynge, ſaiyng, that nother with Champain, nor with Brie, his brother Charles would bee contented, but ſcantely with the whole Duchie of Normandy.

Then kyng Lewes conſidering the greate aduaũtage, whiche the lordes had of him, both by ſtrẽgth and fauor of his commons, which daily drewe vnto theim by ſondrie companies, in auoidyng of more daunger, concluded a peace. For performaunce whereof, he graunted vnto Charles his brother, yͤ whole duchy of Normãdy, taking to hym in exchaunge the countie of Berrie. And to Charles, ſonne to the duke of Burgoine, Peron, Roia, and a citee or toune called in Latine Mondiderium, and therwith he ioined Gwinarie, and the erledome of Boloine, whiche lordſhippes the ſaied king Lewes had before times bought of duke Philip his father. To Jhõ of Calabre he graunted all ſoche ſommes of money as he demaũded, to wage with ſoldiours, to aide his father againſt Fardinande, then Kynge of Aragon. And to Jhon duke of Burbon, the whiche as before is ſaide hadde maried his ſyſter, he graunted al ſuch dowar as to him was promiſed at the time of mariage, and all ſuche pencion as he was wonte yerly to take, of the graunte of Charles laſte kynge within the realme of Fraunce. To the duke of Bretaine was reſtored the earledome of Mountferarde, wyth greate ſummes of money, whiche the kinge had receaued of the ſayde countie. And to the erle of Dampmartine was reſtored al ſuche landes as before by acte of parliament, were forfayted to the kinge. To the erle of ſainte Poule was reſtored the office of the conſtablery of Fraunce, and to other mē of name other notable thinges whiche J paſſe ouer. All whyche grauntes firmely and faſtly aſſured, proclamacions were made of this peace thorough the realme of Fraunce. And after this peace was thus concluded, the king and his lordes met. To whom he ſhewed great ſemblaunt of kindneſſe and ſpecially vnto his brother. Wherein appered greate diſſimulacion, as here after ſhall appere. For this Lewes was of ſuch condicions, that what he mighte not ouercome with ſtrength, he would win with diſſimulacyon and trechery. After which peace thus concluded, and the lordes departed, the kynge feaſted the rulers and conſulles of the city of Paris, and gaue vnto them due thankes, for the greate trouth and fidelytye, whiche thei bare toward him, duryng that troubelous ſeaſon, and graunted vnto them ſuch thinges as then they woulde aſke for the weale of that citie.

A peace betwene the kinge and his lordes.

IT was not longe after, that eſcentyon fell betwene Charles duke of Normandye, and John foreſaid ſōne vnto the duke of Calabre, and the earle of Dampmartine. Whereof a parte of the cauſe was, that the ſaid Charles after their thinking, had not ſo bounteouſly rewarded theim as they had deſerued. Of whiche diſcorde king Lewis was faine, and in ſpidy maner rode vnto a towne called Argentine, and there with the ſaid Jhon then beyng duke of Calabre, by reaſon of his fathers death, helde with him long and greate counſaile, to the entent to diſpoſſeſſe his brother of yͤ duchy of Normandy. By reaſon of which diſcord betwene the ſaid two dukes, king Lewes as ayder of the duke of Calabre, made war in the parties of Normandye, and in proceſſe wanne therein diuers caſtels and other ſtronge holdes, and compelled his brother to hold the citie of Roan for his refuge. Where he ſo beynge, the king wan dayly vppon him, in ſo muche that dyuers townes and ſtrong holdes ſubmitted thē to his grace. Whereof hearinge the cytezins of Roan, made an ambaſſade vnto the king for purchaſe of grace for ther duke and for them ſelfe.

The whiche when the duke vnderſtode, fearing leſte his owne cytezynnes woulde betraye hym, fledde thens and ſo yode to Humflewe, and from thens to Cadomye. In whyche paſſetyme the kinge was with due honoure receaued into the citye of Roan, wher he remoued many from ther offices, and of his ſeruauntes or ſuch as lyked him put in their places, and muche of tht ordinaunce and of abilymentes of warre belonging to the towne, he ſent vnto Paris; and the prouoſt of Roan named Gauin Manuell to put to death; and after his body was caſt into the ryuer, and his hed ſet vppon a pole, and dyuers of the coledge with the deane of the ſame place were put vnto death. And all which tyranny by the king executed, and the towne put in ſuerty by ſtrength of ſoudionrs, he after ſped him vnto Orleaunce, where, as ſaith mine autour) he puruayed an honorable ambaſſade, and ſent it vnto Edward the.iiii. then king of England.

In the.xi. yere of the reigne of this Lewes was ſo greate a mortalitie of men in Fraunce, that in Paris died that yere ouer.xl. M people. And in this yere began a grudge to grow betwene this Lewes and Philip duke of Burgoin. But it was kepte vnkindlye during the life of the duke, which dyed ſhortlye after. To whom ſucceded Charles his ſonne before named, which in proceſſe of time maried dame Margarete, ſiſter vnto kinge Edwarde the. iiii. as after ſhalbe ſhewed. It was not longe after that this Lewes aſſembled a great hoſte of people to make war vpon Charles duke of Burgoine. Of whiche people he had committed the rule and charge vnto Jhō Balna, whiche at that daye was preeſte and cardinall, and he as a temporall capitaine, toke of them the muſters and other orders. Whereat the temporal lordes diſdayninge, the erle of Dampmartine ſaid in the names of them vnto the king: Moſte redoubted ſoueraigne lord, it hath pleaſed your highneſſe to commit vnto a ſpirituall mā the charge of your puiſſaunce hoſte, & he not fearyng god hath taken vpon him the cure and charge of theim, to the effuſion of chriſten mennes blod. Wherfore it may like your moſt noble grace to ſende me, a temporal man to viſite his dioces, and to take the charge of this flocke, whiche is as fittinge for me, as that other dede is for him: At this ſaying the king had goud game, but for al that he did as to him ſemed beſte. Of thys warre betwene the king and duke Charles of Burgoyne I entende not to ſpeake, for the matter of it is ſomdele longe and tedious to write. But in this while that Lewes was occupyed in this warre, ẏ Britons with an exceding power aſſayled the patties of Norue hauynge Charles brother vnto Lewes to their leder, whiche to ẏ duke of Britaine was fled for aide and ſocour. Whereof hearing king Lewes, al ſuch hoſt of ſouldiours as he had purpoſed other wayes, he then lad agaynſte his brother. In which hoſt(as affirmeth mine autoure, were an hundreth thouſand mē, ouer ſuch as had the guidinge of the ordenaunce. When Charles was aduertiſed of the greate ſtrength of hys brother, by politike meanes he ſoughte for a peace. And after many delatorie communicacions and other delaious meanes wrought vpon both parties, laſtly the king ſente vnto his brother, Jhon Balna cardynal with other, to ſhew vnto him his minde and pleaſure. Whereof when Charles was ſufficiently inſtructed, he gaue for an anſwere, that if a perfecte concorde ſhoulde be ſtabliſhed betwene his brother and him, that it ſhould bee auctoriſed by the whole conſente and cōſell of the barony of the realm. With which aunſwere the kinge beyng contentid, at Turon in the mouth of Aprill and tenth yere of his reigne, aſſembled a great cōſaile of his lordes ſpirytuall and temporall, in the whiche the demaundes of the ſaid Charles, and offers of the king were ſhewed. And after the ſaid councell had at lengthe reaſoned the ſayde demaundes and offers, it was, finally determined, that the duchye of Normandy was ſo approued vnto the king of Fraunce and to his heires kinges, that in no wyſe it diſſeuered from the crowne. But to the entent that a perfect vnity might bee had betwene the kinge and his brother, the kinge ſhal be inſtaunted to geue yeerely vnto his ſaide brother in recompenſement of the ſayd duchy twelfe thouſand pounde of Turon money, with alſo a certaine of lande to him to be aſſigned with the name of a duke, and ouer that the king to bee inſtanted to gyue vnto him during his naturall life, for ſuche porcion as he clamed to be his right within the realme, fourtye thouſande pounde of annuell rente yerely to him to be paied of the foreſaid Turon money. To all which grātes the kinge was agreed, and ouer that to pardon the duke of Brytaine al offences now newly doen againſte his maieſtie, contrary to the duke his faith and allegaunce, and all ſuche lordſhippes as the king had won within Britaine, to reſtore vnto the duke and his aſſignes. All the which offers might not ſatiſfy the counſell of the ſaid Charles, but clerely was ſette apart and refuſed.

After yͭ foreſaid offers were by Charles refuſed, yͭ king in ſpedy wiſe vpon the refuſaile ſente a ſtronge hoſt into Britaine, vnder the guidinge of a knight called Arnolde. And in the meane ſeaſon the king viſiting the borders of his realme, put in execution diuerſe perſones, ſuche as wer accuſed to affēde againſt him. Paſſing which ſeaſon, were it for the greuis which the foreſaid hoſt wrought within the countrey of Britaine made newe meanes for a peace vnto the kinge, and offred to be contentid, with yͭ thei might ſtande in his fauoure and grace, and with ſuch proffers as the cōſaile of the realm was before time agreed and condeſcended vppon. Whervpon a ſophiſticall aunſwer was made by the king, ſo that the ſaide Charles at that time might not be aſcerteyned, of peace or of warre: Howe beit in the yere folowinge by inſtaunt laboure of the forenamed Jhon Balna cardinal the kynge agreed to geue vnto his brother Charles the duchye of Gwian onely. wherewith he helde him contented, and ſo creaſed of his warre in Normandy.

It was not longe after that this ſaid Jhon Balna forgetting the manifolde great benefites ſhewed to him by the king, conſpyred againſt him, and deuiſed certaine letters, the whiche he ſente vnto Charles duke of Burgoine. Wher in was conteyned that he ſhould beware and haue him ſelfe in good gaite, for the vnitie & peace which lately was ſtabliſhed betwene the kinge and Charles his brother, was principally to dere and war vppon him, and to brynge him in ſubiection. Wherefore in auoiding that daunger, he aduiſed hym in all poſſyble haſte, to aſſemble hys knightes, that he were not taken vnpurueighed: the whiche letters were it by reaſon of the beater or otherwiſe, came to the kinges preſence. After receit of which letters and knowledge of the content of theim, anon the kinge cauſed the ſaide Jhon Balna to bee taken, and to bee caſt in ſtrong priſon.

And that dooen he rode vnto Thuron, whither to him came his brother Charles, and to hym did homage, and ſware vnto him feauty for the duchy of Guian. And for to knitte the duke of Britaine more faſtly to him, he ſent to him a ſceptre with a chaine of gold the which the duke refuſed to take wherewith Lewes was greuouſly diſcōtented. The cauſe of which refuſall was, for the ſaide duke of Britaine had lately before that allied him wyth Charles duke of Burgoine, and had receiued hys liuery of golde flees. And ſone after, whiche was the leuēth yere of this Lewes, Carlota his wyfe was lighted of a ſonne, and after named Charles, by Charles hys brother, whiche after hys father was king of Fraunce. And ſhortlye after by meanes of Charles duke of Guian, and of the duke of Burbon and other, the Duke of Brytaine was reconcyled vnto the kinges fauoure. And in the twelfe yere of the reygne of this Lewis, died by force of venim the aboue named Charles duke of Guyan: But by whoſe meanes mine autour mindeth not.

Then continuyng the war beetwene this Lewis and this duke of Burgoin, a marchaunt at Guian named Jterie, which after the death of the ſaide duke of Guyan was fled vnto ẏ duke of Burgoine and with him a ſeaſon remained, ſhewed vnto him manye tedious tales of the kinge. Wherefore the duke apperceiuynge that he owed to to French king no fauoure, exhorted him to poiſō the ſaied king. And if he mighte bringe to effecte his purpoſe, he ſhoulde therefore haue fiftye thouſande florines of gold. A florines is in value of ſterlyng money thre ſhillinges. After which promiſe and aſſuraũce thus made by the duke, this Jtery to bringe hys euill purpoſe aboute, made his ſeruaunte named Jhon de Boldy of counſaile, and promiſed to him greate thynges yf he would take vppon him that acte. And after graunt had of the ſaide Jhon, the ſaid Jtery prouided the poyſon and delyuered it vnto hys ſaide ſeruaunt. The which incontinently ſped him vnto Ambaſie, where the French kyng than lay, where this Jhon de Boldye beynge of familyer acqueintaunce with one named Popyn, to the entente to bringe hys entent the better to effecte, after aſſuraunce of othe to hym made, to kepe hys counſaile, ſhewed vnto him al his minde, and promiſed him twenty thouſande Florines if he would helpe to bringe to concluſion hys purpoſe. The which Popyn made vnto him aſſured promiſe, and ſaid that to bring this matter about, it was very expedyent to haue of counſayle the kinge hys mayſtercooke named named Colinet, whõ he knew wel to win, for the great fauour that either of theim owed vnto other. And after communicacion had with the ſaid Colinet, the ſaid poiſon to him was deliuered. Wherwith the ſaide Colinet and Popin his felowe went at conuenient time after vnto the kinge, and ſhewed to hym the compaſſe of all the matter. Where after anon the ſaid Jhon de Boldy was taken, and confeſſed the circumſtaunce of all the whole treaſon, for the which at Paris he was after drawen, hanged, and quartered. Soone vpon this, Frederike the thirde of that name then emperoure of Almaigne, ſente vnto this Lewes, willyng & requiryng hym that he would not endeuer him to anye peace or accorde with the duke of Burgoine, for he entẽded in ſoch wiſe to aide his partie that he truſted in God to bryngе this ſaied duke to his due and cõuenient obeiſaunce and ſubieccion But the king regarded nothinge the emperours requeſt, but cõcluded a trewes with the duke for a yere folowinge, by auctoritie of a greate counſaile or parlyament. At the whiche the duke of Alenſon was iudged to loſe hys hed, and his hereditamentes to bee forfaited vnto the king.

Then it foloweth in the ſtory, or this foreſaid trewes betwene the kynge and Charles the duke were fully expired, yͤ ſaid Charles made warre vpon the ſaid Lewis, and procured kinge Edwarde of Englande, whoſe ſiſter he had maried, to make alſo war vppon him. For expedicion whereof, the ſaide kinge Edwarde landed at Calais ſhortly after, with a competente number of ſouldiours, as after in the fourten yere of the reygne of the ſaide Edwarde the fourth, it ſhalbe to you more clerely ſhewed with concluſion of a peace and othere thinges. After whiche peace betwene the ſaid twoo kinges agreed, a vnite & concorde was alſo ſtabliſſhed betwene this Lewes & the duke of Burgoin for. ix. yeres.

Aboute the ſeuentene yere of this Lewes, the ſteward of Normandy named Lewis Bryſey, the which had maried the nice of king Lewes, being warned of the wanton rule of his wife, and of her adoutrye with one named Jhon Louir, vppon a daye to proue his ſaid wife, wente on huntinge, and at his returne feyned him werye and feint for labour, and wente to his bed. And ſhe anon deming her huſband to be at his natural reſt, yode ſtreight vnto the chaumber, of the ſaide Jhon Louir: Wherof the huſband beinge warned, with his ſwoorde in hand, ſped him vnto the chaumber, and after the dore broken vp by violence, and fyndyng theim in bedde or other ſuſpicyous maner, with hys ſayde ſwoorde ſlewe firſt the ſaide Jhon, and after notwithſtandynge her myſerable and lamentable cryenge and aſkynge forgeueneſſe vppon hir knees, he alſo ſlewe hir, and after fled till he had made his peaces with the king.

Long it were and alſo tediouſe to folowe mine auctoure, in declaringe of euery particuler deede doen by this Lewis. Wherfore to ſhorten this ſtory, truth it is that after this Lewis hadde by longe time exerciſed hym in warres, he laſtly fell in a greuous ſickneſſe. The whiche continued and ſo encreaſed vppon him, that he knew well he ſhould not longe endure. Wherfore he diſpoſed there after, and cauſed many dedes of almeſſe to bee done for him. Emonge the whyche within ſayncte Jhonnes church the Baptiſt within Parys he foũded certaine preeſtes to ſing for him in perpetuitee. For ſuſtentacion of whom, he gaue of yerely rent a thouſand pounde of Paris money: and ſo languiſhing by the ſpace a thre yeres more before he died, paſſed his tyme with greate tribulacion. In the which paſtime oratours were ſent from the Fleminges for to conclude a mariage betwene Charles his eldeſt ſonne and Margarete then doughter of Maximiliam ſonne of Frederyke the Emperoure, whiche Maximilian before thoſe daies had maried Mary the doughter of Charles Duke of Burgoine. After which concluſion ended and finiſhed, the kinge gaue vnto the ſaid oratours twenty thouſand ſcutes of gold, whiche amounteth to fiue thouſand pound ſterlinge money. And ouer that gaue to theym in plate purpoſely made, to the value of fiue hundred pounde ſterlinge. And in the twentye and fiue yere of the raigne of the ſaide Lewes, the forenamed Margarete a child of tender age, with greate and ſumptuouſe pompe was boughte vnto Paris. And from thens ſhe was conueighed vnto Ambaſye, and there in the moneth of July, cowpled by mariage vnto the fore named Charles, ſoonne vnto the king. After whiche ſolempnitie finiſhed, the ſaid Lewis felinge his ſickneſſe more and more encreaſing, vpon a ſeaſon called his ſayd ſonne Charles before him, and exhorted him in this wyſe as after foloweth: My moſte dereſt childe, I feele and know wel that I ſhal not tary long in this country, for I am more nerer mine ende then thou knoweſt. For I am ſo continuall greued with ſickneſſe, that no medicine may or can releue me. And thou arte he that muſte rule this lande after me. Wherefore to thee it is ſpecially behouefull and neceſſary, to haue trew ſeruaũtes emong many that I haue proued in my daies, twoo there been, the whiche I ſpecially commende vnto the, that is to meane Olyuer Damman, and Jhon Doyacos. Whoſe ſeruices I haue in ſuch wiſe vſed, that by their meanes and counſaile, I thynke my lyfe hath been long preſerued. And therfore ſpecially theſe twoo kepe nere about thee, nothing miniſhynge to theim of their offices or poſſeſſions that I before times to theim haue giuen. And after theſe twoo, take to the for thy counſailours, Guiot and Bachage, and for to guide the wars, Philip Deſquier, the which in feactes of warre as I haue wel proued, hath paſſing experience. And other whiche I haue auaunced to offices within this realme, let them ſo remaine. And the commons

The wordes of king Lewes dying, to hys ſonne.

mons of the lande, the whiche by occaſion of warres, I haue greuouſly taxed, and greatly weaked and empoueriſhed, ſuccour and fauoure to thy power. To the Burgonions, me thought euer good to ſhewe fauor, or els me thought it ſhould haue ſounded to my diſhonour: So I thinke it ſhall bee good, that thou ſo doe. After that kyng Lewes had thus exhorted, and counſailed his ſonne, he then retourned vnto Thuron.

Where, for the mitigation of this painfull ſickeneſſe, whiche of myne aucthoure, is called in Latine Morbus Elephãtie, he commaũded to be brought before him all the cunnyng Maſters of Muſike within his realme, that by ỹ melodious ſounde of their inſtrumentes, he might be eaſed of pain But when he had aſſembled of the beſte, an hundreth and twentie in nomber, a fewe Sheperdes pipes were to hym more ſolace, then all the other, or any part of them, the whiche he helde ſtill in his court, and commaunded that euery day theſaid Shepherdes ſhould plaie a certain diſtaunce from the place where he late. And ouer this he ſẽt for all Ankers, and all other religious menne, that wer famed for holie and perfect men, and for thẽ ordeined places within Thuron, that by the meane of their praiers he might bee releaſed of his continuall paines. And to haue lenger continuaunce of life, myne author ſaieth, that this Lewes had ſo greate a deſire to haue length of life, for ſo moche as he knewe wel that the realme of Fraũce, ſhould be in greate trouble and vexation ſhortly after. But notwithſtandyng all theſe prouiſions and ordinaunces, with many mo whiche longe were to write, finally, this Lewes died, when he had been kyng of Fraunce, by the terme of xxvi. yeres, or there vpon, and after was buried in the Churche of our Lady of Raines, where before tyme he prouided his Sepulture, and in tyme of his ſickneſſe, laie in it a certain ſeaſon, while that certain oriſons were ouer hym ſaied.

Anglia.

¶ Edward the. iiii.

Kyng Edwarde the fowerth.

Edwarde the fowerth of ỹ name, & ſõne of Richarde duke of Yorke as before is touched, begã his reigne ouer the realme of Englande, the iiii. daie of Marche, in the ende of the yere of grace, to recken after the churche of Englande, M. cccc lx. and the ſeconde yere of Lewes the. xii. then kyng of Fraunce.

The whiche Edward, after his poſſeſſion takyng at Weſtminſter, and gettyng of the field at Touton by Yorke, was crouned and anointed for kyng at Weſtminſter foreſaied, the. xxix. daie of Juny, as before is ſhewed in the ende of the laſt yere of Henry the. vi. After whiche ſolẽpnitie finiſhed, the king in Auguſt after, rode to Caũtorburie, and from thens he rode to Sandwiche, and from thens a longe by the ſeas ſide, to Southhampton, and ſo into the Marche of Wales, and retourned by Briſtowe, where he was with all honoure receiued, and after viſited ſondrie parties of his realme. In whiche ſeaſon or ſone after, ỹ time of Richard Lee Maior of Londõ expired, and Hugh Wich Mercer was admitted for ỹ yere folowing

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxi.
Anno domini.M.cccc.lxii.

Hugh Wiche.
Jhon Looke.
George Irelande.
Anno.i.

The.i. yere.

THis yere, beeyng ỹ latter eande of the firſte yere of Kyng Edwarde the.iiii. and the beginning of this Maiores yere, that is to ſaie, the fowerth daie of September, a Parlament was begon at Weſtminſter. And vpon the morowe folowyng, died Jhon Duke of Northfolke, the whiche had been a ſpeciall aider of the Kyng. And vppon Alholowen daie before paſſed, the kyng created Richard his yonger brother, Duke of Gloceter, the lorde Bouchier, Erle of Eſſex, and the lorde Fauconbridge, Erle of Kent, and vpon the twelue daie of February was the Erle of Oxenforde, with the lorde Aubry his elder ſoonne, ſir Thomas Todenham, William Tirell, and other, brought vnto the toure of London. And vpõ the xx. daie of theſaid moneth, theſaid Lorde Aubry, was drawen from Weſtminſter, vnto the towre hil, and there beheaded: and vpon the twentie and thre daie of theſame moneth, ſir Thomas Todenham William Terill, and Jhon Mongomorie, were alſo there beheded. And vpon the Fridaie next enſuyng, or the.xxvi. daie of the ſaied moneth, therle of Oxenforde was ladde from Weſtminſter vpon his feete, to the ſaied place, and there alſo beheaded. Whoſe corps was after borne vnto the Frere Auguſtins, and there buried within the Quier for that tyme. And in the latter ende of the moneth of July was the caſtell of Awnewike, yelden vnto the Lorde Haſtynges, by appoinctment.

When king Edward was thus ſtabliſhed in this realme, greate ſute and labour was made to him for the repaiment of the foreſaied eightene thouſande pound, to him and other deliuered by ỹ ſtaplers, as before in the.xxxviii. yeare of Henry the ſixte, to you I haue before ſhewed. Whereof was labourer, wer it by the agrement of the ſaid Staplers, or other wiſe, one named Richarde Heiron a Marchaunte, of pregnaunt witte, and of good maner and ſpeache. To whom at length was aunſwered by the kynges counſaill, that the ſaied eightene thouſande pounde, with moche more, the which was couertly kepte from the kyng his knowledge, belonged of right vnto the Earle of Wiltſhire, whiche at the tyme of deliuery of theſaid goodes, was highe Treaſourer of England, and after for treaſon by hym dooen againſt the Kyng, the Erles landes and goodes were forfaicted vnto the Kyng: Wherfore the Kyng reteined the ſaied eightene thouſãde pound, as parceill of his forfaicture, and would retein as his owne. Upon whiche anſwere, this Heirone ſeyng that of the Kyng he might haue no remedy, and for ſo moche, as moche of the ſaied good, belonged to his charge, he then reſorted to the ſtaplers, for contentation of the ſaid mony. But how it was that there he fande no coumforte, he finally ſued the maior of the Staple and his compaigne, and put them vnto greate vexation and trouble. And in the eande fande ſoche fauour in the Courte of Rome, that he denounced all the Marchauntes Staplers accurſed. Howbeit, that ſone after, thei purchaſed an abſolution. And he inconcluſion, after long beyng in Weſtminſter as a Sainctuarie man, without recouery of his coſtes or duetie, died there, beeyng greatly endebted vnto many perſones.

Curſing & Bleſſinge.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lxii. Anno domini. M.cccc.lxiii.

Thomas Cooke. { Willyam Hampton. / Barth James. } Anno. ii.

The. ii. yere.

The arriual of Margaret quen and yͤ wife of Henrie the. vi.

IN this yeare, in yͤ beginnyng of the moneth of Nouẽber, Margarete late quene of Englande, came out of Fraunce into Scotlande, and from thens into Englande, with a ſtrength of Frenche menne and Scottes. Wherfore the kyng ſped hym into the North, with a ſtrõg hoſte. Whereof hearyng the quene brake her araie and fled, and toke a Caruile, and therein entended to haue ſailed into Fraunce: But ſoche tempeſt fell vpõ the ſea, that ſhe was conſtrained to take a Fiſhers boate, and by meane therof landed at Barwike, and ſo drewe her vnto the Scottiſhe king. And ſhortly after her landyng, tidynges came vnto her, that her ſaied Caruil was drouned, within the whiche ſhe had greate Treaſour, and other riches.

And theſame daie, vpon fower hundred of the Frenche men, wer driuen vpon lande, nere vnto Bãbourth, Where thei, for ſo moche as thei mighte not haue awaie their ſhippes, thei fired them, and after for their ſauegard, tooke an Iſlande within Northũberland: where thei wer aſſailed of one, called Maners, with others in his compaignie, and of them ſlain and takẽ priſoners, as many as there were. When the kyng was ware of the Quenes thus auoidyng, he entended to haue folowed, and to haue made warre vpõ the Scottes: but he was then viſited with the ſickeneſſe of Pockes, that he was forced to leaue that iouney.

In the weke of Chriſtmaſſe folowing, the Scottes with a ſtrõg power perced the land, entending to haue reſcowed cercain caſtelles in the North: But thei retourned ſhortly without harme doyng.

And ſhortly after, the Duke of Somerſet and ſir Rauffe Percie, ſubmitted theim to the Kynges grace.

Whẽ the kyng was cured, and returned Southward, the Scottes aboute the tyme of Lente, entred againe into Englande, and laied a ſiege vnto Bambourth caſtell and wanne it. Wherefore, the kyng in the moneth of Auguſt folowyng, rode again Northwarde with his power, and ouer that victualled certaine Shippes in the weſt countrey, and mãned them, and ſente theim thither to make warre vpon the ſea coaſt.

And in thende of this Maiors yere, the Duke of Somerſet, hearyng that Kyng Henry was commyng into the lande, with a newe ſtrength, departed ſecretly, and went againe to hym.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxiii. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxiiii.
Goldſmith. { Robert Baſſet. }
Mathewe Philip. { Thomas Muſchampe. } Anno.iii.

The.iii. yere.

AND in this moneth of Maie, whiche was in the beginninge of ỷ.iiii. yere of kyng Edwarde, the Lorde Jhon of Mountagu, hauing then the rule of the North parties, beyng warned of the commyng of Hẽry late kyng, with a greate power out of Scotlande, aſſembled the Northren men, and mette with hym about Exhm̃, and there ſkirmiſhed with the Scottes, and at length wanne the victory of his enemies and chaſed Henry ſo nere, that he wanne from hym certaine of his folowers, trapped wᵗ blewe Veluet, and his bicoket, garniſhed wᵗ twoo crounes of golde, and frette with pearle and riche ſtone.

Henry the ſixte chaſed by the lord Jhõ Mountagu.

He alſo toke at theſaid iourney the Duke of Somerſet, the lorde Hungerforde, and the lorde Roos whiche ſaied Duke was ſhortly after putte to death, at the ſaied toune of Exhm̃, and the other two Lordes, were ſone after behedded at Newe caſtel. And other whiche were after that fight, taken in a wood faſt by, as ſir Philip Wentworth, ſir Edmonde Fiz Knighes, Blacke Jaques, Jhon Brice and Thomas Hunt, wer alſo put to death at Exhm̃ foreſaied, or Middelhm̃, after ſome writers: and ſir Thomas Huſey knighte, was beheadded at Yorke.

And in ỷ moneth of July nexte folowyng, theſaied Lorde Mountagu, with the aide of his brother erle of Warwike, wan by ſtrẽgth the forenamed Caſtell of Bamburgth, wherein as one of theſaid capitaines was takẽ with other, ſir Rauffe Graie, whiche ſhortly after at Yorke, was drawen, hanged, and quartered.

In ſoche paſſe tyme, in moſte ſecrete maner, vppon the the firſte daie of Maie, king Edward ſpouſed Elizabeth, late beyng the wife of ſir Jhon Graie knight, whiche before time was ſlain at Towton or Yorke fielde.

Whiche ſpouſailes were ſolẽpniſed early in the Mornyng, at a toune named Grafton, nere vnto Stonyngſtratforde. At whiche mariage was no perſones preſent but the Spouſe, the ſpouſeſſe, the Duches of Bedforde her mother, the Prieſte, twoo gentlewomen, and a yong man to help the prieſt ſyng.

Edward ỷ iiii. maried to Elizabeth ỷ late wife of ſir Jhõ Graie ſyng. And after whiche Spouſailes eanded, he went to bedde, and ſo taried there vppon three or fower houres, and after departed, and rode again to Stoningſtratforde, & came in maner as though he had been on huntyng, and ther went to bedde againe. And within a daie or two after, he ſent vnto Grafton, vnto the Lorde Riuers, father vnto his wife, ſhewyng to hym, that he would come and lodge with hym a certain ſeaſon, where he was receiued with all honour, and ſo taried there by the ſpace of fower daies: in which ſeaſon, ſhe nightly to his bed was brought, in ſo ſecrete maner, that almoſt none but her mother was of counſaill. And ſo this mariage was a ſeaſon kepte ſecrete after, till nedely it muſt bee diſcouered and diſcloſed, by meane of other, whiche wer offred vnto the kyng, as the Quene of Scottes, and other. What obloquie ranne after of this mariage, howe the Kynge was enchaunted by the Ducheſſe of Bedforde, and howe after he would haue refuſed her, with many other thinges concernyng this matter, I here paſſe it ouer.

And this yere was kyng Hērie taken in a wood, in the North cōtrey, by one named Cantlow, and was preſented vnto the king, and after ſent vnto the Towre, where he remained long after.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lxiiii. Anno domini. M.cccc.lxv.
Rauffe Joſſeline Draper. { Jhon Tate. / Jhon Stone. } Anno.iiii.

The.iiii. yere.

IN this yere was a newe coigne ordeined by the Kyng, the whiche was named the Roiall, and was in value of ten ſhillynges, the halfe Roiall fiue ſhillinges, and the Ferthyng twoo ſhillinges & ſixe penies. And ouer that, he ordeined the ſeconde coigne of golde, and named it the Aungell, whiche was in value of ſixe ſhillynges eight penies, and the halfe Angell, three ſhillynges fower penies. He ordeined alſo a new coigne of Grotes, halfe Grotes, & penies, whiche were of laſſe weight then the olde Grote was, by eighte penies in an vnce. And then was fine golde auaunced frō thirtie ſhillynges, to fourtie. s. an vnce, & other baſer goldes after that rate. And ſiluer that before was at eighte Grotes, and thirtie penies an vnce, was hightened to fourtie penies and vnce, and three ſhillynges two penies.

The coine of the roial and an ongell, and alſo newe Grotes.

Coronatiō of Quene Elizabeth.

And in this Maiors yere, and beginnyng of the. v. yere, that is to ſaie, the. xxvi. daie of May that yere Whitſōdaie, quene Elizabeth was crouned at Weſtminſter wͭ great ſolempnitie. At ẏ which ſeaſon at the towre, the night before the coronatiō, emōg many knightes of the Bath there made, was as of that companie ſir Thomas Cooke, ſir Mathewe Philip, ſir Rauffe Joſſeline, and ſir Henry Wauir, beyng Citezeins of London then, and there made Knightes.

Citeziens of London made knightes of the bath

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxv. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxvi.

Mercer.
Rauffe Uerney { Sir Henry Wauir. / Willyā Conſtantine } Anno.v.

The.v. yere.

In this yere, that is to ſaie, the.xi. daie of ŷ moneth of February, was Elizabeth Princes, and firſt child of kyng Edward, borne at Weſtminſter: whoſe Chriſtenyng was doen in the Abbay, with moſte ſolempnitie. And the more, bicauſe the kyng was aſſured of his Phiſicions, that the quene was conceiued with a prince, and ſpecially of one named maſter Dominik, by whoſe counſaill, greate prouiſion was ordeined, for Chriſtenyng of theſaid Prince. Wherfore it was after tolde, that this maſter Dominik, to the entent to haue great thanke, and reward of the kyng, he ſtode in the ſecond chāber wher the Quene trauailed, ŷ he might be ŷ firſt, that ſhould bryng tidinges to the king, of the birth of the Prince: and laſtly when he heard the child crie, he knocked or called ſecretly at the chamber dore, and frained what the Quene had. To whom it was anſwered, by one of the Ladies, what ſo euer the quenes grace hath here within, ſuer it is, that a foole ſtandeth there without: And ſo confuſed with this aunſwere, he departed without ſeeyng of the Kynge for that tyme.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxvi. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxvii.

Sir Jhon Yong Grocer. { Jhon Browne. / Henry Brice. / Jhon Stoktō. } Anno.vi.

The.vi. yere.

In this yeare, and moneth of died the forenamed Henry Brice and for hym was choſen immediatly, a Sherife for this yere, Jhon Stokton. And in the moneth of Juny folowyng, were certain actes and feactes of warre, doen in Smithfielde, betwene ſer Anthonie Wideuile, called lorde Scales vpon that one partie, and the Baſtarde of Burgoine chalenger, on that other partie: Of whiche the Lorde Scales wan the honor, for the ſaid Baſtarde was at the firſt courſe renning, wͭ a ſharpe ſpeare ouerthrowen horſe & man, whiche was by the rage of the horſe of the ſaied baſtarde, and not by violēce of the ſtroke of his enemie, and by a pike of iron, ſtandyng vpon the forepart of the ſadell of the Lorde Scales, wherewith the horſe beyng blind of the baſtard, was ſtriken into the noſethrilles, and for pain therof, mounted ſo high vpō the hinder feete, that he fell backward. Upon the ſeconde daie thei met there again vpon foote, and faught with their axes a few ſtrokes: but when the king ſawe, that the lorde Scales had auauntage of the baſtard, as the poinct of his axe in ŷ viſour of his enemies helmet, and by force therof, was likely to haue borne him ouer, ŷ kyng in haſte, cryed to ſuche as had the rule of the feelde, that thei ſhould departe them, and for more ſpede of the ſame, caſte downe a wardērer which he then held in his hand and ſo were they departed to the honoure of the lorde Scales for both daies. Upon the morowe folowing and the other daies, were certayne actes of warre doone betwene diuers gentilmen of this lande, and certayne of the ſayde baſtardes ſeruauntes. Of the whiche alſo the Engliſhmen wan the honour. In this yere alſo one named Jhon Derbye Alderman for ſo muche as he refuſed to carie or to pay for the caryage away of a ded dog lyenge at his dore, and for vnſitting language which he gaue vnto the maior, he was by a courte of Aldermen demed to a fine of .l. pounde, whiche he payde euery peny.

Anno domini. M. cccc. lxvii. Anno domini. M. cccc. lxviii.

Thomas Owlegraue { Humfrey Heyford. Thomas Stalbroke. } Anno. vii.

The. vii. yere.

And in this yere of the maior, and in the beginninge of yͤ. vii. yere of this king Edward that is to meane vppon Saterdaie nextenſuyng the feaſt of corpus chriſtie, dame Margaret ſiſter vnto the king, rode thorough London towarde the ſeas ſide to paſſe into Flaunders, ther to be maryed to Charles duke of Burgoin before named in the ſtory of yͤ. xi. Lewis king of Faunce. After whoſe departure, ſir Thomas Cooke late maior, which before was peached of treaſon by a ſeruaunt of the lorde Wenlockes called Hawkyns, and at the requeſt of the ſayde lady Margaret vpon ſuretie ſuffred to go at large then was areſted and ſente to the towre, and his goodes ſeaſed by the Lorde Riuers then treaſourer of Englande, and his wife put out of his houſe, and commytted to the charge of the Maior, in whoſe place ſhe lay a ſeaſon after. And after the ſayde ſir Thomas had lyen a time in the towre, he was broughte vnto the Guilhall, and ther areigned of the ſaid treaſon and quit by ſondry enqueſtes, and after that committed vnto the countoure in Bradſtrete, and from thente to the kinges bench in Southwarke, where lay withiu the ſaide priſon till his frendes did agree with ſir Jhon Brandon then keper of the ſaide pryſon, to take him home to his place, where to his greate charge he remayned as priſoner long after. In whiche time and ſeaſon he loſt much good for both his places in the countre and alſo in Lōdon were vnder the guiding of yͤ ſaid lorde Riuers ſeruauntes, ⁊ of the ſeruauntes of ſir Jhon Fog thē vndertreſorer, the which ſpoiled and deſtroied much thinge. And our that much of his iewels and plate with great ſubſtaũce of yͤ marchaundiſe, as cloth of ſilkes ⁊ clothes of aras wer diſcouered by ſuche perſons as he had betaken yͤ ſaid goodes to kepe, and came to the treaſourers handes, which to the ſaid ſir Thomas was a great enemy. And finally after many perſecucyons & loſſes, was compelled as for a fine ſet vppon him for offẽce of miſpriſion, to pay vnto the kynge. viii. thouſande pounde. And after he had thus agreed, and was at large for the kinges intereſt, he was then in newe trouble againſt the quene.

The which demaunded of him as her right, for euery. M. li. paide vnto the king by way of fine an. C marke. For the whiche he had after longe ſute and greate charge, and in concluſion was fayne to agree, and to geue to her a greate pleaſure, beſide many good giftes that he gaue to her councell.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lxviii. Anno domini. M.cccc.lxix.
Grocer.
William Taylour. { Symonde Smyth. William Hariot. } Anno. viii.

The. viii. yere.

THys yere alſo, and. xxi. day of Nouember, a ſeruaunt of the dukes of Excester named Rychard Steris, after his iudgemente, was drawen through the citye vnto the towre hil, and there patted in two peſes, that is the head from the body. And vpon the daye folowing, two perſonnes beynge named the one Poynis, and that other Alforde, were drawen weſtwarde to tyborne, and there when they ſhould haue bene hanged, their chartoures were ſhewed and ſo preſerued.

And about this ſeaſon or ſoone after, was the earle of Oxenford, whiche before time was taken by a ſurmiſe in ieloſye of Treaſon, awayted for, and after deliuered.

In the latter eande of this Maiors yere, and. ix. yere of the king, the marchaũts Eaſterlings were condempned vnto the marchauntes auenturers Englyſhe, after longe and ſumptuouſe exſpences in the lawe and before the kinges councell, in. xiii. M. v. C. and. xx. pounde. Whereof the payment was kept ſecrete from writers.

In this yere the diſſimuled fauoure, whiche betwene the kynge and the earle of Warwike, hadde ſtyll continued ſince the maryage of the quene, began to appere, in ſo much that the Earle withdrew him from the king, and confedered vnto hym the Duke of Clarence that before hadde maryed hys doughter.

Wherupon the commons of the North began to rebell, and chaſe theim a capitaine, whom thei had named Robin of Riddiſdale. The whiche did many feates, and laſtly bare him ſo wyſely, that he and his company were pardoned of yͤ king. It the whiche rumoure and ſtirring, the lorde Riuers, and ſir Jhon his ſonne, that before had maried yͤ old duches of Norfolke, lieng at a place by Charing croſſe called the Muys, were taken by Lincolneſhire men and brought vnto Northampton, and there beheded.

Anno

Rycharde Lee Grocer. { Rycharde Gardiner. / Robert Drope. } Anno.ix.

The.ix. yere.

THys yere ſoone after Alhalowentide ꝓclamacions were made through the citye of London, that the kyng had pardoned the Northen menne of their riot, and aſwel for the death of the lorde Riuers, as all diſpleaſures by theym before that tyme done. And ſoone vpon this, a new ſtirringe began in Lyncolneſhire whereof the occaſyoner was the lorde welles, as the ſame then went. For whom the kyng ſent by faire meanes, promiſinge hym to goo ſafe and come ſafe as it was ſaide. But truth it is after hys comminge to the kinge, had he before ſuche promiſe or not, he was ſhortly after beheded.

Rebellyon in Lincoln ſhire.

Then in February folowynge, by the mediacion of lordes a treaty of vnitie and concorde was lalaboured betwene the kynge and his brother, and the earle of Warwike: For which cauſe the ſaid erle came then vnto London. And ſhortly after came the ſaide duke, as vpon ſhroue ſonday folowing. And vpon the tuyſday folowyng, the kinge and the ſaide Duke met at Baynardes caſtell, where the ducheſſe of Yorke their mother then laie. In the which paſſetime, the Earle of Warwike was retourned vnto Warwike, and ther gathered to him ſuche ſtrength of men as he might make, as it was reported.

And in Lincolneſhire, ſir Roberte welles ſonne vnto the lorde Welles before put to death, in this while had alſo aſſemble a greate bend of men, and purpoſed to geue the kinge a feilde. Of all whiche tidinges when the kinge was aſcertayned, he with his ſaide brother the duke ſped him northward and in that while ſent to the ſaide ſir Roberte Welles, willinge him to ſend home his people, and come to hym, and he ſhoulde haue his grace. But that other aunſwered that by lyke promiſſe his father was diſceiued, and that ſhould be his example.

But in concluſion when the king with power drewe nere vnto him, he tooke ſuche feare that he fled, and ſoone after was taken, and with him ſir Thomas Dymmok knight and other, the which were ſhortly after put to death.

In this ſeaſon was the duke of Clarence departed from the king, and was gone vnto the Earle of Warwike to take his parte. To whom the kinge in likewiſe ſent, that they ſhoulde come to his preſence without feare, where vnto they made a fained anſwere. And then cōſidering their lack of power againſt the king, departed and wēt to the ſee ſide, and ſo ſailed into Fraunce, and required the .xi. Lewis, than king of that region, that he would aide and aſſiſt them to reſtore king Henry to his right full enheritaunce. Wherof the ſaid Lewes beinge glad, graunted vnto theym their requeſt, and helde theim there, while they with the counſayle of Queene Margarete prouyded for their retourne into Englande.

Whan the ſaide lordes were thus departed the lande, the king commaunded them to be proclaymed as rebelles and traytours, throughout his realme. And in the Eaſter weke folowing, ſir Gefferye Gate, and one named Claphan, which entended at Southhampton to haue taken ſhippyng and to haue ſayled to the ſayde lordes, were there taken by the lord Haward, and ſent vnto ward the which ſaide Claphan was behedded ſoone after, and the ſaide Gefferie Gate founde ſuch frendſhyp, that laſtly he eſcaped or was deliuered, ſo that he went after to ſaintwary.

Than was the lorde of Saint Jhonnes areſted. But at the inſtaunce of the archbiſhop of Cãterbury, he went a ſeaſon at large vnder ſuretye, and was fynallye cõmitted to the towre. In whiche paſſetime, the Earle of Oxenford gat ouer vnto the foreſaid lordes.

Rebellyon in ẏ North

Thus enduringe this trouble, a ſtyringe was made in the North parties by the lorde Fyzt Hugh, wherfore the kinge ſped him thytherward: But ſo ſone as the ſaid lorde knewe of the kynges comming, anon he left his people and fled into Scotland: And the kyng which than was commin to Yorke reſted him a ſeaſon there and ther about.

In the moneth of September and .x. yere of the kinge, the foreſaid duke of Clarence accompanied with the Earles of Warwike, of Penbrooke, and of Oxenforde and many other gentelmen, lan at Dertmouthe in Deuonſhire, and their made their proclamations in the name of Kyng Henry the .vi, and ſo drewe farther into the lande. Whereof hearynge the commons of that countrey and other, drewe vnto theim by greate companies.

Inſurrection in Kent

Than the Kentyſhmen began to were wylde, and aſſembled theim in great companies, and ſo came vnto the out parties of the citie of London, Radclyffe, ſainte Katherynes, and other places, and robbed and ſpoyled the Flemynges and all the Bere houſes there as they came.

The kyng of Edward the .iiii. into Flaunders.

Than the foreſaied lordes holdynge on their iourney, drewe toward the king being in the North as aboue is ſaied. Whereof he beynge warned, and hauynge with him as than but ſmall ſtrength, whereof ſome to him were not very truſty, he with a ſecret company tooke the nexte waye towarde the waſh in Lyncolneſhyre, and ther paſſed ouer with great daunger, not wythout loſſe of dyuers of his company, and ſo paſſed the countreys into Flaunders, and ſtinted not til he came to Charles hys brother, than duke of Burgoine, with whom he reſted a ſeaſon. Whan the quene which than was in the towre harde of the kinges auoiding, anon ſhe departed from thence and yode vnto weſtminſter, and there regiſtred her ſelfe for a ſaintwary woman and in likewiſe dyd many of kyng Edwardes frendes.

And than about the beginning of October, ſir Geffrey Gate that till that time had holden the ſayd

ſentwarye

ſenctwarye and other with hym, went vnto the priſons about London, and all ſuche as they had fauour vnto, tooke them out and ſet them at lybertye. And than ſhipmen and other euill diſpoſed perſons as than drewe to the ſayde Geffery Gate, robbed againe the berehouſes, and ſet ſome of theim in fire, and after reſorted vnto the gates of the city, and there would haue entred by force: But the citizyns withſtode them with ſuche force, that thei were compelled to depart thens.

Vpon the. xxii. day of October, the towre was geuen vp by appointment, and king Henry was taken from the lodging where he before laye, and was than lodged in the kinges lodgyng within the ſayd towre. In the whiche paſſetime, the Duke and the foreſaide lordes drewe nere vnto the cytie.

And vppon ſaterday than next folowing, the ſaide duke accompanyed with the Erles of warwike and of Shrowesbury and the lord Stāley, rode vnto the towre, and there with all honoure and reuerence fet out king Henry, and conueyed hym to Paules, and there lodged him in the biſhops palais, and ſo was than admitted and tafor king through all the lande.

Readoptio Henrici ſexti.

HEnry the. vi. of that name before by Edward the. iiij putte doune, was againe reſtored to yͤ croune of Englande, the daye of October, in the yere of grace, a thouſande foure hundred. lxix, and the tenth yere of Edwarde the forth, and the twelfth yeare of yͤ twelfth Lewes than king of Fraunce.

In whoſe beginninge of readopcion, the Earle of Worceter, which for the cruelnes was called the bochyer of Englande, was taken and put in ſtrayt priſon. And vpon the. xv. day of October, was the ſaid erle areyned of Weſtminſter in the white hall, and there endited of treaſon, and vpon the monday folowiug adiudged that he ſhoulde go from the ſame place vnto the towre hyll, and there to haue his head ſmitten of.

But as he was comming from the ſaide place of iudgemente towarde his execucion, the people preaſed ſo inportunatly vpon him for to ſee and behold him, that the ſhriffes were fayne to returne into the Flete and there to borowe gayoll for him for that night.

And vpon the morowe after at after noone beynge Saincte Lukes daye, and eyghtene daye of October, he was ledde to the towre hill, wher he toke his death full pacientlye, whoſe corps was after borne with the heade vnto yͤ blacke freers, and there honourably buryed in a chapell, ſtandinge in the bodye of the churche, which he before time had founded.

The earle of Worceter beheded.

And than was daylye awayting vpon the ſea ſide, for the landinge of Quene Margarete and prince Edward her ſonne, and alſo prouiſion made for the defence of landinge of kyng Edward and his company.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxx.

Mercer.

Jhon Stokton

Jhon Croſbey

Jhon Warde.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxi.

Anno Henrici.vi.primo.

Anno Edwardi.iiii.x.

The.x. yere.

THys yere, whiche was in the ende of the.x. yere of kyng Edwarde, and begynnynge of the readopcion of king Henry, that is to meane the thirde daie of Nouēber, quene Elizabeth beynge as before is ſaid in Weſtminſter ſaintwary, was lighted of a faire prince. And within the ſaide place the ſaid childe without pōpe was after chriſtened. Whoſe godfathers were the abbotte and priour of the ſaide place, and the lady Scrope godmother. And the xxvi. day of the ſaid moneth folowinge, began a parliament, and from thence proroged to Paules, where it continued til Chryſtmas In the parliament ſir Thomas Cooke before troubled, as I haue ſhewed in the.vii. yere of king Edwarde, put in a bill into the common houſe, to be reſtored of the lord Riuers landes and other occaſyons of his trouble, to the ſum of. xxii. thouſande make. Of the whiche he had good comforte to haue bene allowed of kyng Henry if he had proſpered, and the rather for that that he was of the common houſe, and there with a man of greate boldneſſe in ſpeche and wel ſpoken, and ſingulerly witted and well reaſoned.

Kinge Edward proclaimed vſurper of yͤ crowne.

Than during this parliament kynge Edwarde was proclamed vſurper of the crowne, and yͤ duke of Glouceter hys yonger brother traytour, and both attainted by authorytye of the ſayde parlyamente.

And vpon the.xxiii. day of Februarye, came the duke of Exeter to London. And the.xxiii. daye of the ſaide moneth, rode the earle of Warwike throughe the cytie toward Douer, for to haue receiued quene Margaret, but he was diſappointed: For the winde was to her ſo contrary, that ſhe laye at the ſea ſide tarying for a conuenient winde, from Nouember till Aprill. And ſo the ſaide earle after he had longe taried for her at the ſea ſide, was faine to returne without ſpede of his purpoſe.

Thus duringe this queſy ſeaſon, the Maior fearynge the retourne of king Edwarde, fayned him ſycke, and ſo kept his houſe a great ſeaſon: All whiche time ſir Thomas Cooke which than was admitted to his former rome, was ſet in his place, and allowed for his deputie, whiche turned after to his greate trouble and ſorowe.

Than finally in the beginninge of the moneth of Aprill, king Edward lāded in yͤ North at a place called Rauynſporte with a ſmall company of Fleminges and other ſo that all his company exceaded not the nomber of a thouſand perſons, and ſo drewe him towarde Yorke, makinge his proclamacyon as he went in the name of king Henry, and ſhewed to the people, that he came for none entent but onely to claimẽ his enheritaunce, the dukedome of Yorke, where the Citezeins helde hym out, till thei knewe his entente. And when he had ſhewed vnto theim, as before had dooen vnto other, and confirmed it by an oth, he was there receiued, and was refreſhed for a certain of tyme, and ſo departed, and helde his waie towarde London, and paſſed by fauour & faire wordes, the daungier of the Lorde Marques Mountagu, which in yͤ coaſtes laiethen in awaite for him purpoſely to ſtoppe his waie, and had people double of nomber that king Edward had of fighting mẽ.

Whẽ kyng Edward was thus paſſed theſaied Marques, & ſawe that his ſtrength was greatly amended, and that alſo dailey the people drew to hym, he then made Proclamatiõs in his owne name as kyng of Englande, & ſo held on his iourner, til he came to Lõdon

In whiche paſſetyme, that is to meane, vpon Sherethurſdaie, the Archbiſhoppe of Yorke, beyng then at Lõdon with king Henry, to the entent to moue the peoples hartes towarde the kyng, rode about the toune with him, and ſhewed hym to the people, the which rather withdrewe mennes hartes then otherwiſe. And in this ſeaſon alſo, Sir Thomas Cooke before named, auoided the lande, entending to haue ſailed into Fraunce: But he was taken of a Shippe of Flaunders, and his ſoonne and heire with hym, and ſo ſet there in priſon many daies, and laſtly was deliuerrd vnto kyng Edward.

Then vppon Sherethurſdaie at after Noone, Kyng Edwarde was receiued into the Citee, and ſo rode to Poules, and there offered at the roode of the North dore and that doen, yode incontinently into the biſhoppes Palais, where he fande Kyng Henry almoſte alone. For all ſoche Lordes and other, as in the mornyng were about hym, when thei hard of king Edwardes commyng, anon thei fled, and euery man was fain and glad to ſaue their life. Then kyng Edward lodged hym, where king Henry laie, and putte hym vnder ſaufe kepyng, and ſo reſted hym there till Eaſter euen. Vppon the whiche euen, hearyng of his brothers cõmyng, and the other lordes with hym, with a ſtrong hoſte vnto ſainct Albones, ſped thitherward, and laie that night at Barnet. In whiche ſeaſon the duke of Clarence, contrary his oth & promiſe made vnto the French king, refuſed the title of Kyng Henrie, and ſodainly with ſtrength that thei had, rode ſtreite vnto his brother king Edward, wherwith the other lordes were ſomedeale abaſhed. The whiche notwithſtandyng, theſaied Lordes, by the ſpeciall comforte and exhortation of the Erle of Oxenforde, as it was ſaied, helde on their iourney toward Barnet, theſaid Erle of Oxenford being in the vaward, and ſo came to a plaine without Barnet, and there pight their field.

Barnet fielde.

Then vpon the morowe, beyng Eaſter daie, & the fowertene daie of Aprill very earely, bothe hoſtes met. Where vpon that one partie wer twoo kynges preſent, as Hẽry yͤ ſixt, which king Edward had brought thither with hym, and Kyng Edward the fowerth. And vppon that other partie, was the

Duke of Exceter, the lorde Marques Mountague, and the twoo erles of Warwike and Oxenforde, with many other men of name.

There the ſaied Erle of Oxenforde and his company, quit them ſo mãfully, that he bare ouer that parte of the fielde, whiche he ſette vpon, ſo farre forthly that tidynges came to London, that Kynge Edwarde had loſt the fielde: And if his menne had kept their araie, and not fallen to rifelyng, likely it had been, as it was after tolde, that the victory had falled to that partie. But after longe and cruell fight, in concluſion kyng Edward obtained the vpper hand, and ſlue of his enemies, the Marques Mountagu, and the erle of Warwike his brother, with many other. And vpon the kynges partie was ſlain, the Lorde Barnes, and of the commons vppon bothe parties were ſlaine vppon fiftene hundred and mo.

Of the miſtes and other impedimentes, whiche fell vppon the lordes partie, by reaſon of the incantations, wroughte by Frere Bungey, as the ſame then wente, me liſt not to write: But truthe it is, that after this victorie thus won by kyng Edward, he ſent the deade corps of theſaid Marques and Erle of Warwike, vnto Poules churche, where thei laie twoo daies after naked, in twoo cofins that euery manne might beholde and ſee theim. And theſame after noone came kyng Edward again vnto London, and offered at the roode of the Northdoore of Poules, and after rode vnto Weſtminſter, and there lodged hym.

And ſone after that the Kyng was thus paſſed through the Citee, was kyng Henry brought ridyng, in a longe goune of Blewe Veluet, and ſo conueied through Chepe vnto Weſtminſter, & from thens vnto the Toure, where he remained as priſoner, al his liues tyme after.

Henry the vi. committed to the Toure.

The repoſſeſſion of kyng Edward the fourth.

The repoſſeſſion of Edwarde the. iiii.

Edwarde the. iiij. before named, began again his dominion ouer the realme of Englãd the fowertene day of Aprill, in the beginnyng of the yere of our Lorde, a thouſande fower hundred three ſcore and a leuen, and the twelfth yere of Lewes the Frenche kyng, and repoſſeſſed all thinges as he before had doen. And whẽ theſaid two corpſes had lien in Poules opẽly from the Sondaie vnto the Tuiſdaie, thei wer had frõ thens and buried where the king would aſſigne thẽ.

The Kyng then beyng in aucthoritie, made prouiſion for the defence, of the landyng of Quene Margarete, and her ſoonne, the whiche all this while laie at the sea ſide, tariyng the winde, and ſo laſtly landed at   and came with a ſtrength of Frenche men, and other, as farre within the lande, as to a village called Teukeſburie. Where the kyng mette with her, and her diſtreſſed, and chaſed her companie, and ſlue many of them. In the which battaill ſhe was taken, and ſir Edwarde her ſoonne, and ſo brought vnto the Kynge. But after the Kynge had

The landyng of quene Margarete.

The takig of Quene Margaret & Edwar her ſonne.

had queſtioned with the ſaied ſir Edwarde, and he had aunſwered vnto hym contrary his pleaſure, he then ſtrake him with his gaũtlet vppon the face: After whiche ſtroke ſo by hym receiued, he was by the Kynges ſeruauntes incontinently ſlaine, vpon the fowerth daie of the moneth of Maie.

When kyng Edward had thus ſubdued his enemies, anon he ſẽt Quene Margarete vnto Londõ, where ſhe reſted a ſeaſon, and finally, ſhe was ſent home into her Countrie. And the gooddes of ſir Thomas Cooke were againe ceaſed, and his wife put forth, and cõmaũded to be kept at the maiors.

Vppon the fowertene daie of Maie folowyng, the Baſtarde of Faucõbridge, that vnto hym had gathered a riotous and euill diſpoſed companie, of Shipmen and other, with alſo thaſſiſtence of the commons, bothe of Eſſex & Kent, came in great multitude vnto the citee of London.

And after that the ſaied company was denied paſſage through the citee, thei ſet vpon diuers partes thereof, as Biſhoppes Gate, Algate, London bridge, and alõg the waters ſide, and ſhot gunnes and arowes, and fired the Gates with cruell malice, as Biſhoppes gate, and Algate, and faught ſo fierſly, that thei wanne the Bulwerkes at Algate, and entered a certaine within the gate. But the citezeins with comforte and aide of Robert Baſſet Alderman, aſſigned to the Gate, withſtoode the ſaied rebelles ſo manfully, that thei ſlewe all ſoche as entered the Gate, and compelled the other to drawe backe, and forſoke the gate Vpon whõ the citezeins purſued, and chaſed them vnto the further Stratforde, and ſlewe and tooke many of them priſoners.

Whereof hearyng the other, whiche aſſailed the other partes of the citee, fled in likewiſe: whom the other citezeins purſued as far as Depford, in ſlayng and taking of them priſoners in greate nomber, and after theim raunſomed, as thei had been Frenche menne. And the baſtarde with his Shipmen, wer chaſed vnto their Shippes liyng at Blacke wall, & there in the chaſe many ſlaine. And the ſaied Baſtarde the night folowyng, ſtale out his Shippes out of the riuer, and ſo departed, and eſcaped for that tyme.

Then vpõ Aſſencion euen next enſuyng, the corps of Henry the ſixt late kyng, was brought vnreuerently from the Towre, thorowe the high ſtreates of the Citee, vnto Paules Churche, and there left there that night, and vpon the morowe conueighed with gleues and other weapons, as he before thither was brought, vnto Cherteſſey, and there was buried.

The maner of buriyng of Hẽrie the .vi.

Of the death of this prince, diuers tales wer told. But the moſt common fame went, that he was ſticken with a dagger, by the handes of the duke of Gloceter, whiche, after Edwarde the fowerth, vſurped the croune, and was king as after ſhall appere,

Then king Edward after this victorie had at Tewkeſburie, retourned vnto London, and vpon the Mondaie folowyng Aſſentiõ daie, he toke his iourney into Kẽt hauyng with hym a ſtrength of people, and there ſet his Iuſtices, and made inquiſitions of the riot, before dooen by the Baſtarde and his acceſſaries. For the whiche at Cauntorburie, and other good tounes in Kent, diuers were put in execution. Of whom, the hedes were ſent to London, and ſet vpō the bridge.

And in like maner, inquiſitions were made in Eſſex, and ſome alſo wer put in execution. Of the whiche, a Capitaine named Spiſyng was hanged, and his hed ſet vpō Algate. And many of the riche cōmons of Kent, were ſette at greuous fines, bothe for them ſelues, and for their ſeruaūtes. And whē the kyng had thus ſped his iourney, he retourned and came to Lōdon vpon Whitſon euen. And that doen, ſone after was the biſhop of Yorke ſent vnto Guines, and ther kept as priſoner long after. This was brother to Lorde Marques Mountague, and to the Earle of Warwike.

The Baſtarde of Fawconbridge takē

Alſo in the eande of this Maiors yere, was the forenamed baſtarde of Fawconbridge taken, aboute Southampton, and there putte to execution, whoſe heade was ſente to London, and pight vppon London Bridge, emong other.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxi.
Grocer.
William Edward { Jhon Alein. Jhon Chelley }
Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxii.
Anno.xi.

The.xi. yere.

In this peare, the erle of Oxenford, which ſin the ſeaſō of Barnet field had holden ſainct Mighels mount, was by an appoinctmente taken thens, and ſhortly after ſent vnto the Caſtell of Guines: where he remained priſoner, vntill the laſte yere of Richard the third, whiche was vppon twelue yeres. In all whiche ſeaſon my Ladie his wife, might neuer be ſuffred for to come vnto hym, nor had any thyng to liue vpō, but as the people of their charities, would euer giue to her, or what ſhe might gette with her Nedle, or other ſoche cunnyng, as ſhe exerciſed.

A ladie get her liuyng

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxii.
Fiſhmonger.
William Hampton { Jhon Browne. Thomas Bledlowe. }
Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxiii.
Anno.xii.

The.xii. yere.

A Parlament.

In this yere, vpon the ſixt daie of October, beganne a Parlamente at Weſtminſter. By aucthoritie whereof, an aide was graunted vnto the Kynge, towarde the greate charge of his warres, the whiche was leuied of mennes landes, as well of Lordes as of other.

This Maior aboue all other, corrected ſore bawdes and ſtrumpettes, The punyſhmente of Baudes by weryng of raye hoodes.

pettes, and cauſed theim to bee lad aboute the toune, with Raye hoodes vpon their heades, diuers and many, and ſpared none, for meede nor for fauour, that wer by the lawe attainted, notwithſtandyng that he might haue taken fowertie pounde of ready money, vnto hym offered, for to haue ſpared one from that iudgement.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lxxiii. Anno domini. M.cccc.lxxiiii.

Jhon Tate Mercer. { William Stocker. Robert Billiſdyn. } Anno. xiii.

The. xiii. yere.

AND in this yere, was the Duke of Exceſter, founden dead in the ſea, betwene Douer and Calais, but howe he was drouned, the certaintie is not knowen.

In this Maiors yere alſo, was one William Oldhall, condempned vnto a Draper of London, called Chriſtofer Colins. For ỹ whiche condempnation, he remained as priſoner in Ludgate. Where, vpon a ſeaſon as he went at large with a keper, he brake from hym, and ſo eſcaped, and after was taken, and brought againe vnto the ſaied priſon. But that notwithſtandyng, the ſaied Chriſtofer ſued the Sheriffes, and cauſed them to ſpende greate money, in defendyng of his action, and finally, wer fain by waie of compromiſe, to giue vnto hym an hundred marke, for his duetie of fower ſcore and odde.

A ſcape.

And in this yere, was one Jhō Goos a loller, brent at the Toure hill for hereſie, the whiche before Diner, was deliuered to Roberte Billidon one of the Sheriffes, to put in execution that ſame after noone. Wherefore, he like a charitable manne, had hym home to his houſe, and there exhorted hym that he ſhould die a chriſten man, and renie his falſe errours. But that other after long exhortation heard, required the Shiriffe that he might haue meate, for he ſaied that he was ſore hungred. Then the Sheriffe commaunded hym meate, whereof he toke as though he had ailed nothyng, and ſaied vnto ſoche as did ſtande aboute hym, I eate now a good and competente Diner, for I ſhall paſſe a little ſharpe ſhower, or I go vnto Souper. And when he had well Dined, he required that he might ſhortly bee ledde vnto his execution.

A loller.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lxxiiii. Anno domini. M.cccc.lxxv.

Robert Drop Draper. { Edmunde Shaa. Thomas Hille. } Anno. xiiii.

The. xiiii. yere.

IN this yere, the kyng entendynge to make a voyage ouer ſea into Fraunce, called before hym his Lordes, bothe Spirituall and Temporall, to knowe their good myndes, what of theyr free willes, thei would aide and departe with hym, towarde the ſaied voyage. And after he

A beneuolence.

he had knowen their good diſpoſition to hym warde, he then ſent for the Maior of London, and his brethren the Aldermen, and them ſeuerally examined, and exhorted, to aide and aſſiſt hym toward theſaid iourney. Of whiche the Maior for his parte graunted thirtie pounde, and of the Aldermen, ſome twentie marke, and the leaſt ten pounde.

And that dooen, he ſent for all the truſtie Commoners within the ſaied citee, and theim exhorted in like maner. Whiche for the more partie, graunted to hym the wages of halfe a man for a whole yere. The whiche amounted to fower pounde, a leuen ſhillynges and fower penies. And after that he rode aboute the more parte of the lande, and vſed the people in ſoche faire maner, that he reiſed thereby notable ſommes of money. The whiche waie of the leuiyng of this money, was after named a beneuolence.

Then the kyng thus hauyng this greate ſubſtaunce of goodes, made purueighaunce for theſaied iourney.

The iourney of Edwarde the fowerth into Fraũce.

And vpon the fowerth daie of July folowyng, in the fiftene yere of his reigne, rode with a goodlie companie through the citee, towarde the ſea ſide, and ſo ſped him vnto Calais, and from thens into Fraunce. Whereof hearyng Lewes the Frenche kyng, aſſembled his people in greate nomber, and ſo ſped him toward the kyng. But when bothe hoſtes [illegible] within ſhorte ſpace, ſuche [illegible] of a peace were [illegible] by the [illegible] the kynges [illegible] by bothe Princes agreed, [illegible] a peace to bee had, for ŷ terme of bothe their liues, & a yere after, as ſome writers haue. For the performaunce of whiche ſaied peace, bothe Princes after met, vpon the daie of the Decollation of ſainct Jhon the Baptiſte, or the twẽtie and nine daie of Auguſt, at a place named in Frenche Piniak, and the fowerth daie of Nouember, as affirmeth Gagwinus. But that can not bee ſo, for king Edward was receiued again into London, after his retourne out of Fraunce, the .xxviii. daie of September. At this place was a Riuer, vppon the whiche a bridge was made ſoche wiſe, that bothe princes thereon might mete, with ſoche company as either for them had appoincted. There alſo was ordeined a place, with a partition betwene bothe Princes, that nother of them might enter vnto other, but made with a loupe, that either might ſe other, and take either other by the hande.

A peace cõcluded betwen king Edward & the Frenche kyng.

Where at the daie limitted, either met with other, their hoſtes ſtandyng a certaine diſtaunce frõ the riuers ſide, in conuenient araie. Then theſaied kynges, there after ſalutation due made, either to other had long communicatiõ. In concluſion whereof, as ſaieth Gagwin, a peace was confirmed betwene bothe realmes for ſeuen yeres. For the performaunce whereof, as affirmeth the ſaied auchor, the Frenche king gaue vnto king Edward incontinently thre ſcore and fiftene thouſande Crounes of gold, and yerely after, durynge the ſaied ſeuen yeres, fiftie thouſande Crounes. And ſuche receiued in hande, accomptyng euery Croune at fower ſhillynges, .xv. M.li. and yerely after.x.M.li. whiche ſaide xv.M.pounde the ſayde Frenche kinge borowed of his citezens of Parys.

After this truce and peace thus concluded betwene theſe two princes, anon after their ſonderinge, proclamacions were made therof thorough bothe hoſtes, and commaundement geuen to the capytaines, that they ſhoulde prouide for their returne homwardes. And ſoone vpon the Frenche king ſent vnto the Dukes of Clarence and of Gloucetter, with other lordes, ſuche as were in king Edwardes fauour, great and coſtious giftes. Of the noiſe and wanton diſgiſed apparell that kinge Lewis ware vpon him at that time of his meting I might make a long reherſall. But for it ſhould ſounde more to diſhonoure of ſuch a noble man that was appareled more liker a minſtrel, then a Prince royal, therfore I paſſe it ouer. For albe it that he was ſo newfangill in his clothing, yet had he many vertues Whereof largeſſe was one, as it appered by ſondry giftes which he gaue vnto ſondry ſtraũgers which in his ſtorye somdeale I haue touched. And alſo his bounty appered by a gifte that he gaue vnto the lorde Haſtinges then lord chamberlaine, as.xxiiii.doſen of bolles, wherof halfe were gilt and halfe white whiche weyed vppon.xvii. nobles euery cup or more.

A gift of ỷ Frenche kyng, giuẽ to the lorde Haſtinges

Then to returne vnto king Edwarde, truth it is, that after the conformacion of the foreſaid peace king Edward returned to Caleis and there ſhipped, and ſo ſped him that vpon the.xxviii.day of September folowinge, he was with greate tryumphe receyued of the maior and cytezens of London at Black heth, and with all honoure by them conueyed thoroughe the cytie vnto Weſtminſter, the maior and Aldermen beyng clad in ſcarlet, and the comoners to the nomber of.v.C.in murrey.

The retourne of Edward ỷ fowerth in to Englãd and howe he was receiued of ỷ citezeins of London.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxv. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxvi.

Hugh Brice.

Robert Baſſet Salter. Anno.xv.

Robert Colwich.

The.xv. yere.

This yere this maior did ſharp correccion vppon bakers for the makinge of light bread, i ſo much that he ſet dyuers vpon the pillory. Among the whiche in the moneth of Jhon Mynous baker was there puniſhed. And in the moneth of one named William Hubbard was alſo there ſhewed for like offence. And a woman named Agnes Deynty was alſo there puniſhed for ſelling falſe mingid butter.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxvi. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxvii.

Draper. Richard Rawſon.

Rauffe Joſſeline. Anno.xvii.

Willyam Horne.

The.xvi. yere.

IN thys yere the Maior hauinge a greate mynde to haue the walles of the cytie repayred by a conſent of the bench, and the comon counſaile, cauſed the More feelde to be ſerched, and there prouided for brick and lime. As faſt cauſed the earth to be dygged and tempored, and then ſet men on werke to moolde, and then ſent into the weſt countrey, and there purueied wood for to brenne it. And that done ſent in to Kent, and ther purueied chalke that ſhortly was brought into the ſaide More feelde. And righte there in a kyll whiche he in that ſeaſon had prouyded, was brent and made lime of a greate fortheraunce of that worke.

The repayring of Lōdon wall.

The maior then being purueied of brick and alſo of lime, the which was brent within the ſaide More cauſed by conſēt of a comon counſaile to be graunted, that in euery pariſh churche euerye Sondaye, euery pariſhon ſhoulde paye towarde the charge.v.d. And for an enſample vnto other felyſhippes, he cauſed his owne companye to make as muche of the walle as ſtretcheth from the churche of Alhalowen within the ſaid walle vnto Byſhoppes gate.

Whiche preſident cauſed other worſhipfull feliſhippes to make yͤ other partie, as nowe appereth newe made, and the more parte therof done in this yere by his procuring and calling vpon of hym. Whiche was wonderfull that ſo much ſhoulde be ſped in one yere, conſideringe the purueyaunce of the ſtuffe, which had bene ſufficient for ſom man to haue purueyed for in an hole yere.

Anno dñi.M.cccc.lxxvii.
Goldſmith.
Humfrey Heyforde.
Henry Colet
Jhon Stocker.
Anno dñi.M.cccc.lxxviii.
Anno.xvii.

The.xvii. yere.

The duke of Clarēce and ſecond brother vnto the king drowned in yͤ towre.

IN this yere that is to meane the.xvii. day of Februarye, the duke of Clarēce and ſecond brother vnto the king then being priſoner in the Towre, was ſecretly put vnto death, and drowned in a barell of malmeſey within the ſayde towre.

And this Maior this yere purſued alſo the reparacyon of the walles, but not ſo diligētly as his predeceſſour dyd, wherfore it was not ſped as it might haue bene. And alſo he was a ſicke and feable man, and had not ſo ſharpe and quicke minde as that other had. And one other cauſe was whiche enſueth of a generalitie, that for the more party one Maior will not finiſh that thing whiche that other begynneth. For then they thinke, be the dede neuer ſo good and profitable, that the honoure therof ſhalbe aſcrybed to the beginner, and not to the finiſher. Which lacke of charitie and deſire of vayne glory, cauſeth many good actes and dedes to dye and growe out of minde, to the great decay of the common weale of the citie.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lxviii. Anno domini. M.cccc.lxix.

Mercer.
Rycharde Gardiner { Robert Hardinge. / Robert Byfelde. } Anno. xviii.

The xviii. yere.

AND in thys yere alſo was a greate moralitie and death in London & many other parties of this realm, the which did begin in the latter ende of September in the precedinge yere, and continued in this yere vntyll the begynning of Nouember. In the which paſtime dyed innumerable people in the ſaide citie, and many places ells where.

A greate death.

In this yere alſo the Maior beyng at Paules knelyng in his deuocyon at ſaincte Erkenwaldes ſhrine Robert Byfelde one of the ſheryffes vnaduyſedlye kneeled downe nigh vnto the Maior. Whereof the Maior after reaſoned with him, and laide it to hys charge. But that ouer being ſomdeale rude for lack of conning, anſwered the Maior ſtubbernly, and would not be acknowen of his offence. Wherefore the Maior ſhewed his behauour both of worde and dede vnto the bench, by autoritie wherof after the matter had ben there at length debated, the ſaid Robert was fined at. l. pound to be paide toward the reparacyon of the conduites.

Anno domini. M.cccc.lxxix. Anno domini. M.cccc.lxxx.

Draper.
Barthilmewe James { Thomas Ilam. / Jhon warde. } Anno. xix.

The. xix. yere.

AND in this yere alſo one called Robert Deynis, for that that he preſumed for to mary an Orphan wythout the licence of the maior and Aldermẽ, was for that offence demed for to pay vnto the chamber as a fine twenty pound.

And in this yere and moneth of ,were foure felowes hanged at the Towre hill, and incontinẽtly their bodies with the gibbet brent vnto aſhes. whiche execucion was , for that they robbed a church & entreated the Sacrament of the aulter inreuerently.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.lxxx. Anno dñi. M.cccc.lxxxi.

Jhon Browne. { William Daniell. / william Bacon. } Anno. xx.

The. xx. yere.

THis yere king Edward requiredgreat ſummes of monei vnto him tobe lente of the citezyns of London. To whom after dyuers aſſembles, they graunted to lend vnto him fiue thouſãd marke. For yͤ leuying wherof, a mã was choſẽ of euery warde, that is to meane xxv.men. The which.xxv.perſons aſſembled in the Guildhall, ſeſſed all the city ouer with two perſons of euery pariſhe to them aſſigned, whiche ſaide.v.thouſande marke was repayed in the yeare folowinge.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxxi. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxxii.

William Hariot Draper { Robert Tate.
William Wiking.
Richarde Chawry } Anno.xxi.

The.xxi. yere.

Thys yere in the moneth of Februarye or ende of January, died Willyam Wiking one of the sheryffes, for whom was immedyately choſen Richard Chawry. And in the moneth of July nexte folowinge, the kinge rode on huntinge into the foreſt of Waltham, where he commaunded the Maior wyth a certaine of his brethen to come, and for to geue attendaunce vpon him with certaine comoners of the cytie. Where when thei were comen, the kynge cauſed the game to be brought before theim, ſo that thei ſawe courſe after courſe, and many a dere both red and falowe to be ſlaine befor theim.

And after that goodly diſporte was paſſed, the king commaūded his officers to bringe the Maior and his company vnto a pleaſaunt lodge, made all of grene bowes, and garniſhed with tables and other thinges neceſſary, where thei were ſet at diner, and ſerued with deyntye diſſhes, and of dyuerſe wines good plentie, as white, red and claret, and cauſed theim to be ſet vnto diner, or that he were ſerued of his owne, and ouer that cauſed the Lorde chaumberlaine with other lordes vnto him aſſigned, for to chere the ſaide Maior and his companie ſondrie times, while they were at dyner, and at their departinge gaue vnto them of veniſon great plentie.

And in the moneth of Auguſt folowing, the king of his great bountie ſent vnto the Mayreſſe and her ſiſters Aldermennes wiues, two hartes and ſixe buckes, with a tun of wine to drinke with the ſaid veniſon. The whiche venyſon and wine was had vnto the Drapers hall, vnto the which place at a day aſſigned, the Maior deſired al the Aldermen and their wiues, with ſondry comoners, and ther the veniſon with many other good diſſhes were eaten, and the ſaid wine merely dronken.

The cauſe of the which bountye thus ſhewed by the king, was as moſt men did take it, for that that the Maior was a marchaunte of wonderouſe aduentures into many and ſondry countreis. By yͤ reaſon wherof, the king had yerely of him notable ſummes of monie for his cuſtomes, beſide other pleaſures that he had ſhewed vnto the king befor times.

Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxxii. Anno domini.M.cccc.lxxxiii.

Goldſmith.
Edmund Shaa { William White.
Jhon Mathewe. } Anno.xxii.

The. xxii. yere.

The death of Edward the. iiii.

This yere, that is to meane of yͤ maior and beginninge of the. xxiii. yere of yͤ king, at Weſtminſter vppon the. xi. day of Aprill died the noble prince Edward the. iiii. late king of Englande. Whoſe corps was after conueied with due ſolempnity vnto Windſor, and there honorablye buryed, when he had reygned to recken his beginninge out of the land with all other time, ful. xxii. yeres, and as muche as from the fowerth day of Marche, vnto the nineth daie of Aprill, leauing after hym twoo ſoonnes, that is to meane, Prince Edward his eldeſt ſonne, and Richard duke of Yorke and three daughters, as Elizabeth, that after was quene, Cicile and Katherine.

¶ Edwarde the. v.

Edwarde the. v.

Edwarde the. v. of yͤ name and ſonne vnto Edwarde the. iiii. begā his reygne ouer the realm of Englande the. xi. day of Aprill, in the beginning of the yere of our Lord God M. cccc. lxxxiii. & the. xxiiii. yere of yͤ. xi. Lewes than king of Faunce.

Anon as king Edward the. iiii. was dead, grudge and vnkindnes began to take place betwene the kinges and the quenes allye. For the Lord Marques of Dorſet brother vnto the quene, and other of his affinitie, hadde then the rule and kepinge of the yonge kynge which at that time of his fathers death, was of the age of a. xi. yere or ther about, and ſo being in his guiding in the Marche of Wales, conueied him toward Lōdon, aud there to make prouyſion for hys coronacion, and for other neceſſary thinges for his weale. But the duke of Glouceter brother vnto Edward the. iiii. entending otherwiſe, as after ſhall appere, with a competent nomber of gentylmen of the North al clad in blacke, met with the kinge at Stoningſtretforde, and there after diſſimuled countenaunce made betwene him and the forſaid Marquis, dicharged him of the rule, of the kinge and tooke vpon him the rule, and ſo frō thence beyng accompanied with the Duke of Buckyngham, brought the king with all honour toward London. Wherof hearing quene Elizabeth mother vnto the king, fearinge the ſequele of thys buſineſſe, went or toke ſaintwary within Weſtminſter with her yonger ſonne Rycharde the duke of Yorke. And the king drawing nere vnto the citie, vpon the. iiii. day of Maye, was of the maior and his citizeins met at Harneſey parke, the maior and his brethren beyng clothed in ſcarlet, and the citezins in violet to the nomber of. v. C. horſes, and than from thence conueyed vnto the citie, the kinge beynge in blewe veluet, and all his lordes and ſeruauntes in blacke cloth, and ſo after conueyed vnto the byſhoppes palayes of London, and there lodged, and ſhortly after the ſayde duke of Glouceter inuegeld ſo the archbyſhoppe of Caunterburye named Bouchyer, that he wente with hym to

Howe the duke of Glonceter toke vpon him the keping of the yong king Edwarde the. v.

The receuing of the kinge by yͤ cytezins of London.

The kyng & his yong brother lodged in the towre.

him to the quene Elyzabeth, and there made ſuche aſſured promyſe to the ſaid quene, that ſhe vppon yͤ ſaid archbiſhops promiſe deliuered vnto them her yongeſt ſonne duke of Yorke. And than the ſaide duke cauſed the kyng to be remoued vp to the towre, and his brother with him. But the quene for all faire promyſes to her made, kept her and her doughter within the foreſaide ſaintwarye, and the duke lodged him ſelfe in Croſbies place in Biſhops gate ſtrete.

The duke of Gloceter admytted protectour

Than prouiſyon was made for the kinges coronacion. In which paſtime, the duke being admitted for lord protectour, cauſed ſir Antony Wideuile called lord Scalis and brother vnto the quene a vertuous knight, with the lorde Rychard yͤ quenes ſonne, ſir Richard Hawt, and ſir Thomas Vaghan knightes, to be beheded at Pomfreit, more of will than iuſtyce. Than the lorde protectour in furthering of his purpoſe and euil intent, ſent for the more party of the nobles of the lande, and behaued him ſo couertly in al his matters, that fewe vnderſtode his wicked purpoſe. And ſo dayly keping and holdinge the lordes in counſaile, and felinge their mindes, ſodainly vpō the.xiii.day of Juny being within the towre in the counſaile chamber with diuers lordes with him, as the duke of Bukingham, the erle of Derby, the Lorde Haſtinges then lorde Chamberlain, with diuers other, an outcrye by his aſſent of treaſon was made in the vtter chaumber. Where with the ſaide lorde protectour beinge warned, rooſe vp and yode him ſelfe to the chamber dore, and ther receaued in ſuch perſons as he had before apointed to execute his malicious purpoſe. The whiche continently ſet hande vpon the forenamed lord Chamberlaine and other. In which ſtirring the Earle of Derby was hurt in the face and kept a while vnder hold. Than by commaundement of the ſayd lord protectour, the ſaide lorde Chamberlaine, in all haſt was led in the court or plaine where the chapell of the towre ſtandeth, and there without iudgement or long time of confeſſion or repentaunce, vpon the ende of a long and great timber logge, which there lay with other for the repayringe of the ſaid towre, cauſed his hed to be ſmitten of, and all for he knewe well, that he would not aſſent vnto his wicked intent. Whoſe bodye with the head was after caryed vnto Windeſore, and there buried by the tombe of king Edwarde.

After which cruelty thus done he ſhortly after ſet in ſure keping ſuch perſons as he ſuſpected to be againſt him. whereof the biſhops of Yorke and of Elye were.ii.as it is ſaid. And the erle of Derby for feare of his ſonne yͤ lord Strange leaſt he ſhould haue arered Cheſſhire and Lancaſterſhire againſt hym, was ſet at large.

Than began the longe couert diſſimulacion, whiche of the lorde protector had been ſo craftely ſhadowed, to breke out at large, in ſo much that vppon the ſonday folowinge at Poules croſſe, him ſelfe with the duke of Buckyngham and other lordes being preſent, by the mouth of doctour Raffe Shaa in the tyme of his ſermon, was there ſhewed openly that the children of king Edward the fourthe were not ligitimate, nor rightfull enheritours of the crowne, with many diſclaunderous wordes in the preferringe of the tytle of the ſaid lord protectour, and in diſanulling of the other, to the greate abuſion of all the audience, except ſuch as fauoured ẏ matter which wer few in nomber, if the truth or plaines might haue bene ſhewed.

Of the whiche declaracion as the ſame went after, the ſayd doctour Sha toke ſuch repentaunce that he lyued in litle proſperytie after. And the more he was wondred of, that he would take vpon him ſuch buſines conſidering that he was ſo famous a man, both of his lerninge, and alſo of naturall wit. Than vpon the tuiſday folowing, an aſſemble of the comons of the cytie was apointed at the Guilhall. Where beinge preſent the duke of Bukingham with other lordes ſent downe from the ſaide lorde protectour, and there in the preſence of the maior and cominalty, reherſed the right and title that the lord protectour had to be preferred before his neues, the ſonnes of his brother king Edward, to the right of ẏ crowne of Englãd. The which proceſſe was ſo eloquent wiſe ſhewed and vttered without anye impediment of ſpittinge or other countenaunce, and that of a longe while, with ſo ſugred wordes of exhortaciõ and accordinge ſentence, that many a wiſe man that day maruailed and commended him for the good ordering of his wordes, but not for the intent and purpoſe the which thereupon enſued.

Upon the Tuiſdaye than nexte enſuyng beyng the twentie daye of June, the ſaid Protectour takyng then vppon hym as Kyng and gouernoure of the realme, wente with greate pompe vnto Weſtminſter, and there toke poſſeſſion of the ſame. Wher, he being ſet in the great hall in the ſea roiall, with the duke of Norfolke before called the lorde Haward vpon the right hande, and the duke of Suffolke vpon the left hande, after the royall oth there taken, called before him the iudges of the lawe, geuinge vnto theim a longe exhortacion & ſtreight commaundement, for the miniſtringe of his lawes, and to execute iuſtice, and that without delay. After whiche poſſeſſion taking, and other ceremonies ther done, he was conueied vnto the kinges palaies within weſtminſter and there lodged.

How the protectour toke vpon him as kig

J which paſſetime, the prince or of right kinge Edwarde the. v. with his brother the duke of York were put vnder ſure keping within the towre, in ſuche wyſe that thei neuer came abrode after.

The ſuppreſſion of Edwarde the. v. and of the duke of Yorke his brother

And thus ended the reygne of Edward the. v. when he had borne the name of a king by the ſpace of two monethes and a xi. dayes. And vppon the friday beinge the xxii. daye of Juny, was the ſayde lord protectour proclaymed thorough the citie king of England, by the name of Richard the third.

The lorde protectour proclaimed Kyng.

Then ſoone after for feare of the quenes bloud and other which he had in ielouſye, he ſente for a ſtrenth of men out of the North. The whiche came ſhortly to London a litle before his coronacion, and muſtred in the More feeldes well vppon. iiii. M. men in their beſte iackes and ruſtye ſalettes, with a few in white harneſſe not burniſhed to the ſale: and ſhortly after his coronacion were countermaunded home with ſufficient rewardes for their trauaile.

In whiche forſaied paſſetime, the Marques of Dorſet brother vnto the Quene Elizabeth, that before was fled, eſcaped manye wonderfull daungers both about London, Elye and other places, whereof, to wryte the maner and circumſtaunce, would aſke a long and greate leyſoure.

¶ Rychard the .iii.

Richarde the third.

Richarde the thirde of that name, ſonne to Rycharde late duke of Yorke, and yongeſt brother vnto Edward the .iiii. late king, began his dominion ouer the realme of England the .xx. daye of Mydſomer moneth, in the yeare of our Lorde God .M.cccc.lxxxiii. and the .xxv. yere of the .xi. Lewes than kinge of Fraunce. Of whom tedious it is to me to write the tragedyous hyſtory, excepte that I remember that good it is to write and put in remembraunce the punyſchment of ſinners, to the ende that other may exchew to fall into like daunger. Than it foloweth, anon as this man had taken vpon him, he fell in greate hatred of the more party of the nobles of his realme, in ſo much that ſuche as before loued and prayſed him, and woulde haue ieoparde life and good with him if he hadde remayned ſtill as Protectour, now murmured and grudged againſt him in ſuch wiſe that fewe or none fauoured hys party, except it were for dreade or for greate giftes that they receaued of him. By the meane whereof he wan dyuers to folowe his minde, the whiche after diſceaued him.

And after his coronacyon ſolempnized, whiche was holden at Weſtminſter the ſixte day of Iulye, where alſo the ſame day was crowned dame Anne his wyfe, he then in ſhorte proceſſe folowinge rode Northward to pacifye that country, and to redreſſe certayne ryottes there lately dooen.

In the paſſetime of the which iourney, he beeyng at Yorke, created his legittimate ſonne prince of Wales, and ouer that made hys baſtard ſonne captain of Calais, which encreaſed more grudge to hym warde as after ſhall appere.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.lxxxiii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.lxxxiiii.

Habardaſher
William Byllinſdon { Thomas Norlande
Wylliam Martin } Anno .ii.

The .ij. yere.

AND in this yere the forſaid grudge encreaſyng, and ẏ more for as moche as the cõmon fame wẽt that kyng Richard had within the Tower put vnto ſecrete death the twoo ſonnes of his brother Edwarde the iiii. For the whiche and other cauſes had, within the breaſt of the Duke of Buckyngham, the ſaied duke in ſecret maner conſpired againſt hym, ⁊ allied hym with diuers gentlemen, to the ende to bryng his purpoſe about.

But how it was his entente was eſpied, and ſo ſhewed vnto the king, and the kyng in al the haſt ſet for to take hym, he then beeyng ſmally accompanied at his manour of Brekenok in the Marche of Wales. Whereof the ſaied Duke beyng ware, in all the haſte he fled from his ſaied manour of Brekenock, vnto the houſe of a ſeruaunt of his own called Banaſter, and that in ſo ſecret maner, that fewe or none of his houſeholde ſeruauntes knewe where he was becum.

In the whiche paſtime, king Richard thinkyng that yͤ Duke would haue aſſembled his people, and ſo to haue giuen to him battaile, gathered to hym great ſtregth, and after toke his iourney Weſtwarde, to haue mette with theſaid Duke. But when the kyng was enformed that he was fled, anon he made proclamacions, that who ſo euer that might take theſaid duke, ſhould haue for a reward, a thouſande pounde of money, and the value of an hundred pounde in lande by yere, to hym and to his heires for euermore.

Wherof hearyng the foreſaid Banaſter, wer it for mede of the ſaied rewarde, or for feare of loſyng of his life and goodes, diſcouered the duke vnto the ſherif of the ſhire, ⁊ cauſed hym to bee taken, ⁊ ſo brought vnto Saliſburie, where yͤ kyng then laie.

The Duke of Buckingham beheded.

And albeit, that theſaid duke made importune labor to haue cum to the kinges preſence, yet that notwithſtandyng, he was beheded vpon the   daie of the moneth of   , without ſpeche or ſight of yͤ king. Then al ſoche gentlemen as had appointed to mete with theſaid duke, wer ſo diſmaied, that thei knewe not what to do, but thei that might fled the land, and ſum toke ſentuary places as thei might win vnto them. But the king, to the ende to let thē of their purpoſe, ſent to the ſea coaſtes, and ſtopped their waie in that he might And with a certain ſtregth rode vnto Exceter, where about that ſeaſon was taken ſir Thomas Selenger knight, and .ii. gētlemē, that one being named Thomas Rā, and that other   . The whiche .iii. perſones were ſhortly after beheded. And ſone after in Kent wer taken ſir George Broune knight, ⁊ Roberte Clifforde Eſquier, and brought vnto the toure of London. And vpon the   daie of October, the ſaid ſir George and Robert wer drawen from Weſtminſter vnto the toure hil, and there beheded And theſame daie were fower perſones, lately yomen of the crowne with Kyng Edward the foureth, drawen out of Southwarke through the Citee vnto Tibourne, and there hanged.

And when the king had ſped his iourney in the Weſte countrie, he haſted him toward London. Wherof the Maior and the Citezeins hauyng knowledge, made prouiſion to receiue him, and vpon that made purueāce for horſe with Violet clothyng and other neceſſaries.

Thomas Hill. { Richard Cheſter.
Thomas Britain.
Raffe Aſtraie. } Anno.iii.

The.iij. yere.

IN the beginnyng of this Maiours yere, and ſeconde yere of Kyng Richard, that is to meane vpō the xi. daie of the moneth of Nouēber, the Maior and his brethrē being clad in ſcarlet, and the citezeins to the number of.v.c.or mo in Violet, met the Kyng beyonde Kyngſton in Southerie, and ſo brought hym through yͤ Citee to the Warderobe, beſide the black friers, where for that tyme he was lodged . And in ſhort time after was ſir Robert Clifforde knight taken aboute Southampton, and from thēce ſent vnto the towre of London, and after arreigned and iudged at Weſtminſter, and from thens drawen vnto the toure hil. But when he came fore again ſaint Martins le graunt, by the help of a frier, whiche was his confeſſour, and one of thē that was next about hym, his cordes wer ſo louſed or cut, that he put him in deuour to haue entred yͤ ſeintuarie. And likely it had been yͭ he ſhould haue ſo doen, had not been the quick help and reſcous of the ſhrifes and their officers.

The whiche conſtrained him to lye doune vpon the Hardell, and newe band hym, and ſo haried hym to theſaid place of executiō, where he was diuided in twoo peces, and after his body with the hed, was conueied to yͤ friers Auguſtines, and ther buried before S. Katherins alter.

And in the moneth of Februarie followyng, died Richarde Cheſter one of the Shrifes. For whom was immediatly choſen Raffe Aſtraie, to continewe for that yere followyng. Kyng Richarde then leadyng his life in greate agonie and doubte, truſtyng fewe of ſoche as were about hym, ſpared not to ſpende the greate treaſour, whiche before kyng Edward the fowerth had gathred, in giuyng of great & large giftes. By meane whereof, he alonly waſted not yͤ great Treaſoure of his ſaied brother, but alſo he was in ſoche daunger, that he borowed many notable ſummes of money of the rich menne of this realme, and ſpecially of the citezeins of Lōdon, whereof the leaſt ſumme was fourtie pounde: for ſuretie whereof, he deliuered to theim good and ſufficient pledges.

In the whiche paſtyme many and ſundrie gentlemen, and diuers Sherifes, departed ouer the ſea into Fraunce, and there alied them with that vertuous Prince Henry, ſoonne vnto the Erle of Richemonde, diſcended linally from Henry the fourth, late Kyng of this realme, and couenaunted with hym, that if he would marry Elizabeth, the eldeſt daughter of Kynge Edwarde the fowerth, thei would with Gods helpe ſtrength hym to bee Kynge of Englande, and aide him in ſoch maner, that he and ſhe were or might bee poſſeſſed

ſeſſed of their rightfull inheritaunce. Emōg the which gētilmen, ſir James Blunt then keper of the caſtle of Guines was one, which wͭ him conueied the erle of Oxford, ẏ lōg tofore had ben priſoner within ẏ ſaid caſtle.

The landing of Henry ſon vnto the duke of Richemonde, whiche after was Kyng Henry the. vii.

Upon whiche agrement thus concluded, prouiſion by them & their frēdes was made, to ſaile into Englande. And after all thinges prepared, theſaid prince with a ſmall companie of Engliſhe, Frenche, & Britons, toke ſhipping in Fraunce or Britain and ſo laſtly landed in the port of Milbourne in the moneth of Auguſt. For whoſe defence of landyng, Kyng Richard for ſo moche as he feared hym little, made but ſmall prouiſion.

While theſe forſaied gentlmē of diuers coaſtes of Englande eſcaped, as aboue is ſaied ouer ẏ ſea, of that affinitie was one named William Colingbourne takē. And after he had ben holden a ſeaſon in priſon, he wͭ an other gētilman named Turbiruile wer brought vnto Guildehalle, and there arreigned. But theſaid Turbiruile was repried to priſon, and that other was caſt for ſundry treaſons, and for a rime, whiche was laied vnto his charge, that he ſhould make in deriſion of the Kyng and his counſaill, as foloweth.

The Cat, the Rat, and louel our Dogge,
Ruleth all Englande vnder a Hogge.

THe which was ment that Catiſbi, Ratcliffe, and the lorde Louell, ruled the lād vnder the kyng, which bare the white bore for his cogniſaunce. For the whiche & other, he was put to the moſte cruell death at the Towre hill, where for hym were made a newe paire of galowes, vpon the which after he had hanged a ſhorte ſeaſon, he was cut doune being aliue, and his bowels riped out of his belly, and caſt into the fire ther by him, and liued till the Boucher put his hande into the bulke of his body, in ſo moche ẏ he ſaied in theſame inſtāt: O lorde Jeſu yet more trouble, & ſo died to ẏ great cōpaſſiō of moche people.

Then to retourne vnto the noble prince and his companie whē he was cum vnto the land he incontinently kneled doune vpon the yerth, and with meke countenaunce & pure deuotion began this Pſalme. Iudica me deus, & diſcerne cauſā meā. &c. The which whē he had finiſhed to thende, and kiſſed the ground mekely, and reuerētly made the ſigne of the croſſe vpon him, he cōmaunded ſoche as wer about him, boldly in the name of God and S. George to ſet forwarde.

When ẏ lādyng of this prince was blowen aboute the lande, many was the man that drewe vnto him, aſwell ſoche as were in ſundry ſeintwaries, as other that were abroade, ſo that his ſtrēgth encreaſed ſhortly. Then the king gathered his power in all haſte, and ſped him in ſoche wiſe, that vpon the. xxii. daie of Auguſte, and beginnyng of the thirde yere of his reigne, he met with theſaid prince, nere vnto a village in Leiceter ſhire named Boſworth, nere vnto Leiceter, where betwene thē was foughten a ſharpe battaile, & ſharper ſhould haue been, if the kynges partie had ben faſt to hym. But many toward the fielde refuſed hym, and yode vnto that other partie. And ſum ſtode houyng a farre of, till thei ſawe to whiche partie the victorie fell.

Kyng Richard ſlain

In concluſion kyng Richard was ſlaine, and vpon his partie the duke of Norfolk before time named lord Haward, with Brakyngburie Lieutenaunt of the Towre, and many other. And among other was there taken on liue therle of Surrey, ſonne vnto the foreſaid duke of Norfolke and ſente vnto the towre of Lōdon, where he remained as priſoner long tyme after.

Then was the corps of Richard late king ſpoiled, & naked as he was borne, caſt behinde a a man, and ſo caried vnreuerētly ouertwharte the horſe backe, vnto ẏ friers at Leiceter. Where after a ſeaſon that he had lien, that al men might behold hym, he was there with little reuerēce buried. And thus with miſerie ended this Prince, whiche ruled moſtewhat by rigour and tiranny, when he in great trouble and agonie, had reigned or vſurped by the ſpace of two yeres.ii.monethes, and.ii.daies.

The ende of Richard the third.

And then was ẏ noble prince Henry admitted for king, and ſo proclaimed king, by the name of Henry the.vii. The whiche ſped him ſhortly to London, ſo that vpon the.xxviii. daie of theſaid moneth of Auguſt, he was by ẏ Maior and the citezeins met in good araye, as the Maior and Aldermen in ſcarlet, and the citezeins in violet, at Harneſey parke, and from thens conueied through the citee, vnto the Biſhoppe of Londons palais, and there for that tyme lodged.

And vpon the.xi. daie of October nexte folowyng, then beyng the ſweatyng ſickneſſe of newe begun, died theſaied Thomas Hill, then of London Maior. And for hym was choſen as Maior, ſir William Stokker knight and Draper, which died alſo of theſaied ſickneſſe ſhortly after. And then Jhō Ward Grocer was choſen Maior, whiche ſo continued till the feaſt of Simonde and Jude folowyng.

Francia.

Fraunce.

¶ Charles the.ix.

Charles the.ix.

KArolus or Charles the.ix. or.viii. of ẏ name, ſonne vnto the.xi. Lewes, began his reigne ouer the realme of Fraunce, the fowerth daie of September, in the yere of our Lorde God.M.cccc.lxxx. and fower, and the ſeconde yere of Richard the.iii. at that tyme king of Englande.

This Charles was noble of wit, and meke of condition, the whiche his father would not ſet to learnyng of letters in his youth, leſt that by ſoche ſtudy he ſhould at his lawfull age, haue thereby the more refrained him from knightly and marciall actes. But when he cam to mans eſtate, he then was greatly ſory, and would ſaie full often with his familiers, a prince is greatly blemiſhed, when he lacketh cunnyng of lecture. He was alſo in his youth ſo weake & impotente, that he lacked naturall ſtrẽgth, as was accordyng vnto his age, in ſo moche yͤ he might not go. And when he ſhould ride he had alwaie on either ſide of the horſe twoo men to ſtaie him and to giue on him like attendaunce. Then after ſolempnitie of his Coronation ended at the Citee of Raines, whiche there was ſolempnized with greate pompe, vpon the Sondaie next enſuyng the feaſt of S. Denis, commiſſions were ſent out into all coaſtes of his dominion, for to enquire of al ſuperfluous giftes, giuen before time by his father, the which ſhortly after wer reſumed into the kinges hands. And in that ſeaſon, Oliuer Dãman, whom Lewes had in many greate romes and offices ſet, and by his daies had him in ſinguler loue & fauour, in ſo moche as before I haue ſhewed in the ende of the ſtorie of the ſaied Lewes, he made a ſpeciall requeſt vnto this Charles his ſoonne, that he ſhould ſpecially cheriſhe this ſaied Damman, now was appeached of treaſon, with one Daniell a Fleming. The which after inquiſicion of them made bothe after the lawe of that lãd were iudged vnto death, and ſo put in execucion of hangyng. Whoſe death of the nobles and eſtates of the realme was little rued, conſidering the rome that he bare by Kyng Lewes daies, and the ignobilite of his birth, as an handecraftie man & Barbour.

And after whoſe death a Metrician compiled theſe Verſes folowyng.

SVnt tua criminibus redencia tempora tonſor,
 Currere que ſubito prouida parca vetat,
Hoc poteras olim longe prenoſcere Damma,
 Vt ſaltem horrores tollere cede pios.
Te natura humilem cum mater Flandra tuliſſet
 Arte vna noras radere ceſariem,
Hunc talem & ſeruum te ſepe Lutetia vidit,
 Tutus ab hac poteras ducere ſorte dies,
Raptus ad excelſam Lodowici principis aulam
 Mox herebi furias, moribus ante venis,
Et caput huic tondens, dum ſuffers lingere ficos,
 Pre ducibus regi, regulus alter eras.
Quid tibi non licuit, ſoboles tam dira Neronis,
 Nemo non vixit, te reſerente reus,
Nemo dei ſacra cenſuram, nemo gerebat,
 Grandia, qui renuit promere dona tibi,
Protenus exilium, vel mors, vel mulcta negantem,
 Preſſit, eres Iudex, lictor, & exitium.
Regnaſti, ſatis eſt, ſurgunt noua ſydera mundo,
 Turba ſceleſtorum, territa luce fugit,

Agnoſce o tonſor,quo te ſcelus extulit atrox,
Et te precipitem depulit in laqueos.
Te daniel,te dira cohors,te memmius odit,
Et ſcelerum auctorem,damnat & inſequitur.
Neſcio quid de te ſuperi vel fata deponunt,
Seu lictore cades,ſeu cruce liber eas.
Vna tamen vulgi conſtans ſententia,furcas
Expetit,vt faciet,te pereunte odium
Interea vinctus,culpas abſterge gemendo,
Peccaſti,morte eſt nunc redimenda ſalus.

¶The which metre or verſes to them that haue
none underſtandyng in Latine,maie be expounded in maner as foloweth.

The laughyng times with their crimes ſpent,
Thou Barbour are ronne,the whiche by ſodaine fate,
Are now forboden.Whereof the clere entent,
Thou might haue knowen Damma right well the ſtate,
When thou by meanes whiche were inordinate,
Put vnto death many an innocent man,
By cruell malice,and well remembred than.

That of lowe birth Flaundres thy mother thee fed,
And taught thee a craft,the heare well to ſhaue,
Lutecia that citee where thou thy life led,
Witneſſeth thee a ſeruaunt therin thy liuing to craue,
And for thy daies an honeſt life to haue,
But when thou were in Lewes court vp brought,
Then had thou no minde that thou were cum of nought.

But like the hell hounde thou waxed full furious,
Expreſſyng thy malice when thou to honour ſtied,
Thinking for ſo moche as that Prince bounteous,
His hed and beard to thee he nought denied,
And with all worldly pleaſure he alſo thee allied,
Thee before his princes making his gouernour,
Thy ſelf thou blindeſt,with worldly vain honour.

Whiche made thee ſo proude, thou ſonne of hard Nerō,
That none might liue that thou accuſed of crime,
No man was curſed nor none had puniſſion,
That would thy hande with golde of giftes lime,
And who that not his gift offred in time,
Other death or exile vnto him was ſone applied,
For as iudge and hangman thou all thing exerciſed.

Thou raigned long inough, but now are ſprongen new,
Sterres to the worlde, and fled is now clerely,
The ſcelerat flocke. Wherefore thou Barbour yet rewe,
Thine odious actes whiche haue thee ſodainly,
Caſt doune from wealth in ſnares bitterly,
For alſo Daniell thy moſte odious feere,
Dampneth thee of crime whiche with thee dieth here.

I knowe not what of thee the vpper bodies aboue,
Haue defined, whether by ſworde or by gibet,
Thou ſhould ende thy life. But one thyng I approue,
The ſentence wholy of the people is ſet,
That on a galowe thou ſhould paie death his debte,
Inwardly therefore bewaile ſo thine offence,
That by this death, to God thou maieſt make recompence.

Thus executiō of this Dāman and his felowe ended and finiſhed, to the litell compaſſion of the people, within fewe daies after, an other of the affectionat ſeruauntes of kyng Lewes, named Jhō Doyacon, for treſpaſſe and hatred, by his occaſion and deſerte vnto the common people, was with all ſhame brought to the market place of Paris, & there beraft of bothe his eares. After whiche vilonie to hym doen, he was there right baniſhed the courte for euer.

And thus twoo of the moſte ſpeciall and dereſt beloued ſeruauntes and counſailours of kyng Lewes, were ſhortly after his death brought vnto confuſion. By reaſon whereof as affirmeth mine auctour Gagwin aroſe a Prouerbe emonge the Frenche men, ſaiyng: Principibus obſequi hereditariū nō eſſe. The which is to meane, the ſeruice of Princes is not hereditable. This time thus paſſed with many other matters, whiche I ouer paſſe, the ſeaſon approched that variaunce and enuie begā to moue emong ſome nobles of the lande, in ſo moche that the Duke of Orleaunce diſdained, that Anne ſiſter to yͤ king, with ſoche as ſhe would call to counſaile, had all the rule about the king. Wherefore he entēdyng to haue the ſaied rule, for ſo moche as he had married that other doughter of Lewes, gathered vnto him ſtrength of knightes, purpoſely to remoue from the king ſoche as he liked, and to ſet aboue hym ſoche perſons as he thought conuenient.

A prouerbe

But how it was for lacke of wiſe orderyng of his people, or other negligence, at a place called ſainct Albones, he was takē of his aduerſaries, and ſo by the kyng commaunded to priſon, to the caſtell of Biturience, where he remained lōg tyme after. It was not long after, that Maximilian the whiche had married duke Charles doughter of Burgoin, gathered his ſoldiours, to haue releued the foreſaied duke

of

11999

of Orleaunce out of priſon, but he preuailed not.

Duryng whiche war, Frances duke of Britain died, whoſe doughter named Anne, and enheritour of that Duchie, Maximilian had before trouthplited for his lawfull wife, wherefore he hearyng of the death of theſaid Frances, ſhortly entred the territorie of Britaine, and ſeaſed it for his. But Charles with his Frenchmen withſtode hym, by ſoche force that he was conſtrained to aſke helpe of our ſoueraigne Lorde kyng Henrie the. vii. The whiche in moſte bounteous maner aided and aſſiſted him, bothe with men and money, to the Kynges excedyng greate charge and coſt. Howbeit in the ende the Frenche kyng had his entente, and then married the ſaied Anne Ducheſſe of Britain, and refuſed Margaret the doughter of Maximilian, which he before had married at Ambaſſy, as before I haue ſhewed to you in thende of the ſtorie of his father Lewes. After whiche victorie thus obteined by this Charles in Britaine, he made claime and pretence vnto the lande of Scicilia, or Scicilie. And by the exhortacion and ſtirryng of the biſſhop of Rome Alexander the ſixte, he with a ſtronge hoſte entered the ſame, bothe by land and by water. To whō was a great aide the duke of Milaine, by whoſe meanes he ſhortly wan a ſtrong citee or toune named Campania, and diuers other tounes, and in proceſſe Naples, yͤ chief citee that belonged vnto the kyng of Naples. In ſo moche that he conſtrained Alphonce, that then was Kyng of Naples ⁊ of Scicile, to forſake that coūtrie, and ſo had the dominiō of the more part of both theſaid countries. The whiche when he had ſet in ſoche order, as he thought conueniente, he tooke his iourney homewarde into Fraunce thorowe Italy. In whiche paſſage this Charles was beſett of the Venicians and other Italians, the which entēded to haue ſtopped his waie, and metyng with hym at a place called in Latine Fornouiences, gaue vnto hym battaile. Wherof as ſaith mine aucthoure, he wan the victorie to his greate honour, conſidering his fewe ſoldiours againſt their multitude and ſtrength.

But to this ſaiyng repugne the Italians dwelling in London, and ſaie that if the ſaied Charles had not ſped hym faſtly into Fraunce, he had not comen there that yere. But how ſo it was, he retourned home in ſauetie. And ſone after Alexander biſſhop of Rome, toke ſoche diſpleaſure againſte the ſaied Charles, that he ſtirred almoſte all christen princes of the world againſt hym, he had ſoche hatered to the greate honour of the Frenche Kyng (as ſaieth myne aucthour Gagwine) the which in all his workes, extolleth the deedes of Frenche men further, then maie be verified in moche of his writyng.

The charitie of the biſſhop of Rome.

And thus theſaied Gagwine endeth yͤ ſtorie of theſaid Charles, in the yere of our lorde God M. cccc. xcv. and the. xi. yere of the reigne of theſame Charles, then preſently reignyng & guydyng the Realme of Fraunce, whiche was the tenthe yere of our moſt redoubted prince king Henry the ſeuenth.

And here accordyng to my firſt ſaiyng, in the beginning of this rude woorke, I make an ende of the ſeuenth parte and whole woorke, the ſeuenth daie of Nouember, in the yere of our Lorde Jeſu Chriſtes incarnacion. M.D.iiii. and the .xx. yere of our moſte chriſten and dread ſoueraigne lorde Kyng Henrie, after the conqueſt of that name the ſeuenth. For whiche expedition and good exploite that I haue had, in the accompliſhyng of this woorke, wherein is concluded to reken frō the landyng of Brute in this Iſle of Albion, vnto the firſt yere or beginning of the reigne of our moſte dread ſaid ſoueraigne lorde .ii. M.vi. C.and.xx. yeres, I giue thanks vnto almightie God.

And thus endeth the ſeuēth parte, the whiche from the firſt yere of William Conqueroure, to the laſt yere of Richarde the third, includeth .cccc. yeres.

Lenuoye.

IImas adeſt, preceſſit opus, ne liuidus aſſis.
Lector habent mendas, denia prela ſuas,
Quoduis ingenium, quadam vel parte redundat,
Vel rude, vel mancum eſt, vel graue, vel fluidum,
Concio crebra tibi, culpatur furta Maronis,
Eſt Cicero elumbis, pes tibi naſco celer.

Non ſatis hiſtorie, Criſpi prefatio quadrat.
Nil adeo cultum, liuor iniquus habet,
Non minus hoc poterit tantillum capere morſor,
Leſerit illuſtris cum fera lingua viros,
Sed quid agas reſidem, traxabit inertia mutum,
Scriptorem riſor, extenuabit inners,
Audendum tamen eſt, ſpernendi mille latratus,
Occidet a buſto murmur & inuidia.

¶The whiche verſes to theim that been vnlettered, maie bee Engliſhed in maner and forme followyng.

An ende of this boke, or of this rude warke.
Here is now fined, whereof the ſentence proceadeth,
Thou that ſhalt it read, be thou laie or clarke,
Be not enuious, conſider how it leadeth,
The reigne of Princes. And where as mendemēt nedeth,

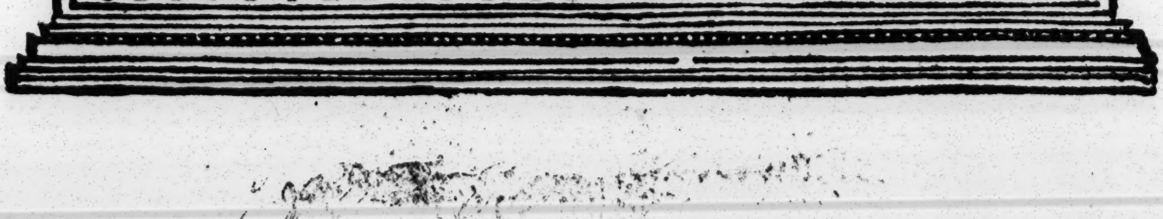
If thou expert be, the fautes thereof amende,
And him aſcribe no ſclaunder, that did but well entende,

Conſider euery ſcience, in part that it is ſoche,
To rude or to curious, to brief, or to long,
Sum blamyng Liuius, for that he wrote ſo moche,
Sum other Virgile, and Cicero emong,
For he was to ſcarſe. Salus that dities ſong,
So excellently, yet is he not vnblamed,
So that to all men, nothyng is duely framed.

Then ſin the olde writers, whiche were ſo excellent,
Might not all men pleaſe, with their famous writyng,
No maruaile though I, whiche neuer cunnyng hent,
Might order this matter to euery mannes likyng,
And ſpecially vnto ſoche, as haue their delightyng,
Euer with ſclaunder, moſte writers to lacke,
And barke while thei maie, to ſet good writers a backe.

But though that ignoraunce and deriſion been met,
And reproue the maker in all that thei can,
Why ſhould any good worke, for their malice be let,
For though thei grudge and ſcorne, yet euery good man,
Will take the entent, and praiſe the maker than,
And hym allowe for his labours deede,
And require of God, that he maie haue his meede.

¶Here endeth Maſter Fabians Chronicle.



¶Here followe the notes of the raignes of Kyng Henry the ſeuenth, Kyng Henrie the eight, Kyng Edwarde the ſixte, and Quene Marie: in ſoche order as Maſter Fabian hath vſed here before.

King Henry the.vij.

Henry the ſeuēth of that name ſonne vnto the erle of Richmōd beganne his dominion ouer yͤ realme of England, the.xxii.daie of Auguſt, in the yere of our lord God M.cccc.lxxxv. and the ſeconde yere of the eighte Charles then Kyng of Fraunce. And the.xxx. daie of October folowing with great ſolempnitie theſaid Henry was crouned at Weſtminſter

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.lxxxv. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.lxxxvi.

Hugh Brice Goldſmith. { Jhon Tate. / Jhon Swan. } Anno.i.

This yere a preſt was made to the kyng of twoo thouſande.li. of the whiche the Mercers, Grocers, and Drapers lēte nine hundred thirtie ſeuen pounde, and ſixe ſhillynges.

The coronation was holden at Weſtminſter, the thirtie daie of October.

And this yere Wheat was at three ſhillynges the buſhell, and baie ſalt at theſame price.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.lxxxvi. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.lxxxvii.

Sir Henry Colet. { Jhon Perciuall. / Hugh Clopton. } Anno.ii.

AND in this yere the king maried king Edwardes eldeſt doughter named Elizabeth.

This yere was ſlain at Stokfield, the erle of Lincolne.

And in the moneth of Septēber, was borne prince Arthur.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.lxxxvii. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.lxxxviii.

William Horne. { Jhon Fenkill. / William Remyngton. } Anno.iii.

IN this yere was yͤ quene crouned at Weſtminſter, vpon S. Katheris daie.

And this yere was a preſte of fower thouſande pound, wherof Mercers, Grocers, and Drapers,

pers lent .xvi. C.xvi. pounde.

And this yere was an other preſt of twoo thouſand pound.

And this yere Jhon Aſhley, with other twoo, were putte in execution at the toure hill.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.lxxxviii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.lxxxix.

Robert Tate Mercer. William Iſaak. Rafe Tinley. Anno .iiii.

AND in this yere the commons of the North ſlewe the Erle of Northumberlande, and Chamberlaine their capitain with diuers other wer after at Yorke hanged.

This yere was the taxe of the tenthe penie of mennes landes and goodes.

This yere was the fielde of Dikiſmew in Flaũders, foughten by the lorde Dawbeney.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.lxxxix. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xc.

William White. William Capell. Jhon Broke. Anno .v.

IN this yere one named Roger Shauelocke ſlewe hymſelf. For whoſe goodes was buſineſſe betwene the kinges almner, and the Sheriffe. But the almner obtained.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xc. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xci.

Thomas hille. Henry Coot. Robert Reuell. Hughe Pemberton. Anno .vi.

IN this yere died Roberte Reuell Seriffe, and in his ſteade was choſen Hughe Berton. And in Marche ſir Robert Chamberlain knight was beheded.

And this yere was a great beneuolẽce graunted vnto yͤ kyng for his iourney into Fraunce, wherunto the felowſhip of the Drapers graunted more, then any other felowſhip of the citie, and euery alderman of London on that time being, paied Volente & nolente, twoo hundred pounde. Ouer whiche ſumme the comoners ſumme extended to nyne thouſande, ſixe hundred .lxxxii. pounde .xvii. ſhillynges and fower penies. And this yere was a buſhell of wheate at twentie and twoo penies.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xci. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xcii.

Mercer. Hugh Clopton Thomas Woode. William Browne. Anno .vii.

IN this yere a yoman of the crowne named was putte to death at Tyburne for treaſon.

And in this yere was the citee of Garnarde gotten by the kyng of Spaine.

And in this yere was ſir James Parker knight ſlain in iuſtyng at Richemont, with a gētleman named Hugh Vagham

Alſo in the monethe of September, the Kyng toke his voyage toward Fraunce.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xcii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xciii.

Skinner William Martin
Williā Purchaſe
William Welbek
Anno.viii.

This yere vpon the.xi. daie of Nouēber, was redde a letter in the Guilde hall, that ſhewed of peace cōcluded betwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce. And the.xvii. daie of December followyng, the kyñg lāded at Douer. And the Saterdaie before Chriſtmas, he came to Weſtminſter.

Vpon the.xvii. daie of Maie were fower men put to death at Tibourne for treaſon.

And this yere in the moneth of October, and ende of this Maiours yere, was the fraie made vpon the Eſterlynges, by the Commons of the citee, and ſpecially Mercers ſeruauntes.

Anno dñi.M.CCCCxciii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xciiii.

Rafe Aſtraie Fiſhemonger.
Robert Fabian.
Jhon Wingar.
Anno.ix.

And in this yere in the beginnyng, an enquerie was made for the riot fornamed, for the whiche many young men were puniſhed by long impriſonmēt. Alſo vppon the.xxii.daie of Februarie, were reigned at the Guild hall fower perſones, named Thomas Bagnall, Jhon Scot, Jhon Heth, and Jhō Kenington, whiche wer taken out of ſainct Martins Santuarie, whereof thre wer put to death at Tiburne, and Thomas Bagnall was had vnto the toure of London. And the.xxvi. daie of theſaied moneth, with the foreſaied thre perſones was put in execution, William Bulkeley a yoman of the kynges chamber, and a Duchman.

This yere wheat was at ſixe penies a buſhell, and baie ſalte at thre penies halfe penie.

Weate at vi.d.a buſhell, & baie ſalt at thre d. halfpeny

And this yere Doctour Hille biſhop of London, purſued greuouſly Perſie, then Prioure of Chriſtes churche in London.

And in this yere was the roiall feaſte kepte in Weſtminſter hall, by the kyng.

This yere at in the ende of Aprill was brent in Smithfielde an old woman for heriſie, whiche was called mother Yongue.

And this yere the fiftene day of Auguſt, were reigned at the Guilde halle, one named Jhon Norfolke, and an other named Jhon White, and conuicte for baudrie, & ſet vpon the pillorie.

Anno dn̄i. M.cccc.xciiii. Anno dn̄i. M.cccc.xcv.

Salter. Nicholas Alwin.
Richard Chawrie Anno.x.
Jhon Warner.

THis yere, the daie that the Maiour tooke his charge, in the after noone came through the citee, Henry Duke of Yorke, a childe aboute fower yeres of age, towarde Weſtminſter, ridyng vpon a courſer, with many goodly gentle menne to conueigh hym.

And vpon the. ix. daie of Nouember folowyng, was holden a goodly Juſtes, within the palais of Weſtminſter. Whereof were the chalengers, ſer Williā de la Pool then duke of Suffolk therle of Eſſex, ſir Robert Curſon, and Jhon Pechie Eſquire.

Alſo this yere aboute Chriſtmas, ſir Robert Clifford, which before was fled the lande, came againe and apeached ſir Williā Stanley, then chamberlaine to the kyng, of treaſon. Whiche ſir William vpō the. xv. daie of February folowyng, for the ſaied treaſon was beheded at yͤ toure hill. And theſame ſeaſon was adiudged to death at the Guild hall, the Deane of Poules, a famous doctour and preacher, the Prouinciall of the black freres, and the Priour of Langely, the Parſone of ſaint Stephens in Walbroke, named doctor Suttō ſir Thomas Thawtes knighte, Robert Ratcliffe, Williā Dawbeny, William Creſſener eſquire with Sir Simonde Monforde knight, and mo other, whereof, the more parte was pardoned.

And this yere was white heryng at fourtie penies a barell.

White heryng at.iii. s.iiii.d. a barell.

And this yere began the firſt trouble of William Capell Alderman.

And in Julie Perkin wͭ his rebelles arriued in Kent, which named hymſelf Richard, ſecond ſonne of kyng Edward the.iiii.

And in theſame moneth was doctour Draper, perforce borne out of Poules, and ſo led to Lābeth, for a variaunce that then was betwene the Biſhopes of Cauntorburie and London.

And ſone after was hanged in ſondrie coaſtes of Englande, an hundred and odde perſones, of the forenamed rebelles.

And this yere was a Parlament holden at Weſtminſter.

And alſo in yͤ moneth of October, was an exceding thunder

Anno dn̄i. M.cccc.xcv. Anno dn̄i. M.cccc.xcvi.

Mercer. Thomas Keneſworth
Sir Henry Collet. Anno.xi.
Henrie Somer.

THis yere, the. xvi. daie of Nouember, was holdē the Sergeauntes feaſt, within the biſhop of Elies place.

This yere was yͤ bodie of Richard Hakēdies wife, taken vp in S. Marie hill church whole that had lien in the grounde ouer an hundred and xx. yeres.

And this yere was great buſines for ẏ entercourſe betwene Englande and Flaunders.

And in this yere the Kyng of Scottes made ſharpe warre vpon the Marches.

And this yere many Lollers ſtoode with faggottes at Poules croſſe.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xcvi. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xcvii.

Jhon Tate Mercer { Jhon Shaa.
Richard Haddon. } Anno.xii.

IN ẏ latter ende of October, by greate counſaile holden at Weſtminſter, was graunted to the Kyng, for defēce of the Scottes, C.xx. thouſande. li.

The.xxviii. daie of Nouēber, was Poules churche ſuſpended by a fraie of twoo yong men.

And in theſame moneth, was graunted to the kyng a preſte of the citee of fower.M. pounde. And theſame moneth at Calais was beheded ẏ lorde Fitzwater.

The.xvi. daie of Januarie, a parliamēt began, wherby was graunted twoo diſmes and an halfe, twoo aides and twoo fiftenes, to leaue the foreſaied. C. and twentie thouſande pound.

And in the moneth of June and.xvii. daie wer the Corniſhmen diſcomfited at Blackheth.

Blackehethfielde.

And vpon the.xxviii. daie of June, the Smith and a gentleman named Flammoke, twoo capitaines of theſaied rebelles, wer put in executiō at tiburne. And ſhortly after the lorde Audeley, whiche was hed capitain of theſaied rebelles, was put to death at the toure hill.

And this yere was concluded a marriage, betwene my Lorde Prince, and the kynges doughter of Spaine.

This yere alſo the Kyng ſent into Scotland an armie, vnder the guiding of therle of Surrey and the lorde Neuile, the which made ſharpe warre vppon the Scottes. And in the moneth of October Perkin lāded in Cornwaile, and aſſailed the toune of Exceſter and other tounes. But finally he tooke the ſaintuarie of Beaudly, and after was pardoned of his life.

Anno dñi. M.cccc.xcvii. Anno dñi. M.cccc.xcviii.

Mercer.
William Purchaſe { Bartholomewe Rede
Thomas Windought } Anno.xiii.

AN in this yere vppon the xxviii. daie of Nouember, the ſaied Perkine was brought through the citee vnto the toure, and there lefte as priſoner. And with hym a tall yoman, ſumtime Sergeaunt Ferrer to the Kyng, whiche Ferrer, and one named Edwarde, were ſhortly after put to death at Tiburne. Vpon S. Nicholas daie, was a proclamation made thorowe the citee, of peace betwen the realmes of Englande and

Scotlande, for terme of bothe kynges liues.

And in December a Carpenter called Godfrey, tooke doune the wethercocke of Paules ſteple, and ſet it vp again.

And this yere in Chriſtmas weke, was a part of the kynges palais of Richmount brent.

And this yere vpõ the nineth day of June, the fornamed Perkin beyng at large in the kyngs court, went ſecretly awaie, and laſtly went the father of Sion.

And after the ſecond pardon, to hym by the Kyng graunted, he was ſhewed at Weſtminſter, and in Chepe ſide, with moche wondermente, and finally had to the toure, and there kepte.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xcviii

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xcix.

Sir Jhon Perciuall.	Thomas Bradbery Stephen Jenins.	Anno.xiiii.

This yere, vpon the xxx.day of October, came my lorde prince through yͤ citee, with an honorable compaignie toward Weſtminſter. And vpõ Shroue Tuiſday was put in executiõ at S.Thomas of Watryng, a ſtreplyng of.xx.yeres of age, which had aduaunced hymſelf to bee the ſonne or heire, to the erle of Warwikes landes, and was the ſonne of a Cordiner of London

And this yere Maſter Jhon Tate alderman, began the new edifiyng of ſ.Anthonies church

The edefiing or buildyng of S. Anthonies churche.

And this yere the ſixtene day of July, beyng Sundaie, and vpon the Sundaie followyng, ſtoode.xii.heretikes at Poules Croſſe, ſhrined with faggottes.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xcix.

Anno dñi.M.D.

Nicholas Alwin.	James Wilforde Richard Bronde	Anno.xv.

In this yere, the.xvi.daie of Nouember was arreigned in White halle at Weſtminſter, the fornamed Perkin, and three other. The which Perkin, and one Jhon Awater, were put ſhortly after to execution at Tibourne. And ſone after was the erle of Warwik put to death at the toure hill, & one Blewet & Aſtwode at Tiburne.

And this yere in Maie, the Kyng and the Queene ſailed to Calais. And this yere was Braham in Northfolke brent.

And in July was an olde heritike brent in Smithfielde.

And in this yere was a great death in London, whereof died ouer twentie.M.of all ages.

A greate death in London.

This yere died doctour Morton Cardinall, and Chauncelloure of Englande, in the moneth of October.

Anno dñi.M.D.

Anno dñi.M.D.i.

William Remingtõ.	Jhon Hawes. William Stede.	Anno.xvi.

IN this yere the.xxi.daie of Decēber, in the night was an hidious thunder. This yere was the name of the kings palais of Shene chaũged, and called after yͤ daie Richmount.

The departyng of the Duke of Suffolke, ſecretly.

And this yere in Auguſte departed ſecretly out of this land, the Duke of Suffolke.

And the fowerth daie of October landed at Plimmouthe; Katherin doughter of the kyng of Spaine.

And this yere was finiſhed by maſter Tate, the Churche of ſanict Anthony.

Anno dñi.M.D.i.

Anno dñi.M.D.ii.

Sir Jhon Shaa. { Sir Laurence Ailemer.
Henry Hede. } Anno.xvii.

The beginning of the Maioꝛs riding about the citee.

IN this yere began the Maiour and his bꝛethꝛen, to ride to the barge, & other places. Upon ſainct Erkenwaldes day was my loꝛde pꝛince married, to the kyng of Spaines doughter.

And this ſeaſon the Duke of Buckyngham with other, was chief chalenger, at a royall Juſtes and Turnie, holden in the palais of Weſtminſter.

And this yere came a greate ambaſſade out of Scotland, by reaſon whereof, concluſion of marriage was made, betwene the kyng of Scottes, and dame Margarete, eldeſt doughter to our ſoueraigne Loꝛde.

Alſo this yere was an exceadyng greate fiſhe taken, neare vnto Quinbourgh.

The death of Pꝛince Arthure.

And in Marche ſir William of Deuonſhire, ſir James Tirel and his eldeſt ſoonne, and one named Welboꝛne, were arreſted foꝛ treaſon. And in Apꝛill followyng, died the noble pꝛince Arthur, in the toune of Ludlowe.

And vpon the laſte daie of Apꝛill, were ſet vpon the pilloꝛie twoo yong men, foꝛ defamyng of the Kynges counſaill, & their eares cut of. Alſo aboute this tyme the Graie friers, wer compelled to take their olde habite ruſſet, as the ſhepe doeth dye it.

In the ſixe daie of Maie, James Tirell, and ſir Jhon Windham knight, wer beheded at the toure hill. And a Shipman foꝛ theſame treaſon, was theſame daie dꝛawen to Tibourne, and there hanged and quartered.

And ſone after a purſeuaunt named Curſon, and a yoman called Matthewe Jones, were putte in execution at Guiſnes, and al was foꝛ aidyng of ſir Edmonde de la Pool.

Alſo this yere aboute Midſomer was taken a felowe, which had renued many of Robin Hodes Pagentes, whiche named himſelf Grenelef. And this yere began the new werke, of yͤ houſes of office, within the Guilde hall of London. And in thende of October, was Pꝛocliamed a peace, betwene the kyng, an the archeduke of Burgoin. And the Sundaie befoꝛe ſ. Simond and Jude, was ſhewed a bul, by vertue whereof were denounced at Poules Croſſe as accurſed, Sir Edmonde de la Poole, late duke of Suffolke, ſir Robert Curſon knight, and fiue other perſones And all ſoche as aided any of them again the kyng.

Anno dñi. M.D.ii. Anno dñi. M.D.iii.

Goldſmith. Henry Keibell.
Bartholmewe Rede. Anno.xviii.
Nicholas Nints

IN this yere began yͤ newe werke of the Kynges Chapell at Weſtminſter. And vpon the leuenth daie of February, died Quene Elizabeth within the toure, liyng in childebed. And vppon the firſte Sundaie of Lent, was ſolemply accurſed at Poules Croſſe, wͭ belle and candell, ſir Edmonde de la Poole, ſir Robert Curſon and other, and all that them aided again the kyng.

Monkeſhe charitee.

And in thende of the moneth of Marche, was the Prioure of the Charterhous at Shene ſinfully murdered, with an other Monke of the ſame hous, by ſiniſter meanes of a Mõke of the ſame place named Godwin, and and other miſchiuous perſons.

Marchaũt Taillours

And this yere the Felowſhip of Tailours of London, purchaſed a graunt of the kyng, to bee called Marchaunte Taillours.

And the eight daie of Auguſt was the Kyng of Scottes married vnto the eldeſt doughter of the kyng.

Alſo in July were areined at the Guildhall, Oliuer Saincte Jhon, Robert Simpſon, Welliſborñ before named, Pool baily of Thoroke, and fower other all being caſt for treaſon, wherof the ſaied Oliuer and Poole, with twoo ſhipmen, wer put in execution at Tibourne, and the other were pardoned.

Anno dñi. M.D.iii. Anno dñi. M.D.iiii.

Draper. Chriſtoffer Hawes.
Sir William Capell. Robert Wattes. Anno.xix.
Thomas Granger.

IN this yere the.xiii. daie of Nouember, in the Palais of the Archbiſhop of Canterburie at Lãbeth, was holden the Sergeauntes feaſt. And the.xxi. daie of Nouember, in the beginning of the night, was a dredfull fire vpon yͤ North ende of London bridge.

And vpon the ſeuenth daie of January, were certaine houſes conſumed with fire, againſt S. Botulphes churche in Thamis ſtrete. Vpõ the.xxv. daie. of January, began a Parliament at Weſtminſter.

And the.xxvii. day of March, was an hous brent againſt S. Martins Le Graunt. And the ſame daie was hurt doen with fire, in the Pariſhe of Saincte Peters the Poore.

And in the forenamed Parliamente, was ordeined a newe coigne of ſiluer, as Groces, half Groces, and Shillynges, with halfe faces.

And in the foreſaid parliament was graunted to yͤ kyng, an aid of.xxxvi.M.li. And a correction was deuiſed for clipped grotes.

Anno dñi.M.D.iiii. Anno dñi.M.D.v.

Jhon Winger Grocer. { Roger Achilley. William Browne } Anno.xx.

A graunte made by yͤ Citezeins, for the confirmation of their liberties.

THis yere the Citezeins of London graunted to the Kyng.v.M. Markes, for confirmation of their liberties. Whereof a.M.marke was paid in hande, and fower.M.marke in fower yeres next enſuyng.

Vpō ſainct Georges daie the kyng went in proceſſiō in Poules churche, where was ſhewed a legge of ſaincte George cloſed in Siluer, whiche was newly ſent to the kyng. And vpon the.xxv.daie of Aprill, was a mony maker, one of the coyners of the toure drawen to Tibourne, and there hanged. And the latter ende of this yere, came the third Cappe of maintenaunce, from the biſhop of Roome.

Anno dñi.M.D.v. Anno dñi.M.D.vi.

Fiſhmonger. Thomas Kneiſworth. { Richard Shore. Roger Groue. } Anno.xxi.

THis yere vpon Twelfe euen, the kinges chamber at Richmont was brent.

And vpon the euen of ſainct Maury begā an hidious wind, whiche endured vpon.xi. daies folowing more or laſſe, in continuall blowyng, by mean wherof, yͤ wedercocke of Poules was blowen doune, and moch other harme dooen. And by force of this tempeſte the Archeduke of Burgoin was driuen to land in the weſt countrey.

And vpon the ſecond ſondaie in Lent, ſtoode at Poules croſſe the Priour of ſainct Oſies, and fiue other heretikes.

Edmonde de la Pool ſent to the Toure as priſoner.

And in thende of the moneth of Marche, Sir Edmonde de la Pool was conueighed through the Citee vnto the Toure, and there lefte as priſoner. And in Maie moneth was the lorde of Burgeuenie committed to the toure, for a certain diſpleaſure, whiche concerned no treaſon.

This yere a newe builded galerie fell in the night at Richemounte.

Anno dñi.M.D.vi. Anno dñi.M.D.vii.

Sir Richard Haddon { William Copinger. Thomas Jhonſon. William Fitz William } Anno.xxii.

ANd in this yere about Chriſtemas, was the Bakers hous in Warwike lane brente.

And this yere was a wonderfull eaſie and ſoft winter, without of ſtormes or froſtes.

And this yere the king of his goodneſſe deliuered out all priſons in London, as many priſoners as laſe for.xl.s.and vnder.

And this yere was Thomas Kneiſworth late Maiour, and his twoo Sheriffes, condempned to the Kyng in greate ſummes of money, ouer painful priſonmente, by them in the Marſhalſie ſuſteined.

Anno dñi.M.D.vii. Anno dñi.M.D.viii.

Mercer.
William Browne { William Butler / Jhon Kirkby } Anno.xxiii.

THis yere in the ende of April, died the ſaied William Browne, and for hym was immediatly choſen Sir Laurence Aſlemer, for the reſidue of the yere.

Anno ſupradicto. Anno ſupradicto.

Sir Laurēce Aſlemer. { William Butler. / Jhon Kirkby. } Anno predicto.

IN this yere vpon the laſt daie of Junie, was an houſe in Southwarke, nere vnto the bridge conſumed with fire.

And this yere was ſir William Capell again put in vexation, by ſute of the kyng, for thinges by hym doen in the tyme of his Maioralte.

Anno dñi.M.D.viii. Anno dñi.M.D.ix.

Taillour
Stephin Jenins. { Thomas Exmewe. / Richard Smith. } Anno.xxiiii.

IN the beginnyng of the Maiors tyme, ſir William Capell, after his priſonment in the Countoure and Sheriffes houſe, was by the kinges counſaill commaunded to the toure, where he remained til the king died, and ſhortly after was deliuered with many other. And in likewiſe was ſir Laurēce Ailemer dealt with, and committed to the ward or hous of Richard Smith Sheriffe, and there remained as priſoner, by ẏ ſpace aboueſaied.

The death of king Hēry the.vij.

This yere vpō the Saterday next before ſainct Georges daie in the night, whiche Saterday was the.xxi.daie of April, died the kyng our ſoueraigne Lorde at his manour of Richemount, vpon whoſe ſoule and all Chriſten, Jeſu haue mercie. Amen.

And ſo this foreſaied noble Prince reigned.xxiii.yeres, and eighte monethes, and one daie thereof lackyng.

THis magnificent and excellent Prince Henry the vii. thus paied to death his debte of nature, as before is ſaid. Of whom ſufficient laude and praiſe cā not be put in writyng, cōſideryng the continuall peace & tranquilitee, whiche he kept this his land and commōs in, with all the ſubduyng of his outwarde enemies, of the realmes of Fraunce and Scotlande by his greate pollicie and wiſedome, more then by ſhedyng of chriſten bloud, or cruell warre. And euer ruled ſo mightely his ſubiectes, and miniſtered to thẽ ſoche Juſtice, that not alonely thei loued and dread him, but al chriſten princes hearyng of his glorious fame, were deſirous to haue with him amitie and alliaunce. And for that he in all tẽporall policies and prouiſions, exceded all princes by his tyme reignyng, diuers Biſhoppes of Rome, as Alexander the ſixte, Pius the third, and Julius the ſeconde, by their times either of them ſonderly with auctoritie and conſente of their ſpirituall and diuine cõſaill, elected and choſe this excellent Prince, and admitted hym for chief defenſor of Chriſtes churche, before all other Chriſten princes. And for a confirmation of theſame, ſente vnto this inuincible Prince, by three ſondrie famous ambaſſades, three ſweardes, with three cappes of maintenaunce. What might J write of the ſtedfaſt cõtinencie, great iuſtice, and mercifull dealyng of this Prince. What might J report of his excellent wiſedome, and moſte ſugred eloquence, or of his innouable pacience, and wonderfull diſcretiõ. Or what ſhould J tell of his moſte beautifull buildinges, or excedyng charges of maniſeſt reperations, and ouer all this, of his excedyng treaſoure and riches innumerable. But as who would ſaie, to conſider in order all his notable actes, whiche would aſke a long tract of tyme, with alſo the liberall and ſumptuous endowemente of the Monaſterie of Weſtminſter and other, to write, mighte conclude that his actes paſſed all the noble actes of his noble progenitours ſine the conqueſt and maie moſt congruly aboue all yearthly princes, be likened vnto Salomon kyng of the Jſraelites, and be called the ſecõde Salomon, for his greate ſapience and actes, by hym doen his liues tyme executed. All whiche premiſſes tenderly conſidered, euery naturall Engliſhe manne now liuing, hath cauſe ⁊ ought deuoutly to praie for the ſoulle of this moſte excellente Prince, Kyng Henry the ſeuenth, that he maie attaine that celeſtiall manſion, whiche he and al true chriſten ſoules are enheritours vnto, the whiche GOD hym graunt. Amen.

And the rather bicauſe of the excellente vertuous bryngyng and leauyng vnto vs, by Gods aide and prouiſion, of our moſt gracious and moſte dread Souueraigne Lorde Kynge Henrie theight of that name, as rightfull enheritour vnto the twoo Crownes of Englande and of Fraunce. The whiche beganne his moſte gracious raigne, the
twentie and twoo daie of
of Aprill, in the yere
of oure Lorde
GOD.
a thouſande fiue
hundred and
nyne.

King Henry the.viij.

OUR moſte gracious Souereaigne lorde Kyng Henry the eighte, beganne is reigne the twentie and twoo daie of Aprill, in the yere of our Lorde God, a thouſande fiue hundred and nine and was crouned at Weſtminſter, in the feaſt of the Natiuite of ſaincte Jhon Baptiſt, in the Maiours tyme after named.

Anno dñi.M.D.ix. Anno dñi.M.D.x.

Mercer.
Thomas Bradbury { George Monox. Jhon Doket. } Anno.i.

This yere in Auguſte was beheded Empſon & Dudley, and in the ſecond yere of the king, but in theſame maiors tyme.

Sir William Fitzwilliā diſfraunchiſed, bicauſe he would not be Sheriffe.

Anno dñi.M.D.x. Anno dñi.M.D.xi.

Henry Keibell. { Jhon Milborne. Jhon Reſt. } Anno.ii.

PRince Henrie borne at Richemonde on Newyeres daie, and iuſtes kepte at Weſtminſter.

And on Saincte Mathewes daie the prince died, in the third yere of the king, and in the time of Keibell.

Anno dñi.M.D.xi. Anno dñi.M.D.xii.

Draper.
Roger Achiley { Nicholas Shelton. Thomas Mirfin. } Anno.iii.

This yere was the Lorde Darcy ſent into Spain, to aide the king of Spain againſt the Mores, but peace was made before his arriuyng, and ſo retourned.

This ſame ſeaſō was ſir Edward Pounynges ſet into Gelderlande, to aide the Prince of Caſtell.

The ſame tyme Lorde Haward tooke Andrewe Barton, and an hundred Scottes, and twoo faire Shippes.

Anno dñi.M.D.xii. Anno dñi.M.D.xiii.

William Copinger. { Robert Holdernes. Richard Haddon knight. Robert Fenrother. } Anno.iiii.

This yere was Edmonde de la Poole beheded, and the Lorde Marques Dorſette was ſent into Spaine with ten.M. men.

menne, and did moche hurte in Guiam, and retourned in Winter, by reaſon of the flix, and on ſainct Laurences daie, the fifte yere, the Regent and the Carick were brent, whiche were twoo greate ſhippes.

Sir Edward Haward, lorde admirall of Englãde, was ſlain on ſainct Markes daie in Britain, by to moche hardineſſe.

Theſame yere in June, the kyng beſieged Turwin, and diſcomfited the power of Fraunce at Boomie, and tooke the citees of Turwin, and Turney, and retourned without any moare battaill offered.

Duryng whiche time, yͤ king of Scottes enoyed Englande, with an hundred thouſand mẽ, and was ſlaine hymſelf, and a leuen Erles, by the erle of Surrey, the Kynges Lieutenaunte, wherefore, the Kynge created hym afterwarde, Duke of Norfolke, and his ſoonne Erle of Surrey.

Anno dñi.M.D.xiii. Anno dñi.M.D.xiiii.

Mercer
Willyam Browne { Jhon Dawes. / Jhon Bruge. } Anno.v.

THe ſaied Dawes died within yͤ yere, and in his place was choſen Roger Baſforde.

Anno dñi.M.D.xiiii. Anno dñi.M.D.xv.

Draper
George Monox. { James Yarforde. / Jhon Mundie. } Anno.vi.

THis yere was a peace concluded, betwen England and Fraunce. On ſaintt Denies daie, in the moneth of June, the.vii. yere of the Kyng, the Frenche Kyng married the Ladie Mary, the kynges ſiſter, and he died on Newyeres daie after, and therefore the Kyng ſent for her again, by the Duke of Suffolke, and other.

This yere alſo was Richard Hunne, hanged in Lowllars toure.

Anno dñi.M.D.xv. Anno dñi.M.D.xvi.

Grocer.
Sir Willyam Butler. { Henry Worley / Richard Grey. } Anno.vii.

THe ſaid Grey died within the yere, and for him was choſen Willyã Baily. In February was borne at Grenewiche the ladie Mary, the Kynges doughter.

In Aprill the Frenche quene came into Englande, and was married to lorde Charles Duke of Suffolke. This yere Margarete Quene of Scottes, ſiſter to the king, fled into Englãde, and laye at Harbottell, and ſhe was deliuered of a doughter, called Margaret. And came to Londõ in Maie, in theight yere of the Kyng, and taried there a whole yere, before ſhe retourned.

Anno dñi. M.D.xvi. Anno dñi. M.D.xvii.

Jhon Reſte Grocer.
Thomas Seimour.
Richard Thurſton.
Anno .viii.

THis yere was ſoche a froſte, that all men wͭ cartes, might paſſe betwene Weſtminſter & Lambeth.

On Maie euen this Maiors yere, the beginnyng of the .ix. yere of the kyng, was an inſurrectiō of yong perſones, againſt alienes, of the whiche diuers were put to execution, and the reſidewe came to Weſtminſter, with halters aboute their neckes, and were pardoned.

And the .xviii. daie of Maie folowyng, the Quene of Scottes retourned, to her countrey againe.

Anno dñi. M.D.xvii. Anno dñi. M.D.xviii.

Goldſmith.
Sir Thomas Exmew
Thomas Baldry
Richard Simond.
Anno .ix.

THis yere the Terme adiourned to Oxēford, and againe to London.

In October in the tēth yere of the Kyng, the Admirall of Fraunce came into Englande, and Tourney was deliuered to the Frenche kyng.

Anno dñi. M.D.xviii. Anno dñi. M.D.xix.

Skinner.
Thomas Mirfin.
Jhon Aleine.
James Spencer
Anno .x.

AND in this yere at Frankforde, Charles the .v. was elected Emperour. The Erle of Surrey ſent into Irelande.

Anno dñi. M.D.xix. Anno dñi. M.D.xx.

Mercer.
Sir James Yarforde
Jhon Wilkinſon.
Nicolas Partrich
Anno .xii.

THe Kyng and the Frenche king met at the campe, betwene Arde and Guiſnes, where were greate triumphes. After that the Kyng and the Emperoure met, and the Kyng went to Grauelin with hym, and he came to Calais with the kyng, and had greate chere, and the kyng retourned.

Anno dñi. M.D.xx. Anno dñi. M.D.xxi.

Draper.
Sir Jhon Bruge
Jhon Skeuinton.
Jhon Kembe.
Anno .xii.

And this Maiors yere, and the thirten of the king, the duke of Buckingham was beheaded the ſeuentene daie of Maie.

In June folowyng, the Cardinalle wente to Calais, to entreat a peace, betwene the Emperour and the Frenche Kyng, and taried there till December, without any thyng concluded.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxi.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxii.

Draper.
Sir Jhon Milborne.
Jhon Breteine.
Thomas Pargetour
Anno.xiii.

In this Maiours yere and the fowertene of the Kyng, the Fridaie before Penthecoſte, that is to ſaie, the ſixe daie of June, Charles the fifte Emperour, was honourably receiued into the Citee of London of the Maior, Aldermen, & comunalte our ſoueraigne lorde accompaniyng hym. And from London he went to Windſore, and ſat in the ſtal of the Garter, and from thens wente to Hampton, and ſailed ouer the ſea into Spain.

Duryng whiche tyme, therle of Surrey, lorde Admiral brent Morles in Britaine, and after landed at Calais, and entered Picardie, and brent tounes and Caſtles, and beſieged Heſdyng, but bicauſe of Winter, he raiſed his ſiege, and retourned.

This Summer the Duke of Albanie was entryng Englãde with a greate armie, but when he heard that the Erle of Shrowesburie, was commyng to fight with hym, he toke a truce for ſixe monethes.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxii.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxiii.

Goldſmith.
Sir Jhon Mundie
Jhon Rudſtone.
Jhon Champnies.
Anno.xiiii.

Chriſtierne Kyng of Denmarke came into England in June. In the.xv. of the kyng, the Erle of Surrey brent Jedworth, and many other tounes in Scotlande.

In this Maiours yere, the Turcke beſieged the Rhodes, and vpō Chriſtmas daie he toke it.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxiii.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxiiii.

Mercer.
Sir Thomas Baldry.
Mighell Engliſhe
Nicholas Jevins.
Anno.xv.

And this yere, the Duke of Suffolk wẽt into Fraunce with.x.M.mē, and paſſed yͤ water of Some without battail, and toke and deſtroied many tounes, and in December returned.

The ſame yere the duke of Albany beſieged yͤ caſtle of Warke and hearyng of the erle of Surreys commyng with a great armie, he cowardly fled.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxiiii. Anno dñi.M.D.xxv.

Draper. Raufe Dodmer.
Sir William Bailay. Anno.xvi.
William Roche.

And in this yere came from the Emperoure the lorde of Campher and other Lordes. Alſo out of Scotlande came the Biſhop of Dunkell and other, as Ambaſſadours. On ſaincte Mathias daie was the Frenche kyng taken by the Emperour.

A muting in Norfolk & Suffolke, for paiment of money.

A peace concluded, betwene Englande and Fraunce.

The Frenche kyng deliuered in Marche.

This Maiours yere, and the xvii. of the kyng, in September was the coigne enhaunced.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxv. Anno dñi.M.D.xxvi.

Mercer Jhon Cauton.
Sir Jhon Aleine Anno.xvii.
Christopher Aſcue

Anno dñi.M.D.xxvi. Anno dñi. M.D.xxvii.

Mercer Stephan Pecocke.
Sir Thomas Seimour Anno.xviii.
Nicholas Labart.

In this yere the Citee of Roome, by the Viceroye of Naples, and the duke of Burbõ the ſame Duke beeyng firſte ſlaine, was taken and almoſte deſtroied, and Clement the.vii. then Biſhop of Roome, and diuers of the Cardinalles there founde, wer taken and brought into captiuitee, and vnder the rule of Charles the Emperour. This yere corne began to faile.

The Cardinalle wente into Fraunce wͭ great pompe, where he cõcluded a leage, betwen the kyng, & the French kyng, which bothe defied the Emperour, and ſente an armie into Italie, and in September in the.xix. of the kyng, he retourned.

In October the.xix. yͤ greate Maſter of Fraunce came vnto London with greate triumph, for concluſion of the ſame leage

Anno dñi.M.D.xxvii. Anno dñi.M.D.xxviii.

Vintener. Jhon Hardie.
Sir James Spencer. Anno.xix.
William Hollets

This yere corne was verie deare, and had been dearer, if marchaunts of the Stiliard had not been, & Duch ſhippes reſtrined, and an abſtinaunce of warre, betwene Englande and Flaunders.

This Maiors yere, and.xx. of the kyng, was the ſweatyng ſickeneſſe, for the whiche chauſe, there was no watche at Midſomer. On ſainct Denis daie, in the twentie yere of the kyng, a Legate came from Roome.

Anno dñi. M.D.xxviii.
Anno dñi. M.D.xxix.

Draper.
Sir Jhon Rudſtone { Rauſe Warren. Jhon Long. } Anno.xx.

And in June, the.xxi. yere of the Kyng, the Legates ſat at the Blacke Freres, for the kynges mariage.

And in October, the Cardinall was depoſed of the Chauncellourſhip.

This twentie and one yere was a peace concluded, betwen the emperour and the kyng.

Anno dñi. M.D.xxix.
Anno dñi. M.D.xxx.

Mercer.
Sir Rauſe Dormer { Mighell Dormer. Walter Champion. } Anno.xxi.

A Parliamente for ennormities of the Clergie.

Themperor was crouned at Bonomy, this yere in February

Anno dñi. M.D.xxx.
Anno dñi. M.D.xxxi.

Salter.
Sir Thomas Pargetor { William Dauncy. Jhon Cloppyng. } Anno.xxii.

This yere was the French kynges childrẽ deliuered.

One boiled in Smithfield for poiſonyng.

The Cardinall died on ſaint Andrewes euen.

Anno dñi. M.D.xxxi.
Anno dñi. M.D.xxxii.

Grocer.
Sir Nicholas Lamberd. { Richard Greſhã. Edward Altam. } Anno.xxiii.

And in this yere the Kyng began to builde his palais at Weſtminſter.

In this yere Griffeth Riſe beheded for treaſon.

In October and the.xxiiii. yere, the king went ouer the ſea and met with the French kyng.

Anno dñi. M.D.xxxii.
Anno dñi. M.D.xxxiii.

Habardaſher
Sir Steuen Pecocke { Richard Rainolde. Richard Pinchon Jhon Mertine. } Anno.xxiiii.

And in this yere, the kyng was by due proces of the lawe, diuorced from Lady Katherine, his brothers wife, and thã he married ladie Anne Bollein, whiche was crouned Queene on Witſundaie.

In the twentie and fiue yere of the Kyng, in this Maiours tyme.

On Midſummer daie followyng, died the Frenche Quene, wife vnto the duke of Suffolk.

And on the euen of the Natiuitie of our Ladie followyng, was borne the Lady Elizabeth at Grenewiche. This ſaied.xxv. yere was enacted, that no man ſhould ſue any appele to Rome.

Anno dn̄i.M.D.xxxiii.
Anno dn̄i.M.D.xxxiiii.

Draper.
Sir Chriſtopher Aſcue
William Forman.
Thomas Kitſon.
Anno.xxv.

IN this yere one Wolfe and his wife were hāged, for killyng of two marchauntes ſtraungers on the Thamis.

Alſo in Aprill, was a Nunne called the holy maide of Kente, twoo Monkes, and two Freres hanged and headed for treaſon, blaſphemie, and Hypocriſie.

This yere was a peace concluded with Scotlande.

This yere was the biſſhop of Roome, with all his falſe vſurped power, abholiſhed quit out of this realme.

Anno dn̄i.M.D.xxxiiii.
Anno dn̄i.M.D.xxxv.

Skinner.
Sir Jhon Chamneies
Nicholas Leueſō
William Denhā.
Anno.xxvi.

THis yere therle of Kildare died in the toure, and his ſoonne rebelled & ſlue the biſhop of Deueling: wherfore yͤ king ſent ſir William Skeuintō thither.

This yere was graunted to the Kyng, the firſte Frutes, and the Tenthes of all Spirituall poſſeſſions.

In June, in the.xxvii. yere. the biſſhop of Rocheſter, and ſir Thomas Moore beheaded, for deniyng the kyng to be ſupreme hed of the churche of England.

And this ſaied yere were thre Monkes of the Charter hous, executed for the ſame offence.

Anno dn̄i.M.D.xxxv.
Anno dn̄i.M.D.xxxvi.

Mercer.
Sir Jhon Aleine.
Humfrey Monmoth.
Jhon Cotes.
Anno.xxvii.

AND in Januarie died Ladie Katherin princes dowager, & is buried at Peterborough

This Maiours yere, and the xxviii. of the kyng, was Quene Anne, the lorde Rocheford, Noris, Weſton, Brerton, and Markes attainted of treaſon and beheded: and the kyng married ladie Jane Seimour.

And in October followyng, beganne a fooliſhe comotion in Lincolneſhire, and an other in Yorkeſhire, by the meanes of yͤ Lorde Darcie, the lorde Huſey, ſir Robert Coneſtable, and Robert Aſke, whiche onely by the kynges wiſedome, and his prudent counſaill were appeaced, without bloudſhedyng.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxxvi.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxxvii.

Mercer.
Sir Raufe Warren.
Richard Paget.
William Bowyer.
Anno.xxviii.

AND in December the Thamis was ouer froſen, wherefore yͤ kyng and the Queene rode through London, with a goodly compaignie.

In Februarie was Thomas Fitz Garet, and.v. of his vncles hanged, drawen, and quartred. The lorde Darcie, ſir Fraunces Bigot, ſir Roberte Coneſtable and other, begun a newe conſpiracy, in the.xxix. yere, which wer attainted, and put to death in June. And on ſainct Edwardes euen folowyng, was prince Edwarde borne at Hampton courte. The.xxiii. daie of October following, died quene Jane and is buried at Windſore.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxxvii.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxxviii.

Sir Richard Greſham
Jhon Greſham.
Thomas Lewen.
Anno.xxix.

AND in this yere began the Collection for the poore, and a great nõber cured of many greuous diſeaſes, through the charitie thereof.

In Maie, in the.xxx. yere of the king, was Frere Foreſt hanged and brente in Smithfielde for treaſon and hereſie, with yͤ Image of Daruell Gathren in Walles.

This yere all Idolatrie was forbidden, and diuers Images, that had engines to make their iyes open and ſhutte, and other limmes to ſtirre, and many other falſe iuglynges wer eſpied out and deſtroied. All Freres, Monkes, Chanons, and Nons, chaunged their new found garmentes, forſoke their Cloiſters, and ſo cam home again to their mother churche, this.xxx.yere.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxxviii.

Anno dñi.M.D.xxxix.

Sir William Forman.
William Wilkinſon
Nicholas Gibſon.
Anno.xxx.

THis yere in Decẽber was the Marques of Exceter, the Lorde Mountacute, and ſir Edward Neuel, beheded for high treaſon duely proued.

And in Maie, in the.xxx.yere of the kyng, the citezeins of Lõdon muſtered all in bright harnes, and coates of white ſilke, with white clothe, and chaines of gold, in iii. great battailes, to the great wonder of ſtraungers

Anno dñi.M.D.xxxix.

Anno dñi.M.D.xl.

Sir William Holeis
Jhon Fairie
Thomas Huntlowe
Anno.xxxi.

AND in Nouember wer the Abbottes of Redynge, Glaſtenburie, and Colcheſter attainted of highe Treaſon, and like traitours put to death.

The. xxviii. daie of July folowynge Thomas Cromwell, late Erle of Eſſexe, and Walter Lorde Hungerforde, were beheded at the toure hill, for treaſō.

And the thirtie daie followyng, were Barnes, Garet, and Hierom brente: Abell, Powell, and Fetherſtone, were drawen, hanged & quartered in Smithfielde.

In this Somer was a great heate, and droughte, ſo that in many places, the people would haue giuen one Buſhell, for the grindyng of an other.

This ſaied. xxxii. yere, diuers & many honeſt perſones, died of the hoate agues, and of a great laſke, through the realme.

This. xxxii. yere was the biſhoppe of Chicheſter, and Doctor Wilſon, deliuered out of the toure, vpon the kynges pardon.

Anno dñi. M. D. xl. Anno dñi. M. D. xli.

Sir William Roche. { William Laxton.
Sir Martin Bowes } Anno. xxxii.

THis yere the collection for the poore people ceaſed.

In December wer Egerton and Harman put to execution, for counterfeiting the kinges greate ſeale.

This Winter was very cold, moche froſt & ſnow, and a great many beaſtes died thereof.

This yere the Kynges grace, began great buildynges at Calais, and Guiſnes.

In April. Anno. M. D. xli. in the. xxxii. yere of the Kyng, certain prieſtes and laie men, begā a newe cōmotion in Yorkeſhire, whiche were ſhortly taken, and put to execution in diuers places, of whiche Laigh, and twoo other wer put to death at London, the. xxviii. daie of Maie, in the. xxxiii. yere of the kyng. And for that offence, was ſir Jhon Neuell knight, drawen, hanged and quartered at Yorke, on Corpus Chriſti euen folowyng, and thirtie hanged for roberie.

This. xxxiii. yere the ſixe daie of Maie, there was a Proclamation, whiche now is a lawe, that the Bible ſhould be had in euery Pariſhe Churche, within this realme, ready for all ſortes of people, to reade, and to heare Gods worde, at cōueniēt times.

In the. xxxiii. yere, and the xxvii. daie of Maie, the Counteſſe of Saliſburie beheded.

The. ix. daie of June followyng, were twoo yomen of the kynges garde, hanged at Grenwiche for roberie, in example of all other.

And the tēth daie of the ſame June, Sir Edmonde Kniuette, knight, arreigned in the kinges halle there, for giuyng a blowe, within the Kynges hous, and ſhould haue loſt his hand, if the kynges maieſtie, had not extended his mercie towardes hym.

The. xxii. daie of July followyng,

wyng, there was an other Proclamation, which is a law likewiſe, that no holie daie ſhall be kepte, excepte our Ladie daies, the Apoſtles, Euangeliſtes, S. George, and ſainct Marie Magdalen, and that ſainct Marke ſhall not be taken, ne kepte as a faſtyng daie, nor Saincte Laurence euen. Neither that children ſhould bee decked, ne goe aboute vppon ſainct Nicholas, ſainct Katherin, ſainct Clemēt the holie Innoces, and ſoche like daies.

Alſo the. xxviii. daie of the ſame July, was the lorde Leonarde Grey, beheaded at Toure hill, for diuers treaſons doen in Ireland, while he was the kinges deputie there.

Theſame daie were thre gentlemen called Mantell, Roidon and Froudes, hanged at ſaincte Thomas Wateryynges, for committyng a ſhamefull murther, and makyng an vnlawfull aſſemble, cōfirmed by a ſedicious othe in Suſſex, in Maie laſt, in the compaignie of the lord Dacres of the South, whiche lorde Dacres was on ſaincte Peters daie followyng, ladde from the Toure through London by the Sheriffes, on foote to tibourn, and there hanged.

The kinges progres to Yorke with prouiſiō for the receiuyng of the Scottiſhe kyng.

And the firſte daie of Julie, was a Welſhman drawen, hanged, and quartered, for Propheſiyng of the Kynges Maieſties death.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.xli. Anno dn̄i. M.D.xlii.

Sir Mighel Dormer. { Sir Rouland Hill.
Henry Suckely. } Anno. xxxiii.

IN this yere the tēth daie of Marche, there was a maide boiled in Smithfielde, for poiſonyng diuers honeſt perſons, that ſhe had dwelled with, in the citee of London.

This yere came in the Erle of Deſmonde, and the great Oneil out of Irelande, and did ſubmit theim to the Kynges maieſtie, and after their ſubmiſſion, the greate Oneill was created Erle of Tyron, and his ſoonne Baron of Doncannon.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.xlii. Anno dn̄i. M.D.xliii.

Jhon Cotes Salter { Henry Hoblethorne
Henry Hancotes. } Anno. xxxiiii.

THis yere the froſt dured ſo longe, that many of the poore people cried out, for lacke of woode and coales, that the Maior wente to the woode warfes, and ſolde to the poore people billet and faggot, by the peniworthe.

Alſo, this yere was an acte of Parliament for wood and coal to kepe the fulle ſiſe, after the Purification of our Ladie, that ſhall be in the yere of our lorde M. D. xliii. that no man ſhall

bargaine,

bargain, ſell, bryng or conueigh of any other ſiſe, to be vttred or ſold, vpon pain of forfaiture.

This yere the eightene day of July, was brente at Windſore three perſones, that is to ſaie, one ſir Anthonie parſon prieſt, and twoo ſeculer men, and the third had the kynges pardon.

Alſo this yere was Proclaimed in the citee of London, the third daie of Auguſt, open war betwene our ſoueraigne Lorde the kyng, and the French kyng, ſo that the kings highnes gaue licence and aucthoritee, to euery of his ſaied ſubiectes, to vſe theſaid Frenche kyng, and all yͭ depende vpō hym, to their moſte aduaũtage and commoditie, as his Maieſties enemies hath in ſoche like caſe, heretofore been vſed and accuſtomed.

Anno dñi. M.D.xliii.

Anno dñi. M.D.xliiii.

Draper { Jhon Roules
Sir William Bowyer { Sir Raufe Warren kni. } Anno. xxxv.
Richard Dobbes }

This yere died ſir Willyā Bowyer, and after hym was choſen Sir Raufe Warren for the reſt of the yere.

This yere was a great death in London, which continued ſo long, that there was no Terme kept at London at Mighelmas but was remoued to ſainct Albones, and there kept.

In the yere of our lord. M.D xliii. and the. xxxvi. yere of king Hēry theight, in the tyme of the Maioraltie of ſir Raufe Warrē the Kynges maieſtie ſent an armie into Scotlande, the fourth daie of Maie, & landed at Lith, and ſo wente burnyng and deſtroiyng the countrey aboute, ſparyng neither caſtell, toune, pile ne village.

The borough and Toune of Edenbrough, with the Abbaye called Holie Roode houſe, and the Kynges palaice adioynyng to theſame, were deſtroied.

The toune of Lithe alſo, and the hauen & pire deſtroied. The caſtle and village of Cragmiller the Abbaie of newe bottell, and parte of Muſkelborowe toune, the chapel of our Ladie of Laurret, Preſtō toune, and the caſtle of Harington Toune with the Freres, and Nunrie, a Caſtle of Oliuer Sanckeres, the Toune of Dundebarre, Laureſtō with the Graunge. Drilawe, Weſtercrag, Enderlaugh. The Pile & yͤ toune, Broughton. Cheſter felles, Crawned, Dudiſtone, Stāhouſe. The Fiker, Beuerton, Tranent, Shenſtone. Marcle, Tarpren, Kyrlande hille, Ratherwike. Belton, Eaſt Barnes Howlād, Butterdē, Quickwoe, Black bourne. Raunton, Bildi and the toure. And many other townes and villages brent by yͤ flete vppon the ſea ſide, with a greate number of piles and villages, whiche I can not name nor rehearſe, which wer deſtroyed & left deſolate, Kincorne S. Miuers, yͤ quenes Fery, part of Petinwaines, and other diuers thinges doen by therle of Hartforde, lieutenaunt to the kyng.

It

At Lith in Scotlande, were made fourtie and fiue knights.

Alſo this yere the Kyng prepared an armie into Fraunce, and thither he went his owne perſon, and beſieged the ſtrong toune of Bulleine in Fraunce, as here after ye ſhall heare.

The. xiiii. daie of Julie, the kynges maieſtie departed from Douer, toward Caleis.

The. xv. day of July, the king remoued to Morgiſen, and ther camped one night.

The. xxvi. daie of July, the armie remoued to high Bullen and there camped, on the North Eaſt parte of the toune.

The. xxvii. daie of July, the duke of Suffolke laied ſiege vnto high Bullen, and there camped on theaſt part of the toune.

The. xxviii. daie of July, the watche toure, otherwiſe called the olde man, was won.

The. xxix. daie of July, Baſe Bullein was won.

The. xi. daie of September, was made a greate larum, and the Caſtell was ſo ſhaken with gunpouder, ẏ the ſtones which weighed thirtie pound weight did flee. xx. ſcore of, the whiche not a litle greued thenhabitors to their daily paines ⁊ tormēts.

The. xiii. daie of September the toune was victoriouſly conquered, by kyng Henry theight, kyng of England, Fraunce and Irelande, defender of the faith, and in yearth ſupreme heade, of the Churche of Englande and Irelande: whiche after the entreatie ⁊ humble petition, made of the Frenche men, gaue them licence to take bagge ⁊ baggage with them, and ſo to departe.

Anno dn̄i. M. D. xliiii.

The. xiii. daie of September, at three of the Clocke at after noone, the toune gate was opened, and the people begā to cum out, and thei helde on till ſeuen of the clocke at night. And there wer in number of men, women and children, fower thouſande, and of theim fiftene hundred able men of warre: and thei had with theim as moche, as thei could cary bothe men, women, and children, that was able to beare any thyng, and their horſes and Kine, were loden with as moche ſtuffe, as thei could beare a waie. And thei had. lxxv wagons laden with thē. What laude and praiſe ought thei to giue vnto GOD, what worthy ſalutations ought thei to render, to ſoche a mercifull ⁊ bountifull kyng, which ſhewed them ſoche mercie and fauour, with the ſauegarde of their liues.

The. xv. daie of September, the kyng entred into high Bulleine, with the nobilitie of his realme, and Trumpettes blowyng, ẏ it reioyſed all the whole hoſte to heare.

Anno dn̄i. M. D. xlv.

William Laxton. { Jhon Wilford. Andrewe Jud. } Anno. xxxvi.

THE firſte daie of October, king Henry departed from Boleine toward Douer: and at his going, he dubbed. iiii. knightes

tes at the water ſide.

The eighte daie of October, the dolphin came with greate power out of high Fraũce, and camped at Morgiſen, and ſente his trumpet with two hundred horſemen, and men of Armes, toward Boleine, and thei marched on yͤ North eaſt ſide where the king camped, and the trumpetter came to Bolein gate, and blewe his Trumpet, to come to my lorde deputie, and taried at the gate from .ix. of the clock before noone, till two of the clock at after noone, and then he cam into Bolein, to my Lorde deputie, and ſaied: the Dolphine his maſter, had ſent to Somon the toune, and my lord deputie and the counſaill, gaue anſwere to the Dolphine of defiaunce, and then the Trumpetter, and the buſhemente of horſemen, marched backe toward Morgiſen.

The. ix. daie of October, about twoo or three of the clocke in the mornyng, came the Dolphin and his armie from Morgiſen, towardes Boleine on the Northeaſt ſide, to the old man, and from thens marched forth, doune to Baſe Boleine, aboute fower or fiue of the clock in the mornyng, and there beganne to ſpoile and kill our men in their beddes, and made great ſlaughter, till the larum was heard in Baſe Boleine. And the Frenche men approched faſt on them, yet by the might of God, our men, many beyng ſicke, & but a ſmal number to the Frenche, fought with them frõ fiue of the clocke till half an houre paſt .vi. Then the larum was heard in heighe Boleine, through the menne of Baſe Boleine, whiche were ſore amaſed, and many ſlain & hurt for lacke of capitaines, and the reſt were driuen vp to Boleine gates. And then all the men in high Bolein, wer commaunded to the walles, & then the greate ordinaunce was ſhot out of hye Bolein, into baſe Bolein, emõg the Frenchmen, and ſlue many of them, yet the Frenchmen recouered the toune of theim, till the lorde deputie commaunded ſir Thomas Poininges, to take certain men with hym, for his menne warded in baſe Boleine that night, and by the might of God and good fortune, ſir Thomas Poinynges ſpred a ſtãderd with an hundred mẽ, and cried a newe larum, and ſette on the Frenchemen, cummyng couragiouſly towardes thẽ, & fought ſore with them, the Frenchmen tourned their backes and ran a waie, and our men folowed and ſlue many of them, and put thẽ all to flight, thankes be to God: and there was many ſlaine on bothe parties, to the number of ix. hundred, beſides thoſe that wer hurte, of the whiche many died. And theſame daie our ſoldiours tooke fiftene ſtanders, and ſlue the bearers of them.

Alſo there was ſlain of their capitaines, to the nomber of .lx one was taken & no more. And thei toke one of our capitaines, and diuers other that were naked, to the number of .xii. or .xvi and then thei marched toward Morgiſen.

The tenth daie of October, yͤ Dolphin ſent his trumpetter to the lorde deputie of Boleine, to knowe what Capitaines, men of armes, and other of his men, the Engliſhe menne had taken. And the lorde deputie made anſwere and ſaied, he had but one. Then the dolphins trompetter ſaid, that thei lacked of their capitaines, men of Armes, and other of their foote men, to the number of ſeuen hundred and mo. And the Lorde deputie deliuered the French capitain, and the Dolphin deliuered ours.

The leuenth day of October came a greate nauie of Frenche Shippes, right before Bolein, and there remained in ſight.ii. daies. And then ſailed forth betwene Boleine and Calais, to hear of their maſter, yͤ dolphin.

This yere was taken by the Kynges ſhips of the Weſt countrey, and of the Engliſhe coaſt, the number of three hundreth Frenche ſhippes, and more.

The.xxvi. daie of Ianuary, in the yere of.xlv. there camped on the Weſt ſide of Boleine, beyonde the hauen, an armie of Frenche men, to the number of xviii. thouſande, and laie there the ſpace of ten daies. And the ſixe daie of February, thei were all put flight, by the erle of Herforde, and the Lorde Admirall, then being lorde deputie of Bolein, with a ſmall companie of menne, and without bloud ſhedyng on the Engliſhe ſide, but diuers of thē wer ſlain. And thei lefte all their ordinaunce, with bagge & baggage behind them. After whiche victorie, ſir Thomas Poinings was made lord.

Anno dñi.M.D.xlv.

This yere in Iuly, about the twentie daie, the Frenche men with a greate nauie of ſhippes, enuaded yͤ Iſle of Wight, where as thei were driuen backe, and a greate number ſlain.

This yere in September, the Churche of ſainct Giles, without Cripelgate, was brent.

Anno dñi.M.D.xlvi.

Goldſmith. George Barnes.
Sir Martine Bowes Anno.xxxvii.
Raufe Alein.

This yere in Februarie ſhould a womā haue been brent in Smithfielde, for clippyng of golde, but the Kynges pardone came, ſhe beyng at the ſtake, redy to be brente.

This yere the citezens of Lōdon, leuied in the citee, two fiftenes, for the conueighaunce of more water to the citee.

This yere the thirtene day of Iune, being Whitſundaie, a cōtinuall peace was Proclaimed, in the citee of London, betwene the Kyng of Englande, of the one partie, and the French king of the other partie, with a ſolempne proceſſion, at the tyme of proclamation, giuyng laude and praiſe to God, the aucthour of peace, and at night throughout the citee greate fires, with moche ioye and gladnes.

This yere the.xxvii. daie of Iune, Doctor Crome preached at Poules croſſe, and there opēly confeſſed, that he had been ſeduced with naughtie bookes, contrary to the true doctrine of Chriſte: and in this dooyng he ſaied, he was not compelled ſo to ſaie, neithe for feare, nor by any other meanes, but onely of his free and voluntary will.

This yere was brēt in ſmithfield Anne Aſcue, and. iii. more for hereſie, and Doctour Shaxton recanted theſame tyme.

In theſame yere, the twentie and one daie of Auguſt, came in to Englande, to dooe his duetie from the Frenche kyng, Mounſure Deneball, high Admirall of Fraunce, with great triūph, and brought with him the Sacre of Depe, and twelue Galles well beſeen in diuers poinctes, and landed at the Toure, where he was honourably receiued wͭ many nobles, and peeres of this realme, with greate ſhotyng of Gunnes, and ſo brought to the Biſſhoppe of Londons palais, and laie there twoo nightes, that is to ſaie, the. xxi. and. xxii. daie of Auguſte, in the yere of our lorde, a thouſand fiue hundred, fourtie and ſixe.

On Mondaie, the. xxiii. daie of Auguſt, he rode to Hampton Courte, where the Kyng laie, and before he came there, Prince Edwarde receiued hym, with a goodly compaignie. For there was the number of fiue hundred and fourtie in Veluet coates, and the Princes liuerie were with ſleues of Clothe of Golde, and halfe the coate embrodered alſo with Golde, and there wer to the number of. viii hundred horſes roially appareled, whiche brought him to the Manour of Hampton Courte, to the prudente and redoubted Prince his father, and Queene Katherine, and on the morowe the Kyng, and the ſaied Mounſure Deneball, brake the hooſte betwene theim, for a generalle peace, and ſo continued in banketyng and pleaſure, triumphauntly, with noble Maſkes and Mummeries, with diuers and ſonderie chaunges, in ſo moche that the Torche bearers were clothed in clothe of golde, this continued ſixe daies, and ſo returned into Fraunce, with many ſunderie giftes, giuē him and his retinue.

Anno dñi. M.D.xlvi.		Anno dñi. M.D.xlvii.
Marchaunt taillor Henry Hobelthorne	Richard Greues Thomas Curtes.	Anno. xxxviii.

This yere the nintene daie of Januarie, was therle of Surrey beheded at the Toure hill for treaſon.

This yere, the twentie and eight daie of Januarie, departed out of this worlde, the noble kyng Henry theight of that name, whoſe ſoule God take to his infinite mercie, vnder whō his people of Englande, liued long a ioifull and peacable life.

And was full royally buried
at Windſore the ſixtene
daie of Februari in
theſame yere.

Kyng Edward the .vj.

Edward the ſixth began his reigne the .xxxi. daie of January, in the yere of our loꝛde a thouſande .v. C fourtie and ſixe, and was Pꝛoclaimed kyng, in all his fathers realmes and landes.

And the ninetene daie of Febꝛuary, he rode ſolempnily with his vncle, ſir Edward Seimour loꝛde gouernour, and Pꝛotectoꝛ duke of Somerſet, with the nobilitie of the realme, from the toure to weſtminſter, thꝛoughe the citee of Londõ, whiche was richly hanged with Couerlets, and Carpetts of Tapeſtrie, and Irras, Chepeſide beyng richely hanged with clothe of Siluer, and Gold, euery Conduict runnyng with wine, Pagentes of childꝛẽ, beyng richly apparelled to receiue hym at euery place, with oꝛations of his pꝛaiſe.

And on ẏ Southſide of Poules Churche yarde, an Argoſie came from the batilment of the ſame churche, vpon a cable, beyng made faſte to an Anker, at the Deanes dooꝛe, lyyng vppon his bꝛeaſte, aidyng hymſelf neither with hande noꝛ foote, and after aſcended to the middes of theſame Cable, and tumbled & plaied many pꝛetie toies, wherat the Kyng, with other of the peres and nobles of the realme laughed right hartely.

The twentie daie of Febꝛuary, Pꝛince Edward at Wenminſter was Pꝛoclaimed, annoynted, and crouned king, Thomas Loꝛde Archbiſhop of Cauntoꝛburie, and Metropolitane of this reame, miniſtryng the Deuine Sacramentes and Ceremonies.

The .xxi. & .xxii. daie, ſir Thomas Seimour, Loꝛde Admiral accompaignied with Deuelox, ſir Anthonie Kyngſton, ſir Peter Carewe, Knowles, & Shelley, were chalengours againſte all perſones defendaunt, at tilt Barriers, and Turney, wherin thei behaued thiem ſelues like valiaunte men of Armes. And this was finiſhed on the Sundaie next followyng, beyng the .xxvii. daie, hauing at euen bankettes, at the whiche were diuers and ſundꝛie plaies.

In this moneth of Marche, ſir Indꝛewe Dudley, Vice Admiralle, with the Paunce, and the Harte, being but ſingle mãned, had a greate conflicte with thꝛee Scottiſhe Shippes, beeyng double manned, and trimmed with Oꝛdinaunce, in the narrowe ſeas, and obtained the victoꝛie, and tooke many priſoners, and bꝛought the Shippes into Oꝛwell hauen, where thei did remain.

This yere, in Auguſte, the Duke of Somerſet, and theerle of Warwicke, with a noble armie, were ſent into Scotlande, and neare to Edenbꝛough, at a place called Muſſelbꝛough, the Engliſhmen and Scottes met, where betwene thẽ was foughten a cruell battaill, the victoꝛy by the onely prouiſion of God: fell to the Engliſhe men, and of the Scottes were ſlain (as writeth Maiſter Patten in hys boke, called the expedition into Scotland) aboue .xiiii. M. and taken priſoners of Lordes, knightes, and gentlemen .xv.c.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.xlvii. Anno dn̄i. M.D.xlviii.

Sir Jhon Greſham. { Thomas White. / Robert Curteyſe. } Anno .i.

This yere was ordeyned the Communion to be receiued in both kindes.

This yere the laſt day of July, Stephen Gardener Biſhop of Wincheſter was commaunded to the tower.

This yere was a greate mortalitie in London, then was a commaundement geuen to all Curates, that thei ſhoulde burie none before ſixe of the clock in the morning, nor after ſixe at nighte, and that the Belle ſhoulde ring three quarters of an houre or more.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.xlviii. Anno dn̄i. M.D.xlix.

Fiſhmonger.
Syr Henry Amcotes. { William Locke. / Jhon Ailofe. } Anno .ii.

This yere in February ſir Thomas Seymour, lord Admiral was put to deth for diuers treaſons, and was condempned by a parlyament.

In this yere was images put downe in all churches through out Englande.

This yere the marriages of prieſtes was graunted lawfull by parlyament.

This yere doctor Boner was depoſed frō his biſhoprike, the firſt day of October.

In this moneth the duke of Somerſet was commaunded to the Tower.

This yere was a riſing in Deuonſhyre and Cornewal, about the middes of the yere, whiche was dammage to theim and other, wherefore their chief captains were taken and brought to the tower of Londō, and the .xxvi. day of January after was drawē, hanged, and quartred, and thre more at Tiburne.

Alſo this yere about the ſame time was an inſurrection in Norfolke and Suffolke, and their captain called Kite, & his brother, was ſhortly taken, and iudged to bee hanged at Norwitche in cheynes. Durynge whiche inſurrection, the gates of London were warded by certaine of the auncient citezins in harneys.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.xlix. Anno dn̄i. M.D.l.

Sir Rouland Hille. { Jhon Yorke. / Jhon Turke. } Anno .iii.

IN this yere the .xix. daie of Januarie, Capitaine Gambold, a capitain of the Spaniardes, and an other capitaine, was ſlaine without Newgate in the euening, by capitain Degouarie, whiche was taken and hanged on the euen of ſainct Poule, and three more with hym, in Smithfield.

The ſixte daie of Februarie, the Duke of Somerſet was deliuered out of the toure.

In the ſame moneth wente out of Englande, certain lordes of ẏ counſaill to Bolein, where certain of the Frenche counſail met with theim, and after long conſultatiō had, and diuers metings betwene thē, there was a generall peace cōcluded, whiche was proclaimed the .xxix. daie of Marche folowyng.

Alſo aboute the .xxv. daie of Aprill folowyng, the Toune of Bolein, with the fortreſſes therto belongyng, was deliuered by the Engliſhmen, into the handes of Frenchmen.

This yere the ſeconde daie of May, was brent in Smithfield Jone Boucher, other wiſe calld Jone of Kente, for the horrible hereſie, that Chriſt toke no fleſh of the virgine Mary, and at her death did preache Jhon Scorie a preacher of Cantorburie, ſhewyng to the people, her abhominable opinions, warnyng al menne to beware of theim, and ſoche like.

Aboute this tyme, there was certain light perſons, pretended a commotion in Kent, but thei wer apprehended, and the thirtene daie of Maie, was for that treſpaſſe hanged at Aſheforde, Richarde Lion, and Goddarde Goran, and the nexte daie followyng was hanged at Canterburie, Richard Ireland, for the ſame treſpaſſe.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.l. Anno dn̄i. M.D.li.

Skinner.
Sir Andrewe Iud. { Auguſtine Hinde
Jhon Lion. } Anno.iiii.

THis yere on ſainct Valētines daie, at Feuerſham in Kent, was committed an horrible murder, for one Arden a gentleman, was by the cōſēt of his wife murdered. Wherfore, ſhe was brente at Cantorburie, and there was one hanged in chaines for that murder, and at Feuerſam was twoo hāged in chaines, and a woman brent, and in Smithfielde was hanged one Moſbie, and his ſiſter for theſame murder alſo.

This yere Doctoure Gardener, Biſhop of Wincheſter, the ſixtene daie of Februarie, was depoſed of his Biſhoprike, and ſo put into the toure: where he laie, duryng the life of king Edward, al whiche tyme Doctour Ponet, was ceaſed in that Biſhoprike.

This yere was a Duchman brente in Smithfielde, for holdyng of the opinion of the Arrians.

In the moneth of July, there was a Proclamation, for the deminiſhed of the coigne, ſo that by the onely prouiſion of God: fell to the Engliſhe men, and of the Scottes were ſlain (as writeth Maiſter Patten in hys boke, called the expedition into Scotland) aboue .xiiii. M. and taken priſoners of Lordes, knightes, and gentlemen .xv.c.

Anno dñi. M.D.xlvii.

Anno dñi. M.D.xlviii.

Thomas White.
Sir Jhon Greſham. Anno .i.
Robert Curteyſe.

This yere was ordeyned the Communion to be receiued in both kindes.

This yere the laſt day of July, Stephen Gardener Biſhop of Wincheſter was commaunded to the tower.

This yere was a greate mortalitie in London, then was a commaundement geuen to all Curates, that thei ſhoulde burie none before ſixe of the clock in the morning, nor after ſixe at nighte, and that the Belle ſhoulde ring three quarters of an houre or more.

Anno dñi. M.D.xlviii.

Anno dñi. M.D.xlix.

Fiſhmonger. William Locke.
Syr Henry Amcotes. Anno .ii.
Jhon Ailofe.

This yere in February ſir Thomas Seymour, lord Admiral was put to deth for diuers treaſons, and was condempned by a parlyament.

In this yere was images put downe in all churches through out Englande.

This yere the marriages of prieſtes was graunted lawfull by parlyament.

This yere doctor Boner was depoſed frõ his biſhoprike, the firſt day of October.

In this moneth the duke of Somerſet was commaunded to the Tower.

This yere was a riſing in Deuonſhyre and Cornewal, about the myddes of the yere, whiche was dammage to theim and other, wherefore their chief captains were taken and brought to the tower of Londõ, and the .xxvi. day of January after was drawẽ, hanged, and quartred, and thre more at Tiburne.

Alſo this yere about the ſame time was an inſurrection in Norfolke and Suffolke, and their captain called Kite, & his brother, was ſhortly taken, and iudged to bee hanged at Norwitche in cheynes. Durynge whiche inſurrection, the gates of London were warded by certaine of the auncient citezins in harneys.

Anno dñi. M.D.xlix.

Anno dñi. M.D.l.

Jhon Yorke.
Sir Rouland Hille. Anno .iii.
Jhon Turke.

IN this yere the .xix. daie of Januarie, Capitaine Gambold, a capitain of the Spaniardes, and an other capitaine, was ſlaine without Newgate in the euening, by capitain Degouarie, whiche was taken and hanged on the euen of ſainct Poule, and three more with hym, in Smithfield.

The ſixte daie of Februarie, the Duke of Somerſet was deliuered out of the toure.

In the ſame moneth wente out of Englande, certain lordes of yͤ counſaill to Bolein, where certain of the Frenche counſail met with theim, and after long conſultatiō had, and diuers metings betwene thē, there was a generall peace cōcluded, whiche was proclaimed the .xxix. daie of Marche folowyng.

Alſo aboute the .xxv. daie of Aprill folowyng, the Toune of Bolein, with the fortreſſes therto belongyng, was deliuered by the Engliſhmen, into the handes of Frenchmen.

This yere the ſeconde daie of May, was brent in Smithfield Jone Boucher, otherwiſe calld Jone of Kente, for the horrible hereſie, that Chriſt toke no fleſh of the virgine Mary, and at her death did preache Jhon Scorie a preacher of Cantorburie, ſhewyng to the people, her abhominable opinions, warnyng al menne to beware of theim, and ſoche like.

Aboute this tyme, there was certain light perſons, pretended a commotion in Kent, but thei wer apprehended, and the thirtene daie of Maie, was for that treſpaſſe hanged at Aſheforde, Richarde Lion, and Goddarde Goran, and the nexte daie followyng was hanged at Canterburie, Richard Ireland, for the ſame treſpaſſe.

Anno dñi. M.D.l.

Anno dñi. M.D.li.

Skinner. Auguſtine Hinde
Sir Andrewe Jud. } Anno .iiii.
Jhon Lion.

THis yere on ſainct Valētines daie, at Feuerſham in Kent, was committed an horrible murder, for one Arden a gentleman, was by the cōſēt of his wife murdered. Wherfore, ſhe was brente at Cantorburie, and there was one hanged in chaines for that murder, and at Feuerſam was twoo hāged in chaines, and a woman brent, and in Smithfielde was hanged one Moſbie, and his ſiſter for theſame murder alſo.

This yere Doctoure Gardener, Biſſhop of Wincheſter, the ſixtene daie of Februarie, was depoſed of his Biſſhoprike, and ſo put into the toure: where he laie, duryng the life of king Edward, al whiche tyme Doctour Ponet, was ceaſed in that Biſſhoprike.

This yere was a Duchman brente in Smithfielde, for holdyng of the opinion of the Arrians.

In the moneth of July, there was a Proclamation, for the deminiſhed of the coigne, ſo that the piece of twelue penies, was but nine penies and the Grote but three penies.

In the moneth of Auguſt folowyng, was an other Proclamation for the like, ſo that the piece of nine penies, was but ſixe penies, the piece of three penies, was but twoo penies, the piece of twoo penies, was but a penie, and the piece of a penie but a halfe penie.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.li. Anno dn̄i. M.D.lii.

Skinner.
Richard Dobbes. { Jhon Lambert.
Jhon Couper. } Anno.v.

BEtwene Eaſter and Whitſontide was an yearthequake, in diuers places, ſpecially in Southſex.

In this yere was the ſweate in London, whereof there died in the firſt weke eight hundred perſones, and then it ceaſed, thankes be to God.

This yere the ſeconde daie of Nouember, the olde Queene of Scottes came to Londō, where ſhe was honourably receiued, & lodged in the biſſhops palace.

In this yere, the ſea brake in at Sādwitch, in ſo moche that it did ouerflow all the Marſhes there about, and drouned moch cattaill, to the great loſſe, bothe of the toune, and the countrey.

In this yere the twentie and twoo daie of January, the duke of Somerſet was beheaded at toure hille, for Felonie. And on the twentie and fiue daie of Februarie folowyng, was hanged ſir Raufe Vane, and ſir Miles Partriche: and there were beheaded ſir Thomas Arundell, and ſir Mighell Stanhope, for the like offence,

This yere in the moneth of Auguſt, a childe was borne at Middleſton with twoo bodies, twoo heades, fower armes and handes, one bellie and one nauill. On the one ſide twoo legges and twoo fete, on the other one legge made of twaine, and a foote with nine toes, the one part died before the other. It liued fower daies.

Anno dn̄i. M.D.lii. Anno dn̄i. M.D.liii.

Mercer.
George Barnes { Willyam Garret.
Jhon Mainarde. } Anno.vi.

IN the tyme of this Maior, the.vi.day of July, departed out of this world kyng Edwarde the ſixte of that name, and died at Grenewiche, in the ſixten yere of his age, the ſeuenth yere of his raigne, and is buried at Weſtminſter, whoſe ſoule God take to his infinite mercie. Amen.

The.x.daie of July, the duke of Northumberlande with his adherentes, did Proclaime lady Jane (daughter to the Duke of Suffolke, and wife to Gilforde Dudley) Quene, the whiche Duke incontinently made an armie, againſt the Lady Mary, right inheritour to the crowne of this realme. But his attempt (for as muche as it was not of God, coulde not come to any good ſucceſſe.) For when he though him ſelf moſt ſtrongeſt, part of the nobilitie, & almoſte all the common people fel from him, ſo that at Cambridge, he he with his ſonnes, and a fewe more were left alone, and were areſted, and ſent to the Tower of London.

Queene Mary.

MARY the elder doughter of king Henry the eight, began her raign ouer the Realme of England, and was proclaimed queene the .xx. day of July, in the yere of oure lorde. M.D.liii. her grace then beinge at Frimingham, in Suffolke. The third day of Auguſt ſhe came to London, and toke poſſeſſion of the tower.

And in the time of her there abiding, ſhe releaſed out of priſon the duke of Norfork, doctor Gardiner, & the lord Curteney. Shortly after certain biſhops, which were before depriued of their biſhoprikes were reſtored, that is to ſay. Doctour Gardiner to the biſhoprike of Wincheſter, and Jhon Ponet putte out. Doctour Boner to the biſhoprike of London, and Nicolas Ridley put out. Doctour Day to the biſhoprike of Chicheſter, and Jhon Scorye put out. Doctour Tonſtall to the biſhoprike of Dureſme, and doctour Heath to the biſhoprike of Worcheſter, and Jhon Hoper expelled and committed to the Flete, doctour Veſie to Exceſter and Miles Couerdale put out.

The twelueth day of Auguſt was beheaded at the tower hil, Jhon Dudley, duke of Northumberlande, ſir Jhon Gates, and ſir Thomas Palmer, for treaſon, whiche duke at the time of his death, did recant his former life, and exhorted the people not to be aſhamed to returne to the catholike faith.

On the firſt day of October queene Mary was crowned at Weſtminter by doctour Gardiner biſhop of Wincheſter (Thomas Cranmer biſhop of Canterborye, then being in the tower for treaſon.) Which coronation was done royally and ſuch a multitude of people reſorted out of all partes of the realme, to ſe the ſame, that the like had not been ſeen tofore.

The tenth day of October began the parliament, and certaine actes made in kinge Edward the ſixe daies, which wer not thought neceſſary, were repealed, among whiche the acte for marriage of prieſtes was repealed, and the acte for eſtabliſhing of Engliſh ſeruice was alſo repealed, and the former Latyn ſeruice ſet forth.

Alſo at this parliament was cõuicted and attainted of high treaſon, John Duke of Northumberlande, Thomas Cranmer archbiſhop of Cantorbury Williã Marques of Northampton, Jhon earle of Warwike, ſir Ambroſe Dudley Knighte, Gilforde Dudley Eſquier, and Jane his wife, Henrye Dudley Eſquier, ſyr Andrewe Dudley knight, ſyr Jhon Gates, and ſir Thomas Palmer.

Anno dñi. M.D.liii. Anno dñi. M.D.liiii.

Marchaunt Tailour
Thomas White. { Thomas Offeley. William Hewet. } Anno.i.

This yere on S. Katherins daye after Euenſong, began the quere of Paules to goe about the ſteple ſinging with lightes, after the olde cuſtome.

On ſainct Andrewes day beganne the proceſſion in Latyn, the biſhop, curates, perſones, and the whole quier of Paules with the Maior, and diuers Aldermen, and the prebendes in their grey Ammes, and thus continued thre daies folowing.

The .xiiii. day of January began the Proceſſion on the Sundayes about the churche, with the Maior and the aldermen in their clokes, and the Prechour takinge his benediction in the middes of the churche, according vnto the olde cuſtome.

This yere the ſixt day of Januarye came from the Emperour in the name of the houſe of Burgoyne, noble ambaſſadours, as the countie Degmõt, countie Delyne, and mounſier Curtier, with other.

This yere the fiftene daye of January, Sir Thomas Wiat, George Harper, Hẽry Jſley, and Leonarde Digges, with other, began a rebellion at Maidſton in Kent, and made a proclamation, pretending to defende the realme from Spaniardes, and other ſtraungers: and after came to Rocheſter, where came vnto them diuers, aſwel borne out of Kent, as in Kent, as Robert Rudſtone, Cuthberte Vaghan, Water and Water Mantels, Kneuet, Godfrey, with diuers other. At which commocion and ſtirre although there came to them, from diuers places of Kent, yet Canterbury cõtinued trew and faithful, in ſo much as through the goodnes of God, and the circumſpect prouiſion and diligent attendaũce of Jhon Twin Maier, and his brethren the aldermen, with the faithfull aſſiſtence of other, the citie was defended from the rebelles, and not ſo muche as one knowen of the ſaied citie to haue fled to Wiat, or to anye of his adherentes.

The .xx. day of January was condempned at Guilde hal, lord Robert Dudley for hie treaſon.

The ſixe and twentie daye of the ſame moneth, beganne the warding at al the gates about the city of London by ỹ auncięt citezins, & their ſeruauntes for the great rebelliō of Wiat and his companions.

The .xxx. day of the ſame moneth, the duke of Norfolk came to Stroude, & bent his artillery againſt Wiat in Rocheſter, but Brian Fitzwilliā and captaine Bret, who came with the duke againſt Wiat, with certaine other of their confederacie, made a ſhoute, and fled frō the duke to Wiat, and the duke hardly eſcaped.

And the next day Wiat went to Cooling, and toke the Lorde Cobham.

The firſt day of February at after noone, the queene accompanied with the Lordes of her counſaile, with a goodly train of Ladies came into London, with her ſcepter in her hande, in token of peace, to Guild hal, and there ſhewed her mind concerninge marriage, vnto the Maire, and to the whole citie, and went to the court again by water, and toke her barge at the Crane of the Vintre.

And that ſame day came Wiat into Southwarke, and or it was night, he had made a trēch at the bridge foote of London, for the drawe bridge was drawen againſt him.

And the lorde William Hawarde was ioyned in commiſſion for that time, with the Maire, for the ſurer defence of the citie of London.

The ſixte daye of Februarye was ſhroue Tweſday, and then was hanged twoo men vpon a gibbet in Paules church yarde.

And the ſame day at nine of the clock in the morning, went Wyat to Kyngſton on Thames, and paſſed ouer the water, where diuers of his menne fled from him the night before, when he went oute of Southwarke. And that ſame time the duke of Suffolke with his brother, was taken by the earle of Huntingdon, and that ſame day the lorde Cobham, and Harper were committed to the Tower.

The ſeuenth day of Februarye was Aſhwedneſdaye, and then Wiat with his hoſte came vnto the Parke pale, beſide S. James, and there would haue pitched his field. And Kneuet with other, hadde moſt traiterouſly ſhotte at the court gate.

And when Wiat perceyued that all thinges was not as he woulde haue it, he paſſed down by S. James, & there his train was cut of, by the commaundement of the Earle of Penbroke, and certaine of his men ſlaine, and then him ſelf with diuers other, came in at Temple barre and ſo through Fleteſtrete, to the Bell Sauage, and when he perceyued that Ludgate was ſhutte againſt him, he departed ſaying: I haue kept touche, and ſo went back again, and by the temple Barre he was taken, and brought by water vnto the Towre of London. And all the Queenes hooſte came through London in goodlye araye, and that daye was ſonge Te Deum, in the Quenes chapell, for ioye of the takinge of the Duke of Suffolke and his brother.

The eyghte day of February the Duke of Suffolke and hys brother, was brought through London, with a goodly company of ſpeare menne, and ſo vnto the toure of London.

The fourtene day of theſame moneth, wer hāged for theſame rebellion, Vicars, a yoman of the Garde, Bouthe, one of the Quenes foote men, great Jhon Norton, and one Kyng, and in ſeuerall places about London, yͤ number of fourtie. And that ſame daie on Haie hill, was .iii. hanged in chaines, for theſame offence.

This rebellion in Kent, was ioyned and confedered with the commotion, moued and attempted in Deuonſhire, by Gawen and Peter Carowe, Gibbes, Champernham, & other, which Peter fledde into Fraunce, the cauſe why, will ſhortly appere, but Gawen and Gibbes, with other, were there takē, and was alſo confedered wͭ Henry Gray, duke of Suffolke, who was apprehended by the worthy erle of Huntington, and was condemned of high treaſō, at Weſtminſter, the .xvii. daie of Februarie, and ſuffred paines of death for theſame, at toure hil, the .xxiiii. daie of Februarie.

Henry Jſley commyng to Wiat was encountered by the Lorde of Aburgainy, maſter Warham and Willyam Sentlegers, with the helpe of Maſter Clerke of Wortham, and there diſcomfited, and fledde into Hampſhire, where he was taken, in the apparell of a Mariner, his face diſfigured with coales and dirt and ſo broughte captiue into London.

And after that, Robert Rudſtone, Willyam Cromer, Brette Cuthbert Vaghan, Hēry Vane, Thomas Culpeper of Aleſford, Kneuette, and Kneuette, Water and Water Mantels, lorde Jhō Graie, and Leonarde Digges, was condempned in Weſtminſter hall of high treaſon, for the ſame rebellion.

The fiftene daie of Marche, was committed to the toure againe, the Erle of Deuonſhire. And theightene day of theſame moneth, whiche was Palmeſundaie euen, was committed to the toure, the lady Elizabeth the Quenes ſiſter. And after that the Lorde Thomas Graie, and ſir James Craftes, confederated with the ſaied Duke of Suffolke, in theſame rebellion.

And ſhortly after that, the Quene of her aboundaunt and accuſtomed mercie, pardoned fower hundred and moe of the common people, whiche came to Weſtminſter, with halters about their neckes, and wer pardoned, who had been miſled, by the euill diſpoſed aboue named.

And then immediatly ſummoned a Parliament, to be holden at Oxforde, and immediatly after, it was retourned to Weſtminſter, and there holden.

The .x. daie of April, was the oppoſitions at Oxford, by Thomas Cranmer, Archebiſhop of Cantorburie, Nicholas Ridley, late biſhop of London, & Hugh Latimer, againſt diuers Doctours, of bothe Vniuerſitees, and other learned menne, and were condempned, and remained there in priſon.

The. xi. daie of April ſir Thomas Wiat was beheaded at the Toure hil for high treaſon, and after quartered, and his quarters ſet vp in diuers places, and his head ſet vpon the gallowes on Hay hill, where he was ouer runne, and ſhortly after it was ſtollen awaie.

The. xiii. daie of Maie, was Mondaie in Whitſon weke, and then came the Proceſſion of S. Peters in Cornhil, with diuers other Pariſhes, and the Maior and Aldermen, Fiſhemongers, and Goldſmithes, vnto Poules after the old cuſtome, and other Proceſſions all the three daies, as thei were wont to doe.

The eightene daie of Maie, was William Thomas drawen hanged, and quartered at Tybourne for high treaſon.

The. xxiiii. daie of May was Corpus Chriſtie daie, and then was a Joyner that dwelte in Colmãſtrete, called Jhõ Strete would haue taken the Sacrament, out of the prieſtes handes ẏ in Smithfield, in the tyme of Proceſſion, but he was reſiſted and taken, and put in Newgate and then he feined himſelf mad.

The. iiii. daie of June, was taken doune all the Gallowes, that were aboute London.

The. xxii. daie of June, was a Proclamation made, concernyng ſhotyng in hande gunnes and bearyng of weapons.

The twentie daie of July, Philip Prince of Spaine, arriued at South Hampton, where he was with all due honor and obeiſaunce, receiued of the quenes counſaill, and moſte partie of the nobilitie of this realme.

At his firſte ſettyng foote on land, the garter of thorder, was ſet ⁊ made faſt aboute his legge whiche was ſent vnto hym by the quene, richly adorned with precious iewelles. Immediately vpon his receiuyng, and mutuall ſalutyng on bothe parties, or he would enter into any houſe, he went firſt on foote to the Churche, of holy Roodes in Hampton, ſtandyng directly againſt the toune hous, a good diſtaunce from the Kaie, to render thankes to almightie God, for his proſperous voiage.

When he had praied aboute half an houre or more, he roade to his lodgyng, whiche was backe again towardes the water gate, vpon a goodly Jenet, whiche the Quene had ſent for that purpoſe, exceadyng richly trapped.

The Mondaie folowyng, he roade from Southampton, to Wincheſter, accompanied with a notable compaignie of lordes and gentlemen of Englande, euery of them hauyng a notable company, and excellently well apparailed ⁊ alſo horſed. But ẏ daie was a rainie daie, ſo that the iourney was ſumwhat the leſſe pleaſaunt.

The twentie and fower daie of July, he was honourably receiued into the Toune of Wincheſter, betwene ſixe and ſeuen a clocke at night, and went into the Cathedrall Churche, before he toke his lodging. And at the weſt ende of the churche, at his lighting from his horſe, the quenes minſtrels plaid, vntil he came to the Churche doore, and there the biſſhop of Wincheſter, and fower biſſhops more, with the Prieſtes, ſingyng men, and childrē, receiued hym with proceſſion in copes, with .iii. croſſes

In the firſt entrie of yͤ church he kneeled doune, and made his praiers, & then aroſe and went vnder a canapie, from the Weſt doore, vp into the quere, and as ſone as his grace perceiued the Sacramente, he put of his cap, and did reuerence, and ſo entred into a goodly traueis richly hāged, and there kneled, and then my Lorde Chauncelour began Te deum, and all the Quere ſang the reſt. After all this finiſhed, his grace was brought out wͭ torche light, and wente a foote to his lodging, through the cloyſter, where the quenes garde did ſtande, all the waie to his lodgyng, whiche was in a faire hous of the Deanes.

He was in a riche coate, embroudered richly with gold, and a hat moche like theſame, with a fether in it: He tourned hym ſelf towardes the people, al the waie on both ſides, and the people moche reioyſed, to ſe his noble perſonage, and cried: GOD ſaue your grace. Theſam night after he had Supped, whiche was aboute ten of the Clocke, certain of the counſail brought hym to the Quene, by a ſecrete waie, where ſhe receiued hym right louingly, and there thei ſtoode talkyng togither in the Spaniſhe tongue, aboute halfe an houre, and then he tooke his leaue of her, and ſo departed to his lodgyng.

Vppon Tueſdaie beeyng the xxiiii. daie of July, in the after noone, about three of the clock, he came frō his lodgyng on foot and with hym the Lorde Steward, the erle of Darby, therle of Penbroke, and diuers other Lordes and gentlemen, as well Engliſhe, as others goyng before him, he goyng alone, apparailed in a Cloke of fine blacke clothe, embroudred about with white Siluer, a paire of white hoſe, and the garter of the order of Englande aboute his legge, and ſo went to the court, where euery body might ſee hym, and after he had entred the Court, & came nigh to the hall doore, the inſtrumentes plaid, at his graces entryng into the hal, where the Quene receiued hym, and kiſſed hym in the preſence of all the people, and ſhe beyng on the right hand, thei went togither into the greate chamber of preſence, and there in the preſence of all the lordes and ladies, thei ſtode a quarter of an houre, vnder the clothe of eſtate, talkyng togither, and then he tooke his leaue of her grace, & came forth into the open courte, where all the Pentioners ſtoode, and the Garde all along bothe the ſides of the waie, to the Court gate, & from thens the lordes brought hym to the Cathedrall churche, to Euenſong, and after Euenſong, thei brought hym to his lodgyng with torche light, very honourably, accordyng to his eſtate.

Theſame nighte, the Emperour ſent a meſſage to the Quenes maieſtie, declaring that his ſonne, whiche ſhould mary her, was not a Prince onely, but a Kyng, and that he was kyng of Naples and Hieruſalem, and of the other dominions, mencioned in his ſtile.

And you ſhall vnderſtande, that vpon ſanicte James daie, beyng the .xxv. daie of July, aboute aleuen of the Clocke, the Kyng and quene came frō their lodgyng, towardes the churche al on foote, richly apparelled in gounes of cloth of gold ſet with ſtones, he with his gentlemen and Garde, and ſhe with hers, eche of theim hauyng a ſworde borne before theim: Before her therle of Darby bare the ſword and before his grace, the Erle of Penbroke bare the ſworde: and beyng come into the Churche, he went to one altar, and ſhe to an other, hanged cloſely with Curtaines of clothe of Golde, where we thinke thei wer ſhriuen. After that thei came from their places, and met together, eche of them ſaluted other very humbly, his royall grace bare headed. And then the ſixe Biſhoppes went to the places appoincted for the marriage, and the kyng came and ſtode on the lefte ſide, and her grace on the right ſide, and the lorde Chauncellour beeyng there afore, vſed all thinges, bothe in banes biddyng, and otherwiſe, as hath been at marriages of old tyme, and ſpake it bothe in Latin and Engliſhe. Her marriage ryng was a rounde houpe of golde, without any ſtone: for her deſire was to be married, as maidens were married in the olde time, and ſo ſhe was. Many noble men of ſtraunge countreis, were there richely apparailed, for golde and ſtone, and all the other gentlemen, wer richly apparelled. After this marriage knot thus knitte, the Kyng and the Quene came hand in hand, a Canapie borne ouer them, by ſixe knightes, and twoo ſwordes before them, all the Lordes goyng before. And when thei came before the altare, thei kneled doune a while there, and ech of theim had a taper, and then thei aroſe, and ſhe went into a trauers made on the right ſide, and he into an other on the left ſide. After the Goſpell thei cam foorthe, and kneled before the altare, all the Maſſe tyme, and the care clothe was holden, and he kiſſed the biſſhoppe at the Agnus. As ſone as Maſſe was doen, the kyng of Heroldes opēly in the churche, and in the preſence of the Kyng and Quene, the Lordes and Ladies, and all the people, ſolempnly Proclaimed their Maieſties Kyng and quene, with their title and ſtile, in maner & forme, as foloweth.

ye celebratio of the mariage of phillip & Marye

Philip & Mary, by the grace of God, king and Quene of Englād, Fraunce, Naples, Jeruſalem & Ireland, defenders of the faithe, Princes of Spaine and Scicely, Archdukes of Auſtrige Dukes of Milaine, Burgundie and Brabant, Counties of Haſpurge, Flaunders and Tiroll. Whiche ended, the trompettes blewe, and the kyng and quene came foorthe hande in hande, with their Lordes, Ladies and gentlemen, awaityng on them and twoo ſwordes borne before theim, and ſo went on foote to the court, and there dined openly in the hall, bothe together at one table.

Alſo the. xviii. daie of Auguſt the Kyng and the Quene, came to Suffolke place in Southewarke, and there dined, and after diner, with moſte part of the nobilitie of the realme, roade right roially ouer Londō bridge and ſo through the citee, which was richely hanged with riche clothes of Arres, and Tapiſtrie. And at euery Conduite as thei came, were gorgious pageauntes, of diuers ſtories, in praiſe and cōmendacions of the Kyng and Queene. Alſo their Maieſties wer receiued into the Cathedrall church of ſainct Paule right reuerently by the Biſhop of London, with proceſſiō, and after thei had made their deuoute praiers, roade foorth vnto Weſtminſter.

In the time of this Maiour, and in the yere of our Lorde, a thouſande fiue hundred fiftie and fower, was the Latine ſeruice reſtored, by the auctoritie of a Parlament holden at Weſtminſter.

And in this yere came diuers Ambaſſadours, to the king and Quene, frō all places and countries of Chriſtendome, as from Polan, Hungarie, Naples, Ferrer, and other countries & cities

Anno dn̄i. M.D.liiii. Anno dn̄i. M.D.lv.

Jhon Lion Grocer. { Dauie Woodroffe.
Willyam Cheſter. } Anno. i & ſecundo

IN this yere a Parliamēt was holden at Weſtminſter, where emong other thynges, the Engliſhe Seruice and the Communion boke was derogated, and diſanulled, and a generalle ſubmiſſion of the realme of Englāde, made to the ſea of Roome. The lorde Cardinall Poole beyng reſtored, all lawes to the contrary, diſſolued

This yere in Lente wente to Roome, the biſhop of Elie, and the lorde Mountacute, Ambaſſadours from the king & quene.

In the tyme of this Maior, and in the yere of our lorde God a thouſande fiue hundreth fiftie and fiue. In diuers partes of this realme, were apprehended diuers Sacramētaries, and many of them ſuffred death by fire. As at London Jhon Rogers, Jhon Hoper at Worceſter, where he was Biſhop, Farrar at Saincte Dauides in Wales, where he was Biſhop, Doctor Tailer at Hadley in Suffolke, and Jhon Bradforde at Londō, and Bland a prieſt at Cauntorburie, with diuers other.

This moneth was reported all the realme ouer, that the quene was deliuered of a prince for ioye whereof in many places thei ſang Te Deum, and made Bonefiers.

This yere in June, the Lorde Chauncellour of Englande, the erle of Arundell lorde Steward and the Lorde Paget, went ouer the ſea to Caleys, and nere vnto Marke, treated with the Emperours, and Frenche Kinges Commiſſioners, for a peace to bee had betwene the ſayed Princes, Cardinall Poole beeing preſident there, and returned without effecte.

In this yere, in the latter end of June, was a certayne muttenyng traiterouſlye attempted aboute Wadhurſt in Southſex. But it was ſpedilye perceyued, and utterly repreſſed.

In this yere the eleuenth day of Auguſt, was a terrible fyght on the ſea, betwene the Duchemen, and the Frenchmen, nere vnto Rumney Marſhe, where as eleuen ſhippes were brente and ſonke, that is ſixe Frenche Shippes, and fiue greate Hulkes, and certaine Hulkes taken by the Frenchmen.

In this yeare in the begynnyng of September, the kynge went ouer ſea to Caleys, and ſo forth to Bruſſelles in Brabant to viſite yͤ emperour his father.

Anno dñi. M.D.lv. Anno dñi. M.D.lvi.
Haberdaſher } Thomas Lee.
Sir William Garret } Anno .ii. & iii.
Iohn Machham.

A Proclamacion of truce in Fraunce & Flaunders, betwene Charles the emperour, and Henry the Frenche kyng.

In this yere in Nouember, Nicholas Ridley, and Hughe Latimer, were brent at Oxford. And in yͤ Lent folowing, Thomas Cranmer archbiſhoppe of Cãtorbury, after that he had recanted his ſuppoſed recantation, was alſo there brent.

This yere in the .x. of March apeared a notable comet or blaſyngſtarre, and many children monſterouſly borne, in diuers places of Englande.

This yere Cardinall Poole, Lord Legate, was conſecrated Archbiſhop of Caunterburye, for whõ maſter Robert Colins, Commiſſarie and Prebendarie of Chriſtes churche, was enſtalled, on the day of the Annunciation of our bleſſed Lady, with all ſolempne Rites and Ceremonies, thereto belonginge.

This yere was detected a haynous conſpiracie bothe againſt the king and queenes perſons, and alſo of inuading yͤ realme: and for the ſame ſuffered Udall, Throgmorton, Daniel, Peckham Staunton, & other: and diuers for the ſame fled out of yͤ realme.

Anno domini. M.D.lvi. Anno domini. M.D.lvii.
William Harper. }
Sir Thomas Offeley. } Anno .iii. & iiii.
Iohn White. }

This yere in Februarye the Lorde Sturton, was arraigned at Weſtminſter Halle, for murderyng of twoo gentlemen,

men, and the .ii. day of March he was conueyghed throughe London, to Saliſbury, and the .vi. daye of Marche ſuffered the paines of death.

In the time of this Maiour, And in the yere of our Lorde a thouſand fiue hundreth, fiftie and ſeuen, and the twentie and ſeuen daye of Februarye, came to the kinge and the queene an Imbaſſadour from the Emperour of Ruſſe.

This yere in Marche, the king returned into Englande, and the twentie and twoo day of the ſame moneth, the Kynge and the quene, came frō Grenewiche by water, and landed at the Tower warffe, & ſo came throughe London to Weſtminſter with a goodly company.

This yere in May, came Hēry Staffordе from Fraunce, & toke Scarborow caſtell, which he enioyed twoo dayes, & than was taken with his complices and brought to London, where he ſuffered at the Tower hil for his treaſon.

In this yere vpon the Monday in the Whitſon weeke, beeyng the ſeuenth daye of June, was a Proclamacion of warre betwene the Queene and the Frenche King, wherevpon the Queene ſent ouer an armie of men, ordeynynge the Earle of Penbroke, lorde generall, which mette the king with his armie, at a towne in Fraunce, called S. Quintins.

The tenth daye of Auguſte were taken of Fraunce, the chifeſt capitaines, that the French king had, as foloweth.

The Conſtable of Fraunce, and his yongeſt ſonne, the duke of Mounpaunce, the Duke of Languila, the Marſhall of S. Andrewe, the Ringraue Coronall of Almaigne, Rocha du Maine, Rocha Forca, vicount Thiwan, the baron of Cortu, the Prince of Mantua, beſide many gentlemen & capitaines were taken.

The .xxviii. daye of Auguſte, was taken the towne of ſaincte Quintins.

Anno domini. M.D.lvii. Anno domini. M.D.lviii.
Fiſhmonger. { James Malarie. } Anno.iiii.
Thomas Curteis { Richarde Altam.

THE Frenchemen came to Caleis; with a greate armie, and layed ſiege therevnto, and by treaſon at length they wanne the towne, wyth all the other pieces on that ſide the ſea.

Alſo the .xxix. day of Julye, certain of the Queenes ſhippes lāded in Britain, at a place called Blanchbayes, and marched to the towne of Conquet, and burned the ſaid towne, with the Tower of S. Andrewes, and S. Mathewes, and diuers villages, and ſo retourned without great loſſe of men.

Shortlye after, the Frenche men ſpoyled and burned Dunkirke in Flaunders, but thei [illegible] ſoone ſone after met, by the power of kyng Philip, and many taken, and many ſlain.

Againſt Sommer, great preparacion was made on bothe parties, and eche fearing other, but bothe laie in Campe with greate armies till Winter, and then thei brake vp, and nothing doen, nor peace concluded, although there had been moche talke of peace, that ſhould bee concluded.

Anno dñi. M. D. lviii. Anno dñi. M. D. lix.

Thomas Lee Mercer. { Thomas Hawes.
Richard Champney. } Anno. v. & vi.

IN the beginnyng of this maiors yere, died many of ẏ wealthieſt menne, all Englande through, of a ſtraunge feuer.

The. xvii. daie of December, died quene Mary at ſainct Iames, of a dropſie or impoſtume, wherof ſhe had lōg been pining

And the ſame daie was Proclaimed Elizabeth her Siſter, doughter to king Hēry theight, appoincted by Parlamente, to ſuccede Mary, diyng without iſſue. Who ſhortly after came to London, and was moſte ioyfully receiued, of all ſortes of her ſubiects. And paſſing through ẏ city to ẏ Toure, ſhe behaued her ſelf ſo like a louing ſoueraigne Lady, that neuer Princes could haue greater ſignes of loue, ſhewed by ſubiectes, then ſhe had.

And the. xiiii. daie of Ianuary folowyng, ſhe paſſed through the citee.

At her graces firſt commyng out of the toure, before ſhe entered into her Chariote, ſhe lifted vp her handes to heauen, and ſaied: O Lorde almightie and euer liuyng GOD, I giue thee moſte hartie thākes, that thou haſt been ſo mercifull vnto me, as to ſpare me, to ſee this ioyful daie. And I acknowledge that thou haſt dealt as wonderfully and as mercifully with me, as thou didſt with thy true & faithfull ſeruaunte Daniel thy Prophete, whō thou deliueredſt out of the dēne, from the crueltie of the gredy & ragyng Lions: euen ſo was I ouerwhelmed, & onely by thee deliuered. To thee therfore onely be thankes, honour, and praiſe for euer. Amen.

This was her graces praier.

Then her grace paſſed on forth, vntill ſhe came to Fanchurche, the people on eche ſide, ioyouſly beholdyng the viewe, of ſo gracious a Ladie their Quene, and her grace no leſſe gladly noting and obſeruyng the ſame. Nere vnto Fanchurche was erected a Scaffolde, richely furniſhed, whereon ſtoode a noyſe of Inſtrumentes, and a childe in coſtly apparelle, whiche was appoincted to welcum the quenes maieſtie, in the whole citees behalf. Againſt whiche place, whē her grace came, of her owne wil ſhe commaunded the chariot to be ſtaied, & that the noiſe might be appeaſed, til the child had vttered his welcomming oration.

At which woꝛds of the laſt line the whole people gaue a greate ſhoute, wiſhing with one aſſent as the childe had ſaied. And the Quenes maieſtie thanked moſt heartly bothe the citie foꝛ thys her gentle receiuing at the firſt, and alſo the people foꝛ confirming the ſame.

Then her grace marched foꝛwarde toward Gracious ſtrete, where was erected a goodly pageant and a ſumptuous, which was the vnitinge of the twoo houſes of Yoꝛke and Lancaſter. This Pageant was grounded vppon the Queenes Maieſties name. But when her grace had vnderſtode the meaning thereof, ſhe thanked the citie and pꝛomiſed that ſhe would do her noble endeuour, foꝛ the continual pꝛeſeruation of concoꝛde, as the Pageant did empoꝛte.

Then her grace went foꝛward till ſhe came to Coꝛnehill, wher was another goodly Pageant, whiche was named the ſeate of woꝛthy gouernement wher her grace ſtaied, ⁊ cauſed her chariot to be dꝛawen nigh vnto it, yͭ her grace mighte here the childes oꝛation, whiche when ſhe hadde heard and vnderſtode the meaning of the Pageant at ful, gaue the city alſo thanks there: and moſte graciouſlye pꝛomiſed her good endeuour foꝛ the maintenaunce of the ſaied vertues, and ſuppꝛeſſion of the vices, as the ſaied Pageant did empoꝛte. And ſo went foꝛth, till ſhe came to the nexte Pageant, whiche was againſt Soper lane ende, whiche Pageant was of the eyght Beatitudes, expꝛeſſed in the .v. Chap. of the Ghoſpell of S. Mathew. wherof euery one vpon iuſte conſiderations was applied vnto her highnes, whiche when her grace had moſte attentiuelye heard what was pꝛonounced vnto her by the child, all the people wiſhed that God woulde ſtrength her grace againſt al her aduerſaries, whō the Queenes Maieſtie moſte heartelye thanked, foꝛ their ſo louing wiſhe.

Then her grace paſſed foꝛwarde thꝛoughe Cheapeſide, which was dꝛeſſed faire, and at the ſtanderd was placed a nois of trumpettes, and baners and other furniture. Soone after her grace paſſed the croſſe, ſhe eſpied the Pageant at the litle conduit in Cheape, and it was tolde her grace that there was placed Time. Time (quod ſhe) and time hath bꝛoughte me hither. And as the whole matter, was in declaring to her grace, and that ſhe vnderſtode that the Bible in Engliſhe ſhould be deliuered her, ſhe thanked the citie foꝛ that gifte, and ſaied that ſhe woulde often times reade ouer that booke, commaunding Syꝛ Jhon Parat one of the knightes which held vp her canappe, to go befoꝛe and receyue the booke. But learninge that it ſhould be deliuered her grace downe by a ſylken lace, ſhe cauſed him to ſtay, and ſo paſſed on tyll ſhe came againſt the aldermen in the high end of Cheape. And there by appoyntment, the righte woꝛſhipfull maiſter Ranulph Cholmeley Recoꝛder of the citie, pꝛeſented to the Quenes Maieſtie a purſe of crimoſyn Satin richelye wroughte with Golde, wherein the Citie gaue vnto the Queenes Maieſtie a thouſande Markes in Golde, as Maiſter Recorder did declare brefely vnto the Quenes Maieſtie, whoſe wordes tended to this ende that the lorde Maior, his brethren, and comminaltie of the citie, to declare their gladnes and good will towards the Quenes maieſtie, did preſent her grace with that golde, deſirynge her grace to continue their good and gracious queene, and not to eſteme the value of the gifte, but the minde of the geuers. The Quenes Maieſtie with both her hãdes tooke the purſe, and anſwered to him merueylous pithily, and ſo pithilye, that the ſtanders by, as thei embraced entierly her gracious anſwere, ſo thei merueyled at the couching therof, whiche was in wordes truely reported theſe: I thanke my lorde Maior, his brethren and you al. And where as your requeſt is, that I ſhoulde continue your good lady & queene, be ye ſure that I wilbe as good vnto you, as euer was Queene to her people. No will in me can lacke, neither dooe I truſte there ſhall lacke any power.

And perſwade your ſelues that for the ſafetie and quietnes of you all, I wil not ſpare if nede bee to ſpende my bloud. Which anſwere of ſo noble an harted princeſſe, if it moued a merueylous ſhoute and reioyſing, it is nothinge to bee feared, ſence both the hartineſſe thereof was ſo wonderfull, and the wordes thereof ſo ioyntly knitte, when her grace had thus aunſwered the Recorder, ſhe marched towarde the litle conduit, where ſhe ſtayed alſo, to here the child whiche ſtode to interprete the Pageant, whiche childe declared vnto her grace the whole meaning of the ſaied Pageant as in a Booke whiche is ſette forth, more plainly dooeth appeare. When the childe had ended his ſpeache, he reached a booke towards the quenes maieſtie, whiche by ſyr Jhon Parrate was receyued, and deliuered to the Queene.

But ſhe, as ſoone as ſhe had receyued the booke, kiſſed it and with both her handes helde vp the ſame, and ſo layed it vppon her breſte, with greate thankes to the citie therefore.

And ſo went forwardes toward Paules church yarde, and whē ſhe came ouer againſt Paules ſchole, a child appoynted by the ſcholemaiſter thereof, pronunced a certaine oration in Latin and certaine verſes in Latin, vnto the which her grace moſt attentiuely harkned. And whē the childe hadde pronounced, he did kiſſe the Oration, which he had there faire written in paper, and deliuered it vnto the Quenes Maieſtie, whiche moſt gently receyued the ſame.

And when her grace had herd all that was there offered to be ſpoken, ſhe marched towarde Ludgate, where ſhe was receyued with a noyſe of inſtrumentes, the forfronte of the gate being finely trimmed againſt her

Maieſties comming.

From thence by the waye as ſhe went downe toward Fletebridge, one about her grace noted that there was no coſt ſpared. Her grace anſwered that ſhe did well conſider the ſame, and that it ſhould be remēbred. An honorable anſwere worthy a noble prince, which may comforte all ſubiectes, conſideryng that there can bee no point of gentlenes, or obeidient loue ſhewed towarde her grace, which ſhe doeth not moſte entierly accepte, and graciouſly waye.

In this maner the people on either ſide reioyſing, her grace went forward toward the condite in Fleteſrete, where was ỹ fifte and laſt Pageant. The hiſtorie was of Debora the iudge and reſtorer of the houſe of Iſraell. Jud. 4. When the queenes Maieſtie drewe nere vnto this Pageant, and perceyued as in the other, a childe readie to ſpeake: her grace required ſilence, and commaūded her chariot to be remoued nigher, that ſhe mighte plainelye heare the the childe ſpeake, when the Queenes Maieſtie had paſſed this Pageant, ſhe marched towarde Temple barre. But at S. Dunſtons church wher the children of the Hoſpitall were appointed to ſtande with their gouernours, her grace perceyuing a child offered to make an Oration vnto her, ſtaied her chariot, and did caſt vp her eies to heauen, as who ſhoulde ſay: I here ſee this mercifull worke towarde the poore, whome I muſte in the middeſt of my royaltie needes remembre, and ſo tourned her face towarde the childe, which in Latyn pronoūced an Oration to this effecte, that after the Queenes highnes had paſſed throughe the citie, and had ſeene ſo ſūptuous, riche, and notable ſpectacles of the citezins, whiche declared their moſt hartie receiuing and ioyous welcomminge of her grace into the ſame: this one ſpectacle yet reſted and remained, which was the euerlaſting ſpectacle of mercye, vnto the pore membres of almighty god, furthered by that famous and moſt noble Prince King Henry the eyghte, her graces father, erected by the Citie of London, and aduaūced by the moſt godlye, vertuous, and gracious Prince, Kyng Edward the ſixt, her graces dere and louing brother, doubting nothinge of the mercie of the Queenes moſte gracious clemēcie, by the whiche thei maye not onely be releued and helped, but alſo ſtaied and defended, and therefore inceſſauntly thei would pray and crie to God, for the long life and raigne of her hyghneſſe with moſte proſperous victorie againſt her enemies.

The childe after he had ended his Oration, kiſſed the paper wherein the ſame was writen, and reached it vnto quenes Maieſtie, which receyued it graciouſly, both with wordes and countenaunce, declaring her gracious minde towarde their reliefe.

From thence her grace came to Temple barre, whiche was dreſſed finely, with the twoo Images of Gogmagog the Albione, and Corineus the Briton, two Giauntes bigge in ſtature furniſhed accordinlye, whiche helde in their handes euen aboue the gate a table, wherein was written in Latin verſes, the effect of all the Pageantes whiche the Citie before hadde erected. On the South ſide was appoynted by the Citie, a noyſe of ſinging children, and one childe richelye attyred as a Poet, which gaue the Quenes Maieſtie her farewell, in the name of the whole citie.

While theſe wordes were in ſaiyng, certaine wiſhes therein repeted for maintenaũce of truth and rooting oute of erroure, ſhe now and then held vp her handes to heauenward, and willed the people to ſay. Amen.

When the child had ended, ſhe ſaied, be ye well aſſured I wyll ſtande your good Queene. At which ſaying her grace departed forth through the Temple bar toward Weſtminſter, with no leſſe ſhouting and criyng of the people, then ſhe entred the citie, with a noyſe of ordinaũce whiche the tower ſhot of at her firſt entraũce into tower ſtrete.

Thus the Queenes highnes paſſed through the citie, which without any forrein perſon, of it ſelf beautified it ſelfe, and receyued her grace at al places as hath bene before mencioned, with moſte tender obedience & loue, due to ſo gracious a quene and ſoueraigne Lady. And her grace likewiſe on her ſide, in al her graces paſſage, ſhewed her ſelf generally an Image of a worthy Lady and gouernour.

The next day which was the xv. day of Ianuary, her grace was moſte honorably crowned at Weſtminſter, for whoſe preſeruation & proſperous raigne, let vs all pray vnto almightye god. And that it wil pleaſe him of his infinite mercye, ſo to direct her in all her doinges, that ſhe maye ſet forth the glorye of GOD, and aduaunce the common wealth. Amen.

FINIS.

¶Thus endeth the continuation of Fabians chrocle, finiſhed the. xxvi. day of Aprill, in the yere after the birth of our ſauiour and redimer Ieſus Chriſt, M.D.L.ix.

The Grenville Library